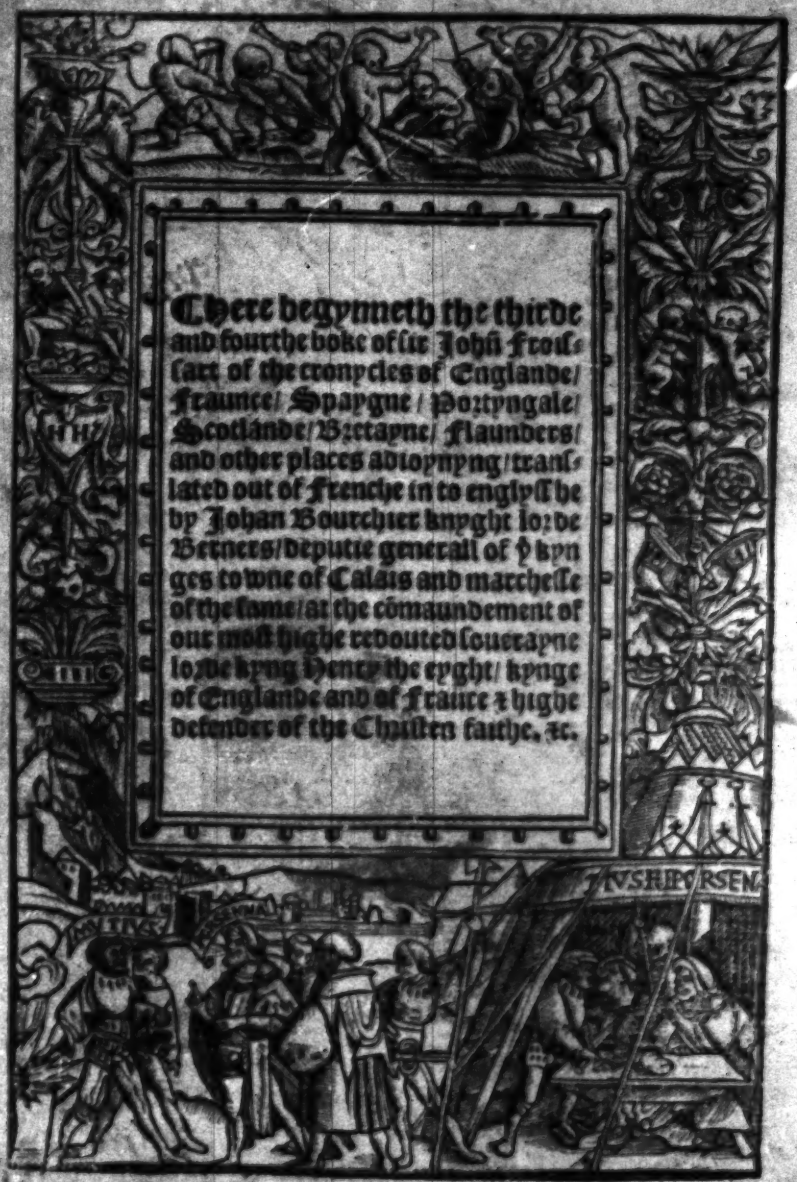
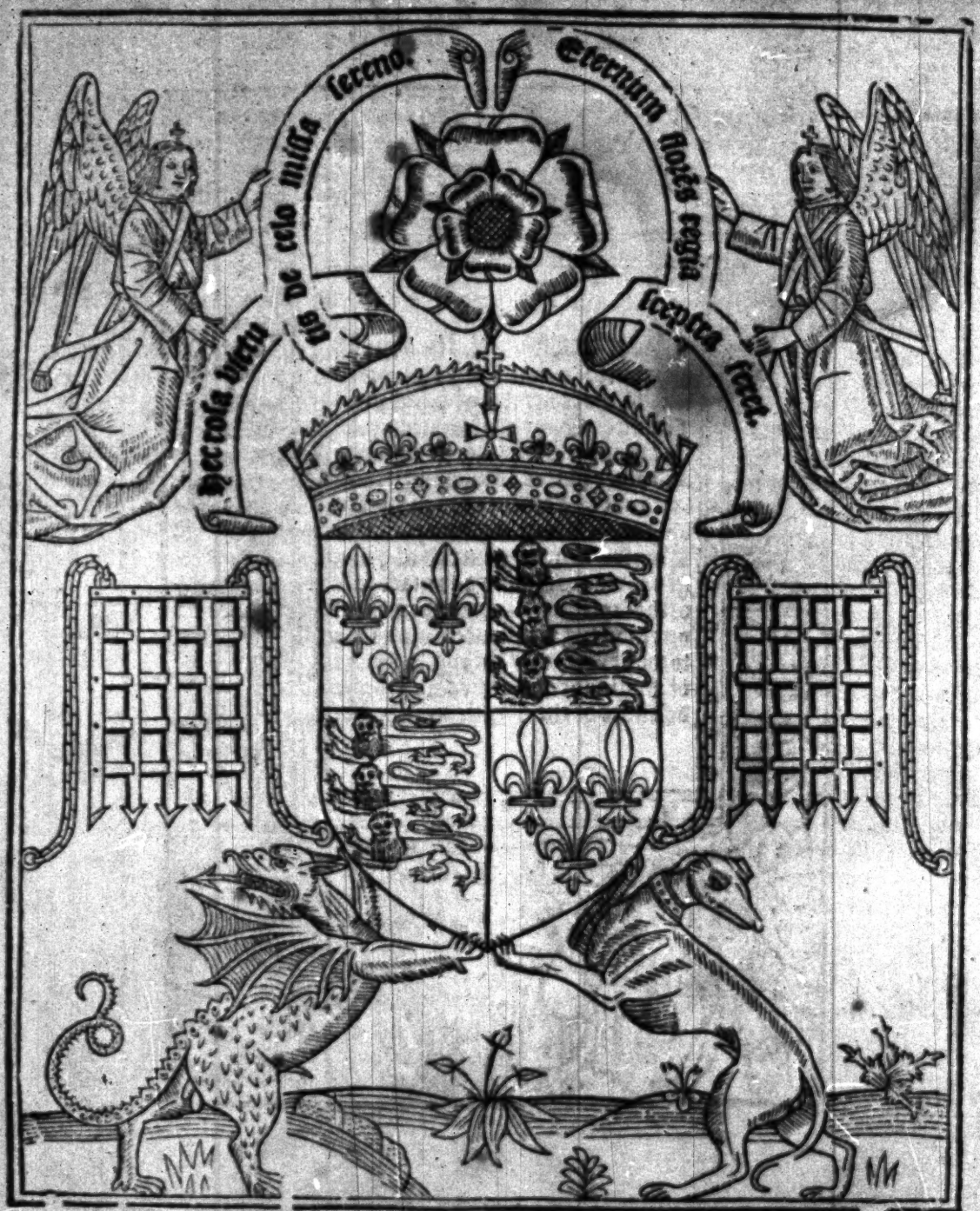


Chere begynneth the thirde and fourthe boke of sir Johñ Froissart of the cronycles of Englande/ Fraunce/ Spaygne/ Portyngale/ Scotlande/ Bretayne/ Flaunders/ and other places adioynyng/ translated out of Frenche in to englysshe by Johan Bourchier knyght lorde Berners/ deputie generall of ỳ kynges towne of Calais and marchelle of the same/ at the cõmaundement of our moste highe redouted souerayne lorde kyng Henry the eyght/ kynge of Englande and of Fraunce & highe defender of the Christen faythe. &c.


Decrola victa de celo missa sereno.
Eternum floxes regia sceptra fecit.

339, 40-14

¶ The preface of sir Johan Bourchier knyght lorde Berners.

Sythe hystorye (as I haue in my preface vpon the fyrst volume of this cronycles declared) is the wytnesse of tymes/ the lyght of trouthe/ the lyfe of remembraūce/ the maistres of the lyfe/ ỹ messanger of olde season/ wherof innumerable cōmodyties growen. I ne thynke the labours myspente/ that I at the highe cōmaundement of our moost redoughted souerayne lorde Henry the eyght/ kyng of Englande and of Fraūce/ hygye defender of the Christen faythe. &c. haue employed aboute the translacyon of nowe the foure volumes of sir Johan Froissart/ out of Frenche in to our Englysh he tong. Certainly nat the boūtie of the same cronycles/ in whom are conteygned the warres of these parties: whiche warres (discryued in Frenche by sir Johan Froyssart eyght ornately) as many that haue great vnderstandynge in dyuers tonges/ in whome warres are wryttē/ plainly sayt: for knyghtly feates/ manhode/ and humanyte/ passe eyght moche the warres of farre countreis: nor the great pleasure that my noble countrey meune of Englande take in redynge ỹ worthy and knightly dedes of their valyaunt auncettours/ encorageth me halfe so moche/ as the princely exhorte/ whiche of all erthely kynges the very worst hyppe and honour/ our forsaid gracyous souerayne gaue me. He/ who for the manyfolde royall vertues in his highnesse foūde/ nat of two or thre small realmes/ but is worthy to reygne and be kyng ouer the vnyuersall worlde/ delyteth in nothynge more/ than to haue/ as I sayd/ the moost famous dedes of his predecessours and subiectes sette out with all dylygence: So that it mought appere to euery mannes sight/ ouer what and howe worthy people his auncettours haue done/ and nowe his maiestie with all kyngly prudence reygneth/ And herin his highnesse taketh synguler pleasure/ to beholde howe his worthy subiectes/ seyng in hystorye the very famous dedes as it were ymages/ represent theis valyaunt auncettours/ contende by vigorous vertue and manhode to folowe/ yea to passe them if they maye. Truely/ the ymages as they vsed in olde tyme to erecte in worshyp and remembraunce of them that were discended of noble blode/ ne beare halfe the wytnesse/ that the noble dedes sette out in hystorye done. Whiche well appereth by the wordes of the prudent kyng Agesilaus/ who dyeng cōmaunded/ that neyther ymage nor picture to his resemblaūce shulde be made/ for if I haue sayd he/ any noble thyng famously done/ it shall beare wytnesse ynough of me: if I haue nought done/ certainly all the ymages lyuell aueylen/ as who sayth/ suche thynges mought be made in mynde of them that were but dastardes/ and neuer dyde worthy dede in all their lyfe. Wherfore/ for the loue and honour that I beare to our moost puissaunt souerayne/ and to do pleasure to his subiectes/ bothe nobles and comons: I haue endeuored me to translate out of Frēche (as sayd is) in to Englysh he/ the foure volumes of sir Johan Froissart/ and reduced them in to twayne. Wherin if I haue erred/ I praye them that shall defaute fynde/ to cōsyder the greatnesse of the hystorye and my good wyll that al be nothyng elles of them for my great labour/ but of their curtesy to amende where nede shalbe/ and yet for their so doynge/ I shall praye to god finally to sende them the blysse of heuen. Amen.

¶ Thus endeth the preface of sir Johan Bourchier knight lord berners deputie of Calais/ trāslatour of this present cronycle: and here after folowe the table with the chapters as they stande in the boke by order. &c.

Thereafter folowyth the table of this present volume.

Iirst howe syr Johan Bouchyer gouernour of Gaunt by tyme the truse had newe wtrapped the towne of Gaunt and howe a maner of people called compostelles vyd moche hurte in the Countrey. Capitule. primo.

¶ Howe ꝑ bridge of Taylbourche was won by the frenche men and howe the englissmen fortyfied them selfe agaynst the comyng of the frenchemen and howe the admyrall of Fraūce and his rout arryued at Ewenbourowe in Scotlande. Capi. ii.

¶ Howe the frenche men found a wylde countrey of Scotlāde and were nyell content with the admyrall and howe he pacyfied them with fayre wordes and howe Fraunces Ireman and his company had nerhande taken Ewenbourche in Flaunders. Cap. iii.

¶ Howe the lorde of Latit Albyne and Angus tante sendequyn called Ewenbourche to tayknge and howe the quene of Hungery sent ambassadours into Fraunce to marry therle of Malopes to her eldest doughter. Cap. iiii.

¶ Howe the duchesse of Brabant wrote to duke Fryderyke of Bauyere of the maryage of the ponge frenche kyng with her neese Isabell of Bauyer and howe the duke and the lady came to Quesnoy. Capi. v.

¶ Howe Fraunces Ireman toke the towne of Dan and howe the frenche kynge wedded the lady Isabell of Bauyere and after wente and layde syege to Dan. Fo. vi.

¶ Howe bryttes burgesses of Lylle were beheded and howe Lylle was chaunged for the lande of Wethune and howe the syege of Dan contynewed longe. Cap. vii.

¶ Howe the gauntoyse fledde out of Dan by nyght and howe the frenche men toke the towne and distroyed it and also howe the kynge ꝑstroyed the countrey of the foure crafters. Capi. viii.

¶ Howe the frenche kynge departed out of Flaunders and gaue leue to his men to departe and howe he came to Parys to treate with the ambassadours of Hongry and howe the marques of Blanquefort toke by fryght to hym wyfe the same lady roberte tour of Auuergny. Cap. ix.

¶ Howe the duke of Burbone toke Bertuell in Poictou and also of the great assemble that the kynge of Scottes made to entre in to Englande. Cap. x.

¶ Howe the frenchemen and Scotters wente the castell of Warlep and vyolated byrres other townes in Northumberlande and howe they wolde we agayne in to Scotlande and what they harwe that the kynge of Englande was comynge on them with a great puyssaunce. Capit. xi.

¶ Howe syr Johan Hollande slewe syr Richarde Stafforde and howe the erle of Stafforde came to the kynge to demaunde iustyce. Capi. xii.

¶ Howe the kynge of Englande caused to be vyolated the churche of Newtus in Scotlande and howe the barones of Scotlande answered the admyrall of Fraunce and deuyded to leaue Scotlande and to lette theenglyssh men alone. Cap. xiii.

¶ Howe the kynge of Englande toke Ewenborowe the chiefe cyte of Scotlande and howe the duke of Lancastre was in purpose to retourne in to Wales to chase in the frenchemen and the scottes and what the frenche men and scottes vyd in the sayd countrey. Cap. xiiii.

¶ Howe the erle of Ostrefore brake the pursute that the kynge of Englande had thought to haue made into Wales after the frenchmen and scottes and howe the kyng retourned the same way that he came and howe the frenche men & scottes determyned to retourne againe into Scotlande. Cap. xv.

¶ Howe the frenche lordes were in great ꝑyll in scotlande and coude nat fynde the meanes to passe ouer the ryuer and how they shewed the erles Douglas and Morrite the harnesse that they founde in that countrey and what answere they made to them. Cap. xvi.

¶ Howe the admyrall enfourmed the frenche kynge and his counsayll of the state of Scotlande and howe the duke of Burgoyne had great desyre to cause ꝑ frenche kynge to make a iourney in to Englande. Cap. xvii.

¶ Howe by the grace of god two burgesses of Gaunt entred in treate with ꝑ duke of Burgoyne for peace and howe they gaue the charges thereof to a knight of Flaunders and what answere the duke gaue vnto them. Ca. xviii.

Howe

¶ Howe these two forsayd burgelles assembled their frendes to acomplysshe their enterprysse/ and sent syr Johan Delle for the dukes letters of peace. Cap. xix.

¶ Howe syr Johan Delle came to Gaunt to the markette place/ where as Roger and Jaques and the aldermen of the cytie were/ and howe he delyuered them letters fro the duke of Burgoyne/ and howe they of Gaunt sente to Courtney/ and of the confyrmacion of the peace/ and of the chartres that were made therof. Capi. xx.

¶ Howe syr Johan Froissart auctour of this cronycle/ departed out of Fraunce and went to the erle of Foyx/ and the maner of his voyage. Cap. xxi.

¶ Howe the prince of Wales and the princesse came to Tarbe/ and of the requeste ꝑ the countesse of Armynake mayn to the prince and princesse/ and howe the countrey of Gascoyne was newly agayne in warre. Cap. xxii.

¶ Of the warres that ꝑ duke of Anjou made agaynst the englysshe men/ and howe he recouered the Castell of Malvoysyn in Bygorre/ whiche was afterwarde gyuen to the Erle of Foyxe. Cap. xxiii.

¶ Howe the garyson & castell of Lourde was caste downe and discomfyted/ by the great dylygence ꝑ the erle of Foyx made. Ca. xxiiii.

¶ Howe the peace was made betwene ꝑ duke of Berrey and the erle of Foyx/ and of the begynnynge of the warre that was betwene the erle of Foyx & the erle of Armynake. Ca. xxv.

¶ Of the great vertuousnesse and larges that was in the erle of Foyxe/ and the maner of the vytuous life of Gascone the erles sonne. Capi. xxvi.

¶ Howe syr Peter of Byerne had a stronge dyscase/ and of the countesse of Bysquay his wyfe. Cap. xxvii.

¶ Of the great disceyuynge that the erle of Foyx made at the feest of sayncte Nycholas/ and the tale that the Bastot of Mauleon shewed to syr Johan Froissart. Cap. xxviii.

¶ Howe dyuers capytayns englysshe and other/ were discomfyted before the Towne of Soyere by the frenche men. Cap. xxix.

¶ Howe a Squyer called Lymosyn tourned frenche/ and howe he caused Loyes Raimbaut his cõpanyon in armes to be taken. Ca. xxx.

¶ Of the state & ordynaunce of the erle of Foyx and howe the townes of Ryau rebelled/ for the great trauayle/ dommage/ and outrage that was done therto. Cap. xxxi.

¶ Howe the kynge of Castyle left the siege of Lyrbone/ and howe they of sayncte Mayne excused them selfe. Cap. xxxii.

¶ Of the marueylous batayle that was at Juberothe/ betwene the kynge of Castyle and kynge Johan of Portugale. Cap. xxxiii.

¶ Of the spanyardes/ howe they ordred them selfe and their batayle. Cap. xxxiiii.

¶ Howe the frenche knyghtes and gaskons/ suche as were taken prysoners at Juberoth by the portugalopes/ were slayne by their mayster/ and none escaped. Cap. xxxv.

¶ Howe the kynge of Castyle & all his great batayle were discomfyted by the kyng of Portugale/ before a vyllage called Juberothe. Capi. xxxvi.

¶ Howe a spiryte called Orthone/ serued the lorde of Corasse a longe tyme/ and brought him euer tydynges from all partes of the worlde. Cap. xxxvii.

¶ Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretayne/ and howe that dyuers englysshe forteresses aboute the countrey of Tholous/ were recouered and tourned frenche. Cap. xxxviii.

¶ Howe the castelles of Conuall/ of Bygorre/ and of Nesupll were taken/ & all they within taken/ slayne/ and hanged. Cap. xxxix.

¶ Howe the kynge of Cypres was slayne and murthered in his bedde by his owne brother/ by exoytacyon and corruptyon of the infydeles for the bountye and hardynesse that was in hym. Cap. xl.

¶ Howe the kynge of Armony was crampned/ and howe .ix. Turkes were slayne and distroyed in the realme of Hungry. Ca. xli.

¶ Howe pope Urbane & pope Clement were at great discorde togyder/ and howe the cristen kynges were in barpaunce for their lectyons/ and of the warres betwene them. Cap. xlii.

¶ Howe they of Portugale sent out messangers in to Englande/ to shewe tydynges of their countrey to the kynge of Englande/ and to the great lordes there. Cap. xliii.

¶ Howe Laurens Fongase ambassadour fro the kynge of Portugale in to Englande/ shewed to the duke of Lancastre the maner of the discorde that was betwene the realmes of Castyle and Portyngale. Cap. xliiii.

¶ Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth

berothe/ bytwene the kynges of Caſtyle and Portyngale. Cap. xlb.
¶ Howe the ambaſſadours of Portyngale had aunſwere of the kynge of Englande/ and great gyftes/ and howe they tooke their leaue and went in to their countreys. Cap. xlbi.
¶ Howe the duke of Lancaſtre aſſayled the lordes/ knightes/ and ſquyers that were in the baſtydes before Brest in Bretayne/ and howe they defended themſelfe. Cap. xlbii.
¶ Howe the duke of Lancaſtre and his hooſt whaſe they had ſoiourned a moneth at Colongne/ than they departed and rode towarde ſaynt James in Galyce. Cap. xlbiii.
¶ Of the great apparell and prouyſion/ that generally was made in the realme of Fraunce by the kynge there and by his counſayle/ for a iourney to be made in to Englande/ and alſo of the deth of Fraunces Atreman. Cap. l.
¶ Howe the kyng of Portyngale wrote amyably to the duke of Lancaſtre/ whan he knewe that he was arryued at ſaynt James in Galyce/ and of the ſecours that the kynge of Caſtyle ſent for into Fraūce/ and howe the towne of Ruelles in Galyce was taken by the Engliſſhe men. Cap. li.
¶ Howe the duke of Lācaſtres marſhall and his men aſſayled the towne of Vieclope in Galyce/ whiche yelded by cōpoſycion/ and of the ambaſſadours that the duke ſent to the kynge of Portyngale. Cap. lii.
¶ Howe they of Bayon yelded theym to the duke of Lancaſtre/ and howe the marſhall of his hooſt entred in to the towne and toke poſſeſſyon therof. Cap. liii.
¶ Howe the duke of Lancaſtre and the duchelle helde them at ſaynte James in Galyce/ and of the comfoyte that the frenche knyghtes gaue to the kynge of Caſtyle. Cap. liii.
¶ Of the great apparell of ſhyppes and galeys that the Frenche men made on the ſee to paſſe in to Englande. Cap. liii.
¶ Howe the frenche kinge and his vncles aryued at Sluſe in Flaunders. Cap. liiii.
¶ Howe the frenche kynge taryed at Sluſe with his great hooſt/ to the entent to entre in to Englande. Cap. lb.
¶ Howe ſyr Symon Burle wolde haue had by his counſayle ſaynt Thomas of Cauntorbury/ ſhyne remoued to ꝑ caſtell of Douer/ wherby he atchyued great hate. Cap. lb.
¶ Howe the kynge of Armonye paſſed in to Englande in truſte to fynde ſome meane for peace or good appoynt̄ment by twene ꝑ kynges of Englande and the frenche kyng. Cap. lvi.
¶ Howe the kinge of Armony returned out of Englande/ and of the aunſwere that was made to hym. Cap. lvii.
¶ Howe the duke of Berrey departed from Paris to come to Sluſe/ and howe the conſtable of Fraunce toke the ſee/ and of the wynt̄ that was contrary to hym. Cap. lviii.
¶ Howe the voyage in to Englande was broken by reaſon of the wyndes & of wynter/ and by counſayle of the duke of Berrey. Ca. lix.
¶ Howe kynge Charles of Fraunce and the frenche lordes returned ryall content fro Sluſe and out of Flaunders/ where as their prouyſyons were made to haue gone in to Englande/ and of the feeſt that was made at London. Cap. lx.
¶ Howe a ſquyer called Jaques le Gruſe was acuſed in the parlyament howſe at Parys before all the lordes there preſent/ by a knyght called Johan of Carongne/ and what iudgement was gyuen vpon them/ and howe they iuſted at bettraunce in Paris/ in a place called ſaynt Katheryne/ behynde the temple/ & howe Jaques le Gruſe was confounded. Cap. lxi.
¶ Howe the kyng of Aragon dyed/ and howe the archebyſſhoppe of Burdeaux was ſet in priſone in Barcelona. Cap. lxi.
¶ How a batayle of armes was done in Burdeaux before the ſeneſchall there/ and dyuers other. Cap. lxii.
¶ Howe Johan of Bretaygne ſonne to ſyr Charles of Bloyes was delyuered out of priſon/ by the meanes of ſyr Olyuer of Clyſſon conſtable of Fraunce. Cap. lxiii.
¶ Howe the duke of Burbone was choſen to go in to Caſtyle/ and dyuers other/ and howe ſyr Johan Bucke admyrall of Flaūders was taken priſoner by the engliſſhmen. Ca. lxiii.
¶ Howe the engliſſhe men aryued and brent dyuers billages. Cap. lxiiii.
¶ Howe the duke of Lācaſters marſhall toke the towne of Rybadane/ whiche was ſtrongly kept. Cap. lxiiii.
¶ Howe the duke of Lancaſtre ſent for the admyrall and marſhall/ and his other officers/ to come to the weddynge of his doughter and the kynge of Portyngale. Cap. lxiiii.
¶ Howe the duke of Lancaſtre and his men rode towardes the cytie of Beſances/ & howe the

the towne made compoſycion with them. Capi. lxxb

¶Howe the ducheſſe and her doughter went to ſe the kynge of Portyngale and the quene/ and howe the towne of Balances ſubmytted them vnder the obeyſaunce of the duke of Lancaſtre. Cap. lxxvi.

¶Howe they of Balances that had ben ſente to the kynge of Caſtyle came home to their towne/ after it was rendred vp to the duke of Lancaſtre. Cap. lxxvii.

¶Howe ſyr Johan Hollande and ſyr Raynolde de Roy fought togyder in lyſtes before the duke of Lancaſtre in the towne of Belances. Cap. lxxviii.

¶Howe the kynge of Portyngale and the duke of Lancaſtre determyned to entre in to the realme of Caſtyle. Cap. lxxix.

¶Howe ſyr Wyllyam of Lygnac and ſir Gaultyer of Ballac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Caſtyle. Cap. lxxx.

¶Howe a great myſchiefe fell in Englande bytwene the gentrymen and cõmons / for accompte of ſuche money as had been reyſed of the cõmons. Cap. lxxxi.

¶Of the great dyſcordes that were in Englande/ after the breakynge vp of the frenche armye/ and howe the gouernours about the kynge were conſtrayned by the cõmons of the good townes to make acomptes/ of ſuche money as was come in to their handes/ the ſeaſon that they tuied. Cap. lxxxii.

¶Howe the conſtable of Fraũce and dyuers other lordes and knyghtes of the realme appaylled great prouyſions to go in to Englande to wyn townes and caſtels. Cap. lxxxiii.

¶Howe the duke of Bretayne ſent for all his lordes and knyghtes to come to counſayle vnto Waanes/ and after counſayle he deſyred the conſtable to go and ſe his caſtell of Etrmyne/ and howe he take hym there priſoner/ and the lorde of Beaumanoyre with hym. Ca. lxxxiii.

¶Howe the conſtable of Fraũce was delyuered at the requeſt of the lorde de la Vale/ payenge/ a certayne raunſome: and howe the conſtable delyuered to the duke thre caſtelles and a towne/ and payed a hundred thouſande frankes. Cap. lxxxv.

¶Howe Wryttinges were made at the duke of Bretayns deuyſe/ for the conſtable to render his towne and caſtelles to the duke and to his heyres for euer/ and how they were delyuered to the duke. Cap. lxxxvi.

¶Howe tydynges came to the frenche kynge fro the partyes of Almayne/ the whiche were to hym ryght vnpleaſaunt/ and vnto his vncles. Cap. lxxxvii.

¶Howe the duke of Lãcaſters men aſſayled the towne of Jurence/ and toke it/ for it gaue vp as other dyd. Cap. lxxxviii.

¶Howe the kynge of Portyngale bzente a towne whan he was departed fro Porte/ and beſieged two caſtels. Cap. lxxxix.

¶Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his hoſt came before Feroule and aſſauted it/ and it was won and brought vnder the obeyſaũce of the duke of Lancaſtre. Cap. lxxxx.

¶Howe the frenche ambaſſadours came to the duke of Bretayne/ vpon the takyng of the conſtable of Fraunce/ and of the anſwere that was made to them. Cap. xci.

¶Howe the kyng of Englandes vncles were of one acorde and alyaunce agaynſt the kynge and his counſayle/ and of the murmurynge of the people agaynſt the duke of Irelande/ and of the aunſwere of the londoners to the duke of Glouceſtre. Cap. xcii.

¶Howe the day of accompte came/ and there the offycers appered in the preſens of the kynges vncles / and cõmons of Englande / and howe ſyr Symon Burle was priſoner in the towre of London/ and howe ſyr Thomas Tryuet dyed. Cap. xciii.

¶Howe the kyng of Englande departed fro London/ and howe ſyr Symon Burle was beheeded at London/ and his nephewe alſo/ and howe the duke of Lancaſtre was dyſpleaſed. Cap. xciiii.

¶Howe the counſayle dzewe togyder for the reformacyon of the kynge and of the realme/ and howe by the counſayle of the duke of Irelande/ the kynge was of the accorde to make warre agaynſt his vncles/ and agaynſt the cytes and townes. Cap. xcv.

¶Howe the kynge of Englande made his cõmons to drawe towardes London/ and howe ſyr Roberte Tryuylyen was taken at Weſtmynſter and beheeded/ by the cõmaundement of the kynges vncles. Cap. xcvi.

¶Howe tydynges came to the kynge of the dethe of his knyght/ and demaunded counſayle theron/ and howe he ordayned the duke of Irelande ſouerayne of all his menne of warre. Capi. xcvii.

¶ Howe ꝑ duke of Irelande sent thre knyghtes to London to knowe some tydynges/ and howe the kynges vncles and they of London went in to the feldes to fyght with the duke of Irelande and his assynpte. Cap. xcbiii.

¶ Howe the kynges vncles wan the iourney agaynst the duke of Irelande/ and howe he fledde/ and dyuers other of his company. Cap. xcix.

¶ Howe the duke of Irelande and his company fled/ and howe the kynges vncles were at Otenforde/ and howe ſyr Nycholas Bramble was beheeded/ and howe the kynge was ſent for by the byſſhoppe of Cannterbury. Capt. C.

¶ Howe by the kynge and his vncles all the lordes of Englande were ſente for to come to Weſtmynſter/ to a generall counſayle there to be holden. Cap. C.i.

¶ Howe the kynge of Portyngale with his puyſſaunce aſſembled with the duke of Lancaſtre and his puiſſaunce/ and howe they coulde nat paſſe the ryuer of Dierne/ and howe a ſquyer of Caſtyle ſhewed theym the paſſage. Capt. C.ii.

¶ Howe the tydynges ſpred abrode/ that the kynge of Portyngale and the duke of Lancaſtre were paſſed the ryuer of Dierne/ and howe it came to the kynge of Caſtylles knowledge/ and howe certayne of the engliſſhe knyghtes came and rode before vyle Arpent/ and howe the kynge of Portugale and the duke of Lancaſtre determyned there to tarry the cõmynge of the duke of Burbon. Cap. C.iii.

¶ Howe the duke of Lancaſtre gaue lycence to his men/ and howe an harauilde was ſent to the kynge of Caſtyle/ and howe thre knyghtes of Englande wente to ſpeake with the kynge of Caſtyle for a ſauf conducte for the dukes men to paſſe thorough his countrey. Capt. C.iiii.

¶ Howe theſe thre knyghtes optayned a ſauf conducte of the kynge of Caſtyle for their people to paſſe/ and howe dyuers of the engliſſhe men dyed in Caſtyle/ and howe the Duke of Lancaſtre fell in a great ſyckneſſe. Capt. C.v.

¶ Howe ſyr Johan Hollande the Duke of Lancaſters conſtable tooke his leaue of the duke/ and he and his wyfe retourned by the kynge of Caſtyle who made hym good chere: and howe ſyr Johan Dambreycourt went to Parys to accomplyſſhe a dede of armes betwene hym and ſyr Bourcquant. Cap. C.vi.

¶ Howe the duke of Burbone departed fro Iuignon to go into Caſtyle with all his hooſt and came to Burgus in Spayne/ and there founde the kynge of Caſtyle: And howe the duke of Lancaſtre herde theſe tydynges/ and howe the duke of Burbone departed fro the kyng/ and went ſtreyght agayne into Fraunce. Capt. C.vii.

¶ Howe the erle of Foiz receyued honourably the duke of Burbon/ and of the great gyftes that he gaue hym/ and howe ſyr Willyam of Lygnac/ ſyr Gaultyer of Paſſackes company departed out of Spayne/ and of the inrydent that foꝛtuned in the towne of ſaynte Bbagon. Capt. C.viii.

¶ Howe the kynge of Caſtyle and his counſayle were yuell content with ſyr Willyam of Lygnac and ſyr Gaultier of Paſſackes company/ and howe the duke of Lancaſtre departed fro ſaynt Jaques to Bayon. Cap. C.ix.

¶ Howe the erle of Armynake tooke great payne to treate with the compaynons/ to departe out of the realme of Fraunce. Cap. C.x.

¶ Howe the erle Reynolde of Guerles/ who had layde all his landes in guage/ & wyſtenat what to do/ came for refuge to the archebyſſhoppe of Coloygne his vncle/ who blamed hym/ and howe ambaſſadours went to Berthaulte of Halaygnes. Cap. C.xi.

¶ Howe the erle Reynolde of Guerles was maryed to Mary doughter to Berthaute of Halaygnes/ by whome he hadde a doughter/ and after maryed agayne in Englande/ and hadde iſſue two ſonnes and a doughter/ and howe ſyr Johan of Bloyes wedded the eldeſt doughter of the Erle of Guerles/ and howe after the countie of Guerles/ remayned with the erle of Guerles yongeſt doughter. Capt. C.xii.

¶ Howe theſe caſtelles of Gaulechy/ Buthe/ and Aull/ came to the duke of Brabant/ and howe the duke of Juipers ſuſtayned the Ayns fars in his countre/ who robbed all maner of people/ and of the great aſſemble that the duke of Brabante made to go to Juipers/ and howe he was diſcomfyted. Cap. C.xiii.

¶ Howe the duke of Brabant dyed/ and howe the

the duke Guillyam of Guerles treated with the duchesse of Brabante to haue agayns the thre castelles/ and what aunswere he had/ and howe he made alyaunce with the kynge of Englande. Cap. C.rrriii.

¶ Howe the duchesse of Brabante sent messangers to the frenche kynge/ complaynynge of the duke of Guerles/ and howe the kynge and his counsayle were sore busyed with incydentes that fell in the realme of Fraunce/ as well for the defyaunces of Guerles/ as the bu syneese in Bretayne. Cap. C.rv.

¶ Howe by a straunge fortune the kynge of Nauer dyed in the cytie of Pampylona/ and howe Charles his sonne was crowned/ and howe Manchadore was besieged by the duke of Berrey/ and howe the duke of Burgoyne sente to the Duchesse of Brabante. Cap. C.rvi.

¶ Howe the frenche men/ after they had brent and rysed the towne of Neaull retourned to their garyson/ and of the tope that the duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse of Brabant made for that dede/ and howe syr Johan Boesme Launce dyscomfyted the englysshe men. Capi. C.rvii.

¶ Howe syr Johan Boesme Launce ledde these prysoners to Mount Ferante/ and howe they of the countrey were gladde whan they herde of this entreprise/ and howe Geronet and his company were sette to raunsome/ and holpuered by the money that Perot of Bierne sent hym. Cap. C.rviii.

¶ Howe Geronet of Mandurat with twelue of his company retourned to Mount ferant/ and howe Perot of Bernoys with four hundred speares wente to Mount Ferante/ and wolde nat entre in to the towne by none other way but in at the gate. Cap. C.rix.

¶ Howe Geronet lette in Perot le Bernoys and his company in to the towne of Mount ferant/ wherof the countrey was a frayde/ and howe the kynge and his vncles depnge at Parys were therwith sore displeased/ and also the erle Dolphyn of Auuergne. Cap. C.rx.

¶ Howe Perotte le Bernoys and his company tooke their counsayle/ and determyned nat to kepe the towne of Mount ferant/ and howe the sayd Perot and his company depar ted thens by nyght withall their pyllage and prysoners/ and wente and refreshed them in the towne of Dusat. Cap. C.rxi.

¶ Howe they of the towne of Clermounte made a skrimysshe with these pyllers that had taken and robbed the towne of Mont ferant/ at the gates of the towne. Cap. C.rxii.

¶ Howe the duke of Berrey marryed the lady Mary his doughter/ to the erle of Blopes sonne/ and howe the same yere the sonne of the duke of Berrey marryed the lady Mary of Fraunce/ suster to the ponge kynge Charles of Fraunce. Cap. C.rxiii.

¶ Howe/ after the departynge of the duke of Lancastre/ all that euer he had wonne in Galyce/ the frenche men recouered it in lesse than fyftene dayes/ and howe the Englysshe men that had ben there in that warre/ declared and spake yll of the countrey of Galyce/ and howe the frenche kynge sente for the duke of Irelande. Cap. C.rxiiii.

¶ Howe the constable of Fraunce wolde nat accorde that the kynge shulde goo in to Almaygne/ because of the incydentes of the realme/ and howe the duke of Bretaygne fournysshed his garysons/ and made alyaunce with the kynge of Englande/ and with the kynge of Nauerre/ and of the armye made by the englysshe men. Cap. C.rxv.

¶ Howe the Brabansoys layde syege to the towne of Graue/ and howe the Constable of Fraunce tooke sayne Walo and sayne Mathewes/ and sette there men in garysone/ and howe the duke of Lancastre was at Bayon/ greatly dyscomfyted in that he coulde get no maner of ayde. Cap. C.rxvi.

¶ Howe the duke of Berrey sente letters to the duke of Lancastre to Bayon/ and howe the duke sente the coppe of the same letters in to Foyse and in to Nauerre/ to the entent to haue them publysshed in Spayne/ and howe the duke of Bretaygne demaunded counsayle of his men in all his busyneese. Capi. C.rxvii.

¶ Howe the duke of Bretayne holpuered by the thre castelles of syr Myuet of Clysson/ and howe he receyued lyouesly the lorde of Coucy and his company ambassadours fro the frenche kynge/ and howe the duke of Lancastre made great chere to syr Helyon of Lignacke seneschall of Xaynton/ ambassadour fro the duke of Berrey. Cap. C.rxviii.

Howe

¶ Howe the kynge of Caſtyle ſente his ambaſſadours to the duke of Lancaſtre to treate for a marryage to be hadde betwene his ſonne and the dukes doughter/ and howe at the requeſt of the duke of Berrey a truſe was made by the duke of Lancaſtre in the countreys of Tholouſyn and Kouergne. Cap. C.rrrr.

¶ Howe the Dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne departed to go to Bloyes/ and howe the duke of Bretayne came thyder/ and howe the dukes dyd ſo moche that they had hym to Parys/ in maner agaynſt his wyll. Capt. C.rrr.

¶ Howe Lewes kynge of Cycyle entred in to Parys in eſtate royall/ and howe the duke of Bretayne entred on the nyght of ſaint Johan the Baptyſt/ the pere of grace a thouſande thre hundred/ fourſcore and ſeuyn/ and of a dede of armes done before the kynge at Wouterean fault pon/ betwene a knyght of Englande called ſyr Thomas Harpyngham/ and a frenche knyght named ſyr Johan de Barres. Capt. C.rrri.

¶ Howe the duke of Bretaygne entred in to Parys/ and came to the caſtell of Loure to the frenche kynge. Cap. C.rrrii.

¶ Howe the erle of Arundell beynge on the ſee more than a moneth/ came to the hauen of Maraunt a lytell fro Rochell: and howe he ſent a meſſanger to Perot le Bernoys/ that he and other capptayns ſhulde kepe the feldes. Capt. C.rrriii.

¶ Howe they of Marrops and Rochelloys were ſore afrayde of the Engliſſhe men/ that were a lande/ and howe they of Rochell made a ſkrympſſhe with theym/ and howe after the engliſſhe men had pylled the countrey about Maraunt they drewe agayne to the ſee/ with their pyllage whiche was great. Capt. C.rrriiii.

¶ Howe Perot le Bernoys and his compaynons reſorted agayne to their holdes/ with great pyllage/ and howe the duke of Guerles coulde haue no ayde of the Engliſſhe men/ to reyſe the ſiege before Graue/ and howe the brabanſois made a brige ouer the ryuer of meuſe the whiche they of Guerles dyd breake/ byrn/ and byſtroy/ as ye ſhall here after. Capt. C.rrrv.

¶ Howe the Brabanſoys paſſed the ryuer through the towne of Kouelen ouer ỹ brydge there/ and ſo entred in to Guerles. Than the duke departed fro Nymay with thre hundred ſpeares and came agaynſt them and diſcomfyted them/ betwene Kauelen and the towne of Graue. Cap. C.rrrvi.

¶ Howe the duke of Guerles after he had diſcomfyted the brabanſoys/ he went agayne to Nymay/ and howe tydynges came to the frenche kynge/ and howe the kynge ſent ambaſſadours to the kynge of Almayne. Capt. C.rrrvii.

¶ Howe the frenche kynge gaue leaue to the duke of Bretaygne to retourne in to his countrey/ and howe the cõtrey of Brabant wolde nat conſent to the kynges paſſage nor his army/ and howe the ambaſſadours of Fraunce ſpedde. Capt. C.rrrviii.

¶ Howe the erle of Bloys ſent to the frenche kinge two hundred ſpeares/ and howe the duke of Lorayne and the lorde Henry of Bare came to the kynge/ and howe the dukes of Juyers and of Guerles knewe that the frenche kynge came on them. Capt. C.rrrix.

¶ Howe ſyr Hellyon of Lygnacke made his repoꝛte to the duke of Berrey/ and howe the lordes of Scotlande aſſembled togydder in the eyte of Berdane/ and determyned to reyſe vp an armye to entre in to Englande/ and of an engliſſh ſquyer who was taken by the ſcottes/ who knewe the ſecretes of bothe realmes Englande and Scotlande. Capt. C.rl.

¶ Howe kyng Richarde yelded hym ſelfe to the erle of Derby to go to London. Cap. fo. CCC.rl.

¶ Howe the erle Duglas wan the penon of ſir Henry Percy/ at the barryers vpon Newe caſtell vpon Tyne/ and howe the ſcottes brent the caſtell of Pondlen/ and howe ſyr Henry Percy and ſyr Rafe his brother tooke aduyſe to folowe the ſcottes/ to conquere agayne the penon that was loſt at the ſkrympſſhe. Capt. C.rli.

¶ Of the ſtate of quene Iſabell of Englande/ and howe ſhe had all newe plones apoynted to wayte vpon her/ and howe kynge Richarde was ſette in the towre of London. Capt. CC.rlii.

¶ Howe ſir Henry Percy and his brother with a good nombre of men of armes and archers/ went after the ſcottes to wyn agayne his penon/ that the erle Duglas had won before

foꝛe Newcastell vpõtyne: and howe they aſſayled the ſcottes beſoꝛe Noũtbertke in their longynges. Cap. C.xliii.

¶Howe the erle James Duglas by his baꝛyauntneſſe encoꝛaged his men/ who were reculed/and in a maner diſconfited/ and in his ſo doynge he was wounded to dethe. Capt. C.xliii.

¶Howe in this bataile ſir Rafe Percy was ſoꝛe hurte/and taken pꝛiſoner by a ſcottiſſhe knyght. Cap. C.xliiii.

¶Howe the ſcottes wanne the bataile agaynſt the Engliſſhe men beſyde Otterbꝛidge/ and there was taken pꝛiſoners ſir Hery and ſir Rafe Percy: & howe an Engliſſh ſquier wolde nat yelde hym/ no moꝛe wolde a ſcottiſſh ſquyer/and ſo were ſlayne bothe: and howe the byſſhoppe of Durham and his cõpany were diſconfyted amonge them ſelfe. Capt. C.xlv.

¶Howe ſir Mathewe Redman departed fro the bataile to ſaue hym ſelfe/ and howe ſir James Lymſey was taken pꝛiſoner by ỹ byſſhoppe of Durham: and howe after the bataile ſcurrers were ſent foꝛthe to diſcouer the countrey. Cap. C.xlvi.

¶Howe the ſcottes departed & caryed with them the erle Duglas deed/ and buryed hym in the abbey of Nmayes: and howe ſir Archambault Duglas and his company departed fro beſoꝛe Carlyle/ and retourned in to Scotlande. Cap. C.xlvii.

¶Howe the duke of Julyers came and excuſed hym ſelfe/of the defyaunce that his ſon the duke of Guerles had made to the Frenche kyng/ and ſo became his ſubiette: and of dyuers reates of armes done bitwene the frẽche men and the almaygnes/ beſoꝛe Rencongne. Cap. C.xlviii.

¶Howe the duke of Julyers and the archebyſſhop of Colloygne departed fro the Frenche kyng/ and wente to Nimaye to the duke of Guerles: and howe by their meanes he was reconſyled/ and bꝛought to peace with the Frenche kynge and with the duchelle of Bꝛabant. Cap. C.xlix.

¶Howe the erle of Arundell and the knyghtes of Englande beyng on the ſee/by foꝛtune of the wynde came to the palyce beſyde Rochell/ whoſe beynge there was ſignifyed to ſir Loyes of Fancere/ and of the departyng of the erle of Arundell. Cap. C.l.

¶Howe the admyꝛall of Fraunce was oꝛdayned by the Frenche kynge and his counſayle/ as ambaſſadour to go to the kynge of Caſtile: and howe the duke of Berrey ſent to the erle of Foize/ to treate foꝛ a marryage bytwene the duke of Berrey & the erles doughter of Bolonge. Cap. C.li.

¶Howe Geffray Tete Noyꝛe dyde chole a capitayne ouer his company/ and howe he made his teſtament and ſo dyed: And howe the duke of Guerles departed fro his countrey to go in to Pꝛuce/ and of the incydences that fell to hym in the lande of the duke of Stulpe/ where he was taken pꝛiſoner and diſconfyted. Cap. C.lii.

¶Howe ſir Johan of Vyen dyde his meſſage to kyng Johan of Caſtyle fro the frenkynge and his counſayle/and what anſwere the kynge of Caſtyle made to hym. Capt. C.liii.

¶Howe ſir Loyes of Fancere went to ſe the erle of Foize at Oꝛthays: and howe beſoꝛe the duke of Lancaſtre at Burdeux there were dedes of armes done/bytwene fyue Frenche men and fyue Engliſſhe men: and howe the duchelle of Lancaſtre went with her doughter in to Caſtyle to kyng Johñ. Cap. C.liiii.

¶Howe the duchelle of Lancaſtre departed fro the kyng of Caſtyle/and wente to Nantuell to bꝛing her fathers bones to Cluyle: & howe the Frenche kyng ſent ambaſſadours to the erle of Foize/to treate foꝛ the mariage of the duke of Berrey his vncle/ with therle of Boloyns doughter. Cap. C.lv.

¶Howe certaygne wyſe men treated foꝛ a peace to endure foꝛ thze yere bytwene Fraũce and Englaude/and all their alyes/ aſwell on the one parte as on the other/ by lãde and by ſee. Cap. C.lvi.

¶Of the oꝛdynaunce/ of the entre of quene Iſabell in to the towne of Paris. Ca. C.lvii.

¶Howe the loꝛde of Caſtell mozant/ whom therle of ſaynt Poule had leſte behynde hym in Englande/ retourned in to Fraunce with the charter of the truſſe/ ſealed by kynge Richarde and his vncles/to endure thze yere by ſee and by lande. Cap. C.lviii.

¶The marryage of kynge Loyes ſonne to the duke of Anjou/to the doughter of kynge Peter of Arragone/ and howe he went with the quene of Naples his mother to Auignon to ſe pope Clement. Cap. C.lix.

Howe

¶ Howe the frenche kyng had desyre to go and vysyte ꝑ farre partes of his realme. and howe he went hyrste in to Burgoyne/ and to Iuignone to se pope Clement. Cap. c.lx.
¶ Howe sir Peter Courtney cãe in to Fraũce to do armes with sir Guye of Tremoyle/ and howe the lorde of Clary conueyed hym/ and by what occasyon he dyde armes with hym in the marchesse of Calis. Cap. c.lxi.
¶ Howe the iustes at sayne Inguelyert/ otherwyse called Sandyngfelde/ were enterpryled/ by sir Raynolde of Roye / the ponge sir Boucyquaut/ and the lorde of sayne Pye. Capi. C. lxii.
¶ Of the complaynetes made to the frenche kynge by the people of Languedocke/ in the towne of Belyers agaynst Betysache/ treasourer to the duke of Berrey/ of the great extorcyons that he had made/ and of his confessyon: and of the cruell dethe that he habde in the sayd towne. Cap. C.lxiii.
¶ Howe the frenche kyng beynge at Tholous sent for the erle of Foyse who came thyder/ and dyd homage to the kyng for the countie of Foyse. Cap. C.lxiiii.
¶ Of the feate and coupnaũt that was done betwene the kynge and the duke of Thouraine his brother/ whiche of them shulde soneest come to Parys fro Mountpellyer/ whiche is a hundred and fyftie leages a tonder/ eche of them but with one knyght.
Capi. C. lxv.
¶ Of the dethe of pope Urbayne of Rome/ called the Antepape: & howe pope Clement wrote to the frenche kyng and to his vncles and to the vnyuersite / and of the electyon of pope Bonyface by the cardynals of Rome. Capi. C.lxvi.
¶ Of the yeldynge vp and takynge of the stronge castell of Uanchadoze in Lymosyn/ of olde / parteynynge to sir Geffray Teate Noyre. Cap. C. lxvii.
¶ Of the dedes of armes at sayne Inguyberts/ contynewyng thyrtie dayes/ agaynst all cõmers of the realme of Englande / & other countreis: euery manne thre courses.
Capi. C. lxviii.
¶ Of the enterpryse and voyage of ꝑ knyghtes of Fraunce and Englande/ and of the duke of Burbone/ who was as chiefe of that armye/ at the requeste of the genouoys to go in to Barbary/ to besiege the stronge towne of Affryke. Cap. C.lxix.
¶ Of a capitayne a robber and a pyller of the countre called Aymergot Marcell/ who helde a strong castell in the marchesse of Rouergne/ called the Roche of Uandoys / and howe it was besieged by the vicount of Meaulx/ and of the takyng therof: and howe Aymergot was taken and brought to Parys. Capi. C.lxx.
¶ Howe the Chrysten lordes and the genouoys beyng in the yle of Conymbres at ancre/ departed thens to go and lay siege to the strong cytie of Affryke in Barbary: & howe they mayntayned the siege. Cap. C.lxxi.
¶ Howe after this aduenture and dõmage/ that fell to the chrysten men by reason of this assaute/ before the towne of Affryke / & that so many knyghtes and squyers were dede/ they mayntayned them selfe moze wyselyer after/ than they dyde before / and contynued their siege a longe season after. Cap. c.lxxii.
¶ Of a feest and iustes made by the kyng of Englande in London / whyle the Chrysten knyghtes and squyers were at the siege before the towne of Affryke agaynst the sarasyns/ and howe this feest was publysshed in dyuers countreis & landes. Cap. C. lxxiii.
¶ Howe and by what indydent ꝑ siege was reysed before the towne of Affryke / and by what occasyon/ and howe euery man retourned to their owne countreis. Cap. c.lxxiiii.
¶ Of thenglysh knyghtes that were sente to Parys to the frenche kyng/ fro the kyng of Englande and his vncles/ to treate for a peace. Capi. C.lxxv.
¶ Of the dethe of kynge Johan of Castyle/ and of the crownynge of kynge Henry his sonne. Cap. C.lxxvi.
¶ Of the army of the ponge erle Johan of Armynake/ and of the voyage that he made in to Lombardy/ & howe he dyed at the siege before the towne of Alexãdre. Cap. c.lxxvii.
¶ Howe sir Peter of Craon fell in the frenche kynges displeasure and in the Duke of Thourayns/ and after he was receyued by the duke of Bretayne. Cap. C.lxxviii.
¶ Of the dethe of the ponge erle Loyes of Chastellon/ sonne to therle Guye of Blays. Cap. C.lxxix.
¶ Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Salcone of Foyse/ and howe the erle of Chastellon cãe to his enheritaunce. Cap. C.lxxx.

Howe

The table.

¶ Howe the treatie of peace renewed at Tournes in Thourayne / betwene the Frenche kynge and the duke of Bretayne / and of the mariage of the doughter of Fraunce to the soune of Bretayne / and of Johan of Bretayne erle of Pembrocke and the doughter of the duke of Bretayne. Cap. C.lxxxi.

¶ Howe the erle of Bloyes Mary of Bamure his wyfe lefte the countie of Bloyes / and all their landes to ꝑ duke of Thourayn the frenche kynges brother. Capi. C.lxxxii.

¶ Howe sir Roger of Spayne and sir Espayne du Lyon spedde / with the frenche kynge and his counsayle / for the Vycount of Chastellons dulynelle / and howe he was set in possession in the countie of Foise / and of the money that he payde. Cap. C.lxxxiii.

¶ Of the great assemble that was made at Ampence / of the frenche kynge and his counsayle / and of the kyng of Englandes vncles on the treatie of peace. Cap. C.lxxxiiii.

¶ Howe sir Peter of Craon throughe yuell wyll / by subtile crafte / beate downe sir Olyuer of Clysson / wherwith the kynge and his counsayle were sore displeased. Cap. C.lxxxv.

¶ Howe in great diligence the Prouost of Paris pursued sir Peter of Craon. Capi. C.lxxxvi.

¶ Of the great armye and voyage that the frenche kyng purposed to make in to Bretayne agaynst the duke / bycause he sustayned sir Peter of Craonne: and howe in that voyage the kyng fell sicke / wherby the voyage brake. Cap. C.lxxxvii.

¶ Howe the duke of Thourayne brother to the frenche kynge / resigned the Duchy of Thourayne in to the kynges handes / and howe by exchaunge the kynge gaue hym the duchy of Olyaūce / and so euer after he was called the duke of Olyaunce. Cap. C.lxxxviii. fo. vii. fo. CC.xxxiii.

¶ Howe the dukes of Burgoyn and of Berrey vncles to the frenche kynge had the gouernaunce of the realme: and howe they vsed and tokē suche as gouerned the kyng before. Cap. C.lxxxix.

¶ Howe sir Olyuer of Clysson constable of Fraunce departed out of Paris / after the answere that the duke of Burgoyne had made hym / and went to Mount le Henry / and so thens in to Bretayne. Cap. C.xc.

¶ Howe the treuse whiche was ordeyned by twene Englande and Fraunce for .iii. yeres was renewed. Cap. C.xci.

¶ Of the aduenture of a Damsell that was made at Paris in lykenesse of woodhouse / wherin the frenche kynge was in parell of dethe. Cap. C.xcii.

¶ Howe pope Bonyface and the cardynals of Rome / sente a Frere a wyse clerke to the frenche kyng. Cap. C.xciii.

¶ Howe the mariage was treated of ꝑ noble Philyppe of Arthoys erle of Ewe / and the lady Mary of Berrey wyfe to the doughter to the duke of Berrey / and howe he was admytted constable of Fraunce. Cap. C.xciiii.

¶ Of the forme of the peace / made betwene the frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande by meanes of the four dukes / vncles to eche kynges. Cap. C.xcv.

¶ Of the dethe of pope Clymēt at Auignon and of the electyon of pope Benedic. Capi. C.xcvi.

¶ Of a clerke named maister Johan of Mauraines. Capi. C.xcvii.

¶ Howe the kyng of Englande gaue to the duke of Lancastre and to his heyres for euer the duchy of Acquitayne: and howe the kynge prepared to go in to Scotlande / and the duke in to Acquitayne. Cap. C.xcviii.

¶ Of the dethe of quene Anne of Englande wyfe to kynge Richarde / doughter to ꝑ kynge of Boeme and Emperour of Almayne. Capi. C.xcix.

¶ Howe sir Johā Froissart arryued in Englande / and of the gyfte of a boke that he gaue to the kyng. Capi. CC.

¶ Of the refuse of them of Acquitayne / made to the duke of Lancastre / and howe they sente in to Englāde to the kynge and his counsayle / shewyng hym the wyll of the hole countrey of Acquitayne. Cap. CC.i.

¶ The deuyse / and of the conquest that kynge Richarde had made in Scotlande / and howe he brought to his obeysaunce foure kynges of that countrey. Cap. CC.ii.

¶ Of the ambassade that the kynge of Englande sent in to Fraūce / to treate of the mariage betwene the lady Isabell the frenche kynges eldest doughter / and hym self / and of the iouyngnes that were they hadde. Cap. CC.iii.

¶ Of a squyer named Robert the Vernyle / howe he

howe he was sent to the treaties of the peace holden at Valyngham/ and howe he was after sente in to Englande to kynge Richarde and his uncles. Cap. CC.iiii.
¶Of the delyuerannce of the lorde de la Riuer and sir Johñ le Mercier/ and howe they were putte out of prisone. Capi. CC.v
¶Of the peace that was had betwene the duke of Bretaygne and ye Dipuer of Clysson. Cap. CC.vi.
¶Howe the kynge of Hungry wrote to the Frenche kynge the state of the great Turke/ and howe Johan of Burgoyne eldest sonne to the duke of Burgoyne/ was chiefe heed of the armye that went thyder. Fo. cc.lxiii.
¶Howe the erle of Ostrenaunt enterprised to go in to Fryse. Cap. cc.viii.
¶Of the iudgement made in the Parlyament/ for the quene of Naples agaynste sir Peter of Craon. Cap. CC.ix.
¶Of the conclusyon of the mariage taken at Paris/ betwene the kynge of Englande and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge/ and howe the duke of Lancastre remayned. Cap. CC.x.
¶Howe the great turke beyred the soudan and many other kynges Sarasyns to ayde hym with men of warre to resyst agaynst the christen men / and howe many valyaunt Sarasyns came to hym out of farre countreys. Cap. CC.xi.
¶Howe the lorde of Coucy and other lordes of the christen men/ about a.xv.hundred speares discomfyted a fyue thousande Turkes/ duryng the the siege before Nicopoly. Cap. CC.xii.
¶Howe the peace betwene Englande and Fraunce contyneued/ and of the mariage of the kyng of Englande with the doughter of Fraunce. Cap. CC.xiii.
¶Howe the erle of Heynaulte and the Erle of Ostrenaunt his sonne / made a great armye of men of armes/ knyghtes and squyers to go in to Fryse. Cap. CC.xiiii.
¶Of the armye that the Frenche kyng sent in to Fryse in the ayde of his cosyns/ and the lorde Valeran erle of Saynt Poule and the lorde Charles de la Bryche were capitayns. Cap. CC.xv.
¶Howe the mariage of the kynge of Englande to the doughter of Fraunce was ordayned: and howe the Frenche kyng delyuered his doughter to the kynge of Englande in his tent/ betwene Arde and Calais. Cap. CC.xvi.
¶Howe the siege before Nicopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy/ and howe the Frenche men were discomfyted: and howe the hungaryons fledde. Cap. CC.xvii.
¶Of the pouerte and misery that the christen knightes of Fraunce and other nacions endured/ in the compuge home to their countrees. Cap. CC.xviii.
¶Howe the trewe tydynges of the batayle in Turkey was knowen in the Frenche kynges house. Cap. CC.xix.
¶Howe the duchesse of Orleaunce/ doughter to the duke of Myllayne/ was hadde in suspecte of the Frenche kynges sychenesse. Capi. CC.xx.
¶Howe the duke of Burgoyn ye duches his wyfe tooke great dylygence to fynde the meanes to redeme out of prisone the Erle of Neuers their sonne/ and the other prisoners beyng in Turkey. Cap. CC.xxi.
¶Howe the Duke of Glouceſtre subtelly sought out the meanes/ howe to distroy kynge Richarde of Englande his nephewe. Cap. CC.xxii.
¶Howe the duke of Glouceſtre was taken by the erle Marshall/ by the comaundement of the kynge. Cap. CC.xxiii.
¶Howe the lordes of Fraūce retourned by see to Kempre / and of the pyrates they founde by the waye. Capi. CC.xxiiii.
¶Howe after the retourne of the lordes of Fraunce/ the Frenche kynge entended what he myght to sette a concorde and peace in the churche. Cap. CC.xxv.
¶Of the dethe of ye duke of Glouceſtre and of the erle of Arundell/ and howe the kynges uncles and the Londoners tooke the mater. Cap. CC.xxvi.
¶Of the great armye that was made in the cyte of Keynes/ as well by the Emperoure/ as of the realme of Fraunce / on the state of holy churche. Cap. CC.xxvii.
¶Howe the erle Marshall in Englande appealed by guage of bttraunce therle of Derby/ sonne to the duke of Lancastre/ in the presence of the kynge and his counsayle. Cap. CC.xxviii.
¶Howe kyng Richarde gaue sentence/ wherby he banyſhed out of Englande the erle of Derby

Derby for ten yere/ and therle Marshall for euer. Cap. CC.xxxi.
¶ Howe the erle of Derby departed fro Lõdon to go in to Fraunce / and the erle Marshall went in to Flaũders and so in to Lombardy. Cap. CC.xxx.
¶ Howe the lorde Guyllyam erle of Ostrenaunt sent to his colyn the erle of Derby certayne messangers/ and howe the erle came to Parys/ and howe he was receyued. Capi. CC.xxxi.
¶ Howe the treatie that had been at Reynes bytwene the Frenche kynge and the kyng of Almaygne/ concernyng the vnyte of ỹ churche was folowed: and howe the byll hoppe of Cambrey was sent by the sayd kynges to Rome and to Auignon / to them that wrote them selfe popes/ to thentent that they shuld depose them selfe fro their papalytees/ & submytte them to the ordre of these two kynges. Cap. CC.xxxii.
¶ Howe the Frẽche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble me of his realme with the vnyuersyte of Parys / to take counsayle howe they shulde ordre pope Benedic at Auignon. Cap. CC.xxxiii.
¶ Of the answere of the duke of Lancastre to the knight sent to hym fro his sonne therle of Derby / and howe the duke of Lancastre dyed. Capi. CC.xxxiiii.
¶ Howe the dethe of the duke of Lancastre was knowen in Fraunce/ the kynge of Englande wrote in maner of rope to the Frenche kynge therof/ and wrote nothyng therof to therle of Derby/ who was the dukes son. Capi. CC.xxxv.
¶ Of the treatie of a marrage bytwene the erle of Derby & the duke of Berreys doughter/ and howe kyng Richarde of Englande dyde lette it/ by the erle of Salisbury. Cap. CC.xxxvi.
¶ Howe kynge Richarde ordayned to go in to the marchelle of Irelande. Cap. CC.xxxvii.
¶ Howe the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury was sente in to Fraunce to therle of Derby/ fro the Londoners and other counsayls of Englande/ to haue hym to retourne in to Englande. Cap. CC.xxxviii.
¶ Howe the erle of Derby toke leaue of the Frenche kyng/ and went to his colyn the duke of Bretayne. Cap. CC.xxxix.
¶ Howe the erle of Derby arryued in Englande/ and howe he was receyued of ỹ Lõdoners. Capi. CC.xl.
¶ Howe tidynges cãe to kynges Richarde of the cõmyng of therle of Derby with great puissaunce. Capi. CC.xli.
¶ Howe kyng Richarde of Englande resigned the crowne and the realme in to the handes of the erle of Derby duke of Lancastre. Cap. CC.xlii.
¶ Of the coronacyon of kynge Henry duke of Lancastre by the consent of the realme / & the maner of the feest. Cap. CC.xliv.
¶ Howe newes of the takyng of kyng Richarde was knowen in Fraunce/ by the commynge thyder of the lady Coucy/ and howe the Frenche kynge was displeased. Cap. CC.xlvi.
¶ Howe the Frenche kyng reysed vp an armye to sende vpon the tronters of Englãde. Cap. CC.xlviii.
¶ Of the dethe of kynge Richarde of Englande / and howe the treuse bytwene Englande and Fraunce was renewed/ and also of the deposycion of pope Benedic at Auignon. Cap. CC.xlix.

¶ Finis.

¶ Howe sir Johñ Bourchier gouernour of Gaunt during the truse/ had newe victayled the towne of Gaunt/ And howe a maner of people called compoysels dyde moche hurte in the countre. Capitulo Primo.

SIr Johñ Bourchier who had ꝑ gouernyng of Gaũt vnder kynge Rycharde of Englande/ & the capitayns of the cõmontie of the towne/ as Peter de Bayes/ frãces Ateman/ and Peter le Wyttre. They ꝓuyded surely for the warre/ and duryng the truse/ they had greatly victayled and refressshed the towne with all ꝓuision parteynyng to the warre: and also the castell of Gauure/ and other places vnder their rule.

In the same season there was a cõpany of cutters gadered togyder in the wode of Nespayle/ and there they had fortifyed a house/ so that it coude nat lightly be wonne. They were people chased out of Flos/ of Grantmount/ and out of other places in Flaũders/ and had lost all that euer they had and wyll nat how to lyue/ but by robbyng and pillyng/ where soeuer they coude gete it: so that there was as than no spekynge but of these pygges of Nespayle. This woode is betwene Reguays and Grauntmount/ Inghien and Lylen: they dyde moche hurt in the lordshipp of Athe/ & in the lande of Floberge and of Lyssues/ and in the lande of Wanghien. and these pyllers were borne out by them of Gaunt/ for vnder the colours of them they dyde moche hurt as in robbynge and sleynge. They wolde go in to Heynalte and take men and women in their beddes/ and leade them to their fortresse and raunsome thẽ at their pleasure: they made warre to euery man. The capitayne of Athe/ who was called Baudrius de la Nocte/ layde often tymes awayte for them/ but he coude neuer trappe them/ they knewe so many shyftes. They were so fearꝺ in the cõtrey of Heynalte and Brabant/ that none durst go that waye in to the countre.

THe duke of Burgoyne on the other parte/ for the warr that he loked for/ he gat hym ſshed and ꝓuyded for all his townes in Flãders. There was capitayne of Bruges the lorde of Gupsselles/ and of Courtrey sir Johan Jeumount/ and sir Wyllyam of Namure. As than sir Wyllyam of Gupsselles was lorde of Wan/ and of Courtray sir Johan Jeumount and sir Peter of Neyper. In lykewise in all the townes on the fronter of Fraunce/ there were men of warre set by the duke of Burgoyne. In the towne of Ardenbourche/ there was in garyson sir Guy of Pontaillyer marshall of Burgoyn/ sir Ryflarte of Flaunders/ sir Johan of Jeumont/ sir Henry of Coynge/ the lorde of Montigny in Oistrenant/ the lorde of Longueuall/ sir Johan Barnet/ sir Peter Bayleull/ Philpot Gany/ Raoleyn de la Foley/ and dyuers other. These men of armes were two hundred/ and so they toke aduyse togyder/ and were in wyll to ryde in to the foure crafftes and distroy that countre/ for moche vitayle came fro thens in to Gaũt. And so on a day they departed and toke that way/ and the same day that the frenche men were rydden forthe/ there was rydden forthe out of Gaunt a two thousande men mete for the warre/ and Fraũces Ateman was their capitayne/ And so sodaynly they mette with the frenchmen in a village: and whan eche of them knewe other they sawe well they shulde haue bataple. Than the frenchmen valiantly set fote to the erthe and approched their ennemyes/ and the gauntoyse in lykewise set on them. There they beganne to shote and to fight eche with other: they were on suche a place that the gauntoyse coude nat passe at their aduaũtage. there was a sore batayle and many feates of armes done on bothe partes/ and dyuers caste to the grounde. Sir Ryflart of Flaunders was they a good knight/ and dyd valiantly. The knightes and squyers fought valiantly with the gaũtoyse/ & so it behoued them to do/ for there was no raunsome. But finally the gauntoyse were of suche nombre that they obteyned the place/ and the frenchmen were constrayned to lepe on their horses or els they had been all lost/ for the gauntoyse surmounted them. And there was slayne sir Johñ Varlet/ sir Peter of Bailleule Bell Forrier/ Philyppe of Gancy/ Raolen de la Foley/ and dyuers other whiche was great domage. And the other were fayne to flye and to entre in to Ardebourcke/ or els they had ben deed without recouerie. And after this aduenture the bycount of Meaulx was sent in garyson to Ardenbourcke/ with a certayne nombre of men of armes/ and they newly repayred the towne: and he had with hym a hundred speares of good men of armes. And as than sir Johan of Jeumont was great bayly of Flaunders/ &

so he had ben two yere before. He was greatly douted in all the countre of Flaunders/ bycause of his valyantnesse/ And whan he might get any of the gauntoyse/ there went no raunsome for them: For he outher putte them to dethe/ or elis cutte of their handes and fete or putte oute their eyen and sende them home/ to gyue ensample to the other gauntoyse. He was so renowmed in Flaunders to do iustyce without pytie/ in correctyng the gauntoyse/ that there was no spekyng in all Flaunders but of hym.

THus in euery Realme the worlde was in trouble/ as well betwene Fraūce and Englande as Castell and Portyngale/ for they the warre was newly renewed. and the lady of Antowe/ who wrote her selfe quene of Naples and of Hierusalem/ was come to Iuygnon to the pope/ and there kepte her house and her son Loyes with her/ who was called kynge of Cecyle/ the whiche his father hadde conquerred. The quenes entencyon was to make warre in Prouence/ without they of that countre wolde take her for their lady/ and become bnder her obeysaūce. And sir Bernarde de la Salle was entred in to Prouence/ and made warre there in her quarell. The same season ỹ lorde of Couscy was also at Iuygnon/ and had layen a. xv. wekes in his bedde/ of a hurte that he hadde on his legge with rennyng of a horse. And whan he was hole/ than he ofte tymes dyde bylet the quene and recōforted her/ the whiche he coulde do right well. The quene tarped there for to abyde for the duke of Berrey/ who was also compynge to Iuignon to speke with the pope/ and to ayde his suster the quene. The frenche kyng and his vncles hadde sente in to Prouence/ sir Loyes of Sanxere marshall of Fraunce with fyue hūdred men of armes to warre in that coūtre/ without they wolde come to obeysaunce vnder the quene. Some submytted themselfe but nat all/ howe be it the cytie of Marcell/ and the grettest parte of the countre pelded them to the quenē/ but the cytie of Ayes in Prouence/ and Tarrascon/ and dyuers knyghtes of the countre wolde nat pelde them to the quene/ sayeng: howe she had no ryght to demaunde the countie of Prouence/ tyll she were peasably receyued for lady/ and her sonne as kynge of Pulle and Calabre in Naples and Cecile. and whan she hath possession of these/ than Prouēce shall obeye her/ as reason requyreth. In those marchesse there made warre for the erle/ Sir Charles de la Paire/ the erle Conuersaunt/ and sir Johan of Luzenbourge his sonne. And with the quene at Iuignon as chefe of her counsayle was sir Johan of Bayllieule.

IN the same season there fell in Lombardye a maruelous influence/ which was moche spoken of/ throughe out all the worlde. and that was of the Erle of Uertus/ called sir Galeas/ and of his brother sir Barnabo/ the grettest in all Lombardy. They had raygned longe and gouerned all Lōbardy lyke two brethern. The one of them ruled nyne cyties and the other tenne. & the cyte of Millayne was gouerned one yer by the one & thother yere by the other. Whan sir Galeas dyed/ he lefte behynde hym a sonne/ who was than erle of Uertus/ & named like his father sir Galeas/ but than swaged the loue betwene him and sir Barnabo his vncle/ for than sir Galeas doughted hym of sir Barnabo his vncle/ leest that he wolde take away his lādes fro him/ lyke as he dyde fro his father. For his vncle of olde tyme toke awaye the lande fro their brother sir Mauffe/ and caused him to dye. So thus therle of Uertus douted hym greatly of his vncle. howe be it he wrought subtelly to bringe hym selfe in surette/ I shall shewe you howe. Sir Barnabo had in vsage/ that all suche landes as he had rule of/ he raunsomed thē so greuously and wolde tare the men two or thre tymes in a yere/ to paye the halfe or thirde parte of their goodes/ and none durst saye agaynst hym for feare. And sir Galeas erle of Uertus dyde other wyse/ for the entent to gete loue he toke none ayde of his men/ but lyued all onely by his reuenewes/ And that rule he kept a fyue yere after the dethe of his father/ so that he had the loue of all Lombardy/ and euery man sayd/ they wolde be gladde to lyue vnder hym. And euery man spake yuell of ỹ Barnabo priuely as they durst/ bycause he toke so excessyue of them. So finally the Erle of Uertus thought to execute his entent/ as he that doughted greatly his vncle/ and as it was sayde/ he sawe some lykelyhode. On a day he sente secretely for suche as he trusted best/ And to some he shewed his entent/ but nat to all/ for feare that his purpose shulde be knowen.

And so it fortuned/ that sir Barnabo on a daye rode for the fro one Castell to another to sporte hym. The erle of Uertus his nephewe knewe therof and layde for hym thre bussheme utes/ to the entent that his vncle shulde nat scape/ for he must nedes at leest passe by one of them. The erle cōmaūded to take hym but nat to slee him/

without he made great defece. So as sir Barnabo roode forthe and thought none puell/ nor was in no feare of his nephewe/ So he fell in the datunger of one of the bullhmentes/ the whi che oppned and approched hym with their spe/ res couched in the rest. sir Barnabo had with hym a squyer of Almaygne/ who came to hym and sayd. Sir/ saue your selfe/ for ponder com pany maketh but puell countenaunce agaynst you/ they are parteyning to youre nephewe sir Galeas/ Sir Barnabo answered/ I knowe nat howe to saue my selfe/ if they owe me any puell wyll/ But I haue done no trespasse to my nephue/ wherby that I ought to flye awaye. so alwayes they of the bullhement drewe neres & neres streight vpon hym. There was a knight of Almaygne with sir Barnabo/ and whan he sawe this company approche to warde his mai ster: He had sir Barnabos swerde in his hãde and drewe it oute of the sheth/ and tooke it his maister and sayd. Sir/ defende your selfe/ and than the knight drewe out his owne swerde lyke a valyant man to stande at his defence/ how be it all aueyled hym no thyng/ For incõtynent he was enuyzoned/ and his mayster also with their ennemyes. and the sayd knight was they slayne/ bycause he putte hym selfe to defence/ wherof sir Galeas was afterwarde tyght sore displeased. So sir Barnabo was there taken for he made no defence/ nor none of his men/ & so he was brought to a castell whey his nephue was/ who was gladde of his comynge. The same day ỹ Barnabos wyfe and chyldren were taken who were to many/ and they were kepte in Myllayne in prison. Than sir Galeas toke all the seignortes/ townes and castels/ that par teyned to sir Barnabo in all Lombardy to his possessyon: and his vncle dyed I can nat saye howe. I thynke he was sette blode in the necke accordynge to the blode letteyng in Lombardy whan they wyll auaũce a mannes ende. Inone these tidynges sprang abrode/ some were glad therof and some were sorie. For this sir Barnabo hadde done in his tyme/ many cruell and horryble dedes/ and ryotuous iustyce without reason/ so that but fewe people complayned his trouble/ but sayde/ He hadde well deserued it. thus ended sir Barnabo/ who had in his dayes raygned puissauntly in Lombardy.

¶ Nowe lette vs retourne to the duke of Bur bons and the Erle of Marchelles army/ & what they dyde in Poictou and in Lymosyn.

THey depted fro Moleyns in Bur bonoyse/ and so rode forthe with great reuell: And the duke had in his company his nephewe Johan of Harcourte. The speyall nom bre of his army came out of Berry/ Auuergne/ Poictou/ Rouergue/ Xaynton/ and Lymosyn/ And they met togyder at Ayorte/ a.rii. leages fro Poictiers. In this meane season sir Wyllm of Lynacke/ a right valyant knyght seneschall of Xaynton/ who was as than gouernoure of Myllayne (in those marchesse) and so he came in to Angoulmoys/ with a certayne nombre of men of armes/ a two hundred: He rested before the castell of the Egle/ in the whiche were Engilsshe men. And all the wynter and somer past before had greatly domaged the countre. than this sir Wyllyam lyghted a fote/ and so dyd all his cõpany/ and valyantly assayled the castell. It was a sore assaute and well contynued/ for they within defended them selfe for feare of their lyues. Sir Wylliam hym selfe that day dyde right noblyp/ and gaue ensample howe his men shulde assayle without any sparynge. This assaut was so well contynued/ that the Castell was taken byforce: the Frenche men entred in by ladders/ & all that were within slayne and taken. Thus this sir Wylliam of Lygnac dyde the first enterprise in that season/ abydinge for the duke of Burbone and his route.

WHan the duke of Burbone was come to Ayorte/ and his company: There he founde a great nombre of men of warre/ abydinge for hym. And there was redy his coslyn the erle of Marche/ with a great nõbre/ and also the Vycount of Tonnerre/ and sir Henry of Thouars seneschall of Lymosyn/ the lorde of Pons/ the lorde of Partency/ the lorde of Thouars/ the lorde of Puysaunce/ and dyuers other barons of Poytou and of Xaynton. And than sir William of Lignacke came to the duke/ who had newly wonne the Castell of the Egle/ wherfore the duke gaue hym great thanks. Whan all these men of warre were assem bled togyder/ they were a seuyn hundred spea res besyde the Genetuops and other barlettes: They were in nombre two thousande fyghtyn ge men. Than they toke aduyse whyder they shulde go/ outher to Vertuell or to Taylbourc or to Mountlewe. And all thynges consyde red/ they determyned to go to Mountlewe/ by cause it was a castell/ standyng on the laundes

of Burdeaux. They thought if they might get that castell all other shulde be the more easyer to wynne. And also than shulde no man come out of Burdeaux without their knowledge. so they rode thyderwarde and passed Ingolesme and so came before Mountlewe and they layd their siege. The chefe leaders of all the dukes hoost was sir James Pourssarte and Johan Bonne Launce. Incontynent they made redy to assayle the castell and so enuyzoned the castell aboute and gaue assaute with great courage and they within defended them selfe valiantly. Surely there was an harde assaute & well contynued and many a proper deve of armes done. For the frenchmen diligently mounted vp on their ladders and fought with daggers hande to hande on the walles. So moche dyde the frenche men that by pure assaute they wan the castell and they within slayne. There were but a fewe that were saued. Whan the frenche men had possession of Mountlewe they newlye furnysshed it with men of warre and other prouysyon. And than they toke the waye to tayllbourche of the whiche forterelle Dynaudon of Perat was capitayne a proper man of armes he made but lytell counte of the frenchmen. and whyle the duke laye at siege before this castell his company wanne two lytell forterelles which had sore harryed the frontiers of Poictou & Lymosyn by reason of the Englysshmen that were in them. These two forterelles were called Troucet and Archat and all that were within were slayne and the castelles delyuered to the of the countre and they dyde beate the downe to the grounde.

Howe the bridge of Taylbourcke was wonne by the frenche men and howe the Englysshe men fortifyed themselfe against the comyng of the frenche men. And howe the admyrall of Fraunce and his rout arryued at Edenborowe in Scotlande.

Cap. secundo.

Thus the siege was layd before Taillbourcke by foure dayes. there was in Taillbourcke a bridge on the ryuer of Charent and the Englysshe men and Gascoyns had well fortifyed it so that all the season before they coude no shyppe passe to Rochell nor in to Xaynton without daunger or by truage. Than the frenche lordes aduysed to wynne the bridge to haue the lesse to do and to lye the more surer in their baskydes. They caused to come to Rochell shippes by the ryuer of Charent and in them certayne Genevoys and crosbowes and made them to scrymysshe with them of the bridge. There was afore assaute for the Englysshe men and gascons had ryght well fortifyed the bridge and valyantly dyde defende the selfe. So they were assayled by lande and by ryuer. Johan the sonne of the erle of Harcourt was there made knight and reysed his baner the duke of Burbone his vncle made him knight. This assaut was well contynued and many a feate of armes they done the Genevoys and crosbowes that were in the shyppes shotte so rudely and so hole togyder at them on the bridge that none of them durste scantely shewe any defence. What shulde I make longe tale. By force of assaut the bridge on the ryuer was wonne and all that were foude theron slayne and drowned none scaped. thus the frenche men had the bridge of Taylbourc their siege was the easyer. It was but thre leages fro Xayntes in the best countre of the worlde.

Of the losse of Taylleboutke they within Dynaudon & other were sore dismayed as they had good cause for they had lost thereby the passage of the ryuer howe be it yet they wolde nat yelde them. They thought the selfe in a stronge place and trusted on some rescue fro Burdeaux. For it was shewed in all those frontiers and englysshe forterelles that the duke of Lancastre or elles the erle of Buckyngham with two thousande men of armes & foure thousande archers shulde come to Burdeaux to syght with the frenche men and to reyse all their siege. Of this they greatly trusted but it fortuned otherwyse as I shall shewe you. It was ordeyned in Englande that the Duke of Lancastre and sir Johan Hollande brother to

the kynge/ Sir Thomas Percy/ sir Thomas Tryuet/ the lorde Fitzwater/ sir Wyllyam wyndesore/ sir Johñ Fitzwaren/ and other barons knightes and squyers with a thousande speares and thre thousande archers/ shulde haue gone to Burdeaux to haue ben there all the somer/ and to haue refresshed Mortayne/ Bouuyll/ and other fortresses in Galcoyne and Laguedocke/ and to fight with the frenche men/ if they founde them in the countrey. And after that they had tarryed there a season/ than to haue gone fro thens in to Castell/ to Bayon/ and to Nauarre: for they were in treatie with the kyng of Nauer. This was ymagined in Englande/ but all tourned to nought/ for whan they knewe the certaynte that the admyrall of Fraūce/ with a thousande speares of chosen knightes and squyers were come in to Scotlande. Than they chaunged their purpose/ and durst sende none of their men oute of the realme/ for they doughted greatly the deedes of the frenche men and Scottes/ ioyned togyder. Also the same tyme there ranne a voyce through all Englande/ howe they shulde be the same somer assayled with the frenchmen in thre gres. One by Bretaygne: for the duke there was become frenche: And another by Normandye/ for the whiche (as it was sayd) The constable of Fraūce made his prouysyon at Harflewe and Depe/ and so a longe the See syde to saynt Valeries and to Crotoy: And the thirde by the Scottes so that for dought of this/ they wolde suffre no knightes nor squyers to go out of Englande/ but made prouysyon to defende their haupns & portes of the see. The same season the Erle of Arundell Richarde was admyrall of the See/ and was on the See/ with a thre or foure score great shyppes/ furnysshed with men of armes and archers. And he kepte small shippes that ranne in and oute/ and viewed the boundes of the yles of Normandy to knowe tidynges.

Nowe lette vs leaue to speke of the duke of Burbone and of the siege of Tayllebourche/ where as he laye a nyne weekes: & let vs shewe howe the admyrall of Fraūce toke lande in the realme of Scotlande/ and what chere they had made to them at their fyrste lodgynge.

The frenche army that went in to scotlande had wynde at wyll. It was in the monethe of Maye/ whan the waters be peasesable and meke/ and the ayre softe and swete. Fyrst they coasted Flaūders/ Holande zelande/ and Frise: and at last aproched to the sight of Scotlande. But are they aryued/ they fell an harde aduenture/ to a ponge knyght of Fraunce a proper man of armes/ called sir Aubert Dagyers. The knyght was yong and of haute courage/ and to shewe his strength and lyghtenesse of body/ he kept vp sleue armed on the walle of the shyppe/ and in the lightynge/ his fete slypped/ and so fell ouer the borde in to the see/ so that he coulde nat be holpen: for incōtynent he sanke downe/ bycause of ỹ weight of his harnes/ & also the ship sayled euer forthe. Of this knightes aduenture/ all the baronnes and knyghtes were sore displeased/ but there was no remedy. And so longe they sayled that they aryued at Edenborowe/ the chiefe towne in Scotlande. And wher as the kyng in tyme of peace moost cōmenly laye. And assoone as the erle Douglas and the Erle Mozette knewe of their cōmynge/ they wente to the hauyn and mette with them/ and receyued them swetely: Sayeng/ howe they were right welcome in to that countrey: And the barons of Scotlande/ knewe ryght well sir Geffray de Charney/ for he had been the somer before two monethes in their company: sir Geffray acquaynted them with the Admyrall/ and the other knyghtes of Fraunce. As at that tyme the kynge of Scottes was nat there/ for he was in the wylde scottysshe: But it was shewed these knightes/ howe the kyng wolde be there shortly/ wherwith they were well content: and so were lodged there about in the vyllages. For Edenborough/ thoughe the kynge kepte there his chefe residence and that it is Parys in Scotlāde/ yet it is nat lyke Tourney or Valencēnes/ for in all the towne there is nat foure thousande houses. Therfore it behoued these lordes and knyghtes to be lodged about in vyllages: As at Donfer/ Melyne/ Cassell/ Dōbare/ Fluesh/ and suche other. Anone tidynges sprange about in Scotlande that a great nombre of men of armes of Fraūce were come in to their countre. Some therat vyde murmure and grudge/ and sayde: Who the deuyll hath sente for theym? What do they here? Can nat we mayntayne our warre with Englande well ynoughe without their helpe? We shall do no good as longe as they be with vs. Let it be shewed vnto them/ that they may retourne agayne. And that we be stronge ynough in Scotlande to mayntayne our warre without theym: And therfore we wyll none of their company. They vnderstande nat vs nor

we them/ therfore we can nat speke togyder. They wyll anone ryse/ and eate vp all that euer we haue in this countrey. They shall doo vs more dispytes and domages/ than thoughe the Englysshe men shulde fyght with vs. For thoughe the Englysshe men brenne our houses we care lytell therfore/ we shall make them agayne chepe ynough/ we are but thre dayes to make them agayne/ if we maye geate foure or fyue stakes and bowes to couer them.

Howe the Frenche men founde a wylde countrey of Scotlande/ and were yuell content with thadmyrall and howe he pacifyed thē with fayre wordes: And howe Fraunces Atreman and his company had nere hande taken Ardenbourcke in Flaūders. Cap. iii.

Thus the scottes sayde in Scotlande/ at the comynge of the frenchmen thyder/ for they dyde lette nothynge by them/ but hated them in their courage and diffamed them in their language/ as moche as they myght/ lyke rude people without hououre as they be. All thynges consydered/ It was to great an aruye of so many noble men to come in to Scotlande/ and knewe no reason why/ a twentie or thyrtie knyghtes of Fraunce/ had been better than all that nombre of fyue hūdred or a thousande/ and the cause why is this.

In Scotlande ye shall fynde no man lyghtlye of honoure nor gentylnesse: They be lyke boyde and sauage people: They wyll be with no man acquaynted/ and are greatly enuyous with the honoure or prosyte of any other man/ and they bought euer to lese that they haue/ for it is a poore countre. And whan the Englysshe men maketh any roode or voyage in to the cōtrey/ as they haue done often before this tyme/ If they thynke to lyue/ they muste cause their prouysion and vitaple to folowe them at their backs/ for they shall fynde nothyng in that cōtrey/ but with moche payne. Nor they shall fynde none ryon to shoe their horses/ nor leddar to make harnesse/ sadelles/ or bridelles: For all suche thynges cometh to them redy made out of Flaunders. And whan that prouysyon fayleth/ there is none to gette in the countrey. Whan the barownes and knyghtes of Fraunce who were wonte to fynde fayre hostrye/ halles hanged/ and goodly casselles and softe bedes to reste in: Sawe them selfe in that necessite: they began to smyle/ and sayd to the admyrall. Sir/ What pleasure hath brought vs hyder/ We neuer knewe what pouertie ment tyll nowe/ We fynde nowe/ the olde sayenge of our fathers and mothers true: Whan they wolde saye. Go your waye: and ye lyue long/ ye shall fynde harde and poore beddes/ whiche nowe we fynde. Therfore/ lette vs go oure voyage that we be come for. Lette vs ryde in to Englāde: The longe tarynge here in Scotlande/ is to vs/ nother honourable nor profytable. The admyrall apeased them as well as he myght/ & sayde. Sirs/ it behoueth vs to suffre a lytell/ and to speke fayre/ sithe we be in this daunger. We haue a great longe waye yet to passe/ and by Englande we can nat retourne: Therfore lette vs take in gree that we fynde/ We can nat be alwayes at Paris or Dygeon/ at Beautie or at Chalous. It behoueth them that wyll lyue in this worlde/ thynkynge to haue honoure/ to suffre somtyme as well pouertie as welth.

Thus sir Johan of Vien admyrall of Fraunce/ apeased his companyons/ with these wordes and suche other/ whiche I can nat all reherce They acquaynted them as mothe as they might with the barownes of Scotlande/ but they were holpyted by them but very lytell: For as I haue sayde before/ there is in the lytell honour/ & of all people yuell to be aquaynted withall. The moost company that the frenche men had/ was the erle Duglas and the erle Mozette. These two lordes dyde them more solace/ than all the resydue of Scotlande. yet there was another thyng that was right harde to the frenchmen/ For whan they were in Scotlande and wolde ryde they foūde horses to dere for/ that that was nat worthe tenne florens they coude nat bye vnder thresore or a hūdred/ and yet with moche payne to gette any for money/ and yet whan they had any horses/ than hadde they nother harnesse/ sadell/ nor bridell/ without they had brought it with them out of Flaūders. In this trouble and daunger were the

frenche men: yea and moreouer / Whyle theyr varlettes went forthe a forragynge / and hadde charged theyr horses with suche as they coulde gette / In theyr returnynge home / the scottes them selfe laye in wayte for theym / and all that they had taken from them / and they well beten and some slayne: so that there was none that durste go a forragynge for feare to be slayne. For in a moneth the frenche men losse of theyr varlettes mo than a hundred: For if they went forthe three or foure togayther / they neuer returned agayne. Thus the frenche men were handeled: And beside that / the kynge of Scottes was desyred to come forthe / and so were the other lordes / knyghtes / and squyers of the realme. But they alwaye answered and sayd: Howe they wolde make no warre in to Englande / as at that tyme. And that they sayd / to thentent that the frenche men shulde paye well for theyr comynge. For or the kyng wolde come out of the wylde scottysshe to Edenborowghe / he demaunded to haue a great somme of money / for hym and for his people: And the admyrall of Fraunce was sayne to promyse and to seale / that the kynge shulde haue a certayne somme of money or he and his company auoyded the Realme: If he had nat done thus / he shulde haue hadde none ayde of the scottes: He was fayne to make that marchaundise or elles a worse. And yet whan he had made the best accorde and apoynt ment that he coude make with theym / he hadde by them but lytell profyte nor helpe / as ye shall here further in the hystorie.

¶ But nowe a lytell I wyll retourne and tell of the aduentures of Flaunders and of the maryage of the ponge frenche kyng / and howe Ardenbourche hadde nere been taken by stelthe / where as the Vycont of Meaulx and sir Iohn of Iesmont laye in garyson.

After the discomfyture that sir Ryflarte of Flaunders had made in the lande of the foure crafts without Gaunt / than he came to Ardenbourche: And thyder was sente in garyson sir Robert of Bethune vycont of Meaulx / and there he foude sir Johan of Jumont and his company: And thyder was sente a.xl. speares knyghtes and squiers / suche as desyred to seke aduentures. Whyle the Vycount was come thider / he entended to fortify and repayre the towne in all poyntes. Fraunces Atreman and they of Gaunt / subtelly ymagyned night and day / howe they might anoye and do domage to theyr enemyes / as they shewed rightwell to theyr neighbours / as Inwarp / Termõde Ardenbourche / Bruges / Danne and Sclufe. They euer ymagined / howe to wynne any of them by crafte: And to say the trouth / they had suche cõpany as were mete to execute suche dedes. So it fortuned / about the ende of Maye Fraũces Atreman and a seuyn thousande with hym departed fro Gaunt / to thentent to wynne Ardenbourche by stelth / and all the knyghtes and squyers therin: And specially they desyred to haue the capitayne sir Johan Jumont / bycause he had done them many great domages / as in takyng and slayng / and puttyng out of theyr eyen / and cuttyng of handes / fete / and parts of theyr men. So thus on a Wednisdaye aboute the dewynge of they day / they came to Ardenbourche / and had with them scalynge ledders redy. The Vycount of Meaulx / sir Johan Jumount / sir Ryflarte of Flaunders / the lorde of Dawerr / sir Tercelette of Montigny / and sir Pardycas of Mount saint Marke / the lorde of Langueuall and sir Johan his sonne / sir Hewe Desnell / the lorde de Lalayne / sir Reynolde of Lõmpe / and dyuers other lay slepyng in theyr beddes / on trust of the watche. Nowe beholde what aduenture they were in. The watche that had watched all nyght / was as than departed / and theyr relefe nat come as than. The same season Fraunces Atreman & the gascoise with theyr ladders were redy come in to the dikes & so cãe to the walles & dzelled by theyr ladders / and began to mount. The same season by aduenture / there was walkynge within the wall / the lorde of saynt Albyne / and with hym a squyer of Picardy named Enguerant de quyn a pycarde with a morespike. I thynke they had ben of the watche the same night / & was nat as than departed / To say the trouthe and they had nat ben / Ardenbourche had been taken / and all the knyghtes in theyr beddes.

Howe the lorde of saynt Albyne & Enguerant de quyn saued Ardenbourche fro takyng / & how the quene of Hungry sente ambassadours in to Fraunce / to mary theyr lord to her eldest doughter. Capi. iiii.

When sir Gouffeaux of Saynt Warryne and Sogue cant sendequen: sawe howe the gauntoys mounted vp the walles by ladders / and they saw why ther was one puttynge his legge ouer the wall / to haue entred in to the towne. they were thā sore abasshed / but yet nat so moche but that they toke comforte to them selfe: For they sawe well if they sledde / the towne were lost without recouery. for they parceyued well that they entrynge was bytwene the departyng of the watche / and the commynge of the reliefe. Than Engueran sayd to the moris pyke: Steppe on forwarde: Beholde yonder the gauntoys are entrynge / helpe to defende vs / or elles the towne is lost. And so they thre went to the same place where as they sawe the gauntoys entrynge / and the pyrate with the moris pyke / strake hym that was entrynge ouer the wall suche a stroke / that he bare hym clene fro the wall and ladder / and so fell downe in to the dyke. & therwith the watche arose / & sawe howe there were in the dykes and there aboute / a great batayle of the gauntoys. Thā he sowned his trumpette: Treason treason. Therwith the towne vprred euery man oute of their beddes / & harkened to the crye / and sawe howe the gauntoys wolde haue stollen their towne. Than they armed them as fast as they might: howe be it for all this the gauntoys dyde all their best to haue entred in to their towne. And the sayde thre persones valyantly defended the walles / more than the space of halfe an houre / agaynst all the comers / the whiche turned to their great prayse. Thā the other lordes and knightes came thyder in good arrap / as the Vycount of Meaulx with his baner before hym / sir Johan of Jenmont / his penon before hym / and sir Ryflarte of Flaunders / and other: and they founde the knight / the squyer / and the moris pyke / fightynge and defendynge the walles. Thā they cryed their crye to the rescue. And whan Fraunces Atreman and the gauntoys parceyued the matter / and howe they hadde fayled of their ententes / they withdrewe them selfe fayre and easely / and reculed their people / and so departed and retourned in to the mile of the foure crafles. And so than they of the garyson of Arbendourke toke more herde to the keypng of the towne than they dyde before / and they honoured greatly among them / the forsayd thre persones / for and they had nat been / the towne had ben lost and all their thotes cutte.

I haue herde here before / howe the duke of Anjou / who called hym selfe kynge of Naples / of Cecyle / and of Hierusalem / made warre thre yeres / In Pule / Calabre / and in Naples / agayns sir Charles de la Payx: and in the makynge of that warre he dyed / and in lyke wise so dyde sir Charles de la Payx. Howe sayd he was slayne in the realme of Hungry by the consentement of the quene / for after the dethe of the kyng of Hungry / bycause this sir Charles was sonne to the kynges brother / therfore he mayntened that the Realme shulde fall to hym: For his uncle the kynge of Hungry after his dethe / lefte behynde hym but doughters. So therfore the quene feared leest he wolde disherete her doughters: And therfore (as it was sayd) she caused this sir Charles de la Payx to be slayne / of whose dethe they was had great maruayle / & so therby the quene was sore enforsed / and of her ponge sonne the kyng beyng at Augnon / & so they made warre in Prouence / the kynge of Hungry lyuenge. The barons and prelates of Hungry counsayled hym to gyue Margarete his eldest doughter / whiche was likely to be a great enheritour to Lopes of Fraunce erle of Valopes sonne / & brother to the frenche kynge / bycause they thought he shulde than abyde among them in Hungry. And whan the kynge was dede / they sent ambassadours in to Fraunce to the kynge and to his uncles / shewyng howe the quene of Hungry wolde haue for her eldest doughter the erle of Valopes. This requeste semed to the kynge and to his uncles / and to the barons of Fraunce / to be right noble and profitable / except one thynge. They thought therby / that the erle of Valopes shulde be very farre of fro his owne nacion / Howe be it all thynges considered / they thought it a noble and a right profitable thyng for the erle of Valopes to be kyng of Hungry / the whiche is one of the greteste realmes in crystendome. So these ambassadours were greteby feested and nobly receyued / and to the queen many great gyftes: And so agayne with them they went to Hungry other ambassadours out of Fraunce: As the bysshop of Mayllerers / and sir Johan la Passon / who by procuracyon generall / whan they were come in to Hungry / he wedded in the name of the erle of Valopes the lady Margarete / and thanne the bysshoppe retourned in to

Fraūce. And also sir Johan Hanon/ who had wedded the lady and lyen by her a bedde/ curtesly/ accordynge to the custome in suche matters requyred. And of this whan he came in to Fraunce/ he shewed letters patentes & publyke instrumentes/ so that they of Fraūce were well content. And so longe after/ the erle of Hanoys wrote hym selfe kyng of Hungry.

Also ye haue herde/ how the duke of Burgoyne and the duke Aubert of Bauier/ lorde of Hepnalte/ Hollande/ zelande/ & Frise/ had maryed their chyldren at Cambray togyther/ At whiche maryage the frenche kyng was with great tryumphe. Some sayde/ howe the same tyme that the frenche kynge and his vncles: the duke of Burgoyne/ the duke of Burbone/ and the duke Aubert were there at Cambray/ & the lady of Burgoyne/ the lady of Brabant/ and the lady of Hepnalte. Howe that by the procurement of the duchesse of Brabante/ there was secretely a treatie of maryage moued betwene the ponge kyng Charles of Fraūce and the lady Isabell/ doughter to duke Stephyn of Bauyer. For kyng Charles of Fraunce that laste dyed before in his bethe bedde/ he ordayned/ that Charles his sonne shulde be maryed in to Almaygne/ if they sawe any place cōuenyent/ whereby the almayns shulde be alyed to Fraūce: For he sawe well/ howe the kyng of Englande was maryed to the kyng of Almaynes suster/ wherby he spedde moche the better. This duchesse of Brabant/ who was a ryght sore ymaginatyue lady/ shewed many reasons to the kynges vncles/ and to his counsayle: sayenge/ howe this lady was doughter to a great lorde in Almaygne/ and the greatteste of all the Bauyers. And howe that therby/ they shulde haue great alyaunce in Almaygne/ For duke Stephyn (she sayde) was so great a manne/ that he myght well breke the purposes of the great lordes of themppre/ For he was as great or greatter/ than the kynge of Almaygne/ the whiche enclyned soneste the counsayle of Fraūce/ to parrepuer in that mater/ Howe be it the matter was handeled right secretely/ For there were but fewe that knewe therof tyll it were doone: And the cause why this was. It is the vsage in Fraunce/ that any lady doughter to any great lorde/ yf the kynge shulde mary her firste she shulde be sene and vewed all naked/ by certayne ladyes therto admytted/ to knowe if she were proper and mete to bynge forthe chyldren: and also bycause this lady was of a farre countre/ so that if she shulde be pleasaunt to the kyng or nat/ or elles all were broken. for these causes the matter was kepte secrete/ but the lady about the feest of Pentecost after/ she was brought to Brabant to the duchesse there/ who ioyfully receyued her and ordered her accordynge to the vsage of Fraunce. And with her in company was duke Frederyke of Bauyer her vncle/ by whom to saye trouthe the maryage was firste procured/ by suche wayes as I shall shewe you.

Howe the duchesse of Brabaunt wrote to duke Frederyke of Bauyer of the maryage of the ponge frenche kynge with her neise Isabell of Bauyer: And howe the duke and the lady came to Quesnoy. Cap. v.

When that duke Frederyke of Bauier cāe first in to Frā ce to serue the frēche kyng in his tourney that he made in to Flaunders/ and came to the siege of Bourbourche./ True it was/ he was feested and receyued by the kynges vncles/ bycause he was come so farre of to serue the kynge/ as out of the cōtre of Bauyer/ the whiche was more than two hundred leages of. This was reputed for a great seruyce/ and he was alwayes loged nere to the kyng/ in token of good loue and fauour. And whan he departed out of Bauyer he thought surely that there shulde be batayle betwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande/ in the marchesse of Flaūders or of Fraūce/ for so ranne all the brute in all Almaygne. Therfore the kynge and his vncles gaue hym the more thanke. And thus as he was with the kyng in that voyage before Burbourke & Bergues/ the kinges vncles curtesly demaūded on a day of hym/ if he had any doughters to mary: sayeng/ howe they lacked a wyfe for the kyng/ and howe that they had rather the kynge shulde mary in Bauyer/ rather than in any other place/ For aunciently the bauyers were of the counsayle of Fraunce. The duke auns wered and sayd: surely I haue no doughter to mary/ but myne elder brother/ duke Stephyn of Ba-

uper/ hath a right fayre Lady to his doughter. Of what age is she of quod the lordes? Bytwene.xiii. and fourtene quod the duke. That is all that we desyre/ quod the kynges vncles. Therfore sir/ whan ye do retourne home in to Bauyer/ speke to your brother of the mater: & bring your nese a pylgrimage to sayne Johns of Ampence/ & the kyng shalbe there if it please hym. We thynke he wyll desyre it/ for he loueth gladly to se fayre thynges. and if he wylle to haue her/ she shall be quene: So this was the first procurement: and as at ỳ tyme there was no more done nor sayde. The kynge knewe no thynge of these wordes. And whane this duke Federyke of Bauyer was retourned home/ he shewed all this mater to duke Stephyn of Bauyer his brother/ who studyed somwhat at his wordes/ and at last sayd: Fayre brother/ I beleue well it is as ye saye. My doughter shulde be happy if she myght come to so highe an honour/ as to be frenche quene: But Fraunce is very farre of/ and it is a matter wisely to be regarded/ to make a Quene. I shulde be ryght sore displeased/ if my doughter shulde be caryed in to Fraūce for suche a purpose/ and than sente home agayne. yet I had rather mary her at myne ease/ nerer home. This was the aunswere that duke Stephyn gaue to his brother duke Frederyke/ where with duke Frederyke was well content/ and wrote all his aunswere to Fraunce to the kynges vncles and to his vncle duke Juberte/ and to the Duches of Brabant. They hadde went that duke Frederyke had forgoten the matter/ For they were aboute marryages for the kynge in other places. And the kynge was nere agreed to the doughter of the duke of Lorayne/ for she was a fayre damosell of her age/ nere to the kyngs age. She was of noble and great generacyon of the house of Bloyes. Also there was spekyng for the doughter of the Duke of Lancastre/ who was after quene of Portyngale: but there was no cōclusion/ bycause of the warre. Therfore the matter hanged styll in suspence(& as ye haue herde before) The duches of Brabant whā she was at Cambray/ at the maryages of Burgoyne & Heynalte: and that the frenche kyng was there and the duke of Burbone and Burgoyn were there/ Than she moued for the this maryage of Bauyer/ for the kyng aftermynge that it was moost profitable and honorable for the kynge/ bycause of the alyaunce with Almaygne. Ha dame quod the kynges vncles/ we here nothynge therof. Well quod the duchesse/ I warrant you ye shall here somdhat therof/ or this somer be paste. Her prompte was well fulfylled/ for she dyde so moche/ that duke Frederyke/ vncle to the damosell was so agreed with his brother duke Stephyn/ that he shulde conuey the lady in to Fraunce: And that it shulde be noysed all the waye/ that they went a pylgrimage to sait Johans of Ampence. Euery man supposed the same/ for Almayns gothe often on pylgrimage it is their vsage.

THan duke Frederyke and his nese the lady Isabell of Bauyer/ had ben thre dayes at Brusels/ than they toke leue/ but it was the duchesse intencyon to be as soone at Ampence/ or soner than they. So than they came in to Heynaulte to Quesnoy/ where they founde the duke and the duchesse/ and sir Wyllyam erle of Ostrenaunt and his wyfe. There they were nobly receyued for duke Jubert was her vncle/ and had great marueyle what brought them in to that countre: And than demaūded why they came thyder? Certaynlye quod duke Frederyke/ I haue had moche payne to bringe the mater to this purpose: And so there he shewed hym all the mater/ and sayd. I haue brought my brother in that mynde/ that I haue brought my nese hyder as ye saye/ but whan I departed my brother sayd to me. Nowe Frederike my fayre brother/ ye leade with you Isabell my doughter without any sure estate/ For if the frenche kyng wyll refuse her/ than is she shamed for euer/ therfore aduyse you well: For if the matter come nat well to passe/ ye shall haue me your enemy for euer. Therfore fayre vncle/ ye maye se what daunger I haue putte my selfe in. Than duke Jubert sayd: fayre nephue be nat dismayde/ for by the pleasure of god/ she shalbe the frenche quene/ and thafie shall ye be quyte/ & haue the loue of duke Stephyn your brother.

THus they taryed at Quesnoy the space of thre weke/ and ỳ duchesse who was sage/ endoctryned the ponge damosell of Bauyer/ in maner and in countenaunce/ and chaūged her appayrell/ for she was but symplye arayed/ after the state of Fraunce: Thanne she arrayed her/ as though she had ben her owne doughter. And whan euery thyng was redy/ ỳ duches and the damosell rode forthe/ tyll they come to Amience. And by that tyme was come thyder/ the duches of Burgoyne and of Brabant/ and also the frenche kynge and his coun-

sayle/ The lorde de la Ryuer and sir Guy de la Tremoyle. Barownes and knightes issued out of Ampence to mete and receyue them of Heynalte. Thus they were brought in to Ampente and had moche honoure done to them/ and the lordes and ladyes eche of theym dyde hyllte other louyngly. But with moche payne the kynge might slepe/ for the inwarde desyre þ he had to se her that shulde be his wyfe. And he demaūded of the lorde de la Ryuer whan he shulde se her. of those wordes the ladies had great sporte so that the Fridaye whan the damosell was redy/ the thre duchesses rodde the damosell to the kynge. and than she kneled downe/ but the kynge toke her vp by the hāde and beheld her well by whiche regarde/ loue entred in to his herte. Than the constable of Fraunce sayd to the lorde Coucy. Sir/ by my faythe this ladye shall abyde with vs/ I se well by þ kyng/ for his eyes gothe neuer from her. So whan they had ben with the kynge certayne space/ the ladyes toke leaue of the kyng and went to their lodgynges as yet they knewe nat the kynges intencyon. Than the duke of Burgoyn charged the lorde de la Ryuer to enquere of the kyng his mynde/ who dyde so right dilygently/ sayeng. Sir/ & it lyke youre grace/ howe lyke you this yonge lady/ Shall she abyde with vs/ yea truely qᵗ the kynge/ she right well pleaseth vs. Therfore shewe vnto myne vncle of Burgoyne/ that she maye be delyuered to vs. Whan the lorde de la Ryuer herde hym saye so/ he incontynent shewed it to þ duke of Burgoyne. And he streight waye went and shewed it to the ladyes/ wherof they had great ioye and cryed Nowell. thus the lordes and ladyes were in great ioye/ & the kynges vncles were in mynde to haue had the mariage at Arras/ but it pleased nat the kyng to go soo farre. Therfore he desyred his vncle/ that it might be done they. Well quod the duke in a good hour be it/ so let it be.

THan the duke of Burgoyne/ the constable/ the lorde de la Ryuer/ and the lorde de la Tremoyle/ and dyuers other in his company went to the lady of Heynault/ and foūde her with her nese by her/ There he shewed thē these tidynges/ how the kyng had broken their purpose/ as the mariage to be had at Arras/ saying/ howe the matter touched the kyng so nere wherfore to morowe next we must heale him of his sickenesse/ the duches began to smyle. And so than they departed eche fro other with great ioye and solace. The same saturday at night Fraunces Atreman and the gauntoyse/ with a seuyn thousande with hym wente out of the lādes of the foure crafres/ after he had sayled of takynge of Irdenbourke. and he promysed to them of Gaunt at his departynge/ that he wolde neuer retourne in to Gaunt/ tyll he had won some good towne/ for the gauntoyse dyd what they might to putte the frenche men to suche busynesse/ that they shulde sende no more company in to Scotlande to the admyrall/ to make warre agaynst the Englysshmen/ for they was a cōmon bruite/ that the Constable and dyuers other men of armes/ & certayne cros bowes of Gene/ shulde entre in to the see & go in to Scotlande to reconforte their men that were they all redy/ makyng warre agaynst Englande. Frāces Atreman who was a proper man of armes issued the sayd saturday out of the quarter called the foure crafres/ and all nyght he went cōsyng Bruges/ trustyng to haue wonne it/ but it wolde nat be. Whan he sawe that he sayled there/ he wente to Danne: and there his spyes mette with hym/ and sayde. Sir/ it were good ye went to Danne/ for sir Roger of Guystelles who is capitayne there/ is nat nowe in the towne. and true it was/ he was goone to Bruges/ wenyng that the towne of Dan had ben strong ynoughe for their defence/ but he was disceyued.

How Frāces Atreman toke the towne of Dan/ and howe the frenche king wedded the lady Isabell of Bauyer: and after went and layde siege to Danne.

WHan Fraunces Atreman knewe by his espyes/ þ sir Roger of Guystels was nat in Dan/ he deuyded his company in two/ and tooke hym selfe the lesse nombre/ & sayd. Sirs/ go you ponder wayes to suche a gate/ and whan ye here me blowe go to the barryers & breke thē downe/ & I and my cōpany shall bete downe the gate/ for it wyll be ouer long or we entre by ladders/ the towne shalbe ours I put no dout: It was done as he ordayned & so wente with the lesse nōbre.

And so the first went with ladders in to the dykes. They founde no withstandyng/ and passed the myre and dressed by their ladders/ and so entred in to the towne and came to the gate/ so vnpynge their hornes without any daunger/ for the good men of ỹ towne were in their beddes/ this was the.xviii. day of July. thus they came to the gate and brake the barriers/ & they without brake downe ỹ barriers there/ so that euery man entred. Than they of the towne began to fyre/ but that was to late/ for they were taken in their houses/ & as many as were founde in harnesse and at defence/ were slayne without mercy. Thus the good towne of Dan was taken/ wherin was founde great richesse/ and specially the sellers full of Malueseye and wyne Granade. And it was shewed me/ howe there was great richesse there of the of Bruges/ whiche they had brought thyder/ for feare that they had of rebellyon of the cõmon people.

HRaũces Iteman/ whan he sawe that he was lorde of Dan/ he was greatly reioysed and sayd. Nowe haue I well kept my promyse with them of Gaunte. This towne shall serue vs well to maister Bruges/ Sluse/ & Ardenbourcke. Than incontynent he made a crye that no man shulde be so hardy to touche or do any displeasure to any lady or gentylwoman in the towne. There was the same tyme there/ a seuyñ knightes wyues/ who were come thyder to se the lady of Guystelles/ she was reby to lye downe a chylde bed. Thus after they had pilled the towne/ and slayne all suche as wolde nat take their parte/ than they went to repayre the towne agayne. Whanne they of Bruges herde therof they were sore displeased/ and nat without a cause/ and armed them: And with baner displayed came before the towne of Dan/ and began to scrimysshe/ and to assayle the towne/ but all was for nought. they lost more than thei wan/ & so retourned agayne to Bruges. Whan these tidynges came to Gaunt they were greatly reioysed/ and reputed that enterprise for a noble dede/ and Fraũces Iteman for a valyant man. Nowe let vs returne to the frenche kynges weddyng.

WHan the duches Margarete of Heynaulte/ who had the ponge lady in her keppynge. Whan she sawe the day was come she apparelled the lady honestly/ and to them came the duches of Burgoyne and the duches of Brabaut/ accompanyed with many ladyes and damoysels. These the ladies conueyed the lady Isabell of Bauiers in a chayre/ richely couered with a crowne on her heed/ worthe the richesse of a realme/ whiche the kynge had sent her before. and the byllhoppe of the same place dyde wedde them in the presens of all the lordes and ladyes. After the masse and solempnyte fynysshed/ the kyng and all they went to dyner/ whiche was great and sumptuous/ and erles and barownes serued the kynge in ryche arrap. Thus the day cõtynued in great sporte tyll it was night/ than the kyng went to bedde with his newe wyfe/ So the feest endured tyll the wednisday after. Than tidynges came to the kynge and his counsayle/ howe Fraunces Iteman had wonne the towne of Danne. also there came an haraude from the duke of Burbone & brought letters to the kyng/ signifyeng hym howe Caylbourcke was wonne and turned frenche/ and howe the duke of Burbone & his cõpany was goyng to ley siege to Uertuell and howe they had in Poyctou/ Xaynton/ and Limosyn/ retõquered xiii. forteresses. These tidynges somwhat reioysed the court/ and sette at nought the lesyng of Danne/ sayeng that it was cõcluded that the kyng shulde do no thing tyll he had ben in Flaunders/ and won agayne Danne/ and to entre so farre in to the fourcraftes/ out of the whiche all the venym issued/ that he shulde leaue no house standynge/ but to dystroy all. Than messangers were sent ouer all the realme of Fraunce/ comaũdynge all men of warre to be by the first day of Auguste in ỹ marchelle of Picardy to ley siege to Dan. These tidynges spredde abrode in the realme of Fraunce/ and euery knight and squyer made them redy to come to the kyng/ as they were cõmaunded. The same day duke Federyke of Bauyer and duke Iubert/ and all the barony toke leue of the kyng/ and euery man retourned home to their owne/ & lefte with the kyng the lady Isabell of Bauyer/ as than the frenche quene.

THe frenche kyng/ who had made his cõmaundement throughe all his realme/ sayd howe he wolde neuer come in Parys/ tyll he had ben before the towne of Danne. And so the.xxv. day of July he departed fro Amyence with the constable/ and dyuers other lordes of his house and went to Arras/ where he taryed but one night/ and the next day he went to Lan in Arthoys: and dayly men of warre came to hym fro all ptes/ and so at last he came to Ipre so that by ỹ firste day of August he was before

Dan.

Dan/ and lape soner to it/ that the gonne shot passed ouer his heed. ¶ Thre dayes after came to the kynge Wylliam of Heynaulte/ who was rpght welcome to the kynge and to the duke of Burgoyne. So there they layde a goodly siege about Dan/ and therin was enclosed Fraūces Ireman/ who bare him selfe valiantly/ for euery day they was outher scrimyshe or assaut without it were truse. The lorde of Clary who was mayster of the ordynaunce with the lorde of Coucy/ was striken with a quarell out of the towne: of whiche stroke he dyed/ whiche was great domage/ for he was a noble knight. To the siege of Danne there came men oute of the good townes of Flaunders: as Ipre/ Bruges and out of Franke. ¶ At this siege were beyond a hundred thousande men. The kyng lape bytwene Dan and Gaunte: and capitayne of the Flemmynges was the lorde of Sayntpye and the lorde of Guystels with a.xxb.speares/ and lape myddes amonge them for feare of discencion.

Thowe dyuers burgesses of Sluse were beheeded: & howe Sluse was chaunged for the lande of Bethune: and howe the siege of Danne contynewed longe. Cap. vii.

AT an assaut there was made knyght by the kynge Wylliam of Heynalte: that day he reared vp his baner/ and quytte hym selfe lyke a good knight: But at that assaute the Frenche men lost more than they wanne/ for Fraunces Ireman had with hym certayne archers of Englande/ who greatly greued the assaylantes: Also he had great plentie of artillary/ for whan the towne was wonne it was well furnysshed: And also he caused moche to be brought fro Gaūt/ whan he knewe that he shulde haue siege layde to the towne. In the same season whyle the siege laye thus before Danne/ some of the greatest of the towne of Sluse/ suche as than bare moost rule in the towne/ were so wrapped with treason/ that they wolde haue deliuered the towne to the kinges enemyes/ and to haue murdred their capitayne and his company in their beddes/ and to haue set fyre in the kynges nauy/ that lay there at ancre/ laden with prouysyon for the kynge. Before he wente to Danne/ he was in purpose to haue gone in to Scotlande after his admyrall. And also these traytors had thought to haue broken downe the see bankes/ therby to haue drowned the greattest parte of the kyngs hoost/ Of all this they had made marchaundise with them of Gaūt/ and all these treasons shulde haue ben done in one night: but there was a good man in the towne as he was in an hostrey herde all this treason/ that they were purposed to do/ And incontynent he went to the capitayne and shewed hym the mater/ and named to hym certayne of them that had thus conspyred the treason. Whan the capitayne herde that he sore marueyled/ and toke a threscore speares of his company and wente fro house to house of the traytours/ and so toke and sette them in dyuers prysons in sure keppynge. Than he toke his horse and rode to the kyng and so came to his tente/ before hym and the duke of Burgoyne: he shewed all the mater howe the towne of Sluse was likely to haue ben lost/ and all the kynges hoost likely to haue been in the water to the brestes/ wherof the kyng and the lordes had great marueyle. And than the capitayne was comaunded that he shulde retourne to Sluse/ and incontynent to stryke of all their heedes without any respyte/ therby all other to take ensample. So the capitayne retourned/ and incontynent strake of all their heedes/ This was the conclusion of that busynesse. Than the duke of Burgoyne cast in his aduyse to fynde some meanes to entreat his cosyn sir Wylliam of Namure/ to haue of hym the towne of Sluse by exchaunge for other landes/ and to coyne that towne to the countie of Flaunders. And this was moche by thaduyse of sir Guy de la Tremoyle/ who had the somer before sojourned in Sluse with a certayne nombre of men of warre.

WHan sir Wylliam of Namure herde first spekynge of that matter/ he was marueylously displeased: for the towne of Sluse/ with the apendauntes and profyttes of the see was a fayre and a profitable herytage/ & it was fallen to him by his auncestours wherfore he loued it the better: Howe be it the duke of Burgoyne lay so sore on hym therfore that there was no remedy/ but to make the exchaunge: For the dukes entensyon was to make there a stronge castell/ to subdue all comers

and goers by the see/ entryng in to the hauen of Sluse and to kepe it with mē of warre/ so that none shulde entre by the see in those marchesse/ without theyr daunger/ and to make a towre so highe to se twēty leages in to the see. Sothus hereby this sir Wyllam of Namure was so sore desyred by the duke of Burgoyne and his counsayle/ that he was contente to exchaunge Sluse for the landes of Bethune/ whiche is a fayre and a great herytage in that countrey/ he to haue that to hym and to his heyres for euer. And so than incontynent the duke of Burgoyne sette worke men a worke to make the Castell of Sluse. ¶ Nowe lette vs speke of the siege of Danne.

THere was nere euery daye an assaute/ & dyuers scrymysshes at the gates & barrieres/ so that dyuers were hurt and slayne dayly. The frenchmen coude nat well come to the walles/ bycause of the dykes were full of myre/ for yf it had ben rayny wether/ the hoost shulde haue had moche a do/ and shulde haue ben fayne to haue dislodged whether they wolde or nat But by the space of a moneth that the siege endured it neuer rayned/ and they had vitayle ynoughe: Howe be it bycause of the yuell ayre & the stynkynge of deed beestes & horses the ayre was so corrupte/ that dyuers knightes & squyers were therby sore sicke/ so that dyuers went to refresshe them at Bruges and other places/ to forsake the yuell ayre.

THe kynge hym selfe went and laye at Marles/ howe be it his tentes were styll pight vp in the felde. The entent of Fraūces Itreman was to holde styll the towne/ tyll socours came out of Englande to reyse the siege/ and surely they of Gaunte had sende in to Englande for rescue/ and surely the kyng of Englandes vncles had come ouer the see sufficiently garnysshed with men of warre and artillarye to haue reysed the siege/ but that they were lette bycause of the aduyrsalles beyng in Scotlande/ with a certayne nombre of men of armes. And also it was sayde in the realme of Englande/ that the constable of Fraūce shulde come after in to Scotlande with a great puyssaūce for to make warre in to Englande/ wherby the gauntoyse were nat rescued. Wherfore it behoued them within the towne of Dan to make an yuell bargayne.

How the gauntoyse fledde out of Dan by night/ and howe the frenche men toke the towne and distroyed it And also howe the kynge distroyed the countre of the foure crafftes. Cap. viii.

THe .xxvii. day of August the towne of Dan was won For whan Fraunces Itreman parceyued that he had no socour/ and that his artillary began to fayle/ than he was somwhat discomforted in hym selfe/ and sayd to them of his counsayle. Sirs/ I wyll that we of Gaunt go our wayes and lette vs shewe this one to another secretely for yf they of the towne knewe of our departyng/ to saue them selfe/ their wyues and children: Paraduenture they wyll make a shrewde marchaundyse for vs. yea/ and delyuer vs to oure enemyes/ so that they may be in rest and peace/ and that shulde coste vs oure lyues/ but I shall kepe theym well therfro. Wherfore let vs kepe vs all togyder/ and let vs go about the towne to vysite the watche/ and lette vs cause the men and women of the towne to go in to the mynster/ makynge theym to beleue that to morowe nexte we shall haue a great assaute/ and bycause we wolde yͭ they shulde haue no domage/ therfore we wyll haue them in surete in the churche out of the wayt. And we shall saye to the watchemen/ that we wyll go out and make a scrymysshe with the hoost. And whan we be in the feldes/ lette vs ryde on the spurres to Gaunte. They of his counsayle sayd: Sir ye haue well sayd/ so lette it be. And so euery man ordayned them selfe as they had purposed/ and in the euenyng they trussed redy all their goodes/ suche as they might carye awaye/ and put all women and children and other prisoners in to the mynster/ and specially all ladyes and gētyl women/ sayeng to them: Fayre ladyes/ we shall haue to morowe we in the mornyng a great assaute/ and we wolde nat that ye shulde be abasshed/ or take any domage. So thus they lefte them in the churche/ and at the firste hour of the night the gauntoise went and vyde vysyte the watche and on the walles there were none but they of the towne. Than Fraunces Itreman sayde to them. Sirs/ make this night good watche/ & depart nat fro the walles for any thyng ye here or se/ for yn̄ mornyng we shall haue an assaut/

but yet first this night I wyll awake the hoost/ his wordes were well beleued euery man went he had sayd trouthe. Whan he had ordayned euery thynge accordynge to his mynde/ than he caused a gate to be oppned/ and so he & all his company issued out/ & he was nat halfe a leage fro the towne but it was day light. Than they of the towne parceyued well that Fraunces Ytreman and all his company were gone. Than they thought them selfe disceyued/ than they of the towne began to entreate with the men of the kynges/ that were there as prisoners/ sayeng to theym/ howe they had slayne Fraunces Ytreman the same night.

Whan dyuers of the towne of Dan vnderstode howe Fraūces Ytreman and his cōpany were gone/ and howe the gate was oppn/ they ran out of the towne that best might: & whan this was knowen in thoost the bretons and burgonyons desyryng to wyn/ mounted on their horses and fell in the chase/ & pursued the gaumtoise tyll they cāe within two leages of Gaunte. So in the chase there were many slayne and taken mo than fyue hundred/ but of them were but fewe gaūtoise/ but moost of Danne/ that fledde out of the towne. In the meane season the towne was assayled/ where was made no defence. So the frenche men entred on euery syde by ladders/ and had passed the dykes with moche payne. And whan they were within/ they had wende to haue won grete riches/ but they foūde there nothyng but poore people/ men women & chyldren/ and great plentie of good wynes/ and so for dispyte and displeasure they sette fyre in the towne/ so that it was nighe all brent/ wherof the kynge and the duke of Burgone was sore displeased/ but they coude nat amende it: Howe be it the ladyes & gentyl women with moche payne were saued fro hurt of their bodyes or losse of their goods.

After the takyng of Dan/ the kyng was counsayled to dislodge/ and so the kyng went and lodged a two leages fro Gaunte/ at a towne called Artuile/ and whyles the kyng lay there/ his men of armes rode in the countrey of the four crafftes & distroyed all the countre/ because in tyme past/ the gaumtoyse had chefe cōfort euer fro them. Therfore they brent downe towres/ churches/ and houses/ and chased the men/ women/ and chyldren in to the woodes. Whan the frenchmen had done that distruction/ than it was ordayned to go and lay siege to the castell of Gaure and than after to Gaunte/ but all that tourned to nothyng/ for tidynges came to the kynge beyng at Artuelle fro the quene of Hungry/ by the bysshop of Wassclure/ the sayd quenes ambassadour with dyuers knyghtes & squyers in his company: and they brought letters of credence/ certifyeng howe the said quene was comyng in to Fraunce/ to fetche Lewes of Fraunce erle of Valoys/ to haue hym in to Hūgry to her doughter/ whom sir Johan la Varson had wedded by procuration in the name of the erle of Valoyes. These tidynges pleased greatly the kynge and his counsayle/ and so it was thought that for the honoure of the ponge Lewes erle of Valois/ that they shulde returne in to Fraunce/ and thought they hadde done ynoughe for that season in the countre of Flaūders.

Howe the frenche kyng departed out of Flaunders/ and gaue leaue to his men to departe/ and howe he cāe to Parys to treate with the ambassadours of Hungry: & howe the Marques of Blanquefort toke by strēgth to his wyfe the same lady enherytaure of Hungry. Cap. ix.

Whan the frenche kyng departed fro Artuell the. xii day of Septembre/ & gaue leaue to all men of warre to retourne to their owne houses/ of the whiche departynge the Gauntoyse were tyght gladde. Than the kyng went to Crape where the quene his wyfe was/ for whan he went fro Ampens to Flaūders/ he sent her thyder to kepe her estate/ and so he taried there certen dayes and so the kyng wente to Parys and the quene to Boyse de Vyncens. And they the kyng & his counsayle entended for the ordryng of the ponge erle of Valoyes for he wolde that he shulde go nobly in to Hūgry/ where as they toke hym for kyng. But the mater chaunged otherwyse in a shorte season after in the realme of Hungry as ye shall here after. It is of trouthe that the quene of Hūgry mother to the ponge lady/ whom the erle of Valoys had wedded by procuracion (as ye haue herde before) had all her entre to make

thecle of Valoys kyng of Hungry/desyring in her mynde nothyng so myche: And for ỹ same entent she had sente the bysshop Vaserculi and other of her countrey into Fraunce. And in the meane season that these ambassadours came in to Fraunce/ the kynge of Almayne/ who wyste him selfe kyng of Romayns/ had a brother yonger than hym selfe/ named Henry of Blâquefort. This kyng of Romayns was enfourmed of the state of the treatie/ betwene the quene of Hungry and the ponge erle of Valoys/ & howe that the ambassadours were goone for hym into Fraunce. This kyng of Romayns/ who loued better the profite of his brother rather than of his cosyn/ cast his aduyse and had done long and all his entencyon and affection was/ howe to bring the mater about secretely and craftely as he well shewed/ For if the quene of Hungry had knowen of his mynde/ she wolde haue put ded remedy right well therfore/ but she knewe it nat as it well appered. The counsayle of Almayne knewe right well that the quene of Hungry and her doughter were a sporyng of them at a castell/ nere to the marchelle of Almayne/ That ones knowen/ the Marques of Blâquefort assembled a great nombre of men of armes to the nombre of ten thousande/ and so came sodaynly and layde siege to the castell/ where as the quene was. Whan the quene sawe that/ she was sore dismayed/ and incontynent sent to the Marques/ to knowe why he had besieged her/ and what thynge he demaunded. The Marques answered/ that it was for none other thynge/ but that she wolde marry her doughter to a straunger/ brother to the frēche kyng/ by whom she coude neuer haue any confort if she neded. Therfore he sayd/ it were more better and profitable for her and for the realme of Hungry/ to let hym haue her who is her cosyn/ rather than another of a farre cōtre/ as Lewes erle of Valoys. The quene answered agayne and sayd/ howe she neuer herde before his desyre/ & therfore she was agreed with the frenche kyng/ brother: Sayeng also/ howe the kyng of Hungry her husbande or he ded/ had ordayned that it shulde so be: To the whiche sayeng the Marques answered & sayd: He cared nat for all that but sayd howe he had the good wyll of the moste parte of all the realme of Hungry: Wherfore he sayd he wolde haue her outher by fayre meanes or by foule. The quene was sore dismayd with those wordes/ howe bit she helde her styll and sente all about for socoure/ but none wolde come to her agaynst the Marques: And there the hungryes shewed well howe they hadde as lyst haue the marchaundyse of Almayne as of Fraūce. And whan the quene sawe that she coulde haue no confort of her men/ she wyste nat what to do. The Marques threatened her/ that if he wanne her by force/ he wolde sette her in a tonne with bredde and water as longe as she lyued/ whiche made the quene afrayed/ for she sawe well she was but in a weake place/ without men/ vitayle/ or prouision. Than she treated with the Marques and delyuered hym her dere doughter/ and incontynent he ded wedde her and bedde her.

THus sir Henry of Boesme marques of Blanquefort/ came to the herytage of Hungry/ wherof he was kynge/ more by force than by loue/ as to the consentynge of the olde quene/ but she was fayne to agree or els to haue made a worse marchaundyse. These tydynges were anone knowen with the ambassadoures that were in Fraunce/ and were comyng homwarde/ and the erle of Valoys redy at Troyse and had taken leaue of the kyng and of his vncles. Whan he herde of these tydynges he was sore displeased/ but he coulde nat remedy it. Thus the bugros departed right sore displeased/ they had good cause why. The ponge erle retourned to Parys to the kynge his brother & to his vncles/ who made no great force of that marryage: Sayeng howe the erle of Valoys was happy that his wyfe was taken fro hym: For they sayde/ howe Hungry was very farre of and ruell to be ledde by the frenche men/ nor they coude haue but lytell ayde or cōforte of the/ Therfore this mater was forgoten and lytell sette by. Than they thought for hym another marryage/ that was the doughter of the duke of Myllayne/ who was inheryteure to all Lombardy/ whiche lande is more ryche than the realme of Hungry/ and more nerer for the frenche men.

NOwe lette vs leaue to speke of these marriages/ and lette vs retourne to the duke of Burbone/ who was in Poyctou at the siege before Bertuell: And than lette vs retourne to the admyrall beyng in Scotlande/ and shewe howe he ded there.

Howe the duke of Burbone toke Bertuell in Poictou/ And also of the great assemble that the kyng of scottes made to entre in to Englande.

Cap. x.

The same season that the kyng was in Flaunders/as well before Dan as before other places. The duke of Burbone with a great nombre/entred in to Lymosyn & in to Poictou/ and toke dyuers castelles and fortresses that were as than Englysshe/as Archeacke/Gatnat/Mountlue eight myle fro Burdeaux and Taylbourcke/ on the ryuer of Charent. And than wente and layde siege before Bertuell a stronge castell in Poictou/on the marchesse of Limosyn and Xaynton. Of Bertuell were capitayns/ Andrue Pinas an Englysshe man/and Bertrande Mõtryuet Gascoyne: And they had with thé a certayne nombre of good companyons. At this siege there was dyuers assautes and scrimpsshes/and many feates of armes done/& nighe euery day at the barryers what by them within and them without/there was scrimpsshyng where as were some slayne & some hurt: Howe be it the duke of Burbone sayde/ he wolde nat departe thens/tyll he had the castell at his pleasure/ for so he had promysed the duke of Berry whan he departed fro hym last. And durynge the siege/ it fortuned that Bertrande du Montryuet/one of the capitayns of the castell/ as he was deuysing to make a newe dyke/they came a gonne shotte fro the hoost and sodainly slewe the sayd Bertrande/who before that tyme had escaped fyftene perylous sieges. Of his dethe they within the castell were sore dismayed and sorouſull/but they coude nat amende it: and so than Andrewe was capitayne alone. And than within fyftene dayes after/ there was a treatte betwene them without & them within/to yelde vp the castell with all the prouision therin/and they within to be surely conueyed to Bonteuyll wherof Pyrandon de la Perade was captten. Thus the frenche men had the castell of Bertuell/ whiche incontynent they newly repayred and furnysshed with artyllary & men of warre. Than the duke wente and refreshed hym at a good towne therby called Caren/ and so from thens to Lymogines/ and there he taryed an eight dayes/and determyned to retourne in to Fraunce: And so he dyde and founde the kyng at Parys with his nephue the erle of Hainoyes who receyued hym with great ioye. Nowe lette vs retourne to the busynesse of Scotlãde and to the admyrall of Fraunce/ and what he dyde in that season.

We haue herde here before/ howe ỹ admyrall of Fraunce/ with a certayne men of warre lãded in Scotlande at Edenbozowe/ and howe they founde there another maner of countre/ than it was shewed the yere before by the barones of Scotlande. For the kynge there and the barons of Scotlande/the yere before had enformed sir Geffray of Charney and sir Aymarde de Varie/ that if the seneschall/ constable/or admyrall of Fraunce wolde passe the see and come in to Scotlãde/ but with one thousande speares and fyue hundred crosbowes/ with harneyse to arme a thousand Scottes That than with the ayde of the hole realme of Scotlande/ they wolde fyght with thengysshmen/ and make so great a hole in Englande/ that it shulde neuer be recouered. And so thus the frenche men with the admyrall passed the see and were come in to Scotlande/ Howe be it they founde nat all the sayd promyse nat bery true. First they founde harde people & cruell frendes/ and a poore coũtre. Suche knyghtes and squyers of Fraunce as were there/ knewe nat whyder to sende their varlettes to forrage. They durst nat without they went i great routes/ for the byrbours of the countrey who watched for them at the passages/and often tymes slewe of them. At last kyng Robert of Scotlande cãe to Edenbozowe with a payre of reed blered eyen: It semed they were lyned with scarlall. And it semed vyght well by hym/ that he was no valyant man in armes: it semed he had rather lye styll than to ryde: He had a.xx. lordes and they loued well armes. So thus whã the kyng was come thyder/the lordes & knyghtes of Fraunce drewe to hym and dyd their dutie. And there was present the erle Duglas/the erle Mozette/ the Erle de la Mayre/ the erle of Surbaulte/ and dyuers other. There the admyrall requyred the kyng/ that ỹ cause of their comyng in to that countre myght be accõplysshed/ Sayeng/ howe they wolde fayne make a tourney in to Englande. The barons/ knyghtes and squyers of Scotlãde/ suche as desyred to auaunce them selfe/ were right toyfull & said

that if god be pleased they wolde make suche a voyage/ ꝑ shulde be to their honour and ꝓfyte The kyng than sent out his cõmaundement to assemble his power/ and so at the day assigned he had redy a.xxx. thousande men all on horse backe/ and as they came/ they lodged accordynge to the vsage of their countrey/ I thynke nat all at their ease.

Ye Johan de Vyen who had great desyre to ryde/ and to employe his tyme in to Englande/ to do some great enterprise/ Whan he sawe the scottes were come he sayd. Sirs/ nowe it is tyme to ryde/ we haue lyen to long styll: so than the settyng forwarde was publysshed to euery man/ thã they toke their waye to Roseboursche. In this iourney the kyng was nat/ he abode styll at Edeborow but all his sonnes were in the army. The thousande complete harnesse that the Frenche men brought with thẽ/ was deliuered to the knightes of Scotlande and of Norwithe/ who were before but ylell harnessed/ of the whiche harnesse they had great ioye/ And so they rode towarde Northumberlande: And so longe they rode that they came to the abbey of Mauues/ & there they lodged all about the ryuer of Tynbre/ and the nexte day they cãe to Wolane and than before Roseboursche. The kepar of Roseboure vnder the lorde Wõtagu/ was a knight called sir Edwarde Clyfforde. The admyrall of Fraunce and the scottes taryed and behelde well the castell/ and all thynges considered/ they sawe well to assayle it shulde lytell auayle them for the castell was stronge and well furnysshed with artillary. And so than they passed by and drewe a long the ryuer lyke approchyng to Werwyke. And so long they rode that they came to two towres right strong/ whiche were kept by two knightes/ the father and the sonne/ bothe were called sir Johan Strande. Aboute these towres were fayre landes and a fayre place: the whiche incontynent were brent/ & the two towres assayled. They was many feates of armes shewed: and dyuers scottes hurte with shotte and cast of stones/ Finally the towres were wonne/ and the knightes within by playne assaut/ yet they defended thẽ as longe as they might endure.

Tho we the frenchemen and scottes wanne the castell of Warley/ and destroyed diuers other townes in Northumberlande/ and howe they with drewe agayne in to Scotlãde whan they knewe that the kyng of Englãde came on them with a great puyssaunce. Cap. xl.

After the conquest of these two towres/ than they went to another castel called Warley/ parteynyng to the heritage of sir Johñ Montagu and Captayne there vnder hym was sir Johan of Lussenborne/ who had there with hym his wyfe & his chyldren/ and all his good. He knewe well before that the scottes wolde come thyder/ therfore he had purueyed the castel to the best of his power to abyde the assaute. So about this castell taryed all the armye. This castell stode in a fayre countre/ by a fayre ryuer whiche commeth out of Tynbre/ and commeth in to the see. So on a day there was a great assaut/ and the frenchemen bare thẽ well the same day/ moche better than the scottes dyd/ for they entred in to the dykes/ and passed through with moche payne/ There was many feates of armes done/ what by them aboue and them beneth: The frenchemen mounted vp by ladders/ and fought hande to hande with daggars on the walles. Sir Johan Lussenborne dyd quyte hym selfe lyke a valyant knight/ and fought with the frenchemen hande to hande on the ladders. At this assaute there was slayne a knight of Almayne called sir Bleres Gastelayne/ whiche was great dommage. There were many hurt that day/ but finally there was so moche people and thassaute so well contynued/ that the castell was wonne/ and the knight/ his wyfe and chyldren taken/ & a.xl. other prisoners. And than the castell was brent and rased downe/ for they sawe well that it was nat to be kept/ seyng that it was so farre in Englande as it was. Than the admyrall & scottes rode towarde Durrhe in ꝑ lande of the lorde Perry/ & lodged there about/ & brent certayne villages: and so came to another castell of therle of Northũberlandes/ standyng on the see syde/ but they assayled it nat/ for they knewe well they shulde lese their payne. And so they rode all about that frontyr/ halfwaye betwene

Berwyke & Newcastell on the ryuer of Tyne/ and there they vnderstode/ howe ꝑ the duke of Lācastre/therle of Northūberlande/the erle of Notingham/the lorde Nevell/and the barons of those marches of Northūberlande/ & of the bysshoprithes of yorke & Dyrham/were comyng on them with a great power. Whan thadmyrall of Fraunce knewe therof he was right sory full/ and so were all the barons of Fraūce that were in his copany/ for they desyred to haue battayle/but the scottes cared lytell therfore.there they were counsayled to returne againe to warde Berwyke/ bycause of their prouysyon that folowed them: & also to be nere their owne countre/ and there to abyde for their comynges. So thadmyrall beleued the/ and returned towarde Berwyke/ wherof sir Thomas Rosiman was capitayne/ & with hym right good men of armes. So the frenchmen and scottes lay before the towne/but assayled it nat/ & so passed by the next day and toke the waye to Burbourche/ to retourne to their owne countrees.

Tidynges was brought anon in to Englāde howe the frenchmen & scottes were in Northumberlāde/ & distroyed and brent the countre. The kynge of Englande knewe rightwell before of their comynge/ wherfore ꝑ lordes were redy in the felde/ & toke their way towarde the scottes. Thengysshmen had made that somer the grettest prouysyon/ that euer they made to go in to Scotlande bothe by lande & water. They had a.xxbi.bessels on the see charged with pusshon costyng the frōters of Englande/ redy to entre in to curry hauen of Scotland. And the kyng cām him selfe accōpanyed with his vncles/therle of Cābridge & sir Thomas Holand: They was also therle of Salisbury/therle of Arūdell/the yong erle of Penbroke/the yong lorde Spēcer therle of Staffordе/ & therle Mylcen/ & so many barons & knightes that they were four.M. speres/ besyde them that were before vō the duke of Lācastre/therle of Northūberlāde/therle therle of Notyngham/the lorde Lucy/the lorde Nevell. The lordes & barons that were on before pursuyng the scottes/ were a two.M. speares & .xb.M. archers/ And the kynge & the lordes were syttie.M. archers besyde varlettes.

The kyng folowed the duke of Lancastre so fast/that he and all his host came in to the marches about yorke: for on the way tidynges cām to the kyng/howe that his people that were before/ were likely to fight with the scottes to the marches of Northūberlande/ therfore he made the gretter hast. & so the kyng cām at last to sait Johns of Beuerley in the marches of Dyrham/ And there tidynges came to the kyng/ howe that the scottes were returned in to their owne countre: so all the men of warre lodged about in the marches of Northūberland. ¶ Nowe shall I shewe you of an aduenture that fell in thēgly the hoost/ wherby that voyage was broken & mortall warre by twene certayne of the lordes.

¶ howe sir Johñ Holande slewe sir Rycharde Stafforde/ & howe therle of Staffordе came to the kyng to demaunde iustyce. Cap. xii.

In the marches of sait Johñ of Beuerley in ꝑ dyocises of yorke/ The kynge of England was lodged with a great nombre of erles/barons/and knightes/for euery man lay as nere the kyng as they might/ and spectally his two vncles/ ꝑ Thomas Holande erle of Kent and sir Johan Holande his brother. In the kynges company there was a knyght of Boesme was come to se the quene of Englande/and for loue of ꝑ quene the kyng and the lordes made hym good chere. His name was sir Myles/ he was a freshe lusty knight after the vsage of Almaygne. And so it fortuned besyde a byllage nere to sait Johans of Beuerley/ ꝑ there fell wordes betwene this knight & two squyers of sir Johan of Holandes brother to the kynge/ and to the wordes there came two archers of sir Johan Staffordes. The wordes so multiplyed/ that the two archers toke parte with the straunger/ and blamed the two squyers saying: Sirs/ ye do wronge to medyll with this knight/ for ye knowe he is belongyng to the quene/and of her countre. ye ought rather to suppoyt him than otherwise Than one of the squyers sayd: What enuyous knaue? Hast thou to do thoughe I blame hym for his folly. What haue I to do quod the archer/ I haue rightwell to do therwith/for he is companyon to my mayster/ Therfore I wyll nat be in the place/to suffre hym to receyue any billany. yea quod the squyer/ if I thought thou wouldest ayde hym agaynste me/ I wolde put this sword through thy body/ & made cōt-

nature/ as though he wolde haue stryken him. The archer stepped backe with his bowe/ whi che was redy bente: And sette an arowe therin and drewe it vp/ and shotte agaynst the squyer that the arowe pearsed thorough the body & hart/ and so fell downe deed. Whan the other squyer sawe his felowe deed he fledde awaye/ and sir Myles retourned to his lodgynge. The two archers went to their maister and shewed hym all the aduenture. Sir Richarde Staffordе sayde/ Thou hast done right puell. Sir quod the archer/ I coude do none otherwise without I wolde haue been slayne my selfe/ and I had rather haue slayne hym thā he shulde haue slayne me. Well quod sir Rycharde/ Go thy waye that thou be nat founde/ and I shall entreate for thy peace with sir Johan of Holande/ by my father or by some other. So the archer departed.

TIdynges anone was brought to sir Johan of Holande/ that an archer of sir Richarde Staffordes/ had slayne a squyer of his/ ỳ man that he loued best in all the worlde/ and it was shewed hym the maner howe: And that it was for the cause of sir Myles the straūger. Whan sir Johan of Holande was well enformed of this aduenture/ he was wyght sore displeased and sayd. I shall neuer eate norysshe tyll it be reuenged. Than he lepte on his horse and toke certayne of his men with hym/ and departed fro his owne lodgynge. It was as than right late and so rode in to the feldes/ and enquered/ where sir Myles was lodged. It was shewed hym/ he was lodged in the rereward with the erle of Dewnpshyers and therle of Staffordе. Than sir Johan Hollande toke the waye thyder warde/ and sought to fynde sir Myles: And as he and his men rode vp & downe amonge the hedges and bushes/ in a straite waye he mette at aduenture with sir Richarde Staffordе/ and bicause it was night he demaūded who was there. I am quod he Rycharde Staffordе. And I am Hollande quod the other/ and I seke for the. One of thy seruauntes hath slayne my best beloued squyer: And therwith drewe out his swerde and strake Richarde Staffordе/ so that he slewe hym a full downe deed/ whiche was great pytie. So he passed forthe and knewe nat well what he had done/ but he sawe well one falle to the grounde. Sir Richarde Staffordes men were sore dismayd whan they sawe their maister deed. than they cryed: Holande Holande/ ye haue slayne the sonne of therle of Staffordе. This wyll be heuy tidynges to the father whatso he knoweth therof. Some of sir Johan of Holandes seruauntes herde well these wordes/ and sayde to their mayster. Sir/ ye haue slayne sir Rycharde Staffordе. Well quod sir Johan Hollande/ what than? I had leuer haue slayne him than a worse: The better haue I reuenged the dethe of my squyer. Than sir Johan of Hollande wente streyght to saynt Johans of Beuerley/ and tooke the fraunchesse of the towne and abode there styll/ For he knewe well there wolde be moche a do in the hoost/ for the dethe of that knight: And he wyst nat what the kynge wolde saye or do in the mater. So to eschue all parylles/ he tooke sentuarye in the towne of saynt Johans of Beuerley.

TIdynges anone came to the Erle of Staffordе/ howe his sonne was slayne by puell aduenture. Thatsie the erle demaunded who had slayne hym: And suche as were by hym whan he was slayne sayd. sir/ the kynges brother/ sir Johan of Holande byd slee hym: And shewed hym the cause why/ and howe it was. ye maye well knowe/ that he that loued entierly his sonne and hadde no mo but hym/ and was a fayre ponge knyght and a courageous/ was marueylously sore displeased/ and sente incontynent for all his frendes to haue their counsayle/ howe he shulde vse hym selfe in the reuengynge of his dethe. The moost wyse man of his counsayle sayd. Sir/ to morowe in the morynge/ shewe all the matter to the kyng/ and desyre hym to haue lawe and iustyce. Thus they swaged somwhat his yre/ and so passed that night. And the nexte morynge Rycharde Staffordе was buryed in the churche of the village therby. And at his buryeng were all those of his lynage/ barons/ knightes and squyers that were in that armye. And the obsequy done/ the erle of Staffordе and a thre score of his lygnage mounted on their horses and so came to the kynge/ who was well enformed of that puell aduenture. And so the Erle founde the kyng and his vncles togyder/ and a great nombre of knightes with them. Whan the erle came before the kyng he kneled downe/ and all weppynge/ sayde with a sorowfull harte. Sir/ ye are kynge of Englande/ and haue sworne to kepe Englande in all right/ & to do iustyce. & ye knowe how your brother wolde

any tytell of reason/ hath slayne thy sonne and ayre. Sir/ I requyre you do me right and iustyce/ or els ye shall haue no worse enemy than I wyll be. And sir/ I wyll ye knowe/ the dethe of my son toucheth me so nere/ that and it were nat for brekynge of this voyage that we be in/ I shulde bring the host in to suche trouble/ that with honour it shulde be amended/ and so coulde reuenged/ that it shulde be spoken of a hundred yeres hereafter in Englande: But as nowe I wyll cease tyll this voyage in to Scotlande be done/ for our ennemyes shall nat reioyse of the trouble of the erle of Staffordе. The kyng answered. Knowe for trouthe/ that I shall do you iustyce and reason/ as farforthe as all my barones wyll iudge. I shall nat saye therof/ for no brother that I haue. Than they of the erles lynage sayd. Sir/ ye haue sayd well/ we thanke you therof. Thus the lynage of sir Richarde Staffordе was apeased/ and so helde on their iourney in to Scotlande. And all the iourney the erle of Staffordе made no semblant of the dethe of his sonne/ wherin all the barons reputed hym right sage.

Howe the kyng of Englande caused to be distroyed the church of melrous in Scotlande/ and howe the barons of Scotlande answered the admyrall of Fraunce/ and deuysed to leaue Scotlande/ and to let the Englysshe men alone. Cap. xiii.

Thus auaunced forthe the kyng of Englande with seuyn thousande men of armes and thre score thousand archers. All the strength of the realme of Englãde was there: For it was sayd howe the admyrall of Fraunce wolde fight with the/ and in dede he had great desyre and wyll so to do/ for he sayde to the barons of Scotlande or they came forthe. Sirs/ make your commons to gette as moche strength as ye can/ for if the Englysshe men come in to Scotlande/ I wyll surely fight with the. The scottes sayd as than howe they were content therwith/ howe be it after they toke other aduyse. The kynge of Englande passed forthe so farre/ that he passed Duresme and Newe castell on the ryuer of Tyne/ and all the lande of Northumberlande: and so at laste came to Berwyke/ wherof sir Mathue Redman was captayne who receyued the kynge ioyfully/ and the kyng tarryed nat there long/ but passed forthe ouer the ryuer of Twede/ and toke his lodgynge at the abbey of Newrous/ the whiche for all the warres that had been bytwene Englande and Scotlande had neuer no hurt nor domage but as than it was clene dismembred and exiled: For it was thentent of the englysshmen nat to retourne agayne in to Englande/ tyll they had distroyed all Scotlande/ bycause they were fortifyed at that tyme by the frenche men. Whanne the admyrall of Fraunce/ knewe that the kynge of Englande was passed the ryuer of Twede/ and was entred in to Morlane in Scotlande: Than he sayd to the barons of Scotlande. Sirs/ why do we syttе styll? Let vs go forthe and aduyse our ennemyes a fyght with them. It was shewed vs or we came here that if ye had out of Fraunce but one thousãde of good men of armes/ ye shulde be stronge ynoughe to fyght with the Englysshe men. And I ensure you/ ye haue no than a thousãde and fyue hundred crosbowes. And surely the knightes and squyers that be here in my company ar partyte men of armes/ and the floure of chiualrye/ and wyll nat flye/ but abyde suche aduenture as god wyll sende you and them.

To these wordes answered the barones of Scotlãde/ who knewe so well the puissaunce of the Englysshe men/ that they hadde no wyll to fight with them: Wherfore they said Sirs/ we beleue well that ye and your compayny be chosen men and of great valure: But sir we haue knowledge that all the power of Englande is here/ there were neuer so many Englysshe men togyder assembled/ as be nowe/ And ye wyll/ we shall bringe you in to suche a place/ that ye shall well se and aduyse them. And than if ye counsayle that they shall be fought with all/ it shall nat be refused by vs. For surely sir/ all suche wordes as ye haue said we dyde speke them. I goddes name quod the admyrall/ let me ones se the. And so anon after the erle Douglas and other barons of Scotlãde brought the admyrall vnto a highe mountayne/ and vnder the hyll there was a passage/ wherby the Englysshe host must passe: on this hyll was the admyrall/ with diuers knightes of Fraũce in his

company/ And there cleerely they sawe the Englysshe men and all their puissaunce/ and they they nombred them as nere as they coude to be a.xxx. thousande men of armes/ & therefore thousande archers and other. Than all thynges cõsydred/ they sayd howe they were nat of puissaunce sufficyent to fight with the Englysshemen/ for they passed nat a thousande speares & a.xxx. thousande of all other men/ and but ruell armed. Than the admyrall sayd to the erle Douglas and to therle Mozette. Sirs/ ye saye but good reason/ thoughe ye haue no wyll to fight with the Englysshe men. Therfore aduyse you what ye wyll do/ they are stronge ynoughe to ouer ryde all your countrey/ and to distroy it. And sithe ye maye nat fight with them/ I pray you bring me throughe your countre/ by some priuye waye in to Englande if it maye be: and we shall make them warre in some other parte as they do to vs here. Sir qꝯ the barones/ that shall we well do/ for we knowe dyuers wayes.

Thus the admyrall and the barones of Scotlande determyned to forsake Scotlande/ and to lette the Englysshmen alone/ and to go & entre in to Wales/ and to go to the cytie of Carlyle and there to reuenge them. So they lefte the Englysshe men and toke the forestes and mountayns/ and as they rode throughe out Scotlande/ they distroyed all as they wente/ and brent townes/ byllages/ and maners: and caused all the men/ women/ & chyldren of the coũtre to dryue all their catayle/ and to go into ỹ wylde forestes/ for they knewe well the Englysshe men wolde nat folowe them thyder. And the kynge of Scottes wente in to the wylde scottysshe/ bicause he was nat i good poynt to ryde a warfare/ and they he taryed all the warre durynge/ and lefte his men alone. So the frenche men and Scottes passed the highe mountayns/ betwene Northumberlãde and Scotlande/ and entred in to the lande of Wales/ and began to brenne byllages/ and dyd moche hurte in the Wombrayes landes. And the erle of Notyngham/ the erle of Staffordes/ and the barone of Grasoppe/ and the Mowgraues landes/ and so they toke the waye to the cytie of Carlyle.

Howe the kyng of Englande toke Edẽborowe the chefe cytie of Scotlande: and howe the duke of Lancastre was in purpose to retourne in to Wales/ to close in the frenchmen and scottes: and what the frenche men & the scottes dyde in the sayd countre. Cap. xiiii.

THe admyrall of Fraũce was the erle of Graunt Pre/ and the lorde of sayne Croix/ sir Geffray of Charney/ & Wyllyam de Bzume/ sir James of Boesme/ the lorde of Pegny/ the lorde of Hees/ the lorde of Warnell/ sir Valeran of Rauenall/ the barone Dtuery/ the barone of Fountayns/ the lorde of Crope/ sir Blake of Blaquemont/ the lorde of Landury/ and well a thousande speres of barons & knyghtes of Fraunce. And so they and the lordes of Scotlande rode in Northũberlande bytwene the mountayns on the fronters of Wales/ brennyng townes/ maners/ and countrees: And the kyng of Englande and his vncles/ with barons and knyghtes of Englãde and their companyes entred in to Scotlande/ and brent and eryled on their parte. And so the kyng came and lodged in Edenborowe/ ỹ chefe towne in all Scotlande/ and there taryed fyue dayes/ and at his departyng it was set a fyre & brent vp clene/ but the castell had no hurt/ for it was stronge ynough and well kept. Whyle the kyng lay at Edenborowe/ thenglysshmen rode abrode in the countre and dyd moche hurt/ but they foũde nother man nor beest abrode/ for all was withdrawen in to the forestes. In the Englysshe hoost were mo than a hũdred thousãde men/ and well as many horse/ wherof they had nede of great prouysyon/ and they foũde none in Scotlande/ but out of Englande there cãe to thẽ great plentie/ bothe by lande and by see. Than the kyng departed fro Edenborowe and rode to warde Estruleyn a good towne/ wherin there was a great abbey of blacke monkes/ and moost cõmenly the kynges of Scotlande are there buryed. The kyng lay in the abbey & at their departyng/ abbey & all was brent. Than they passed the ryuer of Tare/ whiche renneth to saint Johnstowne/ at the castell of Struleyn there was a great assaute/ but it wolde nat be wonne: yet the towne and all the landes of the lorde Dtery they brent.

THe entent of the duke of Lancastre and of his bretherne/ was to passe throughe Scotlande and to pursue the scottes and frenche men/ for they knewe well they were gone the

waye to Wales to go to Cãthyle: And so they thought to enclose thẽ bytwene Englande and Scotlande/ and to fight with them at their aduauntage. This purpose they thought veryly to holde. Thenglysshe men spredde abrode in Scotlãde/there was no resystence agaynst them for the countre was voyde of all men of warre. they were gone in to Englande with the admyrall of Fraunce. And so there the Englysshmen brent the towne of Saynt Johns/ where as the tyuer of Tare rynneth/and there is a good hauen to sayle thens ouer all the worlde/ and after they brent the towne of Dondé. The Englysshmen spared nother abbeys nor mynsters but set all on fyre. And so they of the howarde ran to Bredan/ whiche is a cytie on the see syde/ It is on thentre of the wylde scottysshe/but they dyd no hurte therto/ howbe it they of the countrey were right sore afrayed. They of that cytie thought to haue assaute/ for they feared leest ỹ kynge of Englande wolde haue come thyder/ and haue ouer ron all that countre.

Thus in lyke wise as the Englysshe men dyde in Scotlande/ so dyd the frenche men and scottes in Englande/in the marchesse of Northumberlande and Wales. & they brent a great countre as they went out of Northumberlande and entred in to Wales/ whiche was otherwise called Wynsslande/ and passed by the landes of the lordes of Graystocke and Clyfford/ and brent in their voyage dyuers great villages/ for they were no men of warre in that coũtre as than/for they were all with the kyng. So they came to the cyte of Carlyle in Wales/ whiche was well closed with gat/walles/& dykes: It was a place that of auncyent tyme kynge Arthure loued right well/bycause that there were great woodes/and many dedes of armes there was done. There laye in Carlyle in garrison sir Lewes Clyfford/ brother to sir Wyllm Nevell/ and with hym sir Thomas Holgraue and Dauy Holgraue his sonne/ and sir Dongozsse/ and dyuers other of the marchesse and frontiers of Wales/for the cytie of Carlyle was chiefe cytie of all that countre/and it was nede full for good men of warre to be there: for whan the admyrall of Fraunce came thyder he assayled the cytie by great force/the whiche assaute was cruell and fierse. So thus before the cytie there were many noble dedes of armes done.

How we the erle of Orenforde brake the pursute that the kyng of Englãd had thought to haue made in to Wales after the frenche men and scottes And howe the kynge retourned the same waye that he came/ and howe the frenche men and scottes determyned to retourne agayne in to Scotlãde. Cap. xv.

The kyng of Englandes vncles knewe well what waye the admyrall of Fraũce and the scottes helde/ & said how they thought it for ỹ best to folowe theym/ and to serche tyll they myght fynde them/ and so to fight with them: Sayeng/howe they coude in no wyse escape them. In this purpose was the duke of Lancastre and his bretherne/ and dyuers other of the great barons of Englande/ and the mooste parte of the cõmons of the hoost. And as than all their prouysyon was come as well by lande as by see/ and the kynge also was agreed to the same purpose. and than on a night the erle of Orenforde/ who was as than chiefe of counsayle with the kynge & bare all the rule: the kyng trusted no man so moche. He turned the kyng clene fro his purpose I cannat shewe you for what cause/ but he enformed the kyng as it was knowen after/and said: sir What thynke ye to do? Wyll ye folowe the way that your vncles hath counsayled? Sir knowe for trouth that if ye do so/ ye shall neuer returne agayne. For sir/ the duke of Lancastre desyreth none other thynge but that ye were dede/ that he might be kyng. Howe durst he counsayle yor grace to go this wynter season in to a strange countrey? Sir/ I wolde nat counsayle you to passe the mountayns of Northumberlande/ for there be mo than .xxx. streightes and passages/ that if ye were closed in them/ ye shulde neuer come out agayne without daunger of the scottes. Sir/ putte nat youre selfe in to that daunger/ what soeuer they saye to you. If the duke of Lancastre wyll go lette hym go/ and haue the charge therof/ but by my counsayle ye shall nat go. Sir/ ye haue done ynough for this one tyme. youre father was neuer so farre within Scotlande/ nor yet kynge Edwarde youre graunt father. Therfore sir/ this ought to contente you/ and saue youre owne persone.

ye be ponge and lusty: And suche there be/ that shewth you fayre semblant and louyth you but lytell. The kynge gaue suche audyence to the sayeng of this erle/ that it went neuer out of his mynde/ as ye shall hereafter.

THe next mornyng the lordes of Englande and their people/ ordred them selfe to depte out of Scotlande/ and to folowe their ennemyes to fight with them: as it was concluded the night before. Than the duke of Lancastre came to the king his nephue/ nat knowyng of the trouble and chaunge of his purpose. and the kynge beyng in his malencoly/ allone as he sawe hym/ he sayd in great yre. Certesse vncle of Lancastre/ ye shall nat attayne as yet to your entent. Thynke yon for all your wordes/ þ we wyll lese our selfe folilhely: I wyll nat beleue you nor yet your counsayle: for I se therby more domage than profyte/ to vs and to our people. For if ye wyll make this voyage/ do it and ye lyste/ but as for me I wyll nat: For I wyll retourne in to Englande the nexte waye/ and all suche as loue vs wyll folowe vs. Than the duke of Lancastre sayd: Sir/ I shall folowe you for ye haue neuer a man in your company/ that louyth you so well as I do/ & also my brethern And if there be any man wyll saye (except your persone) that I wolde any thynge otherwyse than well to you or to your people/ here is my guage to the contrarie. So there was none that wolde speke any worde: And the kynge helde his peace and spake to other of his seruauntes of other maters/ and ordeyng hym selfe to returne in to Englande the same way þ he came/ and the duke of Lancastre departed fro the kynge right sore troubled in his mynde/ and returned to his company/ and made newe ordynaunce/ for in the morning they had thought to haue folowed the frenchmen in to the marches of Wales/ but they dyde nat so/ for they retourned the next waye in to Englande. Lo/ thus ye may se howe therle of Oxforde who was great with the kyng brake all this voyage/ and dyuers of the great lordes/ sayd that the kyng was yuell counsayled/ Seynge/ that all the prouysyon was come/ For they sayd they might well haue folowed the scottes in to Wales/ For in their so doyng/ they shulde euer haue drawen in to Englande warde. And some plons that were wery of payne and trauell said/ howe that all thynges considred/ they were better to retourne than to go any further: Sayeng/ howe a great puission must be had to serue suche an host/ & howe it was yuell to passe the mountayns that wynter season/ wherby they sayd they might rather lese than wynne.

THus in this season brake vp the iorney and army of Englande: and the kynge and his lordes retourned in to Englande/ the same way they came/ but they hadde distroyed the moost parte of the realme of Scotlande. Thise tidynges came to the ardyt all of Fraūce and to the scottes/ than they tooke counsayle what was best for them to do/ and so concluded to retourne agayne in to Scotlande/ for their vitails began to fayle and they were in a poore countrey/ for they had distroyed the marches of Carlyle/ and the landes of the barone of Clyfforde/ the lorde Maubray/ and the byshoprike of Carlyle/ but the cytie they coude nat wynne. And the frenchemen sayd/ howe they had brent and distroyed in the byshoprike of Dyrhame & Carlyle/ that was better worthe than all þ townes in Scotlande. So the frenchmen and scottes retourned in to Scotlande the same waye they came: And whan they came in to Scotlande they founde the countrey distroyed/ but the people of the countre dyde sette but lytell therby and sayd/ howe with thre or four poles/ shortely they wolde make agayne their houses/ for they had saued mothe of their catayle in the forestes: But all that the frenchemen tooke they were fayne to paye truely therfore/ and dere. The frenchemen were often in great daunger/ for the scottes and they were at many debates for vitayle: And the scotes sayd/ howe the frenchemen dyde them more domage than the Englyshemen had done: & whan it was demaunded of them why so/ they answered and sayde: howe the frenchemen as they rode abrode they beate downe & despoyled their cornes/ as where barley/ and otes: and wolde nat kepe the highe wayes/ but rather ryde throughe the corne. Of whiche domages/ they said they wolde haue of them a tre we recōpence or they departed out of Scotlande: & sayde/ Howe they shulde nother haue shyppe nor maryner to passe thē ouer the see/ without their leaue and lycence. and dyuers other knightes and squyers complayned/ that their woodes were cutte downe by the frenchemen to make their lodgynges.

Tho we the frenche lordes were in great paryll in Scotlãde/ and couldē nat fynde the meanes to passe ouer the see: & how we they shewed theries Dugias and Mozette/ the hardnesse that they foude in that countre/ and what answere they made to them.

Cap. xvi

When the admyrall and his company were returned in to Scotlande/ and were come to Edenborowe/ they had endured great payne/ & as than they coude fynde no thing to bye for their money sauf they had but fyrst/ and but small ale or bere/ and their bredde was of barley or of otes/ and their hostes were dred for hunger and foũdred for pouertie. And whan they wolde haue solde thē they wyst nat to whom/ nor they was none wolde gyue the one peny mother for horse nor for harnesse. The soudyers shewed to their captayns how we they were delte with all/ and they knewe it right well by experyence of them selfe: And thair men said/ howe they coude nat long endure in that payne: They said that the realme of Scotlande was suche a countre nat to kepe an hoost in wynter/ and if they shulde abyde there tyll somer they shulde be dred for pouertie. And if they shulde departe a sonder and serche for their lyuyng abrode i the coũtre/ they douted that the scottes wolde slee them in their beddes. The admyrall consydred well all these thynges/ and sawe clerely how it was likely to be as they sayde/ howe be it he was in purpose to abyde there all the wynter/ & to sende to the frenche kyng and to the duke of Burgoyne/ certifyeng them what case they were in/ and to haue newe prouisyon of money and vitayls/ and to make a newe fryll the warre agayne the nexte somer to in Englande/ howe be it he sawe well the pueis of the scottes/ and consydred the yell of his people. Than he gaue leaue to departe/ all suche as wolde/ but at their departyng was the mischefe/ for the lordes coude fynde no passage for the selfe nor for their men. The scottes wolde that suche knightes and squyers as were but poure shulde departe/ to thentent that they might rule the remnaũt at more ease: and sayd to the admyrall. Sir/ lette youre men departe whan they wyll/ but as for youre selfe/ ye shall nat departe out of this coũtre/ tyll we be full satisfyed of all suche charges as we haue borne all this season for your armye.

These tidynges were right harde to the admyrall & to the other barons of Fraũce/ and shewed all the mater to the erle Douglas and to the erle Mozette/ who beeingnge were right sore displeased/ that they were so hardely bake with all/ and said: We be right sorie/ for this dealynge wyll cause that neuer scottysshe knyght shall come in to Fraunce to haue good chere. And so these two erles spake to the other erles & barons of Scotlande/ who said/ howe they had losse as well as they/ wherfore dissymule you with them/ for we wyll be recõpensed Than these two erles sayd to the admyrall and to the other lordes of Fraũce/ howe they coude nat rule the other lordes nor the cõmons/ wherfore it behoued them if they purposed to go out of the realme/ to satisfy the cõmons & to restore agayne all their domages. And whan the admyrall sawe that it wolde be non otherwise/ he thought he wolde nat lese the more for the lesse. He consydred well/ howe he was without comforte and closed in with the see/ and sawe howe the scottes were of a wylde opynion/ wherfore they were fayne to agree to the scottes entent/ & caused a crye to be made/ that all maner of persons shulde come to the admyrall of Fraunce & proue that any of his men had done them any damage/ and he wolde recõpence them to the value therof/ whiche crye apeased the scottes. and so the admyrall became debtour to them all and sayd/ howe he wolde nat departe out of Scotlãde tyll all the complaynãtes were fully satisfyed and payed. Than dyuers knightes & squyers hadde passage and so retourned some in to Flaũders/ and as wynde & weder wolde dryue them/ without horse and harnesse right poore and feble/ cursyng the day that euer they came in Scotlande. Sayeng/ howe there were neuer men had so harde a voyage. wyllyng that the french kyng had peace with Englande one yere or two/ and so bothe kynges togyder to go in to Scotlande/ vtterly to distroy that realme for euer: For they said/ they neuer sawe so cruell people nor so false traytours/ nor more sotyll people in feates of warre.

The admyrall of Fraunce by the that departed first/ wrote letters to the frenche kyng and to the duke of Burgoyne/ certifyeng them what case he was in/ and how the scottes

delte with hym/ & that if they wolde haue hym to come home/ they must sende thyder suche sōmes of money as he was become dettoure/ for to be payed to the knightes/squyers/and commens of Scotlande/ for the scottes sayd playnly/ that the warre that they made in to Englande at that season/ was for Fraunce and nat for them selfe. therfore all suche domages as they haue taken by that iourney/ they wolde be fully recompensed agayne or he depted out of scotlande/ to the whiche he had swore and agreed The frenche kyng & his counsayle were bōde to ordeyne agayne the admyrall/ for they sende hym thyder. Thatte the sōmes of money were ordayned for/and the money payed by exchāge in the towne of Bruges/ so that the scottis were contente. Than the admyrall departed out of Scotlande whan all thynges was payed/and so toke his leaue of the kynge who was in the wylde scottysshe/and of the erles Douglas and Mozette/ who conueyed them to the see syde/ & so he toke shyppynge at Edenborow and had wynde at wyll and arryued at Sluse in Flaunders. Some knightes and squyers of his company returned nat agayne with hym/ they thought they wolde se other countrees/and so they went in to dyuers partes. The moost parte returned in to Fraunce so poore/that they were nat able to get the selfe any horse. some bought them horses/ & specially the burgonions/the capenoise/the barroise/and the lorayns.

Howe the admyrall enformed the frenche kyng and his counsayle of the state of Scotlande/ & howe the duke of Burgoyne had gret desyre to cause the frenche kyng to make a iorney in to Englande. Cap. xvii.

When the admyrall was returned in to Fraunce to the ponge kynge Charles & to ꝑ duke of Burgoyne they made hym good chere/ as it was reason/ and demaūded of hym the condycion of the kynge & of the lordes of Scotlande: He sayd/ howe the scottes somewhat resembled the Englysshemen/ bicause they be mutyous ouer straūgers: And moreouer he sayde/ that he had rather be erle of Sauoy or erle of Arthoyse than to be kyng of scottes/ and sayd/ howe he hadde sene all the power of Scotlande in one haye together/ as the scottes sayd themselfe/ and yet he neuer sawe togyder past fyue hundred speares and about a.xxx. thousande other men of warre the whiche nombre agaynst Englysshe archers or agaynst a thousande of other good men of armes coude nat longe endure. Than the admyrall was demaunded/ if he had sene the puyssaunce of Englande. He answered yea. For on a day quod he/ whan I sawe the scottes flye away for feare of the Englysshmen/ I desyred them to bring me where as I might se and auyse the Englysshe hoost/ and so they dyde/ I was set in a straite passage where as they must nedes passe/ and to my demyng/ they were a.xx. thousande men of warre. And the scottes sayd that it was all the power of England/ and that there were none abydinge behynde. Than the kyng and his counsayle studyed a lytell/ and at laste sayd. It is a great thyng of thre score thousande archers & of sixe or seuyn thousande men of armes. It maye well be quod the Constable that they may make that nombre/but yet I had rather fight with them at home in their owne marches than with halfe the nombre here/ and so I herde my maister saye often tymes whan I was ponge. By my faythe quod the admyrall/ if ye had ben there with a great nombre of men of armes as I supposed ye shulde haue be I thynke we hadde ouercomen all Scotlande. Thus the constable and admyrall deuysed togyder/ and they sette the duke of Burgoyne in great desyre to make an armye in to Englande. Now we let vs leaue a lytell to speke of the and retourne to the busynesse of Flaunders.

It is of trouthe/ the duke of Burgoyn had ymagined in his mynde to make the nexte Homer folowynge/ whiche shulde be in the yere of oure lorde god/ a thousande thre hundred fourscore and syue/ a great armye/ and to moue the frenche kyng as moche as he might to go into Englande. And also the constable of Fraūce/ who was an expert knight and well beloued in the realme of Fraūce/ and had ben brought vp in his youthe in the realm of Englande: He in lykewyse gaue counsayle to the same enterprise/ and so dyde the lorde de la Tremoyle. And bycause ꝑ the duke of Berry was in Poictou and Lymosyn/ and knewe

notynge of this counsayle/ the duke of Burgoyne who was chiefe about the kynge/ he had dyuers ymaginacions. he thought well that as long as the warre contynued in Flaūders/ the voyage ouer the see in to Englande/ coude nat well be done: Wherfore he was more troubled with them of Gaunte/ and enclyned rather to their desyres. for he knewe well how they were alyed to thenglysshe men. And howe they had in Gaunte a knight of Englande called sir Johan Bourchier/ sent thyder by kyng Richarde to gouerne the towne and to counsayle theym: Howe be it the gauntoyse desyred to haue peace for they were so ouerlayd by the warre/ that the mooste ryche and notablest persones of the towne/ were nat maysters of their owne goodes for the wylde soudyours gouerned them. And the wyse men sawe well/ that at length it coude nat endure/ but that they were all in great parell. And whan they were togyder/ dyuers often tymes maruey led/ howe they had endured so longe as they hadde done: they sawe well it was rather by force than by loue/ For Peter de Boyse alwayes parceyued in his yuell opynions and domages/ So that non durst speke before hym of peace/ for if he knewe any plone though he were neuer so sage that spake of any treatie of peace/ incontynent he was slayne and murthered without pytie or remedy.

THis warre that they of Gaunte hadde maynteyned agaynst their lorde therle Loyes of Flaunders and the Duke of Bourgoyne had/ endured a seuyn yere/ wherby there was suche hurte done/ that it were great maruayle to reherse. The turkes/ paynims/ and sarasyns sorowed that warre: For of trouthe the marchaundyses of eightene realmes/ arryued lightely at Sluse/ and had their delyueraunce at Dame or at Bruges/ whiche was all let by this warre. Than beholde and consyder if these farre pties sorowed this warre: Woche more ought to be sorye the landes nerre adioynynge therto/ & there was none coude fynde any meane of peace. And so fyrste by the grace of god & dluyne inspyracion/ and by the deuoute prayers of good folkes/ that god opened their eares/ & had pytie of the poore people of Flaunders. And how the peace came by them I shall shewe you fro poynt to poynt/ as I shewed you before the begynnyng/ so shall I declare the endynge. The begynnyng of the hatte was by Johñ de Bare/ Johan Piet/ Gylbert Mathue/ Johan Lion and suche other/ and I desyre you to herken therunto.

How by the grace of god two burgesses of Gaunt entereddе to treate with the duke of Burgoyne for peace: And howe they gaue the charge therof to a knight of Flaunders/ and what answere the duke gaue vnto them. Cap. xviii.

IN this season in the towne of Gaunt was sir Johan Bourchyer ruler there vnder the kynge of Englande/ and Peter de Boyse dyd assyst hym and susteygned all their yuell opynyons. They were some wysemen right sore displeased with the dyssencion betwene their naturall lorde and the towne: howbe it they durst nat shewe forth the ententes of their hartes/ but one of them to another as they durst secretely. For if Peter de Boyse had knowen that they had made any semblant of peace/ they shulde haue ben slayne wythout mercy. In lyke maner as he and Philyppe Dartuell had slayne sir Symon Becte and sir Gylbert Bzute/ and to kepe the people of Gaūt in feare: He had caused dyuers to be slayne in that season. In that season afore or Fraunces Ytremau was putte oute of the towne of Dan by the frenche kyng/ and had distroyed the cōtrey of the foure maysters/ and that the kynge was returned agayne in to Fraunce (as ye haue herde before) They of Gaūt began to dout and the notable men of the towne supposed/ þ the nexte Somer the frenche kynge wolde retourne agayne and besiege the towne/ but Peter de Boyse and suche other of his secte made but lyght thereof: Sayenge/ howe they wolde gladly se the kynge before their towne/ for they sayd/ they had suche alyaunce with the kyng of Englāde/ that they shulde soone be ayded and conforted. In this season there was in the towne two valyant men of good lyfe and of good conuersacyon/ of a meane lygnage/ nat of the best nor of the worst. Whiche plones were sore displeased to se the discorde betwene the towne and their naturall lorde/ howe be it they durste

nat speke therof for feare of Peter de Boyse/ One of them was a marynere & the other a bocher/ the one called Roger de Creuyn/ and the other Jaques Dardenbourke.

b In these two persones the matter was first set a warke/ and with thē a wyse knight of Flaunders called sir Johan Delle/ who tooke great payne therin: But he nor all the knyghtes in Flaūders coude neuer haue brought it to passe/ and it had nat ben by the meanes of these two persons. This knight sir Johan Delle was welbeloued in the towne of Gaunt/ and came and wente at his pleasure without any suspection. These two forsayd persons had great displeasure of this debate/ and spake priuely togyder therof: And Roger said to Jaques. Wyll there be no remedy foūde bytwene the towne of Gaunte (in the whiche we were borne/ and is nowe in a harde case) & the duke of Burgoyn our naturall lorde? It were a great almes dede to make a peace/ & they that so coude do/ shulde haue thanke of god & great prayse of the worlde: for by that meanes ỹ trouble shulde be ceased for euer. ye saye trouthe q Jaques: But it is a harde thynge to bringe about: for Peter de Boyse is a perylous man/ there is none dare speke of peace for feare of hi. Well q Roger/ yet it can nat be alwayes thus/ at last it must nedes haue an ende. Shewe me quod Jaques by what meanes it myght be/ & I wyll gladly here you. Than quod Roger/ ye be the chefe of all the bochery/ and moost beloued and dradde. ye might secretely shewe your corage and entent to them that be your frēdes/ and as ye se howe they enclyne/ ye maye speke further lytell and lytell. And on the other syde/ I that am a marynere and beloued with all maner of men. and I knowe some of their corage/ howe that the warre displeaseth them/ for they haue great domage therby. And I shall shewe my mynde to some/ who shall drawe other to ỹ same purpose. And if we maye gette these two craftes of our accorde/ the other craftes & other good people suche as desyreth peace/ wyll sone enclyne to vs. Well quod Jaques/ and I shall speke gladly to thē of my crafte/ and speke you to yours. And as they deuysed so it was done/ tyght secretely and wisely/ so that by the grace of the Holygost/ Jaques Dardenbourc foūde all tho of the bocher/ well enclyned to his wyll And Roger on his part by meanes of his fayre language/ foūde the maryners tyght well agreed therto/ for their crafte was nere loste for lacke of vitage.

t Thus these two wyse men shewed eche to other/ howe they founde their people disposed to haue peace. Than they said/ howe they must haue some other sage person to shewe all this matter to their lorde. At last they remembred them of a knight called sir Johan Dell/ and so they went to hym and discouered to hym all their ententes secretly/ and sayd. Sir/ we haue laboured so moche to the of our crafters/ that they be well enclyned to haue peace/ so that our lorde the duke of burgoyn wolde pardon them/ and to graunt vs our auncyent fraunchesses/ according to the tenours of our charters and bulles. Than this sir Johan sayd/ I shall gladly go and entreate hym. And so this knight went out of the towne to ỹ duke/ who was in Fraūce with the kyng/ and he shewed hym all the forsaid mater/ & dyd so moche with his fayre langage/ that the duke enclyned to here what he wolde saye: And for the desyre that the duke had to make a voyage in to Englande/ the lightlyer he condiscended to haue peace with them of Gaunt: And also his counsayle sir Guy de la Tremoyle and sir Johan de Uyen/ and the constable and the lorde Coucy/ counsayled him to take peace with thē: than the duke answered and sayd to sir Johā Delle I am content to do in this mater as ye wyll deuyse/ and so retourne ye agayne to the that sent you hyder: And the duke demaunded of hym/ if Fraunces Ateman were a counsayle of this treatie or nat. Sir quod he/ I thynke he knoweth nothynge therof/ he kepeth the Castell of Gaure/ and I knowe nat if they that sent me hider/ wolde that he shulde knowe it or nat. Tell thē quod the duke that they speke hardely with him in the mater/ for I thynke he wyll nat be a gaynst me/ for as I vnderstāde he desireth gretly to be at peace w̄ me. as the duke cōmaunded so this knyght dyd/ and retourned to Gaunt & brought these good tidynges. And than he went to the castell of Gaure to speke with Fraunces Ateman/ and discouered all his entent secretely to hym. And whan Fraunces had a lytell studyed/ merely he said. And if my lorde the duke wyll pardon them of Gaunt and vpholde their fraunchesses/ I shall nat be rebell agaynst hym but be right diligent to haue peace. Than this knight departed fro hym and went agayne into Fraunce to the duke/ and shewed hym all the

mater. The duke herde hym gladly/and wrot letters open & close sealed with his seale/ to the of Gaute. And this knyght with those letters retourned in to Flaunders/& so came to Gaut/ but he shewed nat the letters as than/but he p̄mysed Roger and Jaques to accōplysshe their ententes. Beholde nowe what pell this knight and they were in: For if sir Johan Bourchier and Peter de Boyse had knowen of the mater all the worke shulde nat haue saued their lyues.

¶ Howe these two forsayd burgeses assembled their frendes to accomplysshe their enterprise/ and sente sir Johan Delle for the dukes letters of peace. Cap. xix.

Thanne Roger and Jaques said to sir Johan Delle/ Sir/ye shall come on monday nexte comyng in to this towne at nyne of the clocke/ and bringe with you the dukes letters/ and shewe them openly to the cōmons of Gaunte/ whereby they shall gyue the more credence/for by that houre/ we wyll be lordes of the towne/ or elles ll ayne in the quarell. Well quod sir Johan/be it as ye saye: and so ended their cōsayle for that tyme And sir Johan Delle went out of the towne to accomplysshe his purpose. These other two wyse men studyed howe to bringe aboute their purpose/ and so spake with some of their frendes and aldermen of the crafftes/ so that they had a great nombre of their accorde: And determyned that on the nexte monday at nyne of the clocke/ they shulde departe out of their houses/ with the banner of Flaunders before them: Cryeng the Lyon of Flaunders/the lorde of the countrey/ hath gyuen peace to the good towne of Gaunte/ and hath pardoned clerely all trespasses. For all this mater was sagely hādeled yet it came to the knowlege of Peter de Boyse. And as soone as he knewe therof/ he went streyght to sir Johan Bourchyer/ who was soueraygne capitayne there vnder the kyng of Englande/ and sayd to hym. Roger Creuyn and Jaques Vardebourke/ wyll be to morowe by nyne of the clocke in the market place/ with the banner of Flaunders before theym: And they wyll crye through the towne/the Lyon of Flaunders lorde of this countre/ hath gyuen peace to the towne of Gaunte/ and hath pdoned all trespasses. What shall we do? The kynge of Englande shall nat be thase obeyed/ without we p̄uente them/and putte them out of our turysdyctions. What is best than to do quod sir Johan Bourchier? Than answered Peter and sayd. It behoueth/ that to morowe in the mornyng/we assemble in harnes all our men in the house de la Vale: And than let vs go throughe the towne with the kynge of Englandes baner before vs/ and lette vs crye also: The Lyon of Flaunders kynge of Englande/ lorde of this countrey and towne of Gaunte. And whan we come in to the market place/ suche as be on our partie wyll drawe to vs/ and than lette vs slee all the other treatours. It is well deuysed q̄ sir Johan Bourchier/ lette it so be done.

¶ Nowe beholde/ if god dyde nat moche for these two/ Roger and Jaques: For they were enfourmed of Peter de Boyse deuyse. & whan they knewe it they were nat abasshed: But late in the euenynge they sente to all their frendes/ that where as they shulde be the nexte daye in the market place by eight of the clocke/ in any wyse they desyred them to be there by seuyn of the clocke/ and that they dyde to p̄uent Peter de Boyse. To this poynctment euery man was agreed/ and on the monday in the morowning sir Johan Bourchyer and his company came to the house called de la Vale/ & with hym a thre score/ and Peter de Boyse came thyder with a fl. there they armed the/ & in good ordynaunce sette them selfe forwarde. And Roger and Jaques assembled their frendes togyder/ and the moost parte of the aldermen and burgeses of Gaunt came to them. Than they toke the erles baner and went through the towne/ cryeng the forsaid crye/ and suche as herde the crye/ and sawe the aldermen of their crafftes and the baners of the erle/ they folowed after and came to the same cōpany: And so by seuyn of the clocke they came to the market place/ and there set the selfe in good order/ with the erles baners before them/ and euer there came mo and mo to them. These tidynges came anone to sir Johan Bour

chier and to Peter de Boyle/ who were assem-
blynge of their people. Than they went forthe
with the baners of Englãde before them/ and
as they wente/ they cryed their cryes before de
upsed. And so they came to the said market pla
ce/ and there arayenged them selfe before the o-
ther/ but euer suche as came/ the moost parte
went to the Ecles baners/ so that if a hundred
came fourscore went thyder: In so moche/ that
all the place was full of men of armes/ and so
they stode eche regardyng other.

Than Peter de Boyle/ sawe howe the
aldermen of the crafftes dyewe to Ro-
ger and Jaques he was sore abaished
and douted greatly of his lyfe: For he sawe su
che as were wont to serue hym/ slye awaye fro
hym: and so prively he stale awaye oute of the
preasse/ and hydde hym selfe for feare of dethe.
And whan Roger and Jaques sawe þ/ nighe
all the people dyewe to their parte/ they were
right ioyouse and well cõforted/ and nat with-
out good cause: For than they sawe well/ that
the people of Gaunt wolde be in peace w̃ their
lorde/ Than they departed with a certayne of
their company/ with the baners of Flanndres
before them/ and so came to sir Johan Bour-
chyer and to the Englysshemen/ who were nat
very sure of their lyues/ whan they sawe them
come towarde them. Than Roger demaũded
of sir Johan Bourchier/ where Peter de boyle
was and what was his entent/ and whyder he
was their frende or enemy. The knight ans-
wered and said. I thynke Peter de Boyle be here
by me/ and whan he sawe that he was gone/ he
sayd. I know nat where he is become: I went
he had been in my company. But as for me/ I
am and wyll be seruaunt to my naturall lorde
the kyng of Englande/ who sende me hyder at
your owne desyres/ if ye well remembre. It is
true quod they/ for if ye had nat ben desyred to
come hyder by the towne of Gaunte/ ye shulde
haue ben slayne. But for the honour of the kyn
ge of Englande who sende you hyder at our re
quest/ ye shall nat nede to feare nor non of yo's
ye shall haue no hurte. We shall saue you from
all domages/ and conducte you to the townes
of Calayes: Wherfore departe to your lodgyn
ges peasably/ and fyere nat for any thynge ye
here or se/ For we wyll be vnder the obeysaũce
of oure naturall lorde the duke of Burgoyne/
and wyll make no more warre. The knyght
was right Ioyouse of that answere to be so
quyte/ and sayd. Sirs/ sythe it wyll be none o-
therwyse so be it: and I thanke you of that ye
offer me at this tyme.

Howe sir Johan Dell came to gaũt to the market place: where as Roger and Jaques and the aldermen of the cytie: where and howe he delyue red them letters fro the duke of Burgoyne: and howe they of Gaunt sent to Turney/ and of the confyrmacion of the peace and of the charters that were made therof. Cap. xx.

Than sir Johan Bourchier departed peasably fro the place with all thenglisshmen/ and suche Gauntoyse as were in his Companye fledde awaye and hydde theselfe. And anone after entred in to the towne sir Johan Delle/ and came in to the market place with the dukes letters/ sende thyder by the duke: And there they were opened and reed to all the people/ whiche gret lye pleased theym. Than Fraunces Ytreman was sent for fro the castell of Gaure/ who incõtynent came to them and agreed to the treatie/ and sayd it was well: And so therupon sir Johan Delle was sente agayne to the duke/ who was as than at Arras/ & shewed hym all the demeanour of the gauntoyse: And howe that Peter de Boyle had as than no rule nor aubyence in the towne: and howe that if he had ben fo-
be he had bern slayne: and howe that Fraũces Ytreman hyde acquyte hym selfe valyãtly and confyrmable to the Peace. All these thynges pleased moche the duke: and so hefealed a char ter of peace and a truse to endure/ vntyll the firste day of Januarye/ and in the meane sea-
son a counsayle to be had for that matter in the cytie of Tourney/ And all this sir Johan Delle brought agayne with hym to Gaunte/ wherof all the people had great ioye/ For they shewed than howe they had great desyre to haue peace

All this season sir Johan Bowf and the Englysshe men and Peter de Boyse were styll in Gaunte / but there was no man wolde do any thynge after them / and Peter de Boyse lyued styll in rest. With that he sware that he shulde nat procure nor moue any thynge that shulde cause any warre betwene the towne and their naturall lorde. And thus was done by the meanes of Fraunces Ityeman who spake for hym Wherby Peter lyued in rest / for they knewe well that Peter alwayes helde with their oppinions / and was a true and a good capitayne.

THis truce durynge / they of Gaute apoynted theym that shulde go to Tourney to conclude this treatie / And Fraūces Ityeman was sent thyder as chiefe / bycause he was a man reasonable and well knowen with all lordes / and with hym wente Roger Creupn and Jaques Dardebourke / and they came to Tourney in the vtas of saynt Andrewe with a fyttie house / and were all lodged togyder at the sygne of the Hamon / in the strete of saynt Basle And the .v. day of Decembre / thyder came the duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse his wyfe / and the lady of Neuers their doughter / & they entred in to Tourney at the gate towarde Lyle And agaynst their entrynge the gaūtoyse that were there issued out to mete with theym. And whan they sawe the duke / they enclyned theym selfe on their horses bare heded: And the duke passed lightely by theym / for he made haste to mete with the duchesse of Brabante / who was comynge to the cyte by the gate of Valyncs / and she was lodged in the bysshoppes palays. So thus began the treatie betwene the Duke and the towne of Gaunt / and sir Johan Delle toke great payne to go and come betwene the ptes / and at the delyre of the duches of Bourgoyne & of the lady Neuers / the duke forgaue all his yuell wyll: And the peace was made / cryed / accorded / written / and sealed betwene the parties / in maner as foloweth.

There after ensueth the tenours of the letters and charters of peace.

PHilyppe the sonne of Fraūces duke of Burgoyne erle of Flaunders / Artoys / and Palatyne / lorde of Salynes / erle of Rethell & Walynes / and Margarete duchesse and countesse of the sayd countrey. To all them that beareth or seyth this present writynge / we sende gretynge. We wyll that it be knowen / that oure welbeloued subiectes / aldermen and commons of our good towne of Gaunte / hath right humbly requyred our lorde the kyng & vs / that we shulde haue pytie and mercy on them / and to pardone all offences by theym or any for theym done to the kynge or to vs / and for pytie and compassyon of our said subiectes by our letters / we haue pardoned thē. And also we haue confyrmed their auncyent priuyleges / fraunchyses / customes / and vsage / in case that they wyll playnly obey the kynge and vs. Whiche pardone they of Gaunte and their parte takers / haue receyued right humbly by suche letters & messāgers as they sent to vs in great nombre to Turney / and they haue clene renounsed all debates and warres / and with good hartes are returned to true obeysaūce to the kyng and to vs. Promysyng from hensforthe to be true frendes & faithfull to the kynge and to vs / as the kyng as their soueraygne lorde / & to vs as their naturall lorde / by reason of Margarete our wyfe as their naturall lady & heretour. Wherfore the kynge & we haue receyued to our grace our said subiectes / & haue gyuen them letters of pdon & pure remyssion / with reslytucyon of their priuyleges / customes / and vsages / the whiche more at large appereth / by the content of oure letters. After whiche pardons our sayd subiectes haue made to vs dyuers supplycacions / the whiche we haue receyued & haue caused them by good deliberacyon to be sene / vysited / & examyned / by our counsayle / the whiche well sene / & for the cōmen pfite of all the cōtree / & to eschue all dissensions that hereafter might fall of our speciall grace / & by the contēplacion of our good subie-

ctes/ we haue ordred and determined in maner as foloweth. Firste where as they desyre that we shulde confyrme their auncient priuileges of Tourney/ Dandwarde/ Geauntmont/ Meule Teremounde/ Ruplemount/ Ibble/ Atharcle/ Bzcuelles/ Doule/ and of the Chatelleyns/ and playne countrey/ partayning to the same townes. We haue ordayned that the inhabytauntes of the sayd townes shulde come to vs/ bzingyng with them their priuileges/ which shalbe seen by our counsayle: And that done/ we shall so do that our said subiectes of Gaule and they of the sayd good townes/ shall by reason holde them content. And if any of the sayde priuileges be lost by any case/ foztune/ or otherwyse/ we shall make good reformacion therof. Also where as they haue desyred for the course of marchaundyse/ we haue consented/ that they haue all their auncyent course/ payeng their custome of olde tyme contynewed. Also where as they desyre/ that if any of the inhabytauntes of our towne of Gaunt/ or any of their adherentes/ happe to be arrested in tyme to come in any countre/ out of the country of Flaunders/ for the occasyon of the debates and sayd dissencyons/ that than we shulde cause theym to be released/ and to lyue in rest. And in that case/ we haue graunted/ that if any of them be arrested for ȳ cause/ We shall ayde/ comforte/ and defende them with our power/ agaynst any that shulde trouble them/ as we be bounde to defende our good and true subiectes. Also they requyre/ that all suche prisoners as we haue/ whiche were of their party/ that they shulde be delyuered. We haue ordayned & do ordayne/ that all suche prisoners/ if they be putte to their raunsome/ that they pay their raunsome and be delyuered/ payeng also their reasonable expenses/ So that if any of these prisoners or their frendes or kynne/ haue in their hãdes any forteresses of ours kepyng it agaynst vs/ First that they delyuer suche forteresses in to ours handes/ and also in lykewyse/ that they delyuer all suche prisoners as they haue in their handes.

Moreouer by our habundant grace/ we haue ordayned and do ordayne/ that all suche as by the occasions of the debates and dissencyons that were late in ourre countrey of Flaunders/ and haue ben banisshed out of our good townes/ of Bruges/ Ypre/ the countre of Francke/ and other townes and places: And also/ all suche as hath ben banysshed by iustyce of the lawe out of Gaunt/ or put out or iudged without lawe and be absent/ that all suche be restored and maye returne and dwell in the sayd towne/ and all suche as hath taken their parte/ to be restored agayne at their pleasure/ to suche places as they came fro. & whan they entre agayne in to any of the sayd townes that they swere to our officers to be true to vs/ and to kepe the peace/ and suretie of the sayde townes/ not that they beare any quell wyll priuely nor a parte/ to any of the inhabytauntes of the sayd townes/ nor to do them any quell or domage. And that all suche as entre in to any towne/ shall swere to obey the kynge and vs: & suche as be absent the tyme hereafter ymitted/ shalbe restored to all the fees/ houses/ rentes/ & herytages/ whersoeuer they be: Notwithstandyng/ any forfayture done by them/ by the occasyon of the sayd dissencyons/ but they to enioye them as in their primer state. Also if any of the sayd inhabytauntes of the towne of Gaunt or any of their adherentes be out of the towne and be in the countreis/ of Brabant/ Holande/ Zelande/ or in Cambresy/ or in the bysshoprike of Liege: That they come and submytte them selfe to vs/ or to suche as we shall appoynte/ within the space of two monethes/ after the publycacion of this peace: that than/ they to enioye the pardone and forsaid grace. And suche as be in the realme of Englande/ or in Fryselande/ Almayne/ and other on that syde the greatsee/ they to come and submytte theym selfe within foure monethes after notifycation of this peace. And suche as be beyonde the great Sees/ at Rome or at Saynt Iames/ they to haue respyte of their submyssyon a hole yere after knolege of this peace: And than they thus swoyne/ may enioye this our sayd pardone. And also/ all suche as hath ben banysshed or iudged out of our sayd towne by the sayde occasyon/ that they be restored to their fees/ houses/ rentes/ and herytages/ whan soeuer they wyll at their pleasure As for mouable goodes that hath ben taken of eyther partie/ there shalbe no restytuction made therof/ but euery partie to be quyte therof. Also if any obligacions be made for any mouable goodes/ taken for the said occasyons for dyscharge of their conscyence/ to render them agayne. And all suche houses as shall be delyuered agayne to the owners/ that nothing be taken out of theym/ nayled or pynned with pyen or leed: And fro thens forthe the reuenues to be payable to the owners. and also though it

be so / that some of our subiectes of Gaunt have done homage / for suche landes as they holde to other lordes than to the true owners / whereby their landes myght be fortifyed: Nat withstandynge / we of our specyall grace / wyll that they shall stylle entoye suche landes / in doynge to vs homage / for that they holde of vs without and to other meane for that they holde of them. And also we graunt all disenheryteaunces and recognysaunces done by the lawe / betwene any partes to stande / so that our subiectes of Gaunt aldermen / counsaylours / & comens of the same and their adherentes / by their owne good wylles / renounce all their alyaunces / promises / obligacions made / and homage that they or any of them haue done or made to the kyng of Englande / or to any of his deputies or officers / or to any other that be no good wyllers to ꝑ kyng or to vs: And frohens forwarde to swere to be true to the kyng / as to their seueraygne lorde / and to his successours kynges of Fraunce / and to vs as their ryght lorde and lady / and to our successours erles of Flaunders: & to vs do seruyce as true subiectes ought to do to their lorde & lady: As to defende our persons / honours / heryptages / and rightes / and to lette to their powers / all suche as wolde the contrarye / and to gyue knowledge therof to vs or to our officers saynge alwayes their pryuileges and fraunchesse. Also to the entent that oure subiectes of the towne of Gaunt / shulde be alwayes in good peace and true obeysaunce to the kyng / and to vs and to our heyres erles of Flaunders / and to eschewe all dissencyons & debates that myght fall: We wyll and ordayne / that all these sayde artycles be surely kepte without breakynge. & straitely we cõmaunde all our subiectes on payne to lese that they maye lese to vs / that for any occasyon of the sayd debates or dissencyons / that they do nothing openly nor pryuely i worde nor dede / that shulde be prejudicyall to the of gaunt nor to rebuke / or to gyue theym any yuell language. And if any do contrarye to these sayde artycles / or do any iniury or domage to theym of Gaunte or to any of their ayres / or any that helde on our partie / by occasyon of any of the sayd debates or dissencyons / do any suche offence / that by suche knowledge of the lordes officers / and by the lawes to whom it appertayneth that the dede be crcmenell / the doers / ayders / and counsayle espars without fraude / be punysshed by their bodyes and goodes / as brekers of the peace / as well by iustyce of our officers as of our lordes officers / by the lawes of the countrey to whom it appertayneth / and reasonable satisfactyon made to the partie hurte / of the goodes of the trespasar / and the residue to vs or to the lordes of the soyle: sauyng euer to all townes their pryuileges. And if any of our burgesses of the sayd towne of gaūt though they be nat banysshed by the lawe / and if they be gylte for breakynge of this peace / & thynke by reason of the pryuileg of olde tyme therby to be saued / and nat to lese any of their goodes, yet nowe we wyll by this present treatie / that they shall lese their goodes / and the partie hurte satisfyed therof / as is said before / and the residue to come to the right heyres / as though they were dede in all other cases / sauyng the pryuileges of the towne of Gaunte. And if suche yuell doers can nat be taken / thanne they to be banysshed and depryued fro their goodes. Also if there be any ꝑ in wordes or otherwyse / do contrarye to this our said ordynaunce / and cõe to the knowledge of our officers. We wyll that all suche be punysshed and to make amendes / in suche maner / that they maye be ensample to all other: The punysshment to be done by the officers of the lawe / & by them to whom the right appertayneth: Nat withstandynge any pryuiledge or Fraunchesse of any place. Also if any persone of the churche do agaynst this ordynaūce / than he to be delyuered to his ordynarie: he to take suche vengeaūce on him as a breaker of the peace / and as the case requireth. Also we wyll that this sayd peace betwene vs and oure subiectes / be cryed and publysshed solempnely in this towne / and in all other townes of Flaūders: And herafter if any dout be made in any of the sayd artycles or circumstaunces therof: We shall than declare & cause to be declared by our counsayle euery thynge / that all parties shall of reason holde them content. And we aldermen / burgesses / and cõmonties of the towne of Gaunt / for vs and all oure adherentes / We receyue and haue receyued hũbly the sayd graces / pardons / and benefytes to vs done by kyng Charles our souerayne lorde and by the said duke and duchesse / erle and cõtesse of Flaūders / our naturall lorde and lady: of the whiche graces and pardons / we thanke with all our hertes the kyng our souerayne lorde and his successours / and our naturall lorde and lady afforsayd erle and countesse of Flaunders. And we make and shall make pmyse / as true we and faythfull subiectes ought to do / and

we shall kepe and defende their personages and honours. In wytnesse of the whiche thynges/ we the sayde duke and duchesse haue putte our seales to these present letters. And we shyrriffes aldermen/burgesses/and cõmons of the sayde towne of Gaunt/ haue also putte to the seale of the towne of Gaunte. And moreouer/ we the sayd duke and duches/praye and requyre oure welbeloued Iunte/duchesse of Lusenbourche and of Brabant/and our right welbeloued bro ther the duke Iubert of Bauyer: And also the aldermen/cõmontie/ and counsayle of Gaunt. And also we the duke & duchesse of Burgoyne/ and our aldermen/ counsayle/ and cõmonties of Gaunt/ requyre and praye the barones and nobles of the countrey of Flaunders here after folowynge/ and to all good townes: Is Bruges/ Ipre/the terrouer of Fräke/ and the good townes of Malynes and Iuuers: That what for ỹ well of the peace/and knowledge of surette of the forsaid thynges/and of eche of them we desyre them to sette to their seales. And we Jane by the grace of god / duchesse of Lusenbourche/ of Brabaunt / and of Lanchourche. And we duke Iubert of Baupere/ baylye and gouernour of the countrey of Heynaulte/Hollande/ and zelande/ and of the seignorie of Frise. And we Wyllyam eldest sonne of the erle of Namure lorde of Sluse. And Hughe lorde dã copne Chatelayne of Gaunt: And Johñ lorde of Guystelles and of Harues. Henry de Burres lorde of Dysquemewe and of Haure. Johan lorde of Gonuleberge and of Jentoyse. Arnolde of Jouste lorde of Estoznay. Philyppe lorde Daralle. Loyse of the Halle bastarde of Flaunders. Gyrarde of Rasenhen lorde of Basserode. Gaultier lorde of Halme. Philyppe of Namure lorde of Eque. Johñ Villayne lorde of sayne Johans without the Chatellayne of Ipre. And Loyse lorde of Lambres knyght. And we the borowe maysters and aldermen of Bruges and Ipre. We Philyppe of Redehen/ Mountferant aldermen of Woustranke/ and of Mountamare knight shyrrife of terrouer of Franke: for and in the name of the sayd Terrouer whiche hath no seale/ and the commons and counsayls of the townes of Malynes and Iuuers: Haue by the forsayd prayers and request for the welth of the peace. And in wytnes of the trouthe/ and for more surette of the sayd thynges/and of eche of them/ we haue putte to the Seales of the sayd townes to this present treatie/ made at Tourney the eyghtene day of the moneth of Decembre/ in the yere of grace a thousande thre hundred fourscore and fyue.

After the makyng of these present letters and charters of peace/and engroced and Sealed they were publysshed/and the duke had the one parte of them/and the towne of Gaunt the other parte. Than Frauces Atremanz the cõmons of the towne of Gaũt beyng there/ toke their leaue humbly of the duke and of the duchesse/and also of the lady of Brabãt/ Thankyng her a thousande tymes of her ayde and helpe/ in makynge of their peace/ and offred them selfe euer to be redy to do her seruyce The good lady thanked thẽ right swetely/ and exhorted them euer to kepe fermely the peace/ and so to styre ỹ people/ that they neuer rebell agaynst their lorde and lady: So than euery body departed and went home to their owne. The duke and duches retourned to Lyle/ and they of Gaunt returned to their towne. Whan Peter de Bosse sawe the sure confyrmacion of the peace/and that all the people of Gaunt had great hope therof/and were in mynde and wyll neuer to rebell more nor to haue warre/ he was therof greatly abasshed/and had dyuers ymaginacyons/ Whether he shulde abyde styll in Gaunte (for all thynges was pardoned by the dukes charter sealed with his seale) or elles to departe in to Englande with sir Johan Bourchier and with the Englysshemen/ who apparelled them to go. And all thynges conspyred/ he thought in hym selfe/that he coude nat trust this peace nor to abyde in Gaunte. And whan Fraunces Atreman sawe that he wolde nat abyde/he sayd to him: Peter/ what thynke ye to do? Why do ye feare? ye knowe well/ that by this treatie sealed by ỹ duke that for any thing that is past/there shall neuer chalenge be made to you for that. Than Peter answered & sayd. yes. in letters written lyeth nat all true pdons. Some pardoneth well by mouthe and gyueth wrytyng therof/ but yet the hatered remayneth styll in their corages: As for me I am a man of the towne of Gaunt of small reputacion/and of base lynage/ & to my power I haue susteyned the rightes/lyberties/& fraūcheses of the towne. Thynke you that with this two or thre yere the people wyll remẽbre it? I feare nay: There be great lygnages in the towne of Gylbert Mathewes and his bretherne/ They wyll retourne and they were enemyes to my mayster Johan

Leon / gladly I wolde neuer se theym / nor the parentes of sir Gylbert Bute nor of sir Symon Bette / who were by me slayne / wherfore in this case I can nat be sure of my lyfe. And as for you Fraunces Steeman wyll you abyde amonge suche a sorte of treatours / who haue so falsely broken their othe and promyse to the kynge of Englande / I swere to you truely ye wyll repente it / for it wyll coste you youre lyfe. I can nat saye quod Fraunces / but I truste so well in this peace / and in the duke and duchesses promyse / that I wyll ieoparde to abyde.

Than Peter de Boyse made a requeste to the aldermen and counsayle of the towne: Sayeng / Sayre lordes / to my power I haue truely serued the towne of Gaunt and haue ben in many an harde aduenture in that be halfe. And for all the good seruyce that I haue done / In the name of rewarde / I aske none other thynge / but that I maye be safely conducted with sir Johan Bourchier / whome ye sende in to Englande: This is all that I demaunde. And they all answered / it shulde be done. And as for sir Roger Emerynd and Jaques Bardenbourche / by whome this treatie was fyrste moued / they were ryght gladde of his departure / and so were dyuers other notable persones in Gaunt / suche as loued the peace. So thus Peter de Boyse departed frome Gaunte in the company of sir Johan Bourchier / and toke with hym all the substaunce that he hadde: He was well furnysshed of golde / syluer / and two welles. And sir Johan Delle dyde conducte them vnder the dukes saluе conducte to the towne of Calais / and than the gauntoise returned. Sir Johan Bourchier and Peter de Boyse as soone as they might they wente in to Englande / and came to the kyng and to his vncles / and shewed them the dedes of theym of Gaunte. The kynge made Peter de Boyse good chere / and so dyde the duke of Lancastre and his bretherne / and gaue hym great thanke in that he was come to them / and had abandoned theym of Gaunte to come in to Englande. The kyng incontynent retayned hym & gaue hym an hundred marke sterlynge / yerely to be payed out of the Staple of the wolles in London. Thus Peter de Boyse abode styll in Englande / and the good towne of Gaunt in peace And sir Roger Emeryn was made chefe alder man of the fleete of Gaunte / whiche was a good office and of great profyte / whan the shyppes myght haue their course with marchaundyse: And sir Jaques Bardebourc was made chefe ruler of all the meane Crafte in the towne of Gaunte / whiche also was a great and a profytable office.

Howe sir Johan Froyssart auctour of this cronycle / departed out of Fraunce and wente to the erle of Foix / and the maner of his voyage. Cap. xxi.

IT is longe nowe sith I made any mencion of the busynesses of farre Countrees / for the busynesses nerer home hath ben so fresshe that I lafte all other maters to write therof: Howe be it all this season valyant men desyryng to auaūce them selfe in the realme of Castell and Portyngale: In Gascoyne / in Rouergue / in Quercy / in Lymosyn / and in Bygorre: Euery day they ymagined / by what subtelte they coulde gette one of another by dedes of armes / or by stealyng of townes / castels & fortresses. And therfore I Johan Froyssart / who haue taken on me to cronycle this present hystorie / at the requyst of the highe renomed prince sir Guy of Chatellon erle of Bloyse / lorde of Dauesnes / Beaumoys / Dessonbon / & of la Guerde / my souerayne mayster & good lorde. Cōsyderyng in my selfe howe there was no great dedes of armes likely to warde in the parties of Picardy or Flaūders / Seyng the peace was made betwene the duke and them of Gaunt. And it greatly anoyed me to be ydell / for I knewe well that after my deth this noble and highe hystorie shulde haue his course / wherin dyuers noble men shulde haue great pleasure and delyte. And as yet / I thāke god I haue vnderstandyng and remembraūce of all thynges passed / and my wyt quicke and sharpe ynough to conceyue all thinges shewed vnto me / touchyng my principall mater / & my body as yet able to endure and to suffre payne. All thynges cōsydred / I thought I wolde nat lette to pursue my sayde fyrst purpose. And to

shewerent to knowe the trouthe of dedes done in farre countries / I founde occasion to go to the right and mighty prince Gaston erle of Foix and of Byerne / for I knewe well / if I might haue that grace to come in to his house and to be there / at leyser I coude nat be so well enfor-med to my purpose / in none other place of the worlde / for there resorted all maner of knyght-es and other squyers / for the great noblenes of the sayd erle / and as I imagined so I fyn-de / And shewed to my redoubted lorde the erle of Blopes myne entent / and he gaue me letters of recōmendacions to the erle of Foix. And so long I rode without parell or damage that I cāe to his house called Ortais / in the cōtree of Berne on sayn̄t Katherynes day / the yere of grace. M. ccc. lxxxiii. and the sayd erle assoone as he sawe me / he made me good chere and smylyng sayd / howe he knewe me / & yet he neuer sawe me before / but he had often herde speke of me / and so he retayned me in his house to my great ease / with the helpe of the lettres of credence that I brought vnto hym / so that I might tary there at my pleasure. There I was enfourmed of the busynesse of the real-mes of Castyle / Portyngale / Nauer / and Ara-gon / pea and of the realme of Englande / & cō-tree of Burthonoyse and Gascoyne. And the erle him selfe if I dyd demaunde any thyng of him he dyde shewe me all that he knewe / Sayenge to me / howe thystoyre that I had begon shulde hereafter be more praysed than any other / and the reason he sayd why / was this. Howe that.l. yere passed there had ben done more maruey-lous dedes of armes in the worlde / than in thre hundred yere before that. Thus was I in the court of the erle of Foix / well cherysshed and at my pleasure / it was the thyng that I moost de-syred to knowe newes / as touchyng my mater. And I had at my wyll lordes / knightes / & squi-ers euer to enfourme me / and also the gentle erle hym self. I shall nowe declare in fayre langage all that I was enfourmed of / to encrease there-by my matter / and to gyue ensample to the that ysshe to auaunce them selfe. Here before I ha-ue recounted great dedes of armes / takynge and lastynge townes and castelles / and batay-les and harde encountrynges / and yet here af-ter ye shall here of many mo / the whiche by the grace of god I shall make full narration.

Ye haue herde here before / that whan the lor-de Edmonde / sonne to the kynge of Englande erle of Cambridge / was departed fro the realme of Portyngale and had take shypping at Lis-bourke / and howe he had made couenant that Jehan to trouue aut heritage. So thus was become he der / parauenture nat so many as ye wote for: but suche as I haue here be of suche good lyues / that they dare well abyde the ad-uenture of batayle agayns all those ye be nowe present with the erle of Tryastmare / and sure-ly we shall nat be content with you without we ha-ue batayle. Sayth monsr̄ oliuer / the erle of Cambridge shewed to the kyng of Portyngale of his departed / the which kyng herde the well / howe be it he neuer durste gyue batayle on the playne of Salonesse where he was before the spayneardes / nor they of the countre wolde nat gyue hym counsayle therto / but sayde to hym. Sir / the puyssaunce of the kyng of Castell is as nowe so great / and that by fortune or myshap aduenture that ye left the felde / ye lese than youre realme for curr. Wherfore it were better ye suf-fred than to do a thyng whereby ye shulde haue domage and parell. And whane erle of Cam-bridge sawe it wolde be none other wyse / he re-tourned to Lysenborne and apparelled his shyp-pes and toke leaue of the kyng of Portyngale / and so toke the see with his company / & wolde nat leaue Jehon his sonne in Portingale with the kyng / nor with the lady that he shulde ma-ry with all: The cause was but ponge / and so thus the erle retourned in to Englande. Thus was the dealyng as than of the iourney in Por-tyngale.

The erle of Cambridge retourned in to Englande on the maner as ye haue her-de before / and shewed his brother the Duke of Lancastre all the dealynge of kynge Ferant of Portyngale. The duke was sorie therof. for he sawe thereby that his conquest of Castell was farre of / and also kyng Richarde of Englande had about him cōsayle that were nat after his apetyte / and specially the erle of Oxforde / who was cheefe in the kynges fauour. This erle dyd set as great trouble bytwene the kyng and his vncles as he might / and sayd oftentymes to the kyng. Sir if ye wyll folowe the wyndes of your vncles the duke of Lancastre & the erle of Cam-bridge / it shall well ese all the treasure in En-glande about their wayes in Spayne / and yet they shall cōquere nothyng. It were better for you to kepe your owne people and your money than to spende it abrode where ye can gete no profyte / and kepe and defende your owne he-ritage / wherin ye haue warre on all sydes / as well by

wel by Fraunce as by Scotland, rather than to employ your tyme in other countreis. The yonge kynge enclined lyghtly to hys wordes, for he loued him with all his hert, bicause they had bene nourished vp together. And this erle had great ayauncer, with diuers lordes and knyghtes of Englande, for he dyd all his maters by the counsayle of sir Symon Burle, sir Robert Trecuelyen, sir Nicolas Bzambze, sir Johan Beauchampe, sir Johan Salisburye, and sir Michaell de la pole. And also sir Thomas Triuet and sir wyllyam Helmon, were named to be of the same pte, so that by the dyffernes and discorde betwene the kyng and his vncles, and the nobles and commons of the realme, many yuels came therby in Englãde, as ye shall here hereafter in this hystorie.

IT was not longe after that the Erle of Cambrydge departed oute of Portyngale, but that the kynge Feraunt fell syeke, and so contynued a hole yere and died, & than he had no mo children but the Quene of Spayne. Than kinge Johan of Castell was enformed of his deth, and how that the realm of Portyngale was fallen into his hãdes, and howe that he was rightfull heire therunto, by reason of the death of the king. So there was diuers counsails kept on that mater, and some said, how that the Portingales were so harde harted people, þ they would not be had without it were by conquest. And in dede whan the portyngales sawe how they were without a king than they determined by counsayle to sende to a bastarde brother of the kynges, a sage and a valiaunt man called Denise, but he was a mã of religion, and was maister of the hospitals in al the realme. They sayd they had rather be vnder the rule of this maister Denise, than vnder the rule of the kynge of Castell, for they reputed him no bastarde, that hath good corage to do well. Whan this mayster Denise vnderstode the cõmens will of foure chiefe cities of Portyngale (for they hadde great affection to crowne hun kynge) wherof he had great ioye, and so wrote secretly to his frendes and came to Lurbone, whiche is the haye of the realme. The people of the towne receyued hym wyth great ioye and demaũded of hun, yf they crowned hun kynge: whether he wold be good to thẽ or not, and kepe the lande in their fraunchese. And he answered and sayd, he would be to thẽ as they desired, and that they had neuer a better kinge than he wold be. Than they of Lurbone wrote to Connubres, to Pount de portugale, and to them of Dourke: these were the hayes of the Realme, and so they determyned to crowne to their kynge this mayster Denise, who was a sage & a valiant mã and of good gouernaũce, and was brother to kynge Ferãt for they sawe well the realme could not be lõge without a kynge, as well for feare of the spaynardes as of the Mscreantes of Granado, & of Bongie, who marched on them. So these saide townes and certaine of the lordes of the land enclined to him, but some of ꝑ lordꝭ sayde that it was not mete a bastarde to be crowned kyng: And the people of the good townes said that it should be so: for of necessite they must so do, sithe they had none other, and seing that he was a valiant and a sage man, bothe in wytte and in dedes of armes. And they toke ensample by kynge henry, who was crowned kynge of Castell by election of the countrey, and for the cõmon profytte, and that was done kynge Peter beyng a lyue. So thus the election abode on this maister Denise, and solempnelye he was crowned in the cathedrall churche of Connubres, by the accorde and puysaunce of the cõmons of the realme. And there he sware to kepe iustyce & to do right to his people, and to kepe and maintein their fraunchese, and to liue and die with them, wherof they hadde great ioye.

Whan these tidinges came to the hearynge of don Johan kyng of Castell, he was sore displeased therwith, and for two causes. The one was bycause his wife was inheriter there, & the other bicause the people by election hadde crowned maister Denise kinge there. Wherefore this kinge John toke titel to make warre and to demaũde of them of Lurbone the some of two hundred thousande florens, whiche Ferant promised him whan he toke hys doughter to his wyfe. So than he sende the Erle of Terme, therle of Ribden, and the Bysshoppe of Burges into Portyngale, as hys ambassadours to them of Lurebone, & whan they were at sayne prayne, the laste towne of Castell towarde Lurbone: Then they sent an harauide to the kyng and to them of Lurbone, to haue a safe conduct to go and come and to furnishe their voyage, whiche was graunted lyghtly, & so they came to Lurbone, and so the towne assembled their counsaile together, and the ambassadours shewed why they were come thyder, and finallye sayde: ye sirs of Lurbone, ye

ought iustely not to maruell, if the kynge oure
souerayne lorde demaundeth of you the some
of money that ye are bound for: And is not cō-
tent that ye haue geuen ꝑ noble crowne of por
tyngale to a clerke a man of religion and a by
starde: It is a thynge not to be suffered, for by
rightfull election, there is non nerer to ꝑ crow
ne thā he: And also ye haue done this without
the assent of the nobles of ꝑ realme. Wherfore
the kinge our maister saieth, that ye haue done
euel. And without that ye shortlye do remedye
the mater, he will make you sharpe warre. To
the which worde don Feraunt Gallopes de
bile fois, a notable burgesse of the citie, answe-
red and said. Sirs, ye reproche vs greatly for
our election, but your owne election is as mo-
che reprouable, for ye crowned in Spaigne a
bastard, sonne to a Jew: And it is clerely kno
wen, that to the ryghtfull election, your kynge
hath no right to the realme of Portyngale, for
the right resteth in the daughters of kyng Pe
ter, who be in Englande maried, bothe Con-
staūce and Isbel, maried to the Duke of Lan-
caster & to therle of Cambridge. Wherfore sirs
ye may departe whan ye will, and returne to
them that sent you hyder, and say that our ele
ction is good, whyche we will kepe, and other
kynge we wil haue none, as long as he liste to
be our king. And as for ꝑ some of money that
ye demaūd of vs, we say we are nothyng bōde
therto, take it of them that were bounde ther-
fore, and of suche as had the profite therof. At
this answere the kinge of Portingal was not
pleased, howbeit he knew well what should be
said. And whā these Ambassadours sawe they
could haue none other answer, they toke their
leaue and departed, and returned to Cyuell,
where they lafte the kinge and his counsaile, to
whom they shewed al the said answere. Than
the king of Spaygne toke counsaile what was
best to do in this matter. Thā it was determy
ned that the king of Portyngale should be de-
fied, and how that the kynge of Spaine had a
good quarell to moue the warre for diuers rea
sons. So then kinge Denise was defyed & all
his helpers in portingale. Than the kynge of
Spaine made a great somons of men of war
to lay siege to the citie of Lurbone, & the kyng
said, he would neuer departe thens till he had
it, for they had answered him so proudely, that
they shuld derely repent it, if he might ouercō
them. Thus the king of Castell with al his pu
issaūce came to saint Iraque. At the seasō there
was a knight chased out of ꝟ court, who was
called sir Nauret. For if the kinge might haue
get hym, it should haue coste hym his head, the
knight had knowledge therof, for he had ma-
ny good frendes. So he auoyded the Realme
of Castel and came to Lurbone to the king of
Portingale, who had great ioy of his coming
and retayned hym and made hym a great capi-
tayne, and he did after muche hurte to the spa
niardes. The kynge of Castell departed fro
saynt Iraque, and came and laied siege before
the citye of Lurbone, and enclosed therein the
kynge of Portyngale. The syege endured
more than a whole yere, & constable of the host
was the erle of Longueuyll, and Marshall of
the hoost was sir Raynolde Lymosyn, he was
a knight of Limosin, who long before came in
to Spaigne with sir Bertram of Clesquy in
the first warres that he made in Spaygne.
Thus sir Raynolde was a baliant knight and
well proued. And the kynge had well maried
him to a fayre ladye, & to a faire heritage: And
by her he had two sonnes Raynolde and Hen-
ry And he was greatly praysed in the realme
of Castell for his prowes, and with the kynge
of Castell there was Bagheynes Mandake,
sir Hygo Persement, don Peter Roseament,
don Maryche de Verlaulx portugaleys, who
were turned spainiſshe, and the great mayster
of Calestrane and his brother, a yong knight
called don Bighemeres, Pier Gensart of sel-
me, John Radigo de Hoyes, & the great mai-
ster of saint Jaques. The kinge had wel with
him a thirtye thousande men. There were by-
uers assautes and scirmisshes, and many fea-
tes of armes done, on the one part and on the
other. The spaignierdes knewe well that the
kinge of Portingale should haue none aide of
the nobles of his realme, for the commōs had
made him kinge against their willes. So the
kynge of Castell had entention to cōquere lur
bone and al the countre or he retourned, for he
sawe well they shulde haue none aide without
it were out of Englande, wherof he had moste
doute. And yet when he had wel ymagined, he
saw well the Englyche men were farre of, and
he had herde howe the kinge of England and
his uncles wer nat all of the best accord. Wher
fore he thought him selfe the more of suerty at
his siege, whyche siege was ryghte plentifull of
all thynges. There was in no market in Ca-
stell more plentie thā was there And the king
of Portyngale lay stil in the citie of lurbone at
his ease, for they could not take the see fro him
And he determyned to sende in to Englande

to the kyng and to the duke of Lancastre trayte ambassadours, to reuoke the alyaunces made before betwene the kyng & kyng Ferdt his brother, and also the ambassadours had in charge to shewe the duke of Lancastre that in maryage he would gladly haue his doughter Philippe, and to make her quene of Portyngale and to swere and seale a perpetuall peace & alyaunce betwene them. And also promising him (that if he wold come rydde with two or thre thousand men of warre, and as many archers) to helpe and ayde him to conquer his enheritaunce of Castell. On this message was appointed two knyghtes, sir John Lanegor, & sir John Tetebeze, and an archbeshop of Lurbone, called Marthe de la Figure. So they made the redy and toke the sea, and had good wynde, and so sayled towarde the frontiers of England. On the other part the kynge of Castell lay a syege, and he was counsayled to wyne into Fraunce and into Gascoyne, for some ayde of knyghtes & squiers, for the Spaynardes supposed well that the kynge of Portyngale had sente for socoure into Englande, to reise theyr siege, & they thought they would be strong ynough to fyght the Englysshemen and Portugalois. And as he was counsayled so he dyd, and sent letters and messangers into Fraunce, to diuers knyghtes and squyers such as delyted deedes of armes, and specially in the countrey of Berne, in the countye of Foys for there were plenty of good knyghtes desiring deedes of armes. For though they had bene brought vp with the erle of Foys, as then there was good peace betwene hym and the erle of Armynake. So these messages of these two kings were not sone brought about, how be it the warres in other places ceased nerethelesse as in Auuergne, in Tholouse, in Rouergue, and in the land of Bygorre. ¶ Nowe let vs leaue to speake of the busines of Portyngale a lytel, and speake of other matters.

Of how the prynce of Wales and the princes came to Tarbe, and of the request that the countesse of Armynake made to the prince and princesse, and how the countrey of Gascoyne was newly agayne in warre. Cap. xxii.

BEtwene the countye of Foys and the countrey of Berne lyeth the country of Begorre, why the countye pertayned to Fraunce, and marched on the countrey of Tholouse on the one parte, and on the countye of Comynges and of Berne on the other parte. And in the county of Bygorre lyeth the strong castell of Lourde, wherby was englythe euerlyth that the county of Bygorre was gyuen to the kyng of England and to the prince, for the redempcyon of kynge of Fraunce, by the treatye and peace made at Bretigny, before Charters and after confyrmed at Calays, as it hath bene shewen before in the other history. Whan the prince of Wales was come out of England, and that the kynge hys father had gyuen hym in herytage all the lande and duchy of Acquytayne, wherein there were two archebyshoppes, and xxii. other byshoppes, and that he was come to Bordeaux on the ryuer of Gyronne, & had take the possessyon of all these landes & lyen there a yeare. The he & the princes were delyted by the erle Johan of Armynake, that they would come into the countrey of Bigorre into the citye of Tarbe, to se that countrey, which as yet he had not sene before. And the erle of Armynake thought yt yf the prynce and princesse were in Bygorre that the erle of Foys wold come and se them, and where as he dyd owe hym for his raunsome two hundred & fyfty thousand frankes, he thought he would desyre the prince and princesse to requyre the earle of Foys to forgyue him the same sume or part therof. So much dyd the earle of Armynake that at his instance the prince & princesse came to the citie of Tarbe. This towne is fayre and standeth in a playne countrey among the fayre vynes. And it is a towne, citye, and Castell, closed with gates and walles, and seperated erle fro other. Fro the mountaynes of Berne, and Cathelogne cometh the fayre riuer of Lyse, which renneth through Tarbe, and is as clere as a fountayne. And a fyue leagues from is the towne of Morlance, pertayning to the erle of Foys, at the entre of the county of Bierne, and vnder the mountayne, a fyue leages fro Tarbe is the towne of Pamne which also pertayneth to ye sayd erle. The same time that the prince & princes was at Tarbe the erle of Foys was at Pamne. He was there lodged at a fayre castell, longyng to the towne with-

out on the ryuer of Geane. Assone as he harde the commynge of the prince & prynces being at Tarbe. He ordayned to go and se them in great estate, with one thousande speres, and thre score knyghtes in his cõpanye. And of his comming to Tarbe was the prince and prynces right ioyous and made him good chere and ther was the erle of Armynake & the lorde Walbet, & they desyred the prince to requyre the erle of Foys to forgyue therle of of Armynake all or ells parte of the sum of .f. florens that he ought to haue. And the prynce who was wyse and sage, consyderynge all thynges, thought that he myght not do so, and for dr. But erle of Armynake, ye were taken by armes in the tourney of batayle, and ye dyd putte my coseyn the erle of Foys in aduenture agayns you. And though fortune were fauourable to hym and agayns you, his valure ought not then to be made lesse. By lyne ordres, my lorde my father nor I would not be contente that we shoulde be despyced to leaue that we have won by good aduenture at the batayle of Poycters, wherof we thanke god. When the erle of Armynake herd that he was abashed, for he fayled of his entent. Howbeit yet he left not of so. But than he requyred the prynces who with a good hert, desired the erle of Foys to gene her a gift. Madame quod therle, I am but a meane man therfore I can gene no great gyftes. But madame if the thinge that ye desyre passe not the valure of thre score thousand frankes, I will gene it you with a glaude chere, yet the prynces allayed agayne, yf she could cause hym to graunt her ful desyre. But the erle was sage and subtell, and thought verely that her desire was to have him to forgeue clerely the erle of Armynake all his dette. And than he sayde agayne. Madame for a pore knight as I am who purchaseth townes and castels, the gift of that I have granted you ought to suffyce. The princesse could bring him no further, & when she sawe that she sayd. Gentil erle of Foys, the request that I desyre of you, is to forgeue clerely by the erle of Armynake. Madame quod the erle, to your requeste I ought well to condiscende. I have said to you, that if your desyre passe not the valure of thre score thousand frankes that I would graunt it you. But madame the erle of Armynake owerth me two hundred & fyfty thousand frankes, and at youre requeste I forgane hym therof thre score thousand frankes. Thus the matter rode in that case, and the erle of Armynake at the requeste of the princes wan the forgiuing of thre score thousand frankes. And anon after the erle of Foys returned to his owne countrey.

Syr Johan Froyssart make narracion of this busynes because whan I was in the countre of Foys, & of Berne, I passed by the countrey of Bygore, & I demaunded a enquired of the newes of the countrey, such as I knew not before. And it was shewed me how the prince of Wales & of Aquitayne whyle he was at Tarbe he had great will to go se the castell of Lourde, whyche was a thre leages of, nere to the entre of the mountayne. And whan he was there, and had wel aduised the towne the Castell, & the countrey, he praised it greatly, as wel for the strength of the castell as because it rode on the frontier of diuers countreys. For the garyson there might renne wel into the realme of Arragon, into Castelon, and to Bayelon. The the prince called to him a nyghte of his housholde, in whom he had great trouste, and loued him entyerly, and he had serued him truly, and was called sir Peyer Arnalde, of the countre of Bierne, an expert man of armes and cosin to the erle of Foys. Than the prince sayde to him, sir Arnalde I institute and make you Chatelein and capitayne of Lourde, & gouernour of the countre of Bygore. Loke that ye kepe this castell so wel that ye make a good accompt therof to the kyng my fa. her and to me. Sir quod the knyght I thanke you, and I shall obserue your commaundement. There he dyd homage to the prince, and the prince put hym in possession. It is to be knowen, that when the warre began to renewe betwene England & France as it hath ben shewed before, The erle Guy of saynt Poule and sir Hugh of Chatellon mayster of the crosbowes in Fraunce, in that time beleged the towne of Abugle, and wan it, and all the countre of Poitou. The same tyme two great barons of Bigore, whone called syr Garnaite Barbesan and the lorde Bamton tourned frenche, and tooke the towne citye, and Castell of Tarbe, which was but easely kept, for the kynge of England. But stil the Castell of Lourde was in the hides of syr Peyer Arnalt, of Bierne, who would in no wise yelde up the castell, but made euer great warre against the realme of France, and sent for grete company of aduenturers into Bierne and Gascoyne, to helpe and to ayde him to make warre, so that

...ther many good men of armes, and
...ay with vi. hundred speares, euery man
...thy speares vnder him.

...the fyrst was the brother Johan of Byerne
...right expert knight, and yet Duncome of
...Bygore, brother germayne to the lorde Joan
...Bygore, or would neuer forsake Fraunce. Thirdly
...of Sayer Colomber, Crenaillon of Saint Agnes
...of Sayer Pierre, and the Bourge of Carcolay
...these captaynes made diuers iourneys into
...Bygore, into Valentyn, into Carcassone, and
...into Albygoys. And to euer whan they were
...out of Lourde they were in the lande of their
...enemies, and sometime they would aduenture
...fayre leages at their owne boldes. And in their
...going, they would take nothyng, but in their
...comynge there was nothyng could scape them.
...Sometime they brought home so great plenty
...of beastes & prisoners that they wyst not how
...to kepe them. Thus they raunsomed all the cou-
...trey, except the lyle of Toys landes. For in the
...townes they durst not take a penny without
...they payd truly therefore. For if they had dys-
...pleased the lyle, they could not longe haue en-
...dured. These companyons of Lourde raoue
...ouer all the countre as they pleased, & I tolde
...not farre fro them. Thus the myrth of Carc-
...was in great house so that they were fayne to
...make commaundement vnto the. And betwene Car-
...cas hill & Lourde, there was a great village and
...a good abbey called Graue, whiche the compa-
...were fayne to agree with them. And the other
...part of the ryuer of Lyle, there was a great
...towne called Mauguerez. They of the towne had
...a great fortune, for they were so parred by the
...ryuer, & by the abbeyes dangerous on a tyde,
...that for fere of them passing ouer the ryuer,
...by a stone bridge ouer the ryuer into the wild
...the towne they of Lourde and of Graue were
...neuer fere. They of the towne for their parte
...were fayne to agree with them, for they
...durst not, because they lacked vyctayles.
...Thus they of the towne and euer
...good vsages of their passage, and so betwene
...the three were there, wherby they were fayne to
...pyttes they could not haue trade, for they
...durst not for fere of any person, for
...ryuer of the Gyronde was a great lette
...Lourde to Lepe. And experte
...Lourde, the lande of Lourde & they of Lourde
...Agenoys as with the marchauntes of
...and Carcassone, as of Fraunce
...they agreed with them.

...the euentyde I entreated to wyte for
...Foys, and the gentleyman
...

...tayne where as I had ...
...I departed fro Lourde ...
...Tholouse, and to ...
...Tonges, and to ...
...me of the lyle of Foys ...
...to the castell of Mauleon, and to ...
...to the good towne of Saynt Johan ...
...lyle of Foys. And there I tarryed ...
...some company of the enterprise of Be-
...arne, where the lyle was. And when I had ta-
...ryed there a fyue dayes in great pleasure for
...thy was wherefore hauldyng among the lorde
...barnes, and entreated with a right fayre
...and there called Loys. And on a day it fyl
...tuned that rychart came a knight of the lyle of
...Foys for a common warre, called Espaynol
...de Lion a valyant & an expert man at armes,
...about the age of xl. yeres. And so I tooke me to
...to his company, and he was ready beforne
...to here of the maners of Fraunce, & so we were
...a fyue dayes in our iourney, or we came to Bay-
...tayle. And this knyght euery day after he had
...payde his prayers, would vse at the day after
...he toke his patyrne with me, to be merye and
...of tydynges, and also when I demaunded any
...thyng of him, he would aunswere me to my pur-
...pose. And when we departed fro Maurers we
...past by the mount of Cell, where was an end
...passage, and so we came to a towne a castell
...of Ortayle, where the was French but we paste
...by it, and so came to a towne to a castell of the lyle
...of Foys hath a leage there called Carlat stan-
...dyng vpon a mountayne, and after proces
...the knight sayd to me, sir let vs go vitayle
...fayre a caste, we haue but two leages to ryde
...to our lodging, & so I was content to do. Then
...the knight sayd to me, this way passed by the
...castell of Otayle, where dyuers months dwelled
...in this countrey. Here Bertrand Aspedy and
...many taken & ransomed out of the realme of Fra-
...ce more than xxx. thousand frankes. And
...I demaunded of him what he was. He answered
...me quod he, I am ...

bulynesse, without any suspicyousnes of the. & so on one day Kynge Rogell there were many marchauntes straungers of Loys of Berne & of Fraūce. And as ye knowe well, when marchāntes be mete, that same not togyther lōg before they will make good chere togyther. & so in the same house where as these .ii. valets were in seruice, were many marchauntes hyryng and making good chere. & their offer with them & by appoyntment about mydnight Piers Dachin & his cōpany came to Otaule, & embushed the selfe in a wood whiche passeth throughe. And so they sent .vi. valets to the tauerne with .ii. ladders. & they passed the dykes & came to ꝑ walles and reared up their ladders, & the other .ii. valettes that were in seruice in the towne did ayd the while their maisters sat makyng good chere, so these saide valettes did put them selfe in aduenture, and one of the said two valets brought the other fyre to ꝑ gate within, where there was two men kepyng the keys, the this valet sayd to the other lad, sir kepe your selfe here privy a close, and feyre not til ye hear me whistle. I trust to make the porters to open ꝑ gate of their ward, they haue the keyes of the great gate, & therfore allone as they haue opened their warde I will whystle. Than steppe forth a slee the porters. I knowe well ynough the keyes of the gate for I haue oftimes bē prēd to kepe ꝑ gate with my mayster, ꝑ as they deuysed so they dyd. & so the valet went to the gate. And satte & heard how the porters were drynkyng within their ward, than he called the by their names & sayd, syrs open your doze I haue brought pan of the best wyne ꝑ euer you dranke, which my maysters hath sēt you, to the entent you should kepe your watch the better. And they who knew right wel the valet beleeued that he had said trouth & opened the daze, and when he was in, they three slept sayd and entred in at the doze & there they slew the porters [illegible] & kept the gate ꝑ

the Castell by his euell aduenture was in the towne, & supped with certayne marchauntes of Carcassen, and was there taken among other and in ꝑ nyght mornyng Piers Dachin brought him before the castel where as his wife & children were. & shewe the heed which he would fryshe of his head about his wife would haue yelded up the castel. & if she would so do he promised to respect her husband quite, & to suffer him and all his to bere with bag and baggage, without any hurt, and the lady who sawe her selfe in a harde case, & sawe she was not able to make war her selfe, & for sauing of her husbandes life she yelded up the castell. & so her husband & she. & all theirs departed & went to Nauers. Thus had Piers Dachin the towne & castell of Otayle, & the same time ꝑ they entred he & his company wan above .xxx. M. frankes, what in marchandise & prisoners of Fraūce, but al furde as were of the cōtrey of Loys or of Berne, were clene delyuered without any domage, & this Piers Dachin kept Otayle after the space of .b. yeare, & he & his company oftimes would ryn to ꝑ gates of Carcassone, which was a yere leages thens and dyd great domage to the countre, as well by raunsomyng of the townes, as by pyllage, ouer all the countrey.

¶ In the meane season ꝑ Piers Dachin was in the garyson of Otayle, on a night certayne of his cōpany wēt out a ryme to a castel called Palelue & good leage thens, whereof a frenche knight called Raimon du Parlier was owner they had ben there often before to espye of their purpose, and as than they happe was there, & they scaled the castel & take it, & the knyght & the lady in theyr bedde. And let the lady & her children go fre, but they kept styll the knyght in theyr owne castell the space of fyue moneches & at last he payed a gret raūsome for his raunsome. And lykewise whē they had lost Carcassone the countre they sold their two castels Otayle and Palelue to the of the countre for xiii. M. frankes. & then they went to Lombardy to serue gentyl garsion. And thus in this aduenture knightes, dyd put the citie Nayle all at the same time, whē an ordenaūce & of armes in a castel of lombardy a gentyll knyght he was called le Gorge de Lagnet Bayll. On a time he was with him hunting & he saw a rabet al aduentures & he Chaleuntyn, & he thought to haue got the castel of Pennelle Allingois but he mist of his entent and when he saw that he failed of his

wythe, and the thirde prayer houre the seneschal of Tholouse rode forth & with him syr Hughe de Froposwill and .xx. speares, & came by aduenture to Pan whyle the sayd straunge was in dounge. Than incontinent they set spone to the earth, & came to the barryers, and so than the Sengeant was ouermatched, but ther he fought valiantly hand to hand, and wolloed the other knight in two or thre places, howbeit finally he was taken by force, & the men outher taken or slayne, ther were but a fewe that escaped. So this Sengeant was led to Tholouse and than the cõmons of the towne wold have slayne him betwene the handes of the seneschal, he had much payne to save his life, & so brought him into the castell, for he was sygne put beleued in Tholouse. But after it happed so well for him, for the duke of Berey came thither, and this knyght had suche frendes that he was deliuered, & the seneschall had a thousand frankes for his raunsome & when he was departed he retourned to Loured, and began agayne to make newe enterpyses. And so on a tyme he departed fro Loured & tyue wyth him without anye armoure, and he dyd on the abyte of a monke & like other thre monkes with hym, and they had all shaven crownes, so that euery man that sawe them, wende surely that they had bene monkes, the abbot & gellues beleued them so well. And in this maner he came to Mountpellyer, and toke vp his lodginge at the sygne of the Egle, and sayd how he was an abbot of Spayn Galeon, & was going to Paris on certayne businesse perteynynge to his house. & to the gut familier acquayntaunce with a rych man of the towne called Barteger who had at Rome at Paris, for certayne businesse. Then this abbot sayd how he wold pay for his cost if he dyd go in his copany, wherof the good man was right ioyous (in that he thought to haue his lodginge boyn. & so he and one varlet with him went forth with this monke. And whan they had spyed a tyme, this counterfet monke let the Sengeant take him prisoner, & led him priuely wayes to his garison of Loured & after sold custome him at .v. M. frankes. Than I tell ye for sothe Gaston Fabus Erle of Foys, toward the Pyrenayns & the labaytes toke by fortune, but they kept it not but thre dayes, & on the morow we began fro Mountpellyer & rode to the towne of Palamuch a good towne situate on the ryuer of Garon, peteyning to the Erle of Foys. And whē we were almost there we had thought to haue passed ouer a bridge of stone, to haue entred into the towne, but we could not, for they before vs had broken the arches of the bridge, wherfore we retourned again to Mountpellyer, and tarryed there all the daye. Than the next day the knight had redayne to passe the ryuer by boten by the towne of Caderes, so we rode thither a bis so nere, & we passed the ryuer of Garon with great payne & perill for the bote & we were in, was not very great it could not take at one time but two horses & their keepers, & they that ruled the bote, and in what we were ouer we rode to Caderes and abode there al that daye, & in the meane time & our supper was a dressyng, this knight said to me, sir Johan, let vs go se the towne, & so we passed along through the towne, & came to the gate toward Palamuch, and went out there at and came to the bikes. Than the knighte shewed me a pane of the wall and said, sir se you yonder part of the wall whiche is newer than all the remnant of the sir & I, wel ye be, I shall shewe you why it is so, it is a ten yere past syth it fortuned, ye haue heard or this, of the warre that was betwene the erle of Armynacke and therle of Foys, howbeit now they are in peace. But the Armynagoys & the Lombardes wanne but litel by that warre. For on sayne Nicholas euen, the yeare of our lord a thousande .iij. c. lxxxij. and two. Therle of Foys toke in totayle therle of Armynake & the lorde Dalbret his nephew, and all the noble men that were with them, and so leade them as prisoners to Otayle, whereby therle of Foys hath receyued ten times a hundred thousande frankes. And it fortuned after that the father of therle of Armynake made a iourney & rode to the towne of Caderes, and they had with them .xii. hundred men of armes, and so thought to kepe the towne by strength. Than the Bourgeys began they came to the knowlege of the erle of Foys, and [illegible] as then at peace, he tooke a siege and

valyant knyght called to him two baners bys
thynge of his called sir Amaury Gaultier, y lyr
ge of Poytou, and bad to them, Syrs, I wyll
ye rode to gyder to Caleys, I shall tende
you a syght ye neuer sawe, for within that begyn
I shalbe with you my selfe, but ye sholde
not of the towne but rode ryght
ye shalbe dressed. And whan ye come
there, make them of the towne to bryng the
their great plenty of fyre wodde and fagotts
and caste them into the dyches, and than se
that none dwell in the towne, for I wyll y they
shall be taken by force, I sweare by the ma
hall of the gates I shall rende the to take ano
ther way, whyle the knyghtes and his company
be armed and so went to Calamuche, and al ma
ner of warre of thynges entended them, and so they
came before this towne of Caleys. They that
were therin sawe well by theyr, but they were
not aferde, for they were enclosed within the
walles so that they could not passe out at any
gate. And whan the erle of Foys came
thyther with fyue hundred men of armes, & as
tone as he came he caused barriers to be made
rounde about the towne & alle harneys rounde
about the hall, because they shuld not be trou
bled in the nyght time, for in this case they lay
long without any assault, in so much that by
cause began to fayle them within, for though
they had wyne great plenty, they had nothing
to eate. For they could not passe away by the
ryuer, for it was as tyme to depe. Than they
thought it were better to yelde the lyfe as pry
soners than to dye in shamefully for famine, &
so let in recaup. Therle of Foys agreed to their
treaty, so that they shoulde not passe out at no
gate, but to make a hole in the wall and go out
secret, to come one by one without armoure, &
so to yelde them as prisoners. Sir Iehoun them
to take good hap, and so made a hole in y wall,
and issued out one by one. But there was the
erle redy and all his people to ayder of hym
to kepe the downe prisoners. And euer as they
came out, the erle sent them to diuers castels
as prisoners, and his cosin sir Iohn of Ar
mynake sir Bernard Dalbret, and sir Ber
nard of Carlebalon, syr Raymond de Bernach
sir Bertelme de la Caserne, and a fourth of
the best persones y he broght with him, Oye
talle and xl. men de parties, he had of them two
hundred thousand frankes, and thus was this
hole in the wall made, and none but he and
his company. And the next daye he take aduyse by
and than lyet were bette the lord of the erle of
Tempyngs and Bamyghe, and on the other
y he went the ryuer of Some, and the lady of
Roche of Foys. But as we rede they wrought
hede me a strong towne called Montreal, be
Toulse, pertayning to therle of Tempyngs, s
ye the other side of the ryuer on the mountayne
He dyuyded my fine castelles pertayning to the
erle of Foys, the one called Mountrall and
other Mountclare. And as we rede betwene
these townes and castelles along by the ryuer
of Garon, in a fayre medowe, this knyght sayd
to me, syr Iohan I haue sene here many fayre
scrimishes and encountrynges, betwene the
Foyols and armionakes, for as than there was
no towne nor castell but that was well furny
shed with men of warre, & so they warred vpon
vpon other. The Armionakes against Pomers
two castelles made a valyde, and kepte with
men of warre, and dyd much hurt in therle
of Foys lande. But I shall shewe you howe it
fortuned. The erle of Foys on a nyght sent his
brother Petre de Bierne with fyue hundred spe
yes and with them a fewe wyldes followers of
y countrey, charged with fagotts, mosse, wyspes
and bushes, and brought it to the barriers
than sette fire therin, and so brent the barriers
and all them that were within without mercy
and sith it was neuer made agayne. Than in
the dewles he rode at that tyme along by the
ryuer of Garon, and lefte on the one syde and
on the other, we sawe many fayre castels and
fortresses. All that yere on our left hande pas
sed to theyde of Foys, and the other hand pas
sed to theyde of Armynake. And in this we
passed by Mountpesat a fayre castell a lytle
standing on an hyghe hyll, in bothe the hyll
the towne and the castell, and without the
towne a lytell there was a place called Gar
dan, and a fayre house on the ryuer ende that
was strongly made and a good place
of grounde, fyue men might well kepe that passage
against all the world. For there could no more
passe but two on a frount, what for y ryuer on
the one syde, & the rocke on the other syde, then
I sayd to the knyght, syr there is a fayre passe
sage and a mighty castell. He sayd nay quod he
knyght, and thought that it shuld be longe, yet that
erle of Foys dyd conquere it anon, and he
his galley the same way with the helpe of the
archers of England, that he had at that in
company, and the great ryuer that they passed
passe into the countrey of Some, the best
quod he, I shal shewe you more of such mat

so I rode still by him, and then he sayde. Syr, on a tyme the earle of Armynake and the lorde Albret with a fine hundred men of warre came into the countre of Foys, and to the marches of Bayonne. And this was in the beginninge of August when men had gather in their corne and the grapes were ripe, at whiche tyme there was great habundaunce in the countre. Then sir Johan of Armynake and his company rode before the towne of Saureden a litel leage fro the city of Bayonne. And he sent to them of Bayonne, that without they would bie their corne and wynes, and paye for them: they sayde nay they would byrne and destroy al together. Than they of Bayonne were in great feare for the earle their lorde was farre of from them, for he was as than in Byerne. And so they were layne to bye their owne corne, and payed for them fyue thousand frankes, but they delyed fyftene barels of redde wyne, which was gracious them. Than the erle of Foys, was enformed of all this vyllanie. and he gaffer him as many as he might, and assembled together his men and came lodeynly into the citye of Bayonne, with. vii. hundred speares. and so had fought with sir Johan of Armynake if he had tarryed but he departed and went into the countye of Comynges. So he had no money of them of Bayonne, for they had no leysure to tary there for. Wherfor therle of Foys clayned the same sums for he sayde he was come, and saued their money and corne, and had put away all their enemyes. And so he had it to pay his men of warre therwith, and there he tarryed tyll they had eaten all their corne and wynage. And so we passed them forthy a castel called Bezyrra and also by another castell called Bareles, all pertayning to the earle of Comynges, and as we rode along by the ryuer, I sawe a fayre castell and a great towne, & I demaunded of the knyght what the castel was called, and he sayd it was named Mountesparne, pertayning to a cosyn of the erle of Foys, called sir Roger de Spayne, a great baron in the countrey, a man of Tholouse, and as than was seneschall of Carcassonne. Than I demaunded of this knyght if he were a kinne to sir Charles of Spayne who was constable of Fraunce, and he answered and sayd no, he is not of that blonde. For syr Loyes of Spayne, and this syr Charles that ye speke of, came both out of the realme of Nauarr, & were lynially extraught of Spayne and of Fraunce, by their mothers side, & were cosyn germayns to kyng Alpheus of Spayne, and I serued in my youth syr Loyes of Spayne in the warres of Bretayne, for he was al yeres on the party of sir Charles of Blois against the earle of Mountfort. And so we left speakyng of that mater, and rode to Ayre Gousens, a good towne of the earle of Foys and the nexte daye we dyned at Monterle, a good stronge towne of the frenche kynges, and syr Roger de Spayne kepte it. And after dyner we rode the way towardes Lourd and so rode through a great launde enduryng a fyftene leages, called the laundes Lanne de bouy, where in were manye daungerous passages, for theues and euel doers. And in this launde stode the castell of Meleze, pertayning to therle of Foys a good leage fro the towne of Tourney, the whych castel the knyght shewed me and sayd. Syr, beholde yonder is Malauise, but sir hang ye heard here before howe the duke of Anion, whom he was in this countrey and went to Lourd, what he had in this countrey, and how he layd siege to Lourd. And wanne it. And also the castell of Oringalet, on the riuer lyes that ye se yonder before vs. pertayneth to the lorde de la Bart. Than I remembred my selfe and sayd. Syr I trowe I neuer herd therof as yet, therfore I pray you shewe me the matter. But syr I pray you shewe me where is the riuer of Garon become for I can se it no more ye sayd fromthe quod the knyght, it departeth here in thentryng of these mountaynes, and it groweth a comely out of a fountayne a thre leages hens, the way to Charelomy, by a Castel called sayncte Bean, the frontyr of the realme of Fraunce toward Aragon. And there is an olde a quyer called Cemalton, otherwyse called Bourge de Spayne. He is lorde therof, and chaselayne of all the countrey, and he is cosyn germayne to sir Roger de Spayne if we se hym I shall shewe you hym. He is a goodly person and a good man of armes, and he hath done more damage to them of Lourd than any other knyght or squyer of the countrey. and the erle of Foys loueth him rychtwell for he is his companyon in armes.

¶ I wyll leaue to speake of him, for I speake of this frail of Chrystmas, ye shall se him in the erle of Foys house, but now I shal shewe you of the duke of Anion. howe he came into this countrey, and what he dyd. Then we rode softly fayre and easely and he began to saye as followeth.

¶ The. xxxv. Chapytre.

Of the warres that the duke of Anion made agaynst the Englysshemen and howe he recouered the castell of Malmopsen in Aygne, whyche was afterwarde geuen to the erle of Foyz.

Cap. xviii.

After the begynnynge of the warres, whan they began to wynne on the englysshemen, that they helde in Acquytayne. And that sir Oliuer Cliſquyn, was be come frenche. He let ꝓ duke of Anion lete Bretayne, on the landes of sir Robert Canol, whos was at the ſiege before Dyrual, as ye haue herd before, as I thinke and of the treaty that syr Hugh Dyrc had ſpoken made to the duke of Anion, as to renoye ꝓ caſtell and delyuer good hoſtages, ſo that the duke of Anion ſhuld not come to reyſe ꝓ ſiege But whan ſir Robert Canoll was within the caſtell of Dyrual, then he would holde his ꝓmyſe. All this is true, ſyr quod I. Well quod he, but haue you herd of the ſcrymyſhe that was before the caſtel, where as ſyr Oliuer de Cliſquyn was wounded. Syr I can not tell you, quod I, I can not remembre it. Wherfore ſir I praye you shewe me of the ſcrymyſhe, and of the ſiege what came therof. Syr perauenture ye haue it ſome other wayes than I do and ye ſhal retourne agayne well ynoughe to your purpoſe of them of Lourde and of Malmopsen. It is true quod the burgoys, it was ſo that ſyr Charles of the caſtell a ryght hardy knyght of the countrey, and good frenche, ſent to the duke of Anion to cauſe him to come before Malmopsen. The duke had made his ſommons to hold his tourney before Dyrual, and made this ſir Charles ſyr his lieutenaunt marſhal of his hoſt. And true it is as I heard ſay ꝓ whā he came that ſir Robert Canoll wold not kepe the treaty that was made before, nor wold not delyuer the caſtell of Dyrual. Then he came to the duke and ſayd, Syr what ſhall we do with theſe hoſtages. There is no fawte in them that the caſtell is not geuen vp, it were great pity that they ſhould dye, for they be gentylmen and haue deſerued no death. Then the duke ſayd, Were it good that ye delyuer them yea truly ſyr quod the knyght, it were great pitye otherwyſe. Well quod the duke, do there in as ye lyſt. Then the ſyr Charles went to delyuer them, and as he went, ſyr Oliuer Cliſquyn mette him a demaunded wherher he went and fro whence he came. I came fro my lorde the duke of Anion, and am goynge to delyuer the hoſtages. To delyuer them quod ſyr Oliuer, abyde a lytell and retourne agayne with me to the duke, ſo they came to ꝓ duke who was in his lodgyng in a great study. Syr Oliuer ſaluted him and ſayde. Syr what is your entente ſhall not theſe hoſtages ſuffer death. By my faith they ſhal in the deſpyte of ſyr Robert Canoll a ſyr Breet, who hath falſed their faith. Wherfore ſir I wil pe make you thout thepdye, I ſhal wrare no armure this hole yere at ten in none of your warres. If they ſhould ſcape thus it were good cheps. The ſiege hath coſte you foye ſcore thouſande frankes, & none you wyl ſhewe grace to your enemyes, who deſyreth with you neyther faith ner trouth. Wyth theſe wordes the duke began to chafe and ſayde, ſir Oliuer do therein as ye thinke beſt. Then ꝓ ſyr Oliuer I wil that they leſe their lyues there is good cauſe why, ſyth they kepe not their promiſe. Than ſir Oliuer departed fro the duke and came to a place before the caſtell, and ſyr Charles durſt not ſpeke one worde for them for if he had, he ſhould haue loſt his labour ſith ſir Oliuer had taken on him the enterpryſe, than he called the hangeman, & made him ſtryke of the heades of two knyghtes and two ſquyers which was great pity, and there were more than two hundred in the hoſt, that wept for them. And incontinent ſir Robert Canoll opened a poſterne gate, and on the bynnne of the bloud in diſpyte of the frenchmen he cauſed to ſtrike of the heades of all the pryſoners that he had without any reſpyte, and incontinent opened the caſtell gate and let downe the bridge, and iſſued out and came to the barryers, and ſcrymyſhed with the frenchmen. And as ſyr Charles ſhewed me, there was a ſore ſcrymyſhe and there ſir Oliuer Cliſquyn was hurt, and ſo returned to his lodging. There were thre good men of armes (two ſquyers of the countrey of Bierne) Bertram de Barugt and Cualton de Payne, and they were both ſore hurte, and the next day the duke diſlodged and went fro Dyruall to Toolouſe, to the entente to diſtroye Lourde for they of Toolouſe complayned greatly of the garyſon of Lourde.

So than the duke went fyrſt and layd ſiege to

to Valuoysen, whiche we maye se yonder be-
fore vs: and the duke had in his companye an
viii. thousande men of warre, beside the gene-
noys and the cõmons of the good townes. Ca
pitayne as than of Valuoysen, was a squyer
of Gascoine called Raymonde de Lespe, an ex
part man of armes. Euery day at the barriers
there was skirmishes and goodly feates of ar
mes done: & the duke laye in yonder fayre me-
dowes, betwene the towne of Turney and the
castell by the ryuer syde of Lysle. This siege
enduringe sir Garses marshall of thoost, went
with fiue hundred men of armes and two hun
dred archers and crosbowes, and a two thou-
sande of other cõmons, and laid siege to the ca
stell of Trigalet, whiche we haue left here be-
hynde vs, whiche castell a squyer of Gascoyne
kepte, for the lord de la Barde: for he was his
cosyn, and was called the Bastot of Manlion
and he had within the castel a.xl. companions
and they dyd in that countre suche maystries,
that none could go that way but they were ta-
ken prisoners, without it were the pylgrymes
that went to sainte James, with the aide of a
nother fortresse called Nemelus. In these two
garisons al the robbers and pillers of the cou
tre assembled. And euer they were against the
erle of Foix, and also against the erle of Arma-
nake, wherfore they cared not, though ỹ duke
of Anion came into that countre. And whan sir
Garses was come before the castell of Triga-
let, he coulde not approche on the one part for
the ryuer, and so gaue a great assaute, & many
men hurt both within and without with shot,
and fyue dayes together this sir Garses made
assautes, so that at laste the artillary within be
gan to faile them, and the frenchmen perceiued
it very well. Than by gentilnesse, sir Garses
caused the capitaine to come & speke with hym
vnder saueconducte, and saide to him. Bastot
I know well what case ye be in. Ye haue no ar
tillary within, nor nothing to defende you fro
the saute, but speares. Knowe for trouth, that
if ye be taken by force, I can not saue your lyfe
nor none of your company, for the cõmons of
the countre wil slee you all, which I would be
loth to se, for ye are my cosyn. Therfore I cou
saile you to yelde vp the fortres: And sith that
I desire you so to do, ye can beare no blame in
your so doyng, and depart hence whider as ye
lyst, for ye haue kept this castel long ynough.
Sir quod the squier, I would gladlye folowe
your counsaile, if it were oute of dedes of armes
for in dede I am your cosin. But sir, I can not
yelde vp this fortresse all alone, for suche as be
within, haue as good parte therof as I haue.
though they holde me for their capitaine. Sir
I shall go to them and shewe them as ye haue
said, if they accorde to rendre it vp, I shall not
say nay, and if they wyll kepe it styll whatsoe-
uer aduenture fal, I shall take suche parte as
they do. It is well sayd quod sir Garses, depte
whan ye will, I knowe your entent. Than the
Bastot of Manyon retourned to the castel of
Trigalet, and called all his company togyd-
der, and they shewed them all the saying of sir
Garses, and so demaunded of them what they
thought was best to do. And so they counsay-
led togyder a longe space, some would abyde
the aduenture and said, how they were stroge
ynoughe: and some would departe and sayde,
howe it was a good tyme so to do, seynge that
they had no more artillary, & sawe well howe
the duke of Anou was cruel, and the cõmons
of Tholous, of Carcassoney, & of other towns
there about, sore displeased with them, for
the great domages that they had done to the.
So all thinges considered, they concluded to
yelde vp the castel, so that they might be safely
conducted and all theirs to the castell Culyer,
the which was kepte by some of their compa-
nyons, on the fronter of Tholousin. So thus
the capitaine retourned againe to the hoost to
speake with sir Garses, and he agreed to their
desires: so he saw well the castell would not
lightly be wonne by assaute, withoute losse of
muche people. So than they prepared to de-
parte & trussed all their baggage, for they had
moche pyllage, they toke with them the best, &
left the residue. And sir Garses conueied them
to Culyer without daunger. Thus the frenche
men at that tyme gate this castel Trygalette.
Than sir Garses dyd gyue the castell to the cõ
mens of the countre, and they did rase it down
as ye se: so that there was neuer none sith that
woulde redify it againe. And so fro thens sir
Garses went towarde the castell Nantylleur,
standynge on these laundes nere to the castell
Lameu. And as he wente thyderwarde, one
shewed hym that the castell Nontylleur was
voyde, and they departed that kepte it. Than
sir Garses taried in the felde, & deuised what
was best than to do. Than the senechal of Ma
beson said. Sir, this castell of Nantilleur is in
my baliwike, and it ought to partayne to the
erle of Foix. I praye you let me haue it, and I
shall make it to be so kepte, on my proper coste
and charge, that no man that wyll any hurte

to the contrarie shall neuer enter therin. Sir quod they of Tholous, he sayeth well, and he is a valiant man, it were better he had it than a nother. Wel quod sir Garses I am content. Thus the castel of Mātylleur was delyuered to the seneschall of Nobelen, who incontinente rode thyder and founde it cleane voide. Than he newly fortified that was broken, and he set therin a capitaine, a squyer of the countre called Fortelet saint Poule, & than he retourned to the siege of Maluoisen, where ꝑ duke was and also thider was come sir Garses & all his company, and shewed the duke al that he had done. This siege endured aboute a. vi. weekes and nyghe euery day there was skirmisshinge at the barriers, at laste they withoute stopped their water, so that their cesterns began to dry and in fyre wekes there fell not a drop of rame the season was so drie and hote, and they without had ease ynough by reason of the fayre riuer. Whē they within saw what ease they were in, they were sore abashed, for they sawe well they coulde not longe endure. Wine they had plentie, but freshe water fayled them: Than they aduised to fall in treatie with the duke, & so they dyd: And Raymonde de lespee purchased a safe conduct to go into the host to speake with the duke, and so he dyd, and said: Sir, yf ye wyll be courteise to me and to my company I shall render into your handes the castell of Maluoysen. What courtesie wold ye quod the duke, that I should shew you: Departe youre waye, you and all yours into your own countreis, and enter not into no forteresse that holdeth against vs, for if ye do: and if I get you or any of you, I shall delyuer you to Joselyn, that shall make your beerdes without any rasoure. Sie quod Raymonde, if we shal depart shall we haue with vs al our bagges and bagages, for that we haue wonne it by armes, & in great aduenture: Than the duke studied a lytle and sayd. I am content that ye bere with you, as much as ye may beare in males and somers, and none otherwise. And yf ye haue any prisoners, that ye deliuer them to vs. I am cōtent q̄ Raimonde. Thus al they within departed and yelded vp the castel to the duke of Antowe: But Raymonde de lespe tourned and became frenche, and serued the duke of Antowe longe tyme after, and went with him into Italy, and there dyed in a skirmisshe before Naples, whan the duke of Anowe & the duke of Sauoy made their voyage.

How the garison & castel of lourde was cast downe and discōfited by great diligence that the Earle of Foix made. Cap. xxiiii.

THus quod the knyghte, the duke of Anou gatte the castel of Maluoisen, wherof he made greate ioye, and made it to be kepte by a knyghte of Bygoze, called syr Cyquarte of Luperier, and after he gaue it to the erle of Foix who kepeth it yet: and wil do as long as he lyueth: And he hath made capitaine there a knighte of Bygoze, one of hys owne lynage, called sir Raymon de Lane, and whan the duke of Anou had the possession of Maluoysen, and had delyuered his countrey fro the Englyshe men, and fro the pyllers of ꝑ countre. Than he went and layde siege before the castel of Lourde. Than therle of Foix douted greatly the duke of Anou, by cause he cam so nere hym and wyste not what he entended. Than therle of Foix assembled togeder knyghtes and squires, and sent thē about to dyuers garisons, and sette hys Brother sir Arnolde Guyllame in the town of Mozlens with two hundred speares in the towne of Pamne, and sir Peter of Cabeston in to ꝑ citie of Lestrade with other two hundred speares, and sir Monant of Mōnalles wēt into the towne of Hartlet with a hundred speares, and Arnolde Gehe rel into the towne of Montgeberell with a hū dred speares, sir Foulquant Mortery into the towne of Sanctere with a hundred speares, & I Espaygne of Lyon was sent to the Mount Marson wyth two hundred speares. There was no castel in all Bierne, but that was wel prouided with men of warre, and the erle himselfe laye still at his Castell of Ortayle by hys Flozens. Why sir q̄ I, hath he so great plentye of Flozens: sie quod he at this houre. I thinke he hath well to the numbre of. xxx. tymes a hū dred thousande. There is no lorde lyuinge as now, that is so large and lyberall in geuing of gyftes, as he is. Than I demaunded of hym to what maner of people he was so liberall, he answered and said, to straungers, to knyghtes and squiers comyng through his countre, and to haraldes and minstrels, and to euery man that speketh with him, there is none departeth fro him without some reward, for if any refuse his gift he is not content. A suinct Mary sir q̄ I, to

I to what entent hepeth he so moche money/ & wher bothe he get it. Is his reuenues so great to gader togyder suche treasure/ sir I wolde gladly knowe this/ if it pleased you. Well sir q the knight ye shall knowe it/ but ye haue demaũded of me two thynges. First ye haue demaũded of me/ to what entent he kepeth suche treasure/ I shall shewe you. Therle of Foix alwaye boutteth of the warre that he had with therle of Armynake/ & also for the busynesse of his neyghbours/ the frenche kyng and the kynge of Englande/ whom he wolde not willingly displease. For he hath alwayes bill maled betwene them/ duryng all the warr season vnto this present tyme/ for he neuer armed hym self for any of their parties/ he hath alwayes ben euer in good case with bothe parties I saye to you: & so ye shall saye youre self whan ye haue ones knowlege of hym and herde him spoke/ & ones knowe the order and state of his house/ ye shall se that he is at this daye/ the moost sage prince in the worlde. And there is none so great a lorde/ nother the frenche kyng nor the kyng of Englande/ but he will willingly haue his parell will: as for his other neighbours as the kyng of Aragon or the kyng of Nauer/ he esteemeth them but lyttell/ for he will fynde no men of armes (by reason of suche frendes as he hath gotten with his giftes/ and money that he hath in treasure) than bothe those kynges can do: For I haue herde hym saye/ that whan the kyng of Cypres was in his countre of Byerne/ and moued him to haue gone to the voiage of the holy Sepulture. He hadde thought the same tyme to haue made suche a iourney/ that if the frenche kyng or the kyng of Englande had taken that enterprise/ howe they shulde haue ben no lorde shulde haue brought suche a company as he wolde haue done/ and as yet he is of the same mynde: and in parte/ that is one of the causes that he gadereth suche treasure.

The prince of Wales/ the season that he raigned in the countre of Acquitayne beyng at Burdeux on the tyues of Cornode/ thought to haue made hym warre. The prince manassyde him for the countre of Bierne and wolde haue had hym to haue holde his countre of hym/ and the erle sayd he wolde not: and sayd/ how we his countre of Bierne was so free a lande/ that it ought to do homage to no man of the worlde. And the prince/ who at that tyme was great and fore feared/ sayd howe he wolde compell hym perforce/ for therle of Armynake & the lorde Albret who loued not therle of Foix because of suche victories as he hadde won on them before. They tolde the prince euer in his eare/ and enfyled hym to haue made warre against the erle of Foix/ but the voiage that the prince made into Spayne brake his purpose. Also sir Johan Chandos/ who was chefe of counsayle with the Prince was agaynst it/ that the prince shulde make any warre to the erle. The erle of Foix loued right well sir Johan Chandos and he hym/ but the erle doubted the prince/ because he was fierce and corageous. and therfore he gadered togyder as moche treasure as he coude gete/ to the entent therwith to defende hym if nede were. And so he set great tayles & taxes in all his countre and in euery towne/ whi che as yet endureth/ and shall do as long as he lyueth. He had of euery fyre euery yere two frãkes/ and the tythe to beare out the poore/ therby he gadered and yet dothe great riches/ and the people payeth it with a maruelous good wyll. For by reason therof/ there is nother Englysshe nor frenche/ nor robbers nor reuers/ that dothe them any hurte/ to the value of one peny. And so his countre is in sauegarde and iustice truely kepte/ for in doyng of iustyce he is right cruell: he is the moost rightfull lorde that is nowe lyueng. And so with these wordes we came to the towne of Turney/ where as we shulde rest all night. So than the knight ceased of his tale kyng/ and I remembred well where we lefte a gaynst the next day/ and we were lodged at the signe of the Starre and take our ease. And at supper tyme the capitayne of Valuoysin/ called sir Raymonde of Lane/ came to se vs & supped with vs/ and brought with hym foure flagons of the best wyne that I dráke of in all my iourney: those two knightes talked long togyder: and whan it was late the knight departed and retourned to the castell of Valuoysin. and the next morowe we mounted on our horses/ and departed fro Tourney & passed by a grete tyuer of Lylle/ and rode towarde the cytie of Tarbe/ & entred in to Bigorre: And we lefte the waye to Lourde/ to Bagueres/ and to the castell of Mountgaylliard on the lefte hande. And we rode towarde a vyllage called Terascomptat/ and dyd coost it/ and came to a wode in the lande of the lorde of Barbasan/ and we came nere to a castell called Matheras/ at the entre of the countre of Layre. Than the knight said to me. Sir Johan/ beholde here the place of Layre/ and beholde it well & aduyse the countre/ which semed to me right strãge: I thought

my ſelfe but as loſt ther/ if I had nat ben in the
company with that knight. Than I remebred
the wordes that this knight had ſhewed me. ij.
dayes before of that countre of Layze/
and of the Wegeant of Lourde. Than I ſayd
to hym. Sir/ ye ſhewed me the laſt daye/ that
whan we ſhulde be in the countre of Layze/ that
ye wolde ſhewe me the maner of the Wegeant
of Lourde/ and howe he dyed. It is true ſir q
the knyght/ come on & ryde by me and I ſhall
ſhewe you. Than I rode nere hym to here his
wordes/ and than he ſayde. Sir/ in the ſeaſon
that Peter Bauchyne helde the caſtell and ca-
ſtell of Oſtyngas/ as I haue ſhewed you be-
fore this tyme. They of the garyſon of Lourde
ſomtyme rode forthe at aduenture farre fro their
garyſon/ howe be it they had nat alwayes the
aduauntage/ for ye maye beholde here the ca-
ſtell of Barbaſon and the Caſtell of Marthe-
ras/ wherin there was alwayes many men of
warre there/ and in other garyſons/ as Bague
res/ Tournay/ Mountgalyarde/ Saienges/
Benache/ Gozze/ and Tarbe/ all frenche to-
wnes and garyſons. And whan theſe garyſons
knewe that they of Lourde rode outher toward
des Tholous or Carcaſſone: thā they wolde
laye buſſhementes for them/ and ſomtyme take
fro them of Lourde their pray and pyllage/ &
ſomtyme they ſcaped without any rencounter.
And on a tyme it fortuned/ that Ernaulton of
ſayut Colombe and the Wengeant of ſaynte
Cozyle/ and to the nombre of .xxcoze ſpeares
of good men of warre departed fro Lourde/ a-
bout the moūtayns/ bytwene theſe two ryuers
Lyſſe and Leſſe/ and ſo rode nere to Tholous/
and at their retournyng they founde in the me-
dowes a great nombre of beeſtes/ oxen & kene/
hogges/ mottons/ and lambes: and alſo they
toke dyuers of the good men of the countre pri-
ſoners/ and ſo droue all their pray before them.
Than it was ſhewed to the capitayne of Tar-
be a ſquyer of Gaſcoyne/ called Ernaulton Bye-
ſette/ an experte man of armes/ howe they of
the garyſon of Lourde were abrode/ and were
comyng homewarde with a great praye: than
he ſente to the lorde of Benache and to Engue-
roſe/ eldeſt ſonne to ſir Raymonde/ and alſo to
the lorde of Barbaſon/ certifyeng them howe
he wolde ryde out againſt them of Lourde.
The knyghtes and ſquyers of the countrey of
Bigorre agreed to ryde forthe/ and aſſembled to
gyder at Tournay/ and with them they was
the Bourche of Spaygne/ who came fro his
garyſon of ſayut Beatte. So they were to the
nombre of two hundred ſpeares/ and they had
their ſpyes abrode in the Countrey/ to knowe
what they of Lourde dyde. On the other ſyde
they of Lourd had abrode their ſpies to knowe
if any men of warre were abrode to lette them
of their enterpriſe. And ſo moche dyde theſe &
eyther partie knewe what other dyde. Whan
they of Lourde knewe howe they of the frenche
garyſons were abrode and tarryed for them at
Tourney/ Than they were in doute/ and toke
counſayle what they might beſt do/ to ſaue their
pray. Than they determyned to departe their
company in two. The one company to dryue
before them their pray with all their barlettꝭ
and to go couertly by the lane of Bourge/ and
ſo to paſſe the waye by the bridge of Tourney
and to paſſe the ryuer of Leſſe/ bytwene Tour
ney and Lymoſyn. And the other company to
ryde in batayle by the mountayns/ and to ma-
ke ſhewe to go agayne in to the countre of Lay
re by Wartheras/ & ſo to fall in bytwene Bar-
baſon and Mountgalyarde: And ſayd/ that if
they mete togyder about Mountgayllarde/
than they ſhulde be in ſauegarde/ for than we
ſhall be ſoone at Lourde. Thus as they orday-
ned ſo they dyde. And the baſtarde of Caruyl-
lache/ Guyllonet of Harmpes/ and Perot Bur
cyer/ Johā Calleuyn of Baſile/ the reed ſquier
and fourtie ſpeares with all their barlettꝭ with
all their pray/ toke the waye by the lane of Bur
ge/ & ſo to paſſe the ryuer at the bridge bitwene
Tourney and Waluoyſin/ thynkynge to mete
all togyder bytwene Cyuitat and Mouūtgay-
yarde: and ſo they departed/ and the other cō-
pany as Ernaulton of Reſtut/ Ernaulton of ſait
Colombe/ and the Wegeant of ſayut Cozyle
with fourſcore men of armes/ there was nat .x.
barlettes among them. So they made theſelf
redy and rode cloſe togyder/ euer lokyng for
their enemyes: For they knewe well they were
abrode to watche for them. In lyke maner as
they of Lourde had taken their aduiſe and cou
ſayle howe to retourne/ in lykewiſe the frenche
men tooke counſayle howe they might encoun-
ter their enemyes/ and ſir Wonant of Barba-
ſan and Ernaulton Byllet/ ſayd to their compa
nye. Sirs/ we knowe well howe they of Lour
de are abrode in the feldes/ and dryuen before
them great pray and many priſoners. It ſhul
de be a great diſpleaſure to vs/ if they ſhulde
ſcape: Therfore lette vs put our ſelfe in to two
buſſhementes/ we are company ynoughe ſo to
do. Than it was ordayned that Ernaulton and
the Bourge of Spayne/ ſir Raymonde of Be

nache and Inguerot Lane with a hundred spe-
res/ shulde kepe the passage at Tourney: for
they knewe well that they of Lourd with their
praye must nedes passe the ryuer of Lysse. and
it was ordayned/ that the lorde of Bachalone
and Ernalton Bysset with a hundred speares/
shulde ryde at aduentures. So this they kep-
ted/ and the lorde of Berache and the Bourge
of Spayne put them selfe in a bushment/ by
twene Walwoysin and Tourney/ and the other
company rode and toke the same waye that we
be now in/ which is called the Layte/ and here
they mette with the of Lourde. And whan eche
of them sawe other/ they alyghted and made
them redy to fyght/ And so came eche agaynst
other cryeng their cryes/ sayng George Lourd
and the other our lady of Bigorre. and so there
eche came to other with hande strokes/ foynin-
ge with their speares eche at other a great spa-
ce/ and as I herde reported of them that were
ther/ at the first brunt there was none ouerthro
wen. And so whan eche of the had a great spa-
ce foyned eche at other/ they caste downe their
speares and toke their axes and gaue therwith
eche to other great and horrible strokes/ euery
man with his matche/ and in that maner they
fought togyder more than two houres: And
whan any of them had fought so long that they
lacked brethe/ than they wolde sayze and ease-
ly departe/ and go sytte downe by a dyke syde
that was full of water/ and put of their basse-
nettes and refresshe them selfe. And whan they
were well refreshed/ they putte on their basse-
nettes and retourned agayne to fight. I beleue
there was nat suche a busynesse nor a batayle
so well fought (sithe the batayle was in Bre-
tayne of. xxx. agaynst as many) As this was
here at Martheras in Bigorre. Thus they
fought hande to hande/ and Ernalton of sayne
Colombe was at the poynt to haue ben discon
fyted by a squyer of the countre called Guylle-
met of Salynges. This Ernalton of saint Co
lombe had a barlet/ who stode by and sawe the
batayle and fought nat/ for there was none that
sayd any thyng to hym. And whan he sawe his
master almost at mischaunce he was sorye/ and
so came to his master and tooke his axe out of
his handes and sayd. Ernalton/ go your waye
and rest you/ ye canne no lengar fight. And than
he with the axe wente to the squyer & gaue him
suche a stroke on the hed that he was astonied
and had nere hande fallen to the erthe. Whan
Guyllonet felte hym selfe stryken he was sore
displeased/ and came agaynst the barlet to ha-
ue stryken hym/ but the barlet stepte vnder the
stroke and enbraced the squyer/ who was sore
traueyled with so long fyghtyng/ & so the bar-
let ouerthrewe hym wrestlyng vnder hym. than
the barlet sayde. I shall slee the/ without thou
wylte yelde thy selfe to my master. Who is thy
mayster quod the squyer? Ernalton of sayne
Colombe quod the barlette/ with whome thou
hast fought all this season. The squyer sawe
that he had nat the hauntage/ but that he was
vnder the barlette/ who had a daggar redy to
stryke hym. So he yelded hym to rendre his
body prysoner at Lourde within fyftene dayes
after/ resceus or no rescues. This scruyce dyd
this barlet to his master. And sir John/ I as-
sure you/ there were many feates of armes done
and many ouerthrowen and taken prysoners/
some to yelde them selfe in certayne space at
Tarbe/ and some to come to Lourde. They
fought this day hande to hande/ Ernalton By
sset with the Wengeant of sayne Basyll/ they
dyde many a feate of armes betwene the: and
they fought so long till they were so werye/ that
they coude ayde them selfe no lengar. and there
was slayne on the place two captayns/ the Wen
geant of Lourde/ and on the other parte Ernal
ton Bysset. Than ceased the batayle by agree-
ment of bothe parties/ for they were so werye/
that they coude scante holde the speares in their
handes. Some vnarmed them to refresshe the
selfe/ and lefte their armure in the place. They
of Lourde bare awaye with them the Wenge-
ant slayne/ and the frenche men bare Ernalton
Bysset to Tarbe. And to thentent that this ba
tayle shulde be had in remembraunce whey as
the two squyers fought/ there was set a Crosse
of stone/ beholde ponder is the Crosse. & with
those wordes we came to the Crosse/ and there
we sayd for their soules a Pater noster and an
Aue maria. By my fayth sir quod I/ I am
glaade I haue herde this/ for this was a shar-
pe busynesse of so lytell people. But sir/ what
became of them that wente with the praye? I
shall shewe you quod he. They came to the yte
of Tourney before Walwoysin/ to haue pas-
sed there as they had ordayned/ And they they
founde the bushment of the Bourge of Spay
gne/ who brake out of their bushment/ & they
of Lourde coude nat recule backe/ they had no
remedy/ but to aduenture their selfe. And I tell
you trouthe/ there was as sore a fight and as
long endured or lengar/ than that at Martheras

tas. and there Erualton of Spayne bydē mar
uelous in armes/ he had an yre in his hande/
who soeuer he strake therwith went to the erth
for he was bygge and well made/ and nat ouer
charged with moche fleshe. He toke ther with
his owne handes the two captayns/ the Bur-
ge of Cozuyle and Perot Palaqyn of Bierne
and there was slayne a squier of Nauar called
Ferādo of Myzando/ who was an expert man
of armes. some that were at the busynesse sayd
that the Bourge of Spaygne slewe hym/ and
some sayd he was ouercome for heat in his har
nesse. Finally the prayse was receyued/ and all
taken for slayne that wente therwith/ they were
but thre saued them selfe/ and they were barlet-
tes/ who departed and wente ouer the ryuer of
Lysse. Thus became of this aduenture: They
of Lourde neuer losse before so moche as they
dyde than: They were courtesly raunsomed/
and dyuers deliuered by exchaunge one for a
nother/ For dyuers of them that sought here at
the place of Layze/ were taken by the of Lourd
Therfore euery parte were courteyse one to a-
nother/ in raunsomyng of their companyons.
Ah sayne Mary sir quod I/ is the Bourge of
Spaygne so bygge a man as ye speke of/ yea
sir truely quod he/ for in all Gascoyne there is
none lyke hym in strength of body/ therfore the
erle of Foix hath hym euer in his company. It
passe nat a thre yere that he dyde in a sporte a
great dede/ as I shall shewe you.

So it was on a Chrystmas day/ the Erle of
Foix helde a great feest and a plentifull of kni-
ghtes and squyers/ as it is his vsage: And it
was a colde day/ and the erle dyned in the hall/
and with hym great company of lordes. And
after dyner he departed out of the hall and wente
vp in to a galarye of. xxiiii. stayres of heyght/
in whiche galarye they was a great chymney
wherin they made fyre/ whan therle was there.
and at that tyme there was but a small fyre/ for
the erle loued no great fyre/ how be it he hadde
woode ynough there about/ and in Bierne is
woode ynough. The same daye it was a great
frost and very colde: And whan the erle was in
the galarye and sawe the fyre so lytell/ he sayde
to the knightes and squiers about hym. Sirs
this is but a small fyre/ and the day so colde: than
Erualton of Spayne went downe the stayres
and beneth in the courte he sawe a great meny
of Asses laden with woode to serue the house/
Than he wente and toke one of the greteste As-
ses with all the woode and layde hym on his
backe/ and went vp all the stayres in to the ga-
lary/ and dyde cast downe the Asse with all the
woode in to the chymney/ and the Asses fete vp
warde/ Wherof the erle of Foix had great ioye
and so hadde all they that were there/ and had
maruayle of his strength/ howe he alone came
vp all the stayres with the Asse and the woode
in his neckes. I toke great pleasure in this tale
and in other that this knyght (sir Espaygne de
Leon shewed me/ wherby I thought my cour-
tesy moche the shorter. And in shewyng of these
maters/ we passed the pase of Layze and the ca
stell of Marcherras/ where as the bataple was/
and so we rode nere to the castell of Barbason/
whiche is stronge & fayre/ and is within a lea-
ge of Tarbe/ whiche we sawe before vs/ and a
fayre waye cōmyng the ryuer of Lysse compyng
fro the mountayns. Than we rode fayre and
easily at our leyser to refresshe our hortes. and
there he shewed me the ryuer/ the castell/ & the
towne of Mountgalyarde/ and the waye that
laye to Lourde. Thanne it came to my remem-
braunce to demaunde the knight/ howe the du-
ke of Anion whan he was in the countrey/ and
that the castell of Malueysin was yelded to hi/
came before Lourde/ and what he dyd there. &
with right a good wyll he shewed me and sayd.
Whanne the duke of Anionw departed frome
Malueysin withall his host/ he passed ouer the
ryuer of Lysse at the bridge of Tourney/ and
wente and lodged at Baguters/ where as is a
good ryuer goynge to Tarbe/ for this ryuer of
Tourney cometh nat thyder/ but falleth in to
the ryuer of Garon beside Mostuntlyon/ and
so the duke went and layd siege to Lourde. sir
Peter Erualton of Bierne and Johan his bro
ther/ Peter Danchyn/ Erualton of Resiue/ Er
ualton of sayne Colombe/ and the Mengrant/
who as than was lyuyng/ and Ferando of My
rando with Oliuer Barde/ the Burge of Coz/
uyllacke/ and the Burge Camuse/ and certayne
other cōpanions beyng within Lourde. Whan
they were well enformed of the dukes compyn/
ge thyder/ they fortified them and their garny-
son agaynst hym/ & helde the towne of Lourde
for all the sautes that the duke made/ Whiche
fyftene dayes contynually endured/ and there
were many feates of armes done. The duke of
Anion layned many Instrumentes of warre for the
saute/ so that finally the towne was wonne/ but
they lost neyther man/ woman/ nor good: for
they were all withdrawen in to the castell/ For

they knewe well at length the towne wolde nat holde/ for it was closed but with dykes and pales. Whan the towne of Lourde was won the Frenche men had great ioye/ and so lodged in the towne rounde about the castell/ whiche was nat prignable without it were with long siege There the duke taryed more than sixe weekes/ and lost more than he wanne/ for they without coulde do no hurte to them within/ for the Castell standeth on a rounde rocke/ made in suche maner/ that no man coude approche it by scalynge nor other wyse/ but by one entre: And there at the barryers were many scrimysshes & many feates of armes done/ and dyuers knightes and squyers of Fraunce were hurte/ suche as wolde prise to nere. Whan the duke sawe howe he coude nat haue his entent to gette the castell of Lourde/ than he fell in treatie with the captayne within/ and offred him moche money to gyue vp the garyson. The knight who was of great valyantnesse excused hym selfe and said. Howe the garyson was nat his/ but it partey/ned to the heryage of the kynge of Englande/ and sayd: Howe he coude nat sell it nor gyue it nor putte it away/ without he shulde be a traytour/ whiche in no wyse he wolde be/ but trewe to his naturall lorde duryng his lyfe: & moreouer sayd/ that whan the castell was delyuered hym/ it was on a condycion/ whiche he sware solempnely by his faythe in the prince of Wales handes/ ỹ he shulde kepe the castell of Lourde agaynst all men duryng his lyfe/ excepte it were agaynst the kyng of Englande. The duke coude neuer haue other answere of hym/ for gyfte nor promyse that he coulde make. And whan the duke of Anjou and his counsaile sawe howe they coude haue nothynge els/ and sawe that they lost their payne/ they dislodged/ and at their departynge they sette fyre the towne. Than the duke of Anjowe dyrewe backe in coo/ynge Bierne/ and rode towarde the Mount Marsen/ and had knowledge howe the erle of Foys had fortified all his garysons with men of warre/ wherof he was nothyng dyscontent/ but he was displeased/ in that the knyghtes and squyers of Bierne helde Lourde agaynst hym The erle of Foys (as I haue shewed you here before) doughted greatly the duke of Anjowe/ thoughe the duke dyde hym no hurte: But the erle of Armynake and the lorde Albret wolde haue had the Duke to haue made hym warre/ but the duke had no wyll there to: But whyle he lodged bytwene Mounte Marsen and the Bocc Albret/ he sent to the erle to Ortaise sir Peter of Beule/ whom the erle receyued honorably and lodged hym in the castell of Ortaise/ and made hym as good chere as he coude/ and gaue hym mulettes and coursers/ & to his men great gyftes. And he sente by hym to the duke of Anjowe foure coursers and two Jllans of Spaygne/ fayre and good. And there were secrete treaties bytwene the erle and this sir Peter of Beule: of whiche treaties no man knewe the entent therof/ of a good space after. But after by suche euydent tokens as appered/ we supposed somewhat/ and the mater I shall shewe you/ and by that tyme we shall come to Tarbe.

A None after that the duke of Anjou had made his voyage/ and that he was at Tholous/ Than the erle of Foys sende by his letters/ certayne messangers to Lourde to his cosyn sir Peter Ernalton of Bierne/ desyring hym to come and speke with hym at Ortayse. And whan the knyght had reed therles letters/ and sawe his notable message/ he had dyuers ymaginations/ and wyst nat whether he might go or abyde. All thynges consydred/ he sayd he wolde go/ bycause in no wyse he wolde displease the erle. And whan he departed fro Lourde/ he sayd to Johan of Bierne his brother/ in the presens of all the companyons of the garyson. Brother Johan/ the erle of Foys hath sente for me/ I can nat tell you why/ But sythe it is his pleasure to speke with me I wyll go to hym. I feare me greatly that I shalbe requyred to gyue vp this fortresse of Lourde: For the duke of Anjou whan he was in the countrey he cossed Bierne/ and entred nat therin. And the erle of Foys hath longe entended to haue the castell of Malvoysin/ to the entent to be lorde of the lane de Bourge/ and of the frontiers of Comynges and of Bigorre. I knowe nat what treatie they is made/ bytwene hym and the duke of Anjou/ But one thynge I saye playnly: as longe as I lyue/ I shall neuer yelde vp the garyson/ but to myne owne naturall lorde the kyng of Englande. Wherfore brother Johan/ in case that I stablysshe you in myne absence to be Capitayne here/ that ye shall swere to me by the faythe of your gentylnesse/ that ye shall kepe this castell/ in lyke maner and fourme as I do/ and that for lyfe or dethe ye fayle nat. And Johan of byerne sware to fulfyll his desyre: Than sir Peter Ernalton wente to Ortayse and alyghted at the signe of the Moone/ And whan he thought it

was tyme/ he wente to the castell of Ortayse to therle/ who with great ioye receyued hym and made hym syt at his borde/ and shewed him as great semblant of loue as he coude. And after dyner he said. Cosyn Peter/ I haue to speke wt you of dyuers thyngs/ wherfore I wyll that ye departe nat without my leaue. The knight answered and sayd. Sir/ I shall nat departe tyll it be your pleasyr. Than the thirde day after the erle of Foys said vnto hym/ in the presens of the vycount of Goussrant his brother/ and before the lorde Bachyn of Bigorre/ and dyuers other knightes and squyers. The erle sayd a loude yt euery man might here hym: Peter I sende for you and ye become. I wyll ye knowe/ the duke of Anjou wolde me moche puell bycause of the garison of Lourde/ whiche ye kepe: for the whiche cause my lande was nere hãde ouerron and good frendes had nat been. And it is his opynion and dyuers other of his company/ that he hateth me/ bicause (as they say) howe I mayntayne & sustayne you/ bycause ye be of Byerne: And it is nat mete for me to haue the puell wyll of so great a prince/ as the duke of Anjowe is. Wherfore I cõmaunde you as ye wyll eschewe my displeasure/ and by the faythe and lignage that ye owe to me/ that ye yelde by the garyson of Lourde in to my handes. Whan the knyght herde these wordes he was sore abashed/ & studyed a lytell/ remembringe what answere he might make/ for he sawe well the Erle spake in good faithe. Howe be it all thynges consydred he sayd. Sir/ true it is I owne to you fayth & homage/ for I am a poore knyght of yor blode and of your countrey: But as for the castell of Lourde/ I wyll nat delyuer it to you/ ye haue sent for me/ do with me as ye lyst. I holde it of the kyng of Englande he sette me there/ and to none other lyueng wyll I delyuer it. Whan the erle of Foys herde that answere his blode chafed for yre/ and sayd drawyng out his daggar: I treatour/ sayest thou nay? By my heed thou hast nat sayd that for nought: and so therwith strake the knight that he wounded hym in fyue places/ and there was no knyght nor barone yt durst steppe betwene them: Than the knyght sayd. Ah sir/ ye do me no gentylnesse/ to sende for me and slee me. And yet for all the strokes that he had with the daggar/ therle cõmaunded to cast him in prison downe in to a depe dyke/ & so he was/ and they dyed/ for his wounds were but yuell loked vnto. Ah sayst Mary quod I to the knyght/ Was nat this a great cruelte/ What soeuer it was yt the knyght thus it was. Lette one aduyse hym well or he displease him/ for and he be angry there is no pardon. He helde ones his cosyn germayne the vicoũt of Chateau Bern/ who is his heryter eight monethes in the towre of Ortaise in prison/ and after raũsomed him at fourtie thousande frankes. Why sir quod I/ hath the erle of Foys no chyldren? No truely sir quod he by any wyfe/ but he hath two ponge knightes yt be his bastardes/ whom ye shall se/ and he loueth them as well as hym selfe/ they be called sir Johan and sir Gracyen/ Than I demaunded yf euer he were maryed. yea truely quod he/ and is yet/ but his wyfe is nat with hym. Why sir where is she? Sir quod he she is in Nauar/ for the kyng there is her cosyn/ she was doughter to kynge Loyes of Nauar. yet than I demaunded if euer the erle had any chyldren. yes sir qd he/ he had a fayre sonne who had the fathers harte/ and all the countrey loued hym/ for by hym all the countre of Bierne was in rest and peace/ where as it hath ben sith in debate and stryfe/ for he had maryed the suster of therle of Armynake. Sir quod I/ what became of that sonne/ and it maye be knowen? Sir qd he I shall shewe you/ but nat as nowe/ for the mater is ouer longe/ and we are nere the towne/ as ye se. Therwith I left the knight in peace and so we came to Tarbe/ and toke ourr lodgynge at the Starre/ and there taryed all that day/ for it was a towne of great easement/ bothe for man and horse/ with good hayr & otes and a fayre ryuer.

The nexte day after masse we mounted a horsbacke/ and departed fro Tarbe/ & came to a towne called Jozre/ whiche valyant lye alwayes helde agaynst them of Lourde: & so we passed by the towne without/ and than entred in to the countrey of Bierne. Than the knight rode styll and sayd. Sir/ beholde here is Bierne/ and we rode in a croste waye: The knight aduysed hym whiche waye to take/ outher to Mozlens or to Panne. At laste we toke the way to Mozlens/ ridynge ouer the landes of Bierne/ whiche were right playne. Thanne I demaunded of hym/ if the towne of Panne were nere by/ and he sayde yes: and so he shewed me the steple. Howe be it the distance was farther of than it semed/ for it was an euel way to ryde bycause of the myres/ to the that knowe nat the countre/ and nat farre thens was the castell of Lourde: and I demaunded who was

as than capitayne there/ He sayd. that as than the seneschall of Bigorre was capitayne there/ admytted by the kynge of Englande/ brother to ꝑ Peter of Bierne (as ye haue herde before) That is trewe sir quod J: But dyde he neuer after go to se the erle of Foix/ He answered and sayd. Sithe the dethe of his brother he neuer came there/ but other of his company hath ben often with the erle/ as Peter Bauchyn/ Espalton of Resue/ Espalton of sayne Colome/ and other. Sir quod J/ hath the erle of Foix made any amendes for the dethe of that knight/ or so erle for his dethe/ yes truely sir quod he/ he was right sorie for his dethe/ but as for amendes J knowe of none/ without it be by secrete penaūce/ masses/ or prayers: He hathe with hym the same knightes sonne called Johan of Byerne a gracyous squyer/ & the erle loueth hym right well. Ah sir quod J/ the duke of Anjowe who that wolde so fayne haue the castell of Lourde/ ought to be well content with the erle of Foyx/ whan he slewe suche a knight his owne cosyn/ for to accomplysshe his desyre. By my fayth sir quod he/ so he was: For anone after that the duke came to the Frenche kyng/ the kynge sent in to this countre sir Roger of Spaygne/ and a president of the parlyament chambre of Paris/ and letters sealed/ makyng mencion howe the kynge dyde gyue to the erle of Foix the cōtie of Bygorre/ duryng his lyfe/ to holde ꝑ same of the crowne of Fraunce. The Erle thanked greatly the kyng/ for the great loue that he shewed him/ and for that great gyfte/ without any requeste makynge. But for all that the sayd sir Roger of Spaygne coude do/ saye/ or shewe/ the erle in no wyse wolde take the gyfte/ but he toke the castell of Mauuoysin/ bycause it was a free lande: For that castell and the purteynaūce holdeth of no man/ but of God: and also auncyently it parteyneth to his enheryteaunce. The frenche kyng by the meanes of the duke of Anjowe/ dyd gyue it hym: And the erle ware and prayed to take it on a condycion/ that he shuld neuer sette man there that shulde do any euell to the realme of Fraunce: and so he dyde/ For suche as were they feared as moche thenglysshemen/ as any other Frenche garsons in Gascoyne/ but the Bernoyse durst nat come in to the countre of Foyx.

Howe the peace was made bitwene the duke of Berry and therle of Foix and of the begynnynge of the warre/ that was bitwene therle of Foix and the erle of Armynake. Cap. xxv.

ALl these maters that sir Espayne de Leon shewed me/ right well contented me/ & euery nyght assoone as we were at our lodgynges/ J wrote euer all that J herde in the day/ the better therby to haue the in remēbraūce/ for writyng is the best remēbraūce that may be: & so we rode the sayd morenyng to Orlens but are we came there J said. sir/ J haue forget to demaūde of you/ whan ye shewed me the aduentures of Foix/ dyde dissymule with the duke of Berrey/ who had to wyues/ the doughter and suster of therle of Armynake/ and whether that the duke of Berry made him any warre/ & howe he dyd: Howe he dyd quod the knight J shall shewe you. In tyme past the duke of Berrey wolde him as moche euell as he coude ymagyn/ but as nowe/ by meanes whiche ye shall hereof whan ye come to Ortaise/ they be accorded. Why sir qꝯ J/ was there any cause why the duke shulde be displeased with hym? As helpe me god qꝯ the knight non/ but J shal shewe you the cause. Whan Charles the frenche kyng/ father to kyng Charles that nowe is was dyssesed/ the realme of Fraūce was deuyded in two partes/ as in the gouernyng therof. For the duke of Anjou who entended to go in to Italy as he dyd/ he gaue vs the rule: & than his two brethern the duke of Berry and the duke of Burgoyne had ꝑ rule. The duke of Berry had the gouernynge of Languedocke/ and the duke of Burgoyne ruled Languedoyle and Picardy. Whan they of Languedocke vnderstode ꝑ the duke of Berry had the gouernyng ouer them/ they were sore abasshed/ and specially they of Tholous/ for they knewe well that ꝑ duke was a sore taker of golde and syluer/ and a sore oppressar of the people. Also they was in Carcassone and in Rouergue/ bretons and tholousins whiche the duke of Anjou had left in the cōtre and they robbed & pylled: & the brute ran/ ꝑ the duke of Berry maynteyned them/ to thētent to ouer maister ꝑ good townes. but in this season that J spche of/ the duke of Berrey was nat in the cōtre there/ he was with the kyng in Flaūders. They of Tholous who be great and pu-

ſſant / parceyued howe the frenche kyng was
ponge / and was greatly buſyed in Flaunders /
for the ayde of his vncle the duke of Burgoyn.
And they ſawe well howe they were dayly rob
bed and pilled by the bretons and other / ſo that
they wyſte nat what to do. Than they ſent and
treated with the erle of Foix / deſyring hym for
a certayne ſome of money that they offred hym
euery moneth to be payed / that he wolde take
on hym the gouernynge of Tholous / and of the
coſtre of Tholouſin: and alſo he was deſyred
of other townes in lyke wiſe, they deſyred hym
bycauſe they knewe hym for a iuſte man and a
rightwyſe in iuſtyce / redouted of his enemyes /
and fortunate in all his buſinelle / and alſo they
of Tholous loued hym / for he had been euer to
them a good neyghbour. Thus he toke on him
the charge and the gouernynge / and ſware to
mayntayne and kepe the countre in their ryght
agaynſt all men that wolde do any wrong ther
to / reſeruyng all onely the frenche kynges per
ſons. Than he ſette men of warr to watche the
wayes and paſſages / where as theſe robbers &
pyllars vſed to paſſe / & on a daye he toke / ſlewe
and drowned of them at Robeſton in Tholou
ſin mo than four hundred / wherby he gate great
grace and honoure of them of Tholous and of
Carcaſſone / of Beſyers / and Mountpellyer /
and of other good townes there about / ſo that
the renome ran in Fraunce / howe they of Lan
guedoke were tourned / and had taken to their
lorde the erle of Foys. And the duke of Berry
who was ſouerayne there / toke therat great di
ſpleaſure: and had therle of Foix in great hate /
bycauſe he medled ſo farre in the buſynelle of
Fraunce / and wherby he mayntayned them of
Tholous / ſtyll in their rebellyon agaynſt him.
Than he ſente men of warre in to the countre /
but they were fiercly driuen backe agayne by
the erles men / ſo that whether they wolde or no
they were fayne to drawe backe / or els they had
loſte more than they ſhulde haue wonne. With
this the duke of Berrey was ſore diſpleaſed w
the erle of Foix / & he ſayd: Howe therle of Foix
was the moſt preſumptuous & proudeſt knight
of all the worlde: The duke as than coude ſuf
fre no good to be ſpoken of hym / howe be it he
made hym no warre / for the erle of Foix had al
wayes his townes and caſtelles ſo well prouy
ded for / that none durſte entre in to his lande.
But whan the duke of Berry came in to Lan
guedocke than he left his rule / for he wolde tha
no lengar exercyce agaynſte the duke / but the
diſpleaſure reſted ſtyll after a certayne ſpace:
But nowe ſhall I ſhewe you by what meanes
the peace was noyſſhed betwene them. &c.

IT was a ten yere paſte that the lady El
yanour of Compynges / as nowe coūteſſe
of Boulogne / and nere coſyn to therle of Foix /
and right enheryteur to the countie of Compyn
ges / thought that the erle of Armynake hadde
it in poſſeſſion. She came to Otaſſe to therle
of Foix / and brought with her a ponge doughter
ter of thre yere of age. Therle her coſyn made
her good chere / and he demaunded her of her
buſynelle / and whether ſhe was goynge. Sir
quod ſhe / I am goynge in to Aragon to myne
vncle and Aunte / the erle of Vrgell / and there
I purpoſe to abyde: for I haue great diſplea
ſure to abyde with my huſbande ſir Johan of
Boloyne / for I thought he wolde haue recoue
red myne enheryteunce of Compynges fro the
erle of Armynake / who kepeth it fro me: And
he hath my ſuſter in priſone / and he wyll do no
thyng in the mater: He is ſo ſofte a knight that
he wyll do nothynge / but take his eaſe and eate
and drinke / and to ſpende that he hath ſoly ſhe
lye: and I thynke whan he is erle / he wyll take
his pleaſure more. Therfore I wyll no lengar
abyde with hym / and I haue brought with me
my doughter / whom I wyll delyuer in to your
handes / prayenge you to kepe and to norriſſhe
her vp / for I truſt by reaſon of her lygnage / ye
wyll nat fayle thus to do / for I haue hoope in
you that ye wyll kepe her. I had moche payne
to gette her awaye out of the countrey / and out
of the handes of my huſbande her father: But
bycauſe I take thē of Armynake myne aduer
ſaries and yours / who wolde gladly ſteale my
doughter awaye / bycauſe ſhe is enheryteur of
Compynges / therfore I haue brought her vnto
you. Wherfore ſir / I requyre you fayle me nat
at this buſynelle: And I am ſure her father my
huſbande whan he knoweth it / I haue lefte her
with you / he wyll be right toyfull. For he hath
ſayd often tymes to me / that this his doughter
ſhulde put hym to great doute. And whan the
erle had well herde the wordes of the lady Elya
nour his coſyn / he was right toyfull: And ymā
gined in him ſelfe / howe that chylde after ſhulde
do hym ſome pleaſure / as by the meanes of her
mother / to haue a ferme peace w his enemyes /
or els to marry her in ſo highe a place / that his
ennemyes ſhulde doute hym therby: Than he
anſwered the lady and ſaid. Madame and co

syn/ all that ye desyre I shall do it with right & good wyll/ for I am bounde therto by lynage: and as for your doughter my cosyn I shall kepe her as well/ as though she were myne owne proper childe. Sir quod she/ I thanke you. Thus the yong doughter of Boulogne abode with the erle of Foix at Ortaise/ and she never departed thens sithe: and the lady her mother went to Arragon. She had been sithe ones or twyse to se her doughter/ but she never desyred to have her agayne/ for therle kepte her as well as if she were his owne childe. And to the purpose as to the meane of the peace that I shewed you/ the erle ymagined to gette by her/ the love agayne of the duke of Berry: And as nowe at this present tyme: the duke of Berry hath great desyre to be maryed: and I thynke by that I herde at Auygnon by the Pope/ who is cosyn germayne to the ladyes father. He shewed me howe the duke of Berrey desyreth to have her in maryage. By saynt Mary sir quod I/ howe your wordes be to me right agreable/ for it hath done me great pleasure/ all that ever ye have shewed me whiche shall not be lost/ for it shall be putte in remembraunce and cronycled/ if god wyll sende me the grace to retourne to the towne of Valencines/ where as I was borne. But sir/ I am sore displeased of one thynge. What is that quod he? I shall shewe you. By my faythe that so hyghe and valyant a prince as the Erle of Foix is/ shulde be without lawfull issue. Sir quod the knight/ if he had one as ones he had/ he shulde be the most espouse prince of the world/ and so wolde be all the contre. Why sir than quod I/ is his lande than without an heyre? Nay sir quod he/ the Vycount of the castell Bone his cosyn germayne is his heyre. Is he a valyant man in armes quod I? Nay be my faythe sir quod he/ and therfore the Erle loueth hym nat/ and thynketh to make his two bastarde sonnes/ who be right valyant/ his heyres. & thynketh to marry them in an highe lygnage/ for he hath golde and syluer ynough/ wherby he thynketh to gette theym wyues/ suche as shall ayde and conforte them. Sir quod I/ it maye well be. Howe be it the thyng is nat reasonable/ that bastardes shulde be made heyrtours of landes Wherfore nat sir quod he/ if there lacke good heyres. See you nat howe the spayniardes have crowned Henry a bastarde to be kyng? and also they of Portyngale crowned a bastarde to theyr kynge. It hath been sene in the worlde in dyuers realmes/ that bastardes by force hathe reygned. Was nat thylayn Conquerour bastarde sonne to a duke of Normandy/ who conquered all Englande/ and was kynge there/ so that all the kynges syth are dyscended fro hym? Sir quod I/ all this might well be/ they is no thyng but that may fall/ but they of Armynake are right strenge: and so therby this countrey shalbe euer in warre and stryfe. but sir/ I pray you shewe me the iust cause why the warre first moued betwene them of Foix and Armynake. I wyll shewe you? the knight. I ensure you it is a marueylous warre/ for as they saye/ eche of the have cause. Sir auncyently about a hundred yere past/ there was a lorde in Byerne called Gascone/ a ryght valyant man in armes/ & is buryed in the freres right solempnely at Ortaise/ and there ye may se what persone he was of stature and of body/ for in his lyfe tyme his pycture was made in latyn/ the whiche is yet there. This Gascone lorde of Bierne had two doughters/ the eldest was maryed to the erle of Armynake that was thane/ and the yongest to the erle of Foix/ who as than was nephue to the kyng of Aragon/ and as yet therle of Foix bereth his armes/ for he dyscended out of Aragon his armes are palle golde and goules: And so it fortuned/ that this lorde of Bierne had a great warre agaynst the kynge of Spayne that was than/ who came through all Wisquay with a great nombre of men of warre to entre in to Bierne. The lorde Gascone of Bierne whan he was enformed of his comyng/ he assembled people on all sydes/ where he might get men of warre/ & wrote letters to his two sonnes in lawe/ therle of Armynake and therle of Foix/ that they shulde come to serue and ayde hym to defende his heritage. These letters sene/ the erle of Foix as sone as he myght assembled his people/ & prayed all his frendes/ so moche/ that he had a fyue hundred knightes and squiers armed/ and two thousande varlettes with speares/ dartes/ & pauesses/ all a fote: And so he came in to the countre of Bierne to serue his father/ who had of hym great hope. And so all they passed the bridge at Ortaise ouer the ryuer/ & lodged betwene Sanctetes and thospytall. & the kyng of Spayne/ who had xx. M. men was lodged nat far thens and they the lorde Gascon of Bierne & therle of Foix taryed for therle of Armynac/ & thought ever that he wolde come. & so taried for hi three dayes and on the .iiii. day therle of Armynac sent his

began thus. Trwe it is quod he/ that the erle of Foix and my lady of Foix his wife agreeth nat well togyther/ nor haue nat done of a long seson. And the occasion bytwene the twoo is caused by the kyng of Nauar/ who was brother to the lady. For the kyng of Nauar pledged hym selfe for the lorde Walbet/ whom the erle of Foix had in prysone/ for the some of fyftie thousande frankes. And the erle of Foix/ who knewe that the kyng of Nauary was craftie & malycyous/ in the beginnyng wolde nat trust hym wherfore the countesse of Foix had great displeasure and indignacyon ageynst the erle her husbande/ & sayd to hym. Sir/ ye repute but small honour in the kyng of Nauar my brother/ whā ye will nat trust hym for fyftie. M. frankes/ thoughe ye haue no more of the armynakes nor of the labat yence than ye haue/ it ought to suffyce. & also sir/ ye knowe well ye shulde assigne out my dower/ whiche mounteth to fyftie thousande frankes/ whiche ye shulde put in to the hādes of my brother the kyng of Nauary: wherfore sir/ ye can nat be excused. Dame quod he ye saye trouthe/ but if I thought that the kyng of Nauary wolde stoppe the payment for that cause/ the lorde Walbet shulde neuer haue gone oute of Orthes/ and so I shulde haue ben payed to the last penny. And sithe ye desyre it I will do it/ nat for the loue of you but for the loue of my sonne. So by these wordes and by the kyng of Nauars obligacion/ who became dettoure to the erle of Foix/ the lorde Walbet was delyuered quyte and became frenche/ & was maryed in Fraūce/ to the suster of the duke of Burbone and payed at his ease to the king of Nauar the some of fyftie thousande frankes for his raunsome: For the whiche some the kyng was bounde to therle of Foix/ but he wolde nat sende it to the erle. Than the erle of Foix sayd to his wyfe Dame/ ye must go in to Nauarre to the kynge youre brother/ and shewe hym howe I am nat well content with hym/ that he will nat sende me that he hath receyued of myne. the lady answered/ howe she was redy to go at his commandement. And so she departed and rode to Pamplone to the kynge her brother/ who receyued her with moche ioye/ the lady dyd her message fro poynt to poynt. Than the kyng answered/ fayre suster/ the some of money is yours/ therle shulde gyue it for your bodye/ it shall neuer go out of the realme of Nauary/ sithe I haue it in possessyon. Why sir quod the lady/ by this ye shall sette great hate bytwene therle my husbande & you/ & if ye holde your purpose/ I dare nat retourne ageyne in to the contrie of Foix/ for my husbande wyll slee me/ he wyll saye I haue disseyued hym. I can nat tell quod the kyng what ye wyll do/ but ye shape ou wrgte/ but as for the money I wyll nat departe fro it/ it perteyneth to me to kepe it for you/ nat it shall neuer go out of Nauar. the countesse coude haue none other answere of the kyng her brother. And so she tarved styll in Nauar and durst nat retourne ageyne. The erle of Foix whan he sawe the delynge of the kynge of Nauar/ he began to hate his wyfe and was nyell content with her howbe it she was in no fawte/ but that she returned nat ageyne whan she hadde done her message/ but she durst nat: for she knewe well therle her husbande was cruell where he toke displeasure. Thus the matter standeth. The erles sonne called Gaston/ grewe and waxed goodly/ & was maryed to the doughter of therle of Armynake a fayre lady/ suster to therle that nowe is. The lorde Bertrande of Armynake. and by the condicyon of that mariage/ they shulde haue ben peace bytwene Foix & Armynake. The chylde was fyftene yere of age/ and resembled right well to his father: On a tyme he desyred to go in to Nauar to se his mother and his vncle the kynge of Nauary/ whiche was in an ryell bour for hym & for all this countre. Whan he was come in to Nauarre/ he had there good chere/ and tarved with his mother a certayne space and than toke his leaue: but for all that he coude do/ he coude nat gette his mother out of Nauar/ to haue gone with hym in to Foix/ for she demaunded if therle had commaunded hym so to do or no: and he answered/ that whan he departed/ therle spake nothyng therof. Therfore the lady durst nat go thider/ but so tarved styll/ Than the chylde went to Pamplone to take his leaue of the kyng his vncle. The kyng made hym great chere and tarved hym there a ten dayes/ and gaue to him great gyftes and to his men: also the last gyfte that the kyng gaue hym was his bethe. I shall shewe you howe.

Whan this gentylman shulde depte/ the kyng wente hym in a parte in to his chambre and gaue hym a ryell purse full of poudre/ which poudre was suche/ that if any creature lyuyng dyd ete therof/ he shulde incontynent dye without remedye: Than the kynge sayd/ Gaston sayre nephue/ ye shall do as I shall shewe you: ye se howe therle of Foix your father/ wrongfully hath your mother my suster in great hate/ wherof I am sore displeased/ and so ought ye to be:

Howbe it is profytable all the matter / and that
your father shulde loue agayne your mother /
to that entent ye shall take a pursell of this pow
der / and put as some vnto that your father
maye eate it / but be ware that no man se you / &
as soone as he hath eaten it he shall entende to
nothynge / but to lowe agayne his wyfe / and so
to lowe her euer after / wherfore ye ought greatly
to beware: And of this that I shewe you / see no
man knowe / but kepe it secrete / as ye wolde all
the dede. The chylde who thought all that the
kyng sayd to hym had ben trouthe sayde. Sir it
shalbe done as ye haue deuysed / and so depar
ted fro Pampylone and retourned to Orleyns /
the erle his father made hym good chere / & dy
maunded tydynges of the kyng of Nauar / and
what gyftes he had geuen hym. And the chylde
shewed hym howe he had geuen hym byrdes /
and shewed hym all except the purse with the
poulder. Ofte tymes this yong Galsone & yuan
his bastarde brother lape togyther / for they lo
ued togyther lyke brethern / and were lyke ar
rayed and appareyled / for they were vere of a
greatnesse and of one age. And it happened on
a tyme as they dyshes lape togyther on their
beddes / yuan sawe a purse at Galsons cote / &
sayd. What thyng is this that ye beare cute a
bout you / Wherof Galsoyne had no lyst / and
sayd. yuan / gyue me my cote / ye haue nothyng
to do therwith: and all that day after Galsone
was pensyue. And it fortuned a thre dayes af
ter / as god wolde / that the erle shulde be saued.
Galsone and his brother yuan fell out togy
ther playeng at tennes / and Galsone gaue hym
a blowe: and the chylde wente in to his fathers
chambre and wepte / and the erle as than had
herde masse. And whan the erle sawe him wep
he sayd. Sonne yuan / What ayleth thou? Sir
quod he / Galsone hath beaten me / but he were
more worthy to be beaten than I. Why so quod
the erle / and incontynent suspected some thyng.
By my faythe sir ye he / sythe he retourned out of
Nauar he beareth hymselfe as he wyll a purse
full of poulder / I wote nat what it is / nor what
he wyll do therwith. But he hath lasyr to me
ones or twyse / that my lady his mother shulde
shortely be agayne in your grace / and better be
loued than euer she was. Peace quod the erle
and spake no more / and sawe this to no man
lyuynge. Sir quod he no more I shall. Than
the erle entred in to ymaginacyon and so came
to the houre of his dyner / and washed and sat
downe at his table in the hall. Galsone his son
was vsed to serue downe all his seruyce / and to
gyue the dyshes. And whan he had serued
the first course / the erle cast his eyen on hym / &
sawe the strynges of the purse hangyng at his
bosome: Than his blode chaunged / & sayd. Gal
sone my broder / I wyll speke with the in tryne
tate. The chylde came to him / and the erle toke
hym by the bosome and founde out the purse / &
with his knyfe cut it fro his bosome. The chylde
was abasshed & stode styll and spake no worde
and loked as pale as asshes for feare / & began
to tremble. The erle of Foys opened the purse
and toke of the poulder / and layde it on a trens
cheour of bordde / and called to him a dogge and
gaue it hym to eate: and assoone as the dogge
had eaten the first morsell / he turned his eyen
in his hede and dyed incontynent. And whe
the erle sawe that he was sore displeased / & also
he had good cause: and so rose fro the table and
toke his knife / and wolde haue stephen hym.
Than the knightes and squyers ran betwene
them and sayd. Sir / for goddes sake haue mer
cy / and be nat so rashe: Be well enformed first
of the matter / or ye do any parell to your chylde.
And the first worde that the erle sayd was. I gat
eyne tydynges / for to increase thyne heritage /
shulde come to the / I haue had warre and hate
red of the Frenche kyng / of the kyng of Engle
de / of the kyng of Spayne / of the kyng of Na
uar / and of the kyng of Aragon. and as yet I
haue borne all their malesses / and now he wol
dest murther me / it moueth of an yuell nature /
but first thou shalt dye with this stroke / and so
kepte fo the with his knife / & wolde haue slayne
him / but than all the knightes and squyers knee
led downe before hym weppynge / and sayd. Sir
sir / haue mercy for goddes sake / sir no: Gal
sone your sonne remembre / ye haue do more cryel
ties. Sir / cause hym to be kepte / & take good
enformacion of the matter. Paraduenture he
knewe nat what he bare / and paraduenture is
nothyng gylte of the dede. Well quod the erle
incontynent put hym in prysone / and let hym be
so kepte / that I may haue a rekenyng of hym.
Than the chylde was put in to the tower. & the
erle toke a great many of them that serued his
sonne / and some of them departed / and as yet
the bysshoppe of Lascalle is at Pau out of the
countre / for he was had in suspect / and so were
dyuers other. Thefe caused to be put to dethe
a fyfty and eight horrybly / and the cause that the
erle layde to them was / he sayde. It coulde be
none other wyse / but that they knewe of the cryel
des secretes / wherfore they ought to haue shew
ed it to hym / and to haue said. Sir Galsone

pour sonne beateth a page at his beheste. Be-
cause they dyde nat thus / they dyed horribly /
wherof it was great pytie for some of the were
as fresshe and as toly squyers / as were any in
all the contre / for euer the erle was serued with
good turn. This thynge touched the erle nere
to the herte / and that he well shewed: For on a
day he assembled at Ortaise / all the nobles and
prelates of Foix and of Berne / and all the no-
table persons of his countrey. And whan they
were all assembled / he shewed them wherfore
he sente for them / as howe he had founde his sonne
in this default: For the whiche he sayd / his en-
tent was to putte hym to dethe / as he had well
deserued. Than all the people answered to that
case with one voyce / and sayde. Sir / saufgarde
pour grace / we wyll nat that Gascoyne shulde
dye / he is pour heyre / and ye haue no mo. And
when the erle herde the people howe they desy-
red for his sonne / he somwhat refrayned his yre.
Than he thought to chastyce hym in prisone a
moneth or two / and than to sende hym on some
voyage for two or three yere / tyll he might some-
what forget his euell wyll and that the chylde
might be of greatter age & of more knowledge
Than he gaue leaue to all the people to depart
but they of Foix wolde nat departe fro Ortaise
tyll the erle shulde assure them / that Gascoyne
shulde nat dye: they loued the chylde so well.
Than the erle promysed them / but he sayd: he
wolde kepe hym in prisone a certayne space to
chastice hym. And so vpon this promyse euery
man departed / and Gascone abode styll in pri-
sone. These tidynges spredde abrode into dy-
uers places / and at that tyme pope Gregorie
the .xi. was at Auygnon. Than he sente the car-
dynall of Anyens in legacion in to Berne: to
haue come to therle of Foix for that busynesse. A
dy that tyme he came to Beziers he herde suche
tidynges / that he nedyd nat to go any further
for that mater / for there he herde howe Gascon
sonne to the erle of Foys was dede. Sythe I
haue shewed you so moche / nowe shall I shewe
you howe he dyed.

THe erle of Foys caused his sonne to be
kepte in a barbe chambre / in the towre
of Ortayse a tenne dayes / lytell dyde he eate or
drinke / yet he had prouysyon brought hym eue-
ry daye: but whan he sawe it he wolde go ther-
fro / and sette lytell therby. And sone sayd / that
all the meate that had ben brought hym stode
hole and entier / the day of his dethe: wherfore
it was great maruayle that he lyued so longe /
for dyuers reasons. The erle caused hym to be
kepte in the chambre alone without any com-
pany / neyther to counsayle or conforte hym. And
all that season the chylde laye in his clothes as
he came in / and he argued in hymselfe and was
full of malencoly / and cursed the tyme that euer
he was borne and engendred / to come to suche
an ende. The same day that he dyed / they that
serued hym of meate a bynde / whan they came
to hym / they sayde. Gascone / here is meate for
pour he made no care therof / and sayde: Sette
it downe there. He that serued hym / regarded
and sawe in the prison all the meate stande hole
as it had ben brought hym before: And so de-
parted and closed the chambre doze / and went
to the erle and sayd. Sir / for goddes sake ha-
ue mercy on pour sonne Gascone / for he is nere
sampysshed in prisone there he lyeth. I thynke
he neuer dyde eate any thynge sythe he came in
to prisone / for I haue sene there this daye / all
that euer I brought hym before / lyeng togup-
der in a corner. Of those wordes the Erle was
sore displeased / and without any worde spe-
kyng went out of his chambre / and came to the
prisone where his sonne was / and in an euell
houre. He had the same tyme a lytell knyfe in
his handes to pare withall his nayles: He oppe-
ned the prisone doze and came to his sonne and
had the lytell knyfe in his handes / nat anyche
out of his handes. And in great displeasure he
thruste his handes to his sonnes throte / and the
poynt of the knyfe a lytell entred in to his throte
in to a certayne bayne / and sayd. Ah treatour /
Why doest nat thou eate thy meate? And ther-
with the Erle departed without any more do-
nge or sayeng / and went in to his owne cham-
bre. The chylde was abasshed and afrayed of
the comynge of his father / and also was feble
of lusynge / and the poynt of the knyfe a lytell
entred in to a bayne of his throte / so fell do-
wne sodaynly and dyed. The erle was scante in
his chambre / but the kepar of the chylde came
to hym and sayd. Sir / Gascone pour sonne is
dede. Dede quod the Erle / pea truely sir quod
he. The erle wolde nat beleue it / but sente thy-
der a squyer that was by hym / and he went and
came agayne and sayd. Sir / surely he is dede.
Than the Erle was sore displeased / and made
great complaynt for his sonne / & sayd. A Gas-
cone: What a poore aduenture is this for the
for me? In an euell houre thou wentest to Na-
uarre to se thy mother: I shall neuer haue ioye
that I had before. Than therle caused his bar-
bour to shaue hym / and clothed hymselfe in his

che,and all his house.and with muche sore wepyng,the childe was borne to the Frees in Ortaise,and there buryed. Thus as I haue shewed you the erle of Foys slewe Galtoyne hys sonne,but the kynge of Nauar gaue the occasyon of hys dethe.

How we sir Peter of Byerne had a stronge dyscase, and of the countesse of Bisquay his wyfe. Cap.xxxvi.

When I had herde thys tale of the dethe of Galtone sonne to therle of Foys,I bidde greate pyty therof,for the loue of therle hys father, whome I founde a lorde of hyghe renowmeed,yon, noble,lyberall,and curteise. And also for loue of the countrey, that shulde be in great sleyse for lacke of an heyre. Than I thanked the squyer and so departed fro hym,but after I sawe hym dyuers tymes in the erles house,and talked often tymes with hym.And on a tyme I demaunded of hym of syr Peter of Byerne, bastarde brother to therle of Foys (because he seme d to me a knyght of great valure) whether he were riche,and maryed or no. The squyer answered & sayd. Truely he is maryed, but his wyfe and chyldren be not in hys company:And why sir quod I. I shall shewe you quod the squier.

¶ This sir Peter of Bierne hath an vsage, that in the night tyme whyle he slepeth,he wyll ryse & arme hymself,and drawe out hys swerde and fyght all about the house, and can not tell with whome,and than goithe to bedde agayne. And whan he is wakynge, his seruauntes do shewe hym how he dyde. And he wolde saye, he knewe nothyng therof, and howe they lyed sometyme his seruauntes wold leaue non armure nor swerde in his chãbre,& whan he wold thus ryse and fynd non armour,he wold make such a noyse and rumour, as though all the deuyls of helle had ben in hys chambre. Than I demaunded yf he had great landes by hys wyfe yes truely syr quod he:But the lady by whom cometh the land, sayeth of the profytes therof. Thys syr Peter of Bierne hath but the fourth parte.Syr quod I,where is his wyfe.sir quod he she is in Castell wyth the kynge her cosyn, her father was erle of Bisquay,and was cosin germayne to kyng Dampeter who slewe hym, and also he wold haue had the lady to haue put her in prison.And he toke the possession of all the lande and as long as he lyued the lady had nothinge there.And it was sayd to this ladye, who was countesse of Bisquay, after the dyscease of her father.Madame, saue youre selfe, for kyng Dampeter if he may gette you, wyll cause you to dye,or els put you in prysone. He is so sore displeased with you.because he sayth ye shulde repoyt and beare wytnes y he caused the quene his wyfe to dye in her bedde,who was syster to the duke of Burbone and suster to the frenche quene. a your wordes (he sayth) are beleued, rather thanne another because ye were preny of her chambre. And for this cause the lady Floyens countesse of Bisquay, departed out of her countre with a smalle company, as the cõmon vsage,is to flye fro dethe as fere as men can.So she went in to the countrey of Vascles and passed thrughe it, and so came hyder to Ortayse to the Erle,and shewed hym all her aduenture. The erle who had euer pyte of ladyes and damoselles,retayned her and so she abode with the lady of Carese,a great lady in his countre.As than this sir Peter of byerne his brother was but a ponge knyght, and had not thanne,this vsage to ryse a nyghtes,as he doth nowe. The erle loued hym well and mayred hym to this lady,and recouered her landes And so this sir Peter had by this lady a sonne and a doughter,but they be with their mother in Castell,who be as yet but pong,therfore the lady wolde not leaue them with their father.

By saynt Mary quod I, howe dyde sir Peter of Bierne take this fantasy: Full that he dare not slepe alone in his chambre, and that whan he is aslepe, ryseth thus and maketh al that be fyersh, they are thynges to be maruepled at. By my faithe quod the squyer,he hathe ben often demaunded therof,but he sayth he can not tell wher of it cometh. The first tyme that euer he dyde so,was the night after that he had ben on a day a huntynge in the wodes of Bisquay and chased a maruelous great Beare: and y beare had slayne four of his houndes,and hurt dyuers.so that none durst come nere him than this sir Peter toke a swerde of Burdeaux and came in great yre, for because of his houndes and assayled the beare and fought longe with hym, and was in great parell.and tooke great payne or he could ouercome hym. Finally he slewe the beare, and than retourned to his lod

gyng to the caſtell of Laguedon in Biſquay. & made the beare to be brought with him. Euery man had marueyle of the greatneſſ of the beſte and of the baroneſſe of ꝑ knight. howe he durſt aſſayle the beare. And whanne the counteſſe of Biſquayes wyfe ſawe the beare ſhe fel in a ſowne and had great dolour, and ſo ſhe was borne in to her chambre, and ſo al that day, the night after, and the nexte day ſhe was ſore diſconforted, and wold not ſhewe what ſhe ayled. On the thirde day ſhe ſayd to her huſbande: Syr, I ſhall not be hoole, tyll I haue been a pylgrimage at ſaynt James. Sir, I praye you gyue me leaue to go thyder, and to haue with meny ſonne and Idain my doughter: her huſbande agreed therto. She toke all her golde, iewels, and treaſure with her, for ſhe thought neuer to retourne agayne, wherof her huſbande toke no hede. So the lady dyde her pylgrimage, and made an errande to go and ſe the kynge of Caſtell her coſyn, and the quene. They made her good chere, and ther ſhe is yet, and wyll not retourne agayne, nore ſend her chyldren. And ſo thus the nexte night that thiſtre Peter had thus chaſed the beare and ſlayne hym, while he ſlept in his bedde, this fetaly toke hym. And it was ſaid, that the counteſſ hys wyfe knewe well, as ſone as ſhe ſawe the beare, that it was the ſame that her father dyde ones chaſe. And in his chaſyng, he herde a voyce and ſawe nothynge, that ſayd to hym. Thou chaſeſt me and I wolde the no hurte. therfore thou ſhalt dye any yuell deth Of this the lady had remembraunce, whan ſhe ſawe the beare, by that ſhe had herde her father ſaye before: and ſhe remembred well howe kynge dan Peter ſtrake of her fathers heed, wythout any cauſe, & in lyke wyſe ſhe feared her huſband And yet ſhe ſay the an mayntayneth, that he ſhall dye of an yuell deth, and that he dothe nothyng as yet, to that he ſhall do hereafter.

NOw ſir, I haue ſhewed you of ſir peter of Byerne, as ye haue demaunded of me & this is a true tale, for thus it was thus it be fell. Howe thynke you quod he therby, and I who muſed on the great marueyle ſayd, ſyr, I beleue it well, that it is as ye haue ſayde, ſyr we fynde in olde wrytyng, that auciently ſuche as were called goddes and goddeſſes, at theyr pleaſure, wolde chaunge and tranſlayme men in to beeſtes and in to foules, and in lyke wyſe women. And it might be ſo, that thus here was before ſome knight chaſyng in the foreſt of Biſquay, and ꝑaduenture diſeaſed in ꝑ tyme, ſome god or goddes, wherby he was tranſformed vnto a beare, ſo do ther hys penaunce, as auncyently Acteon was chaſyged vnto an hart. Acteon quod the ſquyer, I praye you ſhewe me that ſtorye, I wolde fayne here it. Syr quod I accordyng to the auncyent wrytynges, we fynde howe Acteon was a ſtrong & expert knight and loued the ſporte of huntynge above all games. And on a day he chaſed in the wodes, and an Harte arose before hym, maruelous great and fayre: he hunted hym all the daye, and loſt all hys company, ſeruauntes, and houndes, and he was right deſyrous to folow hys pray. And folowed the ſewe of the Hart tyll he came in to a lytell medowe, cloſed rounde about with wodes and highe trees. And in the medowe ther was a fayre fountayne, in the whiche Dyana, goddeſſe of Chaſtyte was bayenge her ſelfe, and her damſelles about her. The knight cãe ſodaynly on them or he was ware, and he was ſo farre forwarde, that he coulde not go backe. And the damoſelles were abaſſhed to ſe a ſtrãger and ran to their lady and ſhewed her, who was a chamed, bycauſe ſhe was naked. & whan ſhe ſawe the knyght ſhe ſayde, Acteon, they that ſente the hyder, lo nedeth but lytell. I wyll not that whan thou art gone hens in other places, that thou ſhuldeſt reporte that thou haſt ſene me naked, and my damoſelles, and for the outrage that thou haſt done, thou mayſt haue penaunce. Therfore I wyll that thou be tranſformed in the lykeneſſe of the ſame Harte, that thou haſt chaſed all thys daye, and mekely ſwete Acteon was tourned vnto an Harte, who naturally loueth the water. In lykewyſe it might be of the beare of Biſquaye: and howe that the lady knewe paraduenture, more than ſhe wolde ſpeke of at that tyme, therfore ſhe ought the better to be excuſed. The ſquier anſwered & ſayd, Syr, it maye well be. Than we lefte oure talkynge for that tyme.

¶ Of the great ſolempnete that the erle of foyes made at the feeſt of ſaint Nycholas, and the tale that the Baſtot of Mauſyon ſhewed to ſyr John Froyſſart. Cap. xxviii.

AMonge other solempnities that the erle of Foys kepte on the hyghe festes of the yere he kept euer the fest of sayne Nycholas in great solempnytie / he and all his lande / as great as at the fest of Ester. And this was shewed me by a squier of his house the thirde day that I came hyder / and I sawe it my selfe right well apparent / for I was there on the same day. First all the clergie of the towne of Ortays / and all the people / men / women / & chyldren with processyon came to the castell to fetche the erle / who all a fote departed fro his castell / and went with the clergy a processyon to the churche of sayne Nycholas / and there the clergy sange a psalme of the psalter, Benedictus dominus deus meus, qui docet manus meas ad prælium, et digitos meos ad bellum. &c. And whan this psalme was songe / than they began to syng as they dyde on Christmas day or Ester daye / in the popes chapell or in the frenche kynges / for he had with hym many syngers / the byllhoppe of Pauyers sange the masse / and there I herde as good playeng at organs / as euer I herde in any place. to speke brefely and accordyng to reason / the erle of Foys than was right puyssyte in all thynges / and as sage and as parceyuyng / as any hyghe prynce in his dayes. There was none coude copare with hym in wyttr / honour / nor in largesse At the festes of Christmas whiche he kept euer right solempne / came to his house many knightes and squyers of Gascone / and to euery man he made good chere. There I sawe the Burge of Spayne / who layde the woode and the Ille on the fyre togyder / of whom sir Espayne de Lyon shewed of his force / and I was gladde to se hym: and therle of Foys made hym good semblant. There I sawe also knightes of Aragon & of Englande of the duke of Lancastres house / who as than laye at Burdeux. The erle made them good chere and gaue them great gyftes / I acquaynted my selfe with those knyghtes / & by them I was enformed of many thyng / that fell in Castell / in Nauar / & in Portyngale: of the whiche I shall speke of whan tyme requyreth hereafter. And on a day I sawe a squyer of Gascone called the Bastot of Mauleon / a man of a fyftie yere of age / an expert man of armes and a hardy / de lempngre. He alighted at my lodgynge in Ortaise at the signe of the Moone / at Ernalton de Pyns. He brought with hym his fomers and carpages / as thought he had ben a great barone / & was serued bothe he & his seruantes in syluer vessell. and whan I herde his name and sawe therle of Foys and euery man do hym so moche honour, than I demaunded of sir Espagne de Lyon / and sayd. Sir / is nat this the squyer that departed fro the castell of Tyrgaier / whan the duke of Anjou laye at siege before Malmoplin / yes truely quod he it is the same / and he is a good man of armes & a good capitayne. and so than I fell in aquayntaunce with hym / for he was lodged there as I was. & a cosyn of his called Ernalton capitayn of Carlate in Auuergne / with whome I was well acquaynted / helped me to be aquainted with him and in lykewise so dyd the Burge of Compare and at a tyme as we were talkyng & deuysynge of armes / sytting by the fyre abydyng for my dynner / that therle shulde go to supper / than this squiers cosyn began to reken by his life / and of the deedes of armes that he had ben at. sayeng / howe he had endured as moche losse as profite Than he demaunded of me and sayd. sir Johan haue ye in your hystorie / any thyng of this matters that I speke of: and I answered & said. I coude nat tell / tyll I here the / shewe forthe your matter and I wyll gladly here you: For paraduenture I haue herde somwhat but nat all. that is true quod the squyer / than he began to saye thus. The first tyme that I bare armure was vnder the captall of Beufz at ye bataple of Poyters. and as it was my happe / I had that daye thre prisoners / a knight & two squiers / of whõe I had one with another four. C. thousande frãkes. The next yere after I was in Prusse with the erle of Foys and the Captall his sonne / vnder whom I was / & at our retourne at Meulx in Brye / we founde the duchesse of Normandy that was than / and the duchesse of Orlyance / & a great nombre of ladyes and damoselles / who were closed in and besieged by them of the Jaquery: and if god had nat holpen the / they had ben enclosed & defouled / for they were of great puissance / and in nõbre mo than ten thousande and the ladyes were alone / and so we in ye ayde of those ladyes dyd sette on the / and there were slayne of the Jaquery mo than sixe thousande / and they rebelled neuer sythe. at ye tyme it was truse betwene Fraunce and Englande / but the kyng of Nauar made warre in his owne quarell / agaynst the frenche kyng and Regent. the erle of Foys returned in to his owne countre / but my maister the captall and I & other abode styll with the kyng of Nauar for his wages. & than we & other that ayded hym made great war-

in Fraūce/ and ſpecially in Picardy/ and toke many townes and caſtelles in the biſſhoprike/ theſe of Beaunoiſe and Impens/ and as than we were lordes of the feldes and ryuers/ & conquered great ryuance. And whan the treuſe fayled bytwene Englande and Fraunce/ than the kyng of Nauarre ſeaſed his warre/ and toke a peace bytwene the Regent and hym. Than the kyng of Englande with a great puyſſance paſſed the ſee/ and came and layde ſiege to the towne of Remus. Than the kyng of Englāde ſent for my maiſter who was at Clermont in Beauoiſin/ and there made warre for the kynge agayne all the countrey. Than we came to the kyng of Englande and to his chyldren. & than quod the ſquyer to me. Sir Johan/ I thynke ye knowe all redy all that matter/ and howe the kyng of Englande wedded his wife/ and howe he came before Charters/ and howe the peace was made there bytwene theſe two kynges. That is true ſir quod I in writyng I haue it/ and the contynue of all the treaties. Than the Baſtot of Vaulpon ſpake agayne and ſayde. whan this peace was thus made bitwene theſe two kynges/ It was ordayned/ that all men of warre and companyōs ſhulde avoyde/ & leaue their fortreſſes and caſtels that they helde. than all maner of men of warre and poore company ons drewe togyder/ and the capitayns tooke counſayle what they ſhulde do. And than they ſayde. Thoughe theſe two kynges haue taken peace togyder/ yet we muſte lyue. Than they wente in to Burgoyne/ & there were capitayns of all nacyons/ Engliſſhe/ Gaſcons/ Spanyardes/ Nauerroiſe/ Almayns/ Scottes/ and of all maner of nacyons: and there I was as a capitayne/ and there we foūde in Burgoyne and about the ryuer of Loyre of our cōpany/ a.xii. thouſande of one and other. And in the ſame cōpany they were a thre or four thouſāde of good and choſen men of warre/ and as ſubtell in all dedes of armes as might be/ and apte to aduiſe a batayle/ and to take their aduantage/ and as hardy to ſcale and aſſayle towne or caſtell. and that was well ſene at ỹ bataile of Brinay/ where as we ouerthrue the cōſtable of Fraūce & therle of Fozeſis/ and two thouſande ſpeares knightꝭ and ſquiers. This bataile dyd great profite to the cōpanyons/ for before they were but poore/ and than they were all riche by reaſon of good priſoners/ townes and caſtels that they wan in the biſſhoprike of Lion/ & on the ryuer of Rone and whan they had the pont ſaynt Eſprite they departed their warre/ & made warr to the pope and to the cardynalles/ who coude not be quyte of them/ nor had not ben tyll they founde a nother remedy. The pope ſent in to Lōbardy for the Marques of Mōtferrant a right valyant knight/ who had warre with the lorde of Mylayne. Whā he was come to Auignon the pope and the cardynals ſpake to hym in ſuche wyſe/ that he entreted with the capitayns/ Engliſſhe gaſcons/ and almayns for theſe thouſande frāks/ that the pope and cardynals ſhulde pay to certayne of theſe capitayns and to their cōpanyes/ as ſir Johan Hallourde a valyant engliſſhe knyght/ ſir Robert Briquet/ Carinell nandon le bageraut/ the bourge Camus/ & dyuers other: & ſo than went in to Lōbardy/ and gaue vp ỹ pont ſaynt Eſprite. & of all their routes they toke but the. vi. parte/ but we taried behynde. ſir Seguin of Batefolle/ ſir Johñ tocll ſir James Pilchyn/ ſir Johñ Aymery/ the burge of Pergourt/ Eſpiot/ Loys Rābait/ Lymoſyn/ Jaques tryturell/ I/ & dyuers other. & we kepte ſtyll & lay at ſaynt Clement/ at Bareil/ at Terrace/ at Brinay/ at the pont ſaynt Denys/ at thoſpitall of Orliaunt/ for we had no than. xl fortreſſes & houſes/ in the countreis of Fozeſis/ Vclay/ baſe Burgoyn/ & on the ryuer of Loyre and we raiſoned all the coūtre/ they coude not be quyte of vs/ nother for paying well nor other wiſe. & in a night we toke the fortreſſe of Charite/ and there we abode a yere & a halfe & all was ours fro Charite to Puy in Auuergne: ſir Seguyn of Batefolle had lefte his garſon of anſe & helde Bryde in Auuerne/ wherby he had gret profite/ what there & in the coūtre/ to the value of a.C.M. frankes/ & on the ryuer of Loyre to Orlians & the ryuer of Ealyer was all ours. & the archyeſt who was capitayne of Neuars & was good frenche coude not remedy the countre/ but in that he knewe many of the cōpanyōs and ſo by his deſyre cōtynue the leſſe hurte was done/ & the archyeſt dyd the ſame tyme moche good in Neuernoiſe/ for he cauſed ỹ citie of Neuers to be cloſed/ els it had been ouerron & robbed diuers tymes/ for we had in thoſe marches townes/ & caſtelles/ mo than. xxvi. There was neyther knight nor ſquyer nor riche man/ without he were agreed with vs/ that durſt loke out of his houſe. And this warre we made in the tyrell of the kyng of Nauar.

How we dyuers capitayns engliſſhe and other were diſcōfited before the towne of Nāzere by the frenchmen.

In the same season fell the batayle of Cocherell/ where the captall of Beufz was capitayne: for the kyng of Nauarz hys/ uers knightes and squyers of our com/ pany went to hym. sir Jaques Planchyn & sir Johan Joell went to serue hym with two hun dred speares. The same season I kept a castell called the Becas Walper nere to Charyte/ go ynge toward Barbanoise/ and I had vnder me a.xl. speares/ and I made in the countre myl les greatly to my profyte/ about saynt Pierryn and saynt Peter de mouster. & whan I herde howe the captall my mayster was in Constan tyne and assembled men of warre. for the great desyre that I had to se hym/ I departed fro my garyson with a.xii. speares/ and I fell in com pany with sir Johan Joell & sir Jaques Plan chyn/ And without any busynesse or rencoun ter we came to the captall. I thynke sir Johan ye haue all redy the knowlege what became of that busynesse: That is true quod I/ for there was taken the captall of Beufz/ and sir Johan Joell slayne and sir Jaques Planchyn: That is true quod the Bastarde of Wanipon/ there I was also taken/ howe be it I fortuned mete ly well: they was a cosyn of myne who was cal led Bernard of Terryde/ he dyed after in Por tyngale at the batayle of Juberot. & this Ber narde who was as than vnder sir Aymenon of Pomyers/ he toke me and raunsomed me in the felde at a thousande frankes/ & gaue me a good sauecõducte to retourne to my garyson of Ber Walper. alsoone as I came to my castell I sent a seruaunt of myne with a thousande frankes/ to my cosyn to Parys/ and had my quytaunce for the same. The same season sir Johan Ay mery an Englysshe knight and the greatteste ca pitayne that we had rode forthe/ coslyng the ry uer of Loyre to come to Charite/ and he was en cõtred by a busshment of the lorde Rugemõt and the lorde of Woonay/ & by some of the arch pryestes men. They were farre stronger than he and so there he was taken and ouerthrowen/ & raunsomed to a.xxx. thousande frankes/ which he payed incontynent. Of his takyng and losse he was sore displeased and swore/ that he wolde neuer entre in to his owne garyson/ tyll he had won agayne as moche as he had lost. Than he assembled togyder a great nombre of company ons/ and came to Charyte on Loyre/ and desy red the capitayns they/ as Lampt and Carsnell and the burge of Piergourt and me/ for I was there as than to spoyle me. They he desyred vs all to ryde forthe with hym: We demaunded of hym whyder he wolde ryde/ By my fayth q he/ we wyll passe ? ryuer at Loyre at saint Thy balte: and lette vs scale and assayle the towne & castell of Sancerre. For quod he/ I haue swor ne and auowed/ that I wyll nat entre in to no for tresse that I haue/ tyll I haue sent the chyldren of Sancerre. And if we maye gette that gary son and the erles chyldren within/ Johã Loys/ and Robert: Than we shall be well reuenged/ and therby we shalbe lordes of the countre/ and I thynke we shall lightly come to oure entent/ for they take no hede of vs/ and this kyng styll here dothe hs no manet of pryse. That is true sir quod we/ & so all we promysed to ryde with hym/ and incontynent we made vs redy. And so it fortuned/ ? all oure purpose was knowen in the towne of Sancerre. The same tyme they was there a capitayn a balyant squyer of Bur goyne of the lowe marchesse called Guysshart Albygon/ who toke great hede to kepe well the towne and castell of Sancry/ and the chyldren within. This sir Guysshart had a moke to his brother/ of the abbey of saynt Thybalt/ whiche is nere to Sancerre. This monke was sent to Charyte on the ryuer of Loyre for his brother/ to beare a certayn raunsome thyder ? the townes owed by couynant. so we toke no hede to him & he knewe all our ententes/ howe I can nat tell/ and all our names that were capitaynes there/ and what nombre we were of/ and what houre we shulde departe/ and howe we were determy ned to passe the ryuer at the porte of saynt Thy balte: And so he retourned and went to San cerre/ and shewed his brother all oure myndes. Than therle there and his bretherne prouyded for remedy/ and they sente for knightes & squy ers of Berry and Burbonoyse/ and to the capi tayns & garysons therabout/ so that they were a foure hundred speares of good men of warre and made abusshment of two hundred speares without the towne of Sancerre in a wode. and we knewe nothyng of all this/ and at the sonne goynge downe/ we departed fro Charyte and rode a good pase tyll we came to Penly/ and at the porte there/ we hadde redy bootes & barges to passe vs ouer & oure horses. And so we passe ouer the ryuer of Loyre as we had ordayned/ and we were ouer by mydnight/ and bycause ? daye cam on/ we ordayned a hundred speares to abyde there to kepe oure horses and bootes/ and the remynaunt of vs passed forthe/ for by the frenche busshment. Whan we were passe a quarter of a myle/ than they brake out of their busshment/ and rode to them that we had lefte

behynde vs at the tyrst lyde. & anone they had discomfyted them and all slayne or taken/ & our hoyles wonne/ and the botes arested. and than they mounted on our hoyles and came after vs on the spurres/ and were as soone in the towne as we. They cryed our lady of Sáxere for the erle was there hym selfe with his men/ and his brethrene/ sir Loys and sir Robert had made the bulwerment. Who thus we were incloked on all partes/ for they a horsbacke alloone as they cãe to vs/ they alighted afote and assayled vs fiersly. And the thynge that moost greued vs/ was we coude nat enlarge our selfe to fight/ we were in suche a narowe waye closed on bothe sides/ with hay/ hedges/ and dyngardes/ & also some of our enemyes suche as knewe the countre were rydden about and gette in to the dyngardes/ and dyd hurt vs sore with castyng of stones and we coude nat go backe/ & moche payne to gette to the towne/ it stode so hygh on a mountayne. So we were sore trauayled/ & sir Johñ Aymery was hurt our souerayne capitayn/ by the hãdes of sir Guyllhart Albygon/ who toke hym prisoner & had moche a do to saue his lyfe he put hym in to a house in ỳ towne/ and made hym to be layde on a bedde/ and sayd to the owner of the house. kepe well this prisoner/ and se his woundes staunched/ for if he lyue/ he shall paye me. xx. thousande frankes. & so sir Guyllhart lefte his prisoner and retourned to the bataple/ and quytte hym selfe lyke a good man of armes. & there was wt the chyldren of Sáxere/ come thider to their ayde and to the countreis/ sir Guyllhart dalphyn/ the lorde Marney/ sir Gerarde and sir Wyllam Burbone/ the lorde of Coulant/ the lorde de la Pter/ the lorde de la Palys/ the lorde of Neutry/ the lorde de la colle and the lorde of Spette/ and dyuers other. I say sir to you/ this was a bataple right fell and cruell. we defended our selfe as long as we might so that on bothe partes there were slayne dyuers persones/ and many hurte: for by that they shewed they had rather haue taken vs a lyue than to slee vs/ and finally we were all taken/ Carsaple iaunt/ Nanton/ le bourge de Pyergourt Espyot/ the burge of Lespare/ Angerot le moustyer/ Philyppe of Roe/ Peter of Coythus/ the Pelat of Palyuers/ the bourge of Barusen/ & all our capitayns/ and I my selfe and we were brought to the castell of Sáxere. Natuer before in the realme of Fraunce/ the companyons lost so moche as they dyde at that iourney/ howbe it Guyllhart Albygon lefte his prisoner by negligence/ he bledde so sore that he dyed for defaute of lokyng vnto. Thus ended Johan Aymery/ by this iourney that was thus done before Sancrre/ Charyte was delyuered/ & all the garysons therabout by compolycton/ that we shulde be quyte out of prison/ and so we had sauconduyte to departe out of the countre where we lyst. And it fortuned as than for vs/ that the same season sir Bertram of Clesquy/ the lorde of Beayne/ sir Arnolde Dandrehen/ and the erle of Marche/ they toke their botage to go in to Spaygne to ayde the kyng Dampeter/ but first I was in Bretayne at the bataile of Auroy vnder sir Hughe Caurell/ and there I recouered my losse/ for the iourney was ours. and I had to my pte good prisoners/ by whom I had two. M. frankes. Than I went with ten speares with sir Hugh Caurell in to Spayne/ and there helped to put kyng Dampeter out of his realme. And than whan ỳ alyances were made bytwene the kyng Dampeter and the prince of Wales/ and that he wolde abyde in Castell/ I was there in the company of sir Hugh Caurell and I retourned with hym in to Aequitayne. Than the warre renewed bytwene the frenche kyng and the prince: than we had moche a do/ for we had sore warre/ and many capitayns englysshe and Gascoyns were slayne/ and yet I thãke god I am a lyue. They dyed sir Robert Bryquet bytwene the lande of the duke of Orliance and the countre of Bloyse/ in a place called Olyuet/ and there hys all his company were ouerthrowen by a squyer of Heynalt a valyant man of armes & a good capitayne/ called Jlars Dousticnes/ surnamed Barbason/ for he was of that lynage. He was as than gouernoure of Bloys/ and kepar of all the countre/ sette there by the lordes therof/ as Loys/ Johñ/ and Guy. So it was his fortune to encoutre with sir Robert Bryquet & sir Robert Cheney. & they and all their cõpany were slayne/ for they were non taken to raunsome. and at the bataple of Nyorthe in Xayntaine/ Carsnell was slayne by sir Bertram of Clesquy/ and a seuyn. C. englysshmen were slayne there/ & at saint Seuere were slayne other englysshe capitayns/ as Rychard Clys and Richarde Selyn. I knewe but fewe expert my selfe but ỳ were slayne. I haue holde fronter & made warre for the kyng of Englãde for myne heritage lyeth in Burdelois. Somtyme I haue bten so ouerthrowen and pulled downe/ that I had nat wherwith to kepe a horsbacke. And another tyme I haue bern riche ynough whan good fortunes came/ & in a season I and Raymonet de la Pter were companions

fogyder and we had in Tholousyn on the frontiers of Bygoze. The castell of Malupsin, the castell of Trygalet, and the castell of Lastenic, whiche as than dyde vs great prosyte. Thanne the duke of Anion toke them ito vs. byforce of puyssaunce, but than Raymonet de Pee tourned Frenche, and I abyde styll good englisshe and shall do whyle I lyue. True it was, whan I had loste the castell of Trygalet, and was conducted to the castell Cuyllet, and that the duke was gone backe agayne in to Fraunce, I determyned to do somwhat, outher to gette some prosyte oz els to lose all, oz to dye in the payne. I caused by spyall, the towne & castell of Thury in Albygois to be wel a vewed, whyche castell after auoyded to me, what by good fortunes and patel syeng of the countrey a hundred thousande frankes. I shall shewe you howe I wanne it.

Without the towne there is a fayre fountayne, and of vsage euery morynge, the women of the towne wolde come thyder with pottes and other vesselles on their hedes, too fetche of the clere water there. Than I toke syxtie compaynons of the garyson of Cuyllet, and we rode all a daye thzoughe wodes & bushes, and the nexte night about mydnight, I sette a bussshment nere to Thury, and I and a sixe other all only, dyde on vs womens aray and wyth pottes in our handes. And so we came to a medowe right ner to the towne, and hydde our selfe behynd greate cockes of hay that were ther standyng, for it was about the fest of saint Johan, whan they make hay. & whan the houre came that the gate was opened to lette the women go out for water, we setting toke our pottes and fylled them at the fountayn and went toward the town, our faces wzapped in kerchers, so that we coude not be knowen: the women that we mette goyng for water said to vs. Ah fayre Mary gosseppes, ye were vp be tymes: We answered in their language with a fayre voyce, that is true. And so passe by the and came to the gate and we founde no body there but a souter ozessynge forthe of hys baggage. Than one of vs blewe a hoyne to drawe thyder our company out of the bussshment. The souter toke no hede but whan he harde ye hoyne blowe he demaunded of me. What is this? Who was that blewe the hoyne: One answered and sayd, It was a preest wente in to the feldes. Ah that is true quod the souter, it was (yr Fraūces our preest gladly he gothe a mornyng) to seke for an Hare. Than our company came and we entred in to the towne, where we found no man to drawe his swerde to make any defence, thus I toke the towne and castell of Thury, whereby I haue had great profite percely. more than the castell of Trygalet with the appurtenaūce is worthe. But as now I wote nat what to do for I am in a treatie with therle of Armynake and with the dolphyn of Auuergne, who hath expresse authorite by the Frenche kyng, to dye all townes and fortresses of the companyons, such as they holde in their handes whersoeuer, they be, outher in Auuergne, Rouergue, Lymosyn, Quercy, Pyergourt, Albegois, Agen & of all suche as hath oz wolde make any warre in the kyng of Englandes syde. and many are departed and haue rendred their fortresses, I can not tell if I wyll rendre myne oz not: Wyth that worde sayd the Burge of Compayne. Cosyn, it is true: For of Carlat whyche I holde in Auuergne, I am cōe hyder to here some tidynges, For sir Loys of Sayssere marshall of Frāce wyll be here shortely, he is as nowe at Tarbe, as I haue herde of suche as come thens, th these wordes they called for wyne and drauke, Than the Bastot sayd to me, syr Johan, are ye well enformed of my lyfe, yet I haue had other aduētures whyche I haue not shewed, nor wyl not spoke of all, sir qᵗ I, I haue well herde you.

Howe a squyer called Limosin turned frenche and howe he caused Loys Rambalt his compayon in armes to be taken. Cap. xxx.

Than agayne I demaunded of hym, wher Rambal the expert squyer & a greate capitayne of mē of warre was berōe, bycause I sawe hym ones in Auignon in great aray. I shall shewe you quod the Bastot of Wanion, In tyme past whan sir Segupn of Batefoyle held Byzde in Velay a tent mans fro Puy in Auuergne, and that he had made warre in the countrey & conquered moche, than he retourned in ot Solron & gaue to Loyes Rābalt to & another cōpanyon of hys called Lymosin, Byzde & Anse, on the water of Sōme, the countrey as than was so desolate & ful of cōpanyons in euery corner, y none durst go out of their houses, & betwene Byzde in Auuerne & Anse, is more than xxvi. myle, & coūtre

fell of mosteynes, and whan Loyes Rambalt
wolde ryde for his pleasure fro Byde to Ause,
he rode without doute or feare, for he helde by
hers fortresses in the countie of Fozests, and
therabout, wher he refresshed hym & for as thā
the gentylmen of Auuergne, of Fozests, of Ve
laye, and the frontiers were sore trauayled, and
euer layde with they ware, the werre so taken
and raunsomed that they doughted the warre,
For ther was none of the great lordes of frau
ce that sente any men of warre in to the coūtre,
for the frenche kynge was yonge, and had mo
che a do in dyuers pies of the realme, for in eue
ry parte, the companyōs and companyes rode
and dyd muche hurte, so that the realme coude
not be quyte of thē. And also dyuers of the lor-
des of Fraunce were in Englande in hostage,
and in the meane season their countreys & men
were pylled and robbed, and had no remedy:
for the men of the countre wer without corage
to defende them selfe. And so it was, that Ram
balte and Lymosin, who were companyons in
armes fell out, I shall shewe you howe.

Loyes Rambalte had at Byde a fayre
woman to hys louer, whome he loued
parfitely: and whan he rode fro byde
to Ause, he cōmaunded Lymosin to take good
hede to her. And Lymosin who was his com-
panyon in armes, and in whome he moost trus-
sted, he toke so good hede to the damosell, that
he had hys pleasure of her whan he lyst. so that
Loyes Rambalt was enfourmed therof, and
he could suffre it no lenger: So that he toke su
che a hate agaynst his companyon, that he cau
sed hym to be taken by his seruantes, & made
hym to be dryuen all naked saue abyerde: about
the towne, and beaten with scourges, and trū
pettis to be blowen before him: And at certayne
places his dede to be openly cryed & than banis
shed the towne lyke a traytour. and in asmyple
rote putte out. This dispyte dyd Loyes Ram-
balte to Lymosin, whiche dispyte Lymosin to-
he greuously, and sayde: Howe he wolde be re-
uēged if euer it laye in his power, as he was a-
none after. And this Lymosin whyl he was in
prosperite, in ridyng betwene Byde and Ause
he euer forbare the landes of the lord of Voulx
dwellyng on the ryuer of Rone, for he had ser-
ued him in his youthe. Than he thought to go
to hym and to crye hym mercy, & to desyre hym
to make his peace in Fraūce, and so in his cote
a forē he went to Voulxe, for he knewe ryghte
well the way, and so went in to a house, & whā
he sawe his tyme he went to the castell, and the
porter wolde not suffre hym to entre, but at last
he spake so fayre, that the porter dide lette him
in, and cōmaunded hym to go no farther in to
out he were cōmaunded, and he obeyed. Whan
the lord was vp he went downe in to the court
to speke him, and so came to the gate: Than
Lymosin felle downe on his knees, and sayde.
sir do ye not knowe me: by my fayth quod the
lorde no he thought lytell it shulde haue been
Lymosin: and whan he had well aduysed hym
he sayd. Than resemblest well Lymosin, who
was ones my seruaunt. Sir quod he, Lymo-
syn I am and your seruaunt, thā he cried him
mercy for all thynges passe before, and shewed
hym fro poynt to poynt all his busynesse, and
howe Loyes Rambalte had delte with hym at
the ende. Than the lorde sayde. Lymosyn, Is
it as thou sayest and that thou wylt bestē good
frenche I shall make thy peace. By my faith sir
quod he, I neuer dyde so muche hurte to the re
alme of Fraūce, but I shall do agayne more p
fyte therto, that wolde I se gladly quod the lor
de of Voulx, the lorde kept him in his house tyl
he had made his peace in euery place, and thā
Lymosin myght in suretie ryde, than the lorde
of Voulx armed hym, and brought hym to the
seneschall of Velay and acquaynted hym there,
and ther he was examyned of the state of byde
and of Loyes Rambalte, and whan he ryde the
what wope he taketh: and than he sayd. Whan
Loyes ryderh he hath not with him past a. rrr.
or a. rl. speares: and the wapes that he kepeth
I knowe them by harte. For with hym & with-
out hym, I haue ryden them ofte tymes. And
sir, if ye wyll sende for the a company of men of
armes, on leopardy of my hede, ye shall haue
hym within fyftene dayes. The capitayne ther
toke hede to his sayeng and sent out spyes, and
Rambaulte was spyed as he was ryding fro
Byde to Ause beside Lion, on the ryuer of Ro
ne. Whā Lymosin knewe it, he shewed it to the
lorde of Voulx and sayd. Sir, Loyes Rābalte
is nowe at Ause, and at his retournyng I shal
bryng you to a streight, wher as he must nedes
passe by. Than the lorde of Voulx made an as-
semble and was capitayne hym selfe, and sente
for the bayly of Velay, the lord of Mountclan
sir Gerarde of Maiyers and hys sonne, sir Pla
seart of Vernet, the lorde of Newcastell, & for
other men of armes therabous. so that he was a
bone. C. speares, and they all assembled at Mon
nay, and by the counsaile of Lymosin they made
two bushmentes, the vicōte of Polygnac & the

lorde of Chalencon had the rule of the one/ and the lorde Roulte and the lorde of Mount Clan had the gouernaunce of the other bataylment/ and with them sir Lopes of Tomon/ and the lorde of Malpers: and they hadde equally deuyded their company. The firste company kepte the pase nere to sayne Rambart in Forelles/ where as Lopes Rambalte shulde passe the ryuer of Loyre/ or els he muste haue gone by Guyde or Pynne. And whan Lopes Rambalt had done that he came for to Anse/ he departed with .cl. speares/ and thought nat to haue any rencounter/ and bouted nothynge of Lymosin/ it was the leest thought he had. And lightely euer the way that he rode out warde he wolde nat come home warde. And as he came outwarde he cãe by sayne Rambalte/ and at his retourne he toke another waye/ & toke the mountayns aboue Lyon and aboue Vyenne/ and vnder the Burge Varlentall/ And rode streyght towarde the Mounasster/ a thre lytell myle fro Pupe. And he hadde passed betwene the castell of Monestrole and Mountfaucon/ and so came aboute the countre/ towarde a village called Baterp/ betwene Nonnay and sayne Iuyane. And in the wode there was a streyght passage/ whiche he muste nedes passe/ or els to go by Nonnay. at whiche streyght laye the lorde of Roulte with two hundred speares/ and Lopes Rambalt tooke no hede tyll he was among them. Than the lorde of Roulte/ who was redy to do his enterprise/ layde the speare in the rest and came cryenge la Roulte/ and dashed in among the companyons/ who rode abrode withoute good array. And so at the firste metyng/ many of them were ouerthrowen to the erthe/ and Lopes Rabaulte was stryken fro his horse/ by a squyer of Auuergne called Ambiarbon: & so he toke hym prisoner/ and all other taken or slayne none scaped. And they they foude in boistes a thre .M. frankes/ whiche Lopes Rabalte had receyued at Anse/ for tribute of certayne villages therabout/ where/ they were glodde/ for euery man had his parte. And whan Lymosin sawe Rambalte thus trapped he came before hym/ and sayd in reprothe. Lopes Lopes: here fauteth company. Remembre ye of the blame & shame that ye dyde put me to at Brise for your mayster. I wolde haue thought lytell for a woman/ ye wolde haue put me to that ye dyd. For if ye had done as muche to me/ I wolde nat haue ben so angry. for two suche companyons in armes as we were/ myght haue payd our tyme well ynoughe with one woman. With those wordes the lorde laughed/ but Lopes Rabalt had no ioyse ther at. By the takyng thus of this Lopes Rabalte Brise was deliuered to the seneschall of Auuergne/ for after they had lost their capitayne and the chefe men they had/ they wolde kepe it no lenger: And in lykewise so dyde they of Anse/ and other forteresses in Velay & Forestes/ that was on their parte. for they within any of these forteresses were right ioyous to yelde vp their holdes to saue their lyues. Than Lopes Rabalte was brought to Nonnay and there set in prisone/ and the fetche kyng had great ioye of his takyng. As I herde reported/ he was beheeded at Newcastell besyde Burgnon. Thus Lops Rambalt dyed/ god haue mercy on hym. Thus sir quod the Baylof of Wanlyon/ I haue holde you with talkyng/ to passe awaye the night/ how be it sir/ all that I haue sayd is true Sir quod I/ with all my herte I thanke you. Sir/ I trust your sapeuges shall nat be lost. For sir/ & god suffre me to retourne in to myne owne countre/ all that I haue herde you saye/ and all that I haue seene and founde in my voyage/ I shall put it in remembraunce/ in the noble cronycle that the erle of Blays hath set me a warke on: For I shall write it & cronycle it by the grace of god/ to the entent it shalbe in perpetuall remembraunce. Than the Bourge of Compayne/ called Espaliton began to speke/ & wolde gladly that I shulde parceyue by hym/ that he wolde I shulde recorde his lyfe/ and of the Bourge Englysshe his brother/ and howe they had done in Auuergne/ and in other places. But as than he had no leysar/ for the watche of the castell sowned to assemble all me that were in the towne to come vp to the Castell/ to suppe with the erle of Foix. Thanne these two squyers made them redy and lyghted vp torches/ and so we wente vp to the Castell/ and so vyde all other knightes and squyers that were lodged in the towne.

¶ Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foyx: and howe the towne of Pyan rebelled/ for the great traueyle/ domage/ and outrage that was don there to. Cap. rrvi.

Of the astate and ordre of the erle of Foix can not be to moche spoken nor prayse: For the season I was at Orthes/ I sawe hym sythe/ and moche more than I can speke of: But whyle I was there/ I sawe & herde many thynges that turned me to great pleasure. I sawe on a Christmas day sytting at his borde/ four bysshoppes of his countre/ two Clementynes and two Urbanystes: the bysshoppe of Dayseres & the bysshoppe of Lescalle Clementynes/ they satte highest. Than the bysshoppe of Bayze and the bysshop of Rone on the frontiers of Bardelops and Bapon/ Urbanystes: Than satte there the erle of Foix/ and than the vycount of Roquebertyn of Galcone/ and the vycount of Bumpquell/ the vycount of Joserant/ and a knight of Englãd of the duke of Lancasters/ who as than laye at Narbone/ the duke had sent hym thyder: The knight was called sir Wyllyam Wyllughby. And at another table satte fyue abbottes & two knightes of Arragon/ called sir Raymonde de Mount Rozentyne and sir Warren de Ruane: And at another table satte knightes and squyers of Galcone and of Bigore. First the lorde of Darchin/ than sir Gaylart de la Mote/ sir Raymbde of Newcastell/ the lorde of Chamõt/ Galcone/ the lorde of Compant/ the lorde de la Lepne/ the lorde of Mountferant/ sir Wyllyam Bernarde/ sir Peter of Corton/ the lorde of Malenchyn/ and sir Jungallenamed the Basell. & at other tables knightes of Bierne a great route/ and the cheife stewardes of the halle were sir Espaygne of Leon/ sir Biquart de Boyes Verdune/ sir Roumans of Romallys/ and sir Peter of Mault of Bierne/ and the two Erles bastarde bytherne serued at ꝑ table/ sir Erualton Guyllame and sir Peter of Byerne: And the erles two sonnes. sir Ryan of Lescheil was shewer and sir Gracyen bare his cuppe. And there were many Mynstrelles/ as well of his owne as of straungers/ and eche of them dyde their deuoyre in their faculties. The same day the erle of Foix gaue to hys ladies and mynstrelles/ the sume of fyue hundred frankes: and gaue to the duke of Tourayne a paire of sleues of clothe of golde furred with Ermyns/ valued at two hundred frankes. This dyner endured foure houres. Thus I omytte to speke of the erle of Foix/ for I was there in his courte eyght wekes/ and well entreated in all thynges: Lyke I was there/ I myght lerne and here the

dyuynges of all countreis. Here also the gentyll knyght sir Espaygne of Leon/ in whose company I entred in to the countre: he enseled me to be acquaynted with knyghtes and squyers/ suche as coude declare to me any thyng that I coude demaunde: For I was enformed of the busynesse of Portyngale and of Castell/ & what maner of warre they had made/ and of the batayls and rencountres betwene those two kynges and their allyes/ of whiche busynesses I shall make fuller report.

Ye haue herde here before: How the kynge don Johan of Castell hadde besieged the castell of Lurbone/ & the king Johan of Portyngale therin/ whom the good townes had crowned to their kyng for his valyantnesse/ howe be it in dede he was a bastarde. And also ye haue herde how the same kyng sende in to Englande to the duke of Lancastre and to the erle of Cambrydge/ who had in mariage his coseyns/ to haue socours of thē. These messangers were two knyghtes and a clerke/ sir Johan Rabyngues and sir Joyse Mose/ and with them a clerke ycensed in the lawe/ arrybed beaken of Lysbone. These messangers dyde so moche by the see/ that they came to Hampton and there tarped a daye/ and there gate hostes for they had none of their owne/ and so rode to London. This was in the moneth of August. And the kyng was in the marches of Wales a huntyng at his pleasure/ & his bucles/ the duke of Lancastre/ the erle of Cãbridge/ sir Edmonde and sir Thomas erle of Buckyngham/ were also in their owne countreis a hontynge: wherfore the kyng of Portyngales messangers had more to do: to fynde they spake with the duke of Lancastre/ who was at Hertford/ 8 twentie myle fro London. The duke receyued them ioyously/ and opened ꝑ letters that they brought hym/ and the duke redde them thre tymes/ the better to vnderstande thē/ and than he sayd. Sirres ye be right welcome in to this countre/ but ye be come in the worste tyme of the yere/ to haue speedy delyuerce here of your ambassade/ for the kyng and my brethern are sparcled abrode here and there/ and ye can haue no full answere till the counsaylers come togyder at London/ at the feest of Saynt Myghell: But sythe that is yet paste of your message tarrieth for me/ or for another/ therfore I will write to hym/ right hye and I shalbe shortly at London/ for no cause/ and than we shall take redy/ [illegible] Wherfore as nowe ye shall re-

tourne

fourne to London, and whē my brother is come
here ye shal haue tidinges fro vs. The ambas-
sadours of Portingale were content, and so re-
tourned to London and were well lodged and
toke their ease. The duke of Lancaster forgate
not that they had sayd to him, and so incontinēt
wrote to his brother therle of Cābridge of that
businesse, and whan the therle had read his bro-
thers letters, he prepared him selfe and rode to
Hertford beside ware, where the duke was and
there they were thre dayes togither in counsaile
and so ordayned to go to London as the duke
had promised to the ambassadours, and so they
came to London. Than these two lordes and
they of Portingale hadde great counsayles be-
twene them. For the erle of Cābridge who had
ben before in Portingale, was nothing content
with kynge Ferant of Portyngale last dead, for
he sayd he made his warre but slackely, and al-
so agaynst the wyll of him and all the Englyshe
men, he toke peace with the Spanyerdes, wher-
fore the erle sayd he had doute that at the couns-
sayle at Wighelmas, the commonty would not
agre lightly to make another voyage into Por-
tyngale, for the iourney thither before had cost
greatly the realme of Englande, and no profyte
therby. The ambassadours conceyued well the
erles wordes, and sayd. Syr, than was than
and nowe is now. The kyng whom god pardon
redoubted greatly the fortune of the world, but
the kyng our mayster that now is, hath another
minde & ymaginacion. For yf he find in the feld
his enemyes, though he be lesse of power, yet he
will geue the setting on, what soeuer fal therby.
And this syr, we dare faythfully assure you, and
my lordes beyde that your quarell is cleare to
querron and to conquere the realme of Castell,
for the enheritaunce pertayneth to you, and to
your heyres & to your children, and to conquere
it, ye can not haue so good an entre into Castell
as by Portyngale. Syth ye haue all that realme
accordynge therto. Therfore syr, and one of you
shal come thither with such a sufficiente nombre
and by the ayde ye shall haue there, ye shalbe a-
ble to kepe the feld. The duke of Lancastre an-
swered. Sirs, that I seke not in this, but in the kyng
and in the realme, but we shal do our good wil-
les ye may be sure therof.

Thus they ended their counsayle and the por-
tyngales laye stil at London abiding Wighel
mas, and the duke of Lancastre and the erle of
Cambridge retourned into their owne coun-
trees on the marches of the North.

Thus came Wighelmas and the parlamente
at Westminster, and the kyng approched a came
to Windsore and so to Chartley, and the Quene
with him, and than to Staines, & also his chefe
of counsayle the erle of Oxenford, for by hym e-
uery thing was done, and without him nothing.

The same season there was in Flaunders bys-
twene the duke of Burgoyne and the gauntoys
great warre. And there were newlye retourned
out of Flaunders into England the bysshoppe of
Norwyche, syr Hugh Laurell, syr William Hel-
man, syr Thomas Tryuet and other, who had
in the same somer bene at the syege with ꝑ gad-
sayle before Ayre. Than came the french kyng
and cloted them in in Burbenoyse (as is rehear-
sed before in this history) but as than there was
true betwene Fraunce, Englande, and Flaun-
ders, to endure tyll midsomer after, but ꝑ Scots
tes had muche to do, also there was at London
the counsayle of Saunte ꝑ they deuyzed to haue
a gouernour to helpe to susteyne the kepynge of
their towne. They deuyzed one of the kynges
uncles or elles the earles of Salisbury. So at
this counsayle at London, there were many rou
sayls as well for the flemynges as for Portyn-
gale and Scotland, who made them warre.

The duke of Lancastre drewe to that part that
he might haue a nounber of men of warre and
archers to go into Portingale. And he shewed
the lordes, prelates, and commens, howe they
were all bound by sayethe and othe, to ayde hym
and his brother to winne the heritage in Castel
and that he sayd, they promised whan the kynge
his nephue was crowned, and it appeared by
theyr letters sealed, and moreover the duke com
playned hym howe they of the realme did him a
his brother wrong, in that whan his brother the
erle of Cambridge was in Portingale that they
kept but finally the conenaunt that they had pro
mised. For he sayd, it was promised to send to
him thither two thousand speares and as many
archers, and nothing was done, wherby theyr
quarel of the ryght of theyr enheritaunce was
greatly hyndred. The dukes wordes were well
heard, as it was reason. And the most notablest
persons of the counsayle sayd, how he had right
to speake as he dyd, howbeit they sayde, that the
businesses of the realme that touched the nere.
most, ought first be preferred. Some would that hys
wyll shoulde haue bene accomplysshed, and some
other sayd, that it shoulde be a great outrage to
sende out of the realme two thousand mennes of
warre and foure thousand archers, to so long a
iourney as into Portingale. for the fortunes of
the sea be daungerous, and the ayre of Portin-

gale marueylous hote sayeng, that if the realme of Englād should lese such a company, it should be a domage irrecuparable. Howebett all thynges alledged, finallye it was ordeyned, that the duke of Lancastre should passe the sea with seuen hunered speres and four thousand archers and euery man payed for a quarter of a yeare. Howebett they reserued, that if any accident touching the realme of England, by the meanes of Fraunce or Scotland, should happen to fal before their departure into Portingale, thā to tary. The duke agreed therto syth he sawe it would be none otherwise. And than as ye haue heard before, whan the duke of Lancastre was ready with all his men at Hampton to take his voyage into Portingale, and that ỳ ambassadours were retourned and hadde brought worde into Portyngale howe the duke of Lancastre was comyng with such a nomber of men of warre. Than the portyngaleys had great ioye. So it fortuned then that a let fell in Englande, whych taryed the duke of Lancastre for a season, for the admyrall of Fraunce sir Johan of Vien, wyth a thousand speares of good men of armes toke shipping at Sclus and sayled into Scotland and made warre into England, so that all the realme came to resyst them. All this is shewed here before in this history, wherfore I nede not to speake thereof agayne, but I wyl speake of the syege of Lisbone, & of the kyng of Spain of whom I shall make true relacion, according as I was enformed.

KIng don Johan of Castell beinge at syege before Lisbone, tidinges came into his hoost by marchauntes of his countrey that came from Flaunders, howe the duke of Lancastre with a great nomber of men of warre were commynge thytherward, to reyse the syege there. These tydynges were well beleued for the Spanyerdes knewe wel how the duke of Lancastre wolde do his payne and diligence to make warre on the realme of Castell, bycause he claymed parte therof by the ryght of his wyfe, howebeit the kyng held styll his syege, and he hadde sent messengers and letters to haue ayde out of France and specially he sent into the countrey of Bierne and into the land of the erle of Foix. And out of Berne there issued in a foure dayes reysyng a thre hundred speares of chosen menne of armes and there was come to Otaise out of the realme of Fraunce to go into Castel to serue ỳ kyng there, Syr Johan of Rie burgonyon, and syr Geffray Rychon breton, and sir Geffray de pard tenay and eche of them had a company by them selfe. Than they of Bierne made them ready as the lord of Lynguathe a great baron, and companyon to the earle of Foix, and sir Peter Lyer, sir Johan de Lepres, the lorde of Bordes, syr Bertrand of Barege, the lorde of Noziage, sir Raymond Vansac, sir Johan of Salagre, syr Monan of Saruen, syr Pyer of Robier, syr Stephyn of Valentyne, and syr Raymonde of Ratalle, sir Peter of Vaucan, syr Ogert of domessan, and diuers other. And syr Espaynyolet of Spaygne, eldest sonne to sir Roger of Spaygne, cosyn of lygnage and armes to the erle of Foix, he went in the company of theym of Bierne. These lordes and knyghtes of Bierne made their assemble at Otayle and therabout and it was shewed me by them that sawe theym depart fro Otaise, howe that they were the best armed and apporyted company that went oute of Byerne many a day before. And whan the erle of Foys sawe surely how they would depart to go into Spaygne, though at the begynninge he somwhat cōsented therto, and that they shuld receyue the king of Castelles wages, yet he was angry and sorowful of theyr departynge, for he sawe wel that his countre was sore febled thereby. Than he sent syr Espaygne de Leon, and sir Cabestan to these sayd lordes knyghtes & squyers, desiring them to come together to his castel of Otaise to the entent to giue theim a diner to their farewell. The knyghtes obeyed as it was reason, and came to Otaise to se the earle, who receyued theym with gladde cheare, and after masse caused theym all to come to him into hys secrete chamber, and than in maner of counsayle he sayd to them.

Syrs it is than your ententes to depart out of my countre, and to leaue in my handes the warr with the erle of Armynake, & ye to go and make warre for the king of Spayne. This departure toucheth me right nere. But quod they we must nedes go, for ỳ that entre le we haue receyued ỳ king of Castels wages. And ỳ the warre betwene Spayne & Portingale ones atchyeued, than we shall retourne agayne in sauegarde, at whych ỳ therle, nay not so soone, for as nowe it doth but begyn, for there is a newe kynge in Portyngale and he hath sent for ayde into Englande, therfore this warre is likelye to endure a longe season, & ye to kepe the felde, for ye shall not be fought with, tyll the duke of Lancaster and his companie be come thider, and la ye shall derely bye the wages ye haue receyued. Syrs ỳ

they / sythe we haue done so moche we must nedes pacforme our voyage. Well god spede you quod the erle / let vs go to dyner it is tyme. and than therle with these lordes and knightes went in to his hall / and there the tables were. There they had a great dyner at great leaser / and was serued with euery thyng that to that day ptayned. And after dyner therle ledde with hym all this cõpany in to the galarye / than he entred in to comunyng with them and sayd. Fayre lordes and frendes / it shall greue me to se your departynge out of my countre / nat for that I am displeased with your auaunces & honours / for in all cases I wolde gladly augment and exalte your honours & profyte: But I haue great pytie of you / for ye are the chefe flour of chiualry of my countre of Bierne. and ye thus to go in to a straunge countre / I wolde cõsayle you yet agayne to leaue this voyage / and to let the kynge of Castell and the kynge of Portyngale make their warre betwene theym selfe / for ye are nat bounde none otherwyse. Sir q they / sauynge your displeasure / we can nat do thus. And sir / ye knowe moze than ye spoke of. We haue taken wages and gyftes of the kyng of Castell / wherfore we must nedes deserue it. Well quod therle ye speke well / but I shall shewe you what shall come of this voyage: Outher ye shall retourne so poore and so naked that lyse shall fraȳgle you / or els ye shalbe all slayne or taken. The knightes began to laughe and sayd. Sir we must abyde the aduenture. Than therle fell in other talkyng and lefte that in rest / and that than he shewed them in maner of communycasion / all the nature of the Spanyardes / howe they be sluttysshe and lousy / and enuyous of other mennes welthe. Wherfore quod he / I reed you take good counsayle / and than he demaunded for wyne and spyce / and he made euery mã drinke: and than toke euery man by the hande and badde them farewell / and departed fro thẽ and went in to his chambre. And at the sote of the castell the knightes mounted on their horses and so rode to Sanctere / and they lodged that night. And the nexte day they departed and entred in to the lande of Basclers & toke the waye to Pampylone / and they passed surely / for they payed truely for all that they tooke. And in the same season whyle the kyng laye in Lirbone / & had layen there the space of a yere: Than they of the towne of sayut yzayne rebelled agaynst ỹ kyng of Castell / and closed their gates & sayde. that nother French nor spayntsshe shulde entre in to their towne / bycause of the domage that they had done to them / and oppressyons. And some sayd / it was in the faute of Geffray Ryeous company and sir Darteney / who had a cõpany of bretons / who toke euer that they might gette / for they set nothyng by peace. Than the cytezins toke the two castelles & sayd / how they wolde kepe them and their towne agaynst all psons that wolde do thẽ any hurte. and the same day that they rebelled / they slewe mo than three score bretons / and had nere slayne sir Geffray Dartenay / but that he saued hym selfe vnder ỹ walles of the towne ỹ were nere his lodgynge. Than the frenchmen & bretons that were there fiersly assauted them of sayut yzayne / but they lost moze than they wonne / and so dyd nothynge. These tidynges came in to the hoost to the kyng of Castell / howe that they of sayut yzayn were tourned portyngalois / & howe they were in mynde to delyuer the towne and castelles to the kyng of Portyngale. Of whiche newes the kynge was nat content / and called to hym his marshall sir Raynolde Lymosin and sayd. take a hundred or two hundred speares & go to sayt yzayne / and knowe why the men of the towne do rebell / and what occasion they haue to do as they haue done. So the marshall rode forthe & with hym a two hundred speares and came to sayut yzayne: & he sent before hym an haraulde to shewe them of his comyng / & howe he wolde speke with them at the barryers / and so he dyde his message: and it was answered hym by thẽ of the towne / sayeng. Sir haralde / we knowe right well / Sir Raynolde Lymosin is a gentylman and a valyant knight / and is marshall with the kyng / he may right well come hyder if it please hym vnarmed in to the towne / or els nat. This was all the message that the haralde brought to his mayster. Than sir Raynolde sayd / I am nat come hyder to do thẽ any domage / but to knowe theyr ententes. It is all one to me to entre armed or vnarmed / to knowe their wylles. And so he and sire with hym rode thyder vnarmed / and lefte all his cõpany behynde hym: and so he alyghted before the barryers / & when they within sawe him in that estate / they oppned the gates & receyued him in to the towne and made hym good chere / and than he assembled the people in the market place and sayde. Sirs / all ye that dwell in this towne take hede what I saye. I am sente hyder by the kynge of Castell to demaunde of you / for what entẽcion ye do rebell & close your gates / and haue slayne of them that be come hyder to serue the kynge. Knowe for trouthe / the kyng is sore displeased

with you/ and also he is enfourmed/ howe that ye haue taken in possessyon the two castelles of this towne/ whiche partayneth to his enherytaunce/ and howe that ye wyll delyuer them to his aduersary the kyng of Portyngale. Than they answered and sayd: Sir Raynolde/ sauynge the kynges grace we are nat so disposed nor to rendre them to any mannes handes/ but to our kynge. The kynge of Castell of whome we holde them/ so that he gouerne vs in peace & iustice/ and ꝑ we do or haue done/ was in ꝑ faut of these robbers and pyllers the bretons/ who were lodged in this towne/ for yf we had bern sarazyns or worse people/ we coulde nat haue ben worse dalte withall than we were. as in rauyshinge of our wyues and doughters/ brakynge vp our coffers/ and brekynge out of the heedes of our bessells of wyne/ beatynge and meamynge of vs/ whan we speke any worde to them. Therfore it can nat be maruayled (whan we sawe these outrages done to vs and to ours by the that shulde defende vs) though we were displeased. Men wyll be displeased for lesse cause. Sir/ ye maye shewe all this if it please you/ for we be of one accorde: that whosoeuer come/ we wyll receyue in to our towne nother frenche nor breton/ nor none but the kynges owne persone/ with suche as shall please hym/ so that we be nat trauayled nor putte to byolence. Whanne sir Raynolde herde them saye so/ he was apeased: for it semed to hym/ that they dyd no wronge to putte out of their towne their enemyes/ & than he sayde. O ye good people/ I haue well herde you and well vnderstande you. ye shall abyde in peace/ and I wyll retourne to the kynge/ and shewe hym all that ye haue sayd/ and in good fayth I shall do for you as moche as in me is possyble to do. Sir we thanke you quod they/ and we trust in you that if the kyng haue any euell informacyon of vs/ ꝑ ye wyll be oure good meane. And than sir Raynolde tooke his leaue and departed and retourned to his compayny/ who abode for hym in the feldes. And so he rode tyll he came to the hoost before Lysbone and lyghted at his lodgynge/ and wente to the kynge and shewed hym all that he hadde harde and founde with the of ygayne. Whan the kyng knewe the trouthe he sayd: By my fayth they haue done wisely/ for no man can be sure of thes robbers.

And whan sir Geffray Richone and sir Geffray Partenay & their companyes/ sawe howe they coulde haue none other remedy of them of saynt ygayne/ and that the kynge of Castell dissymuled with them: They were sore displeased and sayd among them selfe. We haue well lefte the realme of Fraunce to come hyder/ to serue the kyng of spayne/ thus to be shamed & domaged by a sorte of villayns/ and we can haue no right. We trust shortly hyder wyll come a sorte of knightes of Gascone/ we wyll suffre tyll they come/ And than we wyll all agree togyder/ and reuenge our companyons that they haue slayne and cruell entreated. Tidynges came in to the hoost to the kyng and to his counsayle/ that the bretons sore manassed them of saynt ygayne/ and maketh their auaunte/ that the Gascoyns ones cõe/ howe they shulde derely paye for that is done. Wherfore the kyng was counsayled to departe fro the siege/ and to go & refresshe hym a season at saynt ygayns/ and to sette the mater in a good waye/ and so they to tary the comyng of the gascoyns/ of whome there were a foure hundred speares of good men of warre. Wherof they kynge was ioyfull/ and wolde nat that they shulde fynde the cõtre in trouble at their comynge. And also moche of his people desyred to refresshe theym/ for there they had layen longe/ and nothynge done. Than it was commaunded euery man to dislodge/ and to drawe towarde saynt ygayne. Than the spanyardes dyslodged and all other/ and so came in to the marchesse of saynt ygayne. Whan they of saint ygayne knewe howe the kynge of Castell was comyng towarde their towne/ They ordayned twelfe men/ the most notablest persons of their towne to mount on their horses/ & so they dyde/ and rode tyll they came where the kyng was to knowe his pleasure. And the kynge was alighted vnder the shadowe of Olyue trees/ to refresshe hym/ for the great heate that was than: And this was a two leages fro saynt ygayne. & there was sir Raynolde Lymosin marshall of the hoost/ who knewe of their comynge, and so he was presented by the kynge whan they came and kneled downe/ and said as followeth.

Howe the kyng of Castell lefte the siege of Lysbone: and howe they of saynt ygayne excused them selfe. Cap. xxxii.

RIght redouted prince and noble kynge of Castell/ we are come hyder to youre presens/ sende fro the poore cõpynaltie of youre poore towne & baylywike of saynt pryayne. To the it is gyuen to vnderstande/ howe ye be greatly with them displeased. And sir/ whether it be thus or shalbe right redouted sir/ the faute came nat by them/ but by reason of the iniuryes and oppressyons that the bretons hath done to the/ suche as were in their towne. Sir/ all their yuell dedes can nat come to knowledge. sir/ we blame nat the mayster/squiers/ nor knightes/ nor capitens/ but all onely them that hyde vs hurte. For sir/ these pyllers and robbers bretons/ haue doone with vs suche dedes/ that it were maruayle to thynke or to recorde it. Sir/ they helde a season in subiectyon/ the towne and countre about saynt pryayne/ so that we herde of theym many great complayntes. And sir/ in the dispyte of vs/ they wolde breake vp oure cofers/ and take all that we had: and vyolate our wyues & our doughters before our faces. And whan we spake any worde/ we were beten/ maymed/ or slayne: In this powerte we were a two monethes or more: wherfore right redouted & noble kynge/ we beseech your grace/ if we haue displeased you for this cause or for any other/ that it maye please you/ that we may haue true iustyce/ and lawfull informacyon/ and to mayntayne vs in our ryght/ as ye promysed and swore to vs/ to kepe vs in our lyberties/ the firste tyme we swore you kynge/ in the towne of saynt pryayne. sir/ ye shall do great almesse on vs. For sir/ whan ye be come hyder/ we truste in you and in your counsayle to be suche noblenesse/ that the towne of saynt pryayne shalbe opened agaynst your comynge. And that it may please yor grace/ your poore people there cryeng for mercy/ and complaynynge of their iniuryes and oppressyons done to them. That youre royall maieste and your noble counsayle/ wyll graunt them grace and remyssyon of that is paste/ and to remedy their wronges. The kyng stode styll a lytell: & sir Raynolde Lymosin kneled downe and sayd. Dere sir/ ye haue herde your people of saynt pryayns complayne/ the kynge what hath ben don to them: Wherfore may it plase you to answere them. Raynold quod the kyng/ we knowe well they had a iuste cause to do as they dyde. Go to them and bydde them ryse and go their wayes to saynt pryayne/ and make redy for my comynge for they we wyll lye this nyght: And also shewe the/ howe they shalbe well mayntayned in their right. Than sir Raynolde rose and went to the and sayd. Sirs aryse/ the kyng hath well conseyued your sayenge/ ye desyre but right and iustyce/ & that ye shall haue. Go your wayes and apparell as ye ought to do the towne of saynte pryayns agaynst the kynges comynge/ and do so that he may gyue you thake: your maters shall come well to passe/ by suche meanes as ye shall haue in your ayde. Sir quod they we thanke you: Than they toke their leaue of the kyng & retourned to their towne/ and shewed all that they had herde of the kyng/ & the auyse were that sir Raynolde Lymosin made them/ on the kynges behalfe/ wherof all they of the towne were gladde. Than they apparelled their towne richely agaynst the kyng's comynge/ and strawed the stretes with freshe grene herbes. So the kyng entred in the euenyng/ and lodged at the castell called the Lyon/ and his men in the towne as many as might/ and the moost parte in the feldes and in the villages therabout. Thus the kyng was well a moneth/ and so ỳ mater stode/ for if they had done more/ more had they lost.

¶ Of the marueylous batayle that was at Juberoth/ betwene the kynge of Castell and kyng Johñ of Portyngale. Cap. xxxiii.

WHyle the kynge of Castell was at saint pryayns/ there come to hym the gascons of Bierne with a fayre cõpany sir Raynolde Lymosin rode to receyue them and welcomed them ryght swetely/ as he that coulde right well do it/ and brought the to the kyng/ who had great ioye of their comynge/ and cõmaunded sir Raynolde Lymosin to se them well lodged at their ease/ and he dyde so that they were contented. Thus these busynesses ceased/ & the kyng laye styll at saynt pryayns and his people there about. The kynge of Castell hadde as than abrode lodged in the feldes and therabout/ a four thousande men of armes and .xxx. thousande of other. And on a daye he called the barones of Fraunce to counsayle to knowe their myndes/ howe he shulde mayn-

forthe his warre/ for he had layen at great coſt before Lirbone and had done nothynge. And ſurely if the gaſcoins had nat come and encoraged the kynge/ he had departed fro ſaynt pryays and gone outher to Bergus or into Galice/ for his people were ſore anoyed to lye ſo longe in the feldes. Whan the knyghtes of Fraunce and of Bierne were come before the kynge/ he ſayde. Fayre ſirs/ ye be all good men of warre/ wherefore I wolde haue your counſayle/ howe I may mayntayne my warre agaynſt the lyrdonoys and portyngalopes/ that haue kepte me here in the felde a yere/ and yet I haue done nothynge to them. I had thought to haue gotte them out of Lirbone to haue fought with them/ but they wolde in no wyſe iſſue out/ wherfore my people gyue me counſayle/ to gyue euery man leaue to departe to their owne houſes/ wherfore I pray you gyue me youre aduyſe. The knyghtes of Fraunce and of Byerne who were but newely come/ and deſyred armes/ and as than had nothynge done/ thynking to deſerue their wages that they had receyued/ anſwered and ſayde. Sir/ ye be a puyſſant man of landes/ and lyttell coſteth you the payne and trauayle of your people/ and ſpecially ſithe they be in their owne countrey. We wolde nat ſaye ſo moche yf they were in a ſtraunge countre clene without prouyſion/ but as nowe we ſaye/ they ought nat to gyue you any ſuche counſayle/ for they be here in as great eaſe/ as we ſe/ as though they were at home. Sir/ we ſaye to you nat in maner of a determynate counſayle/ for ye are wyſe ynough but we thynke by your highe prudence/ the beſt were to chuſe/ as yet to kepe the felde. ye maye well kepe it tyll the feeſt of ſaint Michaell/ and paraduenture by that tyme your enemyes wyll aſſemble togyder and drawe out in to the felde whan ye take leeſt hede therto/ and ſo thā with out fayle they ſhalbe fought withall. Sir/ we haue great deſyre to wyn ſōwhat/ for this iourney hath coſt vs moche/ and great payne & trauayle/ bothe to our ſelf and to our houſes/ or we came in to this coūtre. Therfore ſir/ it ſhall nat be the opinyon of our company thus to departe agayne. By my faithe quod the kyng/ ye ſpeke well and truely. In this warre & other/ I ſhall vſe fro henſ forthe after your counſayle: for the kyng my father & I alſo/ haue founde alwayes in youre countreys great trouthe and faythfulneſſe. And god haue mercy of ſir Bertram of Cleſquyes ſoule/ for he was a true knyght/ by whome in his tyme we had many recouerauncſes/ and good iourneys.

The wordes and counſayls that the kyng had of them of Fraunce and of Bierne/ were anone knowen among the lordes & knyghtes of Spaygne/ wherwith they were ſore diſpleaſed/ for two cauſes. One/ becauſe it ſemed to them/ that their kyng had more truſt and cōfydence in ſtraungers/ than in them who were his liege men/ and had crowned hym kyng. the ſeconde was/ in that they of Fraunce counſayled the kyng to kepe ſtyll his warre/ and they ſe kyng them ſelfe ſo werye of the warre: & ſo ſpake among them ſelfe in dyuers maners/ nat openly but priuely. They wolde ſaye the kyng coude make no warre but by the frenchmen/ and in lyke wiſe no more coude his father. ſo they had great enuy at the frenche men/ whiche well appered: For whan the frēche varlettes went out a forragyng/ if the ſpayniſſhe forreygners were ſtronger/ than they wolde take their forage fro them and beate them and mayme them/ ſo that complayntes came therof to the kynge/ and he blamed therfore his marſhall ſir Raynolde Lymoſyn/ and ſayde. Why haue ye nat prouyded for this matter? The marſhall excuſed hym and ſayde: As god might helpe hym/ he knewe nothynge therof/ and that he wolde prouyde a remedy fro thens forthe. Incontynent he eſtabliſſhed men of armes to kepe the feldes/ that the frenche forreygers rode at their ſurette/ and alſo he made a crye and a cōmaundement/ that euery man that had any vitaylle or prouiſion to ſell that they ſhulde bringe it to the felde before ſaid prayns/ and they ſhuld haue a price reaſonable for euery thyng. So than the ſtraungers had largely their parte/ for the kyng ordayned that they ſhulde be ſerued before all other/ wherof the ſpanyardes had great diſpyte.

So it was the ſame weke/ that the kyng of Caſtell departed fro the ſiege of Lirbone: thre great ſhyppes of men of warre and Engliſſhe archers aryued at Lirbone/ they were to the nōbre of fyue hundred one & other: And the thirde parte of them were of the cōpanyons aduenturers/ hauyng no wages of no man. ſome were of Calys/ of Chierburge/ of Breſt in Bretayne of Rochell in Poytou: They had herde of the warre bytwene Caſtell and Portyngale/ & they came to Burdeux and they aſſembled and ſayd. Let vs go at aduenture in to Portyngale we ſhall fynde them there that wyll receyue vs and ſette vs awarke. Sir Iohan Harpedan/

who as than was marshall of Burdeux/ counsayled the greatly therto/ for he wolde nat they shulde abyde in burdeloys/ for they might they haue done more hurte than good/ bycause they were companyons aduenturers/ and had nothyng to lese. Of them that arryued at Lisbon I can nat name all. There were thre squyers englysshe that were their capitayns: One was called Northbery/ and another Norbery/ and the thirde Huguelyn of Harcercll. And there were none of them passe the age of fyftie yere/ and good men of armes/ & well vsed in the feates of warre. Of the comyng of these Englysshe men they of Lisbone were right gladde/ and so was the kyng of Portyngale who wolde se the and so they went to the palays where the kyng was/ who made them great chere! And demaunded of them/ if the duke of Lancastre had sent them thyder. Sir quod Northbery/ it is a longe season sythe he had any knowledge of vs or we of hym. Sir/ we be men of dyuers sortes/ seke nge for aduentures/ here be some are come to serue you fro the towne of Calays. By my faythe quod the kynge/ you and they bothe are right hartely welcome/ your comyng bothe me great good and ioye/ and shortely I shall sette you a warke. We haue ben here inclosed a great season/ so that we be wery therof/ but nowe we wyll be at large in the felde/ as well as our enemyes hath ben. Sir quod they/ we desyre nothynge els: and sir/ we desyre you that shortely we maye se youre enemyes. The kynge made them a dyner in his palays at Lisbone/ and commaunded that they shulde all be lodged in the cyte at their ease/ and to be payed for their wages for thre monethes. Than the kyng set his clerkes awarke and made letters/ and sente thē ouer all his realme/ cōmaundynge euery man able to beare harneste to drawe to Lisbone.

All suche as these letters came vnto obeyed nat/ for many abode styll i their houses/ for thre partes of the Realme dissymuled with the kynge/ and with theym of Lisbone/ bycause they had crowned kynge/ a bastarde/ and spake great word! they agaynst hym: And bycause of the great trouble and vnquietnes that the kynge of Castell and his counsayle sawe in the realme of Portyngale/ made hym to auaunce hym selfe/ to the entent to haue conquered the countre: Sayenge/ howe all shulde be wonne with one dayes iourney of bataile! and that yf they of Lisbone might be ouerthrowen/ the residue of the countrey wolde nat be sorye of it/ but put out of the realme that mayster Denyse/ or elles slee hym/ and than it shulde be a lande of conquest for hym/ for his wyfe was ryght enheryteure. yet with a good wyll kynge Johan of Castell wolde haue lefte the warre/ but his people wolde nat suffre him for they euer gaue hym corage: Sayeng/ how his quarell and cause was iuste. And whan the kynge of Portyngale sawe that his commaundement was nat obserued/ and that moche of his people disobeyed to hym/ he was right pensyue and malencolyous: He called to hym suche as he trusted best of Lisbone/ and of the knyghtes of his house/ who dyde their payne to crowne hym/ and also they had serued kyng Ferant: As sir Johan Radygos and sir Johā Texedore: the lorde of Siegere/ and sir Gōme of Tabesson/ Imbrise Condricho and Peter his brother/ & Ouges of Nauaret a knyght of Castell/ who was tourned Portyngalovs/ for kynge Johan hadde chased hym out of his realme/ and the kynge of Portyngale hadde retayned hym and made hym a chiefe capitayne. At this counsayle the kyng shewed many thynges and sayde. Sirs/ ye that be here I knowe well ye be my frendes/ for ye haue made me kynge. Beholde nowe/ howe dyuers folkes of my realme excuseth them selfe/ so that I cannot gette them to the felde/ for yf they had as good wyll to fight with oure enemyes/ as I haue/ I wolde be right gladde therof/ but they be nat so dysposed: I se howe they refrayne and dyssymule the mater/ wherfore I haue nede of counsayle on this mater/ howe I maye order myselfe: and therfore I praye you lette me haue your aduise. Than sir Gōme of Tabesson a knight of Portyngale sayde. Sir/ I counsayle you for youre honoure/ that assoone as ye maye/ drawe your selfe and all youre people in to the felde/ and aduenture you and we also/ and we shall abyde you to dye in the quarell/ for ye be our kynge! And if there be any in Portyngale rebelles and disdaynfull to serue you. I saye and so sayethe dyuers of this towne/ that it is bycause ye haue nat issued oute to shewe youre face agaynst your enemyes. ye haue the grace as yet to be reputed a valyaunt man in armes: and they saye/ that nowe at nede yous valyantnesse faylethyou. This it is that hath set youre enemyes in pryde/ and hath cooled your subiectes/ For if they sawe in you dedes of valure & of prowes/ they wolde obey and dout you/ & so wolde do yo' enemyes. by my herd qd the kyng ye say well/ and so it is. wherfore sir I wyll in-

tentynent/that euery man make hym redy for we wyll ryde out shortely and loke on our enemyes/outher we wyll wyn all at this tyme or lese all. Sir quod the kynght/it shalbe done: for if the tourney be yours/and god sende you good fortune/ye shall be kynge of Portyngale for euer/and ye shall be prayse in all straunge realmes/where as the knowledge therof shall come. and to the partyte herytage of Portyngale ye can nat attayne/but by batayle. ye may take ensample of kyng don Henry your cosyn/father to kyng Johan that nowe is kyng of Castell/of Spaygne/of Tollet/of Galyce/of Corduane/and of Sybyle. He came to all these herytage/by batayle/otherwyse he had neuer had them. For ye knowe howe the puissaunce of the prince of Wales and of Acquitayne put kynge don Peter your cosyn in to possession of all these herytages and landes closed within Spayne/and afterwarde by a tourney of batayle that don Henry had at Nauntuell agaynst don Peter/who there loste all agayne/and don Henry put in possession as he was before/at whiche tourney he aduentured hymselfe and his/or els he had nat ben kyng they. In lykewyse sir ye must aduenture if ye thynke to lyue with honour. Sir quod the kynge ye saye true/I wyll haue none other counsayle but this/for this is profytable for vs.

Thus departed that counsayle/and than it was ordayned that within thre dayes/euery man shulde drawe in to the feldes and there to take some grounde to abyde their enemyes. Those thre dayes they kepte the gates so close of Lirbone/that nother man nor woman coude issue out/for they wolde nat that their enemyes shulde be preuy of their entensyon. And whan the Englysshmen that were there vnderstode that they shulde issue oute and drawe towardes sayne prayns to loke on their enemyes/they were ioyfull. Than euery man made hym redy/and the archers dressed redy their bowes and arowes and all other/in euery thynge that they neded. And on a thursdaye they departed out of Lirbone/and that day they lodged by a lytell ryuer syde a two leages fro Lirbone/with their faces towarde sayne prayns. And euery man sayde with good herte and wyll/that they wolde neuer retourne to Lirbone/tyll they had sene their enemyes: Sayeng/howe it was better for them that they shulde go and requyre batayle of their enemyes/rather than they shulde come on them. For they sawe/they had sene and herde dyuers ensamples of requyrers and nat requyrers: and euer of fyue/foure hath optayned/and in a maner all the victoryes that the englysshmen haue had in Fraūce/they were euer the requyrers. For naturally the herars for batayle are more strong at and courageous in assayinge/than the defendars be. Of this opynyon they were nere all/and some of the burgesses of Lirbone sayde. We were at Bruges in Flaūders whan the gauntoyse came before the towne/and requyred batayle agaynst the Erle of Flaunders/and all his puissaunce. And we knowe well that Philyppe Dartuell/Petre de Boyse/Johan Clyquettell/Fraūces Atreman and Peter le Wyttier/who as than were captayns of the gauntoyse. They brought oute of Gaunte no mo but seuyn thousande men/and yet they requyred batayle of their enemyes/and ouercame and discomfyted a.xi.thousande. This is true/and this was without any treason/but by clene fortune of batayle. This was done on a saturdaye a leage fro Bruges/as we herde reported the nexte day whan they had wonne the towne of Bruges. So thus they dyde putte in aduenture/outher to wynne or to lese: and thus must we do if we thynke to haue any good spede. Thus these Lirbonoyse that thursday spake one to another: and whan the kyng was enforemed of their wordes and of their great comfort he had great ioye.

And on the Friday in the mornynge/they sowned their trumpettes and made them redy/and toke the waye on the right hāde folowyng the ryuer and the playne countre/for their carryage that folowed them/and so rode that daye foure leages. That day tydynges cāe to the kynge of Castell where he laye at sayne prayns/that the Portyngalois and the Lirbonoyes were cōmyng towardes hym. These tydynges anone were spredde abrode in the hoost/wherof the Spaygniardes/Frenchemen/and gascoyns had great ioye/and sayde: Beholde yonder Lirbonoyes be baylant men/sithe they come to seke for batayle. Shortely let vs go in to the feldes/and lette vs close them among vs and we maye/to the entent that they retourne nat agayne. Thaise it was ordayned and publyshed in the hoost/that euery man the Saturdaye in the mornynge a foote and a horsebacke/shuld issue out of sayne prayns/and drawe towardes their ennemyes to fyght with them/euery man made hym redy and were ioyfull of

that tournay. And on the saturday in the mor-
nynge they sowned their trumpettes: And the
kynge herde masse in the castell and dyned/ and
than lepte on his horse/ & euery man with hym/
and so dyde we in to the felde/ in good aray of ba-
tayle. Sir Raynolde Limosin marshall of the
hoost formast/ and he sente forthe scurrers to ad-
vyse the dealynge of their ennemyes/ and to se
where they were/ and what nombre they were
of: and the frenchmen sente forthe two squyers
one a Burgonion and the other a Gascone. the
burgonyon was called Wylliam of Mōtigny/
and he was there with sir Johan of Rey: and
they of Gascoyne and Bierne sent forthe Ber-
trande of Barge/ and they were bothe the same
day made knightes. And with them rode forth
a Chatellayne of Castell a good man of armes
called Peter Ferant of Medyne. He was on a
marueylous light Genet. and whyle these thre
rode forthe to advyse their enemyes/ the resydue
of the hoost rode a softe pase/ and they were in
nombre two thousande spares knyghtes and
squiers/ Gascoyns/ Burgonyons/ Frenchmen
Picardes/ and Bretons: as well apoynted and
armed as any men might be/ and a twelue thou
sande spanyardes all a hoyl bache/ they had nat
ryden forthe a bowe shotte but they rode styll
On the other syde the kynge of Portyngale in
lyke wise had sent forthe thre scurrers to a vieu
tuitely the demeanyng of the spaniardes/ wher
of two of them were Englysshe squyers/ expert
men of armes/ one called Jaquyne Wartebery
and the other Philippe Warqueston/ and with
them Ferrant de la Grosse of Portingale. they
were all well horsed & rode forthe tyll they came
to a lytell hyll/ and there they might well se the
behauynge of the spanyardes. Than they re-
tourned to the kynge of Portyngale and to his
counsayle/ and they made relacyon of that they
had done/ and sayd. Sir/ we haue ben so farre
forwarde that we haue sene your ennemyes. sir/
surely they be a great nombre/ they are welle a
thyrtie thousāde horse. Therfore sir/ take your
aduyse. than the kyng demaunded if they rode
all in one batayle or nat. Sir quod they/ sure-
lye they be in two batayls. Than the kyng tur
ned hym towarde his people/ and sayd a loude
Sirs/ now aduyse you well/ for there nebeth
nowe no cowardnesse/ for we shall fight shorte
lye/ for our enemyes be comyng/ and hath gret
desyre to fynde vs. and so they shall/ for we can
nat flye nor retourne: We are issued out of Lis
bone a great nombre of people. Thynke sirs to
do well/ and lette vs selle our lyues dere. ye ha-
ue made me kyng. This daye shall I se/ yf the
crowne of Portyngale wyll abyde with me pe-
sably or nat. And sirs/ of one thyng be ye sure/
I shall nat flye/ but abyde the aduenture with
you: than they all answered/ with a good wyll
so be it/ and we shall all abyde with you. Than
the Englysshe capitayns were called forthe/ as
Northbery and Hartefell/ and other of the that
were moost expert in armes. The kynge de-
maunded of them what counsayle they wolde
gyue hym: howe to abyde the aduenture of the
batayle. for he sayd/ he knewe well they must ne
des fyght/ for his enemyes approched faste/ and
they be in nombre four agaynst one of vs. than
the Englysshmen sayd. Sir/ sithe we shall ha-
ue bataile/ and that they be greatter in nombre
than we be/ wherfore it is a harde ptie/ we can
nat cōquere/ without we take some aduantage
of some hedges or busshes. Lette vs take sythe
a grounde as we may fortify/ and that they shall
nat entre vpon vs so lightely/ as they shulde do
on the playne felde. Sirs quod the kynge/ ye
speke wysely/ and it shalbe as ye haue deuysed.

On this counsayle of the Englysshmen/ the
kyng rested and they toke aduyse what grounde
they might take: and nat farre of fro them was
the towne of Juberothe a great village. Thy-
der the Lirbonoyes had sent all their prouision
somers and caryages: For it was their enten-
sion that night to lodge there/ whether they had
batayle or no/ if they might scape with honour
And without the towne a quarter of a leage or
therabout/ there was a great abbey of monkes
whyder they of Juberothe and of other villa-
ges were wonte to come to here masse. And the
churche standeth a lytell oute of the waye in a
moore/ enuyroned about with great trees/ hed-
ges/ and busshes: it was a stronge place with a
lytell helpe. Than the Englysshmen were cal-
led to counsayle to the kynge/ for thoughe they
were but fewe/ yet the kynge wolde folowe mo
che their aduyse: Thane they sayde. Sir/ we
knowe hereby a place/ the mynster without Ju
beroth among the trees/ it standeth in a stron-
ge place/ with a lytell amendement and helpe.
and suche as knewe the countre sayd. sir/ it is
true. Than the kyng sayd/ let vs drawe thyder
and let vs order there our selfe/ as men of war
ought to do/ so that whan oure enemyes come/
let the nat fynde vs vnruyded. notwythstōdyng it was
done/ & so they came whey as the churche was.
Than whan the Englysshe men and sir Mon-
ges of Mauret/ and dyuers other baly āt men

of Portugale and of Lysbone/ had well aduy-
sed the place to lyde about: they sayd. This pla
ce is stronge ynough with a lytell helpe/ so that
we maye here abyde the aduenture. Than on
the syde nerre the felwes they cutte downe the
trees and layde them one ouer another/ to then-
tence that horsemen shulde nat come with full
course on them/ They lafte one waye open nat
very large/ and suche archers and crosbowes
as they had/ they sette them on euery syde of the
waye/ & their men of armes all a fote in a playn
ne within the way/ and the churche on their one
syde/ and ther was the kynges baners pight vp.
And whan they had thus ordered euery thynge
they were in great hope & sayd. That if it plea-
sed god they were well/ and in suche a place to
kepe longe/ and to make a good tourney. than
the kynge sayd. Fayre sirs/ this day euery man
do his parte and thynke nat to flye/ for that can
nat auayle vs. We are fayr of fro Lysbone/ and
also in the chase they is no recouerynge/ for thre
wyll flee and beate downe. xii. that be flyenge.
Therfore shewe this daye that ye be men of pro
wes/ and selle derely youre lyues/ and pmagyn
in your selfe/ howe the tourney shalbe ours/ as
it shalbe if god be pleased/ and than shall we be
moche honoured and spoken of in straūge coun
treis/ where as the tydynges shall come/ for al-
wayes the victours be exalted/ and they that be
discomfyted dispraysed. & sirs/ thynke howe ye
haue made me kynge/ wherfore ye ought to be
the more hardy & corageous. And of one thyng
be ye sure/ that as long as this axe endureth in
my hādes I shall fight/ and if it fayle or breke I
shall get another/ & shewe my selfe/ that I wyll
mentayne & defende the crowne of Portyngale
for my selfe/ and for the right that I haue by suc
cessyon of my brother/ the whiche I take on my
soule that myne enemyes trauayleth me wrong
fully/ and that the quarell is myne.

Than all suche as harde the kynge sayd/ sir
of your grace and mercy/ ye admoneste vs wyse
lye. And sir/ we shall helpe to ayde and mayn-
teyne that we haue gyuen you/ whiche is your
owne. Sir/ we shall all abyde with you here in
this same place/ and shall nat departe/ without
god departe vs. Sir/ make a crye to all youre
people/ for euery man hath nat herde you speke
cōmaundyng on payne of dethe no man to flye
And sir/ if there be any that are fayne harted to
abyde the bataple/ let them come forthe/ & gyue
the leaue to departe fro the other/ for one fayne
harte may dyscourage two dosyn of goode men
or elles stryke of their heedes in your presens/ to
gyue ensample to other. The kyng answered/
I wyll it be so. Than there were two knightes
ordayned to go and serche euery copany/ and
to demaunde if any were abasshed to abyde the
bataple. The messangers reported to the kyng
whan they retourned/ that they coude fynde no
man but that was redy to abyde the aduenture
of bataple. It is so moche the better quod the
kyng. Than the kyng caused all that wolde be
made knightes to come before hym/ & he wolde
gyue them the order of knighthod/ in the name
of god & of sayne George. and as I vnderstāde
they were made a thre score newe knightes/ wher
of the kyng had great ioye/ and dyd sette them
in the front of the bataple/ and sayd to the. sirs
the order of knighthode is as noble and highe/
as any herte can thynke. and there is no knight
that ought to be a cowarde nor shamefull/ but
ought to be fierse and hardy as a lyon/ whā his
helme is on his heed and seeth his enemyes. &
bycause I wolde ye shulde this day shewe pro-
wes/ whey it ought to be shewed: therfore I or
dayne you in the first front of the bataile. & sirs
do so that we maye haue honour and you also/
otherwyse youre spurres are but yuell set on. &
euery knight answered as his tourne fell/ as he
passed by the kynge. Sir/ with the pleasure of
god we shall so do/ to haue your grace and loue
Thus the portyng alois ordred them selfe/ and
fortifyed them beside the churche of Juberoth
in Portyngale. That daye there was no En-
glisshman that wolde be made knight/ yet they
were despysed of the kyng and other/ but they ex
cused them selfe for that day.

Of the spanyardes/ howe they or-dered them selfe and their bataple. Cap. xxxiii.

NOwe let vs retourne to the kynge don Johan of Castell/ and of the knyghtes and squyers of Fraūce and of Galcone/ who were they with him: And such as they had sent to aduyse their ene myes/ retourned agayne and sayd. Sir kyng/ and ye lordes and knightes here present/ we ha ue ryden so forwarde/ that we haue sene oure enemyes. And accordyng as we can iuge/ they be nat passe ten thousande men in all/ one and

other, and they be about the minster of Juberoth and there they be rested and set in order of batayle, and there they shalbe found. whosoeuer will seke for them Than the king called to him his counsayle, and specially the barons & knightes of Fraunce, and demaunded of them what was best to do. They answered and sayd. Syr we thinke it were best let them be foughte with all incontynent, we se nothing elles. For by that is reported they be afeaped and in great doubt. bycause they be so farre of fro any fortresse. Lyrbone is farre of a fyre leages, they can not come thither with their ease, but they shal be ouertaken by the waye, without they take the aduauntage of the night. Therfore syr we counsail sythe ye knowe where they be, order your battayles and go and fyght with them, whyle your people be of good will to do well.

Then the kyng demaunded of them of his own countre their opinions, as of syr Dangoryes Wendaut, syr Hygo Parlemente, Pier Goussart of Mountaisque, and Pier Ferrant of Valesque, and of the great master of Calcstrane. They answered the kyng & sayd. Sir, we haue well heard the knyghtes of Fraunce, howe they would haue you hotely to set on your enemyes. Syr, we will that ye knowe and they also, that or we can come to them it will be nyght, for ye se the sonne drawerth downeward, and as yet ye haue not ordred your batayles. Sir therfore we thinke it were good ye tarryed tyll the morning, and let vs drawe so nere them, and lay so good spyall in diuers places, that yf they would dislodge about midnyghte and depart, then lette vs also dislodge for they can not flye nor scape vs the countrey is so playne, & there is no place to hyde them by Lyrbone, which we can not get with our ease, syr thys counsayle we gyue you. Than the king stode still a lytel, and cast downe his loke to the earth, and after he tourned his regarde on the straungers.

Than the marshall sir Raynold Lymasin sayde to please the frechmen in the langage of spayne to the entent he myght the better be vnderstand of euery man, and so turned him to the spanyerdes. such as had geuen the kyng that counsayle sayeng and calling euery man by his name. Syrs howe can ye be more sage in battayles or more ryed in armes than these valyaunt knyghtes be that be here present? Howe can ye deuyse any thyng beyond them, that shoulde be of anye valure: for they haue done nothyng elis al theyr lyfe dayes, but trauayle fro realme to realme to fynd and to do dedes of armes. How can you or durst you deuyse any thing agaynst theyr wordes whyche are so noble and so bygge for to kepe the honour of the kyng and of hys realme, wherein ye haue greater part than they. For ye haue there your herytages and your bodies, and they haue nothing there but nowe all onely their bodyes which they will first and formost put in aduenture, and so they haue desyred of the kyng to haue the first batel. and the kyng hath graunted them. Than regard their great and noble courage when they wyl fyrst of all aduenture them selfe for you. It should seme that ye haue enuye at them, and that ye would that prosyte nor honour should come to them. whyche ye ought not to do, but to be all of one accorde and wyll. And also, by you and by your counsaile, the king hath ben here in the feldes, long at gret cost & charge for him and for all his, and layen at syege before Lirbone, and coulde neuer haue the aduenture of batayle tyl nowe with him that writeth hym selfe kynge of Portyngale, wherein he hath no ryght, for he is a bastard and not dispensed with al, and nowe he is in the feld, with suche frendes as he hath, which is no great nomber. And yf nowe by craft he should agayne withdrawe him selfe and not fought wythall, ye putte your selfe then in aduenture. that all the hole hoost should ryse on you, and slee you, or els that the kinge should repute you for traytoures, and stribe of your heades, and confisse al your landes. Therfore I se no better way for you than to be styll, and let them alone that hath sene more thē you in suche businesses, for ye neuer sawe that they haue done nor neuer shall. And than the kynge loked vp and by seming was gladde with those wordes, and the Spanyerdes were abashed, and feared they had done greater trespasse than they dyd, for though the marshall reproued thē and spake agaynst them, yet they had well spokē and truly counsayled the kyng, but what for vaiauntnesse and to please the straungers, who desired batel the marshal spake as he dyd.

The euery man was styll, & the kyng sayd I will in the name of god & S. James. that our enemyes be fought withall, and al such as will be made knyghtes to come forth before me. for I will geue thē thordre of knighthode in the honour of god and sayut George. Than there came forth many squiers of France and of Byerne, & there they were made knyghtes of the kinges hand, as syr Roger of Spaine Comūd sayd to sir Roger of the coūty of foix, syr

Bertrand of Barroge. syr Peter of Galebere, syr Peter of Valentine, syr Wyllyam of Quere syr Iogres of Sollenayze. syr Peter of Vaude syr William of Montigny, and of one a other, to the nübre of a hundred and.xl. and ther were certayne barons of Bierne that rayled vp there first theyr baners, and also diuers of Castel and also sir Johan of Rey. There might haue bene sene among these new knightes great noblenes and they mayntened them selfe so goodly, that it was pleasure to behold them, for they were a fayre batayl. Thā the lord of Loyngiache came before the king, and all other that were straungers, whatsoeuer nacion they were of, so they were no spanyardes, they were all named in the name of straungers. Thā they sayd to the king Sir we be come fro farre partes to serue you. Sir we require you, do vs that grace, to let vs haue the first batayle. I am content q̄ the kyng in the name of god and sayncte Iames, & sayncte George be in your ayde, thā the spanyerdes sayd one to an other softly, behold for goddes sake behold how our king putteth all his trust in these frenchmen. He hath no parfyte trust in none other, they shall haue the fyrst batayle, they praise vs not so much that they wil take vs with them they wil do their dede by them selfe, and then let vs do ours by our selfe, let vs let thē alone with theyr enterprise, they haue made their auaunte to discomfite the Portugaloys. Let it be so we are content, but it were good we demaunded of the kinge whether he wyll abyde with vs or els go with the frenchmen. So ther vpon they wer longe in murmuringe, whether they shoulde demaund it or els be styll, for they douted greatly the wordes of syr Raynolde Lymosin, howbeit all thinges considered they thought it none yuell to demaund him the question. Than syre of the most notablest of them went to the kyng, and inclined them selfe and sayd,

RIght noble king, we se and vnderstād well by apārt signes, that this day ye shal haue batayle with your enemies, god send grace it be to your honoure and victory, as we greatly desyre. Syr, we would knowe whether your pleasure lyeth to be among the frenchemen or els with vs, Fayre syrs, q̄ the kyng, though I haue graūted the first batayle to these knyghtes and squyers straungers, who are come farre of to serue me, and are valiaunt and expert men in warres yet for all that I renounce you not, for I wyll be and abyde among you, therfore syrs helpe to defende me. Of this aunswere the spanyerds had great ioy and were wel contented and sayde, syr so shall we do, and not to fayle to dye in the quarell, for syr, we haue swore to you, and so haue promised by ꝑ fayth of our bodyes when ye wer crowned. For sir, we loued so well the king your father, that we can not fayle you in ange wyse, that is our trust q̄ the king. So thus the kynge of Spayne abode amonge his owne men, who were well a twenty thousond horsemen, all couered in stele. Syr Raynolde Lymosin was in the first batayle, for it was his right so to be, because he was marshall.

THe same saturdaye was a fayre daye, & the sonne was tourned toward euensong. Thē the fyrste battayle came before Juberoth, where the king of Portugale and his men were redy to receyue them. Of these french knightes there were a two thousand speares as freshe & as well ordred men as could be deuised. And as soone as they sawe their ennemies, they ioyned together like men of warre, and approched in good order til they came within a bow shotte And at theyr first coming there was a hard encountre, for such as desyred to assayle to wynne grace and prayse entred into the strayt waye, where the Englishemen by their polycy had fortifyed them. And because thentre was so narow there was great preasse and great mischefe to ꝑ assaylauntes, for such englishe archers as were there shot so wholy togither, that their arowes pearced men a horse. and when the horses were full of arowes they fell one vpon another, than the englishemen of armes, the portugaloys, and Lyrbonoyes came on theym cryeng theyr cryes our lady of Portugale, with good speares and sharpe heades, wherwith they strake and hurte manye knightes and squyers, There was the lord of Lanache of Bierne beaten downe, and his baner won and he taken prysoner, and many of his men taken and slayne, also sir Johan of Rey, sir Geffray of Rychon, sir Geffray of Pateney, and all their companies that were entred within the strayte. There horses were so hurt with tharchers, that they fell on theyr maysters and ouer vpon another. There these frenchmen were in great daunger, for they could not helpe one another, for they had no roume to enlarge them selfe, nor to figot at theyr wyll. And when the portugaloys, sawe that mischiefe fell on the fyrst assayers they were gladde, and ran freshe

and coragyous to fyght as any men might be. There was the kynge of Portugale with his banners before hym/ mounted on a good horse/ trapped with the armes of Portugale/ and he had great hope to se þ mischefe fall on his enemyes: and to comforte his people he laughed & sayde right. Ha fayre good men/ forthe pour and fight with good wyll/ for if they be as we but these we neve nat to feare/ and if I have ever any thynge in batayle/ all these be myne. Thus the kyng of Portugale reconforted his people whofought valiantly/ and had enclosed in the straight all the first assayers/ of whome they were many slayne. True it was that this fyrst batayle whiche these knightes of Fraūce and of Bierne rode/ had thought to have ben quyckelyer ayded of the spayniardes than they were/ for if the kyng of Castyle and his company/ who were a twentie thousande men/ had come by another parte and assayled the portugalops/ it had ben sparyd the journey to have ben theirs/ but they dyde nothynge/ wherfore they were to blame and receyued domage. Also in dede the frenchmen sette on to soone/ but they dyde it to thentent to have won honoure/ and to mayntayne the wordes they had spoken before the kyng: and also as I was enformed/ the spayniardes wolde nat sette on so soone/ for they loued nat the frenchmen/ for they had sayd before: Lette them alone/ they shall finde right well to whō to speke/ these frenchmen ar great bantours and highe mynded/ & also our kyng hath no pfite trust but in thē/ and sith the kyng wolde they shulde have the honour of the iourney/ let vs suffre them to take it/ or els we shall have all at our entētes. Thus by these meanes the spayniardes rode styll in a great batayle/ and wolde nat go forwarde/ whiche was right displesant to the kyng/ but he coude nat amende it/ but the spayniardes sayd/ bycause they was none retourned fro the batayle. Sir/ surely these knightes of Fraūce have discomfyted your enemyes/ thonour of this iourney is theirs/ God gyue grace quod the kyng that it be so/ Let vs ryde than somwhat forwarde/ than they rode a crosbowe shotte forwarde and than agayne rested: It was a great beautie to se them/ they were so well mounted & armed/ and in the meane season the frenchmen fought/ and suche as had leyser to alight fought hardyly. Dyuers knightes and squyers of eyther partie byd many fayre feates of armes one vpon another/ & when their speares fayled/ they toke axes and gaue many great strokes on the helmes/ slepng and mayming eche other.

Who soever were in suche case of armes as the frenchmen and portugaloys were at Juberoth/ must abyde the aduenture as they lyde/ without they wolde flye awaye/ and in flyeng there is more payll than to abyde the batayle/ for in flyeng lightly are moost slayne/ & in batayle whan one seith he is ouermatched he yeldeth hym selfe prisoner: It can nat be sayd but that the knightes of Fraunce/ of Bretayne/ of Burgoyne/ and of Byerne/ but that right valiantly fought/ but at their fyrst encounter they were hardely handled/ and all that was by the counsayle of the Englyshmen to forsyghte their place. So at this fyrst batayle the portugaloys were stroger than their enemyes/ so they were all taken or slayne/ but fewe that were saued/ so that there were at that fyrste brunt a thousande knightes and squyers taken prisoners/ whereof the portugaloys were ioyfull/ and thought as that day to haue no more batayle/ & so made good chere to their prisoners/ and euery man sayd to their prisoners. Sirs be nat abasshed for ye are won by clene feate of armes/ we shall kepe you good company as we wolde ye shuld do/ if ye hadde vs in lyke case/ ye shall come to Lysbone and refresshe you there/ and shalbe at your ease/ and they thanked them whan they sawe none other bote. & so there some were put to their fynaunce incontynent/ and some wolde abyde their aduenture/ for they ymagined that the kynge of Spayne with his great armye wolde shortely come and delyuer them.

How we the frenche knightes & gascoyns suche as were taken prisoners at Juberoth by the portugaloys were slayne of their maysters & none escaped. Cap. xxxv.

THydynges came in to the felde to the kyng of Castyle and to his compayne/ who were approchynge to Juberoth by the that fledde/ who cam crying with great feare and sayd. Sir kyng auaunce your selfe/ for all they of þ bowarde are outher taken or slayne/ there is no remedy of their de-

lyuerannce/ without it be by your puyssaunce/ And whan the kyng of Castyle herde those tydyngs/ he was sore displeased/ for he had good cause/ for it touched hym nere. Than he comaūded to ryde on and sayd auaūce for the baners/ in the naūt of god and sayut George/ lette vs ryde to the rescue/ sithe our men haue nede ther of. Than the spanyerdes began to ryde a better pase cloose togyder in good ordre/ and by that tyme the sonne was nere downe/ thā some sayd it were best to abyde tyll the morowyng/ bycause it was so nere night/ they sayd they coude make but an esy iourney. The kynge wolde they shulde sette on incontynent/ and layde his reasons and sayd. What/ shall we leaue our enemyes in rest nowe they be wery/ to gyue them leyser to refresshe them selfe/ whosoeuer do gyue that counsayle loueth nat myne honoure. Than they rode forthe makyng great noyse & hunt/ with sowyng of trumpettes & tabours to abasshe ther with their enemyes. nowe shall I shewe you what the kyng of Portugale dyd and his company.

AS soone as they had discōfited the bowarde and taken their prisoners/ and that they sawe none other batayle comyng vpon their sight/ yet for all that they wolde put no trust in their fleet victorie. Therfore they sent fyue notable persons to go and auise we the cōtrey/ to se if they shulde haue any more to do: They that rode forthe came and sawe the kynge of Castelles great batayle comyng to them warde/ fast approchynge to Juberothe/ more than twentie thousande horsmen. Than they retourned as fast as they might/ and sayde all an highe to the people. Sirs aduyse you well for as yet we haue done nothyng. beholde yonder cometh the kyng of Castyle with his great batayle/ with mo than twentie thousande men there is none taryed behynde. Whā they herde those tydynges they toke shorte counsayle what the was of necessyte. Than incontynent they ordayned a pyteous dede/ for euery man was cōmaunded on payne of dethe to slee their prisoners without mercy/ noble/ gentyll/ ryche/ nor other/ none except. Than the lordes/ knightes/ and squyers that were prisoners were in a harde case/ for there was no prayer that auayled them fro the dethe/ and so they were slayne some in one place and some in another as they were spredde abrode vnarmed/ wenyng to haue ben saued/ but they were nat. To say trouth it was great pyte for euery man slewe his prisoner/ and he that dyd nat other men slewe the in their handes: And the portugaloys and the Englysshmen who had gyuen that counsayle/ sayd it was better to slee than to be slayne/ for if we kylle them nat/ whyle we be a fyghtynge they wyll escape and slee vs/ for they to no trust in a mānes enemy. thus was slayne by great mischiefe the lordes of Longnache/ sir Peter of Byerne/ the lorde of Lespies/ the lorde of Byerne/ the lorde of Boerdes/ sir Bertrande of Bergues/ the lorde of Mayayne/ sir Raymōde of Dousanche/ sir Johan of Fologe/ sir Mayuant of Sarreau/ sir Peter of Salybers/ sir Stephyn Valentyne/ sir Raymon Courale/ sir Peter Hansame/ and to the nombre of three hundred squyers of Byerne and of Fraunce/ sir Johan of Rue/ sir Geffray Richon/ sir Geffray Partenay/ and diuers other. Lo/ beholde the great cruell aduenture that felle that saturday/ for they slewe as many good prisoners as wolde well haue ben worthe one with another/ foure hundred thousande frankes.

Howe the kynge of Castell and all his great batayle were discōfyted by the kyng of Portugale/ before a village called Juberoth. Cap. cxxvi.

WHan the lysbonoise/ englysshe/ and Portugaloyse/ had despoyled the place and slayne all their prisoners/ me ner a one scaped without he were before conueyed to the village of Juberoth/ where as all their caryages were. Than they drewe all togyder with a feirse wyll/ on the same place where as they were first allayed/ & as than the sonne was goyng downe. Than the kyng of Castell in a puyssant array with his baners and penons displayed and mounted on their horses well couered/ came on crying Castell/ & began to entre in to ỳ place that was fortified/ and there they were receyued with speres and axes/ and at the first comyng the shotte of arowes greued sore their horses/ so that many ther by were slayne and ouerthrowen. And all that season the kyng of Castell nor his men knewe nat of the myschiefe that was fallen to the bowarde/ nat how they were all slayne/ but he beleued they had ben styll prisoners/ thynkynge to recouer them agayne/ as ye haue herde.

There was a harde batayle and a fyerce/ and many a man caste to the erthe/ the portugalois had no suche auauntage/ but and they had not fought valiantly they had ben loste and discomfyted: that saued them/ was their enemyes coude nat come on theym but by one narowe waye. There the kyng of Portyngale lyghted a fote and toke an axe in his handes and dyd maruey lous in armes/ and beate downe a three or foure with his owne handes/ so that he was feared/ that none durst aproche nere him. I shall shew some parte of the cõdycions of the spaniardes.

TRewe it is/ at their first lettyng on they are fierce and corageous/ and of great auauntage/ and hyghe myuded if they haue auauntage: They fight well a horsbache/ but as soone as they haue caste two or three dartes/ and gyuen a stroke with their swerde/ and se that their enemyes be nat discomfyted therwith/ than they feare and turne their horses and flye awaye to saue them selfe that best maye. And at this batayle of Juberoth they vsed the same playe/ for they foude their enemyes harde and strong/ and as freshe in the batayle as though they had done nothynge of all the daye before/ wherof they had marueyle/ and also that they harde no tidynges of the howarde/ nor where they were become. There the spayniardes that euenyng were in the harde fortune of batayle and perylous for them/ for as many as entred in to their strengthe/ were by valyantnesse and feates of armes all slayne. They toke no man to raunsom whatsoeuer he were noble or other. so the Lirbonoys had ordayned/ for they wolde nat be charged with prisoners: They were slayne of them of Castell suche as foloweth. Sir Dangonnes Mendzeche/ sir Diego Persement/ sir don Peter of Rosermont/ sir Mare of Merlaux/ the great maister of Calestrane his brother/ who was that daye made knight/ called sir Dygomor/ sir Peter Goussart of mõdesque/ don Peter Goussart of Monuyll/ don Johan Radigo of Rousell/ and a thirtye barronnes and knightes of Spaygne. At the batayle of Naberes/ where the prince of Wales discomfyted kyng don Henry of Castell/ there were nat slayne so many noblemen of Castell/ as there was at this batayle of Juberoth whi che was the yere of grace/ a thousande three hũdred fourscore and fyue/ on a saturday on oure ladye day in Auguste.

Whan the kyng of Castell vnderstode and sawe howe his menne were thus discomfyted/ and howe that his howarde was clene discomfyted without recouery/ and that sir Raynalt Lymosin was dede/ who was his marshall/ & sawe howe all his noble chyualry were lost/ as well of his owne realme as of Fraunce/ & elles where/ suche as were come thyder to serue him with their good wylles: He was than sore displeased and wyste nat what counsayle to take/ for he sawe his men began to flye on euery syde/ and he herde howesome sayd to hym/ sir degyse hens it is tyme/ the matter is in a herde case. ye can nat alone discomfyte your enemyes/ nor recouer your domages: your people flyeth all a bout/ euery man intendeth to saue hym selfe. Sir/ saue youre selfe and ye do wysely/ if fortune be this day agaynst you/ another tyme it shall be better. The kynge of Castyle beleued counsayle & than chaunged his horse & mounted on a freshe courser/ strong and light/ wheron no man had ryden before of all daye. Than the kyng strake the horse with his spurres/ and toumed his bache towarde his enemyes/ and toke the waye towarde saynt prayne/ whyder all suche as wolde saue them selfe fledde. The same tyme the kyng of Castell hadde a knight of his house who bare his basnet/ wherupon there was a cercle of golde and stones/ valued to twentie thousande frankes. It was ordayned or they went out of saynt prayne/ that this knight shulde beare it tyll they came to the busynesse/ and than to delyuer it to the kynge to weare on his heed/ but this knight dyd nat so/ For whan they came to the iopninge of the batayle the preasse was so great/ that this knyght coude nat cõe to the kynge/ nor also he was nat called for/ wherfore he aproched nat to ꝑ kyng. And whan he sawe howe his cõpany were discomfyted/ and that the portugaloys optayned the victorie/ and sawe howe euery man fledde on euery syde/ he feared than the lesyng of such a riche iowell/ and set than the basnet on his owne heed and so fledde/ but he toke nat ꝑ way to saynt prayne/ but toke another waye to the towne of Arpent. Thus some fledde this way and some that waye/ lyke people sore discomfyted and abasshed/ but the moost parte fledde to saynt prayne: and that euenynge thyder came the kyng sore abasshed.

AT this discomfyture of the spayniardes at Juberothe/ where the portugaloys and lirbonoys optayned the place/ they was a great slaughter of men/ and it had ben greter if they had folowed in the chase/ but thenglysh

men whan they sawe the spayngnardes tourne theyr backes/ they sayd to the kyng of Portugale and to his men. Sirs/ demaunde for your horses and folowe the chase/ and all they that be fledde shalbe outhertaken or slayne. Naye nat so quod the kynge/ it suffyceth that we haue done/ oure men be wery and sore trauayled and it is nere hawe nyght/ we shall nat knowe whyder to go. And thoughe they flye yet they be a great nombre/ and paraduenture they do it to drawe vs out of our strength/ and so to haue vs at their ease: Let vs this daye kepe them that be dede/ and to morowe take other counsayle. By my fayth sir quod Hartstell an Englysshman/ the dede bodyes are easy to be kept they shall neuer do vs any hurte/ nor we shall haue of them no profyte. We haue slayne many good prysoners/ and we be straungers and are come farre of to serue you/ therfore we wold de fayne wynne some what of these cattes that flye without wynges/ with their banners wauyng with the wynde. Fayre brother quod the kyng/ they that all coueteth all leseth: It is better we be sure/ sythe the honour of the victorye is ours/ & that god hath sende it vs rather than to putte our selfe in parell/ whan it nedeth nat: We thanke god we haue ynowe to make you all ryche. Thus in this case the busynesse rested.

Thus as I haue shewed you/ felle of the busynesse at Juberothe/ where as the kynge of Portugale optayned the victorye: & they were slayne a fyue hundred knightes and as many squyers/ whiche was great pytie and domage/ and about a fyue or seuyn thousande of other men/ god haue mercy on their soules. And all that nyght tyll on the sonday to the hour of prime/ the kyng of Portugale and his men remoued nat fro the place that they were in nor neuer vnarmed thē/ but eate a lytell and dranke euery man as they stode/ whiche was brought them fro the village of Juberothe. And on the sonday in the morowyng after the sonne rysinge the kynge caused twelfe knightes to mount on their horses/ and to ryde forthe to serche the feldes/ to se if there were any newe assemble. and whan they had rydden here and there/ they returned and shewed how they founde no body but dede men. Well quod the kyng of them we nede nat to doute. Than it was publyshed to departe thens and to go to the village of Juberothe/ there to abyde all that day and nyght tyll monday in the morowynge. So thus they departed and lefte the churche of Juberothe/ and went to the village and there lodged/ and tarryed out all that sonday and the nexte nyght: And on the monday in the morowyng they cōsayled to drawe towarde Lysbone/ Than they sowned trumpettes to dislodge/ and so in good order they departed and rode towarde Lysbone/ and the tuesday the kynge entred in to ỹ towne with moche people/ glorye/ and tryumphe/ and was receyued with processyon and so brought to his palays: And in ryding through the stretes the people and thyrsyen made feest and reuerence/ and cryed with bigge voice. Lyue the noble kyng of Portugale/ to whome god hath gyuen that grace to haue victorye of the puyssaunt kynge of Castyle/ and hath discomfyted his enemyes.

This iourney that the kyng of Portugale had of the kyng of Castyle/ he felle in to suche grace and loue of his countrey and realme of Portugale/ so that all suche as before the batayle dyd dissimule with hym/ than came all to hym to Lysbone to do to hym their homage: sayeng/ howe he was well worthy to lyue/ and howe that god loued hym/ in that he had discomfyted a more puissaūt kynge than he was hym selfe/ wherfore he was worthy to beare a crowne. Thus the kynge gatte the grace of his people/ and specially of all the commons of the realme. Nowe let vs a lytell speke of the kyng of Castyle/ who after he was thus discomfyted/ went to sayntyago weynge and lamentyng for his people/ and cursyng his harde fortune/ that so many noble mē of his owne countrey & of Fraunce were slayne in the felde.

The same tyme that he entred in to sayntyago/ yet he knewe nat the domage that he had/ but on the sonday he knewe it/ for he had sende his harauldt to serche out the dede bodyes. And he thought before/ that the moost parte of all suche as the harauldes fonde dede/ had bene but prysoners & saued a lyue/ but they were nat as it appered. than he was so sore displeased and sorye/ that no man coulde comforte hym. Whan he herde the reporte of the harauldes/ and knewe the certentie of them that were dede/ Than he sayd and swore/ that he shulde neuer haue ioye sythe so many noble men were dede in his quarell. And after the thirde daye that the kyng had taryed at sayntyago/ there came to him his knight with his baslenet/ who

was called sir Martyn Harni/ and deliuered the basenet to the kynge/ whiche was taken as ye haue herde before: And before there had ben herde wordes spoken of hym. Some said that falsely he was comen awaye fro the kynge and wolde neuer retourne agayne. Than the knight kneled downe before the kyng and excused hym selfe so largely/ that the kynge & his counsayle were well content with hym. Than a fyftene dayes after the kynge of Castyle retourned to Bergus in Spayne/ and gaue euery man leaue to depte. Than after there was meanes and treaties made betwene the kynge of Castyle and the kyng of Portugale: Than a truce was taken fro the fest of saynt Mychell to the first day of May/ bothe by lande and by see. And the deed bodyes slayne at Jubertothe/ were buryed in the churche of Juberoth and in mother churches there aboute: and the bones of dyuers caryed by their seruantes into their owne countreys.

Howe a spyrite called Orthone serued the lorde of Corasse a long tyme and brought hym euer tidynges fro all partes of the worlde. Cap. xxxvii.

IT is great maruayle to consyder one thynge/ the whiche was shewed me in therle of Foix house at Ortayse/ of hym that enformed me of the busynesse at Juberothe/ He shewed me one thyng that I haue oftentymes thought on sithe/ and shall do as longe as I lyue. As this squyer tolde me/ that of trouthe the nexte daye after the batayle was thus fought at Juberoth the erle of Foix knewe it/ wherof I had great maruayle: For the sayd sonday/ monday/ and tuesday/ there was very pensyfe/ and sadde of chere/ that no man coulde here a worde of hym. And all the same three dayes he wolde nat yssue out of his chambre/ nor speke to any man thoughe they were neuer so nere about hym. And on the Tuesday at night he called to hym his brother Arnault Guylham/ and sayde to hym with a softe voyce. Dere brother hath had to do wherof I am sorye/ for it is come of them by their bodyes/ as I sayd or they departed. Arnault Guylham who was a sage knyght/ and knewe right well his brothers condicions/ kepte styll and gaue none answere. And than therle who thought to declare his mynde more playnly (for long he had borne the trouble therof in his herte) spake agayne more brygher than he dyd before/ and sayd. By god sir Arnault it is as I saye/ and shortely ye shall here tydynges therof/ but the countrey of Berne this houre/ neuer lefte suche a losse at no iourney/ as they haue done now in Portugale. Dyuers knyghtes and squyers that were there present and herde hym say so/ stode styll and durst nat speke but remembred his wordes. And within a ten dayes after they knewe the trouthe therof by suche as had ben at the busynesse/ and there they shewed euery thyng as it was fortuned at Juberothe. Than therle renewed agayne his dolour and all the countrey were in sorowe/ for they had lefte their parentes/ brethern/ chyldren/ and frendes. Sayne Mary quod I to the squyer that shewed me this tale. Howe is it that therle of Foix coude knowe on one day/ what was done within a day or two before/ beynge so farre of. By my fayth sir quod he as it appered well/ he knewe it. Than he is a deuyner quod I/ or els he hathe messangers that flyeth with the wynde/ or he muste nedes haue some craft. The squyer began to laughe and sayd. Surely he muste knowe it by some arte of Nigromansye/ or other wyse. To saye the trouthe we can nat tell howe it is/ but by oure ymaginations. Sir quod I/ suche ymagination as ye haue therin/ if it please you to shewe me I wolde be gladde therof: & if it be suche a thynge as ought to be secrete/ I shall nat publysshe it/ nor as long as I am in this countre I shall neuer speke worde therof. I praye you therof or the squyer/ for I wolde nat it shulde be knowen that I shulde speke therof/ But I shall shewe you as dyuers men speketh secretely/ when they be togyder as frendes. Than he drewe me a parte into a corner of the chapell at Ortayse/ and than began his tale and sayd.

IT is well a twentie yeres paste/ that there was in this countrey a barone/ called Raymon lorde of Corasse/ whiche is a fourth images fro this to one of Ortaise This lorde of Corasse had the same tyme a plee at Angmon before the pope/ for the dymes of his churche/ agaynst a clerke curate there: the whiche plee was of Carcassone. He was a

H.iii.

great clerke/ and claymed to haue ryght at the
dysmes in the towne of Cozalle/ whiche was
dalued to a thouzed florens by the yere/ and the
right that he had he shewed and proued it. And
by sentence diffynytyue/ pope Urbane the syxte
in consistozy generall/ condempned the knight
and gaue iugement with the pzest. and of this
last iugement he gate letters of the pope foz his
possession/ and or ony of he came in to Uterne/
and there shewed his letters & bulles of the po-
pes foz his possession of his dismes. The lozde
of Cozalle had great indignacion at this pzest
and cle to hym & said. mayster Pet oz mayster
Pasten/ as his name was: Thynkest thou that
by reason of thy letters/ that I wyll lese myne
heryptage? Nat so hardy thou take any thyn-
ge that is myne/ if thou do it shall coste the thy
lyfe/ Go thy waye in to some other place to get
the a benefyce/ foz of myne heryptage thou get-
test no parte/ and ones foz alwayes I defende
the. The clerke doubted the knight foz he was a
cruell man/ therfoze he durste nat answeruer.
Than he thought to retourne to Jupgnon as
he dyde/ but whan he departed he came to the
knight the lozde of Cozalle and sayd. Sir/ by
foze and nat by right/ ye take away fro me the
right of my churche/ wherin ye greatly hurte
your cōscience. I am nat so strong in this cōs-
trey as ye be. But sir/ I wolde foz trouthe/ that
as soone as I maye/ I shall sende to you suche
a champyon/ whome ye shall doute moze than
me. the knight who douted nothyng his thret-
nynges sayd: God be with the/ do what thou
mayst/ I doute no moze dethe than lyfe/ foz all
thy wozdes/ I wyll nat lese myne heryptage.
Thus the clerke departed fro the lozde of Co-
ralle/ and went I can nat tell whedet/ to Jup-
gnon oz into Catelopgne/ and forgate nat the
pzomyse that he had made to the lozde of Co-
ralle oz he departed. Foz afterwarde whan the
knyght thought lest on hym about a thze mo-
nethes after/ as the knyght laye on a nyght a
bedde in his castell of Cozalle with the ladye
his wyfe/ there came to hym messangers in bi-
syble/ and made a maruelous tempest & noise
in the castell/ that it semed/ as thoughe the ca-
stell shulde haue fallen downe/ and strake grete
strokes at his chambze doze/ that the good la-
dye his wyfe was sooze afrayde. The knyght
herde all but he spake no wozde therof/ bycause
he wolde shewe no abasshed cozage foz he was
hardy to abyde all aduentures. This noyse &
tempest was in sundzie places of ꝑ castell/ and
dured a longe spatz/ and at laste ceased foz that
nyght. Than the nexte mozynge/ all the ser-
uauntes of the house came to the lozde whan he
was ryzen and sayd. Sir/ haue you nat herde
this night that we haue done? The lozde dys-
symuled and sayd no/ I herde nothyng. What
haue you herde? Than they shewed him what
noyse they hadde herde/ and howe all the vessell
in the kechyn was ouertourned. Than the loz-
de began to laughe and sayde. yea sirs/ ye dze-
med/ it was nothynge but the wynde. In the
name of god quod the ladye/ I herde it well.
The nexte night there was as great noyse and
greatter/ and suche strokes gyuen at his cham
bze doze and wyndowes/ as all shulde haue bzo
ken in peces. The knyght starte up out of his
bedde/ and wolde nat lette to demaunde who
was at his chambze doze that tyme of ꝑ night:
and anone he was aunswered by a voyce that
sayde/ I am here. Quod the knyght/ who sent
the hyder? The clerke of Catelopgne sent me
hyder quod the voyce/ to whom thou dost gret
wzonge/ foz thou hast taken fro hym the ryght-
tes of his benefyce/ I wyll nat leaue the in rest
tyll thou haste made hym a good accompte/ so
that he be pleased. Quod the knyght/ what is
thy name/ that arte so good a messangere? Q
he I ame called Ozthone. Ozthone quod the
knyght/ the scrupee of a clerke is lytell pzofyte
foz the/ He wyll putte the to/ to moche payne if
thou belcue hym. I pray the leaue hym & come
and serue me/ & I shall gyue the good thanke.
Ozthone was redy to aunswere/ foz he was in
amours with the knyght and sayde. Woldest
thou sayne haue my scrupee? yea truely quod
the knyght/ so thou do no hurte to any persone
in this house. Nay moze I wyll do quod Oz-
thon foz I haue no power to do any other duell
but to awake the out of thy slepe oz some other
Well quod the knyght do as I tell the/ and we
shall soone agree/ and leaue the duell clerke foz
there is no good thyng in him/ but to put the to
payne/ therfoze cōe and serue me. Well Ozthon
and sythe thou wylte haue me we are agreed.

Of this spyryte Ozthone lued so the
knight/ that ofteutymes he wolde cōe
and vysite hym/ whyle he laye in his
bedde a slepe/ and outher pull hym by the eare
oz els stryke at his chambze doze oz wyndowe/
to awake hym. And whan the knyght awoke
than he wolde saye. Ozthon let me slepe. Nay
quod Ozthone that wyll I nat do/ tyll I haue
shewed the suche tidynges as are fallen a late.
The lady the knyghtes wyfe wolde be sozy a-

sayd that her here wolde stande vp/and hyde her selfe vnder the clothes. Than the knight wolde saye. Why/ what tydynges hast thou brought me/ Quod Othone/ I am come out of Englande or out of Hungery/ or some other place/ and perdaye I came thens/ and suche thynges are fallen or suche other. So thus the lorde of Cozalle knewe by Othon euery thynge that was done in any parte of the worlde. And in this case he contynued a fyue yere and coude nat kepe his owne counsayle/ but at laste discouered it to the erle of Foix/ I shall shewe you howe.

THe firste yere the lorde of Cozalle came on a daye to Orthayse to the erle of Foix/ and sayd to hym. Sir suche thynges are done in Englãde/ or in Scotlande/ or in Almaygne/ or in any other countrey. and euer the erle of Foix founde his sayeng true/ and had great marueyle howe he shulde knowe suche thynges so shortly. And on a tyme therle of Foix cramyned hym so straitly/ that the lorde of Cozalle shewed hym all togyder howe he knewe it/ and howe he came to hym firste. Whan the Erle of Foix herde that he was toyfull and sayd. Sire/ of Cozalle/ kepe hym well in your loue/ I wolde I had vi such messangers: He telleth you nothynge/ and ye knowe by hym euery thynge that is done in the worlde: The knight answered and sayd. Sir/ that is true. Thus the lorde of Cozalle was serued with Othon a long season/ I can nat saye if this Othone hadde any mo maysters or nat. But euery weke twyse or thryse he wolde come and vysite the lorde of Cozalle/ and wolde shewe hym suche tydynges of any thyng that was fallen fro whens he came. And euer the lorde of Cozalle whan he knewe any thynge/ he wrote therof euer to the Erle of Foix/ who had great ioy therof/ for he was the lorde of the worlde that moost desyred to here newes out of straunge places. And on a tyme the lorde of Cozalle was with the erle of Foix/ and the erle demaunded of hym and sayd. Sire of Cozalle/ vpon ye euer as yet se your messangere? Naye surely sir quod the knyght/ nor I neuer desyred it. That is marueyle quod the Erle/ if I were as well acquaynted with hym as ye be/ I wolde haue desyred to haue sene hi/ wherfore I praye you deuyse it of hym/ & than to tell me what forme and facyon he is of: Than ye herde you say howe he speketh as good gase come as outher you or I. Truely sir quod the knight so it is/ he speketh as well and as fayre as any of vs bothen. And surely sir/ sythe ye counsayle me I shall do my payne to se hym as I can. And so on a nyght as he lay in his bedde with the lady his wyfe/ who was so enamored to here Othon/ that she was no more afrayde of hym. Than came Othon and pulled the lorde by the eare/ who was fast a slepe/ and therwith he awoke and asked who was there. I am here quod Othon. Than he demaunded/ fro whens comest thou nowe? I come of Orthon fro Pyage in Bostine. Howe farre is that hens quod the knyght? I thynke dayes iourney quod Othone. and arte thou come thens so soone quod the knight? ye truely quod Othon. I came as fast as the wynde or faster. hast thou than wynges quod the knight? Nay truely sayd he. Howe canste thou than flye so faste quod the knyght? ye haue nothyng to do to knowe that quod Othone. No quod the knight/ I wolde gladly se the/ to knowe what forme thou arte of. Well sayd Othon/ ye haue nothyng to do to knowe/ it sufficeth you to here me/ & I to shewe you tydynges. In faythe sayd the knyght/ I wolde loue the moche better and I myght se the ones. Well sayd Othone. sir sythe ye haue so great desyre to se me/ the firste thynge that ye se to morowe whan ye ryse out of your bedde/ the same shalbe I. that is sufficient quod the lorde. Go thy way I gyue the leaue to departe for this nyght. And the nexte morynge the lorde rose/ and the lady his wyfe was so afrayd that she durst nat ryse/ but fayned her selfe sicke/ & sayd she wolde nat ryse. Her husbande wolde haue had her to haue rysen. sir quod she than I shall se Othone/ & I wolde nat se hym by my good wyll. Well sayd the knight I wolde gladly se hym. and so he arose fayre and easely out of his bedde/ & sat downe on his bedde syde/ wenyng to haue sene Othon in his owne ppre forme/ but he same nothyng wherby he myght saye/ Lo ponder is Othon/ So that daye passed and the nexte nyght came and whan the knyght was in his bedde Othon came and began to speke/ as he was accustomed. Go thy waye quod the knight/ thou arte but a lyer: Thou promysed that I shulde haue sene the/ and it was nat so. No quod he/ & I shewed my selfe to the. that is nat so sayd the lorde. why sayd Othon/ whan ye rose out of your bedde sawe you nothynge? Than the lorde studyed a lytell and aduysed hym selfe well. yes truely quod the knyght nowe I remembre me/ as I

facte on my bedes syde/ thynkynge on the/ I sawe two strawes on the pauement tumblyng one vpon another. That same was I & Ozthone/ in to that fourme I vyde put my self as than/ That is nat possyble to me quod the lorde. I praye the putte thy self in to some other fourme/ that I maye better se and knowe the. Well & Ozthon/ ye wyll do so moche ꝑ ye wyll lete me go. I gaue you/ for ye desyre to moche of me. Nay quod the knyght thou shalte nat go from me/ let me se the ones and I wyll desyre no more. Well quod Ozthone ye shall se me to morowe/ take hede/ the firste thynge that ye se after ye be out of your chambre it shalbe I. Well quod the knight I am than content/ go thy way lette me slepe. And so Ozthone departed/ and the nexte morynge the lorde arose and yssued out of his chambre and went to a wyndowe/ & loked downe in to the courte of the castell/ and caste about his eyen. And the firste thynge he sawe was a Sowe/ the greattest that euer he sawe/ and she semed to be so leane and yuell fauoured/ that there was nothyng on her but the skynne & the bones/ with long eares and a longe leane snout. The lorde of Cozalle had maruayle of that leane Sowe/ and was wery of ꝑ sight of her/ and cõmaunded his men to fetche his houndes/ and sayd. Lette the dogges hunt her to dethe/ and deuoure her. His seruauntes oppned the kenelles and lette out his houndes/ and dyde sette them on this sowe. And at the laste the sowe made a great crye/ and loked vp to the lorde of Cozalle as he loked out at a wyndowe/ and so sodaynely vanysshed awaye no man wyste howe. Than the lorde of Cozalle entred in to his chambre right pensyue: & than he remembred hym of Ozthon his messangere and sayd. I repent me that I sette my houdes on hym: It is an aduenture and euer I here a ny more of hym/ for he sayd to me often tymes that if I displeased hym I shulde lese hym. the lorde sayd trouthe/ for neuer after he came in to the castell of Cozalle/ and also the knight dyed the same yere next folowynge. Lo sir quod the squyer/ thus I haue shewed you the lyfe of Ozthone/ and howe a season he serued the lorde of Cozalle with newe thynges. It is true sir ꝙ I/ but nowe as to your firste purpose/ Is the erle of Foix serued with suche a messangere? Surely quod the squier it is the ymagination of many that he hath suche messages/ for they is nothynge done in any place/ but and he sette his mynde therto he wyll knowe it/ and whan men thynke lest therof. And so dyde he whan the good knyghtes and squyers of this countrey were slayne in Portugale at Iuberothe. Some sayche the knowledge of suche thynges hath done hym moche prosperte/ for and there be but the value of a Spone lost in his house/ a none he wyll knowe whey it is. So thus than I toke leaue of the squyer and went to other cõpany/ but I bare well awaye his tale. Now I wyll leaue to speke of the busynes of Portugale and of Spaygne/ and speke of the busynesse in Languedoche and in Fraunce.

Howe a siege was layde to Brest in Bretaygne/ and howe dyuers englysh be fortresses about the countre of Tholous were recouered and turned frenche. Cap. cxxviii.

IN the season whyle these aduentures thus felle in Castyle and in Nauerrochelle/ it was ordayned by sir Olyuer of Clysson constable of Fraunce/ to make a bastyde before the strong castell of Brest in Bretaygne/ whiche the Englysshmen held and had done longe/ & wolde nat departe nother for the frenche kyng nor for the duke of Bretayne/ to whom the castell shulde partayne. The duke of Berrey and the duke of Burgoyne/ and the frenche kynges counsayle/ hadde oftentymes written to the duke of Bretayne/ desyring hym to putte to his payne and dylygence to gette agayne his enheritaũce the castell of Brest/ for it was greatly to his prejudyce to suffre the Englysshmen to enioye it. And the duke/ what for the prayer of the sayde lordes/ and also bycause he wolde gladly haue had the possession of Brest in his owne hãdes. On a tyme he layd siege therto but nothyng he won there/ and so departed thens & sayd/ howe he coude do nothyng there/ wherat some knyghtes & squyers murmured and sayde/ howe the duke dyd but dissymule/ for suche as were there he tooke them nat for his frendes/ nor wolde nat/ for all the Peace that was made/ that the

castell of Bzest shulde be in the frenche kynges handes/ for yf the frenchman helde it/ he shulde nat be lorde therof/ yet he had rather it were in the Englysshe mens handes/ for the Englysshe men durst nat displease hym. wherfore all thynges cõsydred/ the constable of Fraũce thought that the castell of Bzest and the towne/ were nat mete to be enemy to the realme of Fraunce/ And thought it nat honorable for the duke nor for the knyghtes of Bzetaygne/ to suffre it as they dyde. Therfore he ordayned to laye siege therto/ with a great nombre of knyghtes and squyers of Bzetaygne: and he made chiefe capitaynes of them/ the lorde of Moleastropt/ the vycount of Barleere/ Morfane/ and the lorde of Roche Duraunt: These foure valyant men wente and layde siege as nere to Bzest as they myght/ and made a bastyde and closed it about with pales and stones/ and tooke fro Bzest all their issues/ except the See/ whiche was nat in their power to close fro them. And often tymes there were scrimysshes and feates of armes done before ỹ barryers/ for suche as were without/ desyrynge dedes of armes/ wolde cõe valyantly to the barryers/ and they within receyued theym as valyantly/ so that often there were dyuers hurt on bothe pties. There were but feme dayes but that some dedes of armes were done.

The same season there was in the marchesse of Tholousyn a valyant knyght of Fraũce/ called sir Gaultier Paschac/ a good capitayne of men of warre/ he was of the nacyon of Berrey/ on the frontiers of Lymosyn/ and for his company/ the seneschall of Tholous sir Roger of Spaygne/ and sir Hugh of Frodeuyll/ and the seneschall of Carcassone/ hadde written in to Fraunce to the Constable there/ of the state of the countre of Tholous and Rouergue/ and how that dyuers of the company/ons aduenturers/ suche as were yssued out of Lourde and of castell Cuyllet/ and had made warre for the Englysshmen/ helde in their handes the fortresses folowyng. As saynt Forget/ the Vallere/ the Meluylle Purputon/ Couall Rochefort/ Thedos Julyen/ Nauerret/ and dyuers other/ wherby they had so encombred the cytie of Tholous/ that the people coude nat pursue out to labour their vynes and landes/ nor go on marchandyse/ but in great parryll/ without they had truce/ or pacted with them. And of all these castels/ the chiefe capitayne was an expert man of warre of Bascque/ called Espaygoullet/ he dyd many marueylous dedes in armes. He tooke on a tyme by scalynge the castell of Armayle/ whyle the lorde therof/ sir Raymonde was gone to Tholous/ and he kepte it more than a yere. ¶ In the meane season whyle he kepte it/ he caused to be made a myne and a caue/ whiche went out of the castell into the feldes: And whan the caue was made/ he closed vp the entre with stones/ so that it coulde nat be parceyued that any waye was there vnder the perthe. And in the same meane season the lorde Raymonde of Armayle treated with Espayguoller/ to haue agayne his castell for money. Whan the caue was fynyshed/ he agreed with the lorde to delyuer vp the castell for two thousande frankes/ and he and all his to depte Than the lorde entred agayne in to his castell and repayred it where it was in defaulte. And a fyftene dayes after Espaiguoller with his cõpany in a night came to the wode where the yssue of the caue was/ and entred in to it. And so at the hour of mydnight they toke the castell/ & the lorde lyenge in his bedde/ and raunsomed hym agayne at two thousande frankes/ & than let hym go/ but Espayguoller kept styll the castell and a good garison/ whiche after sore traueyled the countrey with other of his alyaunce and company.

For these maner of people that robbed & pylled thus in the marches of Tholous/ of Rouergue/ and there about/ vnder the colour of the Englysshmen/ Therfore thyder was sente sir Gaultier of Paschac with a certayne nombre of men of armes/ to delyuer the countre fro their enemyes. And so he came to Tholous/ & sent for the knyghtes and squyers therabout/ and wrote to sir Roger of Spaygne seneschall of Carcassone who came to serue hym/ for sir Gaultier had a cõmyssyon generall ouer all the officers of Languedoche and so all suche as were sent for/ came with suche nombres as they might make. Sir Roger of Spayne came with a threscore speares and a hundred pauesses/ and the seneschall of Rouergue and sir Hugh Frodeuyll came with as many or mo. So whan they were all togyder/ they were a four. C. speares & a. M. pauesses. And also there was the sonne of therle of Terache with a fayre cõpany/ the lorde of barbason sir Benedic of Faguell/ & Willm Caudron breton & their cõpanyes: so one day they departed

fro Tholous and came before saynt Fozgette/ and there rested: & there was capitayne a man of Bierne a great robbert/ called the bourge of Caplache. Whan these lozdes and their compaynes were come before Fozget/ they incontynent went to the assaut/ and the genowayes began soze to shote/ so ꝑ scant they within durste apere at their defence/ but the frenchmen mysse of their purpose at this first assaute. & so there they lodged all night & toke their ease/ for they had ynoughe wherwith. In the morynge betymes they armed them throughe the host/ and sowned their trumpettes to the assaute/ and so they came in good ozze to the fote of the dyke/ he that had sene than (the men of armes entre in to the dykes with their targettes ouer their heedes/ and tasted the dyke with their speares and passed ouer to the fote of the wall) wolde haue taken great pleasure. Whan the first were passed ouer the dyke/ and had shewed the way to other: than other folowed with great wyll/ for it had ben great blame to them/ if they had than taryed behynde/ and their cõpany before. and suche as folowed them had matockes and pykes in their hãdes to pearse withall the walles/ and couered their heedes with targettes to receyue the stones that were caste downe/ whiche were no great plentie/ for the genowayes shotte so surely with their crosbowes/ that non durste put out their heedes to their defence/ for the genowayes crosbowes shotte so surely/ that lightly they mysse nat of their leuell/ so that they were many within soze hurte with their quarelles/ in so moche that they doughted soze the shotte. This saute was so soze contynued that the mynours ouerthrewe a pane of the walle: Than they within were soze abaysshed & wolde than haue yelded them their lyues saued/ but their enemyes had no luste therto/ for they felle in to so good handes that they were all slayne. for sir Galtier their capitayne cõmaunded that it shulde so be. so there were none taken to mercye/ but all slayne/ nat one that scaped. Thus these lozdes of Fraunce at their first comynge had the castell of Fozget/ and sir Gaultier deliuered it to the owner therof/ who soone it the same yere before for lacke of good kepyng/ as dyuers other castelles had bene before in Fraunce.

After the takyng of the castell of Fozget and that sir Gaultier had delyuered it to ꝑ owner/ the knight newe repayred it where as neede was/ for the frenche men had soze dystroyed it in ꝑ assaylyng therof or it were won. Than they went to the castell of Basse/ of whiche Ernalton of Batesoyle was capitayn/ and had greatly fortyfyed it/ for he thought the frenche men wolde bilyte hym/ as they dyde. And whan the frenche men came thyder they layde siege therto/ and than aduysed on whiche ꝑte they might best for their aduauntage gyue assaute/ and determyned on a place/ and so on a day they came to the saut on that parte as they thought moost feble. There the Genowayes crosbowes were ordayned to shote/ and the assauters behynde thẽ/ and they acquyted them selfe truely in doyng of their feate/ for they shot so rudely at them within/ that non durst shewe thẽselfe. Ernalton of Batesoyle was at ꝑ gate where there was a great assaute/ and there he dyde marueylous in armes/ so moche/ that his enemyes sayd among them selfe. Beholde yonder is a squyer of great herte/ on whome his harnesse is well enployed/ for he valyantly defended hym selfe. It were well done some body to shewe hym/ that it were best for hym to yelde vp the castell/ and to departe some where elles/ And to shewe hym that if sir Gaultier of Paschac wynne hym parforce/ they is no man can saue hym fro the dethe/ for he hath sworne as many as he wynneth parforce/ shall all dye or be hanged. Than the seneschall of Tholous cõmaunded a squyer of Gascoyne called Wyllyam Aspedell/ who knewe ryght well Ernalton/ for he had ben dyuers tymes with hym in armes as his companyon/ and he was gladde to go/ for he was lothe that Ernalton shulde haue had ony domage/ if he myght do hym any good: And so he came to the assaute and made token/ that he wolde speke with Ernalton for his great profyte/ and he answered he was content. Than the saut ceased on that syde but nat on the other parte: Than this Wyllyam sayd. Ernalton ye are happy/ for certayne of yonder lozdes haue sende me to you for they haue pyte on you/ for if ye be taken parforce there is no remedy but dethe: Oure souerayne captayne hath so ordayned/ that you nor none of yours shall scape dethe/ but to be sued as they were of saynt Fozget. therfore they & I also wolde counsayle you to yelde vp ꝑ fortresse/ rather than to abyde thaduenture: for of one thyng ye may be

lame/ we shall nat departe hens tyll ye be taken/ Than Ernalton sayd/ William/ I know it well thought at this tyme ye be agaynst me/ that ye wolde nat consyder more any thyng to my dishonour. Know ye for trouthe that if I rendre vp the holde/ it shalbe so that I and all myne may safely departe/ and carye with vs as moche as we maye/ and to be safely conducted to the castell of Lourde. On this condycion I wyll here ben to you or elles nat. Syr quod William/ I have nat so farre charge to commen with you/ but gladly I shall prye for you to my maysters And so he returned to the seneschall of Tholous and shewed hym all these wordes/ Than sir Hughe of Frodeuyll sayd. Lette vs go and speke with sir Gaultier/ for I can nat tell what he wyll do/ sithe I have gone so farr in the matter I wylle wete what he will do. Than they came to sir Gaultier who was styll at the saute/ and sir Hughe of Frodeuyll sayd. Syr Gaultier/ I have treated with the capytayne of the castell and he is well wyllynge to yelde vp the castell to vs as it is/ so that he all his maye go quite with all that they maye carye with them/ and to be safely conducted to the castell of Lourde. Therfore nowe sir loke what ye wyll do/ if we shulde lese one of our knightes or squyers/ on ther by shotte or cast of stones/ or by any perylous accident it shulde be greter domage than we can have any profyte by puttyng of them to dethe whan we have won them/ whiche is nat yet/ for or they be won it wyll coste vs some of our people. Sir that is true quod the seneschall of Carcassone/ suche assautes can nat be without some dethe and sore hurtyng.

TO those wordes sir Gaultier of paschac sayd. I am well cõtent/ ceasse the assaut we have more to do in other places. Thus by tell and hyell we shall wynne the castelles that these pyllers holde/ though they departe nowe with a good market. Paraduenture hereafter they maye fall agayne in our hãdes/ and than one tyme they shall paye for all/ euery puell debes come to an puell ende. In my dayes I have hanged and drowned of suche robbers fyue hundred/ and hereafter they shall come to the same ryche. Than they that went on this treatie/ came agayne to the barryers to Ernalton Bartholomew: Than Wyllyam sayd/ by my faythe Ernalton/ you and all yours maye thãke god and sir Hughe of Frodeuyll/ for he hath made your treatie as ye demaunde. ye may departe safely and all yours/ and beare awaye as moche ayen as ye came/ and ye shall be safely brought to Lourde. Well quod Ernalton I am content/ sythe it wyll none better. Know for trouthe Wyllyam/ I shall departe fro this forteresse sore agaynst my wyll/ for I have had great profyte therby/ sith I was taken at the brydge of Tarnay besyde Mahoyn/ by the Burge of Spaygne/ who had of me for my rauisone two thousande frankes. To saye trouthe/ I have well recouered my self here/ and ever have ben here in these frontiers whiche I love well/ for whan so euer I rode forthe/ ryghtely I founde some good aduenture/ outher by some marchaũt of Rouen of Tholous/ or of Rodes/ for the moste parte euer I gatte somwhat: Than Wyllyam sayd/ sir I beleue you well/ but and ye wyll become frenche I undertake ye shalbe clene pardoned/ and to have a thousande frãkes gyuen you/ and I wyll become your suretie that ye shalbe euer good frenche/ if ye wyll swere your selfe so to be. Syr Ernalton I thanke you/ but as for that I wyll nat/ for I wyll be still as yet Englysshe: as god helpe me I can nat fynde in my harte to be good frenche. Returne to your company and shewe them that this daye we wyll order our busynesse/ and to morowe in the mornyng we shall delyuer vp the castell/ and departe/ Wherfore se that your conducte be redy.

So than ceassed the saute and the frenchemen went to their lodgyng/ and so passed the nyght at their ease/ they hadde well wherwith. and in the mornyng whan euery man was redy in the hoost/ & that they were redy ỹ shulde conducte the cõpanyons to the castell of Lourde Than sir Hughe Frodeuyll seneschall of Tholous went to take possessyon of the castell: and whan he came to the castell/ he founde Ernalton of Bartholomew and his company redy to departe/ and had trussed all that they wolde carye Than a knight of Lourde called sir Monant of Salenges conueyed the safely whedet they wolde. Thus the castell of Basse was wonne/ and a squyer of the countrey had the keppyng therof gyuen hym/ and of the countrey/ who was called Bertram of Montesquyen. Than these frenchmen went forthe and came to the castell of Pulpuron/ wherof the lytell Mechyne was souerayne capitayn/ who had done great domage to the countre therabout/ wherfore sir Gaster of paschac ware by his fathers soule ỹ non they shuld be take to grey nor raũsome but all to be hanged if he might gette the/ & so there

he layd his siege. This castell stode on a roche a goodly castell to loke on/ and there sir Gaultier wolde nouse to departe thens tyll he hadde thens his pleasure/ they were many assautes but they wan but yerell/ for the castell was well defended. Well quod sir Gaultier/ I can nat tell howe it nyll be. The frenche kynge is tyche y-nough to kepe a siege there/ but as for me I wyll nat departe in one yere/ without I haue the castell at my pleasure/ & surely all were with hym beleued hym well/ and ordred them selfe ther-after. And I shall shewe you howe it forwed. When the capitayns within sawe surely howe the frenchmen wolde nat depte thens tyll they had the castell/ what forcuer it cost them: Than they bouted the/ and aduysed to departe thens whether the frenchmen wolde or nat/ which they might well do/ for they hadde a caue that went out of the castell vnder the grounde into a wode halfe a leage of: so whan Ingerot capitayne of the castell sawe the dealyng of the frenchmen/ and knewe howe they had promised nat to depte thens tyll they had the castell/ outher by famyne or otherwise/ than he bouted and sayd to his compayne. Sirs/ I se well sir Gaultier of Valchac hath vs greatly in hatered/ & I feare by longe siege he shulde famysshe vs/ & that to do he neuer nat/ but to make a bally de & let it be kept but with a hondred speares so ther nede of vs than dare depte: Therfore I shall shewe you what we shall do/ Lette vs take all that we haue and in the nyght we wyll departe by this caue vnder the erthe/ which is fayre and great and without faut it shall bring vs in to a wode a leage hens/ than shall we be out of all parell/ for there is no man in the holl that knoweth it. They all agreed to his counsayle/ & in a nyght whan they hadde all trussed than they tokē tor-ches and fagottes & entred in to the caue/ whi-che was fayre and clere/ and so they issued out therof in to a wode halfe a leage fro the castell/ Than they were prowe that kne we the wayes to other forterelles in Lymosin and in Bourr-gue/ and some of them whan they were oute of all parelles/ toke other wayes and sayd/ Howe they wolde folowe the warres no lengar/ Inge-rot and fyue with hym wente to a towne and a castell in Pergourt called Mountropall/ and the lorde therof receyued hym swetely/ for he & all his landes were good englyshe/ nor he wol be neuer towene frenche whan other by-

houbett there were dyuers other of his opynion.

Thus they of the garyson of Pluyaut sawed them self/ and left no persone be-hynde them/ and were were they as they wolde bewre the frenchmen knewe of their departyng/ The thirde day after their departyng the frē-chemen out apeced to gyue assaut/ and they had made an ingyn with four stages/ and in euery stage there might be vi. knyghtes reed to be-ye: And whan all was redy they set forthe this ingyn/ the whiche they named/ Malle on before to the weyhest syde of the castell/ and the gnoweys within the ingyn: & whan it was there as they wolde haue it/ there they shotte agaynst the ca-stell & no body dyde appere. Than anone they perceyued that the castell was boyde/ bycause no body came to their defence/ than they cralled their shot bicause they wolde nat lese their qua-relles. Than they came downe from the ingyn & came to ye capitayns who had marueyle what they ment/ and than they sayd. Sirs/ without fayle there is no body within the castell. Howe knowe you that quod sir Gaultier. Sir quod they we knowe it/ for there is none apperyth at their defence for all our shot. Than they were ordayned ladders to sette vp agaynst the wal-les/ and they that moūted on them passed ouer the walles and entred in to the castell/ & founde no creature therin: And than they wente to the gate and there they founde a great bundell of hayes/ and among other they founde the haye of the gate and oppned it/ and than all the bar-yers one after another/ whereof the lordes had great marueyle/ and spetially sir Gaultier of Valchac/ he wende they had ben depted out of the castell by enchauntment/ & than demaūded of them that were about hym howe it might be The seneschall of Tholous sayd to hym. Sir surely they can nat be thus gone without they haue some secrete waye vnder the erthe/ which I thynke there be. Thanne all the castell was sought in euery corner/ where any suche waye shulde be. There they founde in a Cellar the mouthe of the alley open/ and there all the lor-des dyde beholde it/ and sir Gaultier had great marueyle therof/ and demaunded of the Se-neschall of Tholous if he knewe before of any suche caue. sir quod he/ I haue herde of this ther-of/ but I thought nothyng that they wolde ha-ue thus departed by that waye. By my fayth quod sir Gaultier/ they begone the same waye Vyue the castelles of this countre suche ordy-nance/ Sir quod sir Hughe/ there be dyuers suche castelles as of olde tyme pertayned to Re-nalt of Montabon/ that hath suche ordynaūce/

for whan

for. whan he and his brethern kepte warre
agaynst kynge Charles of fraunce they
were made all after this maner by the coun-
saylers and aduyse of Raoul their cosyn / for
when ỳ kynge had besyeged them by puyssaunce
and that they sawe they coulde not resyst hym
ouerthey wolde vnparte without any lese ta-
kynge by meanes of thate passages vnder the
erthe. Surely sayd syr Bernard I awde gret-
le ỳ ordynaunce I can not say yt euer I shall
haue ony warre agaynst me ne not other by
kynge duke / or by ony other neyghboure that
I haue / but as sone as I am retourned in to
my countrey I shall cause suche a myne to be
made in my castell of Pelac. So thus they to
be possessyons of the castell and set therin men
of warre to kepe there a garyson / and so then
they went further towardes ỳ castell of Con
uall where Espaygnolet of paperreaw basque
was capytayne & with hym a good nombre of
these pyllers and robbers.

SO these lordes and theyr company ca-
me to the garyson of Conuall in Ro-
uergue and layde syege there / & then syr Gaul
tyer demaunded of the seneschall of Tholous
yf Conuall auncyently pertayned to raymonde
of Pomyrolian / & he sayd yes / then there is a
caue vnder the grounde sayd syr Gaultyer / syr
that is true sayd syr Bernard for by reason ther
of Espaygnolet wanne it the seconde tyme &
the owner within it / then syr Gaultyer sente
for ỳ knyght that was owner therof & sayd to
hym / syr it were good ye enfourmed vs of the
myne ỳ is out of this castell & the yssue therof
Then syr Raymonde of Conuall sayd / syr tru-
ely there is a way vnder the grounde for ther
by I was taken and lost this my castel / it was
before of longe tyme decayed & destroyed but
these robbers newe repayred it / and by ỳ way
they came on me / and syr the yssue therof is in
a wood not farre hence / wel sayd syr Gaultyer
all is well / and so .iiii. dayes after he wente to
the same wood & had with hym .C.C. men wel
armed / and when he sawe the hole where the
yssue was he caused the erthe and busshes to
be auoyded / and then he lyghted vp many fa-
gottes and sayd to them ỳ were ordeyned to
go in to the caue / syr I wolde this caue & it shal
brynge you in to the hall of Conuall and there
ye shal fynde a boye bothe it by ye are stronge
enough for to do and to fyght with them with
in / so they entred and came to ỳ greet nere to
the hall boye in ỳ castell / then with grete axes
they sloke at the doze & by ỳ tyme it was nere
nyght / they within the castell made good war
che & perceyued howe by the myne they wolde
haue entred in to the castell and Espaygnolet
was gone to his rest / then he came thyder /
and there they cast stones / benches / and tym-
bre before the caue doze to ỳ entente that none
sholde entre there thoughe the doze were bro-
ken vp. This was done for other fyrste had
they none of defence / but for all that they with
in the myne anone brake the doze all to peces /
and yet were neuer the nere / for then they had
more to do then they had before / and whē they
sawe it was impossible for them to entre there
they retourned agayne to the ooste / and by that
tyme it was myd nyght / the they shewed what
they had founde & howe they of Conuall had
perceyued them and had so forteyed the caue
doze that it was not possyble to entre by that
way in to the castell.

Howe the castelles of Conuall / of Bygoze and of Belnyll were taken and all they within taken slayne and hanged. Ca. xxxix.

THen syr Gaultyer of Pas-
chat sente to Basle for the
grete engyne whiche was
taken downe and brought
thyther & rayled vp on his
wheles as it sholde be / and
also they apparelled other
instrumentes for ỳ assawte / and when al was
redy then syr Gaultyer who greatly desyred to
wynne this castell caused his Trompettes to
sowne to the assawte / there was the seneschall
of Tholouse with his company on ỳ one syde
and syr Roger of spayne seneschal of Carcasso
on the other syde / also there was the lorde of
Barbaran / syr Benedic and lorde of Benoch /
the lorde of the countye of Desterac / syr Ray-
monde of Isle and other knyghtes and squy-
ers of the countrey / then they began the sawte
and they within to defende themselfe whiche
was nede for they sawe themselfe in a harde
parte / they knewe wel how syr Gaultyer wol
de take none to mercy / therfore they thought
to defende themselfe as longe as they myght &
to sell theyr lyues derely / there the Genetways
crosse bowes shot sore and hurte many with-
in so that there were none within but doubted
greetely / and there syr Gaultyer of Pasac dyd

merueyles in armes and sayd to his compa-
ny/ what syrs shall these rascalles holde vs in
hande all this daye thus / yf it were agaynste
good men of armes I wolde not merueyle/ for
in them were no feates of warre then in these
rascalles that be within. It is myne entent to
dyne within the castell. Nowe it shall be sene
yf ye wyll accomplysshe my desyre/ with those
wordes suche as desyred his good wyl aduau-
ced themselfe forthe/ they toke many ladders &
set them vp agaynst the wall where as the en-
gyne stode with the crosse bowes/ who shot so
eyerely that none within durst shewe themselfe
Thus by clene assawte ỳ Frenshe men entred
in to ỳ castel of Conual theyr swordes in theyr
handes chasynge theyr enemyes/ & there were
many slayne & the other taken / then euery mā
entred in at ỳ gates / then it was demaunded
of syr Gaultyer what shold be done with thē
that were taken. By sayntt George sayd he/ I
wyll they be all hanged / and incontynent his
commaundement was done/ and Espaygnoy
let began fyrst. So the lordes dyned in the ca-
stel/ and the other people in the towne/ & there
they taryed all that day. And syr Gaultyer de-
lyuered agayne to ỳ lorde of Conuall his to-
ne & castell/ & then ordeyned to departe thens.

THus after the takynge of the castell of
Conuall as ye haue herde/ the Frenshe
men wente to another holde called Mastuil
whiche had done grete domage to ỳ countrey
with other/ & there they made assawte / & they
within defended themselfe/ but ỳ was not longe
for by clene assawte they were wonne and the
castell also / and all that was within slayne &
hanged vp. And when they of Carchfort and
of other castelles knewe howe syr Gaultyer
had wonne so many castelles/ and that he toke
none to mercy / but outher slayne or hanged/
they doubted moche for comynge to the same
ende/ wherfore they departed in ỳ nyght tyme
I can not tell whether they wente vnder the
grounde or aboue/ for betwene ỳ castell of Ro
chefort and the castell of Roye were caues vn-
der the erthe/ for auncyently they perteyned to
Raynolde of Mountalban. So the Frenshe-
men founde these castelles clene voyde when
they came thyder/ then they newely repeopled
it with men of warre & prouysyon. Then they
toke theyr way towarde Tholous to go in to
Bygorre/ for on ỳ frontyer of Tarbe there were
two castelles the one called Thedos Julyan/
and the other Nauaret whiche gretely trauay
led the countrey and ỳ good towne of Tarbe
and the lordes of the lyrde Dauchyn.

THen syr Gaultyer of Malac and the lor-
des of Fraunce and of Languedoc had
well refreshed theym in the Cyte of
Tholous then they departed & toke the wayes
in to Bygorre/ and so came before the castell of
le dos Julyā/ & there taryed & sayd they wolde
goo no further tyll they had wonne it/ thyder
came to syr Gaultyer of Malac ỳ Benet tul of
Nobelan perteynynge to the Erle of Foys for
syr Gaultyer had sente for hym to helpe to dry
ue out of the countrey the pyllers and robbers
who had renne as well in the countrey of Bi-
bellan as in other places. Also ỳ Erle of Foys
consented that he shold so do/ or elles he durst
not haue done so/ they were before dos Julyā
xv. dayes or they had it/ ỳ castell was stronge
and a good capytayne therin a squyer of Gas-
coyn called Bruer de Bysone. ¶ Howbeit
they at the last hadde it/ not by assawte/ but by
treaty / they within departed theyr lyues and
goodes saued. And also they were falsely con-
uayed to Lowrde by a squyre called Bertram
of Mountoyghen. And when these lordes of
Fraunce had dos Julyan then they toke ad-
uyse whether they myght kepe it styll or rase
it downe to the erthe / then it was counsayled
to bete it downe because of them of Lowrde
who were crafty and subtyll fearynge ỳ whē
they shold be gone that they wolde wynne it
agayne/ so it was better downe and as yet the
stones lye on a hepe & lykely neuer to be buyl-
ded agayne/ thus became of dos Julyan/ thē
they wente before Nauaret wherin there was
also companyons aduenturers who had kepte
it more then a yere / & when they knewe how
they of dos Julyā were departed in lyke wyse
vyde they and had a sauftconduyte & wente to
Lowrde whiche was theyr chefe refuge for they
knewe well no man wolde seke thē there with
out they wolde lese theyr payne for ỳ castell of
Lowrde was impossyble to be taken by force.

THen the Frenshe men had rased the
castel of dos Julyā/ then they wente
to Nauaret and founde it all voyde/
then it was ordeyned to be beten downe & so it
was / Wherof they of Tarbe were nothynge
mysconteut / for ỳ garyson had done thē grete
domage/ then they wente to the castell of Bau
chen in Bygorre standynge amonge the moun
taynes in the entre of Byerne. And there they

were a.xv. dayes and in that ſeaſon made dy-
uers aſſawtes and wanne the baſe courte and
al they⁹ hoyſes/but there was a ſtronge towze
on the roche ꝓ coulde not be wonne. And whē
the lo⁹des ſawe howe they loſt there but they⁹
payne/ꝛ ꝓ wyllyam Wozenton who kepte ꝓ
holde wolde not yelde it vp/no⁹ ſell it/no⁹ her-
ke to no treatye/thē they departed ꝛ retourned
to Tarbe/ꝛ then ſyr Sanityer of Dallac gaue
leue to all his men of warre to departe/ꝛ they
were payde of they⁹ wages/ or had ſuffycyent
ſygnement/ſo ꝓ they were pleaſed/ꝛ he wente
to Carcaſſon and theraboute/ and reſtedthēb
hym. And whyle he lay there/ tydynges came
to hym out of Fraunce and a cōmaundement
fro the kynge that he ſholde d⁹awe to the gary
ſon of Bōnteuyll Eamon on the marches of
Burdelois ꝛ Poyctou/ whiche garyſon was
kepte by a capytayne called Sayne Fop a gaſ
coyne. And it was ſayd in Fraunce ꝓ ſyr Johñ
Harpedan ſeneſchall of Burdeaus made a gre
te aſſemble of men of warre at Lyboꝛne to ray
ſe the baſtydes ꝓ they of Poictou ꝛ of Eamon
hadde layde befoꝛe Bounteuyll. To the kyn⁹
ges cōmaundement obeyed ſyr Sanityer as
it was reaſon and toke with hym a.xx. ſperes
and a.C. croſſe bowes Geneuoys/ and to de-
parted fro Carcaſſon/ꝛ paſſed by Rouergue/
Agen/and coſted Pierregourt and ſo came to
Bounteuyll and founde there the ſeneſchalles
of Rochel/of Poictou/of Pierregourt/and of
Agen and a grete nombꝛe of men of warre.
¶ In theſe cōmētes it maye be well mentyo-
ned of the noble royalme of Fraunce/ therin is
ſomany Cytees/townes/caſtelles/whiche be
without nombꝛe/and that as well in farre par
tyes therof/as in the harte of the royalme/ ye
ſhall fynde goynge from the cyte of Tholous
to the cyte of Burdeaus ſtondynge on the ry-
uere of Garon. Fyrſt Lauguraut/Rions/Col-
drac/Bangou/ſayne Macayre/ the caſtell of
Dozthe/Candoch/Cetonde/ Iacull myllant/
ſayne Baſyll/Marmande/Cōmont/Tannus
Lemmas/Dagenes/Mōtour/Iguillon/tho-
uars/pozte ſayne Mary/clermont/Agen/am-
byllart/caſtell ſacalyne/le bedo/ berdun/ and
bell mote/and then takynge the way by the ry
uere of Dozdone whiche falleth in to Garon/
ye ſhall fynde theſe caſtelles on the one ſyde ꝛ
on ꝓ other. Bzouech/ Frouſach/ laboꝛne/ ſayne
Miſion/ Chaſtellon/the mote/ ſayne Delant/
Mōtremell/ꝛ ſayne Fop/Bergerach/ Mont
quinazmons/and the caſtell of Bene. And theſe
caſtels ſowre were Engliſhe ꝛ ſome Frenſhe
ꝛ ſo contynewed all the warre ſeaſon/the Gaſ
coynes wolde haue had it none otherwyſe to
haue choſen/ fo⁹ m.xxx. yere they neuer made
othe no⁹ promyſe to ony man/ true it was of ꝓ
Gaſcoynes. Fyrſt by they⁹ meanes kynge Ed
warde had theſe poſſeſſyon of Gaſcoyne/ and
alſo the pzynce his ſone and after they put the
agayne fro it as it is dyrectly conteyned in this
hyſtoꝛy/ꝛ by the good wyl ꝛ aduyſe of kynge
Charles ſone to kynge Johñ/ he dzewe to his
loue by fayꝛe meanes ꝛ grete gyftes ꝓ greteſt
lo⁹des of all Gaſcoyne/ as ꝓ erle of Armynake
ꝛ the lo⁹de Dalbꝛet. The pzynce loſt them by
pzyde/ſo⁹ I Johan Froyſſaroe who wꝛote this
hyſtoꝛy the ſame ſeaſon that I was at Burde-
aus/ꝛ ꝓ the pzynce wente in to Spayne ꝓ En
gliſſhe nē were ſo pzowde ꝓ they ſet nothyng
by ony nacyon but by they⁹ owne/ fo⁹ the gen-
tylmen of Gaſcoyne ꝛ of Aequytayne ſuche as
loſt they⁹ goodes in ꝓ warre/ yet they coulde
gete no maner of offyce in they⁹ countrees/ fo⁹
the Engliſſhemen ſayd they were not wo⁹thy
no⁹ able to haue ony wherwith they were ſoꝛe
grudged in they⁹ myndes/ and when they my
ght they ſhewed it fo⁹ bycauſe of the hardnes
that ꝓ Erle of Armynache ꝛ the lo⁹de Dalbꝛet
founde in ꝓ pzince/ they forſoke hym ꝛ became
Frenſſhe/ꝛ ſo dyde dyuers other knyghtes ꝛ
ſquyers of Gaſcoyne/ kynge Phylyp of Fran
ce/ꝛ kynge Johñ his ſone had loſt thē by pzy-
de ꝛ hygh mynde/ in lyke wyſe ſo dyde ꝓ pzin
ce ꝛ kynge Charles wynne them by fayꝛnes/
by largeſs and humylyte/ fo⁹ to wolde Gaſcoy
nes be delte withall/ꝛ kynge Charles to the
entente that the loue of theſe lo⁹des ſholde the
longer contynewe/ he made a marryage bytwe
ne the ſyſter of the lady Iſabell of Burbon/ꝛ
the lo⁹de Dalbꝛet/ꝛ betwene them were fayꝛe
cyldꝛen/ꝛ fo⁹ this cauſe the loue endured the
longer/ꝛ on a tyme at Paris where as I was
I herde the lo⁹de Dalbꝛet ſpeke a wo⁹de/whi
che I well noted/ but I byleue he ſpake it but
in ſpo⁹te/ howbeit he ſpake it in grete ſadnes
to a knyght of Bꝛytayne who had ſerued hym
befoꝛe/ fo⁹ the knyght had demaunded hym of
ꝓ bulynes of his countrey/ꝛ howe he was con
tente to be frenſſhe/ he anſwered and ſayd/ I
thanke god I do metely well/ howbeit I had
moꝛe money/ꝛ my mē alſo/ whē we made ꝛ at
fo⁹ the kynge of Engloude then we haue now
fo⁹ when we rode fo⁹the at aduenture we fou-
de euer ſome tyche merchaunt other of Tho-
lous/ Condon/ or Bergerath lyghtely there
was no day but we gate euer ſome good pray

I.ii.

Then we were freshe & Joly / & nowe we be as deed / then the knyght began to laughe and sayd / truely this is a lyfe of Gascoynes / lyghtly they wolde euer haue other mēnes domage Therfore I that harde these wordes say as I thought ꝑ the lorde Walbret repented hym in ꝑ he was become frenshe as ꝑ lorde of Mulydent Gascoyne who was taken at the batayle of Auret / & ware in to the handes of the duke of Anjow ꝑ he wolde come to Parys / and become frenshe euer after / so he came to Paris & kynge Charles made hym good chere / but for all ꝑ euer the kynge dyd / ꝑ lorde of Mulydent departed agayne fro Parys without ony leue & wente in to his cōtrey & became agayne Englysshe / & brake all ꝑ promyses ꝑ he had made with the duke of Anjow. In lyke wyse so dyde the lorde of Coulen / the lorde of Duras / & the lorde of Languerant. Suche is the nacyon of Gascoyne they be not stable / for they loue yet the Englysshe men better then the frenshemē for their warre agaynst ꝑ frenshe men were more profytable for them then agaynst the Englysshe men / this is the pryncypall incydent ꝑ mooste inclyneth them therto.

¶ Howe the kynge of Cypres was slayne and murdred in his bedde by his owne broder by exhortacyon and corrupcyon of the infydelles / for the bountye & hardnes that was in hym Capitulum. xl.

IN this same season there came other tydynges to fraūce for thider came kyng Lyō of Armony / not w̄ no grete company / but as a man chased out of his royalme wher of he was kynge / by the turkes / & al his royalme was wonne / except one castell standynge on ꝑ see / called Courthe / whiche was kepte by the Genouoys / because that castell was the key / issue & entre by the see / to go to Alexandria / & in to the Sowdans londe for these Genouoys gothe a marchaundyse by the meanes of truage ꝑ they pay in to Rude / & in to Prester Johns londe / and in euery place they are welcome / by cause of ꝑ golde & syluer ꝑ they brought thyder / & for other merchaūdyse ꝑ they exchaunge in Alexandria / in Cayre / in Damas / & in other places amonge the Sarasyns / for in suche maner the worlde is gouerned / for ꝑ is not in one countrey as in another & therby euery thynge is knowen / & the Genouoys be thoo ꝑ furthest doth aduenture their merchaūdyse. They be lordes of ꝑ portes of ꝑ se aboue ꝑ Venysians / & more feared & doubted amonge the Sarasyns thē ony other people on the see / they be baye aunt men & of grete entrepryse. I Galy well furnysshed of ꝑ Genouoys dare well assayle .iiii. Galeys of the Sarasyns The turke & Tartarye holde do moche domage to crystendome yf the Genouoys were not / bycause they be renomed to be chefe lordes of the see / marchynge on infydelles / therfore they haue euer .l. Galeys & grete shyppes rynnynge on the see to defende the Iles / as ꝑ Ile of Cypres the Ile of Rodes / ꝑ Ile dosye & all the boundes of the see & Grece vnto Turkye / & they haue the towne & castell of Pere stondynge on the see before Constantyne le noble / whiche is kepte at their cost & charge / & .iii. or iiii. tymes euery yere it is refreshed with ꝑ / ꝑ is necessary / the Tartarye & Turkes haue dyuers tymes assayed to gete it / but they coud be neuer attayne therto / for they haue euer lost there more then they haue wonne / for ꝑ castell of Pere stondeth on a rocke / & there is but one entre / whiche the Genouoys gretely dyde fortefye. Also the Genouoys haue the towne & castell of Jason / whiche is rychi noble & a grete profyte to them & to other nere countres of crystendome / for yf Pere / Jason / Mytye / & Rodes were not with the ayde of the Genouoys / the infydelles wolde soone come to Gaiet / pesa & to Naples / to the porte of Ostyet / & to Rome but ꝑ sayd garysons / whiche alwayes be well prouyded for with men of warre & Genouoys with the shyppes & galeys are euer redy to defende them / wherfore the Turkes dare not aduenture on that partyes / but ꝑ they do is on ꝑ frontiers of Constantyne le noble / & towarde Hungery / yf the noble kynge of Cypres peter of Lesliegnen who was so noble & baye aunt a prynce & had conquerred ꝑ grete cyte of Alexandrie & Satalye yf he had lyued longer he wolde haue gyuen the Sowdan & Turkes so moche a do / that syth Godfrey of Bolayns dayes they had neuer so moche / & ꝑ ryght wel knewe the Turkes / & Tartarye / & infydelles / suche as knewe his prowes & hyghe dedes / & therfore to haue hym by stroyed they made marchaundyse with the kynges broder called Jaquet ꝑ he sholde slee the kynge his broder / & so he dyd for he slewe him in his bed / whiche was a foule dede for bloode / to slee so baye aunt a mā as was the kynge of Cypres / who intended and

pmagened nyght & day on none other thynge but how he myght wynne the holy londe/ & to haue it out of the handes of ꝑ infydelles/ & fyr Philyp of Mayzieres chaunceller to Peter of Lesygnen kynge of Cypres wrote on his tombe as it foloweth / the copy wherof is in ꝑ chappyte houle of the frere Celestynes in Paris. Peter of Lesygnen ꝑ.vi.kyng latyns of Jherusalē after Godfrey of Boloyne/ & kynge of Cypres/ who by his grete prowes & hyghe empryse toke by batayle at his coll thyse Cytees. Alexandrie in Egypte/ Triple in Surre Layas in Armony/ Sytalie in Turkye/ & dyuers other Cytees & castelles on ꝑ infydelles & exemped after the lawes of Jhesu Cryst (Anima eius requiescat in pace) ¶ And when the Genoys who loued hym gretely as it was reason/ when they knewe of his dethe they prepared.viii.Galyes & sente them in to Cypres & to be there perforce the cyte of Damagose & Jaquet within it/ & ouer came the best parte of ꝑ royalme/ & wolde haue destroyed the royalme but bycause there were stronge townes & fortresses to kepe frontier warre agaynst the turkes/ therfore they lefte them styll in the mennes handes of the countre/ except the cyte of Damagose/ whyche they kepte styll & fortefyed it/ but when they wanne it fyrste they had there grete tryches/ & so they ledde with them to Genes this Jaquet who had murdred his broder True it was this kyng of Cypres had a fayre sone whom they maryed & crowned kynge/ & put this Jaquet in to strayte prysone/ & wolde not put hym to dethe/ & kepte styll in theyr hādes Damagose/ I knowe not yf they kepe it as yet or no/ then within a season after ꝑ ponge kynge of Cypres dyed in his bed/ wherof ꝑ Genenoys were fore displeased/ but they could be not amende it/ so ꝑ lande was without ony heyre/ I can not tell who gouerneth it nowe/ but the same yere ꝑ I was in the cyte of Foys house/ it was shewed me by a knyght of Bierne the lorde of Ualenchyn / how the Genenoys had a grete parte of the lande/ & helde styl Damagose/ & how they of the countrey had crowned to theyr kynge / the sayd Jaquet for lacke of other heyre/ I can not tell by what meanes he came out of prysone & out of the handes of ꝑ Genenoys/ when the sayd kynge Lyon of Armony came fyrst in to Fraunce/ ꝑ kynge there & the lordes made hym good there / as it was reason/ for he was come thyder out of a farre countre/ & so by hym & his was knowen tydyngs of the royalme of Grece/ & of the Empyre of Constantyne le noble/ for he was tyrannyzed of the puyssaunce of ꝑ Turkes & of the Tartaries who had put hym out of his royalme/ he answered & sayd ꝑ the grete Tacō of Tartarie had alway made hym warre/ & it was he ꝑ had put hym out of his royalme/ thē he was demaūded of ꝑ Tacon of Tartarie were puyssaunt/ ye truely sayd he / for by his puyssaunce with the puyssaunce of the Sowdan he hath subdued the emperour of Constantyne le noble kepte the lawes of the Tartaries. The kyng answered & sayd nay. But the Tacon of Tartarie & the sowdan haue longe made warre agaynst the Emperour of Constantyne le noble/ at the last he was fayne to make his ende or elles he coulde haue no peas/ whyche emperour of Cōstantyne le noble was sone to my lady Mary of Burbon/ & sone to the emperour Hugues of Iesusalē/ whyche emperour was fayne to giue his doughter in marryage to ꝑ sone of ꝑ Tacō of Tartarie. Howbeit the emperour abydeth styll in his cryste lawe/ & all is by reason of cōmyxtyon of this marryage. Thē it was demaūded of hym what ꝑ erle Counte of Sauoy dyd in ꝑ countrey seyng he was so valyaunt & mā & had so grete a puyssaunce/ then the kynge answered & sayd/ ꝑ when the erle of Sauoy was in ꝑ empyre of Hūgry & made warre agaynst the turkes & tartaryes/ there by his valyaunces he conquered on the Tartaryes/ & on the Sowdans lande two good townes/ as Caltpole/ & Loberne/ & lefte men there to kepe them & after the retourne of the erle of Sauoy / the townes were kepte styll cryste as longe as the good kynge of Cypres lyued/ but as soone as the Sowdan & the Tacon of Tartarie knew of his dethe/ they feared nothynge the Emperour of Constantyne le noble / but rayfed an armye of a.C.M. horsemen/ & so came & ranne before Cōstantyne le noble/ & fro thens they went & besyeged Caltpole/ & conquered it per force/ & slewe all the cryften men ꝑ were within it/ & had made so grete warre agaynst the Emperour of Cōstantyne le noble ꝑ all his puyssaūce coulde not resyst the / but they forbare hym by reason of his doughter whom the sone of ꝑ grete tacon coueted to haue in marryage/ whyche is a harde case for the tyme to come/ for the officers of the Tacon be as now in the cyte of Constantyne le noble/ so ꝑ the grekes there lyue vnder the/ & by truage/ & yf the kynges cryften put not therto a remedy/ or at lengthe the matter shall go so cuyll ꝑ the Turkes & Tartaries shall conquere all Grece/ & tourne it to

Then we were frensshe & Joly / & nowe we be as deed / then the knyght began to laughe and sayd / truely this is a lyfe of Gascoynes / lyghtly they wolde euer haue other mēnes domage Therfore I that harde theyr wordes sayd as I thought þ the lorde Dalbret repented hym in þ he was become frensshe as þ lorde of Pusydent Gascoyne who was taken at the batayle of Jnnet / & ware in to the handes of the duke of Jniow þ he wolde come to Parys / and become frensshe euer after / so he came to Paris & kynge Charles made hym good chere / but for all þ euer the kynge dyd / þ lorde of Pusydent departed agayne fro Parys without ony leue & wente in to his cōtrey & became agayne Englysshe / & brake all þ promyses þ he had made with the duke of Jniow. Jn lykewyse so dyde the lorde of Rousen / the lorde of Duras / & the lorde of Languerant. Suche is the nacyon of Gascoyne they be not stable / for they loue yet the Englysshe men better then the frensshemē for theyr warre agaynst þ frensshe men were more profytable for them then agaynst the Englysshe men / this is the pryncypall incydent þ moost mclyneth them therto.

Chowe the kynge of Cypres was slayne and murdred in his bedde by his owne broder by exhortacyon and corrupcyon of the infydelles / for the bountye & hardnes that was in hym Capitulum. xl.

In this same season there came other tydynges / to fraūce for thyder came kyng Lyō of Armony / not w̄ no grete company / but as a man chased out of his royalme wherof he was kynge / by the turkes / & al his royalme was wonne / except one castell standynge on þ see / called Courthe / whiche was kepte by the Genenoys / bycause that castell was the key / yssue & entre by the see / to go to Alexandria / & in to the Sowdans londe for these Genenoys gothe a marchaundyse by the meanes of truage þ they pay in to Rude / & in to Prester Johns londe / and in euery place they are welcome / bycause of þ golde & syluer þ they brought thyder / & for other merchaūdyse þ they exchaunge in Alexandria / in Cayre / in Damas / & in other places emonge the Sarasyns / for in suche maner the worlde is gouerned / for þ is not in one countrey is in another & therby euery thynge is knowen / & the Genenoys be those þ furthest doth aduenture theyr merchaūdyse. They be lordes of þ portes of þ se aboue þ Alexandrias / & more feared & doubted amonge the Sarasyns thē ony other people on the see / they be hardy auentrous men & of grete entrepryse. A Galy well furnysshed of þ Genenoys dare well assay .iiii. Galeys of the Sarasyns The turke & Tartaryes holde do moche domage to crystendome yf the Genenoys were not / bycause they be renomed to be chefe lordes of the see / marchynge on infydelles / therfore they haue euer .l. Galeys & grete shyppes rynnynge on the see to defende the Iles / as þ Ile of Cypres the Ile of Rodes / þ Ile dolfye & all the boundes of the see & Grece vnto Turkye / & they haue the towne & castel of Pere ouerynge on the see before Constantyne le noble / whiche is kepte at theyr cost & charge / .iii. or iiii. tymes euery yere it is refreshed with þ / þ is necessary / the Tartaryes & Turkes haue dyuers tymes assayed to gete it / but they coud de neuer attayne therto / for they haue euer lost there more then they haue wonne / for þ castell of Pere standeth on a roche / & there is but one entre / whiche the Genenoys gretely dyde forteye. Also the Genenoys haue the towne & castell of Jason / whiche is ryght noble & a grete profyte to them & to other nere countres of crystendome / for yf Pere / Jason / Smyrne / & Rodes were not with the ayde of the Genenoys / the infydelles wolde soone come to Gaiet / Pea & to Naples / to the porte of Ostyet / & to Rome but þ sayd garysons / whiche alwayes be well prouyded for with men of warre / & Genenoys with the shyppes & galeys are euer redy to defende them / wherfore the Turkes dare not aduenture on that partyes / but þ they do is on þ fronters of Constantyne le noble / & towarde Hungery / yf the noble kynge of Cypres Peter of Lesieguen who was so noble & valyant a prynce & had conquered þ grete cyte of Alexādrie & Satalye yf he had lyued longer he wolde haue gyuen the Sowdan & Turkes so moche a do / that syth Godfrey of Bolayns dayes they had neuer so moche / & þ ryght well knewe the Turkes / & Tartaryes / & infydelles / suche as knewe his prowes & hyghe dedes / & therfore to haue hym by treyson they made marchaundyse with the kynges broder called Jaquet þ he sholde slee the kynge his broder / & so he dyd for he slewe him in his bed / whiche was a foule dede for bloode / to slee so valyaunt a mā as was the kynge of Cypres / who intended

ymagened nyght & day on none other thynge but how he myght wynne the holy londe/ & to haue it out of the handes of ꝑ infydelles/ & fyr Philyp of Maryeres chaunceller to Peter of Lesygnen kynge of Cypres wrote on his tombe as it foloweth / the copy whereof is in ꝑ chapytre house of the frere Celestynes in Paris. Peter of Lesygnen ꝑ.vi.kyng latyne of Jherusalem after Godfrey of Bolayne/ & kynge of Cypres/ who by his grete prowes & hygh emprise toke by batayle at his coll these Cytees. Alexandryne in Egypte/ Triple in Surre Layas in Armony/ Sytalie in Turkye/ & dyuers other Cytees & castelles on ꝑ infydelles & enemyes of the lawe of Jhesu Crysti (Anima eius requiescat in pace) ¶ And when the Genoays who loued hym greetly as it was reason/ when they knewe of his dethe they prepared.vii. Galyes & sente them in to Cypres & to ke there perforce the cyte of Famagoste & Jaquet within it/ & ouer ranne the best parte of ꝑ royalme/ & wolde haue destroyed the royalme but bycause there were stronge townes & forteresses to kepe frontier warre agaynst the turkes/ therfore they lefte them styll in the meanes handes of the countre/ except the cyte of Famagoste/ whiche they kepte styll & forteyed it/ but when they wanne it fyrste they had there grete tyches/ & so they ledde with them to Genes this Jaquet who had murdred his broder True it was this kyng of Cypres had a fayre sone whom they maryed & crowned kynge/ & put this Jaquet in to streayte prysone/ & wolde not put hym to dethe/ & kepte styll in theyr hãdes Famagoste/ I knowe not yf they kepe it as yet or no/ then within a season after ꝑ yonge kynge of Cypres dyed in his bed/ wherof ꝑ Genenoys were sore displeased/ but they could be not amende it/ so ꝑ lande was without onyr heyre/ I can not tell who gouerneth it nowe/ but the same yere ꝑ I was in the erle of Foys house/ it was shewed me by a knyght of Bierne the lorde of Valenchyn / howe the Genenoys had a grete parte of the lande/ & helde styl Famagoste/ & how they of the countrey had crowned to theyr kynge / the sayd Jaquet for lacke of other heyre/ I can not tell by what meanes he came out of prysone & out of the handes of ꝑ Genenoys/ when the sayd kynge Lyon of Armony came fyrst in to Fraunce/ ꝑ kynge there & the lordes made hym good chere / as it was reason/ for he was come thyder out of a farre countre/ & so by hym & his was knowen tydyngs of the royalme of Grece/ & of the Empyre of Constantyne le noble/ for he was enuayned of the puyssaunce of ꝑ Turkes & of the Tartaries who had put hym out of his royalme/ he answered & sayd ꝑ the grete Tacó of Tartarie had alway made hym warre/ & it was he ꝑ had put hym out of his royalme/ & he was demaũded yf ꝑ Tacon of Tartarie were puyssaunt/ ye truely sayd he / for by his puyssaunce with the puyssaunce of the Sowdan he hath subdued the emperoure of Constantyne le noble kepte the lawes of the Tartarres. The kyng answered & sayd nay. But the Tacon of Tartarie & the sowdan haue longe made warre agaynst the Emperoure of Constantyne le noble/ as the last he was sayne to make his ende or elles he couldе haue no peas/ whiche emperour of Cõstantyne le noble was sone to my lady Mary of Burbon / & sone to the emperour Hugues of Iesygne/ whiche emperour was sayne to gyue his doughter in marryage to ꝑ sone of ꝑ Tacõ of Tartarie. Howbeit the emperour abydeth styll in his cristẽ lawe/ & all is by reason of cõuersyon of this maryage. Then it was demaũded of hym what ꝑ erle Couret of Sauoy dyd in ꝑ countrey seyng he was so valyaunt a mã & had so grete a puyssaunce/ then the kynge answered & sayd/ ꝑ when the erle of Sauoy was in ꝑ empyre of Hũgry & made warre agaynst the turkes & tartarres/ there by his valyauntnes he conquered on the Tartarres / & on the Sowdans lande two good townes/ as Calipole/ & Lobeine/ & lefte men there to kepe them & after the retourne of the erle of Sauoy / the townes were kepte styll cristẽ as longe as the good kynge of Cypres lyued/ but as soone as the Sowdan & the Tacon of Tartarie knewe of his dethe/ they feared nothynge the Emperour Constantyne le noble / but rayled an armye of a.C.M. horsemen/ & so came & ranne before Cõstantyne le noble/ & fro thens they wente & besyeged Calipole/ & conquered it per force/ & slewe all the cristen men ꝑ were within it / & had made so grete warre agaynst the Emperour of Cõstantyne le noble ꝑ all his puyssaũce couldе not relyst the / but they forbare hym by reason of his doughter whom the sone of ꝑ grete tacon coueted to haue in marryage/ whyche is a harde case for the tyme to come/ for the offycers of the Tacon be as now in the cyte of Constantyne le noble/ so ꝑ the grekes there lyue vnder the/ & by truage/ & yf the kynges cristen put not therto a remedy/ or at lengthe the matter shall go so cuyll ꝑ the Turkes & Tartaries shall conquerre all Grece / & tourne it to

they? byleue/ for so they make they? auauntes/ they do mocke the popes/ wherof one is at Rome/ & another at Auignyon. They say ꝑ the.ii. goddes of crystendome waereth eche agaynst other/ wherby they afferme our lawe to be the more feble/ & the lyghter to be dystroyed/ & condempned/ they lay therto reason in ꝑ they that sholde exalte the crysten fayth/ are ꝑ fyrst that mynysheth it/ & dystroy it/ then it was demaũded of the kynge of Armony whether that the Sowdan/ & the Tacon of tartarie were .ii. of the grettest pynces amonge the infydelles ꝑ were knowen with the Grekes/ the kynge answered & sayd/ nay surely/ they be not ꝑ grettest for alwayes the turkes are more noble/ more gretter/ more sage/ & more redoubted in warre as longe as they haue a good hed and gouernour/ as they haue had this .C. yere/ for thoughe ꝑ Tacon of Tartarie holde in subiectyon the Emperoure of Constantyne le noble/ yet ꝑ lorde of Turkey holdeth in lyke wyse ꝑ Tacon & this lorde of Turkey is called Lamorabaquin/ & to say the trouthe he is a baryaunt mã in armes/ & a wyse man in his lawe/ of Lamorabaquin I cõplayne me not/ for he neuer dyd me hurte/ for he hath alwayes kepte his warre agaynst the Emperoure of Hungery. Then ꝑ lordes of Fraunce demaunded of hym yf this Lamorabaquin were so grete/ & so feared as he sayd/ ye truely sayd the kynge of Armony/ and more then I speke of/ for the Emperour of Cõstantyne le noble/ & the Emperoure of Hũgery feareth hym/ in lyke wyse doth the Sowdan of Babylon/ & the Tacon of Tartarie/ & as I haue herde say of ꝑ Tartaryes/ ꝑ Tacon wolde or this tyme further haue put vnder ꝑ Emperoure of Constantyne le noble/ but for doubte of Lamorabaquin/ ꝑ Tacon knoweth hym & his nature so well/ for assone as he knoweth one gretter then hym self/ he wyll neuer haue ioy tyl he haue put hym vnder/ Wherfore the Tacon wyll not do to Cõstantyne le noble ꝑ he myght well do yf he wolde/ then he was demaunded yf this Lamorabaquin had ony grete power of men/ ꝑ kynge sayd/ ye surely/ for in .xxx. yere where soeuer he wente/ he had euer in his company a .C. M. horses alwayes lodged in ꝑ feldes/ and neuer entreth in to ony towne/ & for his garde he hath euer .xx. M. turkes/ & where so euer he goeth he hath his fader with hym/ & he hymself is of a .lx. yere of age/ & his fader .lxxx. x. x. & he loueth moche ꝑ frenshe language/ & suche as cometh thens/ he desyreth to se all the grete lordes of ꝑ worlde/ & ꝑ frenshe kynge & his estate & ordre/ & one speke to hym of Fraunce he is well content. Then ꝑ kynge was demaũded why ꝑ Lamorabaquin suffred ꝑ Tacon in peas seyth he was so grete an Emperour/ bycause sayd ꝑ kynge ꝑ the Tacon feareth hym & dare make hym no warre/ & also there be tertayne townes & pores in Tartarie ꝑ yerely payeth tribute to Lamorabaquin/ & also they are al of one lawe/ & they wyll not lyghtly dystroy they? owne lawe/ & he menysheth gretely of ꝑ warre amonge crysten me howe eche of them dystroyeth other/ wherfore he is often in myndе to come in to crystendome & to wyn all before hym I wolde he had wonne my lãde rather the ꝑ Tacon/ for it had ben better for me/ he was demaũded why/ & he answered & sayd. Lamorabaquin is a lorde of noble cõdycyon/ & yf he were .xxx. yere yonger he were lykely to make grete cõquestes where as he wolde employe his warre/ for when he hath wonne a countrey/ towne/ or sygnory/ he desyreth nothynge but truage/ & leueth styll euery man in his owne byleue/ & he putteth neuer no mã fro his herytage/ he dayreth nothynge but the souerayne domynacyon/ Wherfore I saye yf he had conquered ꝑ royalme of Armony/ as the Tartaries haue suffered me in peas/ & my royalme styll in our owne byleue by knowledgynge hym as my souerayne/ as other grete lordes do/ ꝑ marche nere hym/ as the Grekes & Tracyens who take hym for they? souerayne lorde/ wherby they are out of doubte of the souerayne of the Sowdan/ & of the Tacon of Tartarie/ the lorde of Natalie/ & the lorde de la Palice/ & the lorde of Hawite lodge/ these .iii. lordes & they? landes are in peas by reason of a truage ꝑ they pay to Lamorabaquin/ ther is no Turke nor Tartarien ꝑ dare do the ony wronge or domage/ then it was demaũded of ꝑ kynge of Armony yf this lande were so clerely lost that it myght not be recouered agayne/ truely sayd the kynge it is without recouery/ without the puyll aunce of crystendome come thyder stronger the the Turkes & Tartaries for as I haue sayd/ the further they come forwarde/ more they are lykely to cõquere/ for excepte one towne called Courth/ whiche is the fyrst towne of the royalme of Armony/ & is as yet in the crysten mennes handes/ al ꝑ residue of ꝑ royalme is in ꝑ infydels handes/ & where as ꝑ chyrches were wonte to be/ there they set vp they? ydolles & they? mawmettes/ then it was demaunded if the towne of Courth were stronge/ ye truely sayd ꝑ kynge/ it wyll not be

wonne without it be by lõge syege/or elles be trayed/for it standeth nere to the see in a dyre place betwene.ii.rockes/whiche cã not be approched/for yf ỳ Turkes or Tartaries had it in theyr hãdes/another good towne not ferre thens called Belgbe/all Grece were dystroyed/& Hungery shulde haue moche a do. Then it was demaunded yf Hungery marched nere to Tartarie & to the Turkes/the kynge sayd/ye truely & nerer to the Turkes & Lamorabaquin then to ony other/then the lordes sayd/it is grete mervayle ỳ Lamorabaquin suffereth hym to be in rest/syth he marcheth soo nere to Hungery/& he beynge so valyaunt a man & so grete a conqueroure. In the name of god sayd the kynge of Armony/for this tyme he hath studyed as moche as he myght how to haue done domage to the royalme of Hungery/& yf an incydent had not ben for this/he had ben farre in the countrey of Hungery/he was demaunded what incydent it was/& the kynge sayd I shall shewe you.

¶ Howe the kynge of Armony was examyned/& howe.xxx.M. Turkes were slayne & dystroyed in the royalme of Hungery.Ca. xlii.

When Lamorabaquin saw ỳ all ỳ lordes ỳ marched nere to hym feared & doubted hi what for his cõqueses & prowes/& how ỳ al the boũdes of ỳ see to hũgery obeyed to hym/also he saw wel how ỳ valyaunt kyng of Hungery Frederyche was deed/& how the royalme was fallen to a womã/wherfore he aduysed hym to conquere ỳ royalme/& so made a grete somons in Turkye/and suche as he sente for came to hym/& to thẽ this Lamorabaquin went forthe & lodged in ỳ playnes of Sa talis betwene Valice & Haulte lodge/ to gyue more feare to his enemyes/& his entencyõ was to entre in to ỳ royalme of Hũgery/& because ỳ Hungery is a royalme & coũtrey closed & enuyronned wt hygh rockes & moũtaynes/wher by it is ỳ stronger/thẽ he sente before hym his ambassadours & heraldes wt a mulet charged wt wylle/& he cõmaunded thẽ to go in to Hungery to ỳ erle of Lazaran whose lãdes lyeth betwene ỳ mountaynes of Belcabe & of Robee/ whiche way he purposed his army shulde pas & to shewe hym how he cõmaunded hym yf he thynke to lyue in rest/and to haue his lande in peas ỳ he obey to vs/in lyke wyse as the lorde of Valice & the lorde of Satalie/& the lorde of Haulte lodge hath done/& ỳ he open & gyue vs free passage thrughe his landes/& yf he say nay & be rebell agaynst vs/then shewe hym on our behalfe ỳ I shall bryngr as many men to dystroy his coũtrey as there be grayues of wylle in the sacke. The ambassadours departed wel instructed of ỳ they shulde do/& so rode by theyr iourneys tyll they came in to Hungery in to ỳ lande of the erle Lazaran/& sonde hym into a castell of his called Ardsayne/& the erle lyke a sage lorde receyued these ambassadours right swetely & made them good chere/but he had mervayle when he sawe entre in to his courte the mule charged with a sacke/& wyst not what it was/he thought it had ben golde or precyous stones ỳ Lamorabaquin had sente to hym/to drawe hym therby to contente to suffre hym to haue free passage thrugh his coũtrey/howbeit he sayd to hymselfe ỳ he wolde neuer be corrupted for no maner of ryches ỳ shulde be presented to hym. Thẽ these messagers came before the erle & sayd/syr of Lazaran vnderstãde/ we be sente fro the hyghe & redoubted lorde & soueraygne kynge Lamorabaquin lorde of Turkye wt the apertenaũces/& we say to you on his behalfe ỳ he cõmaũdeth you to come to his obeysaunce/in lyke maner as ye knowe ỳ your neyghbours haue done/as the lorde de la Valice ỳ lorde of Haulte lodge/& the lorde of Satalie haue done to hym homage/& ỳ ye open to hym the passages of your countrey/yf ye thynge to lyue in rest/& in your so doynge ye shall deserue gretely his grace & loue/& yf ye rebell and disobey we are charged to say to you ỳ our lorde Lamorabaquin wyl bryngr in to your coũtrey mo mẽ of armes then there be grayues of wylle in this sacke/& therwith they opened ỳ sacke & shewed hym what was in it/& when ỳ erle of Lazaran vnderstode ỳ ambassadoure of Lamorabaquin/& determyned in hymselfe to answere temporarly/& wolde not discouer his thought sodaynly but sayd/close vp ỳ sacke I se ryght wel what is therin/& I haue well harde what thynge Lamorabaquin demaundeth of me/& vnto these.iii.dayes I shall make you an ãswere/for his requeste demaũdeth coũsayl they answered & sayd/syr ye spyke wel/so trusting to haue answere they tarryed there.iii. dayes. Now shall I shewe you what ỳ erle of Lazaran dyd in ỳ space of these.iii.dayes/he sent & puyded in to ỳ castell no thens.ii.M.capõs & hẽes & closed thẽ vp in to a house wonyng maner of wyse/so ỳ in.iii.dayes they ete no thynge/And when the daye came that he

wyth we answere the ambassadours / the sent for them in to a galary lokynge downe in to a courte & sayd / Lyrs come hyther and leane here with me / & I shal shewe you a newe thynge / & so answere you / & they knewynge not what he wolde doo / leaned downe in a wyndowe by hym / then the gates were closed / & the courte was grete / so his men were redy to doo as he had ordeyned / then they opened a chambre doore ouer where as all the pollayne were / & had eten vp mete of .ii. dayes before. Then the ambassadours take the graynes / was in the sacke / & cast it all aboute before the capons & hennes / so / & within halfe an houre al the corne was eten vp clene / & wolde haue eten more yf they had had it / then the erle sayd to the messagers / Lyrs ye haue sene howe this grayne whiche you haue brought hyther from your maister is clene eten / & deuoured / and brought to no thynge by these pollayne / and yet they wolde ete more yf they had it / & is true Lyr sayd they / wherby shewe you / I say sayd the erle your answere lyeth therin / as by ensaple ye haue sene / Lamorabaquin sayth yf I obey hym not he wyl bynge in to my lande men of armes without nombre wherfore say vnto hym fro me / I wyl abyde it & he shall not bynge so many / but they shal be al deuoured as this corne is deuoured by this pollayne.

When the ambassadours harde this answere they were eyght pensyue / & so toke they leue & departed / & dyde so moche by they iourneys / they came to Lamorabaquin & shewed hym what the erle sayd sayinge by scornynge he set but lytell by his manassyng / & this answere Lamorabaquin was sore displeased / & sayd howe the matter sholde not fall so / but whether the erle wolde or not / he wolde entre in to his countre & in to Hungery & how he wolde dystroy the erles countrey by cause he answered hym so presumptuously.

¶ Nowe shall I shewe you what the erle dyd for he sawe well he was defyed of Lamorabaquin / & knewe wel he sholde shortly here other tydynges of hym / therfore he made prouysyon to defende hym / & wrote to al his gates & squyers / & to other to come to hym to stoppe the entre of Lamorabaquin in to Hungery / comaundynge euery man after the syght of his letters to drawe to hym / certefyenge them howe Lamorabaquin was as then in ye playnes of Haulte loge / all suche as the erle sente for obeyed wyllyngly / & so came to the erle to defende crysten dome / & dyuers came to hym ye were not sente for / suche as harde therof to ayde crysten fayth / & to dystroy ye mysbeleue. Also the erle Lazaran caused forestes & hygh trees to be hewe downe / and layde trauers one ouer another / wherby the Turkes sholde not fynde out any newe way / & then he with all his powers came to a certayne passage / where as Lamorabaquin sholde passe / to entre in to Hungery / the erle had with hym .x.M. men of Hungery & .x.M. crosse bowes / & dyd set them on bothe sides of the way. Also he had ordeyned .xx.M. men of the countre hauynge grete axes to cut downe the trees when he wolde haue them / & when all this was done / then he sayd to them ye were aboute hym / Lyrs without doubte Lamorabaquin wyl come / lyth he sente me worde he wolde be so / therfore Lyrs quyte yourselfe well & valyauntly to kepe & defende this passage / for yf ye Turkes wynne it al Hungery is in grete perill to be lost / we be here in a stronge place / one of vs is worth .xiiii. of them / & also we were better to dye with honoure in defendynge our heritages / & the fayth of Jesu cryst / than to lyue with shame & scornage vnder the dogges mysbeleue though Lamorabaquin be a noble wyse man in his lawe / Lyr sayd they we shall abyde ye aduenture with you / let the Turkes come when they wyll / we shall be redy to receyue them / of this ordenaunce & passage the Turkes knewe nothyng / for the erle of Lazaran for doubte of spyes had set men suche as he trusted as well as hym selfe to kepe ye passages / ye no man sholde go to the Turkes nother day nor nyght.

Lamorabaquin forgate not his entrepryse / but sayd how he wolde go dyspyte the lande of the erle of Lazaran / to his grete domage / for he wolde not be reputed for a lyer in ye he had promysed / so he toke .xx.M. of his men / & set ouer them .iiii. cappitaynes of his house holde / as the duke of Sandyon of Mesque / ye keper of Damiet / Alphatori of Damasce / & ye pryce of Cayre called Bachyn / & at they departynge he sayd to them / Lyrs go your ways vnto your copany / ye be sufficyent to open ye passages in to Hungery / & entre in to ye lande of ye erle of Lazaran / & dystroye it / & as soone as I may know ye be there I shal come thyder to you with all ye resydue of my people / for I wyl put all Hungery vnder my subiectyon / & after the royalme of Almayne / the enchauntours of my countrey & of Egypte sayd it is my destiny to be lorde and kynge of all the worlde / & the place that I wolde moost gladyest be is Rome / for auntyently it was of our enheritance / for

oure predecessours chaunced & gouerned it by
ours tymes/ & there I wyll be crowned/ & Ga-
lafee of Landas/the tacon of Tartarye/ & the
Sowdan of Babylone shal crowne me/ then
they who were before hym on theyr knees ans
swered & sayd/ syr we shall accomplysshe your
desyre & comaundement/ & so they departed vp
a.lx.M. Turkes/ amonge whom there were.
xx.M. of the moost expert men of warre and
best armed of all Turkye/ & they ledde the ba-
warde. So longe they iourneyed þ they came
in amonge the mountaynes of Lazaryn they
founde no let in the enterynge in to þ countrey
so þ bawarde entred and the duke of Betous
& the duke of Bannuet ledde them/ & so thys ba
warde passed the Erle of Lazaryns embusshe-
ment/ & when the erle & the Hungeryons sawe
theyr tyme they set theyr worke men & worke to
cut downe trees & to stoppe so þ wayes þ there
coulde no mo entre/ nor they that were comen
in to issue they were so closed in þ it was not
possyble for ony mā to go ony further/ so there
was thus enclosed a.xxx.M. turkes/ who we
re sharply assayled by the Hungaryons/ and sa
handeled on bothe sydes of the way that they
were there all slayne/ not one þ shaped/ & the
.ii. dukes also slayne/ some thought to haue sa-
ued themselfe in the woodes/ but they were so
chased þ they were all slayne/ then they of the
arreregarde tourned backe whē they saw they
coulde not entre for the trees þ stopped þ way
so they retourned to Lamoradaquin & shewed
hym the grete myschyef þ was falle on his
people/ wherof he was meruayllous sory and
displeased/ the he called his counsayle to know
what was best for hym to do/ for he had lost þ
floure of all his chyualry/ and so returned &
dyd no more at that tyme.

Then þ kynge of Armony had shewed
all this/ & his owne estate to the fren
the kynge/ & to the barons of France
& to his counsayle/ they had of hym grete ppte
and because he was come fro so ferre a coutre
as Grece to seke counsayle & ayde there/ & be-
cause he was a kynge & chased out of his cap-
alme/ and had as then no thynge to lyue on to
mayntayne his estate. ¶ The frenshe kynge
as yonge as he was sayd/ we wyl þ the kynge
of Armony who is come hyder to se vs in hope
to haue some comforte/ helpe & ayde of vs to he-
pe his estate as it apertayneth to hym/ who is
a kynge as wel as we be/ & whē he may wel haue
ayde hym wt men of warre/ & helpe to recouer
his enheritaūce wherin we haue good ryght/ for-
we are bounde to exalte þ crysten fayth. The
frenshe kynges wordes were well harde and
vnderstande/ as it was reason/ & there were
none þ sayd the contrary/ the kynges vncles &
counsayle were desyrous to accomplysshe his
entent/ so the kynge of Armony to mayntayne
his estate there was assygned to hym a certay
ne rente & reuenues out of the chambre of ac-
comptes/ & so was well & truely payde euery
moneth/ his assygnement was a.vi.M. frans
kes by the yere/ & he had delyuered hym at the
fyrst.v.M. frankes to prouide for his lodgyng
bedde & other thynges necessary/ & his lodgyn
ge apoynted at saynt Anthon beyde saynt Do
nyse there to kepe his house. Thus þ kynge
of Armony was reteyned by þ frenshe kyng
at his fyrst comynge/ & dayly he encreased/ &
not apayred/ & was sometyme with the frenshe
kynge/ and specyally at hyghe feestes.

¶ How we pope Urban & pope Clemēt
were at grete discorde togyder/ and
how we the crysten kynges were in va
ryaunce for theyr lectyons/ and of the
warres bytwene them. Ca. xlii.

The same season there came to Aus
gnyon to se the pope Clement/ syr
Othes of Bryenne to haue money
for þ warre he had made for hym
agaynst þ Romayns & Bertram
of Argies/ who wrote hymselfe pope Urban þ
vi. as it is conteyned in his hystory here before
& there syr Othes shewed diuers thynges to
the pope/ & to þ Cardynalles/ wherin he was
wel byleued & harde/ but as for money he coul
de gete none/ for þ popes chambre was so cle-
ne voyded fro golde & syluer/ þ þ Cardynals
coulde not haue þ money þ perteyned to theyr
states. So this syr Othes of Bryenne depar
ted fro thē not wel content. At Ayguyon the
re was delyuered hym a.M. frankes/ & he set
forth therby/ wherby pope Clementes warre
was sore werked/ for syr Othes wolde in no wy
se medle ony more in the popes warres. The
Margaret of Duras who was at Gayete/ &
was aduersary agaynst the quene of Naples
wyfe vnto kynge Lewes duke of Anion.
She sente for this syr Othes to ayde her in þ
warre þ she made agaynst the Napolytanes/
and this syr Othes a certayne space excused
hymselfe/ and dyssymuled and foded forth the
tyme as he that wyll not what to do/ then so-
me of his counsayle dyde put hym in mynde
to go to this Margaret of Duras who was

enbertoure to Naples & to Cycyle/ & to helpe
to ayde & to defende her heritage/ & to take her
to his wyfe/ for she was content to mary hym
bycause he was of a noble blood & of hygh de
tracyon/ & was lorde & kynge of the countrey
called Barre/ and some other of his counsayle
counsayled hym contrary/ sayng how he my
ght thereby come to an euyll ende/ for the chyl
dyst of kynge Lewes of naples who was crow
ned kynge in the Cyte of Bare thought they
were but ponge/ yet they had grete frendes &
kynsmen/ & specyally the yemit the kynge theyr
cosyns germayne who wyl ayde them/ & theyr
moder Johan duches of Anjow & of Mayne
al these doubtes some of his counsayle shewed
hym/ wherfore syr Otes forbare a longe sea
son & dyssymuled the mater and toke none of
bothe partyes. The same season ¶ sodayne
of pope Clement enclosed in ¶ Cyte of Perug
pope Urban/ & was besyeged by the lorde of
Coctcop a valyaunt knyght of the countye of
Genes & of Sauoy syr Tabart a knyght of
the Rodes/ and syr Bernarde de la sale. And
therfore pope Urban was fayn confrayned & on
¶ poynte to haue ben taken/ for as I was then
enformed for the some of xx. M. frankes a ca
pytayne almayne/ who had a grete company
with hym called the erle Courant wolde haue
delyuered pope Urban in to ¶ handes of pope
Clement/ wherupon syr Bernarde de la sale
was sent to Auygnyon to pope Clement for ¶
sayd some of money/ but the pope nor the Car
dynalles there couldc not make the money for
¶ popes courte was so poore that they had no
money/ and so syr Bernarde de la sale retour
ned euyll content to the syege of Peruce/ and so
then they dyssymuled the matter/ and the Pe
rusens in lykewyse/ and also this erle Courant
and so pope Urban yssued out of Peruce & out
of perill and wente to Rome and abode there

I know ryght well that in tyme to come
there wolde be had mocke of these thyn
ges how the churche sholde fall in suche trou
bles & enbure so longe/ but it was a plage sent
fro god/ for the clergy to abuse & to confyrme
well they re grete estate & superfluyte that they
were in/ but many dyde sette lytell therby/ for
they were so blynded with pryde that ech one
thought to be as good as another/ wherfore it
wente euyll/ & yf our fayth had not ben confyr
med in ¶ handes & grace of ¶ holy goost who
alumyned the harte of them ¶ were gone out
of the ryght way/ & helde them stylle in vnyte
dies our fayth had be gretely deformed/ but
the grete lordes of the erthe at the begynnyng
dyd nothynge but laughe at the thyng/ tyl I
Cronycled these Cronycles in the yere of our
lorde Jhesu Cryst M.CCC.lxxx. and x. no
the of the comen people murmured how the
grete lordes as the Frenshe kynge/ the kynge
of Almayne/ and other kynges and prynces of
crystendome/ dyd prouyde no remedy in that
cace. There was one thynge profytable to ap
pease the comen people/ & to eschue the hyghe
prynces & kynges/ barons & erles/ & other lor
des. As by enlample the yolke of the egge can
not be without the whyte/ nor the whyte with
out the yolke/ no more maye the Clergy & the
lordes be one without another/ for the lordes
are governed by ¶ Clergy/ for they couldc not
lyue but as beestes & the Clergy were not/ & ¶
Clergy counsayleth and enseigneth the lordes
to be as they be. And I say surely I haue ben
in my tyme in dyuers partyes of the worlde/
what for to accomplysshe my plesure/ and to
se noueltyes in the worlde/ and to haue know
ledge of the condycyons & aduentures wryten
in this boke. And truely the reason ¶ I wente
thus about in the worlde I couldc lyghtly fa
ne grete lorde/ but that he had a marmoset/ or
of ¶ Clergy/ or a boy of symple lyvynge mayn
tened by ¶ counsayle/ by reason of theyr flaterr
lyng & rapyne/ except the erle of Foys/ for
he had neuer none suche/ for he was naturally
sage/ for his wysdome was better/ than any ¶
couldc be gyuen hym/ yet I say not that suche
lordes as are ruled by suche marmosettes be
fooles/ but rather more than fooles/ for they be
sore blynded/ & yet they haue two eyen/ whan
the knowledge came fyrst to ¶ frenshe kynge
Charles of the dyfference betwene these two
popes he dyd put the matter on ¶ Clergy whi
che way he sholde take them/ they of the clergy
of Fraunce determyned & toke pope Clement
for the moost surest parte/ and to the Frenshe
opynyon accorded the kynge of Castel and the
kynge of Scottes bycause all the season that
the scysme was thus in the cyrche/ Fraunce/
Castell & Scotlande were ioyned together by
alyaunce/ & the kynge of Englonde/ & ¶ kynge
of Portyngale went of the contrary opynyon
agaynst them/ excepted the erle of Flaundres
neuertheles in his courage to pope Clement
¶ he sholde be right pope by cause vrbe was
fyrst chosen at Rome/ who was archebysshop
of Bare. Thus Clement kynge Cardynall
of Genue wrote letters vnto the noble Erle of

Flaunders howe there was a pope chosen by the clergy at Rome named Urban/ wherfore he wolde not bylene ye tother ꝓ Clement/ & as longe as he lyued he was of that opynyon/ so was the kynge of Almayne and all the Empyre/ and also ꝓ kynge of Hungry. Thus then I put in wrytynge the state and dyfferences ꝓ I had sene in my dayes in the worlde and in ꝓ chyrche/ it was no meruayle thoughe ꝓ lordes of the worlde suffered & dyssymuled ꝓ matters. Thus brought he to my remembraunce howe ꝓ when I was but ponge/ and pope Innocent raygned in Auygnyon/ he helde in pryson a freer mynoure called freer Johñ Roche Cayll had/ this freer as it was sayd/ & I haue herde it prouyd in dyuers places/ he shewed & alegged dyuers auctorytes of the mysdeades and fortunes ꝓ fell after in his dayes in ꝓ royalme of Fraunce. And also he spake of the takynge of kynge Johñ/ and shewed certayne thynges reasonable howe the chyrche sholde suffre no the for ꝓ grete superfluytes ꝓ he sawe in them and whyle he was in pryson it was shewed me what he sayd to the Cardynall of Ostie called Beatras/ and to ꝓ Cardynall of Anyere who went to vysyte hym and to argue with hym/ the he sayde to them an ensample as hereafter ye shall here.

LOrdes sayd this freer/ there was ones a fowle appered in this worlde without ony fethers/ & when al other fowles knewe ꝓ he was borne they came to se hym bicause he was so fayre and pleasaunt to beholde. Then they ymagyned amonge them what they myght do for this bryde/ for without fethers they knewe well he coulde not lyue/ and they sayd they wolde beholde lyue bycause he was so fayre/ the euery fowle there gaue hym of theyr fethers/ and the fayrer bryde the mo fethers he gaue hym/ so that then he was a fayre bryde & a well fethered and began to flie. And ꝓ brydes that had gyuen hym of theyr fethers whe they sawe hym flee they toke grete pleasure/ & whe this bryde came hymselfe so well fethered and that all other fowles honoured hym/ he began to waxe prowde and toke no regarde of them that had made hym/ but pycked and spurred at them and was contrary to them. Then the other brydes bycame togyder and demaunded eche other what was best to be done with this bryde that they had made vp of nought & now so dysdayneth them/ then the Pecocke sayd/ he is greatly beautyed by reason of my fethers/ I wyl take them agayne fro hym/ in the name of good sayd the Fawcon so wyll I haue myne/ and so sayd al the other brydes. And then they began to take agayne fro hym al the fethers ꝓ they had gyuen hym. And whe this bryde sawe that/ he humbled hymselfe & knowledged of ꝓ welth and honour that he had/ not of hymselfe but of them/ for he knewe that he came in to ꝓ worlde naked and bare/ and ꝓ fethers that he had they myght well take fro hym agayne whe they wyll/ then he cryed them mercy/ and sayd that he wolde amende hymselfe and noo more be prowde/ & so then agayne thase gentyll brydes had pyte on hym & fethered hym agayne/ & sayd to hym we wolde gladly se ꝓ he amõge vs/ so thou wylte be humble as thou oughteste to be/ but knowe surely/ If thou be ony more prowde and dysdaynous we wyll take from ꝓ all thy fethers and set the as we founde ꝓ fyrst. ¶ Thus sayd ꝓ freer Johñ to ꝓ Cardynalles that were in his presence. Syrs thus shall it fall on you of the chyrche/ for the Emperour of Rome and of Almayne and the other kynges crystened/ & byshe prynces of the worlde haue gyuen you the goodes & possessyons & ryches to the entente to serue god/ and ye spende it in pryde and superfluyte. Ye rede not the lyfe of sayne Syluester pope of Rome after sayne Peter/ ymagyne and consyder howe the Emperour Costantyne gaue hym fyrst ꝓ dymes of ꝓ chyrche and on what condycyon. Sayne Syluester rode nother with .CC. nor .CCC horse abrode in the worlde/ but he helde hymselfe symply closed in Rome/ and lyued soberly with them of the chyrche/ when the aungell of god shewed hym how ꝓ Emperour Constãtyne who was as then but an infydell sholde sende for hym/ in lyke wyse the Emperour had it by reuelacyon of an aungell that Syluester sholde shewe hym ꝓ way of heithe/ for he was syke of the lyppre/ so ꝓ his flesh he fell in peces & whe Syluester came before hym he shewed hym the way of baptyme/ & so crystened hym/ and incontynent he was hole/ for the whiche ꝓ Emperour Constantyne byleued in god and all his Empyre/ and gaue to Syluester & to the chyrche all the dymes/ for before the Emperoure of Rome helde them/ and beside that gaue hym many fayre gyftes & grete symptoyres augmentynge our fayth and the chyrche but it was his entencyon that the goodes and symptoyres that he had gyue hym ꝓ he sholde gouerne it humbly and truely/ and not to spende it in pompe and pryde/ but nowe a dayes

tacy of the chyrche do the contrary wherwith god is displeased/ and hereafter wyll be more displeased/ so that the grete lordes of the erthe wyll waxe colde in theyr deuocyons/ and not be so prodigall in grupnge ony thynge to ȳ chyrche. But rather to be redy to take fro it ȳ was gyuen before/ and ȳ thynke it wyll not be longe or this be sene. ¶ Thus this freer Johñ of Roche tayllade whome the cardynalles helde in pryson in Auignon shewed to them these wordes/ and dyuers other wherof the cardynalles were abasshed/ and wolde gladly haue put hym to dethe yf they myght haue founde ony iuste cause agaynst hym. But they coulde fynde none/ & so suffred hym to lyue/ but they durst not let hym out of pryson/ for he shewed his matters so parfyte/ and layde for hym hyghe scryptures/ that peraduenture he myght haue made many in the worlde to haue erred/ Howbeit suche as take more hede to his sayengе then I dyde sawe many thynges fall after accordynge as he sayd and wrote in pryson/ & all ȳ he sayd he wolde proue by the apocalyps the true prowes wherwith he armed hymselfe who saued hym fro brennynge/ and also some of the Cardynalles had pyte on hym and wolde not do theyr vttermoost to hym.

NOwe let vs lyue to speke of these narracyons and retourne to our pryncypall matter & hystory of Spayne/ of Portyngale/ of Fraunce/ and of Englonde/ and recorde the fortunes that fell in that season whiche be not to be forgotten. ¶ Ye haue herde here before howe kynge Johñ otherwyse called mayster Denyce of portyngale baſtarde brodet to kyng Don Ferant was in possessyon of the royalme of Portyngale/ by the helpe all onely of .iiii. Cytees in Portyngale. But as for the nobles and knyghtes of the royalme of Portyngale at the begynnynge atquyted them truely to kynge Don Peter & to kynge Johñ of Castell and to his wyfe the lady Beatryce & yet thoughe some helde the opynyon of that lady/ neuertheleſſe other named her a baſtarde for she was doughter to a lady in Portyngale called Elynoure/ who had as then her fyrſt husbande on lyue a knyght of ȳ countre syr Johñ Laurence of Coygne/ and ȳ kynge of Portyngale had taken her fro hym/ and the kynge maryed her/ and put her husbande out of Portyngale who went and dwelled with the kynge of Castell/ for he durst not dwell in Portyngale for fere of the kynge who helde his wyfe/ & yet he was of hyghe lygnage. These thynges are to be remembred at . For kynge Ferant of Portyngale reputed his doughter as lawfully begotten/ for he had a dyspensacyon of pope Vrban the .vi. And then ȳ peas was made bytwene the .ii. kynges of Castell & Portyngale & that a knyght of the royalme of Portyngale called syr Johñ Ferant Andere who was there of counsayle with the kynge of Portyngale treated of peas and made ȳ mariage bytwene kynge Ferant of Portyngalles doughter and kynge Johñ of Castell who was as the a wyd bower/ and had maryed before ȳ doughter of Don Peter kynge of Aragon/ thoughe ȳ kynge of Castell & his counsayle dyd call all these doubtes/ and howe they fered lest the kynge of Portingales doughter sholde not be taken as heyre of Portyngale after her faders dysseas but to put in surete therof ȳ kynge of Castell the kynge of Portyngale called dyuers of the chefe lordes of Portyngale to swere that after the kynges dysseas to take her as theyr lady/ & to tourne the royalme of Portyngale to ȳ kynge of Castel. Also ȳ kynge of Portyngale had bounde certayne good townes to the kynge of Castel to take hym as theyr kynge on ȳ payne of forfayture of .ii. thousande frankes/ & notwithstandynge this knyght Johan Ferant Andere dyde his busynes for a good entente to make peas & concorde bytwene Castell and Portyngale at ȳ instaunce of his lorde/ yet ȳ comons of Lysbone sklewe hym/ and chase to theyr kynge this mayster Denyce/ for they sayd they wolde not be vnder the subiectyon of them of Castell/ they hated them so moche/ for they coulde neuer loue togyder/ & also they sayd ȳ the crowne of Portyngale myght not go to a woman/ and that the quene of Castell was not true heyrtour but a baſtarde & worse then a baſtarde for kynge Ferantes lyuynges/ and after his dethe Johan Ferant of Coygne lyued/ who was husbande to that ladyes moder/ and therfore they chase this mayster Denyce and was crowned by these .iiii. Cytees Lysbone/ Vyse/ Eure/ and the porte of Portyngale/ they sayd they wolde haue a kynge amonge them/ & one of the chefe incydentes that moued ȳ comons to be agaynst the kynge of Castell was as I shall shewe you. The Spanyardes whom I call Castellyans when the maryage was made bytwene them and Portyngale/ and that ȳ kynge of Portyngale had graunted that after his dysseas the royalme sholde go to the kyng of Castell/ euer when the Spanyardes were

out of

any of the Portyngales, they would mocke the and say, Syr whether ye will or not, now ye shal come to our daunger, we shal holde you under subiection and seruage, and kepe you lyke slaues and Jues, and do with you as we list and they would answere and saye they trusted ỹ should neuer be, and neuer to be vnder subiection of any other man liuing except god, and for such causes and wordes reprouable of the spaniardes, the Portyngales take thys maister Denyse bastard brother to kyng Ferante, and made him kyng. in his brothers dayes there was no reckenyng made of hym, nor the kynge, that the commons wolde neuer haue chosen hym to theyr kynge, and forsake his doughter as they dyd. How beit oftentimes thys sayde kynge of John Ferant Andere, said to ỹ kyng how that this maister Denyse his bastard brother had greatlye the grace of the commons of the realme, wherfore he sayde it had bene good he had bene put to death, but kyng Ferant answered and sayde, how the commons shuld neuer haue puyssaunce to do any thyng agaynste the wyll of the noble men of his countrey, and howe that his sonne in lawe the kyng of Castel should euer be puissaunt ynough to constrayne them, and to chastyce them if they rebelled after his disease, wherfore he sayd there was no cause to put his bastard brother to death, nor put him in prysion, saying how he was a man of religion and had ynough to lyue on besyde the crowne of Portyngale and so he was left alyue

These forsayd poyntes & articles be trewe for I the auctoure of this boke haue bene full credibly enformed therof by the nobles of Portyngale, it is a thing to be maruayled at to make a bastard a kyng, and they of Portyngale say, and as yet sayth, that the quene of Castell the lady Beautryce, doughter to the ladye Elynour of Goyne was a bastard, therefore they would not take her as quene of Portyngale, nay none heyre that came of her, the same opinion the earle of Foys laid to the knyghtes of his countrey, when they went into Spayne to ayde the kyng of Castell. for he had ben sufficiently informed in the matter, betwene Portyngale and castell, wherfore he sayd to them at their departyng. Syrs ye haue nothynge to do to busy your selfe betwene Castell & Portyngale, for ỹ quene of Castel who was doughter to kyng Ferant of Portyngale it is a warre euyll begonne, there maye muche euyll come to them that be busy in that matter, but they answered him, syth they hadde receiued wages of such a man as ỹ kyng of Castel was, they must nedes go and serue him, and so they went and most part of them there dyed, as ye haue heard here before.

NOw let vs retourne to the busines of Portyngale. for they be not ỹ to be lefte, for the great aduentures that ther hath fallen. And to cronycle all thynges as they haue falle to thentent that in time to come the shulde be founde wryten and registred, yf aduentures were not knowen it were great domage. And by clarkes ỹ auncyently haue written and registred the hystoryes and bokes, therby the hystoryes are knowen, there is not so perpetuall a memory as is wrytyng and truly I say to you and wyll ỹ they ỹ come after me should knowe that for to knowe the trouth of this hystorye, I haue taken therin great payne in my dayes, & haue serched many realmes and countreyes to knowe the trouth, and haue had acqueyntaūce of many valyaunt men, and haue sene dyuers both of fraunce, of Englande, of Scotlande, Castell, Portyngale, and of other landes, Duchyes, and Countyes, suche as they and theyr landes hath bene conioyned in these warres, and with them I haue spoken and ben instructed and informed, and I would not that any enquest should passe vnknowen, syth I knewe it to be true and notable. And whyle I was in Byerne with the Erle Gaston of Foys, I was there enformed of diuers busynesses, suche as fell betwene Castell and Portyngale, & when I was retourned agayne into my countrey in the county of Heynault, & in the towne of Valencennes, and that I had refreshed me there a season, then I determined me to folowe the hystory ỹ I had begon, then I aduysed in myne ymagination how I could not sufficyently be instructed by the hearynge of them that sustayned the opinion of the kyng of Castell, but that in ỹ same wyse I ought to heare the Portingales as well as the Gascoynes and Spanyardes, that I heard in the house of the earle of Foys, and in the way goynge thyther and retourning I toke no regarde to the payne or trauayle of my body, but so I went to Bruges in Flaunders to fynde there some of the realme of Portingale & of Lysbone, for there were euer some of that countrey, behold if mine aduenture were good or no, yf I had sought a season vii. yeare

I could not haue come to a better poynte then I dyd then, for then it was shewed me, that yf I would goo to Weldebourc in Selande I should fynde there a knyght of Portingale a valiaunt man and a sage, and of the kyng of Portingales counsayle, who was newly come thyther, and was going thence by sea into Pruce, and how he could iustly and playnly shewe me of the busines and aduentures of Portingale for he knewe and hadde bene euer all the cōuersey. These tydynges reioyced me and so I went fro Bruges with one of Portyngale in my cōpany, who knewe right well this knyght, and so we came to Sluse, and there tooke the sea, and dydde so much by the grace of god that we came to Weldebourc, and the Portyngales ỳ were in my company, aquaynted me with this knyght, and I found him right gracious, sage honourable, curteys, amyable, and acquayntable, and so I was with him .vi. dayes or there a bout. And this knyght enfourmed me of al the busines betwene the realme of Castell & Portyngale, syth the death of kyng Ferant tyll the departing of that knyght out of that countrey, he shewed me euery thyng so playnly & so gracyously, ỳ I tooke great pleasure to heare hym, and to wryte it. And when I was enfourmed by him of all that I desyred to knowe, I toke leaue of him, and he conueyed me to my shyppe and so did diuers other ryche Marchauntes of his countrey, who were come fro Bruges, and fra other places to se him, and in his company there was the son of Nauarre in Portingale, and diuers other knightes and squyers of that realme, but he had the chiefe honoure amonge them, and certaynly by that I could se and ymagyne of him and of his estate, he was worthy to haue honoure, for he was of noble porte and goodly stature, and lykely to be a valiaunt man. And when I retourne home agayne fro Rome into mine owne countrey, I shall studye me to make relacion of the wordes of this gentell knyght called syr John Ferant Portcler, and shall cronycle all that hath fallen in Portyngale & in Castell vnto the yeare of our lord M.CCC.lxxx.and.v.

Howe they of Portingale sent out messangers into Englande to shewe tidinges of theyr countrey to the kinge of England and to the greate lordes there. Cap. xliii.

NOwe sheweth the history that after this maystre Denice kyng John of Portingale had discomfyted kynge John of Castel at the batayle of Iuberoth, were to the abbey called ỳ Cabbaie, where as so many noble knyghtes and squyers of Fraūce, Gascoyne, & Bierne were slayne, and that the kinge of Portingale for that fayre & victorious iourney, was greatly doubted and honoured of the Portyngales, and was retorned after his victorye into Lysbone, with great glory of all the people, there with great tryumphe was crowned with laurell, as auncyētly kynges wer wont to be crowned after they had discomfyted anye kynge in batayle, and there in Lysbone was great feast of the departure of such knyghtes and squyers as were there, and the counsayles of the good townes and cities of the realme. Then there was a parlyament & a counsayle holden howe they myght persequre in theyr busynes honourably, for certayne of the sages of the realme sayd how it was necessary for them to se howe they might fortify them selfe agaynst the kyng of Castell, & his puissaunce, so ỳ they myght honourably abyde in their victory, & to multiplye and exalt in this parliament at Lisbone holde in the cathedrall church of sayncte Dominicke, There were manye deuyses treyted whych nede not to be rehearced, but the rest and conclusyon of this parlyament was that they shoulde send into Englande to the duke of Lancastre, who claymed of ryght the inherytaunce of Castell, by reason of the lady Constaunce his wife eldest doughter to kyng Don Peter of Castell and to wryte to hym that if euer he wouldo clayme any ryght in the realme of Castell, and to set forward his busynesse, which longe hath hanged in balaunce, and in aduenture to be lost, that he would come into Portyngale with a company of mē of armes and archers, for as then it was time conuenient for him so to do. Then the earle of Nauarre constable of Portyngale in a fayre language sayde. Sith we be agreed to sende into Englande to the duke of Lancastre by whome we thynke to be ayded whyche is the moste prosperablest waye for vs, to cause our enemyes to feare vs, therfore let vs auyse in our realme, sage personages and notable to do this message, and to enfourme to the duke of Lancastre & his counsayle to come into this countreye so stronge as to reysse our

enemies wyth suche ayde as he shall haue of vs. for we may well suppose that the kynge of Castell wyll gette greate ayde of the frenche kynge. The frenche men of warre wotte not where better to employe theyr season, for they haue peas wt englande vnto the fest of saynt John. And also the frenche men haue ferme peas with ꝑ flemynges, who hathe occupyed them before dyuers yeres. The erle of Hauerres wordes were well accepted, and euery mā sayde howe he spake well to the poynte, and ꝑ so they would do. Then there were named by sad delyberatyon of counsayle that the greate mayster of Saynct Jaques in Portyngale & Laurence Fongase a ryght sage and discrete squier who coulde right wel speke ꝑ language of fraunce, howe they shoulde go on this message in to englande, for they could sende none of the counsayle of Portyngale, that better coulde do that messuage then they. Then ther were letters wrytten in good frenche and in latyn to the kynge of englande, to the duke of Lancastre, & to his brethren the erle of Cābrydge and Bokyngham. And when these letters were written and groſed vp in frenche, & in latyn, then they were red before the kynge and his counsaile there, & wel liked, & so sealed and deliuered to the great master of saint Jaques, and to Laurence Fongase, who toke on thē ꝑ charge to beare them into englande, so they might passe the daungere of the sea, & encōtering of any enemies & robbers of the sea for as wel there were robbers on the sea as on the land. So they toke a ship called ꝑ Lin whiche wold seale wt al maner of windes more surelier thē any other ship. So on a day they toke their leane of the king & of the archebyshop of Connymbryes, and of the great counsaile of Portyngale, and wente to the sea, and sayled towarde englande, and were .iii. dayes on the sea without syght of lande, and on the fourthe daye they sawe Cornewall.

They sped so well by their iournels, and by the ayde of God and good wynd that they costed Cornewall and ꝑ boundes of englande, and so aryued saufely withoute peryll in the hauen of Hampton, and there cast ancre and so yssued oute of theyr shippe, and wente & refreshed thē in the towne, & there they were examined by the bailiffe of Hampton and such other as were kepers of the cost of what countrey they were, & fro whens they came, & whither they would, they answered to all theyr demaundes and said howe they were of the royme of Portyngale, and sente thyder fro theyr kynge and his counsaile, then they were welcome and had good chere, and when they had refreshed them there and prouyded for horses for them, and for theyr seruauntes. Then they rode to London by guydes, for they knew not the countrey, and so were lodged at the sygne of the Fawcon, and sente backe agayne theyr horses, & it fortuned so well for them that the kynge and hys vncles were at Westmynstre, wherof they were ioyfull, they cam to London in the fore noone, & so dyned, and after dyner they toke theyr letters and wente to ꝑ duke of Lācaster & to the duches. And whē the duke & the duches knewe of their comynge they were ryght ioyefull, for they desyred to here tydynges fro Portyngale, there had ben shewed thē dyuers thynges, but greately they dyd not beleue it, because thei had no letters therof out of ꝑ countrey. Thē the great mayster of saincte Jaques & Laurence Fongase entred in to the dukes chambre, and the duches there presente and bycause ꝑ Laurence Fongase could speke frenche he spake fyrste, and when he had made his reuerence to the duke and to the Duches, & deliuered them letters fro Portyngale, the duke toke his, & the duches hers, & so red theyr letters, & then the duke sayd to the messageres Syrs ye be right welcome into this countrey and to morowe ye shall go to the kyng, and we shall do you the ayde we can, as it is reason. Then the duches drewe Laurence Fongase a part and demanded of him tidinges out of Castell & Portyngale, to euery thinge thys Laurence answered. Thē the duke called for wyne and spyce, & so they dranke, & toke their leue and retourned to their lodgynge, & in the morning they went againe to the duke, who had hearde masse, and so thē they entred into a barge and wēt by water to Westminster, where the kyng and the moost parte of hys counsayle was. The duke entred into the counsaile chambre, & said to the kinge. Syr here is the great mayster of saint Jaques in Portyngale, who hath brought you letters fro the king, will it please you to se them, with a good wyll said the king Then the .ii. messagers kneled downe before the kynge, & Laurence Fongase delyuered his letters, the kynge toke them, and caused them to be redde, also they delyuered letters to the erle of Cambridge, and to therle of Bokingham eche of them redde their letters. The kyng answered the messagers right swetely and sayde.

¶Syr ye are welcome into thys countrey, your commyng doeth vs great ioye, & ye shall not departe wythoute answerre suche as shal please you and all your busines, let myne vncles here haue them in remembraunce, so they thanked the kynge and departed out of ꝑ cou saile chambre, and went downe in to the Palais abydynge for the duke of Lancastre who tarryed tyll it was hyghe noone. Then the duke of Lancastre toke hys two brethren wyth hym to dyner, and wente by water, and these messageres with the. The erle of Cambrydge knewe ryght well the great mayster of sayncte James and Laurence of Pongale, for he had sene them before in Portyngale, wherfore after dinet he comoned with the of diuers thynges in the presens of his other two bretherne, and demaunded them of the maryage of Castel, and of her that shold haue bene his doughter in lawe the lady Beautrice. To all his demaundes the ambassadours answered wisely and truely, wherby the lordes were ryght wel content and pleased.

TRewe it was that before these ambassadours were commen in to Englande the duke of Lancaster, & the erle of Cãbridge his broder had dyuers counsails together for the right they clamed by theyr wyues. The Erle of Cambridge as ye haue hearde before, was not well contente with kynge Ferant of Portyngale nor with his men of warre there, for they had lodged .xv. dayes in the feldes before the Castellyans, and yet king Ferant nor the Portyngales wolde neuer fyghte with the, yet the erle the same tyme shewed ꝑ kynge his defaulte & said: sir I haue here in my company of pore Englyshe men a C. speres & a. M. archers. And all we are wylling to fyght with our enemyes, and to abyde the aduenture that god will sende vs, but kynge Ferant answered euer that he was not counsailed to fyghte, wherfore when the erle sawe that, he departed thens, and toke with him againe his sonne out of Portyngale, and whan he was departed, then the kynge of Portyngale accorded wyth kynge John of Castel, & maried his doughter to him to make the peas, and this treatie was made by syr Johan Audre a knyghte of Portyngale. The kinge there had all his truste in him. The kynge of Portyngale demaunded of his doughter whether she had rather haue the kynge of Castell, or the erle of Cambridge sonne. She answered and sayd how the lorde better John of Englãde then John of Castel The kynge demaunded why she saide soo, she answered, bycause John of Englande was a goodly personage & of her age, and that was the cause she would not haue the kyng of Castell, howbeit her fader to haue peas wyth the Spanyardes made that maryage. Also the erle had sayd to the duke of Lancastre his broder that kinge Ferant ones deade, he doubted that the comons of the royalme of Portingale woulde rebell against the ladye Beautrice, for the most parte of the royalme. (For all ꝑ theyr kynge had maried her moder the ladye Elyanoure of Coygne.) Yet they held not the kynges doughter to be borne in lawfull mariage but reputed her as a bastarde, and murmured theron while the erle was there. Wherfore he was gladder to take awaye his sonne thens. The Duke of Lancaster to whõ ꝑ matter touched nerer then to the Erle of Cambridge bycause he had maried the eldest suster, heyre to Castell, and he had a fayre childe by the Lady Constaunce his wyfe, wherefore he euer desyred to be truely and iustly enformed of the busynes in those parties, and dyd set his mynde how he might exalte and further his title, and he sawe clerely that as then he coulde not haue so good an entre into Castell as by the royalme of Portyngale, specially e seynge howe he was desyred and required of the kinge of Portingale, and of the barons and comons, of the royalme, & also consyderinge howe the kynge of Portynge that was then was a noble sage Prynce and valiaunte, seynge howe he hadde discomfyted the kynge of Castell in playne battaile and all his puyssaunce, wherby the duke the soner enclined to go in to Portyngale. And also the kyng of Englande and his counsaile was agreed therto, but to the entente to be iustely enfourmed of all the businesse, state and condicion of the countrey of Castell, and of the righte that the lady Beautrice clamed to the crowne of Portyngale, and also of the righte of kinge John of Portyngale whome the comons had crowned to theyr kynge. For this entente on a daye the duke made a dyner to these ambassadours of Portyngale in hys owne lodginge, and after dinet he made euery man to depart, and called these ambassadours to him ryght amorously, and demaunded of them of the busines of Portyngale, and bycause that Laurence Pongale coulde speake Frenche, the duke addressed his wordes vnto

hym that Sr. Laurence I requyre you to shew me from point to point the condycyon and maner of your londe of Portyngale / & what hath fallen there / and in Castell seth my lorde the erle of Cambrydge was there / for the kynge of Portyngale hath wryten to me that there is no man in Portyngale y can enforme me more fully then ye can do / and in this ye shall do me a grete pleasure / for sayd I requyre I shall fulfyll your pleasure / and then began to specke and sayd in this maner.

Syr syth the departure of your brother the erle of Cambrydge out of Portyngale there hath fallen grete trouble and hynderyd in the royalme / and in grete aduentage to haue ben lost / but thanked be god the busynesse there / are as nowe in good poynte and fermely stablysshed / but and god had not wrought by his grace the matter had gone euyll / and all thynges the dessolate of kynge Ferrant had spedde. This is the oppynyon of the moost parte of the royalme / for kynge Ferrant in his dayes loued fore a lady wyfe to a knyght of his called syr John Laurence of Copyne / and bycause of her beautye he wolde haue her by force. The lady wyth drewe the kynges desyre as longe as the myght / but at the laste he had her and sayd. Madame I shall make you quene of Portyngale / for thoughe I loue you / it is not for your hurte / but to exalte you / for I wyll marry you. Then the lady on her knees wepynge sayd / syr fauynge your displeasure. I can haue none honoure to be quene of Portyngale for you knowe and so doth all the worlde that I haue an husbande all redy / and haue had this .v. yere / Edynoure sayd the kynge make none excuse / for I wyll haue none other wyfe but you / but I shall quyte you from your husbande or I marry you. The lady coulde gete none other wordes of the kynge / and she shewed all the matter to her husbande / and when the knyght knewe therof he was sory and malencolyous / and regarded and studyed what were best for hym to do / and sayd to hym selfe / I wyll not thus leue my wyfe / howbeit he doubted the kynge / and went out of the royalme of Portyngale into Castell to kynge Henry who receyued hym / and retayned hym to be of his house as longe as he lyued / and so dyde kynge John that nowe is. Thus the kynge of Portyngale to accomplysshe his folysshe pleasure / sente for the knyght and for the lady but the knyght was goone. Then the kynge sente for the bysshoppe of Compyngre / who was as then chaunceliour of Portyngale / and of the kynges counsayle / and the kynge shewed hym his entent / how he wolde wedde Elyanoure of Copyne / and the bysshop feared the kynge because he knewe hym of an hyghe and a fyerce condycyon / therfore he durst not saye contrary to the kynges pleasure / and also for John Ferrant Iudece / who was chefe of counsayle with the kynge to please the kynge sayd to the bysshop. Syr ye may wed them wel ynoughe / ones the kynge shall make recompence for all / so the bysshop wedded them / & thus lady was crowned quene / & reputed in all the grete Cytees in Portyngale / and had as moche honoure and reuerence as euer hadde ony other quene in the royalme of Portyngale / and the kynge had by her a doughter / who as nowe is quene of Castell. True it was that whyle kynge Ferrant lyued / he sente on a day to Lysbone for all the prelates and noble men of the countrey / and for the counsayles of the Cytees / portes / and townes of Portyngale / and this was or your brother the erle of Cambrydge came in to Portyngale / and there the kynge made euery man to swere and to promyse that after his decease they shulde take his doughter the lady Beautrice / Who was as then but fyue yeres of age / for herytoure of the royalme of Portyngale euery man ware whether they wolde or not. Howbeit the moost parte of them the were there knewe ryght well that she was but a bastarde / and borne in aduoutrye / for her mothers husbande was styll lyuynge / called syr John Laurence of Copyne / who lyued in Castell with the kynge there as longe as kynge Ferrant of Portyngale lyued / and lenger / howbeit syr I thynke surely yf the kynges doughter had ben a sone / that all the comonalye of Portyngale wolde sonet haue agreed to hym but to his doughter. For to her they sayd they wolde neuer agree / but had rather dye then to be vnder the subiection of the royalme of Castell. ¶ For as yet the royalme of Portyngale and the royalme of Castell neuer loued parfytely togyder / but hath often tymes harryed / and made warre eche vpon other / In lykewyse as the royalme of Scotlande dothe with the royalme of Englonde.

¶ Then the duke of Lancastre demaunded of Laurence Fongast / where kynge

Johñ that nowe is broder to kynge Ferrant was in kynge Ferrantes dayes. Syr sayd the squyer he was in the royalme of Portyngale in a house of religyon/ wherin he kepyth of an order in whyte habytes with a rede cralle and he was soueraine of that house/ and was called mayster Denyse. The kynge set lytell by his broder/ but made hym ruler of that house of Denyse/ nor also kynge Johñ that nowe is/ medled nothynge with the busynes of the royalme/ nor thought nothyng of the crowne therof. For yf kynge Ferrant of Portyngale had thought ony thynge of that is fallen syth he loued his lady Elyanoure & the lady Beautrys her doughter/ he wolde haue slayne his broder who is nowe kynge/ but because he sawe that he kepte his house with the brethern of his order so meketly and duely he had no suspecte in hym/ but so let hym lyue in peas. And syr as for the dyssencyon that is nowe betwene Portyngale and Castell/ surely syr to saye the trouthe therin/ ỹ Spanyardes are cause therof/ Why so sayd ỹ duke/ I shal tell the pou sayd the squyer. The Castellyans when they sawe that kynge Ferrant had maryed his doughter to they? kynge/ then they began to be proude/ and began to speke grete wordes/ whiche sore greued the Portyngales/ for the Spanyardes wolde say. O ye Portyngales rude people lyke beestes/ The tyme nowe is come that we shall haue a good market of you/ for ye haue ben and shall be ours/ we shall deuyde and set you in companyes as we do the Jues who dwelleth by truage vnder vs/ ye shall be our subiectes with other vnrymous wordes/ often tymes they sayd thus when they met the Portyngales. And whyle kynge Ferrant lyued/ & had maryed his doughter in to Castell/ they engendred suche an hate that they murmured and sayd/ it were better to be dede than to be vnder the daunger and subiection of ỹ Castellyans/ and so kynge Ferrant fell syke whiche endured a hole yere. And when he was dede and buryed in the chyrche of sayut Fraunces a religyous house of freers in the cyte of Lyrbone Then the cytees/ good townes/ and castelles in Portyngale closed they? gates/ & they sente for the kynge that nowe is to Lyrbone/ Who knewe rygot well the ententes of the .iii. other cytees/ as Compymbres/ Porte/ and Cure. Then they sayd. Mayster Denyse (so he was called as then) We wyll make you kynge of this royalme thoughe ye be a bastarde/ but we say that your cosyn the lady Beautrys quene of Castell is borne rather a bastarde than you for as yet lyueth her moders fyrst husbande. And syth it is so that the crowne of Portyngale is fallen in two wayes/ we wyll take for vs the moost profytable/ and also the moost parte of the royalme enclyneth to make you our kynge/ and that the crowne of Portyngale shall not go to a woman/ nor we wyll not be vnder the subiection of the kynge of Castell/ nor of the Castellyans/ we had rather ye sholde take all that we haue/ to ayde and to mayntayne vs and our fraunches/ tho the Castellyans sholde be maysters ouer vs/ wherfore syr receyue our offre/ for we wyl it shal be thus/ then this mayster Denyse who is as nowe kynge wolde not receyue they? offres at the fyrst nor seconde requeste but answered and sayd. Good people I knowe well of good affeccyon and entyer loue ye offre me the crowne of Portyngale/ whiche is a grete thynge/ and where as ye saye that I haue as grete ryght or more to the crowne as my cosyn the quene of Castell. In ly kewyse I thynke the same/ for true it is that is a bastarde for as yet lyueth her moders husbande and is in Castel/ but there is one poynte/ ye all alone can not do this matter/ it behoueth that al the nobles or grete parte of them agree therto/ tho they of Lyrbone answered and sayd/ syr we do not knowe/ We knowe all redy the courage of Spuers/ and also the oppynyon of them of the .iii. chefe cytees of this royalme beyde vs/ as Compymbres/ Porte/ and Cure/ then the kynge sayd/ let it be as ye wyl I am content/ ye knowe well that this lady Elyanoure who is called quene of this royalme is as yet here in this cyte/ and her counsaillours with her syr Johñ Ferrant Andere who wyll kepe the crowne of Portyngale and the heryptage therof for ỹ quene of Castell/ for he made hym self the marryage to make peas betwene Castell and Portyngale & peraduenture the kynge of Castell wyll sende for hym hastely to helpe to subdue his rebelles. Wherfore nowe at the obsequye of my broder whiche shal be shortly/ wherat moste parte of the nobles of this royalme and cytees wyl be/ it were good to prouyde for remedy in that behalfe/ then they that were present sayd/ syr that ye saye is true we shall prouyde therfore/ as we shall here syr Johñ Ferrant speke/ and so as then they? counsayle ended.

It was not longe after but that the obse
quye was kepte at Lyrbone in the freers
where as kynge Ferrant lyeth/and there were
many of the nobles of Portyngale/for they we
re beleued so to be by ye quene and by sr Johñ
Ferrant Audere who gouerned the quene/a
there was the kynge that nowe is with a grete
nombre of the comons of the countrey/and the
cyte of the thre cyteens Compynbres/Cute/
and ye porte of Portyngale/for they all agreed
and consented to them of Lyrbone. And when
the obyte was done sr Johñ Ferrant Audere
delyuered in the queues name the nobles that we
re there/pretenue that they sholde not departe
thens that daye nor the nexte/kynge he wende
queue wolde haue theyr counsayles what shol
de be done to sende in to Castel for kyng Johñ
and his wyfe the lady Beautryce theyr lady/
who was heryteure by ryght to the royalme
of Portyngale/all the nobles a a grete parte
of them that herde his wordes made ytel ther
of/for they doubted soze the comons that were
there assembled/for they had herde dyuers of
them murmure sayinge how they wolde crowe
ne to be theyr kynge maysser Denyse. Also sr
Johñ Ferrant Audere had herde soze wordes
Therfore he desyred the nobles of the royalme
to abyde there with hym to ayde and sustayne
his opynyon/but they fayled hym/for as sone
as the kynges obyte was done in the forsayd
freers/and ye quene Eleanour was retourned
to her lodgyng/then euery man cryed to horse
and so al or the moost parte mounted on theyr
horses/and so departed fro Lyrbone/some tary
ed styll suche as were on the kynges partye ye
nowe is/and they wente to theyr lodgynges/
and kepte themselfe pryuely and dyssymuled
the matter/for they well ymagyned the matter
to fall as it fell/as I shall shewe you bowe.
when the kynges obyte was done the comons
of Lyrbone and of the other thre cyteens suche
as were there retourned not shortely to theyr
lodgynges but wente to the cathedral chyrche
of Lyrbone called sayne Dompnyche/and the
re they assembled and maysser Denyse with
them/there they had grete counsayle togyder
Whiche counsayle endured not longe. For the
kynge that nowe is sayd vnto them. ¶ All ye
good people I vnderstande ye wolde make
me your kynge. And surely I saye it is my ryg
ght. And yf ye wyll perceyue in that purpose
it is tyme to sette a worke/and to shewe your
dede and puysaunce/for ye knowe ryght well
that sr Johñ Ferrant Audere doth procure
the nobles of the royalme to sende for ye kynge
of Castell/and he sayth and mayntayneth that
the crowne of Portyngale perteyneth to the
kynge of Castel by the ryght of his cosyne bys
wyfe/and I saye yf ye wyll ayde me it is my
ryght rather then hers/ye knowe all the mat
ter/for I am a man/a bzoder to kynge Ferrant
and sone to good kynge Peter of Portyngale
who gouerned you valyauntly. Trewe it is my
cosyne the quene of Castell was doughter to
kynge Ferrant/but that was vnto by lawfull
mariage. Then they of Lyrbone sayd vnto
hym. Syr all this is true/we wyll haue none
other kynge but you/and we wyll make you
our kynge/loke theron who wyll/but ye shall
swere vnto vs that ye shall be good to vs and
kepe Justyce/and ye shall not flatter no more
with the grete lordes than with the small peo
ple/and ye shall kepe and sustayne with good
herte with the ayde that we shall gyue you al
the ryght perteynynge to Portyngale. Then
the kynge answered and sayd. Syrs all this
I swere/but pryncypally I requyre you to go
with me to Lodgynge called ye Monnoy whe
re sr Johñ Ferrant Audere is with Elya
nour of Cospne/for I wyll that he be slayne
for he hath deserued it agaynst me/and agayn
ste you when he sustaynyeth and mayntayneth
other quarelles agaynst your wylles/to whi
che they all with one voyce answered. We wyll
that this be done/for surely he is disobeysaunt
and a rebell agaynst you. Wherfore lette hym
be put to dethe/and all the other that be rebel
lyons agaynst you. Wherby other of the roy
alme shall take ensample. Then they depar
ted togyder from the mynstre of sayne Dom
nyche to the nombre of .xv.C. all of one oppy
nyon/and the kynge that nowe is with them/
and soo they wente thrughe the towne to the
lodgynge called the Monnoy where the que
ne and sr Johñ Ferrant Audere were. And
when they came there/they brake vp the ga
tes of the lodgynge and entred therin perforce
and they wente in to the chambre where as the
quene was/Who was ryght sore affrayde wor
she sawe so moche people comynge vpon her/
then incontynent she fell downe on her knees
before this maysser Denyse/and prayed hym
to haue pyte and compassyon vpon her/sayn
ge vnto hym that she knewe nothynge of our
displeasure that she hadde done agaynst hym
or agaynst ony other. And also she sayd vnto
hym howe that as touchynge the crowne and
heryttage of Portyngale she clayned no parte

But mayster Dempre I requyre you and all the peuple here present to vnderstonde how kynge Ferrant made me queene agaynst my wyll/ therfore this mayster Dempre sayd I saye lady doubte ye nothynge/ for ye shall haue no hurte/ for we be not come hyther/ but for this traytour/ John Ferrant Auberc/ he shall dye to begynne withall/ and then lette the kynge of Castell receyue his hede of the same/ he hath ben longe his p̄secutour in this countrey/ with that were assembled forth suche as was ordeyned therto/ whiche toke the knyght and put hym to dethe/ more hurte they dyd not to his persone/ but streyned his lodgynge/ and the kynge p̄nowe is prest to his.

AND after the dethe of John Ferrant/ the lady Elyanoure who had ben queene of Portyngale/ toke counsayle and determyned her selfe to go out of Portyngale in to Castell to the kynge there/ and to the queene her doughter/ for she was in suche fray by the dethe of her husbonde by John Ferrant Auberc that she thought no lenger to abyde in Portyngale/ for she sawe she coulde haue there no ther socoure nor reste/ then she called mayster Dempre now kynge to be desyred to suffre her to departe/ and he gladly agreed therto/ and sayd howe that it pleased hym well p̄ she shold departe/ for he sayd she had good cause soo to do. The lady departed fro Lysbone with all her company/ and she rode so longe by her iourneys that she came to Bpupill where the kynge of Castell and the queene laye/ and the same season that this lady came thyder/ there were assembled there all the nobles of Castell/ for there they had a grete counsayle on the busynes for Portyngale/ for kynge John there toke counsayle howe he myght do/ synge the royalme of Portyngale was fallen to hym by succession/ by the dethe of kynge Ferrant his father to the queene his wyfe/ who agreed or he dyed that it shulde so be/ and all the countrey shulde wyte. This lady Elyanoure was receyued with the kynge and with the queene her doughter right honourably as it was reason Then she was crampned of all the busynes in Portyngale/ and she shewed them the trouthe of that she knew sene and knowen/ and also she sayd howe that it well appered that by all hyndrynge the comons of Portyngale wolde crowne to theyr kynge mayster Dempre/ without the kynge of Castell there agaynst made resystence and defence/ and for that cause they haue sworne her knyght by John Ferrant of Auberc by cause he subdued/ and alwayes he had wone the kynge of Castelles quarell/ and in all that this lady sayd she was well by harde for they sawe it well apparent. And also certayne barons and knyghtes of the royalme of Portyngale suche as were more attendyen to the kynge of Castell/ came to the kynge that nowe is/ by cause of kynge Ferrantes doughter/ and for to accompli the dede fulfyll they? other that they had made to the kynge of Castell/ at the delyre of their kynge John Ferrant when he gaue his doughter in mariage to the kynge of Castell/ therfore to acquyte they? promyse they departed out of the royalme of Portyngale and went in to Castell/ and lefte they? owne landes and herytages en the aduenture to recouer them agayne/ as the tytle Alphons Serroll/ greete prynce of Castyle in Portyngale/ (by) Delagare his doughter Inge Sylualle of Serroll/ John Auel all and dyuers other to the nombre of xxvb. Wherby the royalme of Portyngale was sore febled/ and the royalme of Castell enforced. Then the kynge of Castell made his somons throughe out all his royalme that all noble men/ and all other able to bere armure bothe .xb. and .xl. sholde in all hast come to hym in to the felde of Sebyll/ for he sayd he wolde with puyssaunce entre in to the royalme of Portyngale/ and conquerre it as his owne herytage/ at his commaundement euery man obeyed as it was reason/ for suche as helde of hym/ and so they came to the felde of Sebyll/ and there assembled to the nombre of .lx. M. men of one and other.

AND when sy? Laurence of Coygne had lande to the lady Elyanoure whome kynge Ferrant of Portyngale toke to his wyfe and was queene of Portyngale vnderstode that she was come out of Portyngale in to Castell. Then he went to certayne of the kynge of Castelles counsayle/ and sayd to them as in demaundynge of them counsayle. Syrs lordes and my grete frendes howe shall I do with Elyanoure my wyfe who is come out of Portyngale in to this countrey/ I knowe ryght well kynge Ferrant toke her by force agaynst her wyll/ and as we kynge Ferrant is deed/ and ye knowe well by reason I ought to haue my wyfe agayne/ what counsayle wyll ye gyue me therin/ and suche as he spake vnto gaue hym counsayle and sayd. John we counsayle

you to make no semblant therof, nor demaūde her not agayne, nor take her not, for yf ye doo ye shall greatly abate the honour of the ladye and also blemyshe the honoure of the Quene of Castell he doughter, for thē ye should make her worse then a bastarde, ye se howe the king of Castell wyll demaunde and thynke to conquere the royalme of Portyngale as his owne rightfull heryteage by the ryghte of hys wyfe. Thus ye shoūld open clerelye whiche is nowe somwhat in doubte and trouble, and withoute ye take good hede it will cost you youre lyfe yf ye make ꝑ quene of Castel a bastarde, for they of this countrey susteine her quarell, and saye that she was borne in iuste mariage by dispensation of the pope. Well saide the knighte, then what is beast for me to do, we shall shewe you said they, ꝑ best that we thinke is that as sone as ye can get you out of Castel and go againe to youre enheritaunce in to Portyngale, and leue the lady Elyanoure here with her dought ter, we se none other sauegarde for you but this, by my faith said the knight I beleue you well for ye counsaile me truelye and like good frendes. So this sir John Laurence of Copygne taried not longe after in Castell, but departed and went to Lysbone, & there he found mayster Denyse nowe kynge, and saide howe he was come to serue hym, and woulde be vnder his obeysaunce, for he would take him for his kyng. Mayster Denyce had greate ioye & sayde howe he was welcome to hym, & so gaue hym agayne all hys heryteage and made hym capitaine of Lysbone. Thus syr as I haue shewed you fell the busynes bytwene Portingale and Castell.

Howe Laurence Fongase am bassadoure fro the kynge of Portyngale into Englonde, shewed to the duke of Lancastre the maner of the discorde that was bytwene the royalmes of Castell & Portyngale. Cap. xliiii.

The duke of Lancastre toke greate pleasure to heare Laurence Fongase speake, he spake so attemperatly, and so good frenche, and also bycause the matter touched hym nere & to the entente that he woulde come to the bottome of hys desyre, he sayde: Laurence speake on hardelye, I haue harde no straūger speke this two yere that I had rather here speake then you, for ye go to ꝑ trouthe of the matter. Also the letters that ye haue brought to me from the kinge of Portingale, testifieth howe there is nothynge that hathe bene done betwene Portingale and Castell, but that ye can muche informe me thereof. Syr sayde the squier lytle thynge hathe there bene done as in dedes of armes, but that I haue bene at them, wherfore I can well speke of them, and sith it is your pleasure and volante that I shall pursewe my wordes I shall shew you euerye thynge as I knowe. Thus as I shewed you before kynge John of Castel assembled his people as soone as he myghte, and so came with a great puissaunce and strength to wardes Lysbone or the kynge of Portyngale that nowe is was crowned to put the Portyngales in feare, and shewe howe they hadde right to the heryteage of Portyngale. And so fyrste he came before saint Ysayne which was the entre of Portyngale, & there he rested two dayes, they of the towne with the gouernours therof were in great feare with his compynge, because of the great nōbre of mē of warre that were with him, and so they yelded vppe theyr towne to hym. And after he had taken theyr possessyon, and lefte men of armes to kepe the towne for feare of rebellion. Then he departed with all his hoost, and so went till he came before the towne of Tuy whiche was ryghte stronge, there he layed hys siege, and a greate parte of them of Tuy helde with the Quene of Castell. For the ladye Elyanoure had it ymitted to her for her dowrye, wherefore lightlye they yelded them to the kynge of castell, and became hys subiectes, and was vnder hys obeysaunce. And whan the kynge of Castell hadde taken possessyon there, he lefte men of armes to kepe it. And when he hadde so done, he passed the ryuer and wente to the towne of Valencennes in Portyngale, and thereto layde hys siege, and he sent his messagere vnto them that were wythin, that they should yelde them and their towne vnto hym.

And they of Ualence answered and sayde, let the kynge of Castell passe forth and go to Lisbone and as sone as they myghte knowe that he hath wonne that citie eyther by loue, feare or perforce, that then incontinent they woulde delyuer vp the keyes of their towne to hym. Thys answere pleased rychte well the kynge of Castell, and so departed fro Ualence. In lyke wyse dyd they of another citie called Serpe whiche was stronge & faire, the kyng thought to haue gone thyther, but when he knew their composytion, he was contente, and came not there, but so toke the waye to Lysbone, for he knewe yf he myght subdue that cytye he shold haue all the residue of the countrey at his ease and where soeuer he wente he had wyth hym the Quene his wyfe, to shewe thereby to the Portyngales that the right was hys and that by good and iust caule he would conquere his wifes heritage.

THus king Iohn of Castel came with all his hoste before Lysbone, and there laid a greate siege, & shewed well by his syege that he would not depart thens til he had that citie at his pleasure, and greatly threatened master Denise, who was within the cytye, & sayd howe that if he might gete him, he shoulde dye an euyll death, and all the rebelles with hym. The kynge of Castelles hoste was great for he had muche people, for the Spaniardes, and Frenche men that were there closed so the citie aboute that none coulde yssue out nor entre in out he were taken or slayne, & sometyme it fell by skirmysshes and otherwyse that the Spaniardes toke some Portingales, the the Spanyardes woulde put out theyr eien, or strike of a fote or an arme, or some other membre, and so sente them in againe into the citie commaundynge them to saye that they dyd, they dyd in dispite of the Lisbonois and of theyr mayster Denyce whom they would make theyr kynge and also shew them plainely that we shall hold thys syege heare so longue that we shall haue them perforce, by famyne or otherwyse, & then they shall all dye an euell death, and set fire on the citie without mercy or pitie. And when the Lysbonoys toke ony of them they dyd not so, for the kinge that now is of Portingale made them to be well kept at their ease, and so sente them againe in to the host without onye hurte or domage of their persones, wherefore some said in the host that it was done of a great gentilnesse, for he rendred good for euyll. And syr while this siege endured which was an whole yeare and more, euery weke there was one or two skirmishes and dedes of armes done, and some hurte and slayne on the one parte or on the other. The kynge of Castell helde as well his siege by water as by lande and had plentie of vytaylles, for it came to his host from all parties out of Castell, and on a daye it happened at askymyche ỳ was made at one of the gates, by Iohn Laurence of coigne who was capitaine of the Citie issued oute of the barryers with his penon of the armes of Coygne before hym, and with hym a good numbre of proper men of warre, and at that skirmisshe there was done many a proper feate of armes, and many a darte caste. By my fayth said the duke of Lancaster of all the feates armes that the Castellians and they of youre countrey doeth vse, the castinge of their dartes beaste pleaseth me, and gladly I would se it, for as I here say if they strike one rychte, without he be well armed the darte will pearse hym through, by my faithe sir saide the squier ye saie trouthe, for I haue sene many a great stroke geuen with them, whiche at one time cost vs derelie and was to vs great displeasure, for at the saide skirmisshe sir Iohn Laurence of Coygne was striken with a darte in suche wyse that the heade perced all the plates of his cote of maile and a iacke stopped with silke and passed throughe his bodie, so that he fel downe dead, and therwith ceased the skirmisshe because of the deth of the knight and so was the ladie Elianoure a widowe in one yere of both her husbandes.

FOr this sir Iohn Laurence of Coygne was made great mone, for he was a valiaunt knight and ful of good counsaile, & after his death there was chosen to be capitaine of Lisbone a cosine of his a rychte valiaunt man called pouuasse of Coyne, he made against the Spaniardes three or foure issues, and dyd to them great domage. ¶ Thus contynued the syege at Lysbone, and surely oftentymes they within the towne were sore abasshed, for they coulde se no comforte come to them from any part, and when they sawe that none came out of Englonde whereon lay all their trust. Then the kynge that nowe is was counsailed to haue taken a shyp, and so to haue come hyder in to Englonde, for sir Iohn Uasigoths of passe

syr John Cele Doze, and the Archdeacon of Lysbone whom they had sent hyther into Englande, to the kyng here and to you, & to the erle of Cambrydge, your brother for to haue some cõfort and ayde, when they retourned into Lysbone, they brought tydinges how that ye wold haue comforted them, in the name of god sayd the duke all that is of truth, and so had I done and was ready and at the poynt to haue departed, but as then the warre of Flaunders and of Gaunt dyd let me, for the Gauntoyse came hyther for ayde and helpe, and so all such or the most part of them that shoulde haue gone with me into Portyngale hente into Flaunders, with ỳ bishop of Norwyche syr Henry Derrye, and so that letted my iourney into Portyngale in the name of god sayd the squier it was thou got among vs that there was some greate let, in England so that you could not come hyther, howbeit we did as well as we myght, & mayntayned our selfe valyauntly agaynst the kynge of Castell and all his puyssaunce wherby was no small thyng, for he had no then .lx. M. men by sea and by land, and threatned to brenne and to sleye vs without mercy. And syr thus while thys syege endured an Erle of our countreye of Portyngale called the erle of Angouse did vs on a day great socour, wherby he attayned great honour, for he with .xx. galeys arryued at the porte of Portyngale with a good number of men of armes, & prouisiõ, & so came sayling by the sea before Valence, and through the grace of god he came by the kynge of Castelles army as they lay at ancre before Lysbone who were no then a .C. great vessells, how be it he dyd his enterprysse so graciously, and had the wynde at so good a poynte, that in despyte of all his enemyes he entred saueye without peryll with al his galeyes, into the hauen of Lysbone, and at his comynge in, conquered, fower shippes of his enemyes, & brought them with hym into the hauen, of whose commyng all that were in Lysbone were right ioyous, for it comforted them greatly. By my fayth sayd the duke of Lancastre, the erle of Angouse at that time dyd you a fayre seruice. But nowe fayre Lawrence, shewe me howe was this siege rayssed, and by what maner, I would gladly heare you speake therof. syr sayd the squier I shall shewe you with a right good wyll.

AS I haue shewed you the siege endured more then a yere before Lysbone, and the king of castell hadde swoyne and avowed ỳ he wold not depart from the syege til he had the citie vnder his obeysaunce, wythout the puissaunce of a greater kynge then he was, rayssed hym therfro by force. And truly al thynges considered the kyng of Castell kept wel his avow for the puyssaunce of a greater kynge than he was rayssed him, and caused him to departe, I shall shewe you how, a pestylence and mortalitye merueylous fearefull fell in his oost, in such wyse, that men dyed sodeynly, speaking one to another, there dyed no then .xx. M. personnes, wherof the kyng was sore afrayde, wherefore it was counsayled him to depart thence, and to drawe to sayncte Ysayne, or to some other part, and breake vp the syege, & to geue leaue to his people to depart tyll the pestilence were ceased, wherby he dyd sore agaynst his wyll because he had swoyne so solemply to kepe the syege, howbeit of necessitie he was fayne to depart, Therfore syr we say, and hath bene sayd in Portyngale, and it is the commõ opinion ỳ god dydde send that pestylence into the kynge of Castelles hoost to ayde vs and our kynge that nowe is, for in the citye wherin we were closed, there dyed nother man nor womã of that sickenes, thys grace god dyd for vs. And when the kynge of Castell dyslodged fro Lysbone, the king of Portyngale that nowe is, caused all suche as were within the citye to be armed, and to leape on theyr horses, and to folowe the trayn of ỳ king of Castelles hoost, and there we dyd them great domage, for they dyslodged not in good araye, wherby they lost part of theyr men and prouysyõ, but the kinge of Portyngale made a crye, that on payne of death no manne to take anye thing ỳ they found in the feld nor to bryng anything therof into the citye, but commaunded euery thyng to be brent to thentent ỳ it shoulde bring none infection into the citye. So prouysyon and euery thing was couerted into flame of fyre, howbeit, I thinke such as fond either golde or syluer, in money or plate brent it not, but saued it as well as they myght. So thus ỳ kynge of Castel went to sayncte Ysayne, at the entre of his countrey and there tarryed a season, & sente for more succour into Fraunce, & specially into Gascoyne, & Byerne, & into ỳ landes of ỳ erle of Foys, & he sent thither .iii. somers ladẽ with nobles of castel & florayns to gyue i prest to knyghtes and squyers, for he knewe well otherwyse,

he should not have them come out of their hou ses. And when the barons and knyghtes of ꝯ royalme of Portyngale on the party of ꝯ kyng that nowe is sawe howe the kynge of Castell had rayſed his syege which had endured more then a yeare, they toke ryght great courage, and so dyd al the comons of the countrey, and specially they of Porte, Ewze, and Connymbres.

Than they toke counsaple togyther shortely to crowne to their kynge maister Denyse whom they had chosen and geuen him their loue, and sayd how that it was goodes wyll that he should be their kynge, for he had shewed his vertue agaynst the Spaygnyardes, then a commaundement was made throughout all Portyngale euery man to come to Conymbres at a certayn daye lymytted to the coronacyon of maister Denyse, all such as toke his part came thyther and according to the puissaunce of that realme there was much people, there kynge Johan of Portyngale was crowned by the bysshoppes and prelates of the royalme with great solempnitye as it appertayned on Trinity sondaye the yeare of our lorde God. M.CCC.lxxx. and. iiii. In the cathedrall church of Conymbres called saynt Maryes, whych day the kyng made new knyghtes, what of his owne countrey, as of straungers to the noumbre of.lx. There was kept a great feast .ii. or .iii. dayes, and there the kyng renewed all homages of Earles, barons knyghtes and squyers, and such as held of him and there the king swore to kepe the realme in ryght and iustyce, and to mayntayne all their iurysdictions, and euery man swore to take him for their kyng, and his heyres comyng of hym, male or female, that to lyue in the payne neuer to forsake them, thus kynge Johan of Portyngale was crowned kyng.

When the kyng of Castell knewe how the comons of Portingale had crowned maister Denyse to their kyng, & had sworn to him fayth and homage then he was more displeased the he was before for he had thought they would not have done it so solemnly because he hadde many of the nobles of Portyngale wyth hym, then he sayd, I se well it behoueth me perforce, to conquere, ꝑ is myne & I wyll haue it, there shall neuer be peace betwene Castell and Portyngale till the Portingales haue amended that they haue don And so after the kyng was crowned he came to Lysbone, and there taried and toke greate diligence to set in a good way, the busines of his royalme, and to get thereby the grace, good will and loue of his people, and sente his knyghtes and men of warre into diuers garysons, into townes and castelles on the frontiers of Spain for the kyng of Castell lay at Seyll, The kyng of Portingale sent in garison to Trentonle, sir John Ferant Perreir, an experte man of armes, & baygaunt knyghte and of hye enterprise and with him sir Martin Vas of Coigne, and his brother syr Willia Vas, two .2. perte knyghtes, and they had vnder them .CC. speares of good men of warre well horsed, and to the castell of Leue towarde Juberoth was sente, syr John Rodrges with .L. speares, and to the city of Valece in Portyngale was sent syr John James of Saulles, to lye in garyson agaynste the strong towne of Tuy, whyche was as then yelden to the kyng of Castell when he came toward Lysbone, and in Tuy there lay in agarison a greate noumbre of men of armes fetch and Castellyans, and to the cite of Serp was sent sir Mondech Rodrgo a noble knyght with .L. speares, but to Porte, to Ewze, and to Connymbres was sent no menne of warre, for the king thought them strong ynoughe of them selfe, and true and faythfull to hym. Thus syr in the same yeare that the kyng was crowned, the garysons were well prouided for, and often times there were encountrynges, skyrmyshes, and assaultes on bothe partyes, one tyme oure men wanne, and another time they lost, as the aduenture of armes falleth, but specially there was afore encountre by them of the garyson of Trentonle, agaynst the Castellians. I Lanerence sayd the duke of Lancastre, passe not the matter so byrtely, but let me knowe how it was and what was done, whe they mette in the feldes, for I would gladly heare speaking of dedes of armes. Syr sayd the squyer I shal shew you what was there done, for at the same encountre I was present, and bare that daye the baner of syr John Ferant Perreir, by whome the bulyne began, for he was as the captaine of Trentonle.

The king of Castell had prouided men of warre on the frontiers of Portyngale, who sometime to do vs domage assembled theselfe togyther, and toke the feldes, & sometyme lost and sometime wanne. And so on a season .vii. capptaynes, of Spanyerdes, good knyghtes, and of hygh lygnage, assembled them togyther, with the noumber of .iii. C. speares well

horsed hauynge great desire to do vs domage as they well shewed, for they came and entred into Poytyngale, and toke a great praye and many prisoners, and yf they had woulde they might haue entred againe in to Castell without any encounterynge, but they were so high mynded and prowde that they sayde they woulde go and se the garyson of Treutouse, they of the plaine coutrey fledde before them, soo that tydynges of them came in to Treutouse, and whan sir John Ferrant Partelere knewe the Castellians rode abrode, he called for his harneis, and caused the trompettes to be sowned, and so awoke all the knightes and squiers in the towne, euerye man armed hym in greate haste, and mounted on their horses, and issued out of Treutouse, and whan they were in ꝑ feldes they were a. CC. & so put theselfe in good order, and shewed howe they had greate affection to fynde theyr enemyes, and demaunded of them that came flyeng into the towne where their enemyes were, and they answered and sayde howe they were not farre thens, and howe they rode but a softe pace because of the great praye that they caried with them, with those tydinges sir Johan Ferrant Partelere was right ioyous and sayde to hys companye, as to sir John Martine of Vas, & syr William Vas his brother. Sirs I require you let vs auaunce forwarde, I wyll not enter into any towne or Castell in Poytyngale, tyll I haue seue our enemies, and fyght wyth them, and put to my payne and trauaile to recouer the praye and prisoners that they leade with them, and then he sayd to me. Laurence display my baner, for it is time, we shall fynde shortely ouer enemyes, than I dyd as he commaunded me, and so we roode forthe a good pace, & at the last we sawe where the dust rose with the horses of oure enemyes, then we toke the dauntage of the sune and came on them, & when the Castellians saw vs they helde them selfe close together, and ordred themselfe, and set theyr prisoners and pray on theyr one syde & we approched so nere together that we myght speke to them, and they to vs, and then we sawe howe they had. iii. baners, and. iiii. penōs and to oure iudgement a. CCC. horse.

Fyrst there was sir John Radigos de Castenans knight and baron in Castell, sir Sluegrefie of Zuenes, syr Adiountall of Tolet of Castell, sir John Radigo of Eure, and Diostenses of Angouse, & when we wer before thē we lyghted on foote, and in lykewyse soo dyd they, and deliuered their horses to pages and barlettes, and or we begā to tast darres or to do anye feate of armes the capytaynes spake eche to other, I that was there present heard all the wordes that were spoken on both partyes, for my mayster sir John Ferant Partelere whose baner I bare was one of ꝑ formest & the wordes that were spoken were by hym and to hym. First he demaūded why they rode in Poytyngale leadynge awaye suche prayes and prisoners as they had taken, then sir Adiountall of Tolet answered and sayde they wold ryde as they lyste, to puny the them that be duke beyaunte to the kynge of Castell to whome the herytage of Poytyngale partamed, and by cause they founde them rebelles, therfore they sayde they ouer rynne the coūtre & take praies and prisoners. Well sirs sayde sir John Ferrant ye shall not leade them longe, for we will rescue them, ye haue no ryghte to come and to ouer ryne this countrey, ye know wel ynoughe we haue a kinge all redye who wyll kepe his royalme in right and kepe Justice, and punishe theues and robbers. Therfore we saye vnto you in this behalfe, al that ye haue taken in the royalme of Poytyngale leue it behynde you and departe hens, or elles in oure ryghte & iust quarell we wyll fyghte with you, then the Spanyardes answered, ꝑ prisoners that we haue taken we well not delyuer agayne, but as for the other pray we will take aduise. Thē the. bii. capitaynes of Castell dzewe them together, and shewed that for all that they were come to se the garison of Treutouse, yet they would haue ben glad to haue departed without batayle, and when they had counsayled, thē they said how they would leaue their pray behynde them, but the prisoners they woulde lede with them. Nay not so sayde the Poytyngales, for we will ye leue all, or elles ye shall haue batayle and so weute together, and there was a fore bataile for there were on both parties good men of warre, and the fielde where as they fought was faire and playne, they caste eche at other dartes so fore that who soeuer was striken without he were well armed was slayne or sore hurte, there were manye proper feates of armes done, and there sir John Ferrant Partelere fought with an axe right valyauntlye, and so dyd his. ii. companyons, on the other partie the Spanyardes foughte right valiauntly. Thus they foughte the space of. iii. houres, whiche was meruayle that men coulde endure so longe in their armure for

kynge, but the great delyre that eyther partye had to winne honoure, caused them to endure the moze payne, and syr sureliye Spanirdes, and Poztyngales are hard men in Battayle, & specially when they se it is of necessitye, thus they fought longe that no mā knewe who had the better. their battaile was so egall. And syr thanked be God there was nother baner noz penon on our syde that day ouerthzowen, but fynally theyr syde began to open and wer beaten downe on euery syde, so that the dyscomfyture fell on them, then the pages fled awaye to saue themselfe, & of the. vii. capytaynes that were there present, there scaped away but one and that was by the meanes of his page who brought him his hozse, he did his maister good seruice that day, & that was Aoyentall Cassel all the other. vi. were slayne, foz there was neuer a man taken to raūsome. Thus syr John Ferrant Pertelere and his company obtained the victozy of their enemyes, who were thzee against two, and this was on a tuesday in the moneth of Octobze nere to Treutouse, in the yere of our lozde. M. CCC. lxx. and. iiii.

¶ Howe Laurence Fongale shewed the Duke of Lancastre ꝑ maner of the batayle of Juberoth betwene the king of Castel & the king of Poztyngale. Cap. xlv.

AND after this discomfyture on our enemyes our men mounted on theyr hozses, and there we delyuered suche pzisoners as the Castellyans had taken before, & also gaue thē suche pyllage as their enemyes had gotten, except the besses whiche were in numbze an. viii. hundzeth all those we dzaue in to the garison of Treutouse foz victayllynge of the towne as it was reason, and there we wer receyued with great ioye they wiste not what chere to make us bycause we had delyuered ꝑ coūtrey of theyr enemies, & rescued that they had lost, wherby we had great pzaise through al ꝑ townes of Poztyngale, & fur in the same yere our men had another faire iozney on theyr enemies in the feld of Sybylle, but syr fyrste I shall shewe you the moost happiest iourney that the kynge of Poztyngale had oz anye kynge before him in CC. yere before, whiche was done within. iiii. monethes before that the kyng sent vs hyther oure enemyes were iiii. agaynste one of good men of warre and of high empzise, wherefoze our iourney ought to be the moze pzaise. But syr I thinke ye haue hard therof al redy, wherfoze I thinke best to speke not therof, nay said the duke ye shall not leue so, ye shall shewe me the whole pzocesse, foz I wold gladly here you speke therof, yet of trouth I haue an heraulte here with me called Derby who was there at the battaile as he saith, and he shewed me that suche Englysshe men as were there dyd meruayles in armes, and moze by his repozte thē I beleue was of trouth, foz ther was no great nomoze of them wherby any great feate shuld be done by them, foz my brother ꝑ erle of Cambzidge whē he came out of poztingale brought agayne wyth hym suche Englysshe men as went thyder. But there be manye of these Heraultes be such lyers that they wyll exalt such as they lyst beyonde measure. But foz all that the noblenesse of them that be good is not lost noz enpayred thoughe it be not shewed by thē. Therfoze it is good to knowe it by the repozt of other that knowe it. ¶ Syr sayde Laurence of all the straungers that were at the batayle of Juberoth with the kynge of Poztyngale, there passed not two hundzed men Englysshe, Gascoynes, and Almaynes, and the greatest Capytaynes that were there of the straungers were two Gascoynes, and one of Almayne of the duchy of Guyles. The Gascoynes were called syr Wyllyam of mountferrant, and Bernardon, and ꝑ Almaine Albert of Englysshmen there were a certaine archers but I herde none named but. ii. squiers Nozthbery and Hartecell, and they were called to counsayle with the kynge and other lozdes before the battayle. Well sayde the duke pzocede forth and tel me of ꝑ iourney and how it was fought I require you, sir saide the squier wyth a right good will, foz syr to shewe you & other howe it was I am sente hyther fro the kynge my master.

¶ Then Laurence Fongale renewed his tale and spake of the busynesse of Juberoth and said thus, syr ye haue heard by me, & also by other that after the cozonation of the king of Poztingale at Conimbzes, the kinge of Castell who had rayse d his siege fro Lysbone, foz the death of Pestilence that fel in his

and so went to Ypres, and it was layd howe it greued him sore when he was enformed of the coronacion of my cousin the lorde, kyng John of Portingale, for the kynge of Castell claymed, and yet doth, right in the heritage and crowne of Portyngale by the right of his wyfe daughter to kyng Ferrant late the last deyed: yet do. for suche cause as I haue shewed you before. In thus the kyng of Castell was counsayled to sende for ayde of warre, where he myght get them, and specially into Fraunce, for the frenchmen had alwayes aided him, & succoured him at all, and the kyng his father in lyke wyse, and it was, right to turne by his counsayle, ye nede nothinge but one to warre against them of Portyngale. for by puissaunce if ye may kepe the feld and fyght with them the ye shal come to your entent. for there is great hatred alredy in Portingale, as ye se and perceyue well. for there is here with you of the noblest persons of the realme, and they haue submitted the selfe vnder your obeysaunce, wherfore thinge greatly forderth your warre, if ye auaunte your selfe with puissaunce to fyght with this bastard of portingale who they call haue crowned to their kynge or he gette ayde of the Englishemen, ye are lyke to ouerthrowe hym, and if ye winne the iourney, all the realme is yours, for it is no great matter to wyn it after. Soo by suche counsayle and other tydynges John of Castell auaunced him selfe to sende letters & messagers into Fraunce, Bretayne, Normandye, Burgoyne, & into diuers other places where as he thought to haue men of armes knyghtes & squiers for his money or for loue, or such as held ayde of him, and specially there came many knyghtes and squiers to him out of Byerne, and so on a day as he was at saynt Yzayne he assembled his people to the nombre of vi. or vii. c. speres & xxx. M. spanyardes al on horsebacke all hauing delyte to be by dooing.

TIdynges came into Portyngale to the kyng and to the lordes there, & to them of the good townes & citees such as were of the kynges partye, and it was shewed them what nombre and puissaunce the kyng of Castell was of, and howe he was fully determyned to come and lay syege againe to Lysbone there the kyng of Portingale and his counsayle assembled together, and there the most notables persons of the realme sayd, the kyng were best to go out of the city, and to mete with his enemyes rather then to be closed in anye citee or towne in Portyngale, for if they were besieged they should haue much payne to be founde them, & they cite and castle in the meane season. For Castell and might ryde about at their pleasure as they fyld, and conquere townes citees, and castelles outher by force or by loue and entreaty all the playne countrey, and peraduenture at length them within the citye, where for they sayd to the kynge. Syr, if we go out against them and take a place conuenient to fyght, we thinke this were best and most profytable, for by we know well ye shall not profytably enioy the crowne of Portyngale, where with we haue crowned you, without it be by batayle, and at the least ones of simple to ouerthrowe your aduersary the king of Castell and his puissaunce, and if we may discomfite him then we shall be lordes of the countrey.

And if we be ouercome the royalme is in aduentage, but better it were for vs to seke batayle then to be fought on, a more honourable it were for vs. for yf it hath bene often tymes sene that the setters on hath auauntage of the defenders, therfore for we will counsayle you to sende for the your letters and messangers to all suche as ye thinke will serue you. Then the kyng answered and sayd, Syrs ye speke wel and I wil do as ye haue adayned. Then the kyng set his clarkes on worke to write letters and wrote to euerye man that they should come to the porte of Portyngale or nere there about, at a certayne day nympted, howbeit all suche as were written vnto came not thither. for as than all the royalme toke not full parte with him, but dissimuled and taryed to se howe the matters should frame at length, and some were gone out of their owne countrey to the kynge of Castell by cause they sayde that the kyng of Castell had more right to the crowne of Portingale than our king had, howbeit for al that the king my soueraygne lorde wrote to Connymbres and there made his assemble of suche men of warre as he could gette, and truly he had with him the chosse men of al Portingale and of most auctority, as of Erles, Barons, knightes and squiers, & also he had v.c. hundred speres of squiers and v.M. foote men. Then he ordayned a constable and Marshal. The constable was therle of Nauar, & marshal sir Anne Perrye, both right sage knightes & hardy men of warre, then they departed fro Connymbres and toke the waye to Cobra that is Auberoth, and rode fayre and

safely to ease theselfe and theyr hozses, and ꝑ theyr prouision might folowe theym in good ozdze, and they hadde fozeryders on befoze to auewe the deme anyng of the Castellyans. at thys tyme syr Johan Ferrante Portiere was not come to the kynge, he was at the garyson of Dozech a.d. leges fro Juberoth, & I thynke he knewe not as than that the kynge shoulde fyght with his enemyes.

I Suppose the kyng of Castell was well enfourmed howe the kynge of Poztyngale was coming to him warde with hys puyssaunce, and when he knewe it he had therof great ioy, & so had all his men as they shewed & anone they determined to come on agayns hs, and to fyght with hs, & specially ꝑ gascoynes of Byerne, that wer there foze displesed to fyght with hs, foz they delyzed to haue ꝑ fyrst batayle, and so they had, and syr Wyllyam of Mountferant a Gascoyne, who was ther an our partye sayde surely howe we shoulde haue batayle because they of Byerne were agayns hs, who euer delyzeth nothyng but battayle.

Then the kyng of Castell with all hys batayle came the next day, and lodged at the castell of Lerre, a two lenges fro Juberoth and the next day we came to the Cabase & lodged there, and ꝑ night the kynge of Castell lodged but a ly tell legge fro Juberoth foz he knewe well what way we toke, and howe we lodged at Juberoth.

SYr the Poztyngales hath hadde alwayes great trusse and confydence in god and in ꝑ good foztune of ꝑ place of Juberoth, and wherfoze they at ꝑ time rested there. Why sayd ꝑ duke haue they so good hope in that place rather than in another syr sayde the squyer auncyently ꝑ great Charlemayne who was kynge of Fraunce and of Almayne, and Emperoure of Rome who was in his tyme a great cõqueroure at this place of Juberoth, he discomfyted .vii. kynges of the miscreauntes, and there were slayne of the infydelles a.C.M. This is auncyently found in hilozyes and chronycles, and by reason of that batayle he conquested Connimbres, & all the countrey of Poztingale & brought it into chrysten fayth, and bycause of ꝺ great victozy ꝑ he had ther against goddes enemyes he founded there an abbaye of blacke monkes, and gaue them great rente in Poztyngale & in Castell, & also syr about a C.C. yeare paſt, there was at the same place a great battayle & sorye slaughter achieued by ꝺ kyng de that was at that time partner to the kyng of Castell, foz before that time there was neuer kynge in Poztingale, it was called the countye of Poztingale, and so it was that there was betwene ꝑ kyng of Castell & the erle of Poztyngale had mortal warre togither foz partition of landes, so that there could be founde no peace betwene them but mortall warre togyther. The matter touched so much the erle of Poztingale & the Poztingales ꝑ they had rather to haue bene dead ꝑ to haue bene vnder the subiection of the kyng of Castell & so they toke a day of batayle, & there the kynge of Castell was so puissaunt ꝑ he was.x. agaynst one so ꝑ he set nothinge by the Poztingales, so at the cabase of Juberoth was there batail right cruell, and finally the Poztyngales obteyned ꝑ victozy, & the Castellyans discomfyted & the kyng of Castell taken, by whose taknyge the erle of Poztyngale had peace as he wolde, then the bounders were set of the departing of Castell and Poztyngale.

ANd then bycause the Poztingales sawe ꝑ god had sent theym the victozy with so small a nõbze against so great a puissaunce then they thought to augment theyr land and to make it a realme, so the prelates & nobles of the countrey crowned theyr fyrst kynge at Connimbres & made him to ryde throughout his realme, with a crowne of Lawrell on hys head signifyeng honour & victozy, as auncyently kynges were wonte to do. & so euer syth the realme hath had a kynge, foz syr surely rather than the Poztingales wolde be vnder ꝑ subiection of the Castellians, they wolde take one oz other that were farre of fro the blood of ꝑ kinge of Poztingale, & the kynge were dead without issue male, & sir when the king of poztingale that nowe is came to the place of Juberoth, all these matters were shewed him & thus whyles that the constable and marshall were ozdeyng of theyr batayles there came to the kynge syr John Ferrante Portiere, who came the same mozninge fro hys garyson of Dozech & brought with him .lx. speres, ꝑ kyng had great ioy of his comming, and when all our batayles were ozdeyned & that we abode foz nothing but foz our enemyes, & that our fozeryders were sent fozth to espye theyr demeanyng, the king then my soueraygne lozde came in amonge hys men, and caused silence to be made, & then he sayd, syrs ye haue crowned me

kynge, that we owe you trouth & loyaltynes, for this I am to forward and specially in thys place of Juberoth, I shal neuer returne agayne into Portingale without I fight with myne enemyes. they euery man answered and said for we shal abyde with you, and knowe for trouth we shal not flye thens daye.

Thus the batayles approched to the Castellyans had great delyte to fynde vs, and to fight as they well shewed, & we for lyke our forewardes to se & know what our enemyes dyd, & they lasted fro vp mase thaw vi houres, & that we herd no tidinges of them so that we thought we had lost them, howbeit at y last they returned & brought vs sure word of them & what nombre they were of by all lykelyhode, & they shewed vs howe theyr boward were a. bii. M. men of armes armed cap a pe, as freshe & as well horsed as coulde be deuised, & in the kinge of Castelles rereward there were a. xxx. M. horse of good men of armes. And when our kyng and his company knewe the nombre of theyr enemyes, & how y theyr boward were a two leges & before y kyng of the Gascoynes and Straungers were not ryd of accord with the Castellyans, then we determined to kepe vs close together in oure strength, & to make fyue wynges to our batayle & our men of armes whereof we had but. vi. M. vi. CCCC. I purpose to be betwene the two wynges, for there might well haue bene sene good order of batayle & people well ordered, and then it was commaunded by the kyng on payne of death y no man take that day no prysoner, this was determyned amonge vs for the best for as y lordes & capitaynes sayd, if we should entend to take prysoners it should dereyne vs & make vs take no hede of y we should do, for it was sayd, that it were better for vs to fighte well then to take hede of takyng of prysoners, & to se our lines direly as good people ought to do. This word was vpholden and obserued then our enemyes came before vs close together like good men of warre, and thē alyghted on foote & trimmed theyr harneys & let theyr horses go, & so came & approched vs fyersly, for ye shal there was the flowre of chyualry, and that they shewed wel, betwene vs and theym there was a litell dyke no greter but y a knyght armed myght well passe ouer, howbeit to vs it was a litell auauntage for in y passynge there of our men y were on both wynges with their partes did hurte & mayme dyuers & dyd sore trouble them. & when they were ouer the dike then they assembled them ageyns vs, for they thought y the kyng of Castel with his great bataile had folowed them at hand, but it was not so for they were all vnfrō & slayne, & the kyng of Castell came nere hande vs, I shal shewe you by what meanes they were thus led in betwene vs, and the cōmons of our cōtrey, who lay on behind them with axes and other weapons without sparing, and our me of armes who were freshe came on ageynst thē, & caused thē to renne backe & to fal in y dyke, one vpon another, for al this was done in lesse the halfe an houre, and there was slayne in the feld of men of armes mo the. iiii. M. and none taken to raūsome, for whē any knight or squyer of ours would haue taken any prysoner other of theyr cōpany would slee thē or theyr hādes.

Thus clerely without recouerye the boward of our enemyes were discomfited then came the kyng of Castel with his bataile, wherin he had. xxx. M. men well horsed, but whē they approched it was nere night and they knewe nothyng what mischefe was fallen on theyr boward, and thē they came & mustred themselfe before vs a. CCCCC. of thē lept with theyr horses ouer the dike, but for all suche as passed ouer neuer repassed ageyne, for there was slayne a great part of the noble me & such as desyred feles of armes and a great nombre of the barōs and knightes of Portingale such as were there with the kyng of Castell ageynst vs, & when our people sawe our enemyes so discomfited, then we passed ouer the dike, for in. xi. places the dike was stopped vp ded me & tooke our horses & folowed y chase but y was not farre, for it was nyght we would not folyshly go farre for dout of bushementes nor also we were not so wel horsed as the Castellyans, for surely if we had they had receyued more domage then they dyd, and the kyng of Castell taken or slayne, but the nyght came on so darke saued him and many other, for I shal shewe you the names of the moste part of the noble men of Fraunce, Gascoynes & Portyngales that dyed in the feld at the batayle of Juberoth.

First the erle Don John Alphons, Seneschal of Portingale, the greate pyeure of seynt Johns in Portingale. Don Dyganores his brother. Ange Salnare of Genene le John Tusalle, syr Dangoues, Mēdozich. Dyche

Perlement, Peter Reformant, Angotes of Bertaunt, the gret mayster of Calestrante and his brother called Don Diego Dygores, Peter Gouffart of Debail, John Rampys of Rie viers, the great mayster of saint Jaques. And of Frenchmē fyr John of Ryx. fyr Jeffray Ri con. fyr Godfrey Dertenaye. fyr Espaynolet of Spurac, fyr Reynold of Belper, a knyght, called Lymolyn marshall of the kynge of Ca stelles host. a of galeppns of Berne the lorde of Vierne. the lorde of Moyran. the lorde of Byn goles. fyr Raymond Vilrach. fyr Bertram of Marnage. fyr John of Aloigne. fyr Raymonde of Valentyne. fyr Adam of mourale. fyr Arem unt of Barement. fyr Peter of Barembure. & diuers other, in the nū. of. C. knyghtes & squy ers all gentylmen. Nowe fyr I shall shewe you the names of the that were slayne on our party. Fyrst the erle of Nauar, constable of Por tingale, Galopes Portehe, Peter Portehe, & Agalype ferraut Portehe his brother, Donate of Coygne, Egeas Toille of Podich, Dasshe & balle martine of miele, & his son balle mar tine who was striken with a dart clene thrugh by his body. Also there was slayne Gouball nas of Gerle, Aine Pezze marshall of the oste a good knyght, Radigos Perriere, John Ja mes of Salues, John Radigo cosin to the kyng of Aminondelque, Radigo Radiges Vale rencreux. Hendrignes of Valcoureux. Then the duke of Lancastre began to laugh, & Lau rence Fongase demaunded & sayd, fyr why do you laugh. Why sayde the duke, there is good cause why, I neuer heard so straunge names as I haue heard you reherce. Syr sayd he, by my fayth all these names we haue in our coun trey, & moze straunger I beleue you wel sayd the duke. But Laurence what became of the kyng of Castell after this discomfiture, made he any recouery, oz hyd he close him selfe in a ny of his townes. oz did the kyng of Portyn gale folowe him the next day. Any surelye syr sayd Laurence, we folowed the no further, but abode still in the same place where the feld was all night, & the next day till noone, then we re couered to the castell of Vierne, & two litel leg ges fro Juberoth, & so fro thens to Compyn bres, & the kyng of Castell went to sayne Pzayne & there toke a barge. xiiii. tb him, & rowed to a great shyp and so went by the sea to Sybyll where the quene was, & his men went some one way & some another like people dismayd, with out recouery. for they lost much, & of their da mage they are nye like to recouer it of a greate reason. Now it be by the puissaice of the kynge, & specially the kynge of Portyngale who his coūsayle knowe wel that the Castellans wyll purchase nede out of Fraunce. Wherfore they be assured togyther. Therfore we be sent into this countrey to the kyng of Englande, and to you then the duke sayd. Laurēce ye shal not depart hens till ye be ate the pon good wynges But I pray you shewe me of the other encoū tryng the kynt men had at the feld of Sybyll as ye spake of ryghte newe, for I would gladly e here of dedes of armes though I be no good knyght my self. Sir sayd the squyer with right good will I shall shewe you.

After the sayde honourable fourtune the kyng John of Portyngale bade at the Cubase of Juberoth, & the he was retour ned the great tryph to the city of Lysbone, & there was no tidinges of any newe assemblye of the Castellians or Frenchmen but held them in garysons. Then the kynge of Castell depar ted fro Sybyll & the quene his wife with hym & went to Burgus in castell, & so our men and theyrs made warre togither by garysons, & so on a time the erle of Nauar constable of Por tyngale entred into Castell into the feldes of Sybil with. xl speares, & came before a towne called Valewyde within whiche there was a cc men of armes of Castell, the erle of Nauar came to the barryers, & shewed wel how he de maunded batayle of the within, who made no semblaūt to issue out, howbeit they armed the & when our men had bene there as long as e pleased the, the they returned & they had not riden past a leag of the countrey, but the they sawe the of the garisō of Valewyde come galopyng after them, & the capitaynes of them was Dō genes of Padilla an expert mā of armes and the great mayster of sayne Jaques in Galyce, & when our men sawe the so comynge they lyght ted on fote and deliuered their hozses to their pages & the pauysers who were a great nombre would haue set on the pages & barieg to haue taken their hozses fro the, some sayde let vs win their hozses, we can not do them a greater displesure, nay put the to more payne. then to make them returne on fote. then the mayster of sayne Jaques sayde, nay, let be we do so, for if we wyn the maystres we shall soone haue the hozses, let vs alight a fote & fight with the, they shal not endure against vs and thus while the Castellyens were arguing our men passed ouer a litel water the was beyond them,

& there tobe a great grounde & fostered it, and made semblaut as though they cared nothing for theyr horses, & when the Castellyans saw þ they were passed the water. then they repented the þ they had not set on soner thā they did howbeit they thought soone to overcome our men, & so came on them & began to cast dartes & when the Castellyans had explored al theyr artillery, & had no mo dartes to cast, & had soo continued theyr assaute fro noone tyll it was nere nyght. When our men sawe that our enemyes had spent all theyr artillery, then þ erle of Kauar made his bande to passe the water, and al his cōpany, and so dashed in among the Castellyans who anone begā to open for they were sore trauayled, wearied, & chafed, in theyr harneys, so þ they coulde not helpe theym selfe but were all overthrowne & discomfited, & the mayster of iapnel Jaques Kayne, & mo thā.lx. were slayne & the other fled & so they saued theyr horses & wan many other fro the Castellians how say you syr, had not our men þ day a faire aduenture, yes by my faith sayde the duke of Lancastre.

Howe the ambassadours of Portingale had aunswere of the kyng of Englande and great giftes, and how they tooke theyr leaue and went into theyr countreyes. Cap.xlvi.

AND sir bycause of such rencountres & dedes of armes þ our men haue had on theyr enemyes sith þ election of king Johan of Portingale, the Portingales are entred into great loue & most commonly say, þ god is for them & their right, & syr they say not much amis to saye þ god is with the, for in euery thinge as touchinge any dede of armes sithe or much euer syth the deathe of king Ferrant, they haue had the victory, & the erle of Fors þ now is one of the greatest lordes of the worlde and full of high prudence as we knowe by them of his countrey, he sayde þ fortune was with us of Portingale & if the knyghtes of Byerne had beleued hym, whā he departed out of his countrey they shuld not haue armed themselfe against the kinge of Portingale that nowe is wyse and a dyscrete man & feareth god, & loueth holy church, & exalteth it as much as he may, and is ofttymes in his oratory on his knees in hearinge deuyne seruyce, he hath ordayned, for whatsoeuer business it be, þ none speake to him tyl he be out of his oratory, and is a great clerke, and taketh it ill bede of any great seruyce. and syrcyllye he will haue iustice kept in all his realme, and poore men mayntened in theyr right.

Thus syr at your request I haue shewed you the maner of our countrey, and al þ I knowe of the kynge and all his counsayle, and by the I was cōmaunded at my departing fro them to shewe you euery thing that I knewe. Wherfore syr it may please you that I myght haue an aunswere. Lancaster sayd the duke of this time I haue shewed you. and yet again I say it, that your comynge and these tidinges doth me great pleasure. and ye shall not depart fro me tyl ye be satisfyed of all your requestes, and well aunswered in that ye be come for, syr sayd the squyer I thanke you, then the duke called for wine & spyces, & so toke theyr leaue & went to theyr lodging to Ascotch to the house of the Fawcon in London, there they were lodged with Themelin of Celebrunque.

AND it was not longe after but that the duke of Lancastre and the erle of Cambridge his brother had counsayle together of þ busines of Castell & Portingale, wherof the erle of Cambridge was wel content, for he had ben in þ countrey before more then a yere and he was glad to heare of the cōditions and tidinges of the kynge of Portingale. and of the quene of Castell, and sayde to his brother, syr when king Ferrant lined the Chanon Robersarte and syr William Windesore, and diuers other knightes þ were there with me, shewed me as it is nowe fallen, for they said how they had heard diuers of þ same countrey murmure on the quene of Castelles title to Portingale. therfore I toke away with me my sone, & had no great affection to that mariage. In the name of god sayd þ duke, the squyer that is here of Portingale hathe declared all the matter and I thinke we can not haue so fayre an entre into Castell as by Portingale for the realme of Aragon is farre of. and also the kinge there and his chyldren haue alwayes ben more fauourable to the Frenche partye than to vs. Therfore it were not good sith the kynge of Portingale maketh for vs this good offre

to refole it. Soone a boyse for this matter there was a parlyament holde at Westmynster and there it was accorded ꝑ the duke of Lancastre shoulde haue at the costes of ꝑ realme buttwene .M.CC. xii. Capetes of thoses men, & .M. archers & .M. of other pomes, and they were all paied in hande for halfe a yeare, & therewith all the kynges vncles were well content, & specially the duke of Lancastre, to whom pryncipally ꝑ matter touched, & as he ꝑ shuld be chefe of the army, and to dispatche these ambassadours of Spayngale, the kinge of Englande wrote to the kyng of Spayngale louyng letters conteynyng great amitee ꝑ he would bere to Spayngale, & great giftes were geuen to ꝑ mayster of sayne Jaques in Spayngale, & to Laurence Fongale who was alwayes with ꝑ duke of Lancastre, & the earle of Cambrydge & so on a day these ambassadours take their leue of ꝑ kyng & his counsayle, & dined ꝑ day with the duke of Lancastre & the erle of Cãbridge, & the next day they were deliuered, & as I vnderstode, the duke of Lancastre sent letters to the king of Spayngale, & also by credence that he shoulde sende .x. bii. galeys & an. xbiii. or. xx. other vesselles to the port of Bristowe on the fronters of wales for him & his companye to passe into Spayngale. so the ambassadoures departed & went to Hampton, & there founde theyr shyp ꝑ tarryed for theym, & so entred into the sea, & had wind at theyr wyll, & so entred in to the high Spanishe sea, and within .v. dayes they were in the hauen of the Port of Spayngale, at whych tyme the kynge was there and was right ioyful of theyr comyng.

And there the great mayster of sayne Jaques in Spayngale, and Laurẽce Fongale shewed ꝑ kyng & his vncles al ꝑ they had sene & herd in England as well of ꝑ kyng as of his vncles, and deliuered theyr letters which certified all theyr expenges. then among after, the kynge of Spayngale who greatly desyred the ayde out of England, to the entẽt to cause his enemyes to haue the more feare, determined to his counsayle, ꝑ mayster Alphos Pietat chefe patrõ and mayster of al his shippes & galeys in Spayngale ꝑ he shulde prepayre ready, bii galeys and .xbiii. other great shippes, and to sayle into England to fetch the duke of Lancastre & his cõpany, & so Alphons was cõmaunded ꝑ kyng to do, & he incontynent dyd so, and soone a daye departed fro the porte of Spayngale, and in vi. dayes he arryued at Bristowe, at which season the lordes of England for the most part were about the marches of Wales, for the kyng was there when the Duke of Lancaster knewe of the comynge of these shippes he was right ioyfull. Then knyghtes & squiers, and all suche as shuld go with him, were sent for, so that in the porte of Bristowe there were. CC. besydes with the fleete of Spayngale redy apparelled & for ꝑ duke and hys companye, and the dukes entencion was to haue with him his wife & his children & to make with them some good marryages in castel & in Spayngale or his retourne again into England, for he thought not shortly to returne, for he sawe the busynes in England likely to be hote and sharpe, & how the kyng his nephue was yong, and had about hym perillous counsayle, wherfore he was the gladder to be gone, & or he departed in the presence of his brethrne, he ordayned his son the lord Henry erle of Derby his lieutenaunt of al he had in England, & set about him wyse and sad counsaile, he was a lusty yong knyght and was maried to the ladies of Lancastre the lady Blaunche doughter to quene Philip of England, I neuer sawe two better Ladyes, nor of more noble condicion nor neuer shall thoughe I shoulde lyue thyse thousand yeares, shalbe impossible.

When duke John of Lancastre had ordred all his busynes in England, then he toke leaue of the kyng and of his brethrne and so he went to Bristowe, and there tarryed .xb. dayes, and shipped all his horses and baggages, more then .x. M. with hays, litter, & fre the water for them. Then the duke entred into a galey well apparelled, & had by hym a great shippe if nede were for him, and for the duches Constaunce his wife, who went in this iourney, with a good courage, for she trusted therto recouer her heritage of Castell, and to be quyrent there, or she returned again, and she had with her a doughter called Katherine, and by her first husband, if other doughters, Isabel and Philipp, whych Philippe was maryed to syr John Hollãd who was constable of Chester, & the marshall was syr Thomas Morteaux who had also in marriage one of his doughters, howbeit she was a bastard & was inherited to ꝑ lady mareel, damoysel Mary of sayncte Hylary of Hanmon, & gouernal of the dukes nauy, was syr Thomas Percy, also there was sir Ion Fytzwaren, the lord of Lucy, syr Henry Beaumond de poumiers syr John of Burnuil, the lorde Talbot, the lorde Ballet, syr

lyers that were within the bastydes were ready to defend them, and to the entent to fyght more at large hande to hande, they dydde put away the barreres of theyr defences wher as they dyd great folly, but they trusted to muche in theyr owne chyualrye, there was done many a goodly feate of armes, and beard encountrynges, and fore foynynge with speares, but they dyd best that had best dyth, how best there were many of ỹ Englishemen ỹ therfore they gaue the Bretons muche ado. And so by clene force of armes the Englishemen wanne the bayles, so ỹ without the closure of the towne there were no mo than .C. men of armes, so ỹ the Bretons were at the point to haue lost all, & when syr Iohn of Malestroyt & the vycount of Combor sawe the maner, then he cryed hys cry and sayd, what how syrs, shall we lose all thus, on forwarde in fyghtinge we should not fayle but eyther death or honour. Ther the Bretons closed together with great courage & pytched theyr speres and glayues in the erth, and held strongly theyr place and fought courageously, there were many fayre dedes of armes done. so that by force the Englishemen were fayne to recule backe, for they were so well reysted that they could gette no grounde on them, so that they were clene beten out of ỹ bayles, and so as on that day they couldc not wyn it agayne. And at another corner of these bastydes they had a towre of stone dyscendyng downe from a roche which the Bretons helde to theyr aduauntage for kepynge of theyr Bastydes. Thereat was made a greate assaulte with archers, and other in the meane season, while the other men of armes were fyghting at the barreres, and there the Englishemen passed ouer a litell dyke that was there, and to come to the fote of the towre with picke axes, and mattockes in theyr handes, and so began to mine fore the towre, and such as were with in defended them selfe ỹ theyr towre valiaunt lye, but the Englishe archers shotte so wholye together that none durst appere at theyr defence without they were fore pauesshed, and the englishemen vndermyned so fore ỹ they found a pyon of the towre that it came clene in sonder & the one part fell downe, and they ỹ were with in, when they sawe it would fall, they dyrue them all into the part that stode. Then the Englishemen made a great showte, and by that time it was late, then they sowned the retrayt for they sayde they had done ynough for that daye, And thus the Englishemen departed and sayd to the Bretons, syrs abyde there al night and make good watche for so morowe we will come, and loke on you agayne, ye se well inough what case ye be in, there is nothing betore you to shadow you from vs.

The entent of the Englishemen was the next day to retourne agayne to assayle the bastydes and to conquere them, and all such as were within them, whych was ryght well in theyr puissaunce so to haue done. And thus the Englyshe men passed the nyght it is oftentimes sayde, muche thynges should fal of mennes thoughtes if there were no contre thoughtes there agayne. I saye it because though there were in the Englyshe hoost subtyll and wyse men of warre, yet the bretons ỹ were within the bastydes were sufficyently prouyded with wisedome, and wel considered what thing might auayle them, & what thyng was for theyr auauntage, they sawe well they must nedes departe theyr goodes or elles to be taken or slayne, then they determined to truste that they myght, And to depart and leaue theyr bastyde, as they ordayned so they dydde, and lept on theyr horses and left theyr bastydes & toke the feldes and so toke the waye to Hambout, a.viii. myle thens, they dydde wysely therin. for they feared no pursuyte of the Englyshemen, because theyr horses were not a lande. Thus syr Iohn Malestroyt and his companye rode ỹ same night to Hambout, they found it open then they feared but lytell the Englyshemen, The next day the trompettes blewe and euery man in the hoost armed him, and drewe toward the assault of the bastyde. Then they heard tidinges how the bretons were departed and had left the bastide void. then the Englyshemen repented them in that they had not layd a bushment for them, wherby they shold not haue lost so theyr pray. Then they brake downe the bastide & set fyre therin. Thus by the duke of Lancaster the bastydes were rased before Brest, & the same day the duke & syr Iohn Holland & certayne other lordes went to se the castel of Brest & the ladyes in it & there they sate & dyned & made cher & so went againe to theyr lodgynges, & ỹ next day whyche was ỹ .iii. daye, they refreshed theyr shyppes in fresshe water and the .iiii. day toke shypping and so departed.

The foureth day after the duke and his cõpany and the mariners, toke counsayle together which waye they shoulde drawe

to that seson. howbeit he made good chere to these knyghtes and squyers of Fraunce & thanked them greatly of their comynge. And then he sayd to syr Robert of Bauquemont, and to syr John his brother. Syrs whē ye departed from me the yere that is past I desyred you that whensoeuer ye retourned agayne hither, that ye should bryng with you tenys balles & racketts, for vs to play togither, howbeit it had ben better I haue charged you to haue brought good basnets & good harneys, for I thinke we shal fynd the season wel to euyl play. Syr sayd the knyght, we haue brought of both, for alwayes we can not be armed, nor alwayes play. Thus the kyng of Castell made them right good chere. Than they had affection to go on pilgrimage to sayncte James. Both they were in that countrey, and some of them had auowed so to do, for they rode altogether for company and trusted both them & their barneys as though they should haue gone to battayle, & they dyd wysely in their so doynge, for it stode them in great stede or they retourned agayne as ye shal heare after. Now let vs retourne to the duke of Lancastres armye, who were on the coost of Normandy.

In lyke maner as by coparyson as fawcons, pelegrynes, that haue stande and tryed long on the perche hath great desyre to flye abrode. In lyke maner the knyghtes and squyers of Englande desyred to fynde tydes of armes to auaunce them selfe, and sayd eche to other, why do ye not aryse & go se the bounders & portes of Normandy, where be knyghtes and squiers to awaite vs, and to fyghte with vs. these wordes multiplyed & it came to the dukes eares, and the duke of he departed out of Englande knew that syr Johan of Hayalstreyt and the lorde of Cambor & Mortonat, and a great nombre of knyghtes and squiers of Bretayne lay at the siege in bastides before the castel of Brest by the commaundement of the constable of Fraunce. Also when the duke heard of the great desire & his men had to fynde some tydes of armes, then he sayd to his aduysell syr Thomas Percy, and to the constable of his armye syr John Holland commaundyng them to addresse their nauy toward Bretayne, seyeng how he would go and se the castell of Brest, to breyne and conforte the companyons therin, & to take on the & the bastides, & that se ye tidynges the Englishe men were ioyful. Than Alphons Dirtat chefe patron of the nauy of Portingale who knew right well the waye and the entrees into Bretayne, which were right perillous and daungerous, he made his galey to leade the route, & shewed the way to other. & the seas was faire & plesaunt, & the sea peaceable, so they sayled forwarde the hauen of Brest, & there ancred for the tyde, for they knewe well with the tyde they shulde into the hauen of Brest, great pleasure it was to heare the trompettes & ryches. The same season syr John of Hastenoys lorde of Cambor and Mortonat were lyeng at hyner, when tydynges came to them the Englyshe armye was come, then they rose and armed them, for they knew wel that the duke of Lancastre had taken land he would fyght with them and take their bastydes. for they were all well armed and of good mynde, to defend them if they were assayed. There were a.CCC. knyghtes and squiers, the Englysshemen were right ioyful when they were in the hauen of Brest, and vnderstode how Beteroms held their bastydes, and sayde howe they would go and se them and fyght with them, for they had great desyre to do some deedes of armes.

How the duke of Lancastre assayled the lordes, knyghtes, and squyers that were in the bastides before Brest in Bretayne and how they defended themselfe. Cap. lxvii.

Thus the duke of Lancastre and his copany tooke lande a lytel beside the castell of Brest, and left al their horses & prouisyon stil in their shippes, but all the ladyes and damoysels tooke lande to refreshe them & fyll day they dyd nothyng but apparell them selfe to lodge on the erthe for.ii. or.iii. dayes in perillous, alonge the sea syde, and so there they laye all nyght and that nyght & the next morning & constable and marshall of the army sowned their trompettes to cause euery man to be armed, & so they did & in good ordre went toward the castel to & bastydes which were strongly made in maner to haue endured a.xx. or.xl. yeres, & about & bastydes there were dikes, gates, towres, and good walles all made of great tymbre, the & knyghtes and squyers of Englande such as desyred dedes of armes came to the barrers of & bastides, & there began to shyne the feruent wyll in & bastides, & the Breton knyghtes and

squiers that were wythin the bastydes were redy to defende them, and to the entent to fyghte more at large hande to hande, they dyd put away the barriers of their defences wher in they dyde greate folye, but they trusted to moch in their owne chyualrie, there was done many a goodly feate of armes, and herde rencountrynges, and sore foyninge with speares, and they dyd best that had best brethe, howbeit there were many of the Englishmē, & therfore they gaue the Bretons muche a do, and so by clene force of armes the Englishemen wanne the bailles so ỳ within the closure of the towne there were mo then. C. men of armes so that ỳ Bretons were at the point to haue loste all, & when syr John of Malestroyte & the vycount of Combre sawe the maner, then he cryed his crye and sayd what how sirs, shall we loose al thus, on forwarde in fyghtyng we should not faynte, but outher death or honour. Then the Bretōs closed together with great courage, & pyched their speares and glaues in the earth, and helde stronglye their place and fought courogiously, there were many faire dedes of armes done, so that by force the Englyshe men were fayne to recule backe, for they were soo well resisted that they could gette no grounde on them, so that they wer clene betē out of the bailyes, and so as on that day they coulde not wyn it againe. And at another corner of their bastides they had a towre of stone descendynge down from a rocke, whiche the Bretons helde to their aduauntage for keppynge of their bastides. Therat was made a great assault with archers and other in the meane season whyle the other men of armes were fyghtyng at the barryes, and there the Englyshemen passed ouer a lytle dyke that was there, and so came to the foote of the towre wyth pyche axes and mattockes in their handes, and so beganne to myne fore the towre, and such as were within defended themselfe and their towre valyauntly, but the Englyshe archers shotte so holly together that none durst appeare at their defence without they were sore paunsed, and the Englishe men vndermyned so soore the foundation of the towre that it raue cleane in sunder, & the one part fel downe, and they that were within when they sawe it woulde fall, they drewe them all into that part that stode. Thē the Englyshe men made a great showte, and by that time it was late, then they sowned the retraite for they saide they had done ynoughe for that day. So then the Englyshe men departed and sayd to the Bretons, syrs abyde there al night and make good watche, for to morow we will come, & loke on you agayne, ye se wel ynoughe what case ye be in, there is nothing before you to shadowe you from vs.

The entent of the Englyshe men was the nexte daye to retourne agayne to assayle the bastyde, and to conquere them and al suche as were within them, whiche was ryght well in their puyssaunce so to haue done. So thus the Englysh men passed the nyghte, it is often tymes sayde, muche thynges should fall of mennes thoughtes yf there were no contrer thoughtes there against, I saye it bycause thoughe there were in the Englyshe hoost subtyle and wyse men of warre, yet the Bretons ỳ were wythin the bastydes were sufficyentlye prouyded with wysedome, and wel considered what thinge myght auayle them, & what thig was for their domage, they sawe well they must nedes departe thens, or elles to be taken or slayne, then they determyned to truste that they myght, and to departe and leue their bastyde. as they ordeyned so they dyd, and lepte on their horses, and left their bastides and toke the feldes, and so toke the way to Hainbout a. iiii. myle thens, they dyd wisely therein, for they feared no pursute of the Englysshe men, bycause their horses were not a lande. Thus syr John Malestroyte and his company rode ỳ same night to Hainybout, they founde it opē then they feared but lytell the Englyshe men. The nexte day the trompettes blewe and euery man in the hoste armed him, and drewe towarde the assaulte of the bastyde. Then they herde tydynges how the Bretons were departed and had left the bastide voide, then the Englyshmen repented them in that they had not laide a busshment for them, wherby they shold not haue loste so their praye. Then they brake downe the bastyde and set fyre theron. Thus by the duke of Lancaster the bastides wer raised before Brest, & the same day the duke & syr John Holande & certaine other lordes wente to se the castell of Brest & the ladyes w̄ them & there they ete & dranke & made chere & so went againe to their lodgynges, and the next daye which was the. vi. day they refreshed their shippes with freshe water and the. vii. daye toke shipping and so departed.

The fourthe daye after the duke and his company and the maryners toke counsayle togider whiche way they shoulde drawe

and whether they shoulde take lande at Lurbone or the port of Portingale, or in Byscay or at Coulongne, and longe they were in counsaile or they were fully determyned, and Alphons Uictat patron of the galeys of Portyngale was sente for to them, & the question was demaunded of hym, and he answered and saide. Sirs for this cause I was sente to you out of Portyngale fro the kynge my mayster and sir knowe for trouthe, that where so euer ye arriue in hys countrey, ye shall be right wel come to hym, and it shalbe right ioyfull to hym for greatly he desireth your comyng and to see you. So thus the space of an houre they were at a point to haue landed at the porte of Portyngale a.xxx.mile from Lurbone. Howebeit after they chaunged their purpose, for it was sayde among them that it were ferre more honourable for them to lande in the marches of their enemyes, then in the lande of their frendes, sayinge also that yf their enemyes knowe that they be lãded on thẽ they shal be the more feared, then they rested to take lande at Coulongne in Galice, the mariners set their course that way, and had wynde and wether at will, and so after they departed fro Brest the .v. day they came to the hauen of Coulongne and taried for the fludde, wherefore they shoulde not approche nere to the lande.

NOwe shall I shewe you of the knyghtes of Fraunce as the lorde of Barroys syr John Bzaquemont, sir John of Castell Morant, syr Peter of Bellames, sir Tryssrã and other that wer come in pylgrimage to the towne of Compostella, where lyeth the bodye of saunte James, and whẽ they had done their pylgrymage, and offered, and were in their lodgynges, tydynges came to them howe the Englyshmen were on that coaste, and by lyke hoode to aryue at Coulongne or they coulde vntrusse their harneys and discharge their mules. Then they armed them quickelye, and determyned to goe thyther to defende the porte, castell and towne there, and such as knew the countrey said, lets anaunce forewarde shortely, for yf the Englyshe men happen to wynne the towne or Castell of Coulongne, they wyll be lordes of all the countrey aboute the knightes bydde suche diligence that they came the same nyght to the towne of Coulongne which was a fourtene longe myles thens, and a cold trey full wylde to laboure in. They came so to the point that they entred in to the towne and Castell the same season that the Englyshemen came into the hauen. and of their comming they of the towne and castell were right ioyful, and all that nyght came after them their cariages and somers, and in the mornynge it was great beautye to beholde entrynge in to the hauen the galeys and shippes charged with men and prouision, and to here the trompettes and clarions sounde, and the trompettes and clarios of the towne & Castell dyd sounde in lykewyse agaynst them, thẽ ỳ Englyshemen knewe wel that men of warre were in the towne and Castell. Then they issued out of their galeys and shippes into the fieldes, not as thẽ approchyng the towne, for they sawe well the towne was stronge and well prouyded of men of warre, & without the towne there were certayne fisher houses. There the English lordes made their lodgynges, and soo laye styll a. iiii. dayes doynge none other thynge, but dischargynge of their shyppes, they had so great prouysiõ and their horses were set a lande, whiche had bene on the sea .xv. dayes sore oppressed what with the furoure of the sea, and wyth the numbre of people in euery shyppe, yet they had bene well kepte, and had hay, oates, and fresshe water sufficient, whan euery thynge was voyded out of the galeys and shyppes, then it was demaũded of the duke what he wold haue done wyth his nauey, he answered and sayd, I wyll that al the mariners be payde of their wages, and then let euery man do his owne profyte I giue them good leaue, for I wyl that euery man do knowe that I wyll neuer passe agayne the sea in to Englande tyll I haue my full pleasure of the royalme of Castell, or elles I wyll dye in the quarell, thẽ the mariners were paid so that euery man was contente, and so departed when they myghte oute of the hauen of Coulongne, and some went into Portyngale and some to Lurbone, and some to Bayon or to Albay in Bzetaygne, or into Englande, soo that none abode there behynd. Thus the duke of Lancastre and his men lodged without coulongne in such litle houses as thei found there and abzoode in the fieldes in bowers made of grene bowes lyke men of warre.

ABoute the space of a moneth and more the duke laye at Coulongne and remeued not without it were a huntynge or a hawkynge, for the duke & other lordes of Engand had brought with them haukes and hounds for their sporte, and sparowe hawkes for the ladyes

ladyes. Also they brought with them in ꝑ shyppes mylles to grynde corne and oupnyns bake in / they foragers wente dayly a forayenge where as they thought to spede / howbeit they founde no grete plenty of forage / for they were lodged in a poore countrey and a bettered wherfore they were dryuen to go ferre of for forage. And also they of the garyson of Coulongne as ꝑ barrons of barres who ryght well coulde take a vauntage of his enemyes if neede were and his other companyons / when they sawe the Englysshe foragers ryde forthe so fu lysshly / they thought on a daye to be before the and to make them pay for all they had before / so on a daye they armed them a.CC. and rode by guyde in the nyght aboute the woodes and mountaynes / and so at the dekeyng of the day they came to a wood and to a mountayne called the Espynet and there tarryed / for it was shewed them howe the Englysshe foragers to be abrode / ꝑ true it was to ꝑ nombre of.iii.C. And when these foragers had ben abrode a.ii. dayes and gotten moche forage / then they retourned towarde they coost / and they waye laye to passe the pace of the pynet. Then they of the busshment brake out on them and cryed Barrons of barres. Then the foragers were abasshed / for the moost parte of them were vnarmed / they had a lyte troze archers who dyd put themselfe in good ordre of defence / and began to shote / and dyd hurte and wounde men and horses / and when they shot was past they cast away they bowes and fell to other defence with suche wepons as they had / some dyd them to saue themselfe / What sholde I make longe tale of these Englysshe foragers / there were slayne a.CC. and the other saued themselfe as wel as they myght in busshes hedges where as no men coulde not come to them / a suche as fled came to Coulongne & there shewed howe ꝑ barrons of barres had ouerthrowen them / then they of the ooste began to flyze and to arme them / & syr Thomas Wozeaur marshal of the ooste with a.CCCCC. mounted on they horses with the penon of saynt George & set forth with grete delyze to fynde the frenssh men / and rode soo longe that they came to the Espynet / and there they founde they men lyenge dede / and no thynge elles / for the frenssh men were departed / soo they retourned without doynge of ony thyng elles / and when they were with halfe a myle of they ooste they sawe where the frenssh men entred in to they garyson of Coulongne / Wherwith they were soze displeased / but they coulde not amende it / and that day the marshal was soze blamed of some of the ooste in that he sente forthe so suffered to go forth ony foragers without sure conduyte / consyderynge they enemyes beynge lodged so nere them in a sure holde / and of suche nombre able to ouerthrowe.v.or a.vi.C. foragers / the duke of Lancastre & the Constable so blamed hym that he was soze ashamed therof / but he excused hymselfe & sayd howe they had ben forth more then.x.tymes before / & had no hurte Well sayd the duke take better hede another tyme / for a cas may fall in an houre or in a daye that peraduenture shall not fall agayne in an hundreth dayes.

Howe the duke of Lancastre & his ooste when they had sojourned a moneth at Coulongne / then they departed & rode towarde saynt James in Galyce. Ca. clviii.

AND when the duke of Lancastre had sojourned at Coulongne ꝑ space of a moneth and more / then he was counsayled to dyslodge thens & to drawe towardes saynt James in Galyce / where was a better countrey and a more plentyfull for men and horses / so he departed and rode in thre batayles. Fyrst the marshal with.CCC. speres & vi.C. archers. Then the duke with.CCCC. speres and all the ladyes and damoyselles in his company / and in the arrere garde the constable syr Johan Hollande with a.CCCC speres & vii.C. archers. Thus they rode fayre & easely in.iii. batayles / and were.v. dayenge thre dayes betwene Coulongne and saynt James. The countrey of Galyce was soze afrayde of the dukes comynge thyder / for they feared gretely his puyssaunce. The marshall with his bowarde came to Compostell where ꝑ body of saynt James lyeth / and the towne was closed agaynst hym / howbeit there were no men of warre there in garyson but men of ꝑ towne ꝑ kepte it / for there were no frenssh men wolde undertake to kepe it to the vytteraunce / for it was not stronge ynough to be kepte agaynst suche men of warre as the duke had brought thyder. The marshall of the ooste sente thyder an heraulde of armes to knowe they ententes what they wolde do / the heraulde came to the

barrpers & there fonde ꝑ capptayne of ꝑ warde called Alphons of lene/then the herauide sayd syr capptayns here a lytel beside is the duke of Lancastres marshal who hath sent me hyder & he wolde gladly speke with you. Wel sayd ꝑ capptayne/it pleseth me wel/let hym come hyder & we shal speke wt hym/ ꝑ herauide retourned & shewed the marshall as they sayd / then ꝑ marshall wt .xx. speres wt hym went thyder & fonde at the barrpers ꝑ capptayne & certayne of ꝑ cheefe heedes of the towne/then ꝑ marshal lyghted on fote .iii. with hym & the lorde Basset & syr Wyllyā Frempton/then ꝑ marshall sayd/ye capptayne & your men. My lorde the duke of Lācastre & my lady & your lady of Lancastre doughterto kynge Don Peter your lorde & kynge hath sent me hyder to speke with you to know what ye wyll do or say/ outher to receyue them as ye shold do your soueraynt lorde & lady/or elles they to assayle you & take you perforce/ & surely knowe for trouth if ye be taken perforce al ys within the towne shall suffre dethe wt the swerde to gyue ensample to all other / syr sayd the capptayne we wyl not vse vs but by reason we wolde gladly accupte vs to them ꝑ we be a longe/ we know ryght well ꝑ my lady Cōstaūce of Lancastre was doughter to kynge Don Petero of Castel/ & ꝑ if kynge Don Peter had abyden peasyably syr kyng he had ben then ryghtfull enheryteure of Castell / but the matter changed otherwyse/ for al ꝑ royalme of Castal abode peasyably to kynge Henry his broder by reason of the batayle ꝑ was at Nātuel/ so ꝑ we al of the countrey ware to holde kynge Henry for our kyng/ & he kepte it as longe as he lyued & also we haue sworne to holde kyng Johū his sone for our kyng/ but syr shewe vs what haue they of Coulongne done or sayd to you / for it maye be so syth ye haue lyne there more then a moneth ꝑ they haue made some maner of treaty with you/ ꝑ is true sayd the marshal we are at a treaty wt them/ or elles they had not scaped as they dyd/ & yet the towne of Coulongne is twyse so stronge as is thys towne/ I shall shewe you what treaty they haue made with vs ꝑ mē of ꝑ towne haue prively made a compolycyon without sayenge how they wyll do euery thyng accordynge as ye do/ but though ye wyl suffre pourelste to be assayled and dystroyed/ yet soo wyll not they do/ for yf the countrey of Galyce do yelde them to my lorde the duke and to my lady/ they wyll do in lyke wyse/ and in this we haue good pledges and sufficyent/ that is wel sayd sayd the capptayne/ we in lyke wyse wyll holde the same treatye/ there be in the royalme many mo good cytees & townes/ ryde on forth & leue vs in peace/ & we wyll do as they do/ & in ꝑ we wyl delyuer you good pledges & ostages Nay syr not so sayd the marshall. Why lorde ꝑ duke nor my lady wyl not suffre ꝑ/ for they wyl come & lodge here in this towne & kepe theyr estates as they sholde do in theyr owne heryptage/ therfore ansuere vs shortely what ye wyll do/ outher to yelde or to be assayled & taken by force & destroyed/ syr sayd the capptayne gyue vs lytell leysure ꝑ we may speke togyder & we shal answere you shortely/ I am contente sayd the marshall/ then the capptayne entred in to ꝑ towne and caused euery man to come before hym. Then wysely he shewed to them frome poynte to poynte as ye haue harde before/ and fynally they agreed to receyue the duke and ꝑ duches peasyably as theyr lorde & lady / and to abyde in theyr towne as longe as it pleased them without the puyssaunce of kynge Johū dyd dryue them thens / and also that whē they had tarryed there as it pleased them a yere or .ii. longer or shorter/ and that when they departed out of ꝑ countrey without they lefte there a sufficyent garyson to defende them fro theyr enemyes/ elles they to rendre it agayne to kynge Johū or to his marshall yf they were soo commaunded/ and so they to be quyte of theyr fayth and promyse then made. This treatye ꝑ marshall syr Thomas Morcaut accepted & sayd how they sayd as they ought to do & that the duke and ꝑ duches desyred nothynge elles of them. Then the marshall retourned to his men & so to the duke who tarryed for hym in the feldes/ there he shewed ꝑ duke this treaty wherwt the duke was content / & soo in good ordre of batayle the duke rode to the towne of Saynt James.

Within .ii. lytell frenshe myles of Saynt James in Galyce there came in procession all the clergy of ꝑ towne with crosses & relykes & mē women & chyldren to mete with the duke & the duches/ & the men of the towne brought the keys with the whiche they presented to the duke & to the duches with theyr good wylles by all semblaunt/ I can not say if they dyd it with theyr good hartes or no/ there they kneled downe & receyued theyr lorde & lady/ & they entred in to ꝑ towne of Saynt James & the fyrst voyage they made they wente to the chyrche & all theyr chyldren & made theyr prayers & offrynge wt grete gyftes/ & it was shewed me ꝑ the duke & ꝑ duches & theyr .ii. doughters

Philyp & katheryn were lodged in an abbay & there kept their house & ꝑ other lordes as sr Johñ Holãde & sr Thomas morteaut & their wyues lodged in ꝑ towne & al other barons & knightes lodged abrode in ꝑ feide in houses & bowres of bowes for there were nowe in the countrey they foude there flesshe & strong wyne ynough wherof ꝑ Englysshe archers drãke so moche ꝑ they were ofte tymes droken wherby they had ꝑ feuers or elles in ꝑ morning their heedes were so cupi ꝑ they coulde not helpe thẽ selfe all the day after.

And whẽ ꝑ Barrops of barres & Johñ of Castel morant & ꝑ other knyghtes & squyers as were in ꝑ castel of Coulongne herde how ꝑ duke & duches were entred peasybly in to sayut James & ꝑ they were there receyued/ thẽ they toke cõsayle togyder what was best for thẽ to do & sayd it was but folye to tary ther ony lenger for here we can haue no good aduẽture let vs go to Burgus to ꝑ kynge & se what he wyl do it can be none otherwyse but that he wyll go agaynst these Englysshmen for yf he suffre thẽ to lodge thus in rest by lytell & lytell they shall cõquere & be lordes of Castell wherfore it is more honourable for vs to go thyder thẽ to abyde here this cõsayle they helde for ꝑ best so they made thẽ redy to departe & trussed ꝑ they had & so yssued out of ꝑ castell of Coulongne & toke their leue of them ꝑ they foude there when they entred fyrst & they toke gydes suche as knew ꝑ cõtrey elles they had ben encõtred so they rode thrugh Bysquay tostyng Galyce & so came to Lyon in spayne & as then ꝑ kynge & the quene were there ꝑ kynge there welcomed the frenshe knyghtes as it was reason & demaunded of thẽ tydynges how beit he knew ynoughe al redy they shewed hym how they entred in to coulongne ꝑ same tyme ꝑ the englysshmen entred in to the hauen & how the englysshmen foude in the hauen .viii. galeys & other vessels of Bysquay laden with wynes whiche the englysshmen had to their profyte/ the marchaunces had sone solde it & sayd the kynge so it goth by the warre / they were not wyse to tary when they knew the army of Englonde on the se they myght haue gone in to some other quarter/ sr sayd ꝑ knyghtes they were come thyder in trust of sauegarde for they sayd the wynes & other marchaundyse ꝑ they had sholde go in to flaundres for they had herde wel by ꝑ maryners of sayut Andrewes ꝑ the englysshmen were on the see & on the boundes & coost of Bysquay & true it is ꝑ kynge of Portyngale sent to thẽ galeys & gret shyppes thyn kynge how they wolde haue landed at ꝑ porte of Portyngale or at Lysbone but they ovd the cõtrary as it appered for they entred in to Galyce by Coulongne Well syrs sayd the kynge/ among you knyghtes of fraũce who knoweth more of dedes of armes thẽ nye of this cõtrey for ye haue more haunted & vsed the warre thẽ they haue how thynke you by the englysshmẽ how haue they borne themselfe al this season sr sayd they they haue borne themselfe lyke good men of warre for they be so close & prayuy ꝑ harde it is to knowe what they entende to do but supposyng we thynke ꝑ duke of Lancastre wyl abyde all this nexte wynter in sayut James towne & his people therabout & ouer tynne ꝑ cõtrey of Galyce & wyn ꝑ small holdes & gete vytayles & prouysyons & tyl somer come by ye kelyhode there shall be some treatye made bytwene hym & the kynge of Portyngale or elles neuer there is one poynte ꝑ causeth vs to byleue ꝑ some atpaunces shal be cõcluded bytwene thẽ & ꝑ is ꝑ duke hath brought out of Englãde with hym al his doughters maryed & to marye he hath .ii. to mary & we thynke ꝑ kyng of Portyngale your aduersary shal haue one of them wel sayd ꝑ kyng what thynge were best for me me to do syr sayd ꝑ knyght we shal shew you/ cause al your townes & castels on ꝑ frontier of galyce to be wel kepte suche as be of strẽgth / & suche as be of no strength cause thẽ to be beten downe / it is shewed vs how men of ꝑ countrey do forteye nunsters churches & steples & bryng in to thẽ al their goodes for surely this shal be the losse & confusyon of your royalme/ for whẽ ꝑ englysshmen ryde abrode/ these small holdes churches & steples shal holde no while agaynst thẽ/ but they shal be refressshed & nourysshed ꝑ suche prouysyon as they shall fynde in them/ whiche shal helpe to flatteth them to wynne all ꝑ resydue/ therfore syr we say ꝑ & ye do wel cause al suche holdes to be beten downe now whyle ye haue leysure & make a crye ꝑ your euery thyng be anoyded in to ꝑ good townes & in to stronge castelles bytwene this & the fest of all sayntes & elles let it be forsayte & abandõ it to your mẽ of warre who so euer can catche it / or at the furthest by the fest of sayut Andrewe/ it were better your owne mẽ had the profyte ther of rather then your enemyes/ & syr sende specyally certayne persones of your counsayle to ꝑ frenshe kyng certefyeng hym what case you & your countrey is in/ thus syr sende to the kyng & his vncles ꝑ duke of Berrey & ꝑ duke of Bor

goyne the kyng the surely ꝑ by all lykelyhode in this nexte somer ye shal haue ꝑ grettest war ꝑ euer was made in spayne other by ꝑ prynce or by ony other/ syr wryte ppteous letters desp rynge the kynge & his vncles to cõforte you in this your grete nede & some good mẽ of armes to resyst your enemyes & to kepe & defende your royalme/ there is grete alyaunces all redy by twene the frenshe kynge & you/ & in lykewyse was by hym & your father/ & syr surely in no wyse ꝑ frenshe kyng & the noble royalme of frau ce whiche may do more in dede the englande & Portyngale toyned togyder/ in this case wyll not fayle you/ for whē ꝑ frenshe kyng & his coũ sayle be nobly enfourmed of euery thynge/ ye shal wel perceyue they wyl take suche regarde therto ꝑ ye shal take but lytell domage by this war/ for knightes & squyers of fraũce delyte ing to auaunce they dedes w a lytell worde or cõ maũdement wyll drawe in to these partyes to synde dedes of armes/ for as nowe they wote not where to employ they tyme better for frau ce & flaũders as now be accorded whiche hath ben at war a long season/ & also there is a truce betwene fraũce & englande as beyonde ꝑ ryuer of Loyre to endure to ꝑ feest of saynt Johñ bap tyst/ therfore syr ye shal se knyghtes & squyers of fraũce come hyder in good nombres as well to synde dedes of armes as to se this coũtrey & to mete ꝑ englysshmẽ/ but syr we coũsayle you for your profyte ꝑ al these smal holdes chyrches mynsters & steples abrode in ꝑ coũtrey let thē be put downe if ye thynke to haue toy of ꝑ re syndue/ thē the kyng of Castel sayd/ syrs ye coũ sayle me truely/ & this wyll I do fro hence for warde/ thē without takyng of ony further coũ sayle he cõmaunded al suche holdes as were of no grete strength to be beten downe/ & abando ned to ꝑ frenshe knyghtes al ꝑ they founde in thē & to se ꝑ it were done as they had deuysed/ syr sayd they ꝑ is wel sayd/ syr we shal se it ac cõplysshed & shal helpe to saue all the reuenue/ this worde ꝑ the kyng of Castel sayd to thē of fraũce & the auctorite ꝑ he gaue to thē was wel worth to thē. CC. Frankes of profyte & spe cyally to thē ꝑ came hyrst in to Castell/ whē the duke of Lancastre arryued at coulongne. Thus thrughout al the royalme of Castel al smal hol des chyrches & steples & suche as were not suffi cyent to be kepte were put downe & all ꝑ goo des in thē abandoned to the mē of warre/ so the people of ꝑ countrey were atrapped & begyled suche as had forteyed suche places & put in thē they goodes as wyne corne fleshe & other thi ges thynkyng there to haue kepte thē sure: but it fell the contrary/ for knyghtes & squyers sente thyder they mē & toke al & brought suche pro uysyon as they foũde there to they maysters lodgynges/ but as for golde & syluer suche as they foũde of suche money as they made the by laynes to pay for they owne goodes/ ꝑ money neuer came to no knowlege/ for ꝑ they kepte styll in they purses/ & some of ꝑ poore cõpany ons suche as were more subtyl the other moost aduentured & therby wan moost/ often tymes suche as cometh fro they owne howses moost poreest in suche cases be soneest mouted on good horses & genettes. b. or. bl. in they stable/ gyr delles of chaynes of golde & syluer/ & a. M. or. ii. M. frankes in they purse/ & whē they were in they owne cõtrey/ were fayne to go a foote or on a nagge/ thus ꝑ cõpanyons ꝑ came fyrst in to Castel wan moche ryches & the poore mē of ꝑ cõtrey payde for al/ for they were robbed & ryfled w they owne mē/ for they wolde not ꝑ they enemyes sholde haue had ouy ꝓfyte ther of/ & when these tydynges came in to fraũce to other cõpanyons how ꝑ poore knyghtes & squy ers ꝑ were gone in to Castell were made so ry che/ they were the more eger to go out of they houses & to draw in to spayne cõsideryng how they myght there as well pyll & robbe on they frendes as on they enemyes.

¶ Of the grete apparell & prouysyon that generally was made in the roy alme of fraũce by the kyng there & by his cõsayle for a iourney to be made in to Englande/ & also of the dethe of Fraunces Atreman. Ca. lii.

The frenshe kyng & his counsayle were wel enfourmed of ꝑ voyage ꝑ the duke of Lancastre sholde ma ke in to Castel or he departed/ for ꝑ voyce flewe quyckely ꝑ the roy alme of Castel sholde haue moche a do ꝑ somer & to synde some remedy theragaynst/ the duke of Burgoyne made so lyghtly peas w the gaũ toys le to ꝑ entente to ayde ꝑ necessyte of ꝑ kyng of Castel/ wherto the frenshe kyng & the royal me of fraũce were bounde for dyuers reasons for by ꝑ kyng of Castel & his men & shyppes on ꝑ see the busynes of ꝑ royalme of fraunce were in good state/ & also besyde ꝑ the ponge kynge Charles of fraũce had grete affeccyon to go w an armye in to ꝑ royalme of englande/ all kny ghtes & squyers of fraũce were well agreed ther

to ⁊ eſpecyally his vncle ꝑ duke of Burgoyne ⁊ the conſtable of fraunce for al ꝑ he had to hys wyfe the ſyſter of kyng Rycharde of englande ⁊ alſo ꝑ lorde of Coucy/theſe lordes ⁊ the moſt parte of ꝑ chyualry of fraūce ſayd/ why ſholde we not ones go in to Englande to ſe the countrey ⁊ the people there ⁊ techē them the way as they haue bone in fraunce/⁊ ſo in ꝑ yere of our lorde. M.CCC.lxxx.bi. what to ꝑ entente to bydde ꝑ duke of Lancaſtres voyage ⁊ to cauſe hym to retourne out of Caſtel ⁊ to gyue feare to ꝑ engliſſhmē/ grete ordenaūce for ꝑ voyage was made in fraūce ⁊ taxes ⁊ tallages ſet ⁊ aſſeſſed in cytees ⁊ good townes ⁊ in ꝑ playne countrey ꝑ in a.C.yere before there was none ſuche ſene/⁊ alſo grete apparel made by the ſee al ꝑ ſomer tyll ꝑ moneth of ſeptembre they dyd no thyng elles on ꝑ ſee coaſt but grynde corne ⁊ bake bysket/⁊ at Tournay/lyle/douay/arras/ Amyas/bethune/ſaynt omers/⁊ in all the townes aboute Sluſe/ for ꝑ frenſſhe kynges entencyon ⁊ his counſayle was to take ꝑ ſee at Sluſe ⁊ ſo to entre in to englande to diſtroy ꝑ countrey/they ꝑ were ryche men in ꝑ royalme of fraūce to ꝑ ayde of this voyage were taxed ⁊ tayled to the.iii.⁊.iiii.parte of theyr goodes ⁊ many payde more tha they were worth beſyde to accompliſſhe ꝑ payment for men of warre.

HAro Spayne ⁊ fro the porte of ſybyll to Porte there was no grete ſhyp on ꝑ ſee ꝑ ꝑ frenſſhmen couldē lay theyr handes on nor vnder theyr owne obeyſaunce but were retey-ned for ꝑ frenſſhe kynge ⁊ his men/ prouyſyon came fro al partyes ⁊ aryued in flaunders/ both wyne/ſalte/fleſſhe/hay/in tonnes/otes/onyons/bysket/floure/eggres in pypes ⁊ of al maner of thynges ꝑ coulde be deuyſed/ ſo ꝑ in tyme to come it couldē not be byleued but by the ꝑ ſawe it/lordes/ knyghtes/ ſquyers ⁊ men of war were wryten vnto ⁊ beſyred to come ⁊ ſerue ꝑ kyng in his iourney/as out of Sauoy/ Almayne/⁊ fro ꝑ ſome goynge bowne to ꝑ lande of ꝑ erle of Iuynacke/⁊ ſo theſe lordes of farre countreys as the erle of Sauoy was retayned with.v.C.ſperes/ alſo ꝑ erle of armynacke ⁊ ꝑ dolphyn of Auuergne/⁊ theſe lordes thoughe they were of farre countreys ⁊ knew not what ende this warre ſholde come to/ yet they made theyr purſyous ſo grete ⁊ roſtly ꝑ it was gret meruayle to thynke therof/⁊ it was wonder to conſyder fro whens all ſuche prouyſyon came what by lande ⁊ by ſee in to flaunders as to bruges/to dan/⁊ to Sluſe/⁊ ſo there was ſent for in to Holāde/zelande/middelbourge/ zerechee/ dourdrē/ſtonehouſe/⁊ to all other townes on ꝑ ſee coaſt ⁊ to ꝑ ryuers entryng in to ꝑ ſee for al maner of thynges ꝑ coulde do ony ſeruyce/⁊ al were brought to Sluſe/but ꝑ holanders ⁊ ꝑ zelanders ſayd to the ꝑ retayned the/ yf ye wyl haue our ſeruyce pay vs our wages clerely or elles we wyl go to no parte/ſo they were payde/wherin they dyd wyſely/ I trowe ſyth god created ꝑ worlde there was neuer ſene ſo many grete ſhyppes togyder as was ꝑ yere at Sluſe ⁊ at Blanquerge/for in ꝑ moneth of ſeptembre in ꝑ ſayd yere they were nombred a.xii.C.lxxx. viii.ſhyppes at Sluſe/ there maſtes ſemed in ꝑ ſe lyke a grete wood/⁊ the cōſtable of Fraūce ſhyp was apparelled at Lentregmer in bretaygne/alſo the cōſtable cauſed to be made in bretaygne of tymbre a cloſure of a towne or lyke a parke ꝑ whē they had take lande in englāde to cloſe in theyr felde to lodge therin more at theyr eaſe whout waking or ſkries/⁊ whē ſoeuer they ſholde remoue theyr felde ꝑ cloſure was ſo made ꝑ they myght take it a ſonder in peces/⁊ a grete nombre of carpēters ⁊ other retayned in wages to atende theron/ I herde not ꝑ ꝑ duke of bretaygne made ony prouyſyō to go in this iourney nor the duke of Tourayne the kynges ponger broder nor the erle of Bloys/al myght not go for ſome muſt abyde beyonde to kepe ꝑ royalme.

WHo ſo had ben ꝑ ſeaſō at bruges/at dan/ or at ſluſe ⁊ ſene ꝑ buſynes there in chaūgynge of ſhyppes wt hap/ſackyng of bysket ⁊ ladyng in of onyons/peſon/benes barley candelles/hoſen/ſhoos/ſpurres/knyues/daggers/axes of war/axes to hew wal/mattockes nayles/beddes/couches/ hoyle ſhoos/ pottes/ pānes/cādelſtyckes/⁊ al maner of neceſſaryes for kechyn/botery/⁊ al other offyces/⁊ of euery thyng ꝑ coulde be thought of/ neceſſary to ſerue ma ⁊ horſe/al was had in to ſhyppes in one thyng or other who ſo euer had lene it if he had ben ſeke/ I thynke he wolde clene haue forgoten al ꝑ payne/ ꝑ cōpanyons of fraūce reckened none other wyſe amonge theſelfe whē they ſpake togyder/ but ꝑ the royalme of englāde ſholde clene haue ben loſt ⁊ eryed whout recouery/ ⁊ al ꝑ men women ⁊ chyldre therin ſlayne ⁊ taken ⁊ caryed in to fraūce in ſeruytude.

OF this grete apparel thus made to come in to englande/ ꝑ kyng of englāde ⁊ his counſayle were wel enfourmed therof/ ⁊ it was ſurely aſſygned that the fenſſhmē wolde come thyder for ſo they had ſurely ſworne/ it was no

meruayle though this grete apparel somwhat at ꝑ begynnyng abalshed ꝑ englysshmē/ & also ꝑ matter was shewed moche more then it was in dede/ & also ꝑ englysshmen were in no sure certaynte whether thes ꝓparacyon was to come in to Englande or elles to lay syege to Calays bothe by lande & by see/ for the englysshmē knewe wel ꝑ of all the townes in the worlde ꝑ frenssshmen most desyred to haue calays/ wher for the kyng of englande sent to Calays grete ꝓuysyon of whete & other cornes/ salte/ fleisshe fysshe/ wyne/ bere & other thynges/ and thyder was sent syr Thomas Holāde erle of kente/ syr Hughe Caurell/ syr wyllyā Helman/ syr Bangoules/ syr water of Ruynes/ syr Water paulle syr Wyllyā Toucet/ syr Loys of Mountalban syr Colars of Dābrychcourte & .v.C. men of armes/ & .v.C. archers/ & ꝑ erle Rycharde of Arūdel & syr Henry spenser were ordeyned to kepe the see with .xl. grete shyppes wel decked with men of armes & archers to ꝑ noumbre of .CCC. men of armes & .vi.C. archers.

On the other syde it was sayd in dyuers places in fraunce/ in haynalte/ & in ꝑcat dy ꝑ ꝑ fre the armye ꝑ was thus apparelled in flaūders was nother to go in to englande nor to Calays/ but rather to retourne al ꝑ matter & set on ꝑ towne of Gaunte/ & as it was enfourmed ꝑ towne of Gaunte ꝑ same season doubted gretely ꝑ all ꝑ apparell was for to come on the/ but they were in a wronge byleue/ for ꝑ duke of Borgoyne they lorde wolde nothyng to the but good rest & peas/ thoughe ꝑ Frauncis Acreman were slayne anone after the makyng of the peas at Tournay for of his deth ꝑ duke was nothyng to blame/ nor the duke had none euyll wyl to hym though in ꝑ season of war he dyd many feates of armes for ꝑ towne agayn the duke as it hath ben declared more playnly here before/ for though he came to an euyl ende it was his owne defaulte/ for if he had byleued Peter du boys it had ben otherwyse with hym for whan the peas was made bytwene ꝑ duke of Borgoyne & them of Gaunt/ when he retourned fro Tournay to Gaunt/ & ꝑ Peter du boys made hym redy to go in to Englande with syr Iohn Bourser/ then Peter sayd to hym/ Frauncis what wyll ye do/ wyl ye go in to Englande with vs/ then he sayd he wolde abyde styll in Gaunt/ why sayd Peter thynke you to abyde here in peas there is grete hatred agayns you & me/ I wyll abyde for nothynge here/ it is not to trust in ꝑ comonyte/ ye haue herde how they of Gaunt slewe & murdred the vayllaunt Iaques of Artuell who had done so moche good to the towne bothe in counsayle & in armes/ & for ayl tell cause the vyllaynes slue hym/ & the honest men of the towne dyd not saue hym but rather dyssymuled & was glad of his dethe/ in lyke wyse Frauncis wyll they do with you & me ꝑ I abyde here/ but as for me I wyll not tary/ therfore adue. ¶ Why sayd Frauncis the duke of Borgoyne hath pardoned all thynges/ & hath retayned me ꝑ I wyll to go with hym to be as a squyer of his table with .iiii. hodes/ & he & also syr Guy of Tremoyll (be wethe me grete sygne of loue. In the name of god sayd Peter du boys/ I spake not of my lorde ꝑ duke of Borgoyne nor of his knyghtes I thynke they wyll kepe well the peas/ but I spake of the comons of Gaunt/ there be some ꝑ ye haue not alwayes pleased/ remembre ye not of the lorde of Hargelles whom ye made to be slayne & other/ know we for trouth ꝑ these passed batteres wyl contynue in theyr hartes/ ꝑ I rede abyde amonge the yet it were better for you to go & dwell with ꝑ duke of Borgoyne. Well sayd Frauncis I shal take abuyse/ but in to Englande I wyl not go Thus Frauncis Acreman abode styll/ & peter du boys wente with syr Iohn Bourser/ & anone after ꝑ the peas was cryed & publysshed in all the partyes of Flaunders/ then there was made a crye that none shulde bere ony armure nor swerde after hym/ & Frauncis Acremā who was styll in Gaunt & had kepte a grete estate the warre durynge/ thought to contynue somwhat his honestye/ euer where he went he had a .iii. or .iiii. seruauntes waytynge on hym armed & berynge swerdes & other wepons on the & when this crye was made in the dukes name he thought it shulde not rynne on hym nor none of his seruauntes/ he thought hymselfe soo well in fauoure with them of the towne/ but he was deceyued/ for within a .bii. or .biii. dayes after the crye was proclamed ꝑ dukes bayly ffe came personally to hym & sayd Frāncis ye put my lorde the dukes officers in grete suspecte/ why do you go aboute in ꝑ towne in harneys & your seruauntes berynge swerdes & wepons of defence as thoughe it were in ꝑ tyme of war whiche pleaseth not vs/ wherfore we cōmaunde you in the dukes name to lay them downe/ Frauncis who thought none euyll in ꝑ he dyd but to mayntayne his estate answered & sayd/ syr bayly I wyll obey as it is reason/ and I thanke god I hate no persone nor wolde nat ꝑ ony shulde haue ony hurte for my sake/ howbe it I haw thought to haue had that auauntage

in ꝑ towne of Gaunt ꝑ I myght haue had my
seruaūtes were they? two?des after me. Nay
sayd the bayly sse not so/ for suche of the towne
as ye haue done scrupze vnto sprde the agayn
ste ꝛ haue meruayle therof/ ꝛ demaunde of me
why I do suffre it/ they saye it semeth that I
wolde renewe agayne the olde warre/ whyche
they wyll not suffre/ Wherfore Fraūces I pray
you do so that I here no moze therof/ for yf ye
wyll not obey I must repute you as an enemy
to my lo?de the duke ꝛ to my lady of bo?gogne
ꝛ so the bayly sse departed fro hym/ ꝛ Fraūcis
wente to his lodgynge ꝛ caused his seruaun?
tes to lay downe all they? armure/ ꝛ so entred
in to suche a fantasye that moost parte after he
wente in ꝑ towne all alone o? but one with hy
myne o? seruaunt. So it was on a daye there
was a feest kepte without the towne of Gaunt
in the abbey of sayn? Peters/ ꝛ Fraūcis Atre
man wente thyder/ and but one seruaunt with
hym without armure o? weppn/ he was spyed
ꝛ pourslued with a bastarde sone of the lo?de of
Hayzelles whom he had caused to be slayne be
foze/ wherfoze the his sone thought to be reuen
ged of his faders deth/ this bastarde was p?o?
myded fo? the matter/ ꝛ pourslued Fraūcis ryt
he came out of the towne ꝛ farre fro ony compa
ny and cryed on hym and sayd. I thou Fraun?
cis Atremā thou shalte dye/ thou caused my fa
der to be slayne/ and I shall slee the/ ꝛ as Fraū
cis tourned hym the bastarde strake hym on ꝑ
heed with his swo?de so weyghty a stroke that
he clane his heed to the tethe/ and so fell downe
deed to the erthe ꝛ the bastarde wente his way
fayze and easely no man pourslued hym/ so this
Fraūcis Atreman was wel wo?thy to dye in
that he wolde not byleue Peter du Boys/ and
when tydynges came in to englande ꝛ that Pe
ter du bops knew therof he toke but smal thou
ght fo? hym ꝛ sayd/ o? I departed fro Graunt
I well aduysed hym/ let vs se nowe who wyll
amende it/ not they that durpng the warre dyd
gretely honoure hym/ fo? suche doubtes I by?
leued ly? Johñ Bounser ꝛ came in to englande

NOwe let vs retourne to the p?ouysyons
that were made at this season at Dam ꝛ
at Sluse/ it is not had in remembyaūce of mā
no? by wo?pynge neuer none lyke sene no? here
de of/ Golde ꝛ syluer was no moze spared then
thoughe it had rayned out of the clowdes/ o? ?
stremed out of ꝑ see/ the grete lo?des of Fraunce
sent they? seruauntes to Sluse to apparell ꝛ
make redy they? p?ouysyons ꝛ shyppes and to
lade with all ꝑ euer was done in Fraunce/ in flaū
ders and other places/ fo? this voyage
was wel knowen in Englande ꝛ it was made
moche gretter then it was in dede/ wherof the
people in dyuers places of the royalme were
soze abasshed/ ꝛ there were made generall p?o
cessyons in euery good towne ꝛ cyte by p?ela?
tes ꝛ men of the cly?che. iii. tymes euery weke
whyche were made in grete deuocyon with the
hartes with holy p?ayers ꝛ o?yons to god to
delyuer them fro ꝑ perill/ howbeit there were
in englande a. C. M. that dely?ed hartely that
ꝑ frenssshmen myght come ꝛ a?pue in englande
ꝛ suche lyght company ons in comfo?tynge of
themselfe ꝛ of them that were abasshed sayd/
let these frenssshmen come/ there shall not one
taple of them retourne agayne in to fraunce/ ꝛ
suche persones as were in det ꝛ cared not fo? ꝑ
payment therof were gretly reioysed of ꝑ co?
mynge of the frenssshmen/ ꝛ wolde say to they?
credyto?s when they demaunded they? det/
sy?s holde you styll/ they so?ge in Fraūce new
flo?ens wherwith pe shall be payde/ and in ꝑ
trust thero f they lyued and spente largely and
whe they myght not be trusted they wolde say
what wolde ye haue of vs/ It were better fo?
you that we sholde spende frely the goodes of
this royalme/ rather the the frenssshmen sholde
synde it ꝛ haue it/ and so by that meanes there
was spente in outrage in Englande a. M. pou
de sterlynge.

In this season ꝑ kyng of englãde was in ꝑ marches ⁊ walles ⁊ yͤ hym the erle of Derbyde by whom euery thynge was done in englãde ⁊ thout hym nothyng done/ ⁊ thefe of ꝑ kynges counsayle were syr Symon Burle syr Nicholas braude/ syr Robert tauptron (syr Robert beauchamp/ syr Robt ful men ⁊ syr mr chel de la polle/ wch there was named ꝑ bysshop of Norwyche ⁊ sr wyllyã Ascuill brodercõ ꝑ lorde Ascuil/ al these as it was sayd dyd yͤ ꝑ kyng what they lyst/ as for ꝑ kynges vncles ꝑ erle of Cambrydge ⁊ the erle of Buckyngham coulde do nothyng theron it were agreable to ꝑ other beforesayd ⁊ this trouble ⁊ differẽce amõge theselfe was well knowen in frãce whiche greatly auaunced theyr iourney/ they wolde haue had ꝑ duke of Lancastre to haue withdrawẽ his iourney out of Castell/ but he toke no hede therof to let his voyage/ whẽ ꝑ lordes of englãde ⁊ the prelates ⁊ ꝑ people of ꝑ good townes ⁊ cytees ⁊ comons of the royalme were vtterly ⁊ credybly enformed how ꝑ frenshe kyng was redy to come in to englande to dystroy it/ then they drew togyder to counsayle/ thẽ ꝑ kyng was wryten vnto by his vncles ꝑ he sholde come to Londõ/ certefyeng hym how ꝑ comons of his royalme were not cõtent with ꝑ mr his counsayle/ ꝑ kyng ⁊ his counsayle wolde not refuse ꝑ goyng thyder but so departed fro ꝑ marches of wales where they had ben long ⁊ the quene also/ ⁊ so came to Wyndesore ⁊ there tarryed a certayne dayes/ ⁊ then ꝑ kyng left there ꝑ quene ⁊ so went to Westmynstre to hys palace and there tarryed/ ⁊ thyder came to hym al suche as had to do/ ⁊ there they toke counsayle how they sholde be demeaned agaynst thes tourney of ꝑ frenshe kyng/ then the erle of Salysbury who was a ryght valyaunt ⁊ prudent knyght sayd before ꝑ kyng ⁊ his vncles ⁊ before al ꝑ prelates ⁊ lordes of englande ꝑ were there ꝑsent/ syr my souerayn lorde ⁊ al ye my lordes ⁊ other/ it ought not to be vnknowen of your aduersary ꝑ frenshe kyng wyll come ⁊ lyue vpõ vs/ for syth ꝑ deth of the last noble ⁊ puyssaunt kyng Edward of noble memory this royalme here hath ben in grete aduenture to haue ben lost ⁊ dystroyed with ꝑ vyllanyes of ꝑ scottes ⁊ also it is well knowen in frãce/ how we be not al of one accorde/ wherfore this trouble appereth ꝑ whiche is not lyttel/ for he is but a foole ꝑ feareth not his enemyes/ ⁊ as longe as the royalme of Englande was in vnyte/ ꝑ kyng with his people ⁊ they vͤ hym/ thẽ we prospered ⁊ reygned vpe to your ioy/ nor we saye nor founde none ꝑ dyd vs ony grete hynge/ wherfore it is now tyme ful nere more nede appered in englande/ ꝑ we coũforme ourselfe to vse lowe ⁊ mete ⁊ if we thynke to come to ony honour/ ⁊ ꝑ we obeyne at ꝑ portes ⁊ hauens of englande suche prouysyon ⁊ defense that our countrey receyue no blame nor damage.

This noble royalme of Englande hath ben a longe season in tryũphaunt flourte/ ⁊ euery man knoweth well a thynge ꝑ is in flourte hath more nede to be well kepte thẽ whẽ it is tourned to parfyte ioyes/ therfore we ought to se ⁊ cõsyder how this royalme is in his flourysshynge flourte/ for within this .xl. yeres knyghtes ⁊ squyers therof bothe within ꝑ royalme ⁊ without haue had more honoure then ony other nacyõ/ therfore let vs put to our paynes ꝑ as long as we lyue we may kepe this honoure thẽ euery mã sayd ꝑ it were good ꝑ it were so.

The erle of Salysburyes wordes were well herde ⁊ accepted as the wordes ⁊ counsayle of a noble valyaunt ⁊ sage knyght all ꝑ was sayd by hym/ ⁊ deuysed among thẽ I wyl not long reste theron/ for I thynke not to know al/ but I know wel ꝑ the towne of Caleys was kepte as I sayd before/ ⁊ they ordeyned to kepe ꝑ hauyns ⁊ portes where as they supposed ꝑ ꝑ frenshmen wolde aryue/ ꝑ erle of Salysbury because parte of his lande marched nere to ꝑ plee of wyght whiche is tyght ouer agaynst Normandy ⁊ the countrey of Caulx/ therfore he was set there with his mẽ ⁊ archers of ꝑ countrey/ ⁊ the erle of Deuenshyre to be at Hampton with .CC. men of armes ⁊ .vi.C. archers to kepe the hauyn/ ꝑ erle of Northũbrelande at Rye with .CC. mẽ of armes/ ⁊ .vi.C. archers/ ꝑ erle of Cãbrydge at Douer with .v.C. mẽ of armes/ ⁊ .xii. C archers/ ⁊ his broder ꝑ erle of Buckyngham at Sandwyche with .vi.C. mẽ of armes ⁊ .xii.C. archers/ ꝑ erle of Hasforde ⁊ ꝑ erle of Penbroke were sent to Orwel hauyn with .v.C. mẽ of armes ⁊ .xii.C. archers/ ⁊ syr henry percy ⁊ sauly percy were at Yarmouth with .iii.C. mẽ of armes ⁊ .vi.C. archers/ ⁊ syr Symon burle was cappytayne of Douer castel/ al ꝑ hauyns ⁊ portes by twene ꝑ ryuer of Humbre ⁊ Cornewal were ordeyned with mẽ of war ⁊ archers/ ⁊ on ꝑ moũtaynes ⁊ hylles cõstreyning the sees on the frontiers agaynst Flaũders ⁊ frãce were set watche mẽ ⁊ watchers in dyuers maners ⁊ I cã not tell how they had emptey pypes fyllers yͤ Gode one set on another/ ⁊ on the tyght at the were placed men to spye and whiche vpon ⁊ day kepte watche lokynge in to the see/ ⁊ they were charged ꝑ yͤ

they saw ꝑ frenshe nauy approche towarde the lãde/thé to make syers alofte on ꝑ hylles to shewe ꝑ southrey to brawe to ꝑ coost where ꝑ syers apered/& it was ordeyned ꝑ they shulde suffre ꝑ frenshe kyng peasybly to take lande & al his & to suffre hym to entre in to ꝑ lãde a.iiii.or.v. dayes/& so thé fyght to go to ꝑ see where he landed & to fyght w̄ the shyppes & to wyn them yf they coulde to dystroy thé & take al they? prouysyon/& thé to folow ꝑ frenshmé/ not entendyng to fyght w̄ thé but to harry thé & to kepe thé wakynge & to kepe thé frō goynge a forwarde/& to dystroy thé all ꝑ were abyde in ꝑ countrey so ꝑ therby they shulde famyshe thé/ thus was ꝑ oppynyon & counsayle in englãde/& Rochestre brydge was broken where is a grete ryuer ryn nynge frō arundel in to ꝑ coutre of Sussex & entreth in to ꝑ ses & in to Tample agaynst ꝑ yle of Tenet/thus brydge they of Londō bet downe to be ꝑ more sure/& where as taxes & tallages were grete in fraūce an ꝑ men of ꝑ townes in ꝑ whyle they were grete ꝑ season in englãde to ꝑ ꝑ royalme sore wed it a grete season after/but they were glad to pay ꝑ sowdyours to be therby defended/there were redy in englãde a.C.M.archers & a.v.C.M.men of armes beyde ꝑ grete cōpany ꝑ the duke of Lancastre had in to castel/of whom now we wyll speke somewhat & shew of ꝑ aquaynta?ce ꝑ was bytwene hym & ꝑ kyng of Portyngale/& then I shal retourne to speke agayne of englande/ for ꝑ matter requyreth to speke as wel of ꝑ one as of the other.

Chow the kyng of Portyngale wrote amyably to the duke of Lancastre whē he knew that he was arryued at sayne James in in Galyce/& of the socours that the kyng of Castel sent for in to fraunce/& how the towne of Ruelles in Galyce was taken by the englyshemen. Ca. liii.

We haue herde before in this hystory how ꝑ duke of Lācastre with a fayre cōpany of mé of armes & archers were arryued at Coulongne in Galyce & how by cōpolycyon ꝑ towne not ꝑ castel was yelden to hym/thus they sayd they wolde do as other townes in Galyce dyd/& so therby they were not assayled/& thé ꝑ duke his wyfe & cyplyzen came to the towne of sayne James called Cōpostella & there laye: & was in purpose to do tyl he herde other tydyngs frō ꝑ kyng of Portyngale who knewe of al ꝑ cury ꝑ the duke was at sayne James/wherof he had grete ioy/thynkyng ꝑ bytwene thé they shulde make a goodly warre in to Castell/thé he wrote letters ryght amyably yō grete salutacyons & sent thé by certayne messagers to ꝑ duke & the duches who receyued ꝑ letters ryght ioyously/for ꝑ duke knew wel he shulde haue grete nede of ꝑ kynge of Portyngale/for whom hym or his comforte he saw well he shulde make but smal spede in his busynes in Portyngale or in Castel/then ꝑ duke gaue to ꝑ messagers grete gyftes & wrote agayne letters yō grete salutacyons & amytyes to ꝑ kyng of Portyngale/certefyeng hym in his letters ꝑ he desyred gretely to se & speke yō hym/thus in the meane season ꝑ letters & messagers wente bytwene ꝑ kyng of Portyngale & the duke of Lācastre ꝑ tyme passed/& kyng Johñ of Castel fortefyed hym in al ꝑ he myght & sent ofte in to fraūce letters & messagers desyryng to haue ayde of mé of warre to defende & kepe his royalme of Castel/sayng ꝑ in ꝑ somer folowyng he thought he shulde haue grete warre/bycause ꝑ kynge of Portyngale & the englyshmen were toyned togyder in alyaunce wherby they shulde be stronge ynoughe to ouer ryn ꝑ royalme of castel whout they were withstāded/ꝑ stefne kyng & his counsayle wrote agayne to ꝑ kynge of Castel/byddyng hym to take no thought nor doubte/for within ꝑ moneth of Januarye he wolde gyue englãde so moche a do ꝑ they shulde not know what to do sayenge ꝑ when they had dystroyed al Englande thé in ꝑ somer they wolde take ꝑ see agayne & so passe in to Galyce & in to portyngale & ꝑ if ꝑ englyshmé there & ꝑ portyngales kept ꝑ felde they wolde cause thé to flee/ so ꝑ within a yere they wolde make an ende of al ꝑ warres/so the kyng of castel cōforted hymselfe with this answere for he saw wel he coulde haue none other as at ꝑ tyme/so there came none out of Fraūce to hym but suche as were there before/for al knyghtes & squyers farre & nere wente to Paris & in to Picardy & so to Lysle/to do way & to tournay ꝑ coūtrey.iiii.myle of length was ful of mé of warre/ꝑ nombre was so grete ꝑ suche as had ꝑ rule of the nauy sayd ꝑ they coulde not passe at ꝑ fyrst passage but.xl.M.mé/thé it was ordeyned & adupted ꝑ they shulde suffre no mā passe without he were a ppre mā of armes & ꝑ euery knyght shulde haue but one varlet/ & a baron.ii.squyers & that no horse shulde passe but all onely for ꝑ lordes/& to execute this there were mé set at Sluse to se ꝑ none other shulde passe

howbeit there were suche a nombre of caskalles in flaūdres & theraboute þ they ete vp al in the countrey / & the pore men of the countrey payde for all their charges / for they durst not speke agayne thē / they were worse to þ countrey thē pr̄ englysshemen their enemyes had ben there & it was grete doubte þ the kynge & the lordes ones passed ouer in to Englande & suche people to abyde behynde left they assēbled togyder & dystroy al / & surely so they had done if the countrey had done anything. Now let vs retourne to the duke of Lancastre. ¶ In the meane season whyle the duke of Lancastre the duches & his children with his cōpany lay at saynt Iames kny3tes & squyers of his cōpany lyued at aduenture where they might eat the tt / & on a day sy3 Thomas Wogenult marshal of the ooste & wt hym sy3 Wauburne of Iuners / sy3 Iohn Dā brychcourte / Tyrry & wyllyā of Bonnayne & a.CC speres & v.C. archers rode forth in to Gayne / & so came to a walled towne a.viii. myles fro saynt Iames called Ruelles / for the vyllaynes þ dwelte therin wolde not tourne to þ duke / but were rebell & had often tymes ouerthrowen of the dukes forragers as they passed by þ barreres of their towne / for they had broken so þ wayes þ they coulde not repaire none other way but by their barreres / & when they sawe a bāntage they wolde yssue out lyke theues & dystroy forragers or other that passed by wherof þ cōplayntes came to the marshal þ he sholde prouyde some remedy accordyng to his offyce / wherfore he came before this towne of Ruelles / þ watche of þ towne had wel blowen their comyng / wherby they within cloged fast their barreres & gates so þ none abode wout / & so mounted vpon the walles / the marshal whē he saw their demeanyng saw well they wolde abyde the assaulte / then he sayd to sy3 Iohn Dā brychcourte and to Tyrry of Bonnayne / sy3s take your horses & ryde aboute the towne & beholde wel where we may best assayle þ towne with lest hurtynge of our men / so they mounted on their horses & rode aboute the towne / it was of no grete cyrcute wherfore they retourned agayne the sooner & had wel auysed euery place & so came to the marshal & sayd / sy3 in all this towne there is but .ii. gates / þ one here before you & the other ryght ouer agaynst it / sy3 we thynke these .ii. places are most easy for vs to gyue any assaulte / for rounde aboute þ towne ellys are grete dykes & depe ryght euyll to go downe & worse to mounte vp agayne / for hedges & bushes of thorne þ growe therin / I beleue it well sayd the marshal you sy3 Wauburne shal haue a certayne cōpany wt you & go to the other gate / & I shall abyde here and let vs gyue assaulte both at ones I wote not what shal come to vs / but gladly I wolde se perdet vyllaynes þ are lernynge on þ batylmentes of the walles of their towne / they loke on vs to se what we will do / they are lyke apes etynge of peres & chyldren wolde take it fro them.

Of þ marshalles wordes his cōpany laughed & loked vp to þ walles to beholde þ vyllaynes / thē sy3 Wauburne went forth wt his penō & with hym. C. speres & .iii. c. archers & wente to þ gate & there tarped / so thē anone þ assaulte began in .ii. partes right sharpe & fyers & the mē within the towne were ouer þ gates & threwe downe dartes so hertly þ it troubled þ archers & crosbowes / but they hurte many of thē with their shot bycause there were none at the barriers to defende thē / for they were all closed wtin the towne & defended thē self wt shot & cast of dartes / so the englysshmē bake vp þ barreres & came to þ gate / & bet & russhed so therat þ they made the gate to trymble & shake when they wtin saw their gates lykely to be broke vp they went downe fro the walles in to þ strete & bare grete tymbre & wood to the gates / thē women & chyldren & al maner of people bare stones & fylled empty tonnes & pypes & set thē agaynst their gates / & so set other aboue on thē & fylled thē in lyke wyse one vpō another / & some were styll ouer the gates & dyd cast downe grete barres of yron / so þ none durst approche nere þ gate wout he wolde be slayne / thus the vyllaynes of Ruel kepte their towne agaynst þ Englysshmen / so þ they lost but lytell þ day / & so the Englysshmē retourned bacheward a lōge myle of þ countrey to a towne where was no persone abydyng / & there they lodged tyll the nexte morowyng þ nyght the mē of Ruelles counsayled togyder to know what they sholde do / & how they sholde mayntayne thē self agaynst þ englysshmē & they sent out their spyes to se where þ englysshmen were suche as were sent for the retourned agayne & reported surely howe they were lodged at the bace towne of Renace / & þ by al symylytude they wolde retourne agayne to þ assaulte the nexte morowyng / thē they sayd among thē selfe / syrs it was to begyn & more sory to contynewe / we can haue no blame though we yelde vs to the duke of Lancastre or to his marshall for we haue defended our towne as hole dayes amonge our selfe without counsayle or comforte of ony gentyll man or ony man of warre.

& at lengthe we can not endure agaynst them/ Now syth they know the waye thyder & what we can do it were better for vs to yelde them to be ony more assayled/ for if we be take perforce we shal lese our bodyes & goodes/ so they were al of this opynyon ꝓ ye the Englysshe men returned ꝓ next day they wolde treate with thē and yelde vp theyr towne/ theyr lyues & goodes saued.

The Englysshmen in the morynge returned/ assone vpon the sone sprynge to go to the assaulte. When they of ꝓ towne sawe ꝓ/ they sent out .iiii. of theyr men to make theyr treaty/ & as the marshal rode vnder his penon he sawe in the felde these .iiii. me & sayd/ ponder I thynke be of the men of Ruelles comynge to speke with vs/ beynge thyder/ & when they were come before ꝓ marshal they kneled downe & sayd/ syr the me of ꝓ towne of ruelles haue sent vs hyder to speke w̄ you/ pleaseth it you to here vs/ yes sayd the marshal/ say what ye wyl syr sayd they we are redy to put you in possessyon of ꝓ towne of Ruelles/ so that you wyl saue our lyues & goodes & we wyl accepte my lorde the duke of Lancastre & my lady the duches for our lorde & lady/ in lyke maner as they of Coulongne & sayntJames haue done. Wel sayd the marshal I am cōtent & wyl assure you of your prouysyon/ for it behouyth our men to lyue/ syr sayd they ꝓ is but ryght/ there is prouysyon ynough in this cōtrey/ syr pleseth you to tary here a lytell & we shal retourne in to the towne & shewe what you haue sayd/ & syr we trust ye wyll vpholde this couenaunt/ ye truely sayd ꝓ marshall/ therfore retourne agayne hyrely/ so they retourned to theyr towne/ & shewed howe they had spoken with ꝓ dukes marshal/ & how they had made with hym suche a treaty ꝓ they sholde be in sauegarde of theyr bodyes & goodes except bytayles/ then they of the towne sayd god graunt it so to be/ thē they dyd rydde theyr gates of the tonnes with stones & tymbre ꝓ they had set there/ & opened the gate wyde/ & so came to the barryers with the keys in theyr hādes sayng/ syr we know wel ye be hyder sent fro my lorde the duke of Lancastre & fro my lady his wyfe/ syr we sende to you the keys of this towne & put you in possessyō therof on suche condycyons as our men haue made reporte to vs/ on the same condycyon sayd the marshal I receyue it/ so be entred in to the towne/ & he & all his menlodged here & there at theyr pleasure & there taryed al a day/ & or he departed he sayd to syr maulburyn/ syr I delyuer you this towne for you & your cōpany/ ye shal haue here a fayre garyson/ syr sayd he ꝓ is true/ & I take it w̄ a good wyll/ for the garyson pleaseth me well/ then syr Maulburyn of Lunes abode in the garyson of Ruelles in Galyce/ & had vnder hym a .lx. speres & a C. archers/ & syr Thomas moreaulx retourned to ꝓ duke & to the duches to sayntJames.

How the duke of Lancastres marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyeclope in Galyce/ whiche yelded by cōpoysyon/ and of the ambassadours that the duke sente to the kynge of Portyngale. Ca. li.

Anone after ꝓ the marshal was retourned fro the towne of Ruelles on a daye he rode forthe agayne with a .iii. C. speres & a .vi. C. archers/ & so rode a lōge dayes tourney came to a towne called Vyeclope whiche was kepte but by suche villaynes as dwelte in it/ thē ꝓ marshal caused ꝓ towne to be auewed to se if it were pregnable or not & whē they had wel aduysed it they sayd it myght be wel won by assaulte/ thē they lyghted on fote & set theyr horses backe by theyr varlettes/ and deuyded themselfe in .iiii. partes/ and made themselfe redy lyke men of warre/ syr Thomas Moreaulx had the guydynge of one company/ the seconde had syr yon Fythwaren/ the thyrde syr Johñ Dambrychcourte/ and the fourthe had another knyght/ and euery partye had foure score men of armes/ and a .vii. score archers. Then they approched to the towne and wente downe in to the dykes for therin was no water/ and then mounted vp agayne on the other syde well pauesed/ and the archers rode on ꝓ syde of the dyke/ and shot so sperely that none durst appere at theyr defence/ howbeit for all theyr shot they within defended themselfe valyauntly/ for they were a grete nombre within they cast out darres w̄ longe fethers & sharpe heddes so rudely ꝓ who so ever was fully stryken w̄ thē without they were well armed/ they were outher slayne or sore hurte/ howbeit knyghten & squyers to auaunce theselfe came to ꝓ fote of ꝓ walles/ for al ꝓ stones ꝓ fel on theyr pauesses & on theyr bodyes & the .ii. squyers of Raynalt Tyrry and Gyllys of Shomayne dyd dyuers goodly feten of armes and made a grete hole through the wall with suche helpe as they hadde/ and fought fore hande to hande

with them within/ and these .ii. brethrene wan
a. bii. dartes that were cast at them/ thoughe
þ hole they pulled them out of theyr enemyes
handes/ these .ii. brethrene were bodyes þ stan-
darde of þ lorde Fythwaren/ on þ other parte
syr John Wambycheourte shewed valyaunt
nes lyke a noble knyght/ & he had at the foote
of the walle his penon pytched in the erthe by
hym/ and he had a pykeaxe in his hande & my-
ned therwith to the best of his power to bythe
the wall/ it ought to be remembred howe these
byldynges were not abadged to se themselfe soo
assayled on al partes/ howbeit they coulde not
so longe endure/ but that they had many han-
des to defende themselfe withal/ but at the last
they aduysed them (when they sawe that the
assaulte ceased not) to yelde themselfe. Then þ
baylyffe of the towne who had caused them so
longe to contynue came and sayd to the mar-
shall/ syr cause your assaulte to cease/ for þ men
of this towne wyll treate with you/ well sayd
the marshall/ I am contente. Then he caused
an heraulde to cyte aboute þ towne who sayd
to euery man/ syrs cease your assaulte tyl ye he
re the marshalles trompet blowe agayne to þ
assaulte/ for he is in treaty with them of þ tow
ne/ and with these wordes they ceased & rested
them/ & some of them had nede therof (for they
were very weery with assaylynge. Then they
of the towne entred in to theyr treaty and sayd
howe they wolde yelde themselfe lyues & goo-
des saued as they of other townes had done in
Gaiyce. Nay sayd the marshall ye shall not
scape so good chepe as other haue done/ for ye
haue put vs in moche payne/ and hurte dyuers
of our men/ and we se clerely that ye can not
longe endure against vs/ wherfore it must be
bouse you to dye your peace and our loue/ or el-
les we wyll retourne agayne to the assaulte/
and wynne you perforce. Why syr sayd þ bay-
lyffe what ransome wyl ye axe of vs/ in goo
des name sayd the marshall. x. M. frankes/ ye
axe to grete a some syr sayd þ baylyffe/ I shal
pr it please you cause your to bate .ii. M. fran-
kes/ for syr this towne is but poore and hathe
ben soze charged with tares. Nay sayd þ mar-
shal we wyl not of þ/ we wyl gyue you respyte
to take counsayle together/ for vs .iii. or .iiii.
M. frankes ye shall not scape/ for al is ours yf
we lyst/ and also I am blamed of my company
to make any treaty with you. Therfore shorte
ly determyne you either to do it or to leue it.
Then the baylyffe went in to the towne and
called euery man before hym and sayd. Syrs
what wyll ye do/ if we endure any more assaultes
the Englysshe men wyll commytte vs perforce
so we shall all dye/ it is al our goodes/ they be
mainted of vs. x. M. frankes/ I haue offred
them .ii. M. I knowe well it is ouer lytell/ for
they wyl neuer agree therto/ therfore we must
exalte þ raunsome a. ii. or .iii. M. frankes mo-
re. Then they of þ towne who doubted to lese
all þ they had & theyr lyues also sayd/ baylyffe
for Gods sake tary with them/ for ra
ther then we wyl be any more assayled we wyl
pay .iiii. M. frankes/ then sayd the baylyffe/ þ
is well sayd/ yet I wyll speake with them/ then
he came agayne to the marshall/ and as I vn-
derstande theyr peace was made by payenge of
bi. M. frankes. Then the gates were set open
and euery man entred and were lodged where
they lyst/ and tarryed there .ii. dayes/ & the mar
shall delyuered the towne to you Fythwaren
with. CC. speres and. CCCC. archers and
there he lay in garyson more then. viii. mone-
thes/ but the raunsome of the towne went to
the duke of Lancasters purse/ & the marshall
had a. M. frankes.

AND after that the towne of Aylettope
was yelden vp to the dukes marshall/
then he retourned to layre Iames to the duke
for the duke wolde haue hym aboute hym/ and
sometyme he rode to the frontiers of Castell &
Spayne to gyue fere to the frenshemen/ but
as longe as the Englysshemen kepte the feide
in Gaiyce there were none that came agaynst
them/ for the kynge of Castell was counsayled
not to dye forth in any wise/ but to kepe warre
by garysons/ and to abyde for secours out of
Fraunce. Then þ duke of Lancastre was coun
sayled/ and it was sayd to hym/ how þt were
good that he and the kynge of Portyngale my
ght speke togyder/ sayenge also/ syr the wyse
kynge that ruleth this byrthe you is good
but that is not ynoughe for the frenshemen be
subtyle and se feythet in theyr bulwarkes thē any
other people/ yf couertly they happen to make
a treaty with the kynge of Portyngale/ & also
the kynge of Castell ha the aboute hym and of
his counsayle dyuers lordes in Portyngale as
we be enformed/ & so peraduenture by theyr
meanes/ they myght make a peace by mariage
or other wyse/ so þ then by hym ye sholde haue
noo comforte what sholde fall then/ yet sholde
be then in worse case then ever ye were/ for the
the Castellyans wolde set lytell by vs/ the Ca-
stellyans are the moest subtyll people of the
worlde/

beside trowe you ye the kynge of Portyngale
wolde not be auenged on the at end of xvi.
yere perde by myn of Caudell wolde fayne
to be kynge of Portyngale all ye hole/and lo
for hym ye kynge of castell/ye a lyst to be vengeed
the wyche he hathe done hym good late/ye pe trouble
thoche brother agayne the myght be auenged
on/and also ye haue to the duke of Englande
wherfor yet can no me prouyde to non to kepe
quyete as ayenst them/ye wolde as gode wyll
as pe ca with fayre people as ye hane/for trust
me of no counsayll ne dede ayens the of Englande
nother of men of armes ne archers for suche ye
are not lyke to haue ony/ye haue two yeres
abouete to gete vpon ye haue/the kynge pour ne
playsyr/ony nor all thynges/he is ponge and
lytell/ony pong counsayll gheuthe the royalme
of Englande/yeth it in grete perill a grete aduen
ture/wherfore ye/ye approche as soone as pe can
to the kynge of Portyngale & spoke with hym
pour self/he shall be pour moste prayser then all
the lordes pe can wynne in .xvi. monethes/the
duke of Lancastre herde well these wordes &
knewe wel ye it was true and that it was cruelly
counsayled/then the duke sayd to them that ga
ue hym that counsayle/what wyll you that I
sholde do/they answered and sayd/ye sende
to the kynge of Portyngale .x.xi.xii. of your
knyghtes and at the leest a baron/and let them
shewe the kynge howe ye haue grete desyre to
se hym/let them be wyse & ye semde/and let the
haue this meanes that ye maye speke togyder
sonnyly/I am content sayd ye duke. Then there
was sente into Portyngale fro the duke/ye lor
de percynynges/a grete baron of englande/and
ye sire Johñ Arundell/ye sire Johñ Dambrychcourte
and ye sire Johñ Holmes brother vnto
ye sire Johñ Holmes constable of the soft/these
departed fro sayne James with .x.C. speres &
CC. archers.

AND on a day when all these letters were
made and sealed there came to the duke
fro the kynge of Portyngale a knyght and a
squyer with .xvi. speres called ye white Aqui
tayne of Cologne and the squyer Ferrant Mar
tyne of Merle they were of the kynges hous
& nere to his persone they were lodged at they
r cost in the towne of sayne James/then they we
re brought to the duke & to the duches & so pre
sented they letters/and also they presented to
the duke and to the duches and to they r bough
tres fayre whyte mules well amblynge whe
of they were glad/howbeit they all that they toke
nor of the knyght ne squyer to the kynge of Portyn
gale wolde not ete of/but they were serued tyl
.xxi. dayes/and on the .xxii. dayes tydynges
came that kynge Johñ of Castell was dede/and
that kynge Johñ and squyer all togyder to compey
ny/and the table stode to the kynge of Portyn
gale nother of lesse .xx. persones personnes
as good as coulde be brought/.x.xi. englysshe
grey hounden good for all maner of beestes/ye
the portyngales and the englysshmen tolde
togyder ouer all the lande of Galyce they were
in no fere of ye Castellyons/they were lytell
ynoughe of three thynge and on the wyse as they
rode ye sire Johñ Dambrychcourte and Symkyn
Ferrant of Lyerle fell in talkynge togyder/for
before that season the squyer had ben in armes
with ye Constable Dambrychcourte who was
vncle to the sayd ye Johñ and was with hym
when he dyed at Quarrenyte/and as they tal
ked togyder they rode behynde they r compey
ny/they met an heraulde and a varlet comyng
fro Compustres where the kynge laye & was
rydynge to warde sayne James to the duke of
Lancastre/this heraulde pertayned to ye kynge
of Portyngale/and was called Compubitis.
The heraulde had spoken with the lordes and
shewed them suche tydynges as he kneve/and
when Ferrant Martyn of Merle saw hym co
mynge he sayd to ye Johñ Dambrychcourte
beside pardee cometh an heraulde of ye kynge
of Portyngales/it is longe syth he was in this
countrey I wyl demaunde of hym some tydyn
ges/and when they met togyder ye squyer sayd.
a Compubites where haue you ben so longe/
it is more then a yere syth I saw you or that ye
were in this countrey/ye sayd he I haue ben
in Englande & haue sene the kynge and lordes
there/and they haue made me ryche with grete
gyftes that I haue had of them/and fro thens
I retourned by ye see into Bretayne & was at ye
mariage of the duke of Bretayne/and at the
grete feest that he kepte at the eyte of Nannes
aboute .x.ii. monethes past/he hath wedded ye
Lady Johan of Nauare and fro thens by the see
I went in to Irelande/& fro thens to the pore
royalme of Portyngale/and as they talked togyder the
squyer beheld a cosyn that ye heraulde bare
on his brest wherin were graued & mayntey ye
kynge of Portyngales armes and ye armes of
diuers other lordes/then the squyer set his fyn
ger on one of the armes pertaynynge to a knyg
ght of Portyngale and sayd/ate here ye armes
was of the gentyll knyght sire Johñ Darcastre
by my fayth I am glad to se them for they per

tryne to a gentyll knyght who an aryne dyd me grete profyte I aught well to remembre it & therwith he toke out of his purse/and gaue them to the herault who thanked hym/and sayd Iohñ Wambyche ye ought behelde well the armes the felde syluer an endenture gooles with .ii. chaueres sables/and so the herault departed/then the squyer sayd/ syr Iohñ saw you neuer this knyght that bare ỳ sayd armes/whom I prayse so moche/I can not tell sayd syr Iohñ/but at the leest I praye you shewe me what was ỳ courtesy that ones he dyd to you/I wolde be glad to here it/we haue nothynge elles to talke of/I am contente sayd the squyer to shewe you/for the knyght is well worthy to be spoken of/then he began his tale thus.

SO it fortuned a lytell before the bataple of Juberoth when the kynge of Portyngale wente fro Comymbres thyderwarde/ỳ kynge sente me in to the countrey to warne certeyne knyghtes to come to hym to be with hym at that iourney/so I rode forth & but one page with me/and as I rode I happened to mete a .xvb. speres galopyng/and I was not ware tyll I was amonge them/then they toke me & demaunded whether I wente/and I shewed the I was sydynge to the castell of Monte/& they demaunded what to do/and I sayd to go seke syr Iohñ Ferrant Partiere to come to ỳ kyng of Portyngale to Juberoth/why sayd they is syr Iohñ Ferrant Partiere capytayne of the castell of Monte/is he not all redy with ỳ kyng of Portyngale/no surely syrs sayd I but shortely he wyll be there/yf he ones knowe the kynges pleasure/well sayd they he shall knowe it/ for we wyll ryde thyder/so they toke the waye to ỳ castell of Monte/& when they were within the syght of the castell/the watche of the castell sayd he saw men of armes approchyng towarde the castell/then syr Iohñ Ferrant demaunded fro what parte they were comynge/ỳ what che sayd they were comyng towarde the porte I sayd be they be then Castellyans and ryden at aduenture towarde sayntt Iayne I wyll go and loke on them they shall tell me tydynges where the kynge is/so he lepte on his horse & a .xx. with hym and toke his penon before hym/ and rode out of the castell a grete galop to comme to ỳ Castellyans who as then were drawen in to a busshment/and had made one of their company to ryde forthe on a greet/and when syr Iohñ Ferrant saw the gentmen he sayd to a squyer of his/galop forth the gentis & assaye to speke with yonder gentmen then the squyer galopped forth and folowed hym nere ouer lykely to take hym/for he fled but softely before hym to ỳ entence to bryng hym in to ỳ busshment/& when he was nere them/the busshment broke out at hym/& then he tourned quyckely his backe and they that chased hym cryed Castell/and syr Iohñ Ferrant bepnge vnder his penon seynge his squyer retourned in suche hast sayd/they that chase my squyer be none of our company/they be castellyans set on them/ cryc Portyngale for I wyll fyght with them/ then he toke his spere & came at them/the fyrst that he met withall wente to the erthe/and the seconde also/of .xvb. Castellyans ỳ were there .x. of them lay shortely on the grounde and the other chased/and some were ouertaken & slayne and hurte/and all thus I was glad to se/for I saw my dyspurueyaunce and in a shorte season I was lefte all alone/then I came to ỳ knyght and saluted hym/and as soone as he saw me he knewe me/and demaunded of me fro whens I came & what I dyd there/then I shewed hym all myne aduenture and how the Castellyans chased me and toke me/well sayd he and what knowe you of the kynge of Portyngale/by my fayth syr sayd I to morow we be shall haue bataple at Juberoth agaynst the kynge of Castell for he sente me in to this countrey to gyue warnynge therof to ỳ knyghtes and squyers that knoweth it not to the entente that they shulde resorte to hym/to morow sayd he/ye truely syr sayd I and yf ye byleue not me/demaunde of these Castellyans that ye haue taken/then he demaunded of them tydynges they sayd howe surely the nexte day there shulde be bataple betwene the .ii. kynges/of whiche tydynges he was right glad and sayd openly to the Castellyans/syrs for the good tydynges ỳ ye shewe me/I quyte you of your raunsomes/departe when ye wyll so ye acquyte this squyer/so thus he caused me to be quyted fro them and so they departed/& we ỳ same day retourned to Monte then he had hym redy and departed thens at mydnyght & I in his company/and fro thens to the Cabale of Juberoth whiche was a .vi. myles of ỳ countrey/and to ryche we encountryngs we rode somwhat out of our waye/& in the morynge we herde that there shulde be bataple the same daye or we sawe the batayles & when we approched the batayles were raynged in the feldes/the kynge of Castell on ỳ one partye & the kynge of Portyngale on ỳ other/

...ment the Castilians knew not whiche were Castellyons nor whiche were Portyngales tyll at the laste they sayd I beleue these be our enemyes and by the Castellyons and then we drew both sydes a sonder tyll we came nere / and then we sawe well it was the Castellyons / I trowe some of the gascoyners hyde vs appoynted vs / then syr Iohn Ferrant sayd vnto vs / wele pardon our enemyes this day on bothe sydes / and so we dyd / and then the Portyngales whyche followed vs / then when our company of Portyngales came vs / they came forth and receyued vs with great ioye that the knyghtes hyde not slayn vs / and so syr Iohn Ferrant came to the kynge and supped vpon that day with the kynge / Then sayd I vnto him how he vsed me / he answered me / for he delyuered me out of prysone / and I had not ben at the batayle and he had not ben / Therfore syr dyd he not me a goodly seruice / yes truely sayd syr Iohn Dambrycheourte / and all is by you he knewe of the batayle / is true sayd the squyer / then they rode forth tyll they had ouertaken their company and came the same day to Compynbres.

AND of the comynge of these Englysshe knyghtes / the kynge of Portyngale was right ioyfull / and commaunded that they shulde be well lodged at their ease / and when they were redy / then Martyn of Coygne / Ferrant Martyn Mytle and the englysshe knyghtes wente to the kynge who receyued them ioyously / the the englysshmen dyd their message / presented the kynge with the fawcons and gryphons / of the whyche the kynge had grete ioy / for he loued houndes and hawkes / then they thanked the kynge on the dukes parte for the good lordship that he had sente to the duke / and to the duches / then he sayd that was but a small present another tyme I wyll sende them greter gyftes / this was but for aquayntaunce of loue as lordes ought to do one to another to nourysshe loue and amyte / then wyne and spyces were brought and the knyghtes of Englande dranke and so toke their leue for that tyme / and returned to their lodgynges to supper / the next day they dyned at the kynges palace / and syr Iohn de Portyngres and syr Iohn Dancell sate at the kynges table / and syr Iohn Dambrycheourte / and syr Iohn Mountpertate at another table with the barons of that countrey such as were there / and there was Laurence Fongase a squyer of honoure of the kynges who lyke wyse right well all the knyghtes and squyers of Englande / for he had seene them in Englande lyke maner syens he best coude be / they were well serued at the dynner / and after dynner they were brought in to the counsayle chambre. Then the englysshe knyghtes began to speke to the kynge and to the erles that were there present / the erle of Angoste / and the erle of Nauarre and sayd / syr and sir / we pray your grace beyde all the recommendacyons that the duke of Lancastre hath sente vnto you / he gaue vs in charge to say to you that he desyreth soyre to se you / then the kynge sayd / and I am glad to se them / and I requyre you that shortely we may se and speke togyder / syr sayd the erles it were good that it were so / for tyll ye be togyder ye shal not loue parfytely / and then ye may take aduyse togyder how ye may mayntayne your warres agaynst the kynge of Castell / syr this is true sayd the knyghtes of englande then sayd the kynge let it be done shortely / for if the duke desyre to se me / in lyke wyse I desyre to se hym / so then they fell in other talkynge for then the kyng charged his counsayle to agree and assygne a certayne daye when they sholde mete togyder and to assure the englysshe knyghtes therof / and so they dyd / and it was agreed that the kynge of Portyngale sholde come to a cyte in his countrey called the Porte / and that the duke of Lancastre sholde ryde alonge by the frontyre of Galyce / and there at the partyng of bothe the realmes to mete and speke togyder / and so on that conclusyon the messagers departed and retourned to warde Galyce / and rode as they came tyll they came to sayne Iames / and there shewed to the duke and the duches howe they had sped / of whyche tydynges the duke was ioyfull and so he had cause for his busynes began them to approche.

AND when the season came the duke of Lancastre sholde departe fro sayne Iames / he lefte there syr Iohn his marshall and all his company except .iii. C. speres / and .vi. C. archers / and syr Iohn holande who had wedded his eldest doughter with hym and many other knyghtes and squyers / and the duke rode the frontyers of Galyce and approched nere to Portyngale / and the kynge who laye at the Porte knewe well of his comynge / and so departed with .vi. hundreth speres and came to the frontyers of Portyngale and lodged at a towne called Penson the last towne of Portyngale on that syde / and the duke of Lancastre came

to another tongue the fyrst to bone of galyer tap
ping to Portyngale called Wargalle/ and by
twene Wouton and Wargalle there was a ry
uer and there metbo wen and a grete playne & a
bryage called the mor bryage/ & on a thurlday
in the mornynge the kyng of Portyngale and
the duke of Lancaster with all their compenyes
met togyder there was a goodly and a lusty
ly nge/ and there were lodgynges made in
the fyldes of the kynges syde and thyder went
the duke of Lancastre to dyner/ whyche dyner
was well ordred/ & there sate at the kynges table
the bysshop of Connymbres/ the bysshop of Porte
the archebysshop of Bargus in Portyngale/ &
the duke of Lancastre and a lytell dyneth sate
for Johñ of holande/ and for Henry bromonde
of Englande/ and there were plenye of myn
strelles and so were in sporte tyll it was nyght
that daye the kynge of Portyngale was appa
relled all in whyte with a reed crosse of sayne
George for that is the habyte of the boode called
Wouton other wyse called Bemper in Portyn
gale/ of the whyche ordre the kynge was and or
he was crowned was called mayster therof.
But euer after he bare styll that bendle in the
honoure of god and sayne George/ and all his
men were araped in whyte and reed/ then whe
it began to be late they retourned to their lod
gynges tyll the nexte daye. The kynge wente
to Wouton and the duke to Wargalle and by
twene bothe there was no more but the medowe
and the ryuer to passe/ then on the fryday whe
they had herde masse they toke their horses/ &
so rode agayne to mor bridge/ and there they
met agayne/ there they had goodly lodgynge
made. The kyng and the duke had their cham
bres hanged with tapycerye and cuttepnes
as well as and the kynge had ben at Lyrbone
and the duke at London/ and before dyner they
counsayled togyder on the state of their busy
nes/ & howe they sholde mayntayne their war
re when they sholde set forth/ then it was deter
myned that all the wynter the kynge sholde tary
in his owne countrey & the duke at sayne Ja
mes & to set their marshal dele/ and in marche
the kyng and the duke & their men to assemble
togyder and to go and fyght with the kyng of
castel where soeuer he tholde be as tho/ for they
sayd they sholde be Englysshe and Portyngale
les togyder a. xxx. thousande/ and when al this
was concluded then the kynges counsayle co
moned amonge themselfe for a mayage for
their kynge/ for it was tyme and the royalme
wolde that he were maryed to his honoure &
profyte/ and for to haue good alyaunces tyl
me to come/ and they sayd they knewe not as
then where he tholde best mete to his profyt
or to the welthe of his comons then at the
boode of Lancastre/ and this they shewed to the
duke/ and when he sawe the kynges entencyon
and howe that he was in the kynges hauages
for ye he was come out of Englande in to the
frontyres of Portyngale to demaunde his here
tage of Castell/ then he answered for ye kynge &
sayd to the kynge/ who was there present/ syr
I haue in the to wone sayne James two bou
gettes I wyll gyue you one of them whome it
pleaseth you to chose. Syr sayde the kynge
counsayle/ and I shal sende her to you for sayd
the kynge I thanke you ye offre me more then
I desyre/ as for my cosyn Katheryne I wyll le
ue her styll with you/ but as for Philyp your
doughter her I demaunde and wyl wedde her
and make her quene of Portyngale/ and so han
he by their counsayle and wente to dyner and
sate as they dyd the daye before/ they were ser
ued notably accordynge to the vsage of the coun
trey/ and after dyner the duke retourned to
Wargalle and the kynge to Wouton.

The saterday after masse they met agayn
ne at the sayd place/ and that daye the
duke of Lancastre made the dyner for the kynge
of Portyngale and his company/ and there we
re chambres and halles hanged with arras &
cubyrdery as rychely as thoughe they had
ben at London/ and the Portyngales prayse
moche the Englysshe maner/ and at that dy
ner there were thre archebysshoppes and .xii.
bysshoppes syttynge at the hyghe table. The
bysshop of Lyrbone/ the bysshop of Porte/ and
the bysshop of Connymbres/ the archebysshop
of Bargus and other/ and the kynge sate in the
myddes of the table/ and the duke a lytell by
nethe hym/ and bynethe the duke the erle of Ka
uaste and the erle of Angosse/ and at another ta
ble sate syr & the mayster Denyse/ then the gre
te mayster of sayne James in Portyngale and
the prysour of sayne Johñs/ then Dengolopes
perdes/ & Johñ seruant his sone/ the pommay
se of Congne and Was Martyn of Congne/ the
Bobyth of Semde Was Martyn of merle al
barans/ the abbot of the cubale of Tubereth/ the
abbot of sayne mary of Cure/ the Was Peters
marshall of Portyngale/ Johñ Radygos de
sar/ and dyuers other knyghtes and squyers
of Portyngale/ for there sate that daye no En

gyssymen/for all knyghtes and squyers of englande serued/& there were many mynstrelles & the duke gaue them a.C.nobles and the herauldes as moche/after dyner when all thynges was accomplysshed they toke leue amyably eche of other tyll another season/the kynge retourned to Porte/and ỳ duke to Wargaste and toke his way in to Galyce/and the erle of Nauare conueyed the duke with a.C.speres tyll he was out of all daunger/and then ỳ erle toke his leue and retourned in to Portyngale & the duke rode to sayntt James in Galyce.

MOche desyred the duches of Lancastre the retourne of ỳ duke her husbande & to here tydynges what consultyons were take And so the duke was well welcomed home as it was reason/and the duches demaunded of hym how we he lyked the kynge of Portyngale/by my fayth sayd ỳ duke he is a gracyous man & is of body and maners lyke to be a valyaunt man/& I thynke he shall reygne in grete puyssaunce/for he is well beloued of his me/they say they had no kynge this.C.yere that so wel pleased them as he/and he is of age not past a.xxvi.yere/he is a stronge knyght and a hardy accordynge to the nature of Portyngale/& he is well made of body to endure grete payne pe but sayd ỳ lady what sayth he to ony maryage/I haue agreed to hym sayd the duke that he shall haue one of my doughters I dyd put hym to the chyse outher of Katheryne or Phylyp/wherof he gaue me grete thake/how be it he rested on Phylyp/he hath good reason sayd ỳ duches/for my doughter Katheryne is yet to ponge for hym/thus the duke and the duches passed that daye/and so ỳ tyme passed/for wynter approched/how beit in ỳ countreys of Galyce & Portyngale there is but lytell wynter/for it is alwayes hote/& grayues & fruytes groweth there quycklp/for there be dyuers fruytes rype in marche/benes/pesen & cherpes & al fresshe erbes groweth in Febuary/& in some place they make wyne by mydsomer/& by ỳ tyme harueste is past.

AND thoughe ỳ the duke and ỳ duches tarped in the towne of sayntt James & laye styll/yet his men ryzed abrode/& conquered in the countrey of Galyce townes & castelles/& how they were wonne I shal shewe you ỳ trouthe & the names of thē/for I was iustely therof informed both by knyghtes & squyers as wel of englande as of Portyngale suche as had ben present at all they conquestes & specyally by ỳ gentyl knyght of portyngale/of who I haue spoken here before/who regyst ampasby at Middelbourge in zelande as he came fro his voyage out of Pruce enfourmed me/I haue here before named the knyght/& yet agayne I name hym/his name was syr Johñ Ferrant Partelere/so it was syr Thomas Morle ault marshall of the duke of Lancastres oost. when the duke was retourned fro the frontiers of Portyngale & was come agayne to the towne of sayntt James/he sayd he wolde not sytte styll sythe he was in the countrey of Conquest but sayd he wolde ryde forthe and set his company a worke/whiche they sore desyred & so made his assemble & sayd he wolde entre further in to Galyce to bynge the townes and castelles vnder the dukes obeysaunce. And soo on a day he departed fro sayntt James with a.vi.C speres/and.xii.C.archers/& toke the way to a good towne in Galyce called Porteuyed/wher the was rebell agaynst them/they of the towne had knowledge of ỳ englysshemens comyng for all the comon people fled out of they countrey in to the good townes. So they toke counsayle what they sholde doo outher yelde or holde as longe as they coulde endure/so they were not all of one accorde/the comen people wolde haue yelded/but the baylyffe who was set there by the kyng of Castel/and the ryche men wolde not yelde to sone/for they sayd they sholde nother haue honoure nor profyte in they to doynge/so they were in counsaylynge togyder whē ỳ watche of ỳ towne sowned & gaue knowledge of ỳ englysshmens approchyng/thē they brake vp they counsayle & euery man went to his defence/& ran to ỳ walles and bare barres/stones/dartes/Faucyns/& shewed well howe they wolde defende themselfe and not yelde so lyghtly.

WHen the dukes marshall and his company were come before the towne of Porteuayde/they lyghted on fote and delyuered they horses to they varlettes/& then deuyded they companyes to gyue assaulte/& the archers arayned thesefe aboute the towne wh they bowes redy to shote/and men of armes well paueysed and armed entrynge in to ỳ dykes/then the marshalles trompettes sowned to the sowte/and the men of armes then clame vp the dykes with pykaxes and mattockes to wynne the walles/and the men of the towne with cast downe stones & other thynges ỳ troubled the mynours sore and had done more and

the archers had not ben/but they shot so hooly togyder that none durst appere on the walles/ and they dyd hurte many of them within and specyally the baylyffe of the towne was stryke with an arowe that perced his basenet and entred in to his heed so ꝑ he was fayne to be borne out of the place to his lodgynge/yet ꝑ cuyll people of ꝑ towne wolde not yelde for all that the baylyffe was sore hurte/but were ꝑ rather more angry & more redy to defende them/ thus the saulte endured tyl it was nyght/ then they sowned their retrayte/ there were men hurte on bothe partyes/the englysshmen retourned fro the saulte and wente to their lodgynges/& were of entencyon ꝑ nexte morynge to retourne to the saulte/& not to leue tyll they had gotten it/the same nyght they of Ponce dyde take counsayle togyder and sayd amonge themselfe/we are but folysshe people thus to be hurte and troubled for nothynge/ why do we not as Uyolopes and they of Coulongne hath done they are yelded to the duke of Lancastre/& to my lady Custaunce doughter to kynge Don Peter/let vs yelde lyke as other good townes haue done/ wherin they were wyse for therby they sate in rest/ well sayd other let vs do in lyke wyse/ but our baylyffe hath counsayled vs the contrary/therfore he hath his payment for he is lykely to dye/then some of them sayd/ yet let vs go to hym and here what he wyll say/for certaynly to morowe the englysshmen wyl retourne/they wyl not let vs be in peas they wyl outher haue vs perforce or by loue.

TO that counsayle they all agreed and a .xii. of the best of the towne wente to the baylyfes lodgynge whose name was Dyon table of Lyon/& there they founde hym on his bed newly dressed of his wounde/& so he made to them that came to hym semblaūt of good chere what soeuer he felte and demaunded the of the assaulte/and how they percepuered therin/then they answered and sayd how they dyd well thanked be god/for except your hurte we haue taken but small domage/ but to morowe lyeth our doubte/for we are sure to haue a newe assaulte/and we be no mē of defence we are but symple people and wote not what it meaneth/ therfore we are come to haue your counsayle what is best for vs to do/ ꝑ Englysshmen sore threteneth vs that yf we be taken perforce we shall be put to the sworde & lese lyues and all ꝑ we haue in the name of god sayd the baylyffe/ ye can haue noo blame thoughe ye yelde/ but make a wyse treaty ꝑ they be no ruiers in your towne/ye may saye that ye wyll gladly be vnder the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre & of the duches in lyke maner as they of Coulongne be/so that no englysshmen come within ꝑ towne/but to sende them prouysyon out of the towne for their money/thus do if ye can/ I thynke they wyll be glad of the obeysaunce/for they haue many moo townes to wynne in Galyce/ wherfore I thynke they wyll the lyghtlyer gone/ye say well syr sayd they/we shal do thus syth you counsayle vs to do it/so they were determyned on this purpose/and so passed ꝑ nyght as well as they myght/ and in ꝑ mornyng at the sone ryssynge they ordeyned certayne men to go out of the towne instructed and charged what truce they sholde make with the marshal yf they coulde/ there were .xii. of them & they came to the marshall who was redy to retourne to the saulte/ and kneled downe salutynge hym and sayd/syr we be sente hyder to you fro them of the towne of Ponce dyde/ who haue commaunded vs to say in their names ꝑ gladly they wyll put themselfe vndee ꝑ obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre and of my lady the duches in maner & fourme as they of Coulongne hath done/ and as for prouysyon ye shall haue ynoughe out of the towne payenge courteysly therfore/ and syr it is the entencyon of them that hathe sente vs hyder/ that ye sholde not enforce the ony further/nor you nor none other to entre in to the towne with ony army/ but yf you & some of your company wyll entre symply/ye shall be welcome. The marshall had an englysshman by hym that understode the speche of Galyce/ he shewed the marshall in englysshe the wordes that they had spoken. The marshall answered and sayd/ syrs shortely retourne agayne to your towne and cause to come to the barryers suche as sente you hyder to speke there with me/ I wyl gyue the assuraūce this day/ and to morowe the sone ryssyng without we be agreed/so they departed and wente to their towne and founde at the barryers the moost parte of them of the towne/ & there they made relacyon of their message sayenge howe incontynent the marshall wolde come to ꝑ barryers to speke with them/ and yf ye be not company ynowe sende for suche mo as ye wyl haue/ then all the notablest men of ꝑ towne drewe togyder/then the marshall with a .xl. speres came thyder and alyghted & came to ꝑ barryers and sayd thus.

Thys of Ponce boyde pe sente to vs. but of your men / and I byleue surely pe dyd put your trust in them and they sayd howe ye wolde gladly knowledge my lorde the duke and my lady for your souerayne in maner and fourme as they of Coulongne hath done / but ye wyll not haue none other gouernours but your selfe within the towne / I pray you what souerayne sholde they haue ouer you without they had men set in the towne vnder them elles when ye wyll ye wyll be vnder hym and when ye lyst forsake hym / surely it is myne entencyon and al my company to ordeyne you a good capytayne true and wyse to gouern you and to mynystre true Justyce / and to put out al officers set there by the kynge of Castel and yf ye wyll not do thus answere me / for we are determyned what we wyll do / then they deuyzed a lytell to take counsayle togyder / and so they dyd and then sayd / syr we haue good trust in you / but we doubte these pyllers and robbers / for we haue ben sore beten by suche people in tyme past / when syr Bertram of Clesquy and the bretons came fyrst in to this countrey / for they lefte vs nothynge / and therfore we fere / nay syrs fere not that sayd the marshall / there shall noo pyllers and robbers entre in to your towne / nor ye shall lese nothynge by vs / for we desyre noo thynge but obeysaunce / and so with those wordes they were accorded / then the marshall and certayne of his men entred in to the towne and the ost abode without in tentes and pauylyons / and there was sent out of the towne to the lordes .iiii. somers laded with good wyne and as moche breed / polayne grete plenty / the marshal abode all ye day in the towne and set officers there for ye duke of Lancastre / and he made a capytayne there a Galyspan who had alwayes ben in Englande with ye lady Custaunce with whom they of the towne were well contented / and the nexte day ye marshall retourned to ye ost.

The he determined to go to another towne a .vi. myles thens in Galyce called Dyghos and so rode forth thyderwarde / and when they were within .ii. myles they sent a messagere to ye towne to know whether they wolde rebel or elles yelde the as they of Ponce boyde haue done / yf not they sholde be assaulted ye nexte daye they of Dyghos made no care for that message and sayd we care for none assaulte we haue be assayled or this tyme and lost nothynge whe that answere was sayd to the marshall he sayd / by saynt George and they shall be fyersly assayled are these vyllaynes so proude to gyue suche an answere / so they passed ye nyght and toke theyr ease / the nexte morynge at ye sone ryssyng they dyslodged / and soo came before the towne and lyghted a foote and set them in order to go to the assaulte / and they within made them redy to defende them and theyr towne / this towne was not grete but it was stronge / and I byleue yf they had had ony good me of warre in theyr towne the englysshmen had not so soone haue had the for as sone as they within the towne saw how they were assayled and felte the arrowes of ye archers of Englande and sawe howe dyuers of the were sore hurte / for they were but cuyl harneyssed / then they began to be abasshed and sayd / why doo we suffre ourselfe thus to be slayne and hurte for the kynge of Castell / it were as good for vs to haue to our lorde the duke of Lancastre syth he hath maryed the doughter of kyng Don peter / as ye sone of kyng Henry / we know well yf we be taken perforce / we shall all dye / and we se no comforte fro no parte / it is more then a moneth syth we sent to the kynge of Castel to Burgus in Spayne / and there it was shewed to his counsayle the peryl that we were in / for we knewe wel the englysshmen wolde come on vs as they do / and the kyng then spake to the knyghtes of Fraūce / who are of his secrete counsayle but they gaue hym counsayle to sende noo garyson hyder nor to noo parte of Galyce / by seemynge the kynge had as leue all Galyce were lost as saued / he answered to our messagers / syrs retourne to your towne and do ye best you can for yourselfe / wherby we may well vnderstande that we nede not to suffre ourselfe to be slayne nor taken perforce / and ther with ye men of the towne came to the gate and mounted vp to a wyndowe and made sygne to speke and to treate / they were herde and the marshall came thyder and demaunded what they wolde / they answered and sayd / syr marshall cause your men to ceasse the assaulte / we wolde yelde vs to you in the name of ye duke of Lancastre / and of my lady Custaūce lyke maner as other townes in Galyce haue done and shall do / and yf ye will haue ony prysoners out of our towne / ye shall haue tyght courteysly to refreshe you / but with an armye there shall none entre. This is the treaty that we wyll desyre / the marshall then answered and sayd / I am agreed to vpholde all that ye demaunde / but I wyll ordeyne you a good capytayne to defende you / and to counsayle you

in all your busynes/then they answered & sayd wel syr we are content therwith/so the assaulte ceased/ & the marshall syr ron Fythwaren/the lorde talbot/syr Iohn Bourchell/ ꝑ lorde Popynynges/syr Iohn Dambrychcourte & certayne other knyghtes entred in to the towne to refresshe them and there taryed al the day & they ꝑ were without had byrde & wyne & other vytayles ynoughe out of the towne/thus after ꝑ takynge of the towne of Dyghos in Galyce & that the lordes were well refresshed/then the marshall set there a capytayne a squyer of Englande called Thomas Ilbery a sage man & a valyaunt and .xii. archers with hym/and then the marshall departed and entred in to the coũtrey of Galyce costynge Spayne and ꝑ mountaynes of Castell to come to a grete towne called Bayon in the Byaroll/ & when they were a rymple thens they lodged/ and ꝑ nexte day in good araye they came nere to the towne & then deuyded them in two batayles/and sent an herault of armes to them of the towne to knowe what they wolde do/ and whyder they wolde come to obeysaunce without assaylynge or no The herault came to the barreres and there founde a grete nombre of the vyllaynes cupll harneysed and sayd to them in their language the herault was of Portyngale and was called Compynbres/syrs among you in this towne what thynge thynke you to doo/ wyll ye be assayled or elles yelde you & be vnder the obeysaunce of my lorde the duke of Lancastre and of my lady/the marshall hath sent me hyder to knowe what ye wyll do/then the men of ꝑ towne drewe to counsayle and began to murmure and sayd one to another/what shall we do yelde ourselfe symply or defende vs/then an auncyent man who had sene moo thenn many other sayd/syrs it is nedeful to take shorte counsayle ꝑ englysshmen do vs grete courtesy syth they suffre vs to take counsayle/ye se well there appereth none ayde fro no parte to comforte vs/ & also the kynge of Castell knoweth wel what case we stande in/ and hath done euer syth the duke of Lancastre aryued fyrst at Coulongne and he prouydeth nothynge for vs/ nor to not aboute to prouyde/yf we suffre to be assayled it is of trouth this towne is grete in cyrcute & of small defence/it wyl be harde for vs to attende to euery place/the englysshmen are subtyll in warre and wyll do moche payne to wyn vs in tryst of pyllage for they be couetous and so be all men of warre/and thus towne is reputed to be more rycher then it is in deed/wherfore I wolde counsayle you for ꝑ best to put ourselfe and towne vnder the obeysaunce of the duke & of the duches/let vs not be so rebel to cause our selfe to be taken perforce syth we maye come to peas by a meane/ thus is the counsayle that I gyue you/then al the other answered and sayd we wyl do thus we byleue you/for ye are a mã in this towne of grete parage and may do moche. And we desyre you to make the answere to ꝑ herault with a good wyll sayd he/ but it were reason ye gaue the herault a reparde/ he wyll do vs the more courtesye & reporte good of vs to the lordes that sente hym hyder.

Cho we they of Bayon yelded them to the duke of Lancastre/and how the marshall of his hoost entred in to the towne and toke possessyon therof. Ca. liii.

Then this auncyent mã came to the herault & sayd Syr retourne to your mayster that sente you hyder & saye to them for vs that we wyl amyably put vs vnder the obeysaunce of my lorde the duke of Lancastre and of my lady the duches his wyfe in lyke maner & fourme as other townes in Galyce haue done and wyll do/ and wepray you to be our frende and we wyll gyue you .xx. moryons of golde/when ꝑ herault herde hym say so/he sayd where be ꝑ florȳns/ there they dyd gyue them to hym/ and so he retourned to his lordes/then the marshal demaũded of hym what tydynges/ what saye ponder dyllaynes wyll they be assayled/nay truely syr sayd the herault they haue no wyll therto but haue sayd to me that ye shulde come thyder/ & they wyll amyably receyue you and put themselfe clerely vnder the obeysaunce of my lorde the duke & of my lady the duches as other townes haue done/ wel sayd the marshall so be it/ it is better for vs this treaty then the faulte/ at the leest our men shall not be hurte. Then the marshall with all his company came to ꝑ towne & lyghted on foote/ & at the barreres he founde moche people of the towne but all their armure was not worth .v. frankes/there they were to se the Englysshmen/and there was the auncyent man to make their treatye/ as soone as the herault sawe hym he sayd vnto the duke. Syr spoke vnto ponder auncyent man

who maketh courtefye to you / for he hathe the
mocte parte of the towne in hys rewle / then the
marshall began to speke / and sayd / Syr what say-
yen you what wyll ye do / wyll ye yelde you to my
lorde of Lancastre and to my lady as to youre
soueraygne lorde and lady / or elles wyll ye
be ye to you in the warre of them and yelde
townes before they shall come as other townes
ben in Galyce have done / and yf it please you
to entre into the towne / ye shall be welcome /
payenge for your vytayll yf ye take any / and sayd
the marshall as fully God me wyll nothyng but
obeysaunce & loue of the countrey / but ye shall
swere & yf the kyng of Castell come hyder with
his puyssaunce / ye kepe you agayns hym / and
then they answered & sayd / syr we wyll swere it
you good wyll / & yf he come hyder with puyssaunce
to fyght we shal close our townes agayns hym /
& fende you more therof / and yf ye be stronger
than he we wyll abyde styll vnder you / for ye
shall fynde in vs no maner of treason. That is
ynough sayd the marshal / I aske no better / for
it be a peace to endure the matter shal be deter-
myned / for the kepynge and crowne of Castell
of Lyon / of Cordouayne / of Galyce / and of
Seuyll shal abyde with hym that is strongest
for there shall be sent in these countreys or the
ende of August many bodyes of armes done / &
as grete an armye appere in Castell as hathe
ben sene there this .C. yere past / well sayd the
auncyent man / let it be as it wyll be / and let the
ryght go to the ryght / we in this countrey of
Galyce dare well abyde the aduenture / then
rebelles were brought forth & they of the tow-
ne sware to gouerne them to wyne well & truely
as subiectes sholde do to their soueraygne lorde
and lady / and to knowleage the duke of Lan-
castre and his wyfe for their lorde and lady as
other townes in Galyce had done / and the mar-
shall in their names retayned them other and
sware agayns to kepe and mayntayne them in
peas and good iustyce.

AND whē al this matter was done / wor-
ne and prouyde then they opened their
gates & barryers & euery man entred who wol
de & lodged all abrode in the townes & were the
re .xiiii. dayes to refresh them & their horses
& to abyde for a fayre season / for .iii. or .iii. dayes
before it never ceased raynynge. wherfore they
were loth to departe / for the ryuers were waxed
so grete that no man coulde passe without grete
daunger / & also in that reason they abyded the
tyme whyder they wolde go to Burgos or to
Lyon and other strongetowne wherin mo-
re the moost parte of the best people and moost tray-
tours of all the countrey of Galyce / & on the tyrd
day the marshal departed fro the towne of Bayon
in Galyce / & when they were in the feldes they
founde the ryuers withdrawen wherof they wo-
re ryght ioyful / then they rode forth towarde
Lyebadane / & had with them grete carpages and
moche prouysyon & rode all in peas / there we-
re none that stopped them of their way / for there
were no lordes of Galyce that dyrst / so they rode
tyll they came nere to the towne / & then lodged
them vnder the olyues in a fayre playne within
halfe a legge of the towne / & there determyned
to sende their heraulte to speke with them of Lye-
badane / the marshall had well herde howe they
were the falsest people & of the mercyeleste con-
dycyons that were in all the royalme / as grete a
royalme as it was / for they dyd neuer set by the
kynge nor no mā elles / but helpe alonely of the
selfe / for their towne was strong / so that heraulte
was sent to them to knowe their entencyons.
And when he came thyder / the barryers were
closed and the gate also / then he began to call
and to knocke / but noo man wolde answere
hym / yet he sawe men go vp and downe on the
gardettes of the gate & walles / but for nothyng
that he coulde do / there was no creature wol-
de speke one worde to hym so there he stode cal
lynge & makynge of lygnes more then an hou-
re / then he sayd to hymselfe / when he sawe he
coulde haue there nothynge elles / I trowe the
se men of Lyebadane haue spoken with them of
Bayon and are displeased that they gaue me
.xx. florynes and bad so spedi therfore / nowe
they wyll make me bye it dere / I fere they wol
be haue me tarye here tyll it were late / and then
take and hange me / and so therwith returned
to the marshall who demaunded what tydyn-
ges whyder they wolde be assayled or yelde as
other townes had done / for sayd the heraulte /
surely I can not tell they be so prowde that for
ouy expenge & callynge that I coulde make / there
was none that wolde gyue me ony answere / then
syr Iohn Chandos sayd / sawest thou no perso
ne there / peraduenture they be fled awaye for
fere of vs / fled away sayd the heraulte / syr saynt
ge youre grace they thynke fro me therof / for ye
haue that towne they wyll put you to more
payne than all the other townes in Galyce / for
knowe for trouthe therin be men ynowe / for I
sawe grete noumbre of them / & called to them an hy
gher & sayd / syrs I am an heraulte sent to speke
with you / therfore here me / but they helde their

peas and loked on the and laughed. I sayd þ marchall the folke by lyenes shall well be chaū flyshed/for I will not departe thens till I haue brought them to obeysaunce/ or that my lorde the duke of Lancastre commande me the contrary/ let hit ete and drynke and then go to the assaute/for I will fo them a spell never sych þ by lyenes be so prowde/ and it was done as þ marchall had deuised.

Hit when they had eten & dronken they lepte on their hostes and lowned their trompettes makynge grete noyse/ and without a whyle they came before the towne/ and some knyghtes and squyers ran before the barrers but there they founde no body/but auert þ gate there were many crosse bowes and they began to shote and dyd hurte diuers people/ then the englysshe archers aproched them before þ barrers and on þ dykes & began to shote agaynst the crosse bowes/ so there was a sore assaulte whiche longe endured/ sens it is the towne of Rybadane is right strange it could not be wonne on þ one syde/for it standeth on a roche so þ no man can mounte thereto/ on the other syde where þ assaulte contynued was playne grounde/but there were grete dykes dyd without ony water/but they were euyll to mounte bycause knyghtes and squyers snapped downe & then began to mounte agayne with targes and pauises ouer their heedes for defence of stones that were cast downe/& the archers were rayn ged alonge on the dykes who shot so hoolly together that the defendauntes durst not appere abrode/that daye there was a grete assaulte & diuers hurte bothe within and without/ and at nyght they sowned the retrayte/ Then the assaulte ceased & the englysshmen drewe to their lodgynges and dyde their ease & dressed them that were hurte/ and the same daye Thyerry of Hamaynt was stryken with a quarell in the arme so þ in a moneth after he could not ayde hymselfe with þ arme that bare it on a towell.

Thow we the duke of Lancastre & the Duches bode them at saynt James in Galyce/ and of the comforte that the frenshe knyghtes gaue vnto the kynge of Castell. Ca. lij.

The same season þ the duke of Lancastre was thus at rest and ease with the quyetnesse of Galycy and comforte of his wife and doughter whom he had sente for to come vnto him/ and also of many knyghtes and squyers of Englande whiche were come vnto him to Compostella other by sea called Seynt James in Galyce/ and other wayes they passed by Portyngale from þ kynge of Portyngale/ & þ kynge to them/for they made a grete cheere to other/ whyle/ & on the other party kynge Johan of Castell lay that season at Valladolyte and þ knyghtes of Fraunce with hym with whom he spake often tymes of his busynes & demaūded of them counsayle and comforte how he sayd to the. Syrs I haue grete merueyle þ there cometh no more ayde to me out of fraūce/for I lefe my countrey and am lyke to lefe without I fynde some other remedy/ the englysshmen kepeth þ fayth & I knowe well that the duke of Lancastre and the kynge of Portyngale haue ben together/ and myne aduersary the kynge of Portyngale shall haue in mayage one of þ dukes doughters/ and as sone as they be wedded/ ye shall se bothe their puyssaunces ioyne togyder & entre into my royalme & so gyue me to vnderstande to do. Then the frenshe knyghtes answered to comforte the kynge and sayd sy/ take no thought therfore/ for yf the englysshmen turn on þ one syde they lefe on þ other/for we know surely that the frenshe kynge with no thens a. C. M. men of warre is as nowe in the royalme of Englande & dystroyeth and conquereth the countrey/ and when they haue done & brought al Englande in subiection/ then þ frenshe kynge wyll take agayne þ fayre & ryche somer be past ayenst at coulogne in galyce & wyll agayne more in a moneth then ye haue lost in a hole yere/ & the duke of Lancastre shal so be mated þ he shal be fayne to flee into portyngale & so yet shal take benegraūce of your enemyes/for sy/ know surely þ if the busynes of fraūce had not ben so grete as it is for the voyage in to englande ye sholde haue had here ayr thre. M. iiii. M. speres of frenshmen/for þ frenshe kynge his vncles & cousyns haue grete affection to disturbe & ayde you to brynge your warres to an ende for care not though þ englysshmen nowe kepe þ fayth & wyll a lytell of your countrey. Howe ly sy/ ayr it be þ fault of sayne Johā baptyst they shal al be brente alyue/ þ kyng take thens warr for good/ & take cōforte in this/ & þ frenshe knyghtes sayd nothyng but as they thought was true for they reputed surely as then þ frenshe kynge to be arryued in Englande/ & so it was

bytwen in all Spayne/Galyce/and Portyngale/& surely the fourth parte of the tydynges ỹ the englysshmen herde of pylgrymes & merchauntes comynge fro flaunders was not shewed to the duke of Lancastre/& also the kynge of Portyngale for al that he wrote often tymes to the duke/yet he somwhat dyssymuled & was not ouer hasty to sende for the lady Philyp to be his wyfe. for his counsayle sayd to hym/syr surely there is tydynges come out of fraunce & out of flaunders ỹ the royalme of Englande is in a grete aduenture to be dystroyed/and yf ỹ be so what sholde it auayle you the comforte of the duke of Lancastre or to wedde his doughter/it sholde nothyng auayle you/wherfore couertly he delayed his busynes to the entente to se the ende of ỹ matter/howbeit by letters & messagers he retayned styll the duke in loue & fauoure. Nowe let vs leue a season to speke of the busynesses of Castell and Portyngale/and let vs treate of the matters of fraunce.

¶ Of the grete apparell of shyppes & galeys that the frenshmen made on the see to passe in to Englãde. Ca.lvii.

The apparel of shyppes galeys and bessclles that ỹ frensshe kyng made to passe in to Englãde was so grete and sumptuous ỹ the eldest man thã lyuyng neuer saw nor herde of the lyke/ỹ knyghtes and squyers retoysed when they departed fro theyr houses to go wt the frensshe kynge in to Englande & sayd/nowe let vs go on these cursed Englysshmen/who haue done so many cuylles & persecutyons in fraunce/nowe shall we be reuenged for our faders brethrene and kynsmen whom they haue slayne and dyscomfyted/surely it was more then.xii.weekes a doynge/the purueyynge of suche prouysyons as the frensshe lordes made/it was so grete that it was meruayle to consyder it/& it was sayd in all flaunders/the kynge cometh to morowe and also men came thyder out of Gastoyne/at myache/Compynges/Tholowsyn/and fro al the symyttes of fraunce/and all came & lodged in flaunders and Artoys/and when it came to the myddes of August & that ỹ voyage sholde approche/and to the entente to make them of farre countreys to make ỹ more haste & to gyue ensample ỹ the kynge toke his voyage wt grete delyte/the kynge toke his leue of ỹ quene his wyfe/and of quene Blaunche and of ỹ duches of Orlyaunce/and of ỹ other ladyes of fraunce & herde masse solemply in our Ladyes chyrche in Paris/& his entencyon was neuer to retourne agayne to Paris tyll he had ben tyse in Englande/so the kynge rode to Stomple/but al ỹ season the duke of Berrey was styll in his countrey of Berre/howbeit prouysyon was made in Flaunders & at sluse for hym as it was done for other/also ỹ duke of Borgoyne was in his countrey/& so then he toke leue of the duches & of his chyldren/& determyned to take his leue of his grete aunte the duches of Brabant/so he departed out of Borgoyne & rode in grete estate & the admyrall of fraunce in his company & syr Guy of Stemople/& so they came to Bruxelles/& there founde the duches & other ladyes who receyued hym wt grete honour/& xii. dayes he taryed there with them/& then toke his leue & fro thens he rode to Mons in Heynalte and there he founde his doughter ỹ lady of Ostrenant/& duke Aubert & his sone syr Wyllyam of Heynalte erle of Ostrenant/who receyued the duke with grete ioy/& so brought hym to Valenciennes/& the duke was lodged in the erles palace & duke Aubert in the lodgynge of Vyconguet & the lady of Ostrenant/& fro thens ỹ duke rode to Doway/& so to Arras/& there he founde the duches his wyfe taryenge for hym. Then the frensshe kynge came to Compaygne & so to Noyon/& fro thens to Peronne/& to Bapalmes/& so to Arras/& dayly there came downe people fro all partes so grete nombre that ỹ countrey was clene eten vp/nothyng was lefte abrode in the countrey but it was taken wout payenge of ony thynge/so ỹ the poore comon people that had gadered togyder theyr cornes had nothynge lefte them but strawe/& yf they spake therof they were beten or slayne/theyr waters were fylled/theyr houses beten downe for fyer wood/yf the englysshe men had aryued in the countrey/they coulde not nor wolde not haue done so grete dystruccyon nor hurte then the frensshmen themselfe dyd/& they sayd to the poore men/syrs ye haue as nowe no syluer to pay but when we retourne we shal haue ynoughe/& then ye shall be clerely payde/but the poore people when they saw theyr goodes taken & spente away/and durst not speke theragaynst/they cursed bytwene theyr tethe sayenge/go in to Englande or to the deuyll & neuer retourne agayne.

Howe the frenshe kynge and his vncles aryued at Sluse in flaunders. Ca. liiii.

The frenshe kynge came to Lysle in flaunders & his two vncles with hym ye duke of Burgoyne and the duke of Bourbon / for as the the duke of Berrey was deed in his owne countrey and ordeyned for his busynes & with ye kynge at Lysle there was the duke of Barre / the duke of Lorayne / the erle of Armynacke / the erle of Sauoy / the erle Dalphyn of Auuergne / the erle of Geneue / the erle of sayne Poule / the erle of Ewe / ye erle of Longueuyle and other grete lordes of Fraunce in suche nombre that I can neuer name them all / it was sayd there sholde passe in to Englande .xx. M. knyghtes & squyers whiche to say trouth is a fayre company / & also .xx. M. crosse bowes with the Geneways and beside them other .xx. M. of other men of warre / and as then sir Oliuer Clysson was in Bretayne and ordeyned therfore his busynes and nauye and sholde bringe with hym ye closure of the feide made of timbre / whiche they ordeyned to be set vp euery nyght when they were ones in Englande / and with sir Oliuer Clysson constable of Fraunce sholde come out of Bretayne the bell knyghtes & squyers therin / as the vycount of Rohan / ye lorde of Rays / the lorde of Beaumanoyr / ye lorde de la Vale the lorde of Rochfort / the lorde of Walestroyt sir Johñ of Walestroyte / and a .v. C. speres Bretons chosen men of warre / for it was the constables entreuyon that no mã sholde entre in to englande without he were a mã of armes chosen / & he gaue charge to the admyral saying take hede ye charge not our shyppes with barrelles and boyes / for they shall do vs more domage then profyte / so that .ii. or .iii. knyghtes without they were grete maysters / thoughe they hyred shyppes for their money / yet they sholde haue but one horse ouer & one varlet to say trouthe they ordeyned al their busynesses in good ordre / and it was the oppynyon of dyuers that yf they myght aryue all togyder in Englande where as they entended to lande / & that was at Orwell hauen / howe they sholde sore abasshe the countrey & so they sholde without doubte / for the grete lordes spyrytuall and temporall / and the people of the good townes were in grete doubte / but the rumors & poore companyons cared not greate therfore / no mare dyd poore knyghtes and squyers / for they be syzed the warre outher to wynne or to lese all / and they sayd one to another / god hath sent to vs a good season syth the frenshe kynge wyll come in to this countrey / he is a valyaunt kyng we thynke this .CCC. yere passed there was not in fraunce a kyng of ye courage as he is of / he maketh his men good mē of warre / blessyd maye he be syth he wyll come to byfyte vs / for nowe we shall dye / or elles be ryche it can be none otherwyse.

Howe the frenshe kynge tarryed at Sluse with his grete oost to the entente to entre in to Englande. Ca. lv.

If the apparell for this voyage was grete and sumptuous in Flaunders and at Sluse / in lykewyse was it in Englãde I haue shewed you somwhat therof before / wherfore I passe it ouer brefely / yf the tares and tallages were grete in fraunce in lykewyse they were in englande / so that many a man sorowed longe after / but bycause the comons sawe it was nedefull sayd / it is not agaynst reason thoughe we be tared nowe & to gyue of our goodes to knyghtes and squyers to defende their herytages and ours. There was raysed the same tyme in Englande for the defence of the countrey more then .ii. myllyons of florens / and receyuours therof were the archebyshop of yorke brodet to the lorde Acuell / the erle of Arenforde / sir Nycholas Brambre / sir Myghell Polle / sir Symon Burle / sir Peter Gaulouser / sir Robert Tryuylyen / sir Johñ Beauchamp / sir Johñ Salysbury and other of the kynges priuy counsayle / as for the kynges vncles there was nothynge done by them / nor they wolde not medle therwith nor bysyge the royalme in trouble but they toke good hede to mayntayne the honoure of ye royalme / & to kepe ye passages & portes for they byleued surely to haue ye same yere ye frenshe kyng in his puyssaunce to aryue in Englande / so these sayd lordes and knyghtes receyued the tares and dyd what they lyst / & the chefe of them & he that had moost profyte was ye erle of arenforde / for by hym euery thynge was done / and without hym nothyng done

to that

to that after whē they hadde ben there
the people made trouble to knowe where
they became/and some of the cytees & good to
nes of Englande wolde haue accompted ther
of with the ayde of the kynges vncles as ye shal
here after when tyme shall be to speke therof/
for it shall not be forgotten out of the hystorye.

¶ Howe syr Symon Burle wolde ha
ue had by his counsayle sayut Tho
mas of Cauntorburyes shryne remo
ued to the castell of Douer/wherby he
acheued grete hate. Ca. lv.

SIr Symon Burle was
capytayne of the castel of Do
uer/and he herde often tymes
newes out of Calays by the
fyshers/for they kepte styll
they⁹ castome of hyll hynge.
Sometyme before Bolayne &
before the porte of thwyldande and when other
frenshe fyshers met with them they wolde tel
ethe other tydynges sometyme more then they
knewe/for the fyshers of the see what soo euer
warre was betwene Englande and Fraunce/
they bydde no hurte one to another/but were as
frendes as hynge ethe other and bought & sol
de ethe with other/by the ⁊ one sped better then
another/for they sholde haue made wat one
to another/there durst none haue gone a fysh
ynge about conduyte of men of warre/thus syr
Symon Burle vnderstode by the fyshers that
surely the frenshe hynge wolde passe ouer in
to Englande and take landyng at Douer and
at Sandwyche/syr Symon byleued wel tho
se wordes and thought it was true and so bydd
all englande/so on a daye he came to Caunto⁹
bury and wente to the abbaye/and there the
demaunded of hym tydynges/and he shewed
as muche as he knewe/and by his wordes he
shewed that sayut Thomas shryne whiche is
goodly and ryche was not there in surety by⁹
cause the towne was not stronge/and he sayd
that yf the frenshemen sholde come thyder whi
che by all lykelyhode they wolde do/for Coue⁹
tyse of wynnynge the robbers & pyllers wolde
robbe that towne and abbey chyrche and all/&
they wyll carry awaye with them the shryne/yf
they fynde it here/wherfore I wolde counsayle
and aduyse you to carry it to the castell of Douer
where it shal be in suretye thoughe al englande
were lost/then the abbot and all the couent to⁹
ke his counsayle/though he ment well in grete
dyspyte and displeasure/sayenge syr Symon
wyll ye depose our chyrche fro our ygnoraū/yf
ye be afrayde make yourselfe sure/for thoughe
ye close yourselfe within the castell of Douer no⁹
sure/yet the frenshemen shall not be so hardy to
come hyder to vs/and so Symon Burle mul
typlyed so moche towardes in mayntenynge
his requeste the comons of the countrey were
sore displeased with hym and reputed hym not
profytable for the countrey/and ryght well they
shewed after they⁹ displeasure as ye shall here
in the story/ So syr Symon Burley wente to
Douer agayne.

THe frenshe kynge came to Lysle to she
we that the tournay pleased hym/and to
approche the sooner to his passage/to the kyng
approched/and it was sayd in Flaunders and
in Artoys/they shall take sodaynly outher on
Saterday/monday/or tuysday/so that in eue
ry day in the weke it was sayd he sholde departe
to morowe or the nexte day after/and his broder
the duke of Tourayne/& the bysshop of Beau
uoys chaunceliour of Fraunce & dyuers other
grete lordes toke they⁹ leue of the kyng at Lysle
and they retourned to Paris/& it was shewed
me howe the kynge had gyuen the gouernyng
of the royalme to his broder the duke of Tou
rayne tyll his retourne agayne/with the ayde
of dyuers other lordes of Fraunce suche as we
re not ordeyned to go in to Englande as the erle
of Blois and other/& yet all the season the duke
of Berry was behynde & came but fayre & esely
ly/for he had no grete appetyte to go in to En
glande/& his longe tarpeng was displeasaūt
to the kynge & to the duke of Burgoyne and to
the other lordes/they wolde gladly he had ben
come/styll grete prouysyon was made whiche
was costly and dere a thynge not worth a fran
he was solde for .iiii. howbeit for all that mo
ney was not spared/for euery man desyred to
be well stuffed of euery thynge/in maner of en
uy euery mā to be better appoynted then other
and thoughe the grete lordes were well payde
they⁹ wages other poore companyons bought
the bergayne/for they were owynge for a mo
nethes wages/and yet coulde gete nothynge/
the treasourer of the warres and clarkes of the
chambre of accomptes sayd/syrs abyde tyll the
nexte weke and then ye shall be payde/and soo
they were answered weekly/& yf ony payment
were made to them/it was but for .viii. dayes/
and were owynge .viii. wekes/soo that some

D.i.

when they ſawe the maner of dealynge / howe they were ſoo cupll payde / they were ſore diſpleaſed and ſayd / ſurely this voyage ſhall be but of ſmall effecte / for by all lykelyhode when the money is gadered of ỳ tayes / then they wyll breke this iourney and retourne home agayne in to theyr owne countreys / ſuche as dyd caſt ſuche doubtes / prouided thereafter were wyſe but the poore knyghtes and companyons ſuche as were retayned by ỳ grete lordes ſpente all that they had / euery thynge was ſo dere in Flaunders / that harde it was to gete outher brede or drynke / or yf they wolde ſell theyr wages or armure there was no money to gete / / yf ony were bought it was dere / there was ſoo moche people aboute Dan / Bruges / and Arbenbrughe / and ſpecyally at Sluſe / for when the kynge came thyder they wyſt not where to lodge / the erle of ſaynt Poule / the lorde of Conſy / the dolphyn of Auuergne / the lorde Dantorygne / and dyuers other lordes of fraunce to lye more at theyr eaſe lodgynge at Bruges / / ſomtyme went to Sluſe to the kynge to know when they ſholde departe and euer it was ſayd to them within .iii. or .iiii. dayes / or when the duke of Berrey is come and ỳ we haue wynde to ſerue vs / ſo euer the tyme paſſed and the day ſhortened and began to be coule and colde and the nyghtes longe / wherwith dyuers of the lordes were not contente to tary ſo longe / and alſo theyr prouyſyons myny ſhed.

Howe the kyng of Armony paſſed in to Englande in truſt to fynde ſome meane of peas or good appoyntment bytwene the kyng of Englande and the kynge of Fraunce. Ca. lvi.

Thus in abydynge for the duke of Berrey and for the conſtable who were behynde / then kynge Lyon of Armony who was in fraũce and had aſſygned hym by ỳ kynge .vi.M. frankes by ỳ yere to mayntayne his eſtate / he toke on hym for a good entente to go in to Englande to ſpeke with the kyng there and his counſayle to ſe if he myght fynde ony maner of peas to be had bytwene the two royalmes of Englande and fraũce / and ſo he departed fro his lodgynge of ſaynt Albeyne beſyde ſaynt Denys alonely with his owne company and with no grete apparel Soo he rode to Bolayne / and there he toke a ſhyp and ſo ſayled forth tyll he came to Douer and there he founde the erle of Cambrygge / the erle of Buckyngham and mo than a .C. men of armes and a .M. archers who lays there to kepe that paſſage / for the bruyt ranne that ỳ frenſſhmen ſholde lande there or at Sandwyche / and the kynge laye at London and parte of his counſayle with hym / and dayly herde tydynges fro all the portes of Englande / when the kynge of Armony was arryued at Douer he had there good there bycauſe he was a ſtraũger / and ſo he came to the kynges vncles there who ſwetely receyued hym / and at tyme conuenyent they demaunded of hym fro whens he came and whether he wolde / the kyng answered and ſayd that in truſt of goodnes he was come thyder to ſe the kynge of Englande / his counſayle to treate for peas bytwene englande and Fraunce for he ſayd that he thought the warre was not mete / for he ſayd by treaſon of warre bytwene theſe .ii. royalmes / whiche hath endured ſo longe / the ſaracyns / Jewes / and turkes are ſtared proude / for there is none that maketh them ony warre / and by occaſyon therof I haue loſt my lande and royalme / and am not lyke to recouer it agayne without there were ferme peas in all cryſtendome / and I wolde gladly ſhewe the matter that toucheth all cryſtendome to the kynge of Englande and to his counſayle / as I haue done to the frenſſhe kyng then the kynges vncles demaunded of hym yf the frenſſhe kynge had ſent hym thyder or noo he answered and ſayd / nay / there is noo man ỳ ſente me / but I am come hyder by myne owne mocyon to ſe yf the kynge of englande and his counſayle wolde ony thynge leane to ony treatye of peas / then he was demaunded where the frenſſhe kynge was / he answered I byleue he be at Sluſe I ſawe hym not lyth I toke leue of hym at Senlyze / then he was demaunded howe he coulde make ony treatye of peas and had no charge ſo to do / and for ye be contraryed to the kynge our nephewe and to his counſayle / and the frenſſhe kynge in the meane ſeaſon entre with his puyſſaunce in to Englande ye may happen thereby to receyue grete blame and your perſone to be in grete iopardy with them of the countrey / then the kynge answered and ſayd I am in ſuretye of the frenſſhe kynge for I haue ſente to hym beſyynge that tyll I retourne agayne / not to remoue fro Sluſe / /

I repute hym so noble and so wel aduised that he will graunt my desyre and that he will not entre in to the see till I be come againe to hym wherfore syrs I praye you in the instaunce of loue and peas, to conuey me to speke with the kinge, for I desyre greatlye to se hym, or elles ye that be his vncles if ye haue auctorite to gyue me answere to all my demaundes then the erle of Buckyngham sayd, syr kynge of Armony we be ordeyned here to kepe and defend this passage and the fronters of Englande by the kynge and his counsaile, & we haue no charge to medle anye further wyth the busines of the royalme without we be otherwyse commaunded by the kyng, but sith ye be come for a good entente in to this countrey ye be right welcom but sir as for anye ferme answere ye can haue none of vs, for as nowe we be not of the counsaile, but we shall conuey you to the kynge without perill or domage, the kynge thanked them and said, I desyre nothynge elles but to se the kynge and to speake with hym.

How the kyng of Armony retourned out of England & of the answere that was made to hym. Ca. lvii

When the kynge of Armonye was refreshed at Douer a day, and had spoken wyth the kinges vncles at good leysure, then he departed towarde London with a good conduyte that the Lordes appoynted to hym for feare of any rencountres, so longe he rode that he came to Lõdon, and in his ryding through London he was wel regarded because he was a straũger, & he had good chere made hym & so was brought to ỳ king who lay in the vtial at ỳ quenes warderobe & his counsaile were in Lõdon at their lodgynges, the Lõdoners were sore forteyned of their cõmynge of the kinge of Armony was knowen, ỳ kynges counsayle drewe to the kyng to here what tydynges the king brought in that troublous season, when the kynge of Armony was come in to the kynges presence he made hys salutacyon and then began his processe on the state howe he was come oute of Fraunce principalye to se the kinge of Englande whome he had neuer sene before and saide how he was right ioyous to be in his presence trusting that some goodnes shoulde come thereby, and there he shewed by hys wordes that to withstande the great pestilence ỳ was lykely to be in Englande therfore he was come of his own good will to do some good therin if he might, not sent fro the frenche kinge willynge to set some accordes and peas betwene the two realmes England and Fraunce, many fayre plesaũt wordes the kyng of Armony spake to the king Englande and to his counsaile, then he was shortely answered thus, sir kynge ye be welcome into this royalme, for the kinge oure soueraigne lord & all we are glad to se you here, but sir we saye ỳ the kinge hath not here all his counsaile, but shortelye they shalbe here, and then ye shalbe answered, the kinge of Armonye was content therwith and so returned to his lodgynge, wtin. iiii. dayes after the kinge was counsayled, and I thinke he had set to his vncles to knowe theyr ententes, but they were not present at the answere geuynge, to go to the palays of Westminster and hys counsaile wyth hym, suche as were aboute him, and to sende for the kyng of Armony to come thyder, and when he was come into the presence of the kyng of Englande and his counsayle, the kynge sate downe, and the kynge of Armony by hym, and then the prelates and other of his cõsayle, there the kyng of Armony rehersed againe his requestes ỳ he made, and also shewed wisely howe all chrystẽdome was sore decayed and feblished by occasion of the warres betwene Englãd & Fraũce, and howe that all the knightes and squiers of both royalmes entended to nothyng elles but alwaies to be on the one parte or of the other Wherby the empire of Constantynoble leseth and is lyke to lese, for before this warre ỳ knyghtes and squiers were wonte to aduenture themselfe, & also the kynge of Armony shewed that by occasiõ of this war he had lost his royalme of Armony, wherfore he desired for gods sake that there might be some treatye of peas had betwene the. ii. royalmes of England and Fraunce. To these wordes answered the archebishoppe of Cãturburie for he had charge so to do, and he sayd, sir kynge of Armony it is not the maner nor neuer was sene betwene, ii suche enemyes as the kynge of Englande and the Frenche kynge ỳ the kynge my soueraygne lorde should be required of peas, and to enter his landes with a puissaunt armye wherfore sir we saye to you ỳ yf it please you ye maye re-

tourne to the Frenche kynge, and cause hym and all his puyssaunce to retourne backe in to their owne countreys, and when euery man is at home, then yf it please you, ye maye retourne againe hyder, and then we shall gladly entende to your treatie. This was all ỳ answere the kynge of Armonye coulde get there, and soo he dyned with the kynge of Englande and hadde as great honour as coulde be deuyced, and the kynge offered hym many great gyftes of golde and syluer, but he woulde take none thoughe he had nede therof but alonely a ring to the value of.c. frankes. After diner he tooke hys leaue, and retourned vnto his lodgynge, and the nexte daye departed, and was in two dayes at Douer, and there tooke hys leaue of suche lordes as were there, and so toke the sea in a passagere & arriued at Calays, & fro thens went to Sluse, and there he spake wyth the frenche kynge, and with hys vncles, and shewed them howe he had bene in Englande, and what answere he had. The frenche kynge and his vncles toke no regarde to hys sayinge, but sent him agayne backe into Fraunce, for theyr full entencyon was to enter into Englande assoone as they myght haue wynde and wether And the duke of Berre and ỳ Constable came to them, the wynde was sore contrary to them for therwith they coulde neuer entre in to Englande, but the wynde was good to goo in to Scotlande.

¶ How ỳ duke of Berre departed frō Parys to come to Sluse, & how the constable of Fraunce toke ỳ sea and of the wynde that was contrary to hym. Cap. lviij.

THus the duke of Berre herde Masse in oure Lady churche in Parys, and there toke his leaue, and sayd howe he woulde neuer enter there agayne tyll he hadde bene in Englande, howe be it for all his wordes he thought the cōtrary, for he had no desyre therto, for the wynter season was sore come on, and all the way as he came he had letters fro the kinge and fro the duke of Borgoyne in hastynge of hym, certifyenge hym howe they taried for noo thynge elles but for his comynge. So the duke of Berre roode alwayes forwarde, but it was but by smale iourneys. ¶ And the constable of Fraunce departed fro the citye of Lentrynger standyng on the sea syde in Britaine, with great numbre of men of armes and prouision, he hadde a.lxxii. shyppes, and with hun he hadde the closure of the felde made of tumbre, the constable and his company had good wynde at the begynnynge but when they approche neare to Englande, the wynde rose fyerse and greate, and at the entre of Margate at Tames mouthe, the wynde was so great that wheder they woulde or not their shyppes departed soo that. xx. abode not together, and some were driuen perforce into Tames, and there were taken by the Englishmen, and specially there was taken. iii. or. iiii. shyppes laden with parte of the closure of tumbre ordeined to clouse in the felde, and certaine maisters carpenters and artificers with them and so they were brought to Lōdon, where of the kynge had great ioye, and so hadde all the Londonners, and. vii. of the constables shyppes were driuen with the wynde wyth all the prouysyon and taken in zelande, and the constable and theyr lordes with great paine came to Sluse to the frenche kynge.

OF the constables commyng and his company the frenche kynge was right toyfull, and the kinge sayd to hym. ¶ Sir constable when shall we departe, certaynly we haue great desyre to se Englande, wherfore I pray you auaunce forth al our busynes in hasty maner, and let vs entre into the sea shortly, myne vncle the duke of Berre wyll be here with vs within these two dayes, he is at Lysle. Syr sayde the constable we can not departe tyll the wynde serue vs, for ỳ winde is so sore agaynst vs, and so straynceable that the maryners saye they haue harde none suche of a great seaso before. Constable saide the kynge I haue ben in my vessell and it pleaseth me greatly the ayre of the sea, I beleue I shall be a good maryner for the sea dyd me no hurt, in the name of god said the constable it hath done hurte to me, for syr we were in great perill comynge fro Britayne hyder, the kynge demaunded howe soo. Then the constable saide, by fortune of the sea and great wyndes that rose agaynst vs in the frenters of Englande, and syr we haue lost of our shyppes and men wherof I am right sorry

yet might amende it, but they it is hyghest reme
dy for the yonge kynge. Thus the kynge and the Counte
de Denelin togyther in wordes, and almoste the
tyme passed and the wynter approched, and the
lordes lay there in great colde and peryll.

The frenshmen glade would not haue bene
from returnyng agayne hyther, they remem
bred, and they sayd one to another, why the deuyll
doth not the frenche kynge passe ouer into Eng
lande, why tarieth he so longe in this countrey,
are we not in poynte ynough though the frenche
men make here poore, but thynke they wyll not
passe into England this yeare, for the reasone of
England is not to entre to be wonne, englishmen
be out of the condicion of frenchmen, what will
they be in Englande, when the Englishmen
were in Fraunce, and other robe they coulde reye
then they bid themselfe in theyr fortresses, a fled
before them on the lande both before the bankes
and in the towne of Bruges where as moost re
sydence was of the frenchmen thy murmured and
were redy for wagging of a sythe to make be
tes and heddes, and all began by the frenche la
dyes, who had beaten and hurt some of the fle
mynges, so that if the boudes men of the towne
had not armed them and drawen into the mar
ket place to appease the ryot, there had not a lyst
knyght was sauyer, of Fraunce haue escaped vn
slayne. For the common people of the towne bare
a grudge in their myndes for the battaile of Ros
bequs, where theyr fathers brethern and frend
des were slayne by the frenchmen. god sent the
then at that time for the frenchmen the lorde of
Gruthuse who as then was at Bruges, when he
vnderstode how the commons went to harneys
he feared all should be lost without remedy, how
beit he kept on his hoste with.ij. or.iij. myle
and rode into the streetes, and as he met any ar
med going to the market place warde, he sayd to
them, Syrs whether go you, wyll you lose youre
selfe, haue ye not had warre ynoughe, so that ye
haue much a do to get your liuing, returne in
to your houses, there is nothyng to do, ye maye
put your selfe and your goodes in suche iupardy
that all shall be lost. Do you not knowe how the
frenche kyng and all his puissaunce and arme is
here in this countrey, so with sayre wordes he
appeased them, and caused them to returne
into their houses, whyche were not so ryghte
soone come home, yf he hadde not ben there, the
frenchmen there, were in suche feare, that they
closed them selfe in their lodgynges, there to a
byde their auenture.

How the voyage into Englande was broken by reason of wyndes and of winter, and by counsaile of the duke of Berre. Chap. lix.

SO finally the duke of Berre
came to Dune to the kynge,
and the kynge sayde to him, a
fayre vncle howe greatly I
haue desyred to se you, why
haue you tarryed so long, we
had bene as nowe in Englan
d fought with our enemyes if ye had ben come,
the duke began to excuse and to excuse hymselfe
and shewed not incontinent what lay in his hart
but he thoughte he would se what prouision &
ordinaunce was made, and to se the nauye that
was named so goodly, & they were there a.viij
dayes, that euery day it was said, we shal depart
to morowe, howbeit surely the wynd was so co
trary, that in no wyse they could sayle into Eng
land, wynter was well on, it was past saynt An
dryes tyde, it was no good season for so many
noble me to take the sea, and many of their ship
pes wer redy croked in a redines to depart some
were in theyr shippes to be the foremost that should
passe, as syr Robert and sir Philip Artoys, syr
Henry of Bare, sir Peter of Nauere and diuers
other. Then the kynges counsayle drewe toge
ther, to se how they should percepure in their iour
ney, but the duke of Berey drabe al, and shewed
so many reasons reasonable, & sure as had moste
behyte to go were greatly discouraged, he sayde
it was a great folye to counsaile the french kyng
who in a manner was but a cnilde to take the sea
in that season of the yeare, and to go fyght with
such people as we knowe not, they coulde per
ceyue the way thyther, and as it sayd, it is an euyll
countrey to make warre in, for though we wan
all there landes, yet they would not fyght with
vs, but when they syst, we bare not then bring
our prouision before vs, for if we do, it myght
be lost, and they that wyll make suche a voyage
so farre of, hath nede to begyn in the beginning of the
yeare, and not in wynter, call all the gouernours
togyther and loke if they wyll not take part my

D iij.

wordes be good, for thoughe we be as nowe a thousand and .v. hundred shippes, yet or we be come there we shall not be thre hundred, then be holde what perill we should put oure selfe in, I saye it not because I would haue the tourney left, but I speake it by the way of counsayle and seth that the most parte of the realme enclyneth to this tourney, therfore saye brother of Burgoyne, I would that you and I should go. but I would not counsayle that the king should go, for yf any misfortune should fall it shal be layd to vs, well sayd the frenche kynge who was present at all those wordes, yf none wyl go, I wyll go. Than the lordes began to smyle, and sayde, the kyng hath a courageous wyll. Howbeit they toke counsayle to deferre that viage, tyll Aprill or May were after, and there prouisions as bysquet, powders, wyne, and wyne should be kepte safely tyll then. and there they ordayned that the lordes and theyr companyes should retourne thyther agayne in the moneth of Marche.
Anone this was knowen, and so drake the voyage for that season, the whych cost the realme of Fraunce a. C. M. frankes. xxx. times told.

How the kinge Charles of Fraunce and the frenche Lordes retourned cyuyll content fro Scluse and out of Flaunders where as theyr prouisyons were made to haue gone into the realme of England, and of the feast that was made at London. Cap. lx.

As ye haue heard here before there was made a great apparell in Fraunce by ꝑ king there, and the Lordes, with great cost and charge with shippes & galayes, to passe the sea into England to make warre there. And how thys voyage was broken by wether, and because that wynter was so nere hand. Then it was ordayned by the counsayle that the kynge and the lordes shuld retourne euery man to his owne home and euery thyng to abyde for the same tyme vnto the moneth of Marche at Aprill, and then euery man to be ready at the kynges commaundement.

Then there myght well haue bene sene lordes and knyghtes sore displeased. And specially such as were of farre countreys and had sore trauayled theyr bodyes and spente theyr money, in trust to haue had a good season as therle of Sauoy, the erle of Armynake, and the earle Dolphyn of Auuergne, and a hundred other great Lordes that departed in great displeasure because they had not bene in England in likewyse to ayde the frenche kynge but as than he could not amend it. So thus departed all maner of people, some merry, and some greatly displeased, and angrye, and the officers abode styll there behynd, for to make shyft to sell theyr prouisions for theyr maysters profyte, and to take money for theym yf they myght. but they wyst not to whom nor where, for it that coste a hundred frankes was sold for ten frankes, and for lesse money. The earle Dolphin of Auuergne sayd vnto me, that by his faith, he had there prouisions which coste hym ten thousand frankes. and when he retourned homewarde agayne, he lost all together, and so sayd many knyghtes and squiers, and other people of Fraunce. And why these tydynges were knowen in the realme of Englande, some were ryghte ioyfull and gladde therof, as such people that doubted the frenchemens comming, and some were angry and displeased therewyth, whyche was suche people as thought to haue some promotion and profyte by them.

So then there was made at the citie of London, a greate feast, and thyther came all the lordes such as had kepte the portes and passages of the realme of England. And then ꝑ king held also a noble feast at Westminster, on Christmas daye. And there were thre dukes made. Fyrst the earle of Cambridge was made the duke of Yorke. The earle of Buckingham his brother was made duke of Glouceftre. And the thyrd was the earle of Oxenforde, and he was made the duke of Irelande

this feaft endured wyth great cruelties & tryumphes. So thus the people of the realme of England (as they thought them felfe) that they had efcaped a greate perill, and then dyuers of them fayd among them felfe that they would neuer fet more by the Frenchmē, and they thought that all the affemble of the Frenchmē that was made at Sluis, was but to feare the Englyfhe men, and to haue caufed the dune of Lancaftre and his companye to retourne againe oute of Spayne.

¶ Howe a fquyer called Jaques le Grys, was accufed in the Parlyament houfe at Parys, before all the Lordes there preſent, by a knyghte called John of Carongne, & what iudgement was geuen vpon them, and how they iufted at vtteraunce in Parys, in a place called Sayncte Katheryne behind the temple. And how Jaques le Grys was confounded. Ca. lxi.

In this time greate bruite there was in Fraunce, and in the lowe marches of a feate of armes that fhould be done at Parys in vtteraūce, for fo the mater was tudged in the parliament chābre at Parys. The whych plee had endured a greate betweene thefe two partyes, the one was a fquyer called Jaques le Grys, and the other party was a knyghte called John of Carogne, and they were both of the lande and houfholde of the erle Peter of Alanfon, and they were well beloued of theyr lord. and fpecially this fquyer Jaques le Grys was well beloued and truſted with his lord aboue any other perſō in his court or houſhold, and byeuafe that mortall battayle folowed betweene them. and they being bothe of one lordes houſholde, euery man had great mar uayle therof. So that out of dyuers countreyes greate multitude of people came to Parys, at the daye of batayle for to fe it. I fhall fhewe you the hole matter as I was then enformed.

So it was that on a feafon this knyghte called John of Carongne, tooke an enterpryfe vpon him to go ouer the fea for the auauncement of his honeur where vnto he habde bene long time to accomplifhe.

So he departed from his lorde the Erle of Alanfon, to go his voyage. And alfo he toke his leaue of his wyfe, who as than was reputed a fayre ladye and a yonge, and he left her in a Caſtell of his owne on the marches of Perche other wyfe called Regentuell, and fo entred into his voyage, and his wyfe lay ſtyll at her caſtell, in a wyfe and fage maner.

So here beganne the matter by the deuyfed temptacion whyche entred into the bodye of the fquyer Jaques le Grys, who was wyth the erle of Alanfon his lord, for he was one of his counſayle. And fo he determined in his myode to do an euyll dede whych he dearelye boughte afterwarde. Howbeit the euyll that he did could neuer be proues in him, nor he would neuer confeſſe it. This fquyer Jaques le Gris, fet his minde on the wyfe of this forfayd knyght John of Carongne, in the abſence of her huſband, and he knewe well that ſhe was in the caſtell of Regentuell but with her owne company, and houſhold ſeruauntes.

And fo on a morning he toke a good horſe and departed from Alanfon, and fo rode on the ſpurres with great haſte till he came to the ladyes caſtell. and when he was thyther come the Ladyes ſeruauntes made him good cheare becauſe theyr mayſter and he were companions and felawes togither, and ſerued bothe one lorde and mayſter. and as for the ladye ſhe thought none euyll in him, for ſhe knewe nothyng of his entēt nor wherfore he was come thyther. Howe be it ſoftely ſhe receyued him, and led him into her chamber, and ſhewed him part of her buſyneſſe. Than this fquyer Jaques le Gris, to accōpliſhe his falſhe appetite, beſyzed the ladye yf he might ſe the dungeon, for he ſayd it was a great parte of his comming thyther to ſe it. The ladye lyghtlye graunted him his deſyre, and ſo ſhe and he wente thyther all alone, and nother chamberer nor varlet entred wyth theym, for the ladye and no muſtruſt in him of any diſhonour, and aſſone as they were entred into the dungeon, Jaques

le Gryf, closeth the doze after them. The lady knewe not therof, for she wente on before, and thought that the wynde had shutte the doze, and so when they were togither, thus alone Jaques toke the lady in his armes and embraced her, & discouered to her his entent. The lady was sore abashed, and would gladly have gone to ꝑ doze, but she could not for he was a bygge man. & so layd her downe on the carpet, and to bi force bad his pleasure with her, & when he had done what he list, he opened the doze and so departed, and the lady sore displeased and abashed of ꝑ aduenture taried still alone in the Sensrom, but at the knyghtes departing, she sayd wepinge, Jabet, Jabet ye haue not well done thus to shame me, but the blame shall not rest on me but on you, if god suffer my husbande once to retourne home agayne. So Jabet toke his horse and departed and rode home agayne, to his mayster the earle of Blanson. and was there at his ryding about xi. of the cloche, and at. iiii. of the cloche in ꝑ morninge he was fene there before. I shall shewe you why I speake these wordes, bycause of ꝑ greate plee that folowed after, for the commissaries of the parliament of Paris, had the matter in examination. Thus the lady of Carongne abode styll in her castell after this sorowfull dede done to her, and discouered the matter to no creature but kept her sorowe as close as she might, for she sawe wel to speake of then therof she might haue more blame than honoure, but she remembred well the day, houre, and time that the dede was done, and so after the time came that the lord of Carogne came home from his voyage, ꝑ lady his wyfe made him good cheare, the day passed, and the nyght came, and the knight went to bed, & the lady would not. wherof the knight had great maruaile, & often besyred her to come to bed, and euer she blessed her, and walked vp and downe the chambre studyenge and musinge finally when all her seruauntes were gone to bed. then she came to her husband and fell downe on her knees and lamentably shewed him all her aduenture. the knyght could not beleue her. Howbeit the lady shewed so much that he agreed well that it was so. and sayd certaynlye lady sith the matter is so as ye shewe me, I pardon you, but the knyght shall dye for his dede by the aduise and counsayle of my frendes and yours And if your wordes be found untrue, ye shal no lyer come in my company. The lady euer more and more certified him that it was true, so that nyght passed. The next day the knight wrote many letters, and sent them to all his fryendes beyond, and also to his vncle, so that in a short time they were all come and assembled togither at the castell of Argentueil, and when they were all in a chamber. then he began to shewe the cause why he had sent for them, and there made his wyfe to shewe them all the matter, fro point to point. wherof they all had great maruayle. & there he demaunded of them counsayle, & he was counsayled that he should shewe to his lord the earle of Blanson, and shewe him all the matter and so he dyd, and the earle who greatly loued this forsayd Jaques le Gris, would not beleue him. and so gaue day, to the partyes to be before him at a day limited. And also he commaunded that the lady that had spoyled Jaques le Gris should be there present for to shewe the more playnly the touch of the matter, and so she was with a great number of her lygnage. so the pleading was great in the earles presence. And Jaques le Gris, was accused of this dede by the knyght the lord of Carongne, by relacion of his wyfe who shewed there the case as it was falle, Jaques le Gris excused him selfe saying, howe he was not guilty therein. and the lady layde it for to his charge, and he euer denied it. And had marueyle by his wordes why the lady did hate him, he proued by them of the earle of Blansons house that the same day at foure of the cloche in the morning he was fro there in his mayters castell. and his mayster sayd and affyrmed that at xi. of the cloche he was with him at his vprysyng. wherfore the earle sayd it was not possyble for him to go and come, and to do that dede in foure houres and a halfe. for ryde. xxiii. myles wherfore the earle sayde to the lady how she did but dreame it. wherfore he would commaunde his squyer, and commaunded the lady to speake no more of the matter. But the knyghte who was of great courage, and wel trusted and beloued his wyfe, would not agree to that appoynt but to went to paris. and shewed the matter there at the parliament, and there appeared Jaques le Gris, who appered and answered to his appeale. and there layd in pledges to answere the ordynaunce of the parliament.

The plee before them endured more than a yeare, and an halfe. and they could not be agreed, for the foresayde knyght beleu-

hymselfe sore of the informacyon of hys wyfe and bycause the matter was so sore publyshed abrode he sayde he wolde maintaine his quarell to the death, wherwith the erle of Alanson was sore displeased with the poore knight, and oftentymes would haue had hym slayne, but that the matter was in the parlyament, so lōg their plee endure that the parlyament determyned bycause the Lady could make no proffe against Jaques le Gris but by her owne wordes, that there should be batayle at vtteraunce betwene them, and soo on a daye prefyxed the knyght and his wyfe, and the squyer beynge present Judgment was geuen, that the nexte mondaye after mortall batayle should be done betwene the knyghte and the squyer, whiche was in the yere of oure lorde God. M.CCC. lxxx. and. vii. At whyche tyme the frenche king and hys lordes were at Sluse, to the entente to passe ouer the sea into Englande and when the kynge harde of that matter howe a day of batayle was taken to be at Parys, the kynge sayde he wolde see that batayle betwene the knyght and the squire, the duke of Berre, the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Bordone, & the constable of Fraunce, who had also greate desyre to se that batayle, said to the kinge, syr it is good reason that ye be there and that it be don in your presence, then ỳ king sent to Paris cōmaunding that the iourney & batayle betwene the squire and the knight shoulde be relonged til his comyng to Parys, and so his cōmaundyment was obeyde.

SO the kynge then retourned fro Sluse and helde the feaste of Christmas at Arras, and the duke of Bourgonye at Lysle. And in the meane season all other men of warre passed and retourned in to Fraunce, euery man to his place as it was ordeyned by the marishalles, but ỳ great lordes retourned to Parys to se the sayd batayle. Thus the king and his vncles and the constable came to Parys. Then the lystes were made in a place called Saincte Katheryne behinde the Temple. There was so muche people that it was mernayle to beholde. and on the one syde of the lystes there was made great scaffoldes that the lordes myght the better se the batayle of the. ii champyons, and so they bothe came to the felde armed at all peaces, and there eche of them was set in their chaire, the erle of saincte Poule gouerned John of Carongne and the erle of Alansons company with Jaques le Gris, & when the knight entred in to the felde he came to his wife who was there syttinge in a chaire couered in blacke, and he sayde to her thus. Dame by your enformacyon and in your quarell I do put my lyfe in aduenture as to fyght with Jaques le Gris, ye knowe if the cause be iust and true, syr sayde the lady, it is as I haue said, wherfore ye may fyghte surely, the cause is good and true, wyth those wordes ỳ knight kyssed the ladye and toke her by the hande and then blessed hym and soo entred in to the felde, the ladye sate styll in the blacke chaire in her prayers to God and to the virgyne Marye, humbly prayenge them by their swetyall grace, to sende her husbande the victorye accordynge to the righte he was in, this lady was in great heynes for she was not sure of her lyfe, for if her husbande shoulde haue bene dyscomfyted she was iudged wythout remedy to be brente and her husbande hanged, I can not say whether she repented her or not ỳ the matter was so forewarde, that bothe she and her husbande were in great peryll, howbeit finally she muste as then abide the aduenture. Then these two champions were set one agaynst another and so mouted on theyr horses, and behaued them nobly, for they knewe what perteyned to deades of armes, there wer many lordes & knightes of Fraunce that were come thyther to se ỳ batayle, the two champions iusted at theyr fyrst metynge but none of them did hurt other And after the Justes they lyghted on foote to performe their batayle and so foughte valyauntly. And first John of Carōgne was hurt in the thighe whereby all hys frendes were in great feare, but after that he fought so valiaūtly that he bette downe his aduersary to ỳ erth and thruste hys swearde in hys bodye, and soo slewe him in the field, and then he demaunded yf he had done his deuoyre or not. and they answered that he hadde valiauntlye acheued his batayle. Then Jaques le Gris was delyuered the hangeman of Parys, and he drewe hym to the gybet of Mountfawcon and there hanged hym vp. Then John of Carongne came before the kynge and kneled downe, & the kynge made hym to stande vp before hym. and the same daye the kynge caused to be delyuered to hym a thousande frankes, and reteyned hym to be of his chambre with a pēsion of two hundred pounde by the yeare durynge the terme of his lyfe, then he thanked the kynge and the lordes and went to his wife and kyssed her and then they went together to the churche of

our Lady in Parys and made their offeringe and then retourned to their lodgynges. then thys sir John of Carongne tarryed not longe in Fraunce but wente with sir John Bouuequant, syr John of Bozdes, and sir Lois Grat all these wente to se and vysite the holye sepulture, and to se Lamozabaquyn of whome in those dayes there was muche speakynge, and with them wente Robonet of Bolowne a squyer of honoure with the Frenche kynge who in his dayes made many voyages aboute in the wozlde.

¶ Howe the kyng of Aragon died and howe the Archebysshoppe of Burdeaus was sette in Prysone in Barcelona. Ca. lxj.

The same season about Candelmas kynge Peter of Aragon fell sycke in hys bed, and when he sawe þ he should dye he caused his two sonnes to come before him John the elder and Martyne Duke of Blasmont in Aragon, and saide to them, faire sonnes I leaue you in good poynte, and al the busines of the roialme standeth well and clere kepe peas and loue betwene you, and kepe fayth and honoure eche to other ye shall doo the better, as for the feates of the church accordyng to my conscyence and for the moost sure way, I haue alwayes holden the newetralite betwene the .ii. popes, and so I would ye should do till the determination betwene them apere more clerely. The two sons answered and said sir gladly we shall obey that ye commaunde & ordeyne as it is reason, thus in thys case dyed kynge Peter of Aragon who had ben a ryght valyaunt prince in his dayes and greatly had augmented the crown and realme of Aragon and had conquered the royalme of Mayorke and had annered it to hys owne crowne, and he was buryed in the good cyte of Barcelona, and there he lyeth, and when his deth was knowen in Auygnon with pope clement and his Cardynalles they wrote incontinente to þ frenche kynge and to his uncles, to the duke of Barre and to the duches who was of theyr opinion, and they were father and mother to the ponge quene that should be in Aragon the lady polent, and also they wrote to her that al these shoulde stryre and moue the ponge kynge of Aragon to be of their opinion, the Frenche kinge, the duke of Berre and the duke of Bozgoyne sent into Aragon in legacyon a Cardinall to preache, and to styre the ponge kyng & his brother, and the people of that royalme of Aragon to take the opinion of Clement, the Cardynall dydde so muche wyth the ayde of the lady polent of Barre as then quene of Aragon who gladly enclyned to that way bycause she was so instantly required therto by her fader and moder, and by the frenche kynge, and dukes of Berre and Burgonye her coulyns so that she brought the kynge and the roialme to be of the opinion of pope Clement. Howebeit the kynge woulde haue bene styll a newter as his fader was.

In the same season that the kyng of Aragon thus died, there was at Barcelona the archbyshop of Burdeaus whom the duke of Lancastre had sét thider in ambassade, I shal shew you the cause why. ¶ The prince of Wales because he was duke & lord of the countre of Aquitayne and that all his neyghboures doubted hym, as the Frenche kynge, the kynge of Aragon, the kinge of Spayne, and the kynge of Nauare, yea, and also kinges that were Sarazins that harde great speakinge of hym, for the good fortune and noble chyualrye that he was of, and he hadde a certayne aliaunce and confyderacyon with kynge Peter of Aragon, whiche leage was swozne and sealed betwene them, and it was confirmed by the kynge of Englande father to the prince.

And amoge other thynges it was comprysed that the kinge of Englande nor þ duke & lorde of Aequytayne shoulde make any warre nor consent to make onye warre agaynst the roialme of Aragon, for the whyche the kynge of Aragon sware and sealed for hym and for hys heyres that euerye yeare he shoulde serue the prince of Aequytayne with þ nombre of fyue hundred speres agaynste who so euer he hadde to do wythall, or elles to send vnto him as muche money as shoulde wage fyue hundreth speres. ¶ And soo it was that

as then there was .x. yeres tyme in arrerages that the kynge of Aragon had payde nothyng nor done only resspect to ꝑ kynge of Englande nor to his departyng/ and when the duke of Lancastre went out of Englande/ he hadde with hym letters patentes sealed with the grete seale of Englande/ wherby he was stablysshed to be the kynges Lyeutenaunt in the marches of Burdeaus/ Bayon/ and Iequytayne/ and the kynge gaue hym full puyssaunce and auctorite royall to demaunde all ryghtes and due actyons as well of the royalme of Aragon as elles where/ and wolde that the duke sholde haue ꝑ propyte without any crepeyon/ and what so euer he dyd/ to be ferme and stable so thus whē the duke of Lancastre had ben a seson in the towne of sayne James in Galyce/ he remembred hymselfe of the busynes of Aragon/ and perceyued well by reason of his commyssyon/ howe the kynge of Aragon was sore in his det in a grete some of money longe renne in arrerages whiche he thought if he myght gete/ it sholde gretely ayde hym in his warres of Castell/ and soo he sente to the archebysshop of Burdeaus/ and to syr Johñ Harpedan who was seneschall of all Burdelois commaundynge thē bothe or at the leest one of them to go in to Aragon to ꝑ kynge there/ and to shewe hym playnly howe he was in grete arrerages with the kynge of Englande and with the duke of Iequytayne/ the archebysshoppe and the Seneschall beheldē well the duke of Lancastres letters/ and soo tokē counsayle togyder theron/ and there they determyned that it was best ꝑ the Seneschall sholde tary styll at Burdeaus and the bysshop to take on hym the charge of that voyage/ and soo he dyd/ and he came in to Aragon in so ryall a seson that the kynge there laye syke and dyed/ and after the kynges dethe the archebysshop pursued his cause and folowed the kynges chyldren and ꝑ counsayle of the royalme who came to the kynges enterment to ꝑ cyte of Barcelona/ and this bysshop purchased his ambassade so effectuously that he was set in a courtoyse prison so that he could not departe when he wolde/ whan these tydynges came to Burdeaus to ꝑ seneschall there/ he sayd I thought neuer none other wyse/ for ꝑ archebysshop is hasty herby/ I thynke nowe it had ben better that I had gone/ for I wolde haue spoken more meekely/ there is a maner thoughout all the worlde howe to demaunde a mannes ryght/ the seneschall sente these tydynges to the duke of Lancastre in to Galyce who was therwith ryght sore dysplesed and cyuyll content with the kynge of Aragon and his counsayle that they had put the archebysshop in to prison for doynge of his ambassade/ then the duke of Lancastre wrote to the companyons of the garyson of Lourde/ that they sholde make warre agaynst them of Barcelona where as the archebysshoppe of Burdeaus was in prison.

IOhñ of Byerne who was cayptayne there and seneschall of Bygorre/ Piet Dauchyn/ Ernalton of Resten/ Ernalton of sayne Colombe and other of the garyson of Lourde were gretely reioysed when they herde that ꝑ kynges/ and then began to ryne in to the royalme of Aragon to the portes of Barcelona so that no merchaunt durst go abrode. ¶ Also in Aragon there was another myschefe/ for the ponge kynge Johñ of Aragon wolde haue ben crowned kynge of Aragon/ but the good townes wolde not consente therto without he swore fyrst solemply that he sholde neuer demaunde tayle/ tare/ nor inposycyon in all ꝑ countrey and dyuers other thynges that he sholde swere and put it in wrytynge sealed yf he wolde be crowned kynge/ whiche thynge semed to hym and to his counsayle to be ryght preiudycyall wherfore he thretened to make them warre/ and specyally to them of the cyte of Barcelona for the kynge sayd they were to ryche and to prowde.

IN the same season there was in Langue docke and on the fronters of Auuergne and of Rouergue towarde Pezanas and ꝑ cyte of Nuzes/ a maner of men of armes called ꝑ Routes/ & they daily multyplyed to do cyuyll/ and .viii. men of armes were cayptaynes who demaunded warre agaynst euery man/ they cared not agaynst whom/ they names were Peter of Mount fawcon/ Geffray Chasselyer/ Hamgue de forge/ and the goulent. They had a foure hundreth men vnder them/ who ryfled and pylled the countrey where as they were conuersaunt/ and whan they were enformed that ꝑ archebysshop of Burdeaus was in prison in Aragon/ and that the duke of Lancastre was not contente with the Aragonoys/ and also that the kynge of Aragon was cyuyll pleased with the good townes of his royalme and countrey. And they were of these tydynges

gretely reioysed/for suche people as they were ake rather pleased with euyll dedes then with good. They toke counsayle bytwene them & determyned to approche to Aragon and to gete some fortresses on those frontyers/thynkynge then that the duke of Aragon or elles some of ꝑ goode townes wolde entreate with the to their profyte. So they rode toward the countrey & set their myndes to gete yf they myght the castell of Dulcen beynge in ꝑ archbyshoprych of Narbone bytwene the royalme of Aragon and Fraunce on the departynge of bothe royalmes/they came thyder at suche a poynte and by nyght that they founde it but symply watched not kepte/they dyd soo moche ꝑ they wan it & were lordes therof/wherby al the countrey was affrayde & sperefully they of Perpygnen/ for it was but .iiii. leggues thens/ also they of Lourde gate ꝑ same weke a castell in Aragon a .iiii. leggues fro Barcelona called the olde castell of Kolbays pertenynge to the countesse of Castell Bore cosyn germayne to the erle of Foys. The lady was gretely abaysshed when her castell was so taken/ she sente to her cosyn the erle of Foys desyrynge hym for goddes sake to rendre agayne to her the sayd castell whiche they of his countrey of Berne had taken fro her ꝑ erle sent to her ꝑ she sholde not be afrayde for ony thynge/ertesayenge her ꝑ it was taken but alonely to make warr agaynst the of Barcelona who helde in prison for a smal cause ꝑ bysshop of Burdeaus/sayenge howe she sholde haue it ryght well agayne without ony domage/ ꝑ lady was well pleased with his answere & dyssymuled the matter and went and lay at another castell nere to Roquebrerton and they of the castell of Kolbays/and of Dulcen and of Lourde made sore warre on the frontyers of Aragon/ & to say the trouth the kynge there dyssymuled ꝑ matter to chastyse therby ꝑ good townes ꝑ were agaynst hym/so that ꝑ good townes were sore displeased with the kynge/for they of Barcelona of Perpygnen & of other townes coulde not exercyse their merchaundyse/but they were taken and raunsomed/then they of Barcelona abuysed to delyuer the archebysshop of Burdeaus out of prison and for his delyueraunce to speke with the kynge as it was reason/and soo prayely by a meane they treated with the kynges brother syr Martyne duke of Blasemont who was gretly in ꝑ grace of all ꝑ people desyrynge hym to be meane to the kynge his brother ꝑ they myght be in peas with them of Lourde & of Kolbays/he promysed them to do his best/ to kepe them in his fauoure/ and he dyd so moche with the kynge his brother that the archebysshop of Burdeaus was delyuered out of prison and sente in to Burdeloys/and alone after the erle of Foys dyd so moche that the byrauntesse recouered agayne her castell/and suche as helde it departed/ this recoure dyd the erle of Foys that pertee to the duke of Lancastre.

When the kynge of Aragon sawe that the countesse of castell Bore had soo soone agayne recouered her castell he sent for her/and she came to hym/then the kynge layde to her charge howe she had suffered ꝑ englysshmen to entre in to her castell to make warre to his royalme/sayenge how she had done to hym a grete trespace/ the lady truely excused her & sayd/syr as god knoweth & by the fayth I owe to you/the day and houre that tydynges came to me of ꝑ takynge of my castell by the of Lourde I neuer had before no treaty with the englysshmē/but syr incōtynent I sent to my cosyn ꝑ erle of Foys prayng hym for goddes sake to gete me agayne my castell/sayenge that they ꝑ had gotten it were of his countrey of Byerne and were yssued out of Lourde/ and the erle sente to me & bad me not doubte/ sayenge how the takyng of it was but to make warre agaynst them of Barcelona/ wel sayd ꝑ kynge proue your wordes by your cosyn the erle of Foys and ye shall enioy peasybly styll your castell with a good wyl syr sayd ꝑ lady/ she sent to her cosyn the erle of Foys/who was at Ortays in Byerne/prayng hym to apease the matter with ꝑ kynge of Aragon. The erle then sent letters to ꝑ kynge by a knyght of his called syr Espaarte of Saucelyn desyrynge the kynge to suffre his cosyn the byrountes to be in peas and to lyue in rest vnder hym/or elles surely he wolde displease hym/ ꝑ kynge of Aragon toke the excusacyons in gre and made grete chere to the erles knyght/ and sayd howe the countesse had but wel done syth her cosyn the erle of Foys dyd so largely excuse her/thus the lady lyued in peas/ but the merchauntes of Barcelona and of ꝑ frontyers there aboute were not in no rest for them of Lourde but often tymes were taken and pylled without they were agreed and pateled with them & so they had dyuers in Castellon & in Aragon/ In lyke wyse so dyd they of ꝑ garyson of Dulcen & dyd worse then they dyd before for they were more egre & ouer ran ꝑ countrey of Aragon/ then they of Lourde dyd/ bycause they were poore they cared not whom they toke as

well offycers

well offreres of the kynges & squyers as merchaunts / soo that the kynges counsayle toke aduyse bycause the good townes murmured & sayd howe the kynge destroyed them and he ought to susteyne them.

Then the yonge kynge of Aragon vnderstode ꝑ his men murmured & spake of hym otherwyse then they sholde dob ycause of them of the garyson of Dulcen / he was therwith sore displeased / bycause he was newly fallen to his faders herytage who was so well beloued in his royalme of all his people / then he spake to a cosyn of his a grete baron in Aragon syr Raymon of Baghes and sayd syr Raymon I desyre you to ryde to Dulcen / and demaunde of them that be there what thyng they desyre of me or of my royalme / and trete soo with them that they may departe thens outher by fayrnes or otherwyse. The knyght departed and sente to Dulcen an herauldc before hym shewynge them howe he wolde trete with them / when Mountfawcon & le Goulus and the other capytaynes vnderstode that syr Raymon of Baghes wolde trete with them / then they thought at the leest to gete some money / and sayd to the herauldc / syr saye to your mayster ꝛco vs / that he maye come to vs surely for we wyll no hurte to hym. The herauldc returned to syr Raymon who vpon his wordes departed ꝛco Barregant and came to Dulcen / and demanded of them why they taryed there on ꝑ frontyers of Aragon / they answered & sayd we abyde here the army of fraunce ꝑ sholde go in to Castel to go in cõpany with them. Then syr sayd syr Raymon yf ye tary therfore ye shall abyde a grete season. The kynge of Aragon wyll not retayne you so longe nor yet the countrey suffre you so longe / well syr sayd they if he wyll not entertayne vs so longe we can not do withall / yet we must lyue / yf he or the countrey wyll by this our garyson we wyll departe or elles not / well sayd syr Raymon what wyll ye desyre to departe / they answered sir. M. frankes / we be. iiii. capytaynes that is to sche of vs yd. M. frankes / in the name of god sayd syr Raymon that is money ynought. I wyll speke with the kynge and so departed / and sayd it were better for the comon profyte of ꝑ countrey that the kynge payde that money then to take a greter domage / and that he sayd to appeaste them. Howbeit he thought the contrary.

Thus he departed ꝛco them & gaue them vnderstandynge that they sholde haue as moche as they desyred and more / and rode to the kynge to Perpyghnen and shewed hym what these pylers desyred / Well sayd ꝑ kynge it is behouesable that ꝑ countrey be delyuered of them / and that they be payde as theuys and brybe urs sholde be payde / yf I may gete them they shall be hanged / other payment gete they none of me / but all the dyffycultie is how to gete them out of they r garyson / syr sayd syr Raymon ꝑ shall be done ryght well / let them alone Well sayd the kynge doo as ye thynke best / I wyll medle no more therin / but that I wolde they were delyuered out of the countrey / Then on a day syr Raymon gathered a compayny together of men of armes a. v. hundred spere ssterely and made a squyer of Gascoyne capytayne a balyaunt man of armes called Arnaudon Seghen and layde them in a busshment within a lytell myle of Dulcen & sayd to them / syrs when they of the garyson yssue out do so that they may all be taken or slayne that the countrey maye be clene ryd of them. Then syr Raymon sente to them of Dulcen that they sholde lepe on they r horses and yssue out and ryne before ꝑ towne of Perpyghnen to put the pylaynes therof in fere / elles they wolde not obey nor gyue nothynge. They of Dulcen were ryght ioyfull of these tydynges thynkynge that all had ben trouth and so armed them the same day that the busshment was layde for them / & so departed ꝛco the garyson and rode towarde Perpyghnen and so came to the barryers and made they r musters and in they r retournynge thynkynge to haue passed surely in peas when they were in the myddes of the way they were sodaynly encountred by Arnaudon Seghnen & his company to the nombre of. v. C. spere / & so bashed in amonge them / then they saw wel howe they were dysceyued and trapped / and then they drewe togyder and fought as longe as they myght endure / whiche was not longe for there were many of them were euyll armed and so shortely they were dyscomfyted / There was syre Geffray chastelyer / Hauge delorge Guyot Wolcque / Iohn de Guenlant / & many other / & there was taken Peter of Mountfawcon / Amiardan of Saynt Just & a. xl. other and brought prysoners to Perpyghnen / & as they passed thrughe the stretes / they of ꝑ townes yssued out of they r houses & halowed after them as thoughe they had ben wolues / and so they were set in prysones. The same season the

P.i.

duke of Berre was come to Carcassone / & on ꝑ frontiers of Aragon / he came fro Auygnon fro the pope / and there he herde howe they of Puiseen were slayne and taken / then he wrote to the kynge of Aragon and to his cosyne pousant of Bare desyrynge them to sende Peter of Mountfawcon and his company / who incontynent were delyuered and sente to the duke of Berre / that grace ꝑ duke dyd to them / or elles they had all dyed.

¶ Howe a batayle of armes was done at Burdeaus before the lene shall there & dyuers other. Ca. lxii.

The same season there was at Burdeaus a feate of armes done before the seneschall syr Johñ Harpedon & other betwene the lorde of Rochfoncaulte a frenshmã sone to the captall of Buse Butres and syr wyllyam of Mountferant an Englysshman to renne .iii. courses with .iii. speres .iii. strokes with a sworde .iii. with a dagger / and .iii. with an axe. This dede of armes was done before ꝑ lordes and ladyes of ꝑ countrey then beynge at Burdeaus. The erle of Foys sente thyder knyghtes of his house to serue & to counsayle ꝑ lorde of Rochfoncaulte sone to his cosyn germayne / and also he sent to hym good horse & harneys / spere heedes / daggers / swordes / & axes / Howbeit he was ryght wel purueyed of them before / on a day there .ii. knyghtes armed them wel accompanyed with greets chevalry on eyther partye. The lorde of rochfoncaulte had in his company a. CC. knyghtes and squyers all of his lygnage / and syr wyllyam of Mountferant had as many or mo with hym was the lorde of Rohen / the lorde of Lespare / the lorde Duras / the lorde of Curton the lorde of Languras / the lorde de la Barde / the lorde of Mountcropat in Pyergourt / and all were of his lygnage. ¶ Bycause this feate of armes sholde be done bytwene suche .ii. noble and valyaũt knyghtes many came thyder to se them farre & nere / when these two knyghtes were mounted on theyr horses wt theyr helmes and targes redy apparelled / theyr speres were delyuered them & ranne togyder hertely / & encoũtred eche other on theyr helmes that ꝑ bocle brake and theyr helmes stryken of theyr heedes in to the feide and so passed forth theyr course bare heded except theyr copues. Then all the lordes and ladyes sayd and euery man to other howe they hadde nobly encountred at theyr fyrst metynge / then theyr helmes were newe set on and fastened / and so they ranne valyauntly theyr .ii. course / and also the .iii. bycuely / al theyr feates were nobly accomplysshed to the grete pleasure of all the lordes and ladyes and other regarders / and euery man sayd howe eche of them hadde valyauntly achyeued theyr feates / and the seneschall of Burdeaus syr Johñ Harpedon gaue the same daye a supper to them and to al the lordes and ladyes ꝑ were there presente. And the nexte daye euery man wente to theyr owne heritages / & the lorde of Rochfoncaulte prepayred hymselfe to go in to Castell / for the kynge Johñ there had sente for hym / and the season bycome nere / & syr wyllyam of Mountferant ordeyned to go in to Portygale / for the kynge there had also sent for hym.

In suche a noble hystory as this is / whyche I syr Johñ Froyssart haue pursued hytherto / and that god hath sent me that grace to lyue so longe to se so many thynges as I haue done / then it were noo reason that I sholde forgete out ony thynge that I haue knowen to be done / and bycause that by ꝑ warres of Bretayne the .ii. sones of Charles of Blois who of longe season called hymselfe duke of Bretayne by marryage of ꝑ lady Jahan of Bretayne who ought to haue ben ryghtful enherytour of Bretayne as it hath ben shewed before in this hystory whose sones were in Englande in hostage for theyr fader / as yet I haue made no mencyon of them where they became / nor how they came out of pryson and daunger of the kynge of Englande / wherin theyr fader ꝑ lorde Charles of Blois had lefte them / ye knowe wel and it hath ben wryten here before howe kynge Edwarde of englande to make his warre of fraũce the fyrster and stronger he alyed hymselfe wt the erle of Montfordе and alwayes dyd counsayle and ayde hym to his power / and dyd so moche that the erle of Monfordе came to his entente and was duke of Bretayne otherwyse he couldе neuer haue come therto / for in Bretayne ꝑ lorde Charles of Blois of .xii. he had euer .v. on his party / it hath ben shewed before howe in the yere of oure lorde a. CCC. and xlvii. there was a grete batayle in Bretayne before the Ree dorgent where the countesse of Mountfordes party / as syr Johñ of Harcell

and other discomfited syr Charles of Bloys and there he was taken prysoner & led in to englande where he had good chere/for the quene of Englande ỳ good quene Philyp whos seruaunt I was in myne ponygth/she was of ryght full gouernacyon cosyn germayne to ỳ lorde Charles of Bloys/& she dyd put to her payne for his delyuerance/howbeit the counsayle of Englande wolde not that he sholde be delyuered/the duke Henry of Lancastre sayd and other lordes of englande that yf he were out of pryson by hym myght be made many geete recouerances for the royalme of Fraunce/for kynge Philyp as then frensshe kyng was his vncle/and they aduysed that as longe as he were kepte in pryson/they warre in to Fraunce sholde be ỳ easyer/howbeit for all those wordes that was shewed to the kynge by the good meanes of the noble and good quene he was set to his fynaunce to paye .CC. M. nobles/whiche was as then a grete some to be payde for lordes as then ryued in another maner the they do nowe/for as nowe men may pay more then they/ predecessours myght haue done/for nowe they tayle they/ people at they/ pleasure and before they ryued but on they/ rentes and reuennes/for as nowe the duchy of Bretayne wyn a yere or two is able to pay to helpe they/ lorde .ii. M. nobles or more. The lorde Charles of Bloys layde to the kynge of Englande his .ii. sones in pledge for ỳ sayd some/& afterwarde the lorde Charles of Bloys had so moche to do in pursuyng his warre for the duchy of Bretayne and to pay his souldyours/and to kepe his estate alwayes hoppynge to come to a good ende of his warre so ỳ he was not able to quyte out his sones out of Englande for ỳ holy man in pursuynge of his heryttage dyed as a saynt in a batayle in Bretayne before aulrop by the ayde of the Englysshe men who were agaynst hym/when he was deed yet the warre ended not/but then kynge Charles of fraunce who in his ryse doubted gretly the fortunes of the warres/when he sawe that the erle Mount forde & the Englysshe men ceased not but styll wente forwarde/& wanne townes & fortresses in Bretayne/he feared ỳ yf ỳ erle Mountforde myght come to his entente of the duchy of Bretayne/that he wolde not holde nor do homage to hym/for he had promysed his allegeaunce to the kynge of englande who ayded & alwaye hadde done to mayntayne his warre/then he treted with the erle Mountforde & his counsayle as it hath ben shewed here before/wherfore I wyll speke no more therof/but ỳ erle of Mountforde abode as duke of Bretayne with that he sholde do homage and holde couerayne of the crowne of fraunce/and by the same treaty ỳ duke sholde ayde & helpe to gete delyuered out of pryson in englande his .ii. cosyns sones to the lorde Charles of Bloys/whiche artycle he neuer dyd accomplysshe/for alwayes he doubted that yf they retourned they wolde put hym to some busynes for ỳ duchy of Bretayne & feared lest they of Bretayne wolde receyue them as they/ lordes/for they more enclyned to the then to hym/wherfore he wolde not speke for they/ delyueraunce. Thus these .ii. chyldren abode so longe in Englande in pryson/tomtyme in ỳ keppynge of the lorde Roger Beawchaump and the lady Sybyll his wyfe/ and somtyme with syr Thomas Hambyrchcourte/ on a tyme the ponger Guy of Bretayne dyed/ then Johñ of Bretayne abode styll in pryson alone/ he was often tymes sad of his beynge in pryson/but he coulde not amende it. And often tymes when he remembred the losse of his ponge dayes as he that was of the mooste noble generacyon of the worlde/& was lykely to lese/ he wolde often tymes wepe/ and wysshed hymselfe rather deed then a lyue/for a .xxxv. yeres or theraboute he had ben in the daunger of his enemyes in Englande/and coulde se noo maner of meanes of his delyueraunce/ for his frendes and kynne drewe of fro hym/and the some that he laye for was so grete that he wyst not how it sholde be payde without god helped hym/ and the duke of Iuioy for all his puyssaunce and prosperyte and that he had wedded his syster germayne/ by whom he had .ii. fayre sones Loys & Charles for all this he dyd nothynge for hym. Now shall I shewe you howe this Johñ of Bretayne was delyuered.

Howe Johñ of Bretayne sone to syr Charles of Bloys was delyuered out of pryson by the meanes of Olyuer of Clysson the constable of Fraunce. Ca. lxxii.

IT hathe ben shewed here before in this hystory how the erle of Buchyngham made a voyage thrughe the royalme of Fraunce & came in to Bretayne/ the duke of Bretayne had delyred hym

so to doo bycause parte of his countrey wolde not be vnder his obeysaunce / there the erle of Buckyngham & his company lay al ỳ wynter & the begynnyng of somer after in grete power / before Nantes & Vennes tyll it was Maye & then he retourned in to englande / & when the erle Thomas of Buckyngham & his company laye before Vennes in lodgynges without.

There were dyuers skyrmyshes betwene the englysshmen & frenshmen / & thyder came Oliuer Clysson constable of Fraunce to se the warre ỳ was there made / & to speke with ỳ englysshe knyghtes / for he knewe them well / for in his yongth he was brought vp amonge the in Englande / & soo he made good company w them in diuers maners as noble men of armes wyll do eche to other / & as frenshmen and englysshmē haue alwayes done / & as then he had good cause so to do / for he entended a purpose whiche touched hym ryght nere / but he wolde discouer his entente to noo man lyuynge but alonely to a squyer that was there who had al wayes before serued ỳ lorde Charles of bloys for yf the constable had discouered his entente to ony man he had ben out of all hope to haue sped & brought aboute his purpose whiche by the grace of god he attayned vnto. The constable coulde in no wyse loue ỳ duke of Bretayne nor he hym longe tyme or they shewed it. And where as he sawe Johñ of Bretayne in pryson in englande he had therof grete yuell / & whē he sawe the duke of Bretayne in possessyon of the heritage of Bretayne / & when he thought that he was in moost loue with ỳ duke then he sayd syr why do ye not put to your payne that your cosyn Johñ of Bretayne were out of the kyng of Englandes pryson / syr ye are bounde therto by othe & by promyse / for syr when all the countrey of Bretayne was in treaty with you / ỳ prelates / noble men & good townes & the cyte of Nantes & Archebyshop of Reynes / syr Johñ Creon / syr Boucequalte / as then marshall of fraunce treted w you for the peas before Compercorentyne / than & there ye sware ỳ ye sholde do your full puyssaunce to delyuer your cosynes out of pryson / & syr ye haue done nothynge in that matter. Wherfore be you sure the countrey of Bretayne loueth you the lesse & oweth you the smaller fauoure / ỳ duke to his demande dyssymuled & sayd / holde your peas syr Oliuer / where I holde I gete .iii. or .iiii. M. frankes that is demaunded for they raunsomes.

Syr sayd the constable yf the countrey of Bretayne sawe that you were wel wyllynge to the matter / they wolde be contente to pay a taxe or a fowage to delyuer the prysoners who are lyke to dye in prison without god helpe them / syr Oliuer sayd ỳ duke as for my countrey of Bretayne shall not be taxed for me / my cosynes haue grete puyssances of theyr lygnage as ỳ frenssh kynge / and the duke of Anioy / they may helpe to delyuer them / for they haue alwayes sustayned the warre agaynst me / and when I swore to ayde to theyr delyuerauncе myne entencyon was none other wyse but that ỳ frenssh kynge or theyr kynsmen sholde pay theyr raunsomes the constable coulde gete of ỳ duke none other answere / thus as I haue begon to shewe you.

The constable sawe clerely howe ỳ erle of Buckyngham & the barons & knyghtes of englande suche as hadde ben with hym in the voyage thrughe fraunce & so in to Bretayne were no thynge contente with the duke of Bretayne by cause he wolde not open his townes to them lyke as he had promysed when he departed out of Englande / but whyles the englysshmen lay before Vennes & in the subbarbes of Nanthoni they endured grete powerte / for they hadde no thynge to ete and theyr horses dyed for fawte of foode. The englysshmen were fayne to gather the thystelles in the feldes & braye them in a morter & tempre it with water and make therof a paast & so bake it to ete / suche powerte they endured / and they sayd amonge themselfe / the duke doth not acquyte hymselfe nobly agaynst vs syth we haue put hym in possessyon of ỳ lygnage of Bretayne / and yf we sholde do well we sholde take it fro hym agayne and gete out of pryson Johñ of Bretayne his aduersary & make hym duke / the countrey loueth hym better then he that is now duke / We can not better be reuenged of hym nor sonner to cause hym to lese the duchy of Bretayne / the constable of Fraunce knewe ryght well what wordes & sore murmuracyons the englysshmen had amonge themselfe agaynst the duke of Bretayne / wherwith he was nothynge displeased / for euery euyll worde that they spake he wolde it had ben .xii. Howbeit he made therof no semblaunt / no more dyd a squyer of Bretayne to whome he had broken his mynde / to go in to englande on his message / this squyer was called Rollant / and so it was that syr Johñ of Harleton capytayne of Cherebourge was with the constable at the castel Josselyn vnder saufconduyte / and there the constable made hym good chere and to his company and kepte the englysshmen as good company as he coulde the rather therby to ge-

te theyr good wylles / then ỳ constable squyer auaunced forth & spake to syr Johñ Harleton before the constable & sayd / syr Johñ ye sholde do me a grete pleasure to do one thynge for me whiche shall cost you nothynge / syr sayd ỳ knyght for the loue of the constable though it be to my cost I am contente to do that I can for you what is that I sholde do / syr sayd the squyer ỳ I myght be assured to go in to Englande to se myne olde mayster Johñ of Bretayne / the gretest desyre that I haue in this worlde is to se hym / by my fayth sayd syr Johñ harlton it shal not be let for me but that ye shal go as soone as I am retourned to Cherbourge I wyll go in to englande / & ye shal go with me I shal bryng you thyder / for your requeste is not to be refused / syr sayd the squyer I thanke you / and I repute it for a grete curtoysy. Thus this squyer wente with syr Johñ Harlton to Cherbourg and when he had made euery thyng redy he departed and entred in to the see with Johñ Rolland in his company & so came to London and brought the squyer to ỳ castell where as Johñ of Bretayne was who knewe hym not at the fyrst metynge / at ỳ last he called hym to his remembraunce & so spake togyder / & there he shewed Johñ of Bretayne / howe that the constable of fraunce dyd & wolde do his payne for his delyueraunce / howe can ỳ be sayd Johñ of Bretayne / syr sayd ỳ squyer I shall shewe you / my lorde the constable hath a doughter to mary / so that ỳ ye wyll swere & promyse when ye be retourned in to Bretayne to take her to your wyfe he wyll delyuer you out of englande / he hath founde well the meanes how / syr howe say you wyll ye do thus / ye truely sayd he / ye shall retourne to the constable & say in my name howe there is nothynge I may doo to be delyuered but I wyll do it / & as for his doughter gladly I wyll take her to my wyfe / thus the squyer & Johñ of Bretayne departed & passed out of englande & retourned in to Bretayne & recorded to the constable all ỳ he had sene & harde / & the cõstable who desyred the aduauncement of his doughter as to be maried so highly as to Johñ of Bretayne was not negligent in his busynes & studyed for a meane in Englande to bryng aboute his purpose / & without he had founde out a meanes as he dyd he sholde neuer haue come to his purpose / whiche was to gete ỳ erle of Orenforde on his parte who was moste pryuy with ỳ kynge of Englande as then / but this matter was not shortly brought to passe / for as longe as ỳ duke of Lancastre was in englande and before his iourney in to spayne / there was no dyscouerynge to the kynge of the treyte for delyueraunce of Johñ of Bretayne / for when ỳ erle of Buckyngham retourned out of Bretayne the renome ran throughe al the royalme how ỳ duke of Bretayne had falsely acquyted hym selfe to the Englysshmen wherfore was spoken all ỳ euyll that coulde be deuysed / & then Johñ of Bretayne was brought in to the kynges presence and to his vncles / & then it was sayd to hym / Johñ of Bretayne yf ye wyll releue & holde the duchy of Bretayne of the kynge of Englande ye shall be delyuered out of pryson and set in possessyon of the seygnory of Bretayne / & shall be ryght hyghly maryed in this countrey as ye ought to be / for ỳ duke of Lancastre wolde haue gyuen hym to his doughter Phylyp in mariage who was after quene of Portyngale / Johñ of Bretayne answered ỳ he wolde neuer agree to that treyte nor neuer wolde be enemye nor contrary to the crowne of Fraunce he sayd he was contente to take the duke of Lancastres doughter in mariage soo he myght be delyuered out of pryson & out of englande / whe they sawe he wolde do none other wyse he was set agayne in pryson / and after the erle of Orenforde whom we called duke of Irelande sawe that the duke of Lancastre was gone out of englande in to Castell / and that the treyte of the mariage of his doughter with Johñ of Bretayne was passed / for ỳ duke of Lancastre had his doughter with hym in to Castell / then he thought to restrete ỳ kyng of englande to gyue hym in rewarde for suche seruyce as he had done and entended to do Johñ of Bretayne / for yf he coulde gete hym of the kyng he was agreed with the constable of Fraunce to haue for his raunsome at two paymentes. vi. score. M. frankes / ỳ fyrst. lx. M. to be payde as sone as Johñ of Bretayne were sent & delyuered in to ỳ towne of Boloyne / and ỳ other. lx. M. to be payde at Parys wherlocuer he wolde haue it delyuered / ỳ duke of Irelande coueted these floreyns and dyd so moche with the kynge of englande ỳ the kynge gaue hym Johñ of Bretayne clerely / wherof many in Englande had grete meruayle / but they that lyst to speke wolde speke / there was none other thynge / the duke of Irelande caused hym to be delyuered in to Boloyne / and there the constable had made redy euery thynge for hym / and so he rode to Parys and there founde the kynge and other lordes of his lygnage who made hym good chere and the constable also who brought hym in to Bre

tayne / and there Johan of Bretayne wedded his doughter as he had promysed / and when ꝑ duke of Bretayne knewe that Johñ of Bretayne was retourned in to Fraunce and clene delyuered ont of Englande by the ayde and purchase to the constable of Fraunce / then he had ꝑ cõstable in double hatred & sayd / what / weneth syr Oliuer of Clesson to put me out of myne heritage / he shewth wel the tokens therof / he hath delyuered out of prison Johñ of Bretayne and hath gyuen hym his doughter in mariage whiche thynges are to me ryght displeasaunt & surely that shall I well shewe ones on a daye howe he hath not wel done / peraduenture whe he taketh leest hede therof / he sayd truely for he shewed it quyckely or ꝑ were passed / as ye shall here after in the story. But fyrst we wyll speke of the busynes of Castell and Portyngale and of an armye on the see ꝑ the englysshmen made to come to Sluse.

DEre before ye haue herde how ꝑ frenssh kynges armye by the see to haue gone in to englande was brokenlyp in the same season not by ꝑ frenssh kynges good wyll / for alway he shewed good courage to haue passed in to Englande / and when he sawe howe ꝑ tourney drake he was more displeased then ony other / and all the fawte was layde vpon the duke of Berre / howbeit it was to be thought ꝑ he sawe more depelyer in the matter then ony other / & in his counsayll ynge to leue the tourney was for the honoure and profyte of the royalme of fraunce / for who soo euer enterprysed to doo a thynge ought to regarde what ende may come therof / and the duke of Berre had ben before so longe in englande in hostage for ꝑ kyng his fader & had ben so cõuersaunt among ꝑ englysshmen / & had sene so moche of ꝑ countrey that he knewe by reason what effecte the goynge in to englande sholde haue come to / & ꝑ cause moost excusable not to go was bycause wynter was so farre ronne. But then it was sayd ꝑ the constable of fraunce the nexte somer sholde goo in to englande with a. vi. M. men of armes and as many crosse bowes / for it was thought by hymselfe & sayd howe that nombre was iuffycy to fyght with the englysshe men / by reason the constable ought to haue knowen it / for he had ben nourysshed there in his yonge dayes / whe these lordes were retourned in to Fraunce / the it was determyned to sende socours in to Castell to ayde the kynge there agaynst the kynge of Portyngale and the duke of Lancastre / for it was thought that shortely there sholde be some dedes of armes / for the englysshmen kepte the felde. And it was consydered ꝑ they coulde sende noo men of warre thyder without grete cost and charge / for the iourney was ferre of / & there was but lytell money in the kynges treasoury nor in treasourers handes / for the some of money that had ben gadered of the people before in the royalme was spente & wasted wherfore they studyed howe to gete more / and soo a newe tayle and taxe was deuysed to ryn throughout all the royalme of Fraunce / to be payde incontynent without delay / noysynge howe it was for the comfortynge of ꝑ kynge of Spayne and to dryue the englysshmen out of his royalme. This tayle was publysshed in euery place / and the kynges commyssioners sente in to euery good towne and Cyte / who sayd to the gouernours of the townes. Syrs thus moche your towne is taxed at / the whiche ye must pay incontynent / then the rulers sayd / syrs we shall gather this some and then sende it to Parys / nay syrs not so sayd the commyssaryes / we wyl not abyde so longe / we wyll do otherwyse then so / and commaunded in the kynges name a. C. or. xii. of the best of the towne to goo to prysson without they payde the some without ony longer delay / the honest men fered the prysson and the kynges displeasure / wherfore they drewe them togyder and payde the money incontynente / and recouered it agayne of the poore men thus they dyd in euery good towne / so that there were so many tayles and taxes one after another / for the fyrst was scante payde when another began / thus in that season the noble royalme of fraunce was gouerned and ꝑ poore people ouer ledde. So that many auoyded out of theyr townes and forsoke theyr herytages and houses / for they were fayne to sell all that they had / and some wente to dwell in Haynalte and in to the bysshoprycke of Lyege / where as there ranne no taxe nor tayllage.

Howe the duke of Borbon was chosen to goo in to Castell and dyuers other / and howe syr Johan Bucke admyral of flaunders was taken prysoner by the Englysshe men. Ca. lxxii.

Then yt was deuysed what capytaynes sholde go in to Spayne. Fyrst they apoynted ỳ gentyll duke of bozbone ỳ he sholde be souerayne capytayne aboue all other/ & or he departed there was apoynted. ti. other capytaynes to be in ỳ bowarde/ and the duke of Bozbon in the rereward with. ti. M. spores knyghtes & squyers these. ti. capytaynes ỳ sholde be in ỳ bowarde were syr Wellyam of Lygnac/ & syr Gaultyer hf Dallac/ these. ti. lozdes when they knewe ỳ they sholde be the capytaynes of certayne men of armes to go in to Castel/ they prepayred thẽ selfe foz ỳ tourney then knyghtes and squyers were sente foz all aboute the royalme of fraunce to go to Castell/ and the passages were opened as well in Nauare as in Aragon/ thenne knyghtes and squyers departed fro Bretayne Poyctou/ Anjowe/ Mayne/ Tozayne/ Blays/ Orleaunce/ Beause/ pycardy/ bozgoyne/ berre & Iwuergne & fro all the boundes of the royalme of fraunce/ euery man toke theyr way to go in to Castell/ & of all the foremest company syr wyllyam of Lygnac/ & syr Gaultyer of Dallac were leders/ & to exalte theyr honoure they departed in good araye/ & all theyr companyes in good ozdze.

Thus whyles these knyghtes & squyers of the royalme of fraunce prepayred thẽ to goo in to Castell/ & suche as were fyrst redy fyrst departed & specyally they ỳ were of farre countreys/ foz there were many ỳ desyred dedes of armes/ the same season the englysshmen were on ỳ see bytwene Englande & Flaunders wherof Rycharde erle of Arundell was admyral & in hys cõpany ỳ erle of Deuonshyre & ỳ erle of Notyngha & the bysshop of Nozwyche/ they were a. v. C. men of armes & .M. archers/ they had lyen at ancre a grete season abydyng some aduẽture & often tymes refressshed thẽ on ỳ coost of englande & aboute ỳ ples of Cornewall/ bretayne & Nozmãdy/ & they were sore displeased in ỳ the flete of flaunders was scaped fro thẽ & were gone to rochell/ & specyally ỳ the cõstable of fraunce was gone fro Lentrygner to sluse & passed by Calays & met not wt hym/ foz gladly they wolde haue fought wt hym/ & yet ỳ constable had as many shyppes as they/ but they passed by thẽ by reason of ỳ wynde & the fludde ỳ they had in ỳ nyght tyme/ ỳ englysshe nauy lay at ancre before Wergate at ỳ Tames mouthe towarde Sandwyche abydynge theyr aduenture/ & specyally abydyng foz ỳ shyppes ỳ were gone to Rochell/ foz they thought they wolde shortly retourne & so they dyd/ foz when ỳ merchauntes of flaunders/ of rochel/ of Haynalte & other places/ who foz doubte of ỳ englysshmen were contoyned togyder/ departed out of flaunders/ they ymysed eche other to go & to retourne togyder/ & to take eche others parte/ & when they had all done theyr busynes in Rochel & in ỳ coũtrey of Xaintonge & had charged theyr shyppes wt wynes/ then as soone as they had good wynde they dyslancred & departed out of ỳ hauen of Rochell & toke theyr way by ỳ see to goo in to flaunders & to Sluse & fro whens they departed/ they sayled so longe ỳ they passed ỳ rase saynt Mathewe in Bretayne without peryll oz domage & so costed bale Bretayne/ & thẽ normandy & so came ryght ouer ỳ Tames mouth where as ỳ englysshe nauy lay/ the flemynges perceyued where they laye/ & they in the hyghe shyppes sayd to theyr cõpany/ syrs aduyse you wel we shall be met by ỳ englysshe armye/ they they haue perceyued vs they wyl take ỳ aduantage of ỳ wynde & tyde/ we shal haue bataple or it be nyght/ tydynges pleased not well al partyes & specyally ỳ merchauntes of flaũders/ of Haynalte/ & of other countreys who had theyr merchaũdyse there abrode/ they wolde gladly haue ben thens yf they myght. Howbeit syth they sawe no remedy but fyght/ they ordred thẽselfe therto/ & they were crosse bowes and other mẽ harneysed defensably araped no thẽ. vii. C & amonge thẽ there was a valyaunt knyght of flaunders who was theyr cappytayne & was as then admyral of the see set there by the duke of Bozbone called syr Johñ Bucke ryght sage & hardy in armes/ & had done before grete domage on the see to the englyshmen/ this syr Johñ Bucke set euery thyng in good ordze & decked hys shyppes wel & wyely as he ỳ coulde ryght wel do it & sayd syrs be not abasshed we are mẽ ynowe to fyght wt ỳ englysshe army & ỳ wynde wyl serue vs ỳ euer as we be fyghtyng we shal approche nerer & nerer to Sluse we shall coost flaundres/ some toke good cõforte wt those wordes & some not/ so they put thẽselfe in good ordze & defence/ & made redy theyr crosse bowes & gonnes.

The englysshe shyppes approched & they had certayne galays fournysshed wt archers/ & they came foremest rowynge wt owers and gaue the fyrst assaulte and archers shotte fyersly and lost moche of theyr shotte for the flemynges couered them vnder ỳ deckes & wold

not apere but drawe euer forth with the wynde and whē they were out of ꝑ englysshe archers shot then they dyd let fly their quarelles wher with they hurted many / then approched ꝑ grete shyppes of Englande / the erle of Arundel w his company & the bysshop of Norwyche with his / & so the other lordes they russhed in amonge the flemynges shyppes & them of Rochell / yet the flemynges & crosse bowes defended the selfe tyght valyauntly for their patron syr Johñ Bucke dyd euer comforte the / he was in a grete strong ship wherin he had .iii. gonnes shotynge grete stones that where soeuer they lyghted they dyd grete domage / & euer as they fought they drewe lytell & lytell towarde flaunders / & some lytell shyppes with their marchauntes to kepe the coostes of Flaunders & the lowe water & therby saued them / for ꝑ grete shyppes coulde not folow them for lacke of water / thus on ꝑ se there was a harde batayle & shyppes broken & sunken on bothe partyes / for out of the toppes they cast downe grete barres of yron / where as they mente to the botom / this was an harde batayle & well fought / for it endured a .iii. or .iiii. houres / & when the day fayled they withdrewe eche fro other & cast ancre & there rested all nyght & dressed their hurte men / & when ꝑ fludde came they dyscancred & drewe vp sayles and retourned agayne to the batayle / w the englysshmen was Peter du Boys of Gaunt with certayne archers & maryners / w ho made the flemynges moche a do / for he had ben a maryner wherfore he knewe the arte of the see / & he was sore displeased ꝑ the flemynges & marchauntes endured so longe / alwayes ꝑ englysshmen wanne aduauntage of ꝑ flemynges & so came bytwene Blanqueberg & Sluse agaynst Gaygant there was ꝑ discomfyture / for they were not socoured by no creature / nor also at ꝑ tyme there were noo shyppes at Sluse nor men of warre / true it was there was a squyer a man of armes at Sluse called Arnolde the mayre / when he harde howe there was batayle on the see bytwene the armye of Englande & them of Flaunders he toke a barke of his owne and entred therin and with hym a certayne men of Sluse / and twenty crosse bowes / and rowed by force tyll he came to the batayle / but ꝑ was at the poynte of the discomfyture / for by that tyme the englysshmen were scaped of the moost parte of the flemysshe shyppes and had taken syr Johñ Bucke their capytayne & his shyp & all that were within it / and when this Arnolde the mayre sawe ꝑ maner of that batayle he made his crosse bowes to shote .iiii. tymes & then retourned and was chased in to the hauen of Sluse but the englysshemennes shyppes were so grete that they coulde not approche so nere ꝑ lande as the barke dyd / and therby he saued hymselfe and his company.

The men of the towne of Sluse were sore abasshed when they harde of those tydynges so that they wyst not what to do other to gyue vp their towne and forsake all or elles to entre in to the shyppes that laye there and so defende the hauen / surely yf the Englysshmen had knowen the case they were in / they had ben lordes of the towne and of the castel or yf they had byleued Peter du Boys / for he sore counsayled them that they sholde incontynent haue set on the towne of Sluse / they had wonne it yf they had soo done / but the englysshmen had no courage therto but sayd it were a grete folye for vs to entre in to ꝑ towne of Sluse / for then they of Bruges / of Dan / and of Ardenbourge shall come and besyege vs / & so peraduenture shall lese al that we haue wonne / it is better for vs to kepe it and to make wyse warre then foolysshly to lese all / thus the englysshmen kepte styll the see but they determyned to brenne the nauye of shyppes ꝑ lay at ancre in the hauen of Sluse / of suche shyppes as they habde wonne they toke parte of the suche as were most olde and drye and lyghtest and gresed them wel both the withyn and without and set fyer on them & so lete them go with the wynde and with ꝑ tyde in to the hauen to ꝑ entente that they sholde haue fastened and set fyer on other shyppes ꝑ lay there of Spayne and of other places / howbeit as god wolde that fyer dyd noo hurte nor domage to none other shyp.

Howe the englysshmen aryued / & brente dyuers vyllages. Ca.lxxiii.

After that the englysshmen discomfyted syr Johñ Bucke as he came fro Rochell wherby they had grete profyte specyally of wyne / for they had a .xx. M. tonne of wyne wherby wyne was the derer all the yere after in Flaunders / Holande / and in Brabande / and the better chepe in Englande as it was reason / suche are the aduentures of this worlde if one haue domage another hathe profyte. Thus styll ꝑ englysshe

men lay before Sluse at an ancre / & somtyme with theyr barkes & barges they set a lande on the other syde agaynst Sluse where as there was but a ryuer to passe / & there they brente a mynstre & other townes alonge on the see syde & on the dygnes called Tozne Hoque & Wurdequer & toke men prysoners in the countrey & were there lyenge a.v. dayes & layde bysshmen tes bytwene Dan & Sluse on the way of Cocelier / & there was taken Johñ of Lannay a man of armes of Tournay who was come thyder with the lozde of Estrynay & syr Blanquart of Calomne came theues on ỳ spurres to Tournay with.vi. speres / and also syr Robert Werchaunt a knyght of flaunders who had to his wyfe a bastarde doughter of the erle of flaunders was as then at Bruges / when the tydynges syzed abzode of the Englysshmen so he departed & came to Sluse & entred in to ỳ castell whiche he founde in small defence / foz ỳ the englysshmen had taken lande at Sluse as they dyd on the other syde of the water they had taken at theyr ease the castell & all the towne / foz suche as sholde haue defended the towne were so abasshed ỳ there was no man toke ony hede of defence / then this knyght gaue them harte & sayd. Ye syrs and good men of Sluse howe mayntayne you yourselfe / by ỳ ye shewe yourselfe dyscomfyted without ony stroke strykynge / men of valure & of good defence ought not so to do / they sholde shewe fozth a good vysage as longe as they coulde endure at the leest tyll they were slayne oz taken / therby they sholde attayne to the grace of god and prayse of the wozlde / thus sayd this syr Robert when he came to Sluse.

In ỳ meane season whyle ỳ englysshmen were before Sluse & theraboute al ỳ coũtrey to Bruges were afrayde / foz they were euery day abzode a forragynge a foote foz they had no hozses / & somtyme they wolde entre far in to the countrey. On a day they brente ỳ towne of Cocely on the downes a grete vyllage in the way towarde Ardenbourge / & so to the see syde called Hosebourcke / they dyd there what they lyst & myght haue done moze yf they had knowen what ease the countrey was in / & whe they had tarryed there at theyr pleasure & sawe that no man came agaynst them / then they toke theyr shyppes & drewe vp sayles & so retourned in to Englande with. CC. M. frankes of prosyte / and so came in to Tames strepght to London where as they were receyued w grete ioy / foz the good wynes of Poycton & Xaunton that was determyned to haue ben dronken in flaunders / in Haynalte / Brabant & in dyuers other places in pycardy / the englysshmen brought all with them in to englande / & was solde & departed at London & in other places of Englande / wyne was solde then foz.iiii. pens the galon and certayne merchauntes of zeresee in zelande lost parte of the same wyne / but they had restytucyon agayne of all theyr losses / foz they of zeresee wolde neuer agree to go to make warre in to englande noz wolde suffre none of theyr shyppes to goo in ỳ tourney wherby they attepned grete loue of the Englysshmen / syr Johñ Bucke was put in pryson cursyssly at London / he myght go where he lyst but euery nyght to lodge in ỳ cyte / he coulde neuer come to his rauncome / yet the duke of Bozgoyne wolde gladly haue had hym by exchaunge foz a bastarde broder of ỳ kynge of Portyngalles whom they of Bruelet had taken on the see comynge to Weldebourt / thus syr Johñ Bucke was prysoner thze yeres in Englande and there dyed.

Chowe the duke of Lancastres marshal toke the towne of Ribadane whyche was strongly kepte. Ca. lxxiii.

Nowe yt ys tyme that we retourne to the busynes of Castell & Portyngale & to speke of the duke of Lancastre beynge in Galyce / & of suche busynes as fell in ỳ seasõ whiche were not smal & also to shewe what ayde & comforte ỳ frenssh kynge sent ỳ tyme in to Castell / oz elles kynge Johñ of Spaynes busynes had but easely gone forwarde / I say surely ỳ same yere ỳ the duke arryued in his countrey he had lost all his lãde if ỳ ayde of the frenssh kyng had not ben / ye know wel ỳ tydynges syzeth euer farre / the kynge of Portyngale knewe as soone as ỳ duke of Lancastre oz ony other mã / how ỳ frenssh kynges army ỳ lay on ỳ see to haue gone in to Englande brake theyr tourney / foz the kyng of Portyngale lay as then at ỳ cyte of Porte a trõge towne & a haut wel vsed by reason of merchaũtes ỳ resorted thyder / & when he knew of ỳ brekynge of ỳ frenssh kynges army he was glad therof / foz it had ben shewed hym before that all englande was lykely to haue ben lost. Wherfore he somwhat dyssymuled with the duke of Lancastre dzyuynge of the takyng of his

doughter in marryage / but styll he dyde hym of with fayre wordes and saluacyons / & when he was fully enformed of the departynge of ỹ frenshe kynge fro Sluse / then he called his counsayle and sayd / syr ye knowe well howe ỹ duke of Lancastre is in Galyce and the duches our cosyne with hym / and it is not vnknowen to you howe he was here and had counsayle to gyder / and howe it was agreed that I shulde haue his doughter in marryage / so it is I wyll perceyue it in ỹ same estate and wyll demaunde her honourably as it is reason and apertenent to suche a prynce as the duke of Lancastre is / & to me as kynge of Portyngale / I wyll make that lady quene of Portyngale / syr sayd they of his counsayle / ye doo in this accordynge to reason / for ye haue so sworne & promysed / well sayd the kynge / then let vs sende for her to the duke / then there was appoynted the archebysshop of Brasches / and syr Johñ Radyghen of Bat to go on that ambassade / they were sente for to the kynge / and so they toke on them that voyage / & with them they had a. CC. speres.

Nowe let vs speke of ỹ syege that syr Thomas Morcaus marshall of the duke of Lancastres oost had layde before the towne of Rybadane / and shewe what betanne theron.

I Beleue that they of Rybadane thought to haue ben comforted by kynge Johñ of Castell and by the knyghtes of Fraunce who lay in ỹ towne of Valeolyue or elles they wolde neuer haue endured soo longe / for I haue meruayle howe suche a sorte of vyllaynes coud endure agaynst suche a floure of archers & men of armes and were not abasshed / for euery day they had assaulte and it was sayd to syr Thomas Morcaus in maner of counsayle by the moost valyaunt knyghtes of his company syr leue this towne here / then an euyl fyer may brenne it / and let vs go further in to the countrey to Maynes / to Roye / or to Belances / alwayes we may retourne agayne when we lyst by my fayth sayd syr Thomas that shall neuer be sayd that vyllaynes haue discomfyted vs / I wyll not departe hens thoughe I shulde tarye here. ti. monethes without ỹ duke sende for me. Thus the marshalles mynde & oppynyon was to kepe styll there his syege / the kynge of Castell who laye at Valeolyue and had sente specyally for ayde in to Fraunce / he harde dayly howe they of Rybadane defended themselfe valyauntly & wolde not yelde / in the name of god sayd the Barrops of Barrers it gretly displeaseth me ỹ we sent not thyder our frenshmen / they wolde gretely haue recomforted the men of that towne / and also I am not contente that I am not at the syege / for then at the leest I shulde haue the honoure as these vyllaynes haue nowe / & surely yf I had knowen the trouthe of the strength of that towne I wolde haue refreshed it and haue put myselfe at aduenture therin / as well god shulde haue sente me the grace to haue defended the towne as these vyllaynes do. Thus he dyscused in the kynges presence and before the frenshe knyghtes who desyred dedes of armes. Then it was sayd to the kynge / syr sende a. C. speres in to these townes of Hope & of Calongne / for who so hath those. ii. castelles hath the. ii. sydes of ỹ lande of Galyce / and to go thyder dyuers dyd present theselfe before the kynge / as syr Tystram of Roy and syr Raynolde his broder / syr Aulbert of Braquemont / syr Tystrã of Galle / syr Johñ of castell Morant / & syr Barrops of Barrers. The kynge herde them well & was contente with theyr offres / and sayd / fayre syrs I thanke you of youre good wylles / howbeit ye maye not all go / some of you must abyde styll with me for aduentures that may fall / but at this present tyme I desyre the Barrops of Barrers to take on hym that charge yf it plese hym / ỹ knyght was right glad of ỹ tourney / for he thought he had lyen there to longe and sayd to the kynge / syr I thanke your grace & shall kepe & defende it to my power / and shall not departe thens tyll ye sende for me / so be it a goodes name sayd the kynge / we thynke to here shortly some tydynges out of fraunce / as then the knyghtes knewe not of the frenshe kynges departynge fro Sluse / but the kynge knewe it well ynoughe / for the duke of Borbon had wryten to hym of all the busynes in fraunce / & howe he was apoynted to come in to Castell with. iii. M. speres and before hym to open ỹ passages shulde come. iii. M. speres vnder the gydynge of syr Wyllyam of Lygnac / and syr Gaultyer of Passac / the frenshe knyghtes desyred ỹ kynge to shewe them some tydynges out of Fraunce with a good wyll sayd the kynge.

Then the kynge sayd syrs surely the duke of Borbon is chosen prycypal cappytayne to come in to this countrey for ỹ frenshe kynge and his counsayle hath apoynted hym to come with. vi. thousande speres knyghtes / and squyers / and also two valyaunte knyghtes are chosen cappytaynes for to come before

hym as sr̄ Wyllyam Lygnac/as sr̄ Gaultyer of Pallac/they shall come syr̄ with a.iii.M. speres as sor the voyage by ꝑ see in Englande is broken vp for this season tyll the constable of Fraunce and the erle of sayne Poule and ꝑ lorde of Coucy with.iiii.M. speres shall gon in to Englande this nexte Maye. Howe saye you sr̄s to this sayd the kynge/ sr̄ sayd they these be ryche tydynges we can haue no better for this nexte somer bedes of armes shalbe wel shewed in your countrey/ yf there be.vi.M. apoynted there wyll come.xx.M. we shall surely fyght with the englysshmen/ they kepe as nowe the fylde/ but we shal close them togyder or it be mydsomer/ sr̄ these knyghtes that come are ryght valyaunt and specyally the duke of Borbon and the other are prouued knyghtes and worthy to be gouernours of mē of armes/ anone was spred abrode in ꝑ towne of Tales/ Ipuc and abrode in Castell the grete comforte and ayde that sholde come out of Fraunce by the fyrst daye of Maye/ wherof knyghtes and squyers were ryght ioyous.

Thus the Barroys of Barres departed with a.l.speres and rode to the castell of Noye/ tydynges came to the duke of Lancastres marshall howe the frenshmen were a brode tydynge with a.l.speres to come to reyse the syege before Rybadane/ When the marshal harde these tydynges/ he byleued it lyghtly/ for they that shewed hym therof affyrmed it to be true sayinge how they had sene them ryde ouer the ryuer of Dorne & take theyr lodgyng at ꝑ towne of Epernt. Then ꝑ marshal was in doubte & toke counsayle/ & determyned to sende worde therof to the duke of Lancastre his lorde and so he dyd/ and he sente sr̄ Johñ Dambretycourt and a heraulde who knewe all the wayes in Galyce/ and then the marshall made euer good watche and syual/ for he doubted to be assayed in the nyght halfe the ooste watched euery nyght whyle the other slepte/ sr̄ Johñ Dambretycourt and the heraulde came to the towne of sayne James to the duke and to the duches/ when ꝑ duke knewe of theyr comynge he sayd/ surely we shall here some tydynges/ assoone as they came to his presence/ the duke demaunded what tydynge/ sr̄s sayd they none ꝑ be good/ but your marshall hath sente vs hyder to you/ to knowe your pleasure what he sholde do for it is reported to hym for certayne that the frenshmen are all embled togyder in Castel and ryde fast to passe the ryuer to come and fyght with your men lyenge at syege before Rybadane/ sr̄s these be the tydynges ꝑ we haue brought. In the name of god sayd the duke these be none euyll tydynges that we shall shortely prouyde for them/ he behelde sr̄ Johñ Holande his constable/ and his admyrall sr̄ Thomas Percy and sayd to them/ sr̄s take a CCC.speres and.CCCCC.archers/ & go to your company before Rybadane/ they are in a doubte ꝑ the frenshmen sholde come & assayle them/ then these.ii.knyghtes made them redy and toke with them.iii.C.speres and.b.C.archers and departed fro the duke and rode so longe that they came before Rybadane where they r̄ copanyons were lodged/ who were greatly reioysed of theyr comynge/ then sr̄ John Holand sayd to the marshall/ what say they of Rybadane wyll they not yelde them/ by my fayth sayd the marshal/ they are prowde people these se that all the countrey aboute them doo yelde/ yet they kepe styll they r̄ opynyons/ & yet they be but a many of byllaynes/ there is not amonge them one gentylmā of name/ sr̄ holde your peas sayd sr̄ Johñ Holande/ for within these iiii.dayes we shal bringe them to that poynte that they shal be glad to yelde themselfe to ony that wyll take them to mercy/ but sr̄ I praye you do ꝑ frenshmen ryde abrode/ ye surely sr̄ sayd he I haue ben well enfourmed howe they ryde to the nombre of.b.C.speres in one company whiche maye well be/ for dayely to them there cometh men of warre out of Fraunce/ & as I haue knowledge it is the Barroys of barres/ he is in the castell of Noye with.l.speres this is all that we knowe/ thus they were all lodged togyder as well as they myght & made grete prouysyon that came after them.

About a.iiii.dayes after that Johñ holande and sr̄ Thomas Percy were comen to the marshalles ooste they ordeyned to make a grete assaulte and caused to be made a grete engyne of tymbre with wheles to be remoued with strenthe of men whyther they lyst and within it myght easely be a.C.knightes & a.C.archers/ & they had fylled ꝑ dykes where as this engyne sholde passe/ then began the assaulte/ and the engyne to approche with strength of men and therin archers well prouyded w̄ arowes syrcely shotynge at them within the towne/ & they within castynge out dartes & stones merueylously/ but they vnder it were couered w̄ mantelles & ore hydes to defende the fro ꝑ stones & dartes & vnder ꝑ couerture men of

a tymes approched well pauesed wt pyke axes to perse the walle / soo that they engaged the walle / for they within coulde not defende the walle by cause of the archers whyche shotte so hotly togyder that none durste appere at theyr defence / so with hewynge they entered into the dyke a grete pane of the wall / when they within sawe themselfe in soo grete myschefe / they were gretely abashed / and then cryed out a lowde we yelde ourselfe / we yelde vs / but there were noone that make them ony answere / The Englysshe men dyd laughe at them and sayd. These daynes haue put vs to moche payne / now we they mocke vs when they wolde haue vsed to take them to mercy / nowe ꝑ towne is out owne / some of the Englysshe men answered them within and sayd. Syrs we knowe not what ye say / we can not speke no Spanysshe / speke good frenshe or englysshe ye whyll that we sholde vnderstande you. Thus they entred and passed forthe and chaced these villaynes / who flyede before them and slewe them by heped. That daye there were slayne what of one and other with the Jewes ꝑ were there moo then .xv. hundred. Thus the towne of Rybadane was taken by force / and suche as first entred had there grete pyllage / and specyally they founde moze golde and syluer in the Jewes howses then in ony other place.

After the takynge of Rybadane whiche was wonne by pure assaute / and that the Englysshe men had pylled it at theyr pleasure / then they demaunded of ꝑ marshall what sholde be done with the towne yf it sholde be brente or not / nay sayd the marshall we wyll kepe it and newe repayre it. But nowe whether shall we prepayre / and they determyned to drawe to Maures a good towne in Galyce Then they were apoynted that sholde abyde in Rybadane and repayre it / there was lefte sir Peter of clynton a ryght valyaunt knyght with .xx. speres .x. archers / they made grete prouysyon with that they founde there specyally of porkes and good wynes / whiche were so stronge and myghty that the englysshe men coulde not drynke therof / if they dranke moche they were in that case they coulde not helpe themselfe in two dayes after. Thus they dyslodged fro Rybadane and rode towardes the towne of Maures / and carryed in peces with them ꝑ grete engyne / for they sawe well it dyd good seruyce / and was sorefull to men in the townes. When they of Maures vnderstode howe the englysshmen were comynge to them warde to haue the towne vnder the duke and duches of Lancastres obeysaunce / and knewe howe Rybadane was taken by force / and how that they brought with them a deuyll in stede of an engyne / for it was so grete that it coulde not be destroyed / they doubted gretly the ooste and this engyne / then they wente to counsayle to se what were best for them to doo outher to yelde or to make defence. And when they had well counsayled togyder / they coulde se none other thynge but ꝑ it was farre better for them to yelde them to defende / for they consydered yf they were taken by force / they sholde lese body and goodes / and no comforte appered to them fro ony parte / they that were sage sayd. Syrs beholde howe they of Rybadane were taken at theyr defence / and yet they were as stronge as we or stronger / & they were beseged moze then a moneth / and yet they habde nother ayde nor socoure / as we vnderstande the kynge of Castel accompteth at this season al ꝑ countrey of Galyce lost to the tyuer of Mozne / nor we thynke that this yere there cometh no frenshe men to our ayde / wherfore let vs yelde ourselfe mekely without damage as other townes haue done / euery man beholde the same apprayson / but some sayd howe maye this be done / well ynoughe sayd the sages / we shall go and mete them on the waye and bere the keyes of ꝑ towne with vs & present them to the englysshe men / they be courtoys people / they wyll do vs no harme yf we receyue them curtoysly / to this they were all agreed / then there yssued out of ꝑ towne a fyfty persones of them ꝑ were moost noble as soone as they knewe ꝑ the englysshe men approched they yssued out / and aboute a quarter of a legge of / they tarryed for the Englysshe men:

Tydynges came to the Englysshe men howe they of the towne of Maures were yssued out / not to fyght but to yelde them & the keyes of the towne whiche they brought to them. Then ꝑ lordes rode on before to se what the matter was / and caused all the archers & ooste to tary behynde / then the Galycyens came forthe / and it was sayd to them / Syrs beholde here the lordes of Englande sente by the duke of Lancastre to conquerre this countrey / speke to them yf ye lyst. Then they all kneled downe & sayd. Syrs we be of the poore men of Maures who wyllyngly wyll be vnder the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre and of my lady the

duke of Lancastre and of my lady the duches/ wherfore we beseche you to accepte vs to mercy for all that we haue is yours / the .iii. lordes of englande by ecte others aduyse answered and sayd/ ye good people of Saures we shall go w you in to the towne and parte of our oost not al and there ye shal make prompte & othe as good people ought to do to theyr lorde and lady/ this sayd they this shall we doo with good wylles. Then sayd the lordes go yours wayes on before and open the gates / for ye are and shall be receyued to mercy/ then they wente to theyr towne and opened theyr gates and barryers and suffred the constable and the other lordes to entre and .iiii. C. speres with them / and the residue of the oost lodged without in the feldes & had prouysyon out of the towne sufficyent/ the lordes lodged within the towne and toke the othes of them of the towne of Saures as it is sayd before.

Howe the duke of Lancastre sente for the admyrall and mersoal and his other officers to come to the weddyng of his doughter and the kynge of Portyngale. Ca. lxxiiii.

The nexte daye after the towne of Saures was gyuen vp and that euery man made them redy to go to the cyte of Bclances/ there came tydynges and letters fro the duke of Lancastre commaundyng them on the syght of his letters what so euer estate they were in/ to repayre to his presence/ certefyenge them that he loked in a shorte season/ for the archebyshop of Bzaghes and for syr John Radyghes de Bar ambassade fro the kynge of Portyngale who were comynge to wedde his doughter by procuracyon and to lede her to the cyte of Porte where the kynge of Portyngale tarryed for her/ when these lordes vnderstode these tydynges they retourned theyr waye and sayd it was requysyte for the duke to haue his lordes and counsayle about hym at ye receyuynge of these ambassadours / and so retourned and lefte men of warre in ye garysons that they had wonne/ and so came to the towne of Saynt James as the duke had commaunded them/ and within .iii. dayes after thyder came ye byshop of Bzaghes / & syr John Radyghes de Bar with .C.C. horses/ they were all well lodged/ then when they were redy apparelled ye ambassadours and other lordes in theyr company wente to the duke & to the duches in good aray/ where they were receyued with grete ioy and there declared the cause of theyr comynge The duke herde them well & was wel reioyced therw because of ye auaunsement of his doughter and for the alyaunce of the kynge of Portyngale whiche he thought ryght behouable for hym yf he wolde entre to conquere Castell / the byshop shewed the duke and the duches and theyr counsayle how he had auctoryte by procuracyon personally to wed the lady Phylyp of Lancastre in the name of the kynge of Portyngale/ wherwith the duke and duches were well contente/ thus syr John Radyghes de Bar by vertue of procuracyon wedded ye lady Phylyp of Lancastre in the name of ye kynge of Portyngale and the byshop of Bzaghes wedded them/ & soo were layde curtoysly in bed as husbande and wyfe ought to be/ and the nexte day after the lady with all her company were redy to departe and so toke leue of her fader / moder and systers / with ladyes & damoysselles with her and her bastarde syster wyfe to ye marshall with her/ and with her went syr John Holande syr Thomas Percy/ and syr John Dambrycourte and .C. speres and .C.C. archers and so rode to the cyte of Porte in Portyngale.

AGaynst the comynge of the ponge quene of Portyngale yssued out of the cyte of Porte to do her honoure and reuerence prelates of the chyrche/ as ye byshops of Lysbone of Deuse/ of Conymbres / and of Porte / and of temporall lordes/ the erle Dangole/ the erle of Nouayre/ the erle of Lescal/ Galope Ferant Patryke Pymalle / Martyne de Marlo and mo then .xl. knyghtes / & grete nombre of theyr people and many ladyes and damoysselles/ and all the clergy reuested in habytes of processyon thus the lady Phylyp of Lancastre was brought in to the cyte of Porte in Portyngale & soo to the kynges palace / there the kynge toke her by the hande and kyssed her and all the other ladyes and damoysselles that were come with her and brought her in to her chambre/ and then toke leue of all ye ladyes/ & the lordes of englande that were there lodged at theyr ease & all theyr men in the cyte of Porte/ for it is a grete cyte/ & ye nyght they kepte the vygyll of the feest to the nexte day/ the ladyes daunsynge and passynge theyr tyme that nyght/ and on the Tuysdaye ye

kynge of Portyngale with the prelates / and lordes of his countrey were redy in the morynge and kepte on theyr horses at the palays and so rode to ỳ cathedrall chyrche called sayntMaryes / and there taryed for the quene who came accompanyed with ladyes and damoyselles / and thoughe syr John Radyghos de Sar had wedded her before in the kynges behalfe / yet then agayne openly there ỳ kynge wedded her / and so retourned to ỳ palays ꝛ there was made a grete feest and a solempne / and after dyner Justes and tournays before the kynge and quene / and at nyght the pryse was gyuen of the without to syr John Holande / and of ỳ chalengers a knyght of the kynges called syr John Tet dore had the pryse / so that day and nyght they perceyuered in grete tryumphe and ioye / and the kynge lay with the quene / and as the renome ranne in the countrey ꝛ courte ỳ kynge was as then a clene mayde / the nexte daye the feest renewed and newe Justes / and the pryse of the chalengers had Was Martyne of Vergilo and of them without / ꝛ syr John Wambrety courte and ỳ nyght there was grete daunsyng tyngynge and syrynge / and euery day there were knyghtes and squyers that Justed.

With luche tryumphes Justes ꝛ sporte as ye haue harde the quene of Portyngale was receyued at her fyrst comynge in the cyte of Porte / and these feestes endured more then .x. dayes and the kynge gaue grete gyftes to all the straungers so that they were well contente. Then the knyghtes of Englande toke theyr leue of the kynge and of the quene / and retourned to ỳ cyte of sayntJames to the duke and duches / who of them demaunded tydynges ꝛ they shewed all ỳ they had sene and harde / and howe the kynge of Portyngale and the quene dyd commaunde them to them / and sayd / syr the last worde ỳ the kynge sayd to vs was howe he desyreth you to drawe in to ỳ felde when it please you / for in lyke wyse so wyll he do and drawe in to Castell. These be good tydynges sayd the duke. Thus aboute a .xv. dayes after the constable and admyral were retourned fro ỳ kynge of Portyngales marryage ỳ duke of Lancastre prepayred for his tourney to go and conquere castells and townes in Galyce / for as then the duke was not lorde of all ỳ townes in the countrey / and it was ordeyned ỳ when the duke sholde departe fro sayntJames that the duches and her doughter Katheryne sholde in lykewyse departe and goo to the cyte of Porte in Portyngale / to se the kynge and ỳ yonge quene theyr doughter / and the towne of sayntJames was delyuered to the keypynge of an englysshe knyght called syr Loys Clyfforde and .xxx. speres with hym ꝛ an .C. archers.

Howe the duke of Lancastre and his men rode towardes the cyte of Belances / and howe the towne made composycyon with them Ca. lxxv.

Thus the duke Lancastre departed and all his men and suche as were ordeyned to abyde in garyson abode and the duke and the duches rode towardes Belances / one of ỳ last townes betwene Galyce and Portyngale the ryght waye to Porte and to Compyenbres / and because ỳ duches of Lancastre and her doughter sholde go to se the kynge of Portyngale therfore they helde that way / when they of Belances knewe ỳ ỳ duke was comynge on them with all his oost then they drewe to counsayls and were of many oppynyons. Fynally they determyned for ỳ best and sent to the duke and duches .iii. of the chefe of the towne to desyre and trete for an abstynence of warre for .viii. dayes / ꝛ in ỳ meane season they to sende to the kynge of Castell / shewynge hym without he came soo stronge to fyght with the duke / to yelde vp theyr towne without ony other meane. Then there departed fro Belances .vi. men ꝛ rode to mete with ỳ englysshmen. Fyrst they encountred with the vowarde whiche the marshall led. There they were stopped and demaunded what they were and what they wolde / they answered how they were of Belances and that by appoyntemente of the towne they were charged to goo and speke with the duke / the marshall sayd to syr John Soultre / syr go and brynge these men to ỳ duke in saufgarde for feere lest our archers do slee them / and then he sayd to them / syrs goo your wayes this knyght shal be your gyde / so they rode forthe and at the last founde out the duke and duches and her doughter and syr John Holande / syr Thomas Percy ꝛ dyuers other with them sporynge them vnder the shadowe of the fayre Olyue trees / ꝛ they beheld wel syr John Soultre comynge to themwarde. Then syr

John Holand demaunded of him and sayd, syr John are those your prysoners, nay syr sayde he they be no prysoners, they are men of Besances sent by the marshall to speake with my lord ỳ duke, as I thinke they wil make some treatye the duke and the duches heard al these wordes Than syr John Soultre sayd to theym, ye good men auaunce forth, behold here your lorde and ladye. Then these .vi. men kneled downe & sayde My ryght redoubted lorde and lady, the comonaltye of the towne of Besances haue sente vs to your presence, syr they vnderstande howe ye are comyng or sending your armye against thē, they desyre of youre speyall grace to forbeare theym these vne dayes, and in the meane season they wyll sende to the kynge of Castell to the towne of Valeolyue and shewe hym what daūger they be in, and syr wythout there come with in these .iv. dayes such socour to thē as to fyghte wyth you, they wyll yelde them vnto your obeysaunce, and yf ye lacke anye prouision of vytayles or any other thyng, in the meane season ye shall haue out of the towne for your money, at your pleasure for you and for all your men. Therewyth the duke stoode styll and spake no worde, and suffred the duches to speake byeause it was in her countrey, then she beheld the duke and sayde, syr what saye you, madame sayde he and what say you, ye are beryloure here, that I haue is by you, therfore ye shall make theim answere, well syr sayde she, me thinke it were good to receyue them as they haue demaunded, for I beleue the kinge of Castell hathe as nowe no great desyre so shortly to fyght with you. I can not tell sayde the duke, would to god he would come shortly to batayle, then we shuld be the sooner delyuered, I would it shoulde be wythin .vi. dayes, wherfore as ye haue deuyced I am content it so be, then the duches tourned her towarde the .vi. men and sayde, syrs departe whan ye lyst, your matter is spedde, so that ye delyuer in hostage to our marshall .xii. of the beste of your towne for suretye to vpholde this treatye, well madame sayd they, we are contente, & syr John Soultre was commaunded to shewe thys treatye to the marshall, and so he dyd wherewyth the Marshall was well content, and the .vi. men retourned to Besances, and shewed howe they had sped, then twelue men of the most notablest of the towne were chosen oute and sente to the marshall. Thus the towne of Besances was in rest and peace by the forsayd treaty. Then they of the towne sente the same fyue men that wente to the duke to the king of Castell and his counsayle. The king as then knewe nothing of that composition nor how the englyshemen were before Besances.

IN the meane season that these syre men were goinge to the kynge of Castell, the duke ordayned that the Duches and her doughter Katheryne should go to the citye of Porte to se the kinge of Portyngale and the yong quene her doughter, and at theyr departyng, the duke sayd to the duches. Madame Costaunce salute fro me the king and the quene my doughter, and all other lordes of Portyngale, and shewe them suche tydinges as ye knowe, and howe they of Besances be at composition with me, and as yet I knowe not whereon they grounde theym selfe, nor whether that our aduersarye John of Trystmore haue made them to make this treatye, or wil come a fyght with vs or no, I knowe well they loke for great comforte to come to thē out of Fraunce, and such as desyre dedes of armes and aduauncemente of honoure wyll come as soone as they can, wherefore it behoueth me alwaye to be ready, and to abyde battayle, thys ye may shewe to the kyng of Portyngale and to his counsayle, and if I se that I shall haue anye thyng to do, I shal shortly send the kynge worde therof, wherfore say that I desyre him to be redy to ayde and to defend our ryghte and his, in lyke maner as we haue promised and sworne together, and madame when ye retourne againe to me leaue our doughter Katherine there styll with the quene her syster, she can not be in better keping, syr sayd the lady all this shall be done. Thē the duches and her doughter, and all other ladyes and damoselles toke theyr leaue and departed syr Thomas Percy the admirall accompanied them, and syr Ion Fythwaren, & the lordes Talbot, and the lord John Dambreticourte, & syr Namburyne of Lyuers and a hundred speres, and two hūdred archers, and so came to the citie of Port in Portingale.

Howe the duches and her doughter went to se the king of Portingale and the quene. And howe the towne of Besances submitted them vnder the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancaster.

Cap. lxxvi.

When the kynge of Portingale vnderstode that the Duches of Lancastre and her doughter were comming vpon hym ward, he was therof ryght joyfull, & sente to receyue them of the gretest mē of his court. The erle of Angoles, and the erle of Nouayre, syr Johan Radyghes de Sar, syr Johan Ferrante Perteke, syr Vas Martyne of Mario, syr Egeas Colle, and a.xx. other knightes, who met wyth the duches a two great leggues of, and joyfully receyued theim, and the duches made frendlye cheare to all the lordes and knyghtes both wyth wordes and countenaunce Thus they came to the citie of Port, and all the ladyes and damoyselles were lodged in the palays, and the king came and met wyth the Ladyes & kyssed them al, then after came the quene who receyued the duches her mother and her sister ryght honourably as she that could ryghte well do it, all the kinges court were ryghte joyfull of the comming of these ladyes and damoyselles, I wil not speake of all their acquayntances and good cheare, for I was not there present I knowe nothing but by the report of that gentyll knyghte syr, Johan Ferrante Perteke, who was there present, and he enfourmed me of all that I know in that matter and of many other. There the duches deuysed wyth the kynge of Portingale when she sawe her time, & shewed hym all the wordes that the duke her husbande had geuen her in charge to shewe. The kynge answered her ryght sagely and sayd. Fayre Lady and cosyn I am all ready if the kynge of Castel come forth into the feyldes, wythin.iii dayes I shall haue ready.iii.M. speares, they be redye in the felde on the fronters of Castell, and also I haue ready.xx.M. of the comons of my realme who be not to be refused, for they dydde me good seruice on a day at the bataple of Juberoth. Syr sayd the lady ye speake wel, I thāke you therof. And syr yf any thyng happen to fal to my lorde and husbande he wyll incontinente sygnifye you therof, with these wordes and other the king and the duches deuysed together

Now let vs tourne to them of Besances, and shewe how they sped.

When these fyre menne of Besances were before the kinge of Castell, they kneled downe and sayde, Right redoubted lord may it please you to vnderstande that we be sēte hyther fro your towne of Besances who are by force in composicion with the duke of Lācaster, and with the duches, and hath obteyned a sufferaunce of warre for.xx. dayes, so that yf ye come or send such a strength able to resyst the duches puissaunce, then the towne to abyde styll vnder your obeysaunce elles they are bound and haue layd hostage to deliuer vp the towne to the duke of Lancaster, wherfore may it please your grace to geue vs aunswere what we shall do in this case. The kyng aunswered and sayde, syrs we shal take aduice and then geue you answer therwith the kyng departed fro them and entred into his secret chambre, I can not tell what counsayle he toke nor how the mater went, but these vi. men were there. viii. dayes and had no maner of aunswere, nor saw no more the king. So the daye came that the towne should be geuē vp and as than theyr messaugers were not retourned agayne. Then the duke of Lancastre sent to Besances his marshall the.x. day to speke wyth them & to cōmaund thē to render vp their town or elles to strike of the heades of the hostages, the marshall came to Besances to the barriers and there spake with them of the towne & sayde ye syrs of Besances take hede what I saye. My lord the duke of Lancastre hath sēt me to you to demaunde why ye haue not brought to hym the keyes of youre towne and submit you to be vnder his obeysaunce as ye ought to be, the.ix. dayes be past as ye knowe well, and yf ye wyll not thus do, your hostages shall leese their heedes here before you, and after we shall assayle you and take you perforce, and then ye shall alle dye without mercye like the of Rybadane. when the men of Besances heard those tidinges, they gretly douted and also feared to lese their frendes that were in hostage with the duke, and said to the marshall, syr my lorde the duke hath good cause to say and do as ye haue reported, but syr as yet we heare no tidinges fro our men whom we sent to the king of Castell for the same cause we wote not what is become of them. Syrs sayd the marshall peraduenture they are kepte there styll for the tydynges they haue brought to the kynge of Castell whych are not very pleasaunt to him to heare, but my lord the duke will abide no lenger, wherefore aduyse you to make me shorte aunswere, elles shortly ye shall haue assaulte, than they spake agayne and sayde, syr we requyre you, let vs assemble together in the towne to take aduyce and then we shal answere you. I am content sayd the marshall, then they retourned into the towne, and by the blastes of

trompettes in euery stret they assembled to gather in ỳ market place, then they declared to all the comons all the forsaid wordes, and so fynally they accorded to rendr vp their town, and to sau their Estates that wer in pyson, thē thei retourned to the marshall and said, sir in all your demands we can find nothing but as ten fou requyzeth, we ar content to receyue my lorde the duke and my lady the duches into this town and so put thē to possessyon therof, and sir ber be the keyes, and we shall goo with you to thē to theyr lodging yf it please you to dyrige vs thyder. with a right good wyll sayd the mar shall then they yssued out of Belances a. ix. mē bering the keyes of theyr town with them and the marshal brought them streight to the duke & shewed hym all theyr entents, the duke receyued thē and delyuered the theyr hostages & ỳ same day entred in to the cyte of Belances & ther lodged & all hys company as many as myght.

¶ howe they of Belances that had ben sente to the kynge of Castell came home to theyr towne after it was rendred vp to the duke of Lancastre. Ca. lxxbii.

AFoure daies after that Belances was giuen vp the vi. men that wer sent to Valeolyue to ỳ king of Castell retourned hom to their towne, then it was demaunded of them why they had taried so longe, they answerd howe they myght not do ther with nor amende it, sayinge howe they had spoken with the kyng who had promysed them to take counsayl and then to gyue answer, whiche answer we taryed on. viii. dayes, and as yet they sayd they wer retourned without answer. then they were asked no moo questyons but they sayd howe the kynge of Castell loked for moche people to come out of fraunce and ly uers wer come and lodged abrode in the countrey, but the capitaynes as syr wyllyam of Lygnac & syr Gaultyer of Passac wer not as then come, but all suche knyghtes and squyers in Spayne that sholde be vnder the guydynge of those vi. capytaynes were redy apparelled, but al suche as were retayned and apoynted to be vnder the duke of Bozdon were syll in theyr owne houses vpon a redynes. Thus as ye haue herde her before syr wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac passed thzugh the royaume of Fraunce and came in to Languedoc ther wer mo then a.M. speres knyghtes and squyers of all countreys. they assembled in Carcassone, in Narbonoys and in Thoulosayne and as they came so they lodged in this good countrey, many ther wer that payde lytell or nothyng for that they toke. Tydynges came to the erle of Foys beyng at Oztays that men of war of Fraunce approched ner to his countrey and wold passe thzugh to go in to Spayn an it was said to hym, syr they pay for nothyng that they take. Wherfore all the comon people flyeth before thē as though they wer englysshmen, and the capytaynes be at Carcasson, and theyr men ther about and so passeth the ryuer of Garon to Thoulouse, and then they wyl entre in to Bygorr, and so incontynent in to your countrey, and if they do then as they haue don all the way they shall do gret hurt in your countrey of Byern. Therfore syr take good hed what ye wyll do in thys behalfe. ỳ erle of Foys who was soon counsayled in hymselfe sayd, I wyll that all my townes and castelles as well in Foys as in Byerne be prouyded for with men of war, and all the countrey to be in a redynes to entre in to batayl yf nede be, I shyll not bye dersly the war of Castell. my landes be free, yf frenshe men wyll passe thzugh they shall pay truely for euery thyng that they take or elles all the passages in my countrey shal be kept close agaynst them, & syrs ye syr Arnaute wyllyam and syr Peter of Byern I charge you to defend and kep the countrey, thele. ii. knyghtes wer bastarde bytherne and right balyaunt men in armes, they tobe on them this charg. Then in all the erle of Foys countrey it was ordeyned that euery man sholde haue armure redy as they wer wont to haue or better, and to be redy daply whensoeuer they we ꝛ commaunded. then in Byern and in Foys and in Thoulouse euery man was redy to entre in to batayle, and ther was sent to the cyte of Dalmes a.C. speres of good men of armes, Syr Espayne du Lyon was sent to Sanct bun. syr Cyrart of saynt Lygyer, to Marzes, and syr Peter of Byern was with a.C. speres at Wellpount, and at the entr of the erldome of Foyse at saynt Thybault on the ryuer of Garon was syr Peter of Caleslan, and syr Peter Meaus of Royalles with. l. speres at Polamnuch. and syr Peter of Tost at the castell of Melun the bastard of Espezung at Emozieus, syr Arnolde Wyllyam with a.C. speres at Pan, syr Guy

de la mote at mount Marsen, syr Raymon of new castell at Saunceter, sir yuain of Foyse the eries bastardes son at Mountesquyu, syr Verdoll of Nenolan, & sir John of saint Marcell at Ozon, sir Perdo de la gard at mounte Garbell, John of Nowe castell at Ertyell, and the erle sent to syr John lane beynge at the castell of Beaumoyson to take good hede to all his frontiers, and he sent to sayne Gaudes a cosyn of his syr Ernalton of Spayne, Bzeuely there was nother towd noz castell in Foys noz in Byern but wer refreshed with new men of war and they sayd they wer men puow to resist double nombze of other me of armes, for they wer in all to the nombz of a.xx.M. men of war of chosen men.

Tydynges came to syr william of Lignac beyng at Thoulouse and to sir Gaultyer of Pallat beynge at Carcassone howe the erle of Foyse pzouyded men of armes and furnysshed euery garyson, and the renome ranne that he wold suffre none to passe thzoughe bys countrey, wherof these.ii. capitaynes wer sore abasshed, and then they apoynted to mete in the myd way to speke togyder at the castell of Mauzey how they sholde do with the erle of Foyse then syr Wyllyam sayd, sir Gaultyer to say truly it is grete meruayle that the frenshe kynge & bys counsayl haue not wzyten to hun to open peasybly his countrey. Well syr sayd syr Gaultyer it is necessary that ye go and speke with ỳ erle and shewe hym in curtoys maner that we be sent by the frenshe kynge this way to passe peasybly and to pay foz all that we take, surely the erle of Foyz: is so grete and myghty that yf he lyst we gete noo passage thzugh bys countrey, then we must passe thzughe Aragon, whyche is farre of. I can not tell why the erle maketh suche doubtes noz why he soo foztefyeth bys garysons, noz whether he haue made any alyaunce with ỳ duke of Lancastre oz no. I deyz you go to hym and know the trouth, ye se how our men dayly passe in to Bygoze. I am content sayde syr Gaultyer and so toke these.ii. capitaines leue eche of other. sir William of Lignac retourned to Thoulouse, and syr Gaultier with.xl. hozse went and passed the ryuer of Garon at sayne Thybaulte, and there he founde syr Menaute of Nonayles who made hym grete chere, syr Gaultyer demaunded of hym where he sholde fynde the erle of Foyse, he answered hym at Ostays. These.ii. knyghtes were aseasoned togyder and remoned of dyuers matters, then syr Gaultyer departed and came to sayne Gaudes and there he had good cher, the nexte day he rode to sayne John de Nuyer and rode all the lawne of Bonc and costed Mauuoysyn and lay at Tournay a close towne and the next day he rod to dyner to Tarbe and there taryed all day, and ther founde the lozd Mauchio and syr Menalte of Barbason two grete lozdes of Biarne, they spake with him of many thinges and bycause that the lozd of Barbason was of the partye of the erle of Armynache he coulde speke no good wozde of the erle of Foyse. The next daie he departed and went to Mozlaustin Biern and ther he found sir Raynolde william bastard bzoder to the erle of Foyse who receyued him with good cher and he shewed sir gaultyer how he shold finde the erle of Ostays and how he wolde be ryght glad of his compoge. God graunt it sayde sire Gaultyer foz to speke with him I am come in to this countrey. Soo they dyned togyder, and after dyner syr Gaultyer went to his lodgynge to mounte Gabzyel and the nexte daie by. iii. of the clocke he came to Ostays and could not speke with the erle ỳ day tyll the nexte daie at after noone when the erle accustomed to come abzode.

The next day when ỳ erle of Foize knew that sir Gaultyer of Pallat was come to speke with him somwhat he made ỳ moze hast to yssue out of his chambze, then sir Gaultyer did salut him and the erle who knew as moche of honour as any knight did saluted him againe, and toke sir Gaultyer by the hand and said, sir ye be right hartely welcome what busines hath bzought you in to this countrey of Biarne, sir said the knight syr William Lignac and I are commytted by the frenshe kinge to conduite in to Castell certaine men of armes as ye haue herde oz this, and howe that ye will let our iournei and close your countrei of biarne againste vs and our compani. then the erle of Foyse said, sir Gaultier that is not so, foz I will not close noz kepe my countrei againste you noz againste any man that wyll peasbyly passe and pay to my people foz that they take, whyche frendes I haue swoze to kepe, and to mayntayne and my seruice to them I suffyce as euery lozde is bounde to do to his subiectes, foz that entente lozdes haue theyz sygnozres, but it hath ben shewed me that ye bzynge with you a maner of Bzerons, Barroys, Lozayncs and Boygoyons who know not what payne meaneth and agaynste suche people I wyll close my

countrey, for I wyll kepe my people in theyr
fraunches and ryghtes. Syr sayd the knyght the
entente of me and my companyon is that non
shall passe thrugh your land without they pay
peaseably to the agrement of the poore men or
elles to be taken and corrected accordynge to
the blage of your countrey, and they to make
restytucyon for euery domage by them done or
elles we to satysfye for theyr trespasses, so theyr
bodyes may be delyuered to us, without he be
a gentyll man we shal make Justyce to be don
of his body before your men, that all other shall
take therby ensample, and yf he be a gentyl mã
we shal cause hym to rendre and restore any do
mage by hym done, or elles we shall doo it for
hym, this crye we shall make with a trompet in
euery mannes lodgynge, and also declare it a
gayne to them or they entre in to any parte of
your land, so that none shall excuse them of ne
gligence, syr may this suffyse and content you
Then ỹ erle sayd, syr Gaulteyer yf this be done
I am well content, and ye shall be welcome in
to this countrey, I wyll be glad to see you, let
vs goo to dyner and then we shall talke more
togyder.

SYr sayd the erle cursed be ỹ warre betwe
ne Portyngale & Castell, I ought gret
ly to complayn of it, for I euer lost so much as
I dyd at one season in the warre betwen those
two royalmes, for all my chefe men of war of
Byerne were there slayne, and yet I shewed
them or they wente that they shold make theyr
warre wysely for I sayd the Portyngales were
harde men to mete withall and cruell of bo
dies, yf they haue the ouer hand, of theyr enemy
es, they haue no mercy, syr Gaultyer I speke it
that when ye and your companyon come in to
Castell syth ye two be the chefe cayptaynes of
them that are passed and shall passe, and peraã
venture ye shall be requyred by the kynge of
Castell to gyue your counsayle and aduyse, be
wel aduysed that ye gyue not to hasty counsayle
to adnaunce to fyght with your aduersaryes,
ỹ duke of Lancastre, the kynge of Portyngale
the Englysshe men or the Portyngales, for all
these be sayntes togyder and be all as on, and
the englysshe men desyre to haue bataple by, ii
reasons, on is of a grete season they haue had
noo profyte, they be poore and haue wonne no
thynge of a longe tyme but rather spende and
haue lost, Wherfore they wyll be redy to auaun
ce themselfe in hope to gete some newe profyte
and suche people as be aduenturers desyrynge
other mennes goods wyll fyght with a hardy
courag and often tymes fortune serueth them
well, the other reason is, the duke of Lancastre
knoweth surely that he can not come parfytely
nor peasybly to the herytage of Castell whyche
he de maundeth to haue by the ryght of hys wy
fe whom he calleth ryghtfull enheritour, but
all onely by bataple for he knoweth well yf he
myght haue and obteyne one iourney agaynst
the kynge of Castell that all the countrey then
wolde yelde to hym and trymble before hym. &
for this entente he is come in to Galyce and ha
th gruen one of his doughters in maryage to
the kynge of Portyngale to the entente that he
shold ayde his quarell, and syrs I saye thys to
you, for if the matter should fall otherwyse the
well ye and your felowe shall bere more blame
then any other. Syr sayd syr Gaultyer I than
ke you of your good aduertysement and syr my
seruyce shall be redy to doo you pleasure, for
this day ye be emonge other ryghten payynes re
puted for one of the moost sagest and happyest
in all your aduentures, but syr my companyon
and I haue on about vs who is chefe soueray
ne of all our company that is the duke of Bor
bon, and tyll he be come in to Castell we shall
make no hall to fyght with our enemyes what
so euer any maner saye, so they entred in to other
talkyng tyll the erle of Foyse demaunded for
wyne. Then they dranke and toke leue, the
erle entred in to his chambre and syr Gaultyer
retourned to hys lodgynge well accompanyed
with the erles knyghtes & so supped togyder.

THe nexte day after dyner syr Gaultyer to
ke hys leue of the erle of Foyse, and be
syde other thynges the erle gaue hym a fayre
courte and a mule, syr Gaultyer thanked therle
and so departed out of Ortays and lay, the same
nyght at Ercyell and the nexte nyght at Tarbe
he rode that daye a greate iourney, and then he
determyned to send from thens to syr Wyllyam
of Lyguac, and soo he dyd aduertysynge hym
howe he had spedde wyth the erle of Foyse, and
desyryng hym to come on forwarde wyth all
theyr companyes and shewyng hym howe the
countrey of Byern and all the good townes
sholde be open, payenge trewely for that they
take or elles not. ¶ This messagere hyede soo
much that he came to Thoulouse and dyd hys
message and delyuered hys letters. ¶ And
when syr Wyllyam hadde redde the contynewe
here of he made it to be knowen to all hys com-

pany that they sholde set on forwarde, soo that as soone as they entred any parte of the erle of Foyse land to pay for euery thynge that they sholde take, elles theyr capytaynes to answeere for euery thyng thys was cryed by the sounde of a trompet fro lodgynge to lodgynge to the entente that euery man sholde knowe it, then euery man dyslodged out of ỳ marches of Tholouse, Carcassone, Lymous, and of Marbon and so entred in to Bygorre, and syr wyllyam of Lygnac toke hys horse and rode to Tarbe to syr Gaultyer his compayon, and there made good cheere togyder, and theyr bandes and rowtes passed by and assembled togyder in Bygorre to ryde in company thrughe the countrey of Byerne, and to passe at Otays the ryuer of Saure whiche renneth to Bayon.

At ỳ yssuing out of ỳ countrey of Byerne ỳ entre of the countrey of Bysquey in the which countrey as then ỳ kynge of englande helde great landes in the bysshoprykes of Burdeaus and Bayon, ther wer .xxx. townes with stepls that helde of the kynge of englande, s when they understode of ỳ passage of thes frenshmen through theyr countrey they wer in doubte of ouer tynnyng, brennyng and erylynge, for as then ther wes no men of war of theyr partye in all that countrey to defende theyr frontiers, the sage men drew togyder and sent to trete with the frenshe capytaynes and to by theyr pas, then they sent to Otays .iiii. men hauyng auctoryte to make theyr pas. These .iiii. men met by the way with a squyer of the erle of Foyse called Ernalton du Pon, s shewed hym all theyr mattre desyrynge hym to helpe thẽ to speke with syr Gaultyer of Passac an syr wyllyam of Lygnac, when they came to Otays which sholde be within, iii. or .iiii. dayes after, and to helpe to ayde to make theyr pas, and he answered ỳ he wold do so with a good wyll. The nyght ỳ at the capytanes came to Otays they wer lodged at ỳ same squyers house, and ther he ayded them of Bysquey to make theyr apoyntment, and they to pay .ii. M. frankes and theyr countrey saued fro brennyng and robbynge, the erle of Foyse gaue a dyner to these capytynes, and to syr Wyllyam of Lygnac a fayre courser the nexte day they passed to Sameterre and entred in to the countrey of Bysquey wyich was redemed, they toke vytales where as they myght gete it, and so passed thrughe the countrey without doyng of ony other domag and so came to Sarut Johns de Pye of Porte at the entre of Nauar.

¶ Howe syr John Holande and syr Raynolde de roy foughte togyder in lystes before the duke of Lancastere in the towne of Belances.

Ca. lxxvii

Ere before yehaue here howe the towne of Belances was put in composycyon with ỳ duke of Lancastre and howe it was yelden vp to hym, for ỳ bryge of Castell dyd comforte it nothynge, and how the duches of Lancastre & her doughter came to the cyte of Porte in Portyngale to se the kyng and the quene there, and howe the kyng and the lordes ther receyued them lyghtly as it was reason and thus whyle the duke of Lancastre soiourned in the towne of Belances tydynges came thyder fro Valcolrue brought by an herauld de of fraunce who demaunded wher was the lodgynge of syr John Holand, and so he was brought thyder, then he kneled downe before hym and delyuered hym a letter and said, syr I am an officyer of armes sent hyder to you fro sir Raynold du Roy who saluteth you, yf it please you to rede your letter, then syr John said with right a good wyll, and thou arte right welcome and opened his letter and redde it wherin was contayned howe syr Raynolde du Roy desyred hym in the way of amours an for the loue of hys lady to deliuer hym of hys chalenge, iii. courses with a spere .iii. strokes with a sworde iii. with a dagger and .iii. with an axe & that yf it wolde please hym to come to Valcolrue he wolde prouyde for hym .x. horse a sure sauf condyte yf not he wolde come to Belances with .xxx. horses so that he wolde gete for hym a sauf condyte of the duke of Lancastre. When syr John Holande had red these letters he began to smyle & beheld the herauld and said, frend ỳ arte welcome, thou hast brought me tydynges ỳ pleaseth me right wel. & I accepte his desyre ỳ shalte abyde here in my house in my company & to morowe ỳ shalte haue answere where one armes shal be accomplysshed outher in Galyce or in Castel, syr sayd the herauld as it pleaseth god and you. ¶ The herauld was therat hys ease, and syr John wente to the duke and founde hym talkyng with the marshall, then he shewed them hys tydynges and the letters, Well sayd the duke, and haue ye accepted hys desyre

ye truly syr sayde he, and I desyre nothynge so much as dedes of armes, and the knyght hathe desyred me, but nowe syr, where shall it be your pleasure that we do our armes, the duke studyed a litell and then sayd, I wil that they be done in this towne, make a sauf conduct for him as it shall please you and I shal seale it. In the name of god sayd syr John that is well sayd, the sauf conducte was writen for him and .xxx. knyghtes and squiers to come safe & go safe, the sir John Holande deliuered it to the herauide and gaue hym a mantell furred vb myneuer, and .xii. aungell nobles. The herauld toke his leaue & returned to Valeolyne to his mayster, and there shewed how he had sped and deliuered the saufcon dupte, on the other part tidinges came to ỳ cite of Pozte to the king of Poztingale & to the Ladyes there how that these dedes of armes shold be done at Besances. Wel sayd the kyng I wyll be therat and the quene my wyfe wyth other ladyes and damoyselles, & the duches of Lancaster who was as then there thanked the king in that she should at her retourne be accompanyed with ỳ king and with the quene, it was not long after but the time approched. Then the kyng of Poztingale, the quene, the duches and her other doughter with other ladyes and damoiels rode forth in great aray toward Besances, and whā ỳ duke of Lancastre knew that ỳ king came thither he toke his horse & manye other lordes and issued out of Besances and met the king and the ladyes, there the king and the duke made great chere togither, & so entred togither into ỳ towne and theyr lodging appoynted as it apperteyned accordyng to the maner of the countrey, and ỳ was not so easye nor large as though they had bene at Parys.

ABout a thre dayes after that the kynge of Poztingale was come to Besāces thither came syr Reynold du Roy well accompanied with knyghtes and squyers he badde a fire croze horses, and they were all well lodged for ỳ duke of Lancaster had prepared ready their lodginges. Then the next day syr John Holād and syr Raynold du Roy were armed and mounted on theyr horses and so came to a fayre place redy sanded, where they shoulde do theyr armes, & scaffoldes ready made for the kynge and for the ladyes, and for the duke & other lordes of England, for they were all come thyther to se ỳ dedz of armes of these .ii. knyghtes, they came into the feld as well appoynted as could be deuised and deuysed, and there was brought in their speares theyr ares and theyr swordes, and well horsed and so eche of them a good distaunce fro other made theyr tournes & frisks freshlye, for they knewe well they were regarded, euerye thynge was ordayned at theyr desyre and all theyr armes graunted except the bitetaunce, howebeit no man knewe what should fall of theyr bodyes for syth they were thither come, they must nedes mete at the poynt of theyr speres, and after that with theyr swordes, and then with ares and daggers. loo what daunger they were in to the entent to exhault theyr honour, for theyr liues lay but in the misaduenture of one stroke, thus they ranne togither and met as euen as though they had roone by a line, and strake eche other in the vysour of theyr helmes so that syr Raynolde du Roy brake his speare in foure peces and the sheuers flew a great hyghte in to the ayre, whyche course was greatly praysed, syr John Holande strake sir Raynold in likewise in the visoure but the stroke was of no force. I shal shew you why syr Raynold had the visoure of his helme made at aduauntage for it was tyed but with a small lase, the lase brake with the stroke, and ỳ helme flewe of his head so that the knighte was bareheaded, and so passed forth theyr course, and syr John discharged and bare his staffe freshelye, then euery man sayd it was a goodly course.

DAan these knightes returned to theyr owne places and syr Raynolde was helmed agayne & had a new speare, & so they ranne togither agayne, they were both wel horsed and could wel guyde thē, they strake eche other on the helmes so that the fyre flewe oute, ỳ speres brake not, but syr Raynoldes helme again flewe of his head. I sayd the Englishemen ỳ frenchman hath aduauntage, why is not hys helme as faste bocled as syr John of Holandes is, we thinke he doth wrong let him set his helme in like case as his companion hath done his holde your peace syrs sayd the duke of Lancaster let them deale in armes, let euery man take his aduauntage as he thinketh best, if syr John Holande thynke that the other knyghte haue aduauntage lette him set on hys helme in lyke maner, but as for me sayd the duke, and I were in like armes as these .ii. knyghtes be, I would haue my helme as faste bocled as I could, and I thinke here be manye of the same opinion, then the Englyshemen spake no more wordes, and the ladyes and damoyselles sayde howe the knyghtes had iusted well and goodlye, and the

kynge of Portyngale sayde the same and spake to syr John Frant and sayde, syr John, in our countrey knyghtes iust not in this goodlye maner, syr sayd he these knyghtes do iuste well, and syr I haue sene or this the frē.hmen iust before the king your brother, when we were at Eltres agaynst the kinge of Castell, like iustes I sawe there betwene syr William Wyndsore and another frenche knight, but their helmes were faster tyed than this knyghtes helme is, than the king regarded agayne the two knyghtes to se their thyrd course.

THus they ranne togyther the thirde course and regarded erbe other wyselye to take theyr aduauntage they myght well so do, for their horses serued them at theyr wyshinge and so they strake erbe other agayne on the helme in such wyse that theyr eyen trēbled in theyr heades and theyr staues brake, and agayne syr Raynoldes helme flewe of his head, and so erbe other passed forthe theyr course and demeaned themselfe freshely, so that euery man sayd howe they had nobly iusted, but the englishemen blamed greatlye syr Raynolde du Roy, in that hys helm was no faster set on his head, but the duke of Lancaster blamed him nothing but sayde, I thynke hym wyse that can in feates of armes seke his lawfull aduauntage, it semeth wel that syr Raynolde is not to learne to iust, he knoweth more therin than sir John doth, though he haue borne hymselfe ryght well. So thus after theyr courses with theyr speares, they toke their axes and dyd theyr armes with them and gaue erbe other thre great strokes on their helmes, & then they fought with theyr swordes and after with theyr daggers, and whē al was done there was none of them hurt. The frenchmē brought syr Raynolde to his lodginge, and the englyshemen syr John Holland to his, the same day the duke of Lancaster made a dyner to al the frēch men in his lodging and the duches set at the table by the duke, and syr Raynold du Roy beneth her, after dyner they wente in to a counsayle chamber, and the duches toke syr Raynolde by the hande and made him to enter as soone as herselfe, and there she comoned with him and other of the french knightes, tyll it was tyme to call for drinke, then the duches sayd to the frēch knyghtes, syrs I haue maruayle of you, that ye do sustayne the wrong opynion of a bastard, for ye knowe well, and so doth all the worlde, that Henry that was sometime called king of Castel was a bastarde, therefore what iust cause haue you to sustayne that quarell, and ayde to your power to dissherite the ryght ayre of Castell, for I knowe wel and so doth all the worlde, that I and my syster were doughters by lawful maryage to king Peter, Wherfore god knoweth what ryghte we haue to the realme of Castell, and the good lady when she spake of her father she wepte, than sir Raynolde du Roy made hys obeysaunce and sayd. Madame we know right well that all is of trouth that ye haue sayd, howbeit the king our mayster is of the contrary opinion against you, and we be his subiectes and must make warre at his pleasure, and go where as he wyl sende vs, we may not say nay. So the duches departed fro the duke, and the frenche knyghtes dranke and than tooke theyr leaues and wente to theyr lodginge, and there euery thyng was redy to depart, and then they mounted and departed fro Belāces and rode the same day to Nop, and there they rested, and thē rode forth til they came to Valeolyue.

Howe the kyng of Portyngale and the duke of Lancastre determined to entre into the realme of Castell. Cap. lxxix.

AFter these deedes of armes done as I haue recorded. The kynge of Portingale & the duke of Lancastre tooke counsayle togither and determined to ride and to enter into Castell within a shorte space, and that the kynge of Portyngale with al his power shoulde ryde on the frontiers and so enter into Castell, and the duke and his route to enter on the boundes of Galyce and to conquere suche townes and fortresses as were agaynst him, and if Iohn of Castell did assemble his hoost agaynst thē to make batell, then both theyr hostes to drawe togither It was thought most necessarye to haue theyr hoostes a sonder, til nede were rather then togither, to eschewe sickines that might fal & to haue the more easyer lodging & forageing in eschewinge of debates & discordes for englishemen be hasty & proud in ỳ felde. & the Portingales hote & disdainful & cā not suffer. but it was thought that in a great iourney of battayle they shoulde right wel agree togither, this counsayle was determined and the king sayde to the duke, syr as

soone as I haue knowledge that ye set forwarde I shall doo in lyke case for I and my men be redy/& they desyre nothynge elles but batayle/ syr sayd the duke and I shall not longe syt styll it is shewed me howe as yet there be certayne townes in Galyce ꝑ rebell agaynst vs/ I wyll goo and dysyte them/ and after that I wyll leke out for our enemyes/ whersoeuer I can fynde them. Thus the kynge of Portyngale toke leue of the duke and duches/ and in lyke wyse so dyd the quene Philyp and her ponge syster katheryne for it was ordeyned that the ponge lady sholde abyde al the warre season with her syster the quene at the cyte of Porte in Portyngale/ it was thought she coulde be in ony better keppynge/ and ꝑ duches retourned to saynt Jaques in Galyce/ so thus euery body departed thyder as they sholde doo/ the kynge to the cyte of Porte/ and the duches to the towne of saynt Jaques well accompanyed with knyghtes and squyers/ and the duke tarryed at Betances and there aboute/ and prepayred shortly to set forwarde/ he was desyrous to departe bycause it was in the holy lusty moneth of Aprell at whiche season in Galyce the grasse is full growen and all theyr corne and herbes floures and fruytes redy rype the countrey is so hote ꝑ in the begynnynge of June harueste is paste/ the duke thought the season goodly to set forwarde his army. ¶ Nowe let vs somwhat speke of the ordeynge of the frenshmen and of kynge Johan of Castell as well as we haue done of the englysshe men.

¶ Howe syr wyllyam of Lygnac/ & syr Gaultyer of Vaslac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Castell. Ca. lxxx.

Here before ye haue herde howe syr Wyllyam of Lygnac & syr Gaultyer of Vaslac dyd so moche by theyr wyse entreatynge of the erle of Foyse ꝑ he suffred them peasably to passe thrughe his countrey of Byerne to go in to Castel and besyde that the erle gaue them grete rewardes/ for there were noo knyghtes nor squyers straungers that came to se hym/ but that he wolde largely rewarde them accordynge to theyr degrees/ so some a.C. florynes/ to some CC. florynes and .xxx. or .xl. so that this sayd syrst passage of the frenshe men cost the erle of Foyse as his owne treasourer shewed me the some of a.M. frankes besyde horses and other thynges that he gaue/ to say trouth surely it is grete domage ꝑ suche a persone sholde be olde or dye/ he had no mermosettes aboute hym/ to say syr take here/ and gyue this/ and pynche a ppl the people/ surely he had none suche aboute hym/ he dyd euery thynge on his owne mynde/ for naturally he had grete wysdome and coulde gyue where nede was and take as it became hym best and by reason of his larges and grete expences sometyme he trauayled his subiectes/ for his reuenewes were not sufficyent to bere out his gyftes whiche were yerely .lx. M. frankes/ ꝑ whiche lyke haue not ben seen nor herde of ony other/ yet he assembled his treasoure for doubte of all aduentures in .xxx. yere .xxx. tymes a.C.M. frankes/ and yet for all that his people alwayes prayde to god for his longe lyfe/ and I herde it reported howe when he dyed there were in Foyse and in Byerne .l.M. persones that sayd ꝑ they wolde gladly haue dyed with hym wherby it is to be thought that they sayd not so without it had ben for grete loue ꝑ they had to theyr lorde/ and surely if they loued hym they dyd but ryght and accordynge to reason/ for he alwayes mayntayned them in theyr ryght and kepte euer true iustyce/ for all his lades and the people therin had as grete lyberte and fraunchesse and lyued in as good peas as thoughe they had ben in paradyse terrestre/ I say not this for flattery nor for fauour nor loue that I bere hym nor for the gyftes that he hath gyuen me/ but I can well proue all that I haue sayd for I am sure there be a.M. knyghtes & squyers wyll saye the same.

NOwe let vs retourne to syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and to syr Gaultyer of Vaslac who were cayptaynes and sourtayne leders of all the frenshe armye/ when they were passed the countrey of Byquey and the pase of Roncyuall/ whiche cost them .xii. dayes a passynge. The mountaynes were so full of snowe for all that it was in the moneth of Aprell/ yet they and theyr horses hadde moche payne to passe thrughe. Then they came towardes Panpylona/ and there they founde the royalme of Nauarre redy open for to suffre them to passe thrughe. For the kynge of Nauarre wolde not doo

no displeasure to the kynge of Castell bycause his sone sr Charles of Nauare had to his wyfe as then the kynge of Castelles sister / wherin the peas was made bytwene kynge Henry and the fader of kynge Johñ of Nauare they made and promysed grete alyaunce togyder whiche they longe kepte / for the kynge of Nauare was not able to resyst the kynge of Castell without he had grete alyaunce and comforte of ꝑ kynge of Aragon / or elles of ꝑ kynge of englande.

These capytaynes of fraunce came to Pampylona where the kynge of Nauare was who receyued them ioyfully & made them to dyne with hym in his palays after dyner he led them in to his chambre and there comoned wᵗ them of dyuers thynges / for ꝑ kynge there was a wyse man and a subtell & well langaged / and amonge other thynges he shewed them howe ꝑ frenshe kynge and his counsayle had ben displeased with hym without a cause / and wrongfully had taken fro hym his herytage and landes in Normandy whiche he ought to haue by successyon of his predecessours kynges of fraunce and of Nauare whiche he sayd he coulde not forgete seynge he had taken fro hym in Normandy / Languedoc / and in the barony of Mountpellyer the some of .ix. M. frankes of yerely reuenues and he sayd he wyst not to whome to complayne to haue ryght / but all onely to god / for as sayd the kyng I lay not this to you bycause ye sholde addresse my wronges for I knowe well it lyeth not in your power / for I thynke the frenshe kynge wyll do but ly tell for you in that behalfe / for ye be none of his counsayle / ye be but knyghtes aduentures and so wdyours to go where soeuer he sende you. But I speke this in maner of complaynte to al knyghtes in fraunce that passe by me / then sr Gaultyer of Pallac sayd / sr your wordes be true yf that you saye that our kynge for all vs wyll nother gyue nor take / for surely sr we be not of his counsayle but redy to go where as he wyll sende vs / but sr the duke of Borbon who is our souerayne capytayne and vncle to our kynge cometh after vs this same waye / outher goynge or retournynge ye maye shewe hym your busynes / by hym ye maye be addressed of all your complayntes / and sr we praye to god that he may rewarde you of the honour that ye haue done to vs / & sr we shall shewe your entoryse to our kyng & to his counsayle when we retourne in to fraunce / and also to the duke of Borbone who is our chefe capytayne whome we trust to se or we se the kyng / and then myne was brought and they dranke & toke theyr leue of the kynge / and ꝑ kynge rewarded them largely and sente to eche of them to theyr lodgyng goodly horses wherof they had grete ioye.

Thus these men of warre passed thrugh the royalme of Nauare & came to Gloyne / & there demaunded where they sholde fynde the kynge of Castell / and it was shewed them howe he had ben at Valcolyue a grete season / but as then they sayd they thought he was at Burgus in Spayne there makynge his prouysyon / then they toke the way to Burgus and lefte the way to Galyce / for that waye was not sure for them / for the Englysshemen were yore abrode in the countrey. Tydynges came to the kynge of Castell howe soroures came to hym out of fraunce to the nombre of .ii. M. speres / wherof he was ryght glad and so departed fro Valcolyue and rode to Burgus with a .bi. M horse. Thus these frenshemen of armes came to Burgus and lodged therabout abrode in the countrey / and dayly thyder came men of warre And sr wyllyam of Lygnac / and sr Gaultyer of Pallac came to the kynge in to his palays / who receyued them swetely and thanked them of the payne and grete trauayle that they had taken for his sake as to come thyder to serue hym. The knyghtes made theyr reuerence and sayd / sr yf we maye do you any seruyce to plese you / our paynes shall soone be forgoten / but sr & it please you to take aduyse howe we shal do / outher to ryde agaynst our enemyes or elles to make them warre by garysons tyll suche season as the duke of Borbon be come / and sr yf it please you ye maye sende for sr Olyuer of Clysquy we knowe well he is in his countrey and for sr Peter of Vyllaynes / the Barrops of Barres / Chatell Morant and the other companyons who haue haunted this countrey more then we haue done / for they were here longe before vs / and then let vs al counsayle togyder and with godes grace you and your royalme shal haue honoure and profyte. Sayd the kynge ye speke wysely and thus shal it be done Then clerkes were set a worke and letters made and messagers sent forthe in to dyuers places to the knyghtes and men of warre there as they were spred abrode in the countrey / & when they knewe that sr Wyllyam of Lygnac and sr Gaultyer of Pallac were at Burgus with

the kynge

the kynge they were greetely reioyced therof/ then these knyghtes and other companyons departed fro they⁹ garysons and lefte them in sure keppynge/and so rode to Burgus in Spayne/ soo that there was a grete nombre of Frenshe men of warre.

THon the kynge of Castel and his lordes & knyghtes of fraunce went to counsayle togyder to se how they sholde mayntayne they⁹ warre/for they knewe well they⁹ enemyes rode abrode and kepte ꝑ feldes/wherfore they thought to prouyde some remedy to the honoure of the kynge and profyte of the royalme of Castell So there were many matters debated in this counsayle/and then all they⁹ people were nombred/and it was sayd that of the royalme selfe they myght well bringe togyder a.xxx.M.horses and the men well armed after the vsage of Castell with dartes and Iauelyns / and foote men castynge stones out of slynges other.xxx. M.The frenshe knyghtes amonge themselfe consydered al this and sayd one to another this is a grete nombre of people and they were good men of warre/but they be lytel worth/for we haue sene suche slowthfulnes in them that we haue no grete trust to them/ as it appered as well in the batayle of Narres where the prynce of Walles had the victory as ayn batayle of Iuberoth where as the Portyngales and Gascoynes were/and alwaye the Spanyardes were discomfyted.Then the erle of Lune in sustenynge ꝑ Castellyans & in excusynge of them sayd / syrs as to the batayle of Narres I shall answere you/it is of trouthe ꝑ syr Bertram of Clysquyn a grete nombre of knyghtes of Fraunce were there and foughte valyauntly / for they were all taken or slayne/but ye haue herde and ye know well that agaynst them was the floure of all the chyualry of the worlde bothe in wysdome bayauntnes and prowes the whiche is not nowe with the duke of Lancastre/the prynce at the batayle of Narres had.x.M.speres and.vi.M. archers/they were suche men that there were a viii.M.of them euery man worth a Rowlande or an Oliuere/but the duke of Lancastre hathe none suche/he passeth not a.viii.or a.xb.C.speres/and a.viii.M.archers/and we be a.vi.M. speres/nor we shall not fyght agaynst Rowlande nor Oliuer.Syr Iohn Chandos syr Thomas Felton / syr Oliuer Clysson / syr Hughe Caurel/syr Rycharde Pountchardon/syr Gastus/the lorde of Rheux/and syr Rycharde Dangle I coulde name.v.C.suche that were there/ they be dede / we shall fynde none suche nowe/ Wherfore the matter is not soo perylous as it was in tyme past / for yf ye wyll byleue me / we shall go fyght with them and palle the ryuer of Derne/it shall tourne vs to grete valyauntnes The counsayle that the erle of Lune dyd gyue was wel herde/and there were many that helde ꝑ same opynyon/then syr Oliuer of Clysquyn sayd syr erle of Lune we knowe well all that ye haue sayd proceedeth of youre grete wysdome & valyauntnes/but syr take it so that we goo and fyght with the duke of Lancastre / yf that were all we sholde do well ynoughe/but syr ye leue ꝑ grettest matter behynde/as the kynge of Portyngale and his puyssance/for as we be enfourmed they be a.xxb.C.speres/&.xxx.M.of other men of war/for on the trust of the kynge of Portyngale ꝑ duke of Lancastre is entred in to Galyce and they haue made a grete alyaunce togyder/for the kynge hath maryed the dukes doughter/nowe syr what saye you to this/in the name of god sayd the erle of Lune ye knyghtes of Fraunce are sufficyent to fyght with the duke of Lancastre/and the kynge of Castell and the Castellyans who be as they say.xx.M.horse/& xxx.M.a foote/they may fyght with the kynge of Portyngale I dare well abyde ꝑ aduenture amonge them/ When the frenshmen sawe how the erle of Lune layde it so sore to they⁹ charge sayd syr ye be in ꝑ ryght and we be in ꝑ wronge for syr we sholde haue sayd as ye do / and syr let it soo be and you wyll/there is none of vs shall saye agaynst youre wyll/syrs sayd the kynge I requyre you all counsayle me truely and not in hast nor by pryde/but by sad aduyse and humylyte/and then let vs take the best waye / I wyll not conclude to accepte this iourney/ I wyl we mete agayne togyder to morowe in this same chambre / and ye syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Dallac who are lente hyder in to this countrey by the frenshe kynge and by the duke of Borbon/ I requyre you go togyder and take aduyse and counsayle me to that shall be thought moost best and honourable to me and to my royalme / for it shall lye in you whether we shall fyght with our enemyes or not/ They made they⁹ reuerence and sayd they wolde obey his commaundement and so departed.

THus euery man that daye departed to they⁹ lodgynges and the frenshmen as they were togyder had grete communycacyon some sayd we can not honourably fyght with

our enemyes tyll the duke of Bozbon our ſoue-
rayne capytayne be come / We can not tell yf he
wolde fyght with them oz not / be it ſoo that we
fyght with them and haue the vyctozy / the duke
of Bozbou wyll be ſozy dyſpleaſed with vs and
ſpecyally with vs that be the frenſſhe capytay-
nes / and yf the foztune ſholde fall agaynſt vs /
we ſholde then bothe loſe our bodyes and the
royalme / foz yf we were ouerthzowen there we
se no recouery in the Caſtellyans but that the
kynge of Caſtell were lyke to leſe all his royal-
me foz this tyme / and we ſholde bere moze ſaw-
te then ony other foz it ſholde be layde howe we
had cauſed the batayle and gaue no good coun
ſayle / noz alſo we be in noo ſuretye yf the royal-
me be all ſure on the kynges partye oz not / oz
whether they haue couertly ſente foz the duke
of Lancaſtre and his wyfe oz not who is repu-
ted foz heyze of Caſtell / foz ſhe was doughter to
kynge Don Peter all the wozlde knoweth that
ſo that when the people ſe the duke & his wyfe
with ỹ engly ſſhmen in the felde demaundynge
the crowns of Caſtell affyzmynge how they ha
ue fyght therto / foz kynge Johñ who was kyn
ge as then was ſone to a baſtarde / then perad-
uenture they may tourne to theyz parte as they
dyd in ỹ grete batayle of Maures / & ſoo ſholde
we abyde deed in the felde / ſo we thinke there is
double peryll bothe to the kynge and to vs / but
ſuche folyſſhe people gyue the kynge counſayle
to batayle and are herde befoze them that ſhol-
de ſpeke / well ſyzs ſayd ſyz wyllyam of Lygnac
and ſyz Gaultyer of Paſſac to mozowe ſhall be
knowen euery mannes oppynyon. So that day
and nyght the frenſſhmen were at dyuers com-
munycacyons / and in lyke wyſe ſoo were the
ſpanyardes / Suche as loued the kynge wolde
not counſayle hym to fyght foz dyuers reaſons
one was if he fought and loſt the batayle he loſt
his royalme without recouery / the kynge hym-
ſelfe thought it not good to fyght / he fered ſoze
the foztune of the warre / noz alſo he knewe not
euery mannes mynde who loued hym and who
dyd not. Thus the matter reſted tyll the nexte
daye / then euery man retourned to the palays /
and the kynge entred in to counſayle.

IN this counſayle were many oppynyons
foz euery man to his power wolde truely
counſayle the kynge / dyuers counſayled hym
that he ſholde not enclyne haſtely to batayle /
puttynge hym in remembzaunce of the harde
tourney that he had at Zuberoth where as the
kynge of Poztyngale dyſcomfyted hym / wher-
by he had ſuche domage that yf ſuche another
chaunce ſholde fall he ſholde leſe his royalme
foz euer / when the kynge had demaunded eue-
ry man and herde all theyz oppynyons. Then
he ſayd to ſyz wyllyam of Lygnacke and to ſyz
Gaultyer of Paſſac / ſyzs let me here pour op-
pynyons foz by you all ſhal be ozdeyned ſeynge
ye be the chefe capytaynes of the frenſſhe men
lente hyder by the frenſſhe kynge and his coun-
ſayle. Theſe .ii. knyghtes regarded eche other
and ſyz Wyllyam ſayd to ſyz Galtyer / ſyz ſpeke
you / and he anſwered and ſayd / nay I wyll not /
ſpeke you / ye haue vſed armes moze then I ha-
ue done. Then ſyz Wyllyam aduyſed hymſelfe
and ſayd / ſyz and it lyke your grace me thynke
ye ought gretely to thanke the noble chyualry
of Fraunce / who are come hyder to ſerue you
ſoo farre of / and ſyz it hathe ſhewed well howe
they haue none affeccyon noz wyll to be cloſed
in ony cyte oz towne caſtell / oz garyſon / that ye
haue. But they are and haue ben deſyrous to
kepe the feldes / and to fynde out / and to fyght
with your enemyes / the whyche thynge nowe
ſaynge your grace can not be ſuffred foz dy-
uers reaſons / the pzyncypall reaſon is / ſyz we
tary foz the duke of Bozbon who is our ſoue-
rayne capytayne who wyll be here ſhozely and
he ſhall gretely enfozce vs with newe frenſſhe
men / there be many nowe here with vs that we
re neuer in this countrey befoze / it were neceſ-
ry that they lerned the maner of this countrey
a two oz a thze monethes / foz it pzouyth but ſel-
dome well to haſtely to fyght with oure ene-
myes / But lette vs make wyſe warre by gary
ſons a two oz a thze monethes / and let the En-
glyſſhemen and Poztyngales ryde abzode in
Galyce where they lyſt / yf they conquere certay
ne townes it is but a ſmall matter / as ſoone as
they be departed out of the countrey they wyll
be ſoone wonne agayne. Alſo ſyz there is one
poynte / in armes lyeth many aduentures / ſyz
let them ryde abzode in the countrey whyche is
hoote and of a ſtronge ayze / they maye take ſu-
che trauayle and ſykenes that they maye hap-
pen repente them that they haue come ſoo foz-
warde / foz they ſhall not fynde the ayze ſoo at-
temperate there as it is in Englande oz in Fraū
ce / noz the wynes ſo pleaſaunt / foz in Galyce the
ryuers be troubleous and coolde bycauſe of the
ſnowes that dyſcende downe fromе the moun-
taynes wherby they & theyz hozſes after theyz
trauayle all the daye in the hoote ſone ſhall be
mozfoundzed oz they be ware / they be not made

of ſtele nor yet of yron/but at lengthe they ſhall not endure the hote countrey of Caſtell/they be men as we be. Thus I thynke we can not better bete them/but to let them go where they lyſt they ſhall fynde nothynge in the playne countreys nor no delectable places to refreſſhe them for as I vnderſtande all the open countrey is all redy dyſtroyed with our owne men / and I alowe well that aduyſe / for yf it were to doo I wolde counſayle the ſame / ſyrs yf there be ony here can ſpeke better let hym ſpeke / we ſhall be glad to here hym/and this ſyr Gaultyer and I deſyre you all thus to doo/then they all anſwered with one voyce/lette this aduyſe be admytted/we can conſyder no better nor more profytable way/for the kynge of Caſtel and his royalme.

SO it was there they concluded that they ſholde make no countenaunce of warre tyll the duke of Bourbon and all theyr prouyſyons were come / but that theyr men of warre to be put in to dyuers garyſons on the fronters of theyr countrey and ſuffre the engliſſhmen and Portyngales to go in and out in to the royalme of Caſtell at theyr pleaſure / ſayenge howe they coulde not bere awaye the countrey with them when ſo euer they retourned / thus ended the counſayle/the kynge of Caſtel had the ſame daye all them at dyner with hym in his palays at Burgus in Spayne/ right plentyfull after the vſage of Spayne / by the nexte daye at none al the men of armes departed thyder as they were appoynted by theyr capytaynes / ſyr Olyuer Clyſquy and the erle of Longueuyle with a thouſande ſperes wente to a ſtronge towne on the fronter of Galyce called Vylleſaunte / and ſyr Raynolde and ſyr Tryſtram of Roye was ſente to another garyſon a .x. legges fro the fronter of Galyce called Agyllat in the felde with thre hundred ſperes / Syr Peter of Bellyſme with two hundred ſperes wente to Pouelles/ the vycounte of Lume wente to the towne of Warolle / ſyr Johñ of Barres with thre hundred ſperes was ſente to the caſtell of Noye within Galyce. Syr Johñ of caſtell Morant and ſyr Tryſtram of Jayell and dyuers other were ſente to the cyte of Balance. And the vycount of Belyet wente to the towne of Rybede and with hym ſyr Johñ of Braquen / and ſyr Robert of Braquen. ¶ Thus theſe men of armes were deuyded / and ſyr Olyuer of Clyſquy was made theyr conſtable / and ſyr Wyllyam of Lygnac and ſyr Gaultyer of Pallac abode ſtyll with the kynge at Burgus / In this caſe ſtandynge was the buſynes of Caſtell abydynge the compynge of the duke of Bourbon who was ſtyll in Fraunce makynge prouyſyon for his tourney. ¶ Nowe we wyll ſuffre in reſt a ſeaſon the armye of Caſtell and of the duke of Lancaſtre and alſo of the kynge of Portyngale / and when the tyme requyreth we ſhal retourne thet to agayne. And nowe lette vs ſpeke of the aduentures that fell in the ſame ſeaſon in Fraunce and in englande the whiche were troublous and perylous for bothe royalmes and ſore dyſpleaſaunt vnto the kynges and to bothe theyr counſayles.

Chow a grete myſcheffe fell in Englande betwene the gentyll men and comons for accompte of ſuche money as hadde ben reyſed of the comons. Ca. lxxvi.

HEre before ye haue herde howe the Frenſſhe armye with ſhyppes on the ſe that were aſſembled at Sluſe to haue gone in to Englande was daſſhed & broken vp / yet to ſhewe courage and deſyre to goo another ſeaſon in to englande / and that it ſholde not be ſayd that the Frenſſhe men were recreaunt to haue made that voyage. Therfore it was ordeyned that incontynent at the entre of May and that the ſee myght be fayre and pleaſaunt. The conſtable of Fraunce ſholde make a tourney in to englande with .viii. M. men of armes and .ii. M. croſſe bowes / and they ſholde all aſſemble togyder at a cyte agaynſt the fronter of Cornewall called Lentrygnyet and there to be made all theyr prouyſyon and it was ordeyned euery man to haue a horſe the more eaſely to ryde abrode in Englande / for it was thought without horſe they coulde make noo warre that ſholde auayle them / ſoo there was aſſembled at this hauen of Lentygnyet a goodly apparell of ſhyppes / barkes / Bagengers and galeys wel fournyſſhed with wynes / ſalte fleſſhe and byſquet and other thynges ſo largely that it was ſuffycyent for them to lyue by a foure or

fyue monethes without takynge or byenge of ony thynge in the countrey for y constable and his company knewe well that as soone as the Englysshe men knewe of suche a company of men of warre comynge on them/they wolde by strope theyr owne goodes abyde in the playne countrey rather then we sholde haue ony ease therof. Therfore the constable made his proup spon redy on that syde the see. Also there was ordeyned another fleete of shyppes at the hauen of Harflewe for the lorde of Couey/the lorde of sayntpoule and the admyrall of Fraunce shol de there take shyppynge with two thousande speres/in lykewyse to goo in to Englande/and as the bryte wente all this was done to drawe backe agayne the duke of Lancastre and the du ches out of Castell. The same season the duke of Borbon was at Parys and thought surely that the duke of Lancastre sholde retourne ho me agayne in to Englande/wherfore he thou ght he sholde haue no thynge to doo to go in to castell nor to trauayle his body so farre forthe. So it was determyned that in the Constables armye sholde goo/Bretons/Iuglenyns/Pope tenyns/Manceaus/and Saynctons/with kny ghtes and squyers of the lowe marches/and with the lorde of sayntpoule and with the lor de of Couey sholde go frenshmen/Normans/e Pycardes/and with the duke of Borbon shol de goo two thousande speres of Berrey/Iuer nake/of Lymosyn/Borgoyne and of the bace marches. Thus in that season the matters we re concluded in Fraunce and euery man knewe what he sholde do/outher to go in to Englande or in to Castell.

AND true it was the royalme of Englan de the same tyme was in grete peryll e in a greter ieopardye then when the byllaynes of Essex and Kent rebelled agaynst the kynge and the nobles of the royalme at whiche tyme they came vnto London/I shall shewe you the reason why/at that season all the noble men of the royalme toke one parte togyder with the kynge agaynst the comons/but nowe it is not soo/the nobles vary amonge themselfe. The kynge is agaynst his owne vncles/the duke of yorke and the duke of Glocestre and they were agaynst hym/and all this varyaunce dyd ryse by the meanes of the duke of Irelande who ba re all the chefe rule aboute the kynge/and the comons of Englande in dyuers cyties knewe well of this dyscorde/they that were sage men reputed it for a grete euyl and fered that moche trouble sholde growe therby/but suche as were lyght persones made noo reckenynge therof/for me sayenge that it was for enuye that the kyn ges vncles hadde agaynst the kynge they re ne phewe/and bycause they sawe howe the crow nne of Englande began to growe farre of from them/and some other sayd how the kynge was but ponge/and bylefued ponge counsayle/and howe that it were better for hym to bylene hys vncles who mente noo thynge to hym but al ho noure and profyte nor to the royalme of En glande/rather then to be ruled by the prowde duke of Irelande who neuer sawe ony thynge pertaynynge to honoure/nor neuer was in ony batayle. Thus euery man dyffered from other in the royalme of Englande/whiche trybula cyons were well knowen in Fraunce/wherfore they made this grete prouysyon to goo thyder with all theyr puyssaunce thynkynge to doo a grete feate/on the other syde/the prelates of en glande were in hatred one with another as the archebysshop of Cauntorbury who was of the Neueles blood/with the archebysshop of yor ke. And yet they were countrey men borne/but they hated mortally eche other bycause the lor de Neuell hadde the rule and gouernaunce of Northumbrelande and soo to the marches of Skotlande aboue the erle of Northumbrelan de and his chyldren/the lorde Henry and the lorde Raffe of Percy/whiche rule the lorde Ne ueilles brother had gotten hym/for he was one of the chefe aboute the kynge with the duke of Irelande.

¶Of the grete dyscordes that were in Englande after the brekynge vp of the frenshe armye/and how the gouernours about the kynge were constrayned by the comons of the good townes to make accomptes of suche mo ney as was come in to theyr handes the season that they ru led. Ca. lxxxii.

AS soone as the englysshmen knewe that the voyage by the see that the frenshmen sholde haue made beynge at Sluse was dasshed and broken. Then in Englande be gan dyuers murmuracyons

in sundry plates, And such as loued euyll rule rather then good, sayde, Where be nowe these grete entreprises and these valyaunt men of armes that wer in the dayes of kyng Edward the thyrd, and with the prynce hys son we were wont to go in to Fraunce and put backe our enmyes in such maner that non durst make battayle with vs, yf they dyde they wer soone discomforted.

O What a ded was that whē the noble king Edward arryued in Normandy, and in Constantyne and passed thrugh the royalme of Fraunce, and what goodly entreprise he achieued in waye, and after at Cressy he discomforted kynge Philyp and all the puyssaunce of Fraunce, and or he retourned he wan the towne of Calays But as nowe the knyghtes and men of warre in England doo none such feates, ¶ Also the prynce of Wales sone to this noble kyng, dyd he not take the Frenshe kynge John and discomfyted hys puissaunce at Poyters with a smal nombre of people agayn ste the people that kyng John hadde, In those dayes Englande was fered and doubted, and were spoken of thrugh all the world for y flour re of chyualry, but as nowe no man speketh of vs, for now ther is noo warre made, but that poore inhanes purses, therto euery man is enclyned, in Fraunce as nowe the kyng there is but a chyld and yet he hath done more agaynst vs then any of hys predecessours, And also he shewed grete courage to haue come in to England, the lette therof was not by hym, but by hys men. The tyme hath ben sene that yf suche an apparell of shyppes had ben made at Sluse they shold haue ben foughten wythall in theyr owne hauen and nowe the noble men of Englande are toyfull when they maye sytte at rest and suffre them in peas, but yet for all that they suffre not poore men to be in rest, but put them to busynes to paye money, The tyme hath ben that grete conquestes haue ben don in fraunce without payeng of any money, but suche ryches as hath ben gotten there it hath ben spred abrode in the royalme, wher is become the grete substaunces and tayles that hath ben gadered in thys royalme wyth the kynges rentes and accustomed reuenues, outher they haue lost it or ta ken fro them, it is behouable that it be knowen how the royalme of Englande is gouerned, and howe the kyng is ledd, it were not good that it shulde be longer, or it were knowen, for thys royalme of England is not soo ryche nor so puyssaunt to bere lyke charges as the royalme of Fraunce doth, ¶ Also it appereth well that we in thys royalme of england are febled of wyttes and of grace. We were wont to knowe euery thynge that was done in Fraunce a thre or foure monethes or the tale fell, wherby we myght conueyenely make prouysyon and resystence, but as nowe we knowe noo thynge But the French men knoweth all our secretes and counsayles, we can not tell in whome is the fawte, it wyll be knowen vpon a day. There be some pryuy traytours, and it were better it were knowen betymes then to late, for it maye be knowen soo late that it wyll be past remedy.

THus dyuersely me talked in England as well knyghtes and squyers as the comons soo that the royalme lay in a harde case and grete peryl. And the grete assembly that the kynge and hys vncles and hys counsayle hadde made wyth grete expence in dyuers maners to resyst the frenshe kyng beynge at Sluse redy to entre in to Englande, suche knyghtes and squyers, and other as were in a redynes wolde as then be payd of theyr wages, and so for that entente there was a parlyamente somoned to be holden at London by the nobles, prelates, and comons of Englande, and principally it was ordeyned that there sholde be reysed a grete tayle and subsydye thrughe out the royalme of England, the tyrde to bere out the poore. Thys parlyament was remoued to westmynstre, and thyder come all suche as were sent for, and many moo to here tydynges. ¶ There was the kynge and hys two vncles Edmund and Thomas with many other nobles of the royalme And amonge other thynges yt was sayd that in the kynges tresoure there was su staunce skante to mayntayne the kynges estate soberly. Wherfore they of hys counsayle sayd howe there must be leuyed a subsydye thrughe out all the royalme of Englande yf ii the costes and charges wolde be payde as hathe ben don for the defence of the royalme of England agaynst the frenshmen. To this agreed well they of the bysshoprych of Norwyche, and also the archebysshoprych of Caunterbury, and the countye of Essex, the countye of Hampton and Warthyke shyre, and the lande of y erle of Salysbury, they agreed sooner then they of serther

countreys they of the north and marches of Walles and of Cornewall al these rebelled and sayde, We haue not sene none of our enemyes come in to thys countrey, why shold we be grened and haue done no fawte, yes yes sayd some let the byshop of yorke be spoken withall and the kynges counsayle and the duke of Irlande who hath, ix. thousande frankes of the constable of fraunce for the redempcyon of Johan of Bretayne, kyngs money ought to be tourned to the comon profyte of all Englande, ye and spoke with syr Symon Burle, Syr Wyllyam Helmen, Syr Thomas Brande, Syr Robert Tryuylyen, and syr Johan Beauchampe who haue gouerned the kynge and the royalme, yf they make a good accompte of that they haue receyued and deliuer it, the comons shall sytte in rest, and euery thynge payde as it ought to be. ¶ When these wordes came a brode and to the herynge of the kynges vncles, they were right glade therof, for that made well for them, for all those before named were agaynste them. For they couldе bere noo rule in the courte for them. Wherfore they ayded the people in theyr opprysyons and sayd. These good men that thus speketh are well counsayled, in that they desyre to haue accompte, and wyl not paye any more money. For surely outher in the kynges treasure, or elles in theyr purses that gouerne hym ther must nedes be grete treasure. Thus by lytell and lytell multyplyed these wordes, and the people begonne to ware bolde to deny to pay any more money by reason that they sawe the kynges vncles of theyr accorde, and suffered them. ¶ And the archebyshoppe of Cauntorbury, the erle of Salysbury, the erle of Northumbrelande, and dyuers other lordes of Englande put of thys tare for that time and deferred theyr counsayle to Wrghelsalle after, at whych tyme they promysed to returne agayn, but the knyghtes and squyers suche as had thought to haue had money for the arrerages of theyr wages hadde noo thynge, wher fore they wer in displeasur with the kyng and hys counsayle. They were apeased as well as myght be, and euery man departed, the kynge take no leue of his vncles, nor they of hym.

¶ Then the kyng was counsayled to drawe in to the marches of Walles and ther to tary tyll he herd other tydynges, and soo he was content to doo, and departed from London without leue takyng of any man, and toke with hym all hys counsayle except the archebyshop of yorke who went backe in to his owne countrey, whiche was happy for hym, for I thinke yf he hadde ben with the other, he shold haue ben serued as they wer, as ye shall here after. But it is requysyte that I speke as well of fraunce as of Englande, for the matter requyreth it,

¶ How the constable of Fraunce and dyuers other lordes and squyers of the royalme apparelled grete prouysions to go in to Englande to wynne townes and castelles. Ca. lxxxiii.

And when season of somer was come and the tow moneth of May in the yer of our lorde god. M.CCC. foure score and. vii. In the same season that the duke of Lancastre was in Galyce, and conquered ther, and that the kyng of Portyngale with grete puyssaunce rode abrode in Castell without any withstandynge. Thenne was it ordeyned in Fraunce as ye haue herde before howe the constable of Fraunce with an armye, and the erle of sayne Poule, the lorde of Coucy and syr Johan of Vyen with another armye, the one at Lantygnyer in Bretayne, and the other at Harflewe in Normandy shold the same season make a voyage in to englande with a. vi. thousand men of armes and twoo thousande crosse bowes and. vi. thousande other men of warre, and it was ordeyned that none shold passe the see to goo in to Englande without he were well armed, and prouysion of vytayles for the spare of thre monethes with other prouysyon of hay & oates for theyr horses & a day was prefyxed amonge the capytaynes when they shoulde depart, and were determyned to lande in englande in two hauens at Douer, and at Orwell, thus the daye approched of theyr departure. ¶ Lantrygnyer prouysyon was made and put in to the shyppes for them that sholde passe from thens, and in lyke wyse was done at Harflew, and euery man of them was payde theyr wages for. xv. dayes. This iourney was soo farre forwarde, that it was

thought it could not haue ben broken. ¶ Nor also it brake not by noo cause of the capytaines that were ordeyned to goo in that voyag, But it broke by another incydent and by a meruayllous matter that fell in Bretayne wher with the Frensshe kynge and his counsayl were sore displeased, but they could not amende it, wher fore it behoued them wysely to dyssymule the matter for it was no tyme then to remedy it. ¶ Also other tydynges came vnto the Frensh kyng out of the partyes of Almayne as I shall shew you herafter when tyme and place shall requyre it. But fyrst we wyll speke of the matters of Bretayn before them of Almayne. for they of Bretayn fell fyrst, and were worst reputed, thoughe other coste more.

IF I sholde saye that suche matters fell in that season and not open clerely the mater whych was grete, perylous and horryble, it myght be a cronycle, but noo hystory. I myght let it ouerpasse yf I lyst, but I wyll not doo soo. I shall declare the case syth god hathe gyuen me the knowledge ther of, and tyme and leysure to cronycle the matter at lengthe. ¶ Ye haue here her before in dyuers places in thys hystory how syr John of Mountfort named duke of Bretayne, and surely so he was by conquest and not by ryght lyn how be it al wayes he mayntayned the warre and oppynyon of the kyng of England and of hys chyldren agaynst the frensshe kyng. Also he had good cause soo to doo on his partye, for without the ayd of englande he hadde not attayned as he dyd nother before Aroy nor in other places. Also ye haue herd her before how the duke of Bretayne coude not laue his entente of all the nobles of his countrey, nor of all the good townes specyally of syr Bertrand of Clesquy as longe as he lyued, or of syr Olyuer of Clysson constable of Fraunce, nor of the lordes de la Vale, and of Beaumanoyr, nor the lorde of Rale, of Dynyonne, the vycount of Rohan, nor of the lorde of Rochfort, for vnder as these lordes enclyned vnto Bretayn folowed. They were content to take parte with their lord the duke agaynst all maner of men except agaynst the crowne of Fraunce, And surely I can not se nor ymagyne by what wayes, but that the Bretons principally regarded euer the honoure of Fraunce, it may well apper by that that is wrytten her before in thys hystory. I saye nat thys by noo torrupcyon nor fauour that I haue to therle Guy of Bloys who hath ben good lord vnto me, and I haue hadde moch profyte by hym who was nephew and next to the erle Loys of Bloys brother germayn to sayntCharles of Bloys, and as long as he lyued he was duke of Bretayn. Truely I saye not this for no cause but all onely to declare the trouth And also the gentyll prynce and erle that hath caused me to wryte thys story wold in no wyse that I sholde swarue from the trouth.

NOwe to retourne to our purpose ye knowe wel as long as duke Johan of Bretayne lyued he could neuer attain to haue all his men in euery poynt to agree to hys oppynyons. And he for fered them lest at the last they sholde haue taken hym and put hym in prysson in Fraunce. Wherfore he departed out of Bretayn and went in to England with al hys household, and the lady hys wyfe Jahan of Holand doughter somtyme of the good knyght syr Thomas Holand, and thus a season he became seruaunt to kynge Richarde of Englande, and afterwarde he went in to Flaunders to therle of Bloys whowas hys cosyngermayne and ther taryed more then a yere and an halfe.

¶ Fynally they of hys owne countrey sent for hym, and so he by good accorde thyder he went. ¶ And when he came in to his countrey there were certayne townes closed styll agaynst hym and rebelled, and specyally the cyte of Nauntes. But all his lordes, knyghtes and prelates were all of his accorde except the lordes before rehersed, and to haue the seygnory of them, and to gete the fauoure and good wyll of the good townes and cytyes, and to put the Frensshe kynges in more fere because he wold ouer pyll them with taxes and subsydyes as they dyd in Fraunce and in Pycardye whiche they wolde not suffre in Bretayn. Therfore he sente vnto the kyng of england for socour & ayd of men of warre and archers, promysynge that yf the kynge of Englande wolde come in to Bretayne or elles one of hys vncles with a grete puyssaunce of men of armes and of archers howe that hys countrey of Bretayne sholde be openned redy to receyue hym and hys company. ¶ The kyng of England and hys counsayle were gladde of those tydynges and thought the good and concluded to sende thyder them prouysyon was made, and thyder was sente therle

of Buckyngham with.iiii. M. men of armes and.xvi.M. archers who aryued at Calays, and paſſed throughe the royalme of Fraunce without any reſyſtence as it hathe ben shewed here before demaundyng nor thyng but ba taple, and they came in to Bzetayne truſtyng to haue founde the countrey redy open for them to receyue and to refreſſhe them, for ſurly they had made a longe voyage, How be it they founde it contrary diſpoſed, for the duke of Bzetayne was foo ledde by his men and ſo wyſely entreated that they made a peas bytwene hym and the ponge Charles kynge as then in Fraunce, but wyth kyng Charles hys fader he could neuer haue peas he hated hym ſoo ſore, The duke of Bozgoyn who was on of the cheſe gouernours in the royalme of Fraunce ayded gre ſely to make this peas, he was ſo deſyzed by the lady hys wyfe bycauſe the duke of Bzetayne was nere of theyr lygnage, ſoo he was fayne to byeke all hys promyſes with the Engliſſhmen for he could not be ſuffred to accompliſſhe hys couenaunt, for the Bzetons wolde not conſent to yelde them to the kynge of Englande to ma ke warre agayneſt Fraunce, they ſayd they wer neuer of that oppynyon nor neuer wolde be, ſo that it behoued the Engliſſhmen to take theyr lodgynges in ꝑ marchs of wannes wher theyr ſuffered as moch pouerte as euer dyd men for one tyme, and ſpecyally theyr hozſes dyed for hunger and pouerte, and ſoo in the tyme of ſo mer they departed out of Bzetayn as euyll con tente with the duke of Bzetayne as myght be, and not without a cauſe, And ſpecyally there le of Buckyngham and the barons of Englan de that wer in hys compeny, and when they we re retourned in to Englande they made grete complayntes to the kynge and to the duke of Lancaſtre and his counſayle, And then it was deuyſed and ordeyned that John of Bzetayne ſholde be deliuered, and to bzynge hym wyth puyſſance in to Bzetayne to make warre the re agayneſt the duke of Bzetayne, and the En gliſſhmen ſayd how ſyr Iehan of Mountfor de knowe well how they had put hym in poſ ſeſſyon of the ſeygnozy of Bzetayne, for without vs he hadde neuer come therto, And nowe to pray vs this foloyng to cauſe vs to trauayle our bodyes and to ſpend the kynges treaſoure, it behoueth vs to ſhewe hym his fawtes. And we can not better be reuenged then to deliuer hys aduerſary and to bzynge hym in to Bzetayne, For all the countrey wyll deliuer hym townes Cyteys, and foztreſſes, and put the other duke clene that thus hath mocked and dyſceyued hs

¶ Thus the Engliſſhe counſayle wer all of one accozde, and then John of Bzetayne was bzought in to the kynges preſence, and there it was shewed hym how they would make hym duke of Bzetayn and recouer for hym all hys herytag of Bzetayn. And he ſholde haue to his wyfe the lady Blaunch of Lancaſtre, ſo that he wold hold the duchy of Bzetayn in fayth and homag of the kyng of England ꝑ wheych poynt he vtterly refuſed. But to take the dukes dough ter in maryage he was contente, But to ſwer to be agayuſt the crown of fraunce in no wyſe he wold conſente, but rather to abyde in pryſon all hys lyfe.

¶ When the kyng and his counſayle ſawe that, they withdrew the grace that they hadde thought to haue ſhewed to hym and thenne he was delyuered in to the kepyng of ſyr Johan Hambzetycourte as ye haue herd before, I haue made as nowe relacyon of all theſe matters by cauſe of the incydentes that folowed after and appered by the duke of Bze tayne, for the duke knew well how he was grete ly out of the fauour of the noble men of the roy alme of England, and alſo of the comons ther, And he ymagened that the hatred that they bare to hym was for the voyage that the erle of Buckyngham hadde made throgh Fraunce to come in to Bzetayne, weenyng to haue found the duke ther and countrey open agayuſt them as the duke of Bzetayn hadde promyſed which the Engliſſhmen found contrary. ¶ Alſo he ſa we well how the kynge of England hadde not wryten vnto hym ſoo emyably as he hadde don often tymes before, And ſpecyally as he hadde done before the erle of Buckyngham voyage. ¶ And alſo he doubted that the kyng of Eng land ſholde deliuer Iehan of Bzetayn to the entente to make hym warre. ¶ Thenne the duke caſte hys ymaginacyon howe he myght fynd remedy in thys matter, and to bzynge it in to a good poynt. And to doo the entent ſo ſecret ly that the Engliſſh men ſhould be well content and pleaſed with hym. For he knew well the man in the worlde whome the Engliſſhmen hated moſt was ſyr Oliuer of Clyſſon conſtabl of fraunce. For in dede ſyr Oliuer of Clyſſon euer ſtudyed nyght and daye how he myght doo diſpleaſur to ꝑ Engliſſhe men, and ꝑ duke knewe ryght well of the armye that was made

to goo in to Englande bothe at Hartlewr and at Lentrygnyer/ then he ſayd vnto hymſelfe to the entente to pleaſe the Engliſſhe men and to ſhewe that he dyd not ſet moche by the Frenſſhe men/ he founde the meanes to breke that voyage not in commaundynge his men of Bretayne on payne of leſynge of theyr herytage not to go in to Englande/ nor to ayde the frenſſhe partye this he dyd not/ but he ſhewed outwardly that the warre was for hym/ but he dyd his entrepryſe more couertly/ he caſte in his ymagynacyon that he myght not doo more honourably/ nor more to his profyte/ then to take the conſtable of Fraunce pryſoner or elles to ſlee hym/ therby he knewe well he ſholde pleaſe the Engliſſhe men/ for they hated hym/ for he thought yf he were out of the waye he cared not for the reſydue of his lygnage/ for he knewe well they were not able to make hym warre/ for the conſtable hadde but two doughters/ the one was maryed vnto Johñ of Bretayne/ and the other doughter was maryded vnto the erle of Rohans ſone/ he thought to withſtande them wel ynoughe and all his lygnage/ for yf he hadde ſlayne hym he ſayd he hadde ſlayne but a baron and that there were none that wolde make hym ony warre for his ſake.

Chowe the duke of Bretayne ſente for all his lordes and knyghtes to come to counſayle vnto wannes and after counſayle he deſyred the conſtable to goo and ſe his caſtell of Ermyne/ and howe he toke hym there pryſoner/ and the lorde of Beaumanoyre with hym. Ca. lxxxiii.

ON this forſayd ymagynacyon the duke of Bretayne reſted/ and to come to his entente he ſomoned his counſayle to come to Wannes/ and deſyred all the lordes and knyghtes of Bretayne effectuouſly for to come thyder/ and he dyd ſende out his letters vnto them/ and ſpecyally he requyred ſyr Olyuere of Clyſſon Conſtable of Fraunce that he ſholde not fayle but for to be there/ ſayenge howe he wolde gladyer ſe hym then ony other. The conſtable wolde not excuſe hymſelfe bycauſe the duke of Bretayne was his naturall lorde/ and was gladde to gaue his good wyll/ and ſoo he came to Wannes/ and ſoo dydde a grete nombre of other lordes of Bretayne. ¶ This counſayle was longe and many matters debated therin touchynge the duke and his countrey without ony worde ſpekynge of the voyage that they were in purpoſe to make in to Englande. The duke dyſſymuled the matter. This counſayle was in the eyte of Wannes in a caſtell called the Hyote.

¶ The duke made all the lordes a grete dyner/ and feſte them with fayre louynge wordes tyll it was nere nyght/ and then they retourned to theyr lodgynges in to the ſubbarbes without the eyte. And the conſtable of Fraunce to pleaſe the knyghtes and ſquyers of Bretayne he deſyred them all the nexte daye to dyne with hym ſome dyd ſoo and ſome departed to theyr owne howſes to take leue of theyr wyues & parentes/ for the conſtable was purpoſed as ſoone as he departed thens ſtrayght to goo vnto his naupe at Lentrygnyer/ the duke of Bretayne knewe it tyght well/ but ſpake noo worde therof makynge ſemblaunte as thoughe he knewe noo thynge. Soo this dyner ended where as were the mooſt parte of the barons of Bretayne/ and ſodaynly vnto them came the duke of Bretayne tyght amorouſly by ſemynge/ but he thought otherwyſe in his harte. None knewe therof but ſuche as he hadde diſcouered his mynde vnto. As ſoone as he entred in to the conſtables lodgynge/ ſome ſayd/ beholde here cometh the duke/ then euery man rote as reaſon was and ſwetely receyued hym as they ought for to doo theyr lorde/ and he delte tyght getyly and he ſate downe amonge them and ete and dranke/ and kepte good company and ſhewed them more tokens of loue then euer he dydde before/ and he ſayd vnto them/ fayre lordes my louers and frendes/ god ſende you well to goo and well to come agayne/ and ſende you ioye/ and that you maye doo ſuche dedes of armes as maye pleaſe you/ and that it maye be honourable vnto you all/ and when they herde theſe ſwete wordes of the duke/ they all anſwered and ſayd. Syr we thanke you/ and god rewarde you of your grete kyndneſſe that it pleaſeth you to come and ſe vs at our departynge.

This same season the duke of Bretayne was makynge of a Castell nere to Wannes called the castell of Ermyne the whiche as then was nere furnysshed and to the entente to attrappe the constable/there he sayd vnto hym and vnto the lorde de la vale and to the lorde of Beawmanoyre and to other lordes that were there. Syrs I requyre you dyre departe to come and se my newe castell of Ermyne/ ye shall se howe I haue deuysed it/ and also howe I purpose for to doo. ¶ They all agreed vnto hym/ bycause they sawe hym come soo louyng ly amonge them/ for they thought none euyll. And soo the moost parte of them mounted on theyr horses and rode forth with the duke to the castel of Ermyne. Then the duke/ the constable the lorde de la vale/ and the lorde of Beawmanoyre and dyuers other lordes and knyghtes alyghted of theyr horses and entred in to the castell/ and thre duke ledde the constable by ye hande fro chambre to chambre and in to euery house of offyce and made them drynke in the seller. Then the duke brought them to the chefe tower and at the dore therof he sayd to the constable. Syr Olyuere I knowe noo man on this syde the see that knoweth more in buyldynge then ye doo/ wherfore I praye you mounte vp the stayres and beholde the buyldynge of the towre/ yf it be well I am contente/ and yf ony thynge be amysse/ it shall be refourmed after your deuyse/ ye constable thynkynge none euyll sayd. Syr with right a good wyl please it you to goo before and I shall folowe you/ nayr syr sayd the duke goo your waye vp alone and in the meane tyme I wyll talke with the lorde de la vale/ the constable wente vp the stayres and when he was aboue and passe the fyrste stage/ there were mē in a chābre layde in a buffhment and they opened the dore/ and some wente downe and dyd shote the dore bynethe and the other wente vp all armed to the constable/ there they toke and ledde hym in to a chambre and fetered hym with .iii. bolres of yron/ and sayd to hym/ Syr pardon vs for we must nedes do that we do/ we be thus commaunded by our lorde the duke of Bretayne/ yf ye constable were abasshed at that tyme it was no meruayle.

The cōstable ought not to haue grete meruayle of ye chaunce for after that the displeasure fell bytwene the duke and hym/ for ony letters that the duke coulde wryte to hym or for ony desyre or saufconduyte to come and goo saufely/ yet for all that the constable wolde neuer come in the dukes presence/ for he durste not trust hym/ and nowe he is come to his myssortune/ for he founde the duke in grete displeasure with hym/ and that was well sene/ and when the lorde de la vale begynge bynethe at the stayre foote sawe the dore closed/ his blood began to trymble and had grete fere of his broder and beheld the duke who wared pale and grene as a lefe/ then he knewe that the matter wente amysse and sayd. A syr for goddes sake haue mercy/ what wyll you do/ take none euyll wyll agaynst the constable/ syr sayd the duke/ take ye your horse and departe/ ye maye goo when ye wyll/ I knowe well ynoughe what I haue to do. Syr sayd the lorde de la vale I wyll not departe hens without I haue my broder the constable with me/ with those wordes there came vnto them the lorde of Beawmanoyre whome the duke also hated/ and he in lyke wyse demaūded to haue the constable. Then the duke drewe his dagger and came vnto hym and sayd. Beawmanoyre wylte thou be in the same poynte as thy mayster is in. Syr sayd he I trust my mayster is in good case/ well sayd the duke/ I demaunde of the yf thou wylte be in lyke case. ye syr sayd he. Thenne the duke toke his dagger by the poynte and sayd/ yf thou wylte be in lyke case it behoueth the to put out one of thyne eyen. The lorde of Beawmanoyre sawe well the matter wente not well and sawe the duke ware pale for angre. Then he kneled downe on his knee and sayd. Syr I repute soo grete noblenes in you that I trust in god and you that ye wyll doo vs right/ we be at your mercy/ and we are cōme hyder at your requeste/ we trust ye wyll not dyshonour youreselfe to accomplysshe ony euyll wyll that ye haue to vs/ it sholde be a straunge noueite. Well sayd the duke come on thy waye/ for thou shalte haue noo more nor no lesse then he shall haue. Soo he was ledde in to another chambre and fetered also with thre payre of yrons/ yf he were abasshed he hadde a grete cause/ for he perceyued well the duke loued hym but lytell/ nor the constable also/ but then he had no remedy.

Anone tydynges spredde ouer the castell and also the towne howe that the constable of Fraunce and the lorde of Beawmanoyre and also the lorde de la Vale were taken prysoners. And howe the lorde de la Vale

nyght departe when he wolde / for the duke demaunded no thynge of hym / wherof the people hadde grete meruayle and also grete cause why / for euery man sayd howe the duke wolde put them bothe to dethe / he hated them so mortally. The duke was gretely blamed of all knyghtes and squyers that herde therof / and they sayd there was neuer a gretter dyssymacyon on ony pryncs then was on the duke of Bretayne seynge that he had desyred the constable to dyne with hym and to se his house / and to make hym good chere and soo to take hym prysoner / they sayd they neuer herde of cale lyke / wherfore he was infamed and neuer man more dyshonoured / nor therby noo man sholde trust in ony pryncs dyth the duke had dysceyued these noble men / what wyll the frenssh kynge say when he knoweth this / for by this his voyage in to Englande is broken / there was neuer soo grete a shame ymagyned / but nowe the duke shewerth what laye in his harte / we trowe there was neuer seene in Bretayne cale lyke nor in none other place / yf a poore knyght had done suche a dede he were dyshonoured for euer / in whom sholde a man trust but in his lorde / and ỳ lorde sholde mayntayne hym in his ryght and doo hym Justyce / who shall make correccyon of this dede / none but the frenssh kynge / nowe ỳ duke shewerth playnly howe he is on the englyssh parte & wyll susteyne and holde with the oppynyon of the kynge of Englande / syth he hath thus broken the voyage by the see that sholde haue gone in to Englande / What shall become nowe of the knyghtes and squyers of Bretayne when they shall here these tydynges nothynge but in contynent come fro theyr houses & lay syege to the castell of Jermyne and close the duke within & there tary tyll they haue taken hym outher dede or quycke and lede hym lyke a false pryncs to the frenssh kynge. Thus the knyghtes and squyers aboute the marches of Wannes spake and comoned togyder / and suche as were come thyder to that counsayle with the sayd lordes / & they were in grete doubte that the duke wolde put them to dethe / then some other sayd / as for the lorde de la Vale is in no iopardy / he is soo wyse that he wyll tempre the duke in all his busynes / and truely so he dyd / for and he had not ben the constable had ben dede the fyrst nyght if he had had a. M. dyues.

IT ought to be dyscreued that syr Olyuer of Clysson was not at his ease when he sawe hymselfe soo taken and attrapped / and fetered and kepte with .xxx. persones / and hadde noo comforte by them / for they knewe not the wyll of theyr lorde / soo that he reckened hymselfe but as a dede man / and also he hadde noo hope to lyue tyll the nexte daye / and surely he was in grete daungere / for .iii. tymes he was vnfetered and brought to haue ben beheded or elles drowned / and surely so he had ben yf the lorde de la vale had not ben / but when this lorde de la vale herde the dukes strayte comaundement to put hym to dethe / he kneled downe before hym lyftynge vp his handes sore weppynge and sayd syr for goddes sake take mercy / aduyse you shewe not your cruelte agaynst the constable / he hath deserued no dethe / syr of your grace that it may please you to shewe me the cause of your dysplcasure agaynst hym / and syr I swere vnto you ony trespace that he hath done he shall make you suche amendes with his body and goodes / or elles I for hym as ye yourselfe shall demaunde or Judge / syr remembre you howe in your yongth ye .ii. were companyons togyder and brought vp bothe in one house with the duke of Lancastre who was soo gentyll a pryncs that there was none lyke hym. Also syr remembre howe before his peas was made with the frenssh kynge alwayes he truely serued you / he ayded you to recouer your heryttage / ye haue alwayes founde in hym good comforte and counsayle / yf ye be now moued or enfourmed agaynste hym otherwyse then reason sholde requyre yet he hathe not deserued dethe / syr de la vale sayd the duke let me haue my wyll / for Olyuer of Clysson hath soo often tymes dysplcased me / and nowe is the houre come that I maye shewe hym my dysplcasure. Wherfore departe youre hens and let me shewe my cruelte / for I wyll he shall dye. I syr sayd the lorde de la vale / refrayne your cuyll wyll and moderate your courage and regarde to reason / for yf ye putt ym to dethe there was neuer pryncs soo dyshonoured as ye shall be / there shall not be in Bretayne knyght nor squyer eyte nor castell nor good towne / nor noo man but he shall hate you to the dethe / and doo that they can to dysenheryte you / Nor the kynge of Englande nor his counsayle shall gyue you no thanke therfore / syr wyl you lese your selfe for the dethe of one man / syr tourne your ymagynacyon / for this thought is noo thynge worth but dyshonourable / that ye sholde cause suche an honourable knyght as syr Olyuere of Clysson is to dye compynge vnto you at your owne desyre. Surely syr this dede sholde be

treason and grete reproche bothe before god & the worlde/to desyre hym thus to dyner and he compynge to you/and after that ye went to hym in to the towne desyrynge hym to se your newe buyldynges/and he obeyed in euery thynge to you & dranke of your wyne/and is this ye grete loue that ye shewed hym / to put hym to dethe/ there was neuer soo grete blame layde to ony lorde as shall be layde to you/all ye worlde shal reproche you and hate you mortally & be glad to make you warre. But syr I shall shewe you what ye shall do sythe ye soo sore hate hym / put hym to raunsome to a grete some of florynes this ye may well do/and if he holde outher towne or castell that sholde be yours demaunde thē agayne and ye shall haue them / and loke what couenaunt ye make with hym I shall become pledge therfore / and when the duke herde the lorde de la vale speke so reasonably and prested so sore on hym/as in a maner all that nyght he wolde not departe from hym/then the duke studyed a lytell and somwhat restrayned his euyll wyll / and at last spake and sayd / syr de la vale ye be a good meane for hym/howbeit I wyl ye knowe syr Olyuer of Clysson is the man in the worlde that I most hate / for and ye were not he sholde not skape without dethe this same nyght/your wordes hath saued hym / go to hym & demaunde yf he wyll paye to me .C.M. frankes incontynente/for I wyll nother haue hym nor you to pledge nor nothynge elles but the redy money/and beyde that to yelde to me .iii. castelles and a towne suche as I shall name / the castell of Brech/the castel of Josselyn/the castel of blancke and the towne of Jugon and put me in possessyon of them or my deputyes / this done I shall delyuer hym to you/this shal be done sayd the lorde de la vale / and syr I thanke you that ye wyl thus do at my desyre/and syr be you sure all that ye haue demaunded shall be done/ these castelles & towne delyuered & these .C.M frankes payde or he departe.

Then the lorde de la vale was gretely reioyced when he sawe the constable out of perill of deth. Then the towre dore was opened/and ye lorde de la vale mounted vp & came there as ye constable was lyenge sore abasshed for he loked for nothynge but for dethe / & when he sawe the lorde de la vale his herte reuyued & thought there was some treatye in hande. Then the lorde de la vale sayd to them that were there by/syrs take of his yrons ye I maye speke with hym fro the duke and sayd to hym/syr howe say you wyll you do that I shall shewe you/ye truely syr sayd the constable / then his yrons were taken of/and the lorde de la vale drewe hym a parte and sayd. Fayre broder with grete payne and moche busynes I haue saued your lyfe and made your ende/but ye must pay or ye departe hens in redy money .C.M. frankes and more ouer to yelde vp to the duke .iii. castelles and ye towne of Jugon/otherwyse ye can haue no delyueraunce/then the constable sayd I wyll not refuse ye bargayne/but who shall go to Clysson to fetche this money/fayre broder sayd the constable I thynke ye must be fayne to go therfore Naye syr not so sayd the lorde de la vale/ for I haue promysed neuer to departe out of this castell tyll I haue you with me/ for I knowe wel the duke is wyght cruell / and peraduenture in myne absence wyll repente hym by some lyght informacyon and so then al were lost/ why who shall go then sayd the constable/ syr sayd he the lorde of Beawmanoyr shall goo/ he is here in prysson as wel as ye be/he shal make al this prouysyon/that is well sayd sayd the constable/go your waye downe/ and ordeyne euery thynge as ye lyst.

Howe the constable of Fraunce was delyuered at the requeste of the lorde de la vale payenge certayne raunsome/and howe the constable delyuered to the duke .iii. castelles and a towne and payde .C.M. frankes. Ca. lxxxv.

Thus the lorde de la vale went downe of the towre to ye duke who was goynge to bed / for of all that nyght he had not slepte/then the lorde de la vale kneled downe and sayd/syr ye shall haue al your demaunde/but syr ye must delyuer the lorde of Beawmanoyr that he maye speke with ye constable/for he must go and fetche this raunsome and put your men in possessyon of the castelles that ye desyre to haue/ wel sayd the duke delyuer them out of prysson and put them into a chambre/& be you the meane of theyr treatye / for I wyll not se them/and retourne agayne to me when I haue slepte and I wyll speke with you Then ye lorde de la vale yssued out of the chambre and went with two knyghtes thyder where

as the lorde of Beawmanoyre was in pryſon/ who was gretely abaſſhed and doubted ſore the dethe/he ferred when he herde the dore open that they were come to haue put hym to dethe/ But when he ſawe the lorde de la vale entre his harte reuyued/ and more when he herde hym ſpeke ſayenge/ſyr of Beawmanoyre your delyuerance is made/wherfore ye maye be gladde then his fetters were taken of/ and ſo he wente in to another chambre/ and then the conſtable was alſo brought thyder/ and mete and wyne was broughte to them/ for all the ſeruauntes of the houſe were gladde of theyr delyuerance/ for they were ſory of that caſe/howbeit they myght fynde no remedy/ it behoued them to obey theyr mayſters commaundement in ryght or in wronge/ and aſſoone as the caſtell gate was ſhote and the brydge drawen/ there entred nor yſſued nother man nor woman/ for the keyes were in the dukes chambre/ and he ſlepte tyll it was .iii. of the clocke/ and the knyghtes & ſquyers that were without abydynge for theyr mayſters were ſore abaſſhed and ſayd. Nowe our ſeaſon and voyage by the ſee is loſt and broken Conſtable what myſhap is fallen to you what counſayle hath diſceyued you/ the counſayle that was made and aſſembled at Wannes was made for none other entente but to attrappe you/ ye were wonte to be of the oppynyon that yf the duke had ſente for you and hadde made you a. M. aſſuraunces/ yet ye wolde not haue gone nor come at his commaundement/ ye doubted hym ſo ſore/ and nowe ye wente ſymply at his deſyre/ euery man thynghe the duchy of Bretayne complayned for the conſtable and wyſt not what to do nor ſay/ and all knyghtes and ſquyers ſayd/ what do we here/ why do we not go and encloſe the duke in his caſtel of Ermyne/ and yf he haue ſlayne the conſtable/ ſerue hym in lyke maner/ & yf he kepe hym in pryſon let vs doo ſo that we maye haue hym agayne/ there fell nauer ſuche a myſchefe in Bretayne/ thus one & other ſayd/ But there were none that ſtyred forwarde but tarryed to here other newes. Thus tydynges ſpred abrode ſoo that within two dayes it was at Parys/ wher with the kynge and his vncles the duke of Berrey and the duke of Borgoyne had grete meruayle/ as then the duke of Borbon was gone to Iuygnyon to go in to Caſtell and had ſene the pope Clement on his way/ there tydynges came to hym as he was at Lyonſure le Rone/ and with hym the erle of Sauoy.

And the erle of Saynt Poule/ the lorde of Coucy and admyrall of fraunce beynge at Harfleme redy to haue entred in to the ſee towarde theyr voyage when they herde howe the duke of Bretayne hadde taken the conſtable of fraunce pryſoner in his caſtell of Ermyne/ and the lorde de la vale and the lorde of Beawmanoyre with hym. And they that brought thoſe tydynges ſayd howe the bruyte ranne in Bretayne howe the duke of Bretayne hadde putte to dethe the conſtable of Fraunce/ and the lorde of Beawmanoyre. Theſe were harde tydynges to theſe lordes/ and they ſayd. Nowe our voyage is broken/ lette vs gyue leue to all our men of warre to departe and let vs goo to Parys to the kynge and ſe what he wyll do/ then the admyrall ſayd/ it is good we do ſoo/ but let not our men departe/ peraduenture the kynge wyll ſende them to ſome other parte/ may happen into Caſtell for the duke of Borbon is goynge thyder/ or elles peraduenture he wyl ſende them into Bretayne to make warre agayuſt the duke. thynke you that the frenſſhe kynge wyl ſuffre that matter thus to ouerpas. Nay ſurely for the kyng ſhal receyue by this bargayne domage to the ſome of .ii.C.M. floreynes beſyde the loſſe and hurte that is done to his conſtable/ yf he ſcape the lyke was there euer caſe lyke. Thus the kynge to bere his voyage who was in good mynde to haue done domage to his enemyes. Let vs tarry here ſtyll a .ii. or .iii. dayes/ and peraduenture we ſhall here ſome other tydynges out of fraunce or out of Bretayne.

Howe wrytynges were made at the duke of Bretaynes deuyſe/ for the conſtable to rendre his towne and caſtelles to the duke/ and to his heyres for euer/ and howe they were delyuered to the duke. Ca. lxxxvi.

Nowe let vs ſpeke a lytell of the duke of Bretayne who when he hadde ſlepte roſe and made hym redy/ & then he ſente for the lorde de la vale who came to hym/ & there they were togyder a longe ſpace. Fynally letters were wryten accordynge to the dukes wyll/ makynge mencyon

the constable syr Olyuer of Clysson renounced clene his tytle for euer of the sayd towne and castell and yelded them purely to the duke of Bretayne and to his heyres for euer / and that these wrytynges shulde be permanent without ony repell / and then ꝑ lorde of Beawmanoyr was ordeyned by the constable to goo to these castelles / and to cause them that had the rule of them to departe thens / and to put in possessyon ꝑ dukes men / and beside that to leuy in redy money a.C.M. frankes to pay to the duke. When all this was concluded the gates of the castell was opened / and the lorde of Beawmanoyr yssued out charged and ordeyned by ꝑ constable to accomplysshe all these ordenaunces / and he was desyred to make al the dylygence that myght be And with hym wente seruauntes of the dukes / & noysed as they wente howe the constable was sure of his lyfe / and was put to raunsome / all suche as loued hym knyghtes and squyers were glad therof and so therby sate styll / for they were determyned to haue gone and layde syege to the castell of Ermyne and haue cloked the duke therin / they neuer dyd thynge that they wolde haue ben gladder of. Soo these tydynges came abrode with the wynde / so that the lordes and knyghtes beyng at Harflewe herde therof, and had certayne knowledge that the constable had ben deed and the lorde de la vale had not ben / & they sayd as for the delyueraunce of his towne and castelles he shall recouer them agayne / or elles other at tyme & leysure / the frenshe kynge hath ynowe for hym yf he nede. Nowe we maye departe fro hens / our voyage is broken let vs gyue our men leue to departe / and let vs goo to Parys and lerne tydynges there / for we here saye that all suche as were at Lentrygnyer are countermaunded / ꝑ whiche is a sygne that we shal go no where at this season / thus they gaue lycence to al theyr men of warre to departe and themselfe departed towarde Parys where the kynge was.

The lorde of Beawmanoyr dyd so moche that within .iiii. dayes he had set the duke of Bretaynes seruauntes in possessyon of the forsayd castelles and towne of Jugon / and after he payde the. C.M. frankes for the constables raunsome there as the duke commaunded When all was done the lorde de la vale sayd to ꝑ duke / syr ye haue nowe that you demaunded the. C M. frankes the towne of Jugon / the castell of Bourcke and the whyte castell of Josselyn / therfore syr nowe delyuer me the constable I am contente sayd the duke let hym goo when he wyll I gyue hym leue / thus ꝑ constable was delyuered and he and the lorde de la vale departed fro the castell of Ermyne / when they were abrode in the feldes / ꝑ constable made no longe tarynge in Bretayne / but mounted on a good horse and his page on another and so rode that within two dayes he came to Paris and alyght at his owne howse and then wente to the castel of Lowre to the kynge & his vncles the duke of Berrey and of Borgoyne / his men folowed after hym at theyr leysure / the kynge knewe of his delyueraunce / but he knewe not that he was so nere / and was glad when he herde therof and caused the chambre dores to be set open agaynst hym and so he came in to the kynges presence & kneled downe before hym and sayd. Ryght redoubted lorde / your father whome god pardon made me constable of Fraunce / whiche offyce to my power I haue well and truely exercysed and yf there be ony excepte your grace and my lordes your vncles that wyll saye that I haue not acquyted myselfe truely or done ony thyng contrary to the crowne of fraunce I am here redy to cast my gage in that quarell / the kynge nor none other made none answere to those wordes / then he sayd further / ryght dere syr and noble kynge it fortuned in Bretayne in doynge of myne offyce / the duke of Bretayne toke me and helde me in his castell of Ermyne / and wolde haue put me to deth without reason by reason of his yers courage / and god had not ben and the lorde de la vale / so that I was constrayned yf I wolde be delyuered out of his handes / to delyuer to hym a towne of myne in Bretayne and iii. castelles / and the some of a.C.M. frankes / Wherfore ryght dere syr and noble kynge the blame and domage that the duke of Bretayne hath done gretely regardeth your mageste for all for ꝑ voyage that I and my company shulde haue made by the see is broken / Wherfore syr I yelde vp the offyce of the constablehyp / syr prouyde for another suche as shall please you / for I wyll noo more bere the charge therof / I sholde haue none honoure to do it. Constable sayd the kynge we knowe well that ye haue hurte and domage and is a thynge gretely to the prejudyce to our royalme. We wyll incontynente sende for the peres of Fraunce to se what shall be best to be done in this case / therfore take ye no thought for ye shal haue ryght and reason. ¶ Then the kynge toke the constable by the hande and reysed hym vp and sayd. Constable we wyl not that ye departe from your offyce in this maner

But we wyll that ye kepe it tyll we take other counsayle. Then the constable kneled downe agayne and sayd. Syr this matter toucheth me soo nere that I cannot wele it. The offyce is grete/for I must speke and answere euery man & I am so troubled that I can answere no man. Wherfore syr I requyre your grace to prouyde for another for a season/and I shall alwayes be redy at your commaundement/(syr sayd the duke of Bourgoyne he offereth ynoughe ye shall take aduyse/it is true sayd the kynge. Then the constable arose and wente to the duke of Berre and to the duke of Bourgoyne and aduysed to shewe them his busynes/and to enforme them truely all the matter/leynge the cause touched them greatly in that they had the gouernynge of the royalme/but in spekynge with them and herynge the hole matter/they perceyued ye matter touched not them soo sore as he made of/soo that fynally they blamed hym for goynge to Wannes/sayenge to hym/sythe your nauy was redy and that knyghtes and squyers tarryed for you at Lentrygnyer. ¶ And also when ye were at Wannes and habde dyned with the duke and retourned agayne to your castell of Bourre/what had you then ony thynge to do to tarry there ony longer nor to goo agayne to the duke to the castell of Etmyne. Syr sayd the constable he shewed me soo fayre semblaunt that I durst not refuse it. Constable sayd the duke of Bourgoyne/in fayre semblauntes are grete deceptyons/I repute you more subtel then I take you nowe/go your way/ye matter shall do well ynoughe/we shall regarde it at leysure. Then the constable perceyued well that these lordes were hasty and ruder to hym then the kynge was. Soo he departed and wente to his owne lodgynge/and thyder came to hym certayne of the lordes of the parlyament to se hym and sayd to hym that the matter sholde doo right well/and also there came to hym to counsayle hym the erle of saynt Poule/the lorde of Coucy and the admyrall of Fraunce/and they sayd to hym Constable make noo doubte/for ye shall haue reason of the duke of Bretayne/for he hath done agaynst the crowne of Fraunce grete displeasure and worthy to be shamed and put out of his countrey/goo your wayes and passe the tyme at Mount le Herry/there ye shal be on your owne/and let vs alone with the matter/for the peres of Fraunce wyll not suffre the matter to rest thus. The constable byleued these lordes and so departed fro Parys and rode to Mount le Herry. Soo the offyce of constablesshyp was voyde for a season as it was sayd that syr Guy of Tremoyle sholde be constable/but it was not so/he was soo well aduysed that he wolde not take it out of the handes of syr Olyuer of Clysson.

Tho we tydynges came to the frensshe kynge from the partyes of Almayne the whiche were to hym ryght displeasaunt and vnto his vncles. Ca. lxxxvii.

The same weke that tydynges came to Parys of the takynge of the constable there came also tydynges from the partyes of Almayne/whiche were ryght displeasaunt to the kynge and to his vncles I shall shewe you how and wherfore/the duke of Gueries sone to the duke of Iulyers was alyed with the kynge of Englande to make warre agaynst Fraunce/and haode taken a pencyon of foure thousande frankes by the yere/whiche pencyon the duke of Iulyers his fader habde in tyme past out of the kynge of Englandes cofers/but or he dyed he renounced it/and then his sone who was but ponge to be it agayne at the kynge of Englandes desyre so that he wolde defye the frensshe kynge and to make warre agaynst hym/and he was enclyned to take the englysshe parte because he had warre with the lady of Brabant/for he sawe well that the duchy of Brabant was fauourable to the royalme of fraunce/for it sholde after retourne to the duke of Bourgoyne and to his chyldren. Therfore the duke of Gueries wolde shewe that the matter touched hym so nere that he wolde doo the domage that he myght to the royalme of Fraunce and to all theyr alyes. So he sente letters of defyaunce to ye frensshe kynge whiche were no thynge pleasaunt/accepted of the kynge nor of his counsayle as I shall shewe you hereafter in the hystory when it shal be conuenyent to speke therof in the chewynge of the warre of Bretayne and of Gueries/the frensshe kynge made noo semblaunt therof/but made

good there to the squyer of Guerles who hadde brought the defyaunce / howbeit he was afrayde / for when he came to the cyte of Tournay he wolde haue gone no further / but he had shewed the defyaunce to the prouost of the towne / and so wolde haue retourned agayne sayenge that it was suffysyent to declare his message in soo noble a towne as Tournay / but they of the towne were not so contente / but arested the squyer and put hym in sure prison / and then they sente worde thereof to the duke of Bourgoyne to know his pleasure. Then the duke wrote to the prouost of Tournay that he sholde sende to hym the squyer with his defyaunces / and so he was brought to Parys / and he feared lest he sholde dye / but when he came to Parys the kynge and his vncles and the other lordes dyd noo thynge to hym but all courtoysye. And the frenshe kynge gaue hym a goblet of syluer weynge .iiii. marke / and .l. frankes within it / and they gaue hym a sauf conduyte to retourne in to his countrey / for by reason of these tydynges the courte of fraunce was sore troubled / and the frenshe counsayle was sore troubled when the constable of fraunce came and made his complaynte of the duke of Bretayne / for they sawe well that trouble & expence began to aryse on euery syde / and they sawe well howe they must employ all their wyttes to eschewe suche inconuenyentes / they thought that the constable who had serued the kyng soo longe in flaunders and other places sholde haue some helpe in that the duke of Bretayne hadde raunsomed hym and taken his castelles without tytle or good reason / and specyally the lorde of Coucy and the admyrall was sore displeased with it. Nowe let vs retourne to the duke of Lancastre and to the kynge of Portyngale who were in Galyce and made sore warre agaynst the kynge of Castell.

Howe the duke of Lancastres men assayled the towne of Aurene and toke it / for it gaue vp as other dyd. Ca. lxxxviii.

Ere before ye haue herde howe dedes of armes were done bytwene syr Iohan Holande and syr Raynolde of Roy in the presence of the kynge of Portyngale and his wyfe / and at the kynges departynge he promysed to the duke that as soone as he was retourned to the cyte of Porte / that he wolde not tary past .xl. dayes / but that his army sholde sette forthe. Thenne the duke sente Constaunce his wyfe to the towne of saynt Iames vnder the guydynge of the lorde Fythwater / a grete baron of Englande with a hundred speres and two hundred archers and the duke sayd to her, Madame ye shall kepe you in the cyte of Compostella and the kynge of Portyngale my sone / and our people shall goo in to Castell to seke for our enemyes to fyght with the whersoo euer we fynde them / and nowe it shall be seene yf euer we shall haue ony thynge in the royalme of Castell or not. Syr sayd the lady as god wyll so be it / thus they departed for that present tyme / and syr Thomas Percy / and the lorde Fythwaren conueyed the duches with two hundred speres out of all daungers / and thenne retourned to the duke who was as then departed fro Belances towardes a towne in Galyce named Aurene whiche rebelled agaynst hym and wolde not obey because it was stronge / therin a garyson of Bretons who hadde on their parelles vndertaken to kepe it / and they had well fortefyed it because they hadde knowlege that the duke wolde come thyder / the marshall of the dukes oost hadde well herde howe they of Aurene in Galyce wolde not obey / but dayly fortefyed them / he counsayled the constable to goo thyder / and soo euery man drewe to that parte / and soo came and lodged nere to it / the season was sayre aboute the Assencyon tyme / then tentes and pauylyons were pyght vp in the fayre playnes vnder the Olyues / and soo laye al that fyrst nyght / and the nexte day without gruyng of ony assaulte / thynkynge that the towne wolde haue gyuen vp / and in dede the men of the towne wolde gladly haue yelded them. But the lordes and capytaynes wolde not suffre them who were Bretons and companyons aduenturers two Bretons were capytaynes called the bastot of Mirop / and the other the bastarde of Penefaste / they were good men of warre and that well appered in that they toke on them to kepe the towne so farre out of all socour agaynst the duke of Lancastre.

On the .iii. daye that the Englysshe men were thus lodged aboute the towne and had well regarded howe they myght at their aduauntage / assayle the towne. Thenne the constable / the

marchall and the dompzall caused theyr trom pettes to sounde to the assaulte/and then euery man drewe forth in to the felde/ and there deuyded them in to.viii. bandes to assayle the towne in.viii.partes/so in goodly ordre approched the towne and tarved on the dykes/ wherin there was no water. But it was well fortefyed with pales and hedges/then the assaulte began in.viii.partes. Then men of armes and other wente downe in to the dykes with axes in theyr handes and therwith cutte downe the hedges/ & they within cast downe dartes and other thynges that yf they hadde not ben well pauesed/ there hadde ben many sore hurte and slayne. And also on the edge of the dyke the archers shotte so hyetly that they within durste not appere/the duke of Lancastre came to beholde the assaulte whiche made it ꝑ more fyerser/he sate there on horsbacke the space of thre houres/he had suche pleasure to regarde thē/at this fyrst assaulte the dykes were clensed of all the thycke hedges soo that men myght goo to the pales/then the retrayte was sowned for that day/thē the duke sayd to the marshal/syr Thomas our men haue done theyr deuoyr for this daye/let them withdraw and ease themselfe/syr it shal be done sayd the marshall/so ꝑ assaulte was ceased & euery man wente to his lodgynge/ and the hurte to be dressed/and so passed that nyght/ they had wynes to drynke plentye/ but they were soo hoote and myghty that it was moche payne to drynke them/and suche as dranke of them without water were in that case ꝑ they coulde not helpe themselfe the nexte day.

THe nexte day it was aduysed that they sholde make none assaulte bycause the daye was soo hoote/and theyr men soo wery and ouercome with stronge wynes/but determyned that the nexte daye after they sholde begyn theyr assaulte at the sone ryssynge/ and to endure tyll.iii.of the clocke at after noone/ & so euery man was comaunded to take theyr ease tyll they herde the sowns of the marshalles trompet/and the same daye ꝑ duke of Lancastre herde tydynges of the kynge of Portyngale howe he was departed fro the cyte of Porte/ and drewe towardes the portes layntpryayne/that waye he was purposed to entre in to Castell and bothe oostes to mete on the ryuer of Werne besyde ꝑ towne of peyppignen or elles before the towne of Arpent/ thus the Portyngales had deuysed/if the kynge of Castell and the frenshe men dyd not encounter them before/and yf they were lykely so to doo then to drawe togyder sonet/ of these tydynges the duke was right ioyous and gaue the messagere for his tydynges.x.nobles.

AND in the mornynge whenne it was daye the marshalles trompet began to sowne before ꝑ lodgynges to reyse vp euery man/then knyghtes and squyers began to make them redy euery man vnder his owne standerde. Then the marshall drewe in to the felde/and all suche as were ordeyned to goo to ꝑ assaulte/they of the towne had knowledge howe the Englysshe men wolde assayle them by theyr watche men who had herde the marshalles trompet/then the Bretons reysed vp euery man and woman in the towne and sayd to them/syrs shewe yourselfe lyke good men and be not abasshed for nothynge that ye se/we are stronge ynoughe/ we haue dartes and speres and stones and other artyllery suffycyent to withstande our enemyes/and if the worsse fall at all tymes they wyll take vs to mercy/worse they can not doo to vs/we haue ben or this in dyuers places farre febler then this is/and yet we haue kepte it without daunger or domage/soo by reason of theyr wordes the Galycyens were incouraged/for of themselfe they hadde rather haue yelded them vp/ for accordynge to trouthe the comons in Castell and Galyce are lytell worth in batayle/ they are but euyll armed and small of courage. The gentyll men are right good on horsebacke.

THus the Englysshe men redy apparelled to the assaulte aboute the sone rysynge came in to the dykes tarse vnto the pales/ and with axes and other wepons bet downe the pales to theyr feete/ but yet for all that they were not on the walle/ for thenne they hadde another dyke to passe as large as the other was/ thenne with moche payne they passed that dyke and came to the walles. And when they within sawe them come soo nere they defended themselfe valyauntly. Thenne the

Galyeyens cast out dartes in suche wyse that whome soo euer they stroke were soore hurte without he were well pauesed / Theme they reysed vp ladders for to mounte vp too the walles. There knyghtes and squyers auaunced themselfe to mounte with targyes ouer theyr heedes / and swordes in theyr handes / and so came and fought hande to hande with the Bretons who defended themselfe ryght nobly / for I repute it for a grete valyauntnes that they wolde abyde the assaulte / for they knewe well they sholde haue as thenne no socoure. For it was determyned betwene the kynge of Castell and the Frenshe men to suffre the Englysshmen at that tyme to do what they lyst in Galyce or elles where and to passe without bataylle. Then some of the englysshe men sayd / yf other townes in Castell gyue vs as moche to doo as this doth it shall be longe or we wynne the royalme / and thenne other sayd / there is moche pyllage within the towne brought thyder out of all the countrey aboute. And therfore they are lothe to yelde vp the towne. Thenne some demaunded who were capytaynes within ye towne / and suche as knewe them sayd / two bastardes Bretons borne good men of armes and experte in all feates / and the one is called the bastarde of Pennefort / and the other the bastarde of Julrop / but what soeuer they be they be valyaunt men of armes / for they se none apparence of socoure / and yet they wyll not yelde vp. And suche as were mounted vp were beten downe agayne perforce. And when the duke of Lancastre was vp and redy and herde the brute of the assaulte sayd he wolde goo and beholde them / and soo lepte on a courser and vnarmed rode to the assaulte and his standerde before hym with the hole armes of Englande and of Fraunce / and at his comynge the assaulte encreased. Thenne euery man auaunced hymselfe to gete lawde and prayse / and in lyke wyse they within. Whenne they sawe that the duke was there / they enforced themselfe to shewe theyr valyauntnes. Thus in assaylynge and defendynge they contynued tyll it was thre of the clocke. And it was not apparent that they sholde haue wonne ye towne at that assaulte. Thenne the duke demaunded who were capytaynes within the towne / and it was shewed hym. Thenne he sayd I wolde the marshall sholde speke with them to know yf they wyll yelde them or not / I thynke they haue not as yet ben demaunded / wherfore byd the marshall come & speke with me / A knyght wente to hym and sayd. Syr my lorde ye duke wolde ye sholde come & speke with hym / then he came to ye duke / & the duke sayd. Marshall knowe ye yf these Bretons wyl put themselfe vnder myne obeysaunce or not / we trauayle sore our men / and there be dyuers of them sore hurte / and we waste our artyllery / and we can not tell when we shall haue nede therof. Wherfore I praye you goo to them and take some treatye with them. Syr sayd he it shall be done / syth ye wyll take them to mercy it is reason they be herde speke.

When the marshall wente from the duke to ye assaulte and sayd to an Herault / go thy way & fynde the meanes to speke with ye capytaynes within the towne & shewe them how I wolde speke with them. The herault departed and wente in to the dykes with his cote armure on his backe with the armes of the duke of Lancastre / and soo his comoany made hym waye by the commaundement of the marshal. The bastarde of Alroy sawe wel the herault and so came to the wall and sayd Herault what wolde you / I am one of the capytaynes / I thynke ye be sente to me / that is trewe syr sayd the herault / who was called Percy. And syr the marshall desyreth you to come to the barryers and speke with hym / I am contente sayd the bastarde / soo that ye cause your men to leue the assaulte / other wyse I wyll not come / I thynke that shall be soone done sayd the herault / and soo he retourned to the marshall and shewed hym as ye haue herde. Then the marshall called his trompet and caused hym to blowe the retrayte and soo he dyde / thenne the assaulte sessed on all partyes. Thenne the capytaynes came to the barryers / and there was redy the marshal syr John Holande / and syr Thomas Moreaus / and dyuers other Englysshemen. Syrs sayd the Englysshe men wyll ye be taken perforce and be vtterly lost and slayne poore and ryche / We knowe well that the comonte of the towne wolde gladly yelde them to my lorde ye duke and to my lady the duches / for they had gyuen vp this towne or this and ye had not ben / wherfore yf ye be taken it is euyll for you

and one thynge ye maye be ſure of / we wyll not departe hence tyll we haue it / outher by fayre meanes or otherwyſe / therfore ſpeke ye togyder and aduyſe you and gyue me an anſwere / for I knowe my charge. Syr ſayd the baſterde we are agreed all redy togyder / and that is yf ye wyll cauſe vs ſurely to be conduyted to the towne of Arpent without daunger or perpil / we ſhall yelde vp the towne to you Soo that the men and women within maye lyue in peas and ſurety vnder the obeyſaunce of the duke in lyke maner as other townes do in Galyce / and none otherwyſe / we knowe well ye be the marſhall of the oſt and that all treatyes pertayneth to you / and what ſoeuer ye do the duke wyll agree to the ſame / that is trewe ſayd ſyr Thomas / it ſhall be as ye deſyre / ſoo that ye here with you nothynge but that is your owne and not to robbe nor pyll the towne / nor that ye haue wonne in ỳ countrey for that may cauſe ryot to be made betwene you and our men / ſyr ſayd the baſtarde we ſhall carry nothynge with vs but that is our owne / and yf ony of our company haue bought ony thynge of ony of the towne ỳ are but euyll payde / yet we ſhall make noo ryot therfore / I thynke as for mete and drynke ſyth we came hyder in garyſon our men haue payde no thynge / as for that ſayd the marſhall is excepte / take all bytayle in aduauntage for ſoo wyl our men do / but I ſay ye ſhall carry away no mouables. Syr ſayd the baſtarde we be not ſoo wyſe men but that ſome of our company wyll take ſomwhat / Well ſayd ſyr Johan Holande let them paſſe that is theyr owne is theyr owne / we wyl not go ſo nere them as to ſerche theyr males / ſoo be it ſayd the marſhall then there was an abſtynence made for that daye / and the nexte daye they ſholde departe. Then ỳ engliſſhmen went to theyr lodgyng and vnarmed them / and toke theyr eaſe and ỳ Bretons all that daye trulled and gadered to gyder grete pyllage that they had wonne before in ỳ countrey of Caſtell for all was abandoned to them / ſoo that therby ſuche as came lyſte in to that countrey wanne grete good / and ſo in the trullynge of theyr baggage they toke many thynges from the men of the towne as cloth and fethers and other ſtuffe ſuche as they founde. And when ony of ỳ poore men ſpake to them ſayenge / ſyrs that good ye take is none of yours it is our good ye brought it not hyder / then ỳ Bretons wolde ſay agayne holde your peas ye byllaynes we haue a commyſſyon of the kynge of Caſtell to paye ourſelfe of our wages / ye wyll not paye vs / and thoughe ye haue payde vs well and truely yet we muſt haue newe wages agayne / therfore this that we take is our owne.

¶ Then the nexte daye the marſhall lepte on his horſe and a.lx. ſperes in his company and ſoo came to the barryers of the towne & there tarryed a ſpace. Thenne the rayptaynes of the Bretons came thyder and the marſhall ſayd. Syrs be ye redy to depart / ye ſyr ſayd they ſo we may haue conduyte to guyde vs / whether wyll you go ſayd the marſhall / to the towne of Arpent ſayd they / well ſayd quod the marſhall / beholde here them that ſhall conduyte you / thenne he called forthe a knyght of Englande called ſyr Steuen Stebery and ſayd to hym / take .x. ſperes with you and bryng theſe Bretons to Arpent and retourne you to morowe / he dyd as he was commaunded and ſoo guyded forthe theſe Bretons with moche baggage. And whenne they were al departed thenne the marſhall and his company entred in to the towne / and the people of the towne made hym grete reuerence / for many of them thought it had ben ỳ duke hymſelfe / when the marſhall ſawe theſe Bretons departe with ſo grete carpage he demaunded of them of the towne yf they hadde taken away ony of theyr goodes or not / ye ſyr truely ſayd they and ỳ to a grete ſubſtaunce / Why dyd you not ſayd the marſhall ſhewe me ỳ betymes / for I ſholde haue cauſed them to haue rendred it agayne / ſyr ſayd they we durſt not for they thretened to ſlee vs yf we ſpake therof / ſyr they be curſed people / there is none of them but he is a ſtronge theef / it is noo meruayle thoughe they robbe vs / for erthe of thē wyll robbe other. The marſhal ſmyled and then he ſente for the chefe men of the towne / and they came before hym / then he made them to ſwere to holde the towne of Aurene of the duke of Lancaſtre for euer in lyke maner and fourme as the other townes in Galyce hadde doone before.

¶ Then he ordeyned newe officers / and toke of euery man theyr faythes and othes / and ſo dranke and retourned to the duke in to the feelde vnder the ſhadowe of the Olyue trees / for

the hete of the sone whiche was soo excessyue hoote that man nor horse coulde abyde it/ nor noo man durst ryde a forragynge tyll after the houre of.iii. for the hete.

The gretteste ymagynacyon that the duke hadde / was for that it was shewed hym howe the kynge of Castell was abrode & with a grete armye comynge agaynst hym to fyght/ for he sawe well that he coulde not perfytely come to the chalenge of Castell but by force of batayle / and soo he sente oute spyes in to euery coost/ but therme it was surely enfourmed hym by his spyes / and by ppl grymes that the kynge of Castell made none assembly for to come in to the felde/ but kepte hymselfe and his men in garysons. And also that the duke of Borbon was not as then come in to Castell nor no tydynges there of his comynge. Soo when the duke hadde taryed fyue dayes in the marches of Iuranches / he determyned to goo to Aope / and there to assaye by assaulte to passe the brydge ouer the ryuer of Erne. ¶ Then the knyght that had conduyted the Bretons to the towne of Arpent retourned agayne. And it was demaunded of hym what company of men of warre were there in garyson / he sayd howe syr Olyuer of Clesquy was there with a thousande speres Bretons and Frenssh men. Then the constable and marshall sayd to the duke / syr it were well done we wente and scrymysshed with them/ peraduenture they wyll yssue out to demaunde dedes of armes. For there be some of them hath grete desyre therto / I am contente sayd the duke/ let vs dyslodge / here we take noo profyte/ then it was ordeyned to dyslodge the nexte morynge / and to goo to Aope/ and thenne after to Arpent.

¶ Nowe lette vs somwhat speke of the kyng of Portyngale and of the waye that he toke for to entre in to the royalme of Castell / and thenne we shall retourne agayne to the duke of Lancastre.

The kynge of Portyngale departed from Porte and lefte there ye quene his wyfe and her syster/ doughter to the duke of Lancastre and to kepe them and the cyte he ordeyned ye erle of Nowar to abyde there with a hundred speres of Portyngales and Gascoynes suche as were come to serue hym/ and then he rode forthe/ and the fyrst nyght lodged a thre legges from the cyte of Porte/ and the nexte daye departed in thre batayles a fayre softe pace by cause of his fote men wherof there were a.xii. thousande with all the carpage/ and after the kynge folowed with a thousande speres/ there was with hym Don Galoys/ Ferrant Martecke/ and Donnale de Cougne/ & Was Martyn de Cougne bare the kynges baner. Also there was Johan Radyghes de Mar / and the mayster Denyce called Ferrant Radyghes with other grete barons and knyghtes / and the reregarde ledde the constable of Portyngale / the erle of Angouse and the erle of Escall the lytell Dan de Wondesl / Radygo Radyghes of Vale/ Conscaulx / Auge Salvage of Geneue/ Johan Insale of Popelan/ and other lordes and knyghtes to the nombre of fyue hundred speres. Thus they rode forth and tooke the waye to saynt Mayne by small iournees/ for they toke theyr lodgynge euery by thre of the clocke and so came to the cabale of Juberoth and there taryed .ii. dayes / and from thens at two iourneys they rode to Aurach in Portyngale and there rested other.ii. dayes/ and then they came to saynt Mayne & there lodged/ the towne was lefte voyde euery syth the batayle of Juberoth/ the people were drawen in to Castel/ exepte the castelles wher in were Bretons and Poyetenyns in garyson. The kynge of Portyngale determyned that bothe the castelles sholde be assayled/ for he thought with his honoure he myght not passe by without the wynge of some dedes of armes/ for the Castellyans hadde wonne the castelles/ therfore he thought to assaye for to wynne them agayne. The kynge hadde brought with hym from the cyte of Porte certayne engynes for he knewe well he sholde haue some assaultes in his waye.

Tho we the kynge of Portyngale brente a towne when he was departed fro Porte and beseged.ii. castelles. Ca. lxxxix.

Thus the kynge of Portyngale and his men lodged in the marches of Saynt Yrayne whiche was the entre in to the royalme of Castell all alongeste the ryuer of Pers tyll nyghe to Lyssyll the grete. By this forsayd ryuer myghe well be brought in to the ooste all maner of thynges from Lysbone and from Porte / and soo they were a thyrty thousande one and other. The constable & his rowte with halfe of the comonte laye before the castell Perrade in to the este parte / & about ye other castell in the weste parte called Taylpdon lay ye marshall and his company / to the castell Perrade was cappytayne a knyght of Bretayne called syr Hoseys Fonthance an experte man of armes / and in the castell Taylpdon was syr Jaques of Mountmellyer a knyght of Poyctou / and echs of them hadde a .L. speres / the syege thus lay .xb. dayes without doynge of ony thynge saufynge there were engynes reysed up. And they dydde caste .L. or .lx. tymes a daye grete stones agaynst the walles / but lytell harme they dyd / but on the couerynge of the houses / for the houses within were well garnysshed with stone / so that the engynes of Portyngalles dyd the men but small domage / When the kynge sawe that the castelles wolde not be wonne / and that his men began to wexe wery / he determyned them to dyslodge and to entre in to Galyce and to approche nerre to the duke of Lancastres ooste to the entente that they myght determyne togyder what waye were best for them to take. Soo on a day they dyslodged and trussed and departed fro saynt Yrayne / at whiche tyme they brente the towne in suche wyse that there was not a place lefte vnbrente able to lodge in hoste / when they of the castell sawe them departe they were ryght ioyous and sowned theyr trompettes and made grete chere and melody tyll they were all passe / that daye the ooste wente and lodged at Mount Ferraunt in Galyce / and the nexte daye in the vale saynt Katheryne / and on the .iii. day they came before Feroull in Galyce a stronge towne holdynge on the kynge of Castelles parte / and there they rested.

Thowe the kynge of Portyngale and his ooste came before Feroull / and assaulted it / and it was wonne and brought vnder the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre. Ca. lxxxx.

When the kynge of Portyngale and his men were before Feroull they founde there a good garyson / and the constable and marshall sayd it sholde be assaulted assone as myghe howe it was prayngnable / they were two dayes without ony assaulte gyuynge trusynge they wolde haue gyuen it up / but they dyd not / for within were Bretons and Borgoynons that sayd they wolde defende it / by the thyrde daye the engynes were reysed up / and the marshall sowned his trompettes to the assaulte / then euery man made hym ready to approche the towne / and they within whe they herde the trompettes blowe to the assaulte they dyd make euery man to theyr defence and women caryed and brought stoones to caste / for in Castell and Galyce women be of grete defence and of grete courage in maner as grete as the men / the Portyngales came to the dykes whiche were depe / but there was no water in them then they boldely entred in to the dykes and clymed up agaynst on the other syde / but they had moche a doo / saufynge they were well pauesshed for they on the walles caste downe stoones and hurte many and caused them to recule / also there was good kastynge of dartes bothe outwarde and inwarde. Thus the assaulte endured tyll it was thre of the cloche / and the men were fore chaced / for the sone was hoote / and they in the dykes hadde none eyre nor wynde / so that they thought they perysshed for hete / soo that therby the assaulte ceased / and all that season the engynes dydde caste in to the towne at aduenture / thenne the marshall counsayled noo moore to assaulte the towne / but syll to let the engynes caste and to serymysshe at the barryers and to shewe some dedes of armes and so as he deuysed it was doone / and daily serymysshes made And they within often tymes were cloied without the gate betwene the barryers and the gate for to serymysshe moore at theyr ease. ¶ And whenne the marshall of Portyngale sawe theyr maner he deuysed theron and sayd to syr Johñ Ferrant / Se well the sowdyours within at some season are closed betwene the gate and the barryers / let vs take a .v. or .vi. C. of our men & laye a byssheme & with a fewe persones let vs serymysshe a whyle / & then withdrawe lytell &

the hete of the sone whiche was soo excessyue hoote that man nor horse coulde abyde it/ nor noo man durst ryde a forayngye tyll after the houre of .iii. for the hete.

The grettest ymagynacyon that the duke hadde / was for that it was shewed hym howe the kynge of Castell was abrode & with a grete armye comynge agaynst hym to fyght/ for he sawe well that he coulde not perfytely come to the chalenge of Castell but by force of batayle / and soo he sente oute spyes in to euery coost / but thenne it was surely enfourmed hym by his spyes / and by pylgrymes that the kynge of Castell made none assembly for to come in to the felde/ but kepte hymselfe and his men in garysons. And also that the duke of Bourbon was not as then come in to Castell nor no tydynges there of his comynge. Soo when the duke hadde tarryed fyue dayes in the marches of Iuranches / he determyned to goo to Aspe / and there to assaye by assaulte to passe the brydge ouer the ryuer of Erne. Then the knyght that had conduyted the Bretons to the towne of Arpent retourned agayne. And it was demaunded of hym what company of men of warre were there in garyson / he sayd howe syr Olyuer of Clesquy was there with a thousande speres Bretons and Frenshe men. Then the constable and marshall sayd to the duke / syr it were well done we wente and scrymysshed with them/ peraduenture they wyll yssue out to demaunde dedes of armes. For there be some of them hath grete desyre therto / I am contente sayd the duke/ let vs dyslodge / here we take noo profyte/ then it was ordeyned to dyslodge the nexte morynge / and to goo to Aspe/ and thenne after to Arpent.

Nowe lette vs somwhat speke of the kyng of Portyngale and of the waye that he toke for to entre in to the royalme of Castell / and thenne we shall retourne agayne to the duke of Lancastre.

The kynge of Portyngale departed from Porte and lefte there ye quene his wyfe and her syster doughter to the duke of Lancastre and to kepe them and the cyte he ordeyned ye erle of Nowar to abyde there with a hundred speres of Portyngales and Gascoynes suche as were come to serue hym/ and then he rode forthe/ and the fyrst nyght lodged thre legges from the cyte of Porte/ and the nexte daye departed in thre batayles a fayre softe pace by cause of his fote men wherof there were a.xii. thousande with all the caryage/ and after the kynge folowed with a thousande speres/ there was with hym Don Galoys/ Ferrant Partere/ and Ponnale de Cougne/ & Alas Martyn de Cougne bare the kynges baner. Also there was Johan Radyghes de Sar / and the mayster Dempce called Ferrant Radyghes with other grete barons and knyghtes / and the rerregarde ledde the constable of Portyngale / the erle of Angoulse and the erle of Etall the lytell Dan de Pondest / Radygo Radyghes of Vale/ Conseaulx / Auge Salvage of Geneue/ Johan Insale of Popelan/ and other lordes and knyghtes to the nombre of fyue hundred speres. Thus they rode forth and tooke the waye to saynt Prayne by small iournayes/ for they toke theyr lodgynge euery by thre of the clocke and so came to the cabase of Juberoth and there tarryed .ii. dayes / and from thens at two iourneys they rode to Aurach in Portyngale and there rested other .ii. dayes/ and then they came to saynt Prayne & there lodged/ the towne was lefte voyde euery lyth the batayle of Juberoth/ the people were drawen in to Castel/ exepte the castelles wherin were Bretons and Poyctenyns in garyson. The kynge of Portyngale determyned that bothe the castelles sholde be assayled/ for he thought with his honoure he myght not passe by without the wynge of some dedes of armes/ for the Castellyans hadde wonne the castelles/ therfore he thought to assaye for to wynne them agayne. The kynge hadde brought with hym from the cyte of Porte certayne engynes for he knewe well he sholde haue some assaultes in his waye.

Tho we the kynge of Portyngale brente a towne when he was departed fro Porte and besyeged .ii. castelles. Ca. xxxix.

Thus the kynge of Portyngale and his men lodged in the marches of Saynt payne whiche was the entre in to the royalme of Castell all alonge by the ryuer of Dese tyll kynge to Seynpll the grete, By this forsayd ryuer myght well be brought in to the ooste all maner of vyvres from Lyxbone and from Porte / and soo they were a thyrty thousande one and other. The constable & his rowte with halfe of the comonte laye before the castell Perrade in to the eest parte & aboute ỳ other castell in the west parte called Taplydon lay ỳ marshall and his company / in the castell Perrade was tayen prys a knyght of Bretayne called syr Moryes Fouchence an experte man of armes / and in the castell Taplydon was syr Jaques of Mountmallyer a knyght of Poyctou / and eche of them habde a .l. speres / the syege thus lay .x.b. dayes without doynge of ony thynge sauynge there were engynes teyled vp. And they dydde caste .x. or .xi. tymes a daye grete stones agayns the walles / but lytell hurte they dyd / but on the couerynge of the houses / for the houses within were well bawted with stone / so that the engynes no; sperynyalles dyd the men but small domage / When the kynge sawe that the castelles wolde not be wonne / and that his men began to wexe wery / he determyned then to dyslodge and to entre in to Galyce and to approche nerer to the duke of Lancastres ooste to the entente that they myght determyne togyder what waye were best for them to take. Soo on a day they dyslodged and trussed and departed fro Saynt Tyrayne / & whiche tyme they brente the towne in suche wyse that there was not a place lefte vnbrente able to lodge in hoste / when they of the castell sawe them departe they were rygh tioyous and sowned they; trompettes and made grete chere and melody tyll they were all paste / that daye the ooste wente and lodged at Pount Ferraunt in Galyce / and the nexte daye in the vale Saynt Katheryne / and on the .iii. day they came before Feroull in Galyce a stronge towne holdynge on the kynge of Castelles parte / and there they rested.

Thowe the kynge of Portyngale and his ooste came before Feroull / and assaulted it / and it was wonne and brought vnder the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre. Ca. lxxx.

When the kynge of Portyngale and his men were before Feroull they founde there a good countrey / and the constable and marshall sayd it sholde be assaulted affyrmynge howe it was prevgnable / they were two dayes without ony assaulte gyuynge trustynge they wolde haue gyuen it vp / but they dyd not / for within were Bretons and Borgoynons that sayd they wolde defende it / by the thyrde daye the engynes were reysed vp / and the marshall sowned his trompettes to the assaulte / then euery man made hym redy to approche the towne / and they within whē they herde the trompettes blowe to the assaulte they dyde we euery man to they; defence and women catyed and brought stoones to caste / for in Castell and Galyce women be of grete defence and of grete courage in maner as grete as the men / the Portyngales came to the dykes whiche were depe / but there was no water in them then they boldely entred in to the dykes and clymed vp agayne on the other syde / but they had moche a doo / sauynge they were well pauesed for they on the walles caste downe stoones and hurte many and caused them to recule / also ther was good passyage of dartes bothe outwarde and inwarde. Thus the assaulte endured tyll it was tyme of the clocke / and the men were forechaced / for the sone was hoote / and they in the dykes habde none eyre nor wynde / so that they thought they perysshen for hete / soo that therby the assaulte ceased / and all that season the engynes dydde caste in to the towne at aduenture / thenne the marshall counsayled noo more to assaulte the towne / but styll to let the engynes caste and to scrymysshe at the barryers and to shewe some dedes of armes and so as he deuysed it was doone / and dayly scrymysshes made And they within often tymes were closed without the gate by twene the barryers and the gate for to scrymysshe more at they; ease. ¶ And whenne the marshall of Portyngale sawe they; maner he deuysed theron and sayd to syr Johñ Ferrant / I se well the sowdyours within at some season are closed bytwene the gate and the barryers / let vs take a .v. or .vi. C. of our men & laye a byssmunt & with a fewe persones let vs scrymysshe a whyle / & then withdrawe lyghtly &

lytell and we shall se that they will issue out on truste to wynne some what of vs / thenne let vs retorne agayne sodaynly to the barreyers and bulwe them somewhat / and thenne out issue the horse men sodenly to renne on them And when they se that they will fle / thenne they barreyers and open the gates to entre / and soo peraduenture we may entre with them / and at the leest yf they within open not the gate / they that be without shal be al ouers / that is true sayd syr Johan Ferrant. Well sayd the marshall who was called syr Mac Perrere / do you your feate and I shall doo the other / goo you and syr Martyne de Marle / and Thomas de Congne and kepe the embusshe and I shall go and make the scrymmysshe it pertayneth to myne office / as they deuysed so they dyd / there were appointed out .v. C. horse men for to kepe the embusshe / and so of .iii. dayes they made noo scrymmysshe wher by they within of the garyson habde meruayle and sayd to the gaspeyers within the towne / lo ye vnhappy people / ye wolde haue gyuen vp this towne at theyr fyrste comynge and we had not ben / we haue gretely preserued the honoure of your towne / for ye shal se the kynge of Portyngale and all his oost shortely departe hens without doynge any damage to vs.

On the fourthe daye the marshall as was deuysed began the scrymmysshe with a small company / and the horse men laye fyll prysely in theyr busshment / and the Bretons within when they sawe theyr enemyes in truste to gete some good prysoner opened theyr gate and lefte it fyll open to the entente it sholde be the more redyer at theyr retourne / for they tryshed not gretely the Gaspeyers within the towne / so they came to the barreyers and dyd there as it appertayned to a scrymmysshe / then when the marshall sawe his tyme he made semblaunt as thoughe he and his men habde ben werp and as halfe dyscomfyted retyred lytell and lytell / and when the Bretons sawe that they thought to haue wonne all and opened theyr barreyers all at ones and yssued out / and came out and toke .xxv. prysoners / and they habde so moche haste to gete them in to the towne that they lefte theyr barreyers fyll open / then the marshall made a sygne to the busshement / and they brake out .v. C. horse and came more then a galoppe and entred the barreyers / and when the Frenssshe men and Bretons sawe that they wolde haue resysted to theyr barreyers but they roulde not / for the Portyngales entred as soone as they in to the towne. Thus was the towne wonne and pyllaged / and the fayre bpoures that were there in garyson were taken prysoners except suche as saued themselfe by a nother gate / and so yssued out into the feldes and rode to Arpente where as syr Oliuer of Clysquy was and a thou sande speres with hym and there they shewed how the towne of Fesaul was loste.

Thus as I haue shewed you fyll of this towne of Fesaul in Gaspe. The Portyngales wanne it and bydde put it vnder the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre / in whose tytle they made that warre. The kynge of Portyngale was gretely reioyced of that his men habde done so well / and incontynente he sente worde therof to the duke of Lancastre / the whyche hym howe he habde encreased his heritage / for he habde wonne hym that towne and he trusted to wynne moo. The duke was gretly reioyced of those tydynges who was as thē come before Aye. Wherin was the Barons of Barreps / and syr Johan of Chatelet Bourgoygne / and syr Trystram de la Gaple / syr Raymbe du Bay / syr Wyllyam of Wongtney and dyuers other knyghtes and squyers of Fraunce. And when the dukes marshall sawe the castell of Aye he sayd / loke as Coulongne is one of the keyes of castell to warde the see / so is this castell of Aye another kepe towardes Castell for he is no lorde of Castell without he be lorde of Coulongne and of Aye. Lette vs goo loke what company there is there / it is shewed me howe the Barons of Barres an experte man of armes of Fraunce is there / I thynke at the entrey of the bryge we shall haue some scrymmysshe syr sayd syr Lamburyne of Lyneres / and syr Johan Dambreticourte that wolde we gladly se. The vaungarde wherin were .v. C. speres of good men of armes rode forthe in good ordre / and the duke sente parte of his company thyder to make the greter muster / for he knewe well that his marshall wolde shewe there some dedes of armes.

When the watche of the castell sawe the vawarde approche he soned alarum. Thenne the capytayne knewe incontynente that the Englysshmen came thyder. They de-

med them and put themselfe in good ordre/ they were a hundred men of armes/ and some came to they⁹ barryers with a .xii. penons. But sy⁹ Barrops of Barres was moost of reputacyon ¶ And also he hadde the chefe charge/ and also sy⁹ Johan of Chatell Mozant was the nexte. And when sy⁹ Thomas Mozeaus marshall of the oost sawe that he was nere the towne he alyghted a foote and all his company/ and delyuered they⁹ horses to they⁹ pages and so came togyder to ꝑ barryers with they⁹ speres in they⁹ handes/ and at euery.vi.paces they rested to kepe themselfe close togyder/ it was a goodly syght to beholde them/ and so on a fronte they came to the barryers/ and there they were receyued valyauntly/ and I thynke yf they had ben in the playne felde there had ben noo goodlyer dedes of armes done then was done there/ and yet the barryers was bytwene them/ and there the marshall without was matched wt sy⁹ Johñ of ꝑ chateau Mozant within and eche of them sore trauayled to hurte eche other/ but they⁹ armure was so good that noone of them toke domage/ and sy⁹ Thomas Percy was coped with le Barrops and Wauburyn of Lyppers with sy⁹ Wyllyam of Wongteney/ and sy⁹ Johñ Dã bretycourte with sy⁹ Reynolde of Roy/ and the lorde Talbot with Trystram de la gayle/ thus they were matched and scrympshed togyder wt they⁹ speres/ and when they were wery they rested/ and other knyghtes and squyers came/ & scrympshed in they⁹ places/ this scrympshe endured tyll hyghe noone/ then archers came to ꝑ place/ but then the gentylmen departed and set crosse bowes to shote agaynst the englysshe archers and spanyarde with dartes/ and they scrympshed tyl it was past one of the clocke. Then came other pomen and varlettes/ and soo scrympshed tyll it was nyght. Then the englysshe men retourned/ and they of the castell retourned in to they⁹ garyson and made good watche aboute halfe a legge from the castell of Noye/ alonge by the ryuers syde the Englysshe men laye/ the whiche ryuer bydde them grete ease for they⁹ horses/ for they had grete lacke of water tyll they came there/ there they refreshed them a.v.or.vi.dayes/ and then wente before ꝑ towne of Arpente to se the dealynge of the constable of Castell and of the frenshmen/ and there they herde tydynges of the kynge of Portyngale who laye in the playnes of Feroull and all his oost/ and was in purpose to come to the towne of Padzon in Galyce/ whiche was in ꝑ waye towarde the duke and the Englysshe men/ and there it was ordeyned that the kynge and ꝑ duke sholde mete togyder to comon/ and determyne howe they sholde percepuer in they⁹ warre. ¶ They had ben a moneth abrode in the countrey and hadde nere hande brought all Galyce in to they⁹ obeysaunce/ and they coulde here no tydynges of ꝑ kynge of Castel nor of ꝑ frenshe men/ Wherfore they hadde grete meruayle/ for it was sayd ꝑ the kynge of Castel had somoned his people at Burgus fro all the partyes of the royalme/ as of Castell/ Spuell/ Cordowayne/ Collede/ Spayne/ Lyon/ Estruges/ Vale olyue and of Suey/ and ꝑ he had.xx.M.men/ and vi.M.speres of pure frenshe men. And howe that thyder sholde come ꝑ duke of Borbon who as it was sayd was departed out of Fraunce to come thyder/ therfore the Portyngales and the Englysshmen thought to drawe togyder to be the more stronger and redyer yf they⁹ enemyes come on them/ and they beleued these tydynges to be of trouthe/ wherfore they were ioyfull/ for they wolde gladly haue made an ende by batayle/ for other wyse they sawe well they coulde not atteyne to they⁹ desyred entrepryse/ and sy⁹ Wyllyam of Lygnac/ and sy⁹ Gaultyer of Passac were alwayes aboute the kynge of Castell/ and euery weke they had tydynges out of Fraunce what busynes there was there/ and of the departynge of the duke of Borbon/ and howe he toke in his waye of Jupgnyon to se pope Clement and the cardynalles there/ euer they counsayled the kynge not to fyght tyll the duke of Borbon were come/ and amonge other tydynges they herde of the duke of Bretayne howe he had taken in the castell of Estmpne ꝑ constable of Fraunce/ and raunsomed at a.C.M.frankes and of his.iii.castelles and towne that was delyuered to the duke of Bretayne/ and howe that therby the iourney and voyage in to Englande was broken/ they had meruayle of this/ and to what purpose the duke of Bretayne dyd it/ they supposed that the counsayle therof came out of Englande.

THus as I haue sayd before the royalme of Fraunce was brought in to trouble/ and specyally the kynges vncles were sore moued with the defyaunce that came fro the duke of Guerles/ for they were fell and rude and out of the course of other defyaunces as I shall shewe you when I declare the matter. And also the frenshe kynge and his vncles were sore displeased in ꝑ

the duke of Bretayne had broken theyr voyage in to Englande by fer / and he that was chefe of the entreprise taken / that was the constable of fraunce and condemned as before is sayd as a.C.M. frankes & taken fro hym .iii. castelles and a towne / whiche was a thynge gretely pretudycyall to the kynge and to the royalme of fraunce / howbeit the kynge coude passed ouer all the matters / for he was but yonge / wherfore he regarded it not so gre as though he had ben of perfyte age / but suche as were nuicyent and wyse sayd y by suche lyke matters the royalme of fraunce hath had moche adoo in tyme past / as when the kynge of Nauare caused syr Charles of Spayne constable of fraunce to be slayne / for whiche cause kynge Johñ neuer loued after the kynge of Nauare / and toke fro hym all his landes in Normandy. Then some other wolde saye yf kynge Charles fader to the kynge that now is were a lyue (he loued the constable soo well) surely he wolde be reuenged and make warre to the duke of Bretayne and to take fro hym all his landes what soo euer it cost hym. Thus euery man spake of this dede / and sayd it was euyll done / then the kynges vncles and the counsayle of the royalme / somwhat to satysfye the people who were sore displeased with y duke of Bretayne determyned that a prelate & .iii. barons sholde be sente to the duke to speke with hym and to here his reasons / & to commaunde hym to come to Parys to make his excuse of y he had done / thyder sholde go the bysshop of Beawuoys / and syr Myles of Dormans a sage and a right valyaunt man / and well langaged / and with hym syr Johñ of Beau / syr Johñ of Beuell / and the lorde de la Ryuer who had theyr charge what they sholde saye and do / and the bysshoppe of Beawuoys toke his waye by Mount le herry where as the constable was / for y towne of Castell pertayned to hym / kynge Charles had gyuen it to hym and to his heyres And whyle the bysshop was there a sykenes toke hym and so lay in a feuer a.xv. dayes & dyed / then in his stede was sente the bysshop of Langers and he toke his waye with the other in to Bretayne.

IT myght be demaunded of me howe I knewe all these matters to speke so propyrely of them. I answere to all suche / that I haue made grete dylygence in my dayes to knowe it and haue serched many royalmes & countreys to come to the true knowledge of all y matters contayned in this hystory wryten and to be wryten / for god gaue me the grace to haue the layser to se in my dayes / and to haue the acquayntaunce of all the kynghe and myghty prynces & lordes as well in Fraunce as in Englande / for for in the yere of our lorde god a.M.iii.C.liii. score and.x. I had laboured.xxxvii. yeres / and as then I was of the age of.lvii. yeres / and in.xxxvii. yeres a man beynge in strength and well reteyned in euery cooste as I was (for after my ponge dayes I was in the kynge of englandes courte.b. yeres with the quene. And also I was welcome to kynge Johñ of Fraunce & to kynge Charles his sone) myght well lerne many thynges / and surely it was alwayes my chefe pmagynacyon and pleasure to enquyre & to retayne it by wrytynge / and howe I was enfourmed of the takynge of the constable of Fraunce I shall shewe you. Ayere after this matter fell I rode from the cyte of Angyers to Towrs in Towrayne. And I lay on a nyght at Beaufort in y vale / and the nexte day I met with a knyght of Bretayne called syr Wyllyam Daucemys / he was rydynge to se my lady of Myall in Towrayne his cosyne & her chyldren / she was newly a wydowe / & I fell in aquayntaunce with this knyght and founde hym right curtoys & swete of wordes / then I demaunded of hym some tydynges and specyally of the takynge of the constable / whiche matter I was glad to here and to knowe the trouth therof / and he shewed me & sayd howe he had ben at y parlyament at Wannes with y lorde of Iuceuys his cosyne a grete baron of Bretayne. And in lyke maner as syr Espayne de Lyon enfourmed me of all thynges that had fallen in Foyx / in Byerne / & in gascoyne / & also as syr Johñ Ferrant partelet shewed me of all the matters of Portyngale / and of Castell. In lyke maner this knyght shewed me many thynges / and more wolde haue done if I had ryden longer in his company. Thus betwene Mounte le herry and Nyemply was .iiii. grete leages and we rode but softely / and in this way he shewed me many thynges / y whiche I bare well in my remembraunce / and specyally of the aduentures of Bretayne. And thus as we rode & that we came nere to Nyemply / we entred in to a medowe / there this knyght rested and sayd I god haue mercy of the soule of the good constable of Fraunce / he dydde here ones a goodly tourney and profytable for the royalme vnder the baner of syr Johñ de Bewell for he was not as then constable / but newly come out of Spayne / and I demaunded of hym howe it was / I shal shewe you sayd he whyle I am on horsebacke

and so we mounted: than we rode forthe sayde and eately / and as we rode he sayde.

In the season that I haue shewed you quod this knight / this countre here was full of Englysshmen / robbers and pyllers of Gascoyne bretons and almayns / and aduenturers of all nations: For all the countre on bothe sydes of the ryuer of Loyre / were replenysshed with them: For the warre betwene Fraūce and Englande was newly renewed / so that all maner of theues and robbers entred in to this countrey / for here they assembled and fortifyed theselfe / to conquere the castell of Beaufort in the valey / that ye sawe but late / was in their handes / and all the countrey about. Thus to come to my purpose / the Englysshmen & gascoyns had in their handes / the towne and castell of Brnuilley / and had greatly fortifyed it. And they helde also other smalle forteresses alonge by the ryuer of Loyre: And whan so euer they wolde ryde / they were to the nombre betwene a thousande and eyght hundred fighteynge men: Than sir Bertram / sir Johan of Beull / and the lorde of Mailly & other knyghtes of this countrey sette their ymaginactions / howe they myght delyuer the countrey of these people / and gathered togyder a fyue hundred speares / and bad spyes / and knewe whan the Englysshe men wolde ryde / and were in purpose to come before Samure / For the cappytayns of all their forteresses were assembled to guyder at Brnuilly / whiche is a lytell here before vs. The frenchmen rode and passed the water that ye se here by vs / and layde theselfe in a busshment in a wode / a lytell here beside on our ryght hande. And in the morynge at the sonne rysynge / the Englysshe men and other departed from Brnuilly / and they were a fyue hundred men. And whanne our men sawe them / they knewe well they must fyght / and there they cōmuned togyder / what crye they shulde call on that daye. Some wolde haue cryed the crye of sir Bertrame / but he wolde in no wyse agree therto: And more ouer he sayd / that he wolde displaye no baner that day / but that he wolde fyght vnder the baner of sir Johan de Beull. Than our ennemyes came in to this medowe / where as I lyghted right nowe. and assoone as they were entred we brake out of our busshement and entred in to the medowe. And assoone as they sawe vs they alyghted a fote / and we in lyke wyse: and so entred eche within other / they was sore fought ynge eche agaynst other / & dyuers of bothe parties ouerthrowen. Thus our batayle endured a longe space / without knowyng who shulde haue the victorie / but to saye the trouth / we were all chosen men of armes / and many of our ennemyes were but yuell armed / and were but theues and robbers / Howbeit they founde vs worke ynoughe / and oure handes full. But than sir Hoyse Cresiquede and sir Geffray Richome / sir Geffray Caresnell and Morsonalle / folowed sir Bertram at the spurres. They came and refreshed vs with a three score speares of good men of armes. & they russhed in with their horses and brake oure ennemyes so a brode / that they coude nat assemble togyder agayne. And whanne the cappytayns of these pyllers sawe that the tourney wente agaynst them / they tooke their horses / nat all / for there abode in the felde a three hundred slayne and taken: and the chase endured to sayne Mors on the ryuer of Loyre / & there they entred in to a bastell. sir Robert Sem / Robert Herne / Richarde Spile / and Jacomyne Clerke. These foure saued them selfe and passed ouer the ryuer of Loyre / and so entred in to foure forteresses / that their men helde on that syde the ryuer / but they tarryed nat longe there / but rode in to Auuergne and Lymosyn.

Thus by this tourney / all the coūtre here aboute was delyuered / for the robbers nor they assembled nomore togyder after. Therfore I saye / that & Bertram the constable was a valyaunt man / and profitable for the realme of Fraunce. sir quod I it is trewe / he was a valyaunt man / and so is sir Olyuer of Clesquyn. and whan I named hym Clesquyn the knight smyled / And I demaunded of hym where at he smyled. sir quod he I shall shewe you / bycause ye name hym Clesquyn / for that is nat his right name nor never was / thoughe euery man call hym so / yet all we of Bretayne call hym the same. And & Bertram whyle he lyued wolde gladly haue hadde it refourmed / but he coude nat amende it / for the worde is redyer to falle on a mannes tonge / than his right name. Than I desyred hym of his courtesy to shewe me if there were any great differēce betwene his

names. Nay sir quod he there is no great dif
ference / but where he is called Clesquyn / he
shulde be named Glape aquyne. And I shall
shewe you as I have herde it reported / howe
that name came to hym / and it is of trouthe /
For ye shall fynde it wrytten in the auncyent
cronycles of Bretaygne. The wordes of this
knyght greatly pleased me / and I said to hym
Sir / ye shall do me great pleasure / to shewe
me the mater / and I shall neuer forgete it / for
sir Bertram was so valyaunt a knyght / that
his deedes ought to be put in remembraunce.
That is trewe q̄ the knyght / and I shall shewe
you. Thus sir Wyllyam of Aunstens began
his tale.

In the season whan Charles the great rai-
gned in Fraunce / who conquered and augme
ted the fayth / and was Emperour of Rome
and kyng of Fraunce and of Almaygne / and
lyeth at Apes the chapell. This kynge Char-
les / as we rede and fynde in the auncyent cro-
nycles / For ye knowe well that all the know-
lege in the worlde is knowen by wrytyng / for
we haue nothyng to founde vpon trouthe nor
to aprouе it but by scripture. this kyng Char
les was in Spayne diuers tymes / and at one
tyme he was styll there a.vii. yere / without re-
tournyng in to Fraunce / but dyll went forthe
on his conquell. In the same season they was
a kyng sarazyn called Aquyn / he was kyng of
Bougie in Barbary / right ouer agaynst Spai
gne / for Spaygne is a great countrey / begyn
nyng at saynt Johns Pie du porte / for the re-
alme of Arragon and Nauer / of Biſquay / of
Portugale / of Coymbres / of Lysbone / of Ci
uyle / of Tollet / of Cordwayne / and of Lyon.
All these be inclosed within Spayne / & other.
And this great kyng Charlemayne / cõquerid
all these countreis. And in this season that the
kyng taryed there so longe / this kyng Aquyn
of Bougy in Barbary / assembled his mē and
came by see in to Bretaygne / and arryued at
the porte of Wannes / and he badde there with
hym his wyfe and chyldren / and there he con-
quered and went forwarde. Kynge Charles
was well enfourmed of this viage / and howe
kynge Aquyn prospered in Bretayne / but for
all that he wolde nat breke his vyage / & sayd.
Lette hym alone in Bretaygne / it shalbe but
a small mater to delyuer the countrey of hym
and of his. Whan we haue ones subdued his
countrey here / and brought it in to the holy
fayth. This kynge Aquyn buylded a towre
by the See syde: nat farre of fro Wannes / a
goodly and a fayre towre / and it was called
Glape / And there this kynge Aquyn lay mo-
che. And whan kyng Charles had accompliſ-
shed his vyage / and acquyted all Galyce and
Spaygne from all the myscreantes / and the
kynges Sarazyns deed and slayne / and all
the lande tourned to the Christen fayth. than
he retourned in to Bretaygne / and on a daye
badde a great batayle agaynst this kynge A-
quyne / and nygthe all the myscreantes slayne.
And so this kynge Aquyne fledde in to the ca-
stell of Glape / and there he badde redy at the
foote of the towre a shyppe / and therin he en-
tred / and his wyfe and his chyldren. But he
and his wyfe made suche haste he was so nere
chased / that they badde no leyser to take with
them a pong sonne that laye and slepte in the
towre / of a yere olde. Thus the kynge and
his wyfe departed by the see / and this chylde
was founde in the towre of Glape / and was
brought to kynge Charlemaygne / who was
right ioyouse of hym and said / howe ꝑ chylde
shulde be baptysed / and so he was: and Rou-
land & Olyuer helde hym ouer the fonte / and
was named Olyuer. And the kyng gaue him
all the landes that his father Aquyn had con-
quered. This chylde whan he came to the age
of a man was a good knyght / and his men cal
led hym sir Olyuer de Glape aquyn / bycause
he was founde in the towre of Glape / & sonne
to the kynge Aquyn.

Thus I haue shewed you the firste foun-
dacyon of sir Bertram of Clesquyn / who shul
de be called Glape aquyne. And sir Bertram
in his dayes / after the puttynge out of kynge
Wõpeter of Castyle / and had crowned kyng
Henry / sayde howe he wolde go in to Bougy
to demaũde his heryttage / And without fayle
so he had done / for kyng Henry had lent hym
men and shyppes to go in to Bougye with a
great armye / if a great lette had nat broken
his vyage. And that was whanne the prince
of Wales made warre vpon the sayde kynge
Henry / and dyde put hym downe / and by pu-
issaunce dyde sette in to Castyle agayne Wõ-
peter. And than at the batayle of Nares sir
Bertram was taken prysonner by sir Johan
Chandos / and was sette to raunsome at a hũ
dred

dyed thousande frankes. And at another tyme he was also taken at the bataple of Aleop/ and raunsomed agayns/ at a hundred thousande frankes. So thus sir Bertrams purpose was broken/ for the warres betwene Englande and Fraunce was renewed/ so that they had ynought to do. Thus he was lynially descended fro the kynge of Bougy named Aquyne/ whose kyngdome is in Barbarye. Thus I haue shewed you the ryght discente of sir Bertram of Clesquyn/ I thanked hym/ and so we came to the towne of Primulop.

How we the frenche ambassadours came to the duke of Bretayne/ vpon the takyng of the cõstable of Fraũce/ and of the answere that was made to them. Cap. xci.

IF I had ben as longe in cõpany with this knight sir Guyllyam of Aunsens/ as I was with sir Espayn de Leon/ whã I rode with hym fro the cyte of Paupres to Dytayes in Byerne/ I dyde as long as I had ben with sir Johñ Ferant Portelecte of Portyngale. He wolde haue shewed me many thynges/ but it was nat so/ for after dyner whan we had rydden .iii. leages we came to a forked waye/ the one way was right to Towres in Tourayne/ whether as I supposed to ryde/ & the other waye was to Nayple/ whether the knyght was determyned to ryde. So at this waye we brake company takyng leue eche at other/ but betwene Primulop and our departynge he shewed me many thynges/ and specially of the baronnye in Bretayne/ and howe the bysshoppe of Langers was sent in the steve of the bysshoppe of Beauuoys/ who dyed by the waye. and how the bysshoppe of Langers with sir Johan de Bowyll and other/ came to the duke of Bretayne/ and of the answere that they had. and on the informacyon of this knyght I take my foundacion/ and haue written as followeth.

Thaue herde here before/ how these ambassadours departed fro Parys/ fro the kyng and his counsayle/ well instructed what they shulde saye and do: and so long they rode by theire iourneys that they arryued at Nauntes. Than they demaunded where the duke was/ it was shewed them how he was about the marchesse of Wänes/ where as most accustomably he lay. They rode thyder/ and so came to the cyte of Wannes/ it is but .xx. myles by fro me. The duke was in the castell called le Nos: than they came before the duke/ who by semblant made to them good and swete chere. The bysshoppe of Langers bycause he was a prelate/ began to speke and to make his proposityon well and sagely/ and sayde. Sir duke we are here sente to you fro the kynge our master and fro his vncles/ the duke of Berrey and of Burgoyne/ to shewe vnto you/ howe they haue great maruayle/ in that the voiage that they wolde haue made in to Englande is by your meanes broken/ and haue taken and raunsomed the Constable of Fraunce/ at so highe a raũsome/ that they are eyght score thousand therof. And moreouer ye will haue thre of his castelles in Bretaygne/ the whiche shalbe a great anoyaũce to all the resydue of the coũtre/ if they shulde be holde agaynst them/ without ayde of the towne of Nygone/ the whiche is pertaynynge to the Constables heritage. Therfore we are charged to shewe you/ and we saye vnto you as messangers fro the kynge our master/ and from his vncles/ that ye rendre agayne to the cõstable of Fraũce his heritage/ that ye with holde from hym/ and sette hym agayne in peasable possessyon/ accordyng vnto eyght/ in lyke maner as they were before/ whan they were despuyed you therfore/ and by none other eyght nor tytell/ that ye haue to them. And also/ that ye restore agayne entierly/ all the money that ye haue hadde of hym. And this is the commaundement of the kynge and his counsayle/ that ye come personally to Parys/ or where as it shall please the kyng to assygne you/ there to make your excuse. And we repute hym so benygne and parfyte/ with that ye be of the bloge royall/ that he will here your excuse. And if he be nat reasonable/ the duke of Berrey and the duke of Burgoyne will so temper hym/ that ye shalbe frendes and coseyn to the kynge/ as by reason ye ought to be. Than the bysshopp

tourned hym to sir Johan of Beuil and sayd. Sire/ is nat this the kynges pleasure/ and he sayde yes/ and so hyde sir Johan de Vyen. At these wordes there were no mo present but they foure.

Than the duke of Bretaine had herde the byllheppe of Langers spche/ he studyed a lytell and good cause why for it was a great matter/ and at the laste he sayde. Sirs/ I haue well vnderstande your wordes/ and it is good reasone that I so do/ bycause ye be sent from the kyng and his vncles. Wherfore in their behalfe I wyll do you all the honour and reuerence that I can do/ I am bounde therto/ but your demaude and request requyreth counsayle. Wherfore I shall take counsayle with myne/ and make you sure answere/ that ye shall be contented. Sire/ ye saye well quod they/ it suffyceth vs. Than they departed and wente to their lodgynges. Anyght they were desyred to dyne the nexte daye with the duke. So the nexte daye they came to the duke and were well receyued/ and so washed and went to dyner a fayre bosne. Fyrste the byllhoppe of Langers bycause he was a prelate/ and than the duke/ than the ambyall of Fraunce/ and thanne sir Johan de Beuile: They hadde a great dyner and were well serued/ and after dyner they entred in to a counsayle chambre/ and there they talked of dyuers maters/ and herde mynstrelsy.

These lordes of Fraunce thought surely to haue hadde an answere/ but they hadde none: Than wyne and spyces were brought in/ and so made collacyon/ and than toke their leaue and departed to their lodgynge. The nexte daye they were appoynted to come to the duke/ and so they dyde/ and the duke receyued them swetely and at the laste sayd. Sirs/ I knowe well ye looke to be aunswered/ for by the wordes that I haue herde you saye/ ye are charged by the kyng and his vncles to bryng them an answere. Wherfore I say to you/ that I haue done nothynge to sir Oliuer of Clysquyne/ wherof I shulde repente me/ sauynge of one thynge/ and that is/ That he hadde so good a marhette/ as to escape a syue. And in that I saued his lyfe/ was for the loue of his offyce/ and nat for his persone/ For he hath done me soo many displeasures/ that I ought to hate hym deedly. And sauynge the displeasure of the kyng and of his vncles/ and his counsayle. For all the rauynge of sir Oliuer/ I haue nat therby broken their voyage by the see. I wyll well excuse my selfe therin/ for I thought non yuell the daye that I toke hym/ a man ought to take his ennemy where soeuer he fynde hym And if he were deed/ I wolde thynke the Realme of Fraunce to be as well ruled or better/ than it is by his counsayle. And as for his castelles that I holde/ the whiche he hath deliuered me/ I am in possessyon of them/ and so wyll be/ without the puyssaunce of a kynge take them fro me. And as for rendrynge of his money/ I aunswere/ I haue had so moche to do in tyme paste/ by the meanes of this sir Oliuer of Clysquyn/ that I ranne in dette gretly therby: and nowe I haue payde them that I was bounde vnto/ by reason of this dette. This was the answere that the duke of Bretayne made to the kynges ambassadours/ Than they layde forthe other reasons/ to enduce the duke to some reasonable waye/ but all his answeres tourned euer to one conclusyon. And whan they sawe none other waye/ they toke their leaues to departe/ and the duke gaue them leaue. Thaste they retourned and dyd so moch by their iournays that they came to Parys/ to the house of Beaute/ besyde Wynsentes. There was the kyng & the quene and thyder came the duke of Berry and the duke of Bourgoyne/ hauyng great desyre to knowe what answere the duke of Bretayne hadde made.

The answere ye haue herde here before/ I neede nat to shewe it agayne/ but the kyng and his counsayle were nat content with the duke of Bretayne/ that his ambassadours hadde made no better exployte: and they sayde/ howe the duke was a proude man and a presumptuous/ and that the mates shulde nat so rest in peace/ seynge the matter so preiudycyall for the Crowne of Fraunce. And the entencyon of the kyng and his counsayle was/ to make warre agaynste the duke of Bretayne/ and the duke loked for nothynge elles/ For he sawe and knewe well/ howe he had greatly displeased the kyng and his counsell/ but he hated so mortally the constable/ that it toke fro hym the good vdyet of reason/ for he repented hym sore/ that he had nat putte hym to dethe/ whan he hadde hym

in his

in his daunger. Thus the mater contynued a longe ſeaſon/ and the duke of Bretayne laye at Wannes/ and lytell and lytell rode ouer his countrey/ for he fearede greatly embuſſhmentes. He kepte ſtyll to hym and fauour his cyties and good townes/ and made ſecrete treaties with the Englyſſhmen/ and made his caſtelles and forterelles to be as well kepte/ as thoughe he had had oppn warre/ and was in many imaginactions on the deve he had done. Sometyme he wolde ſay/ he wolde he had nat taken the conſtable/ howe be it he ſayd euer to ſtoppe menues mouthes/ that ſir Oliuer of Cleſquyn had ſore diſpleaſed hym/ ſo that many a man ſayd/ that elles he wolde neuer haue done it/ therby he brought his countre in feare/ for it is but a ſmall lignoſie/ if a prince be nat feared and douted of his menne/ for and the worſte fall/ he maye haue peace whan he lyſt.

Now lette vs leaue to ſpeke of the duke of Bretaygne/ and let vs ſomwhat ſpeke of the buſyneſſe that was in the realme of Englãde/ whiche was in the ſame ſeaſon/ horyble and maturyous.

Chowe the kyng of Englandes vncles were of one accorde and aliãce agaynſt the kyng and his counſaile/ and of the murmuryinge of the people agaynſt the duke of Irelande/ & of the aunſwere of the londoners to the duke of Glouceſtre. Cap. xcii.

We haue herde here before/ howe the kyng of Englandes vncles/ the duke of yorke & the duke of Glouceſter/ with therle of Salſbury and the erle of Arundell/ the erle of Northumberlande/ the erle of Notyngham/ and the archebyſſhoppe of Cauterbury. All theſe were of one alyaunce and accorde/ agaynſt the kynge and his counſayle/ for theſe lordes and other/ were nat content with the kynges counſayle/ and ſayd among them ſelfe. This duke of Irelande bothe with the kynge what he lyſte/ and with all the realme. The kyng wyll nat be counſayled but by vnhappy men/ and of baſe lynage/ and taketh no regarde to the great lordes of his realme. As longe as he hath ſuche counſayle about hym/ the buſyneſſe of Englande can nat do well/ for a realme can nat be well gouerned/ nor a kynge well counſayled/ by ſuche vngracious people. It is ſene a poore man mouted in to great eſtate and in fauoure with his mayſter/ often tymes corrupteth & diſtroyeth the people and the realme. A man of baſe lynage/ canne nat knowe what partepneth to honoure/ their deſyre is euer to enryche and to haue all the ſelfe/ lyke an Otter in the water/ whiche coueteth to haue all that he fyndeth. Who hath any profyte by that the duke of Irelande is ſo great with the kyng? we knowe full well fro whenſe he came/ yet we ſe that all the realme is ruled by hym and nat by the kynges vncles/ nor by none of his blode. This ought nat to be ſuffred. We knowe well ynoughe/ that the Erle of Oxenforde had neuer ſ grace to do any vnlyaunt deve in this realme: his honour/ wyſe dome/ counſayle or gentyneſſe/ is ryght well knowen/ and that was well knowen ones by ſir Johan Chandos/ in the prince of Wales houſe at ſaynt Andrewes in Burdeaux. A no thet demanded what mater was that/ I ſhall ſhewe you quod the other knyght/ for I was there preſent. There was wyne brought on a day into the princes Chambre/ where as there were many lordes of Englande with hym. & whan the prince had dronke/ becauſe ſir Johñ Chandos was conſtable of Acquitayne/ the prince ſente hym his cuppe firſt to drinke/ and he toke the cuppe and dranke/ and made therof none offre firſte to the Erle of Oxenforde/ who was father to this duke of Irelãde: and after that ſir Johan Chandos had dronke/ a ſquyer bare the cuppe to the Erle/ who badde ſuche diſpyte that ſir Johan Chandos badde dronke before hym/ that he refuſed the cuppe/ & wolde nat drinke/ and ſayde to the ſquyer in maner of a moche. Go to thy mayſter Chandos/ and byde hym drinke. Shall I go ſaid the ſquyer/ he hath dronke all redy. Therfore drinke youſelfe he hath offred it to you/ if ye wyll nat drinke/ by ſayut George I ſhall caſt the drinke in your face. Therle whan he herd that/ douted that the Squyer wolde do as he ſayde/ and ſo toke the cuppe/ and ſette it to his mouthe and dranke/ or at leeſt made ſemblant to drinke. And ſir Johan Chandos who was

nat farre thens / sawe well all the mater and helde hym styll tyll the prince was gone from them: Than he came to the Erle and sayde. Sir Aubery are ye displeased / in that I bran ke before you / I am Constable of this countrey / I maye well drinke before you / sythe my lorde the Prince and other lordes here / are cõtente therwith. It is of trouthe ye were at the batayle of Poycters / but suche as were there knoweth nat so well as I what ye dyd ther / I shall declare it.

¶ Whanne that my lorde the Prince hadde made his voyage in Languedocke and Carcassone to Narbone / and was retourned hyther to this towne of Bourdeaux / ye toke on you to go in to Englande / What the kynge sayde to you at your cõmynge I knowe right well / yet I was nat there. He demaunded of you if ye hadde fynysshed your voyage / and what ye had done with his sonne the Prince. ye answered / howe ye had lefte hym in good helth at Bourdeaux: Than the kynge sayde. What and howe durste ye be so bolde / to retourne without hym. I commaũded you and all other whan ye departed / that ye shulde nat retourne without hym / on payne of all that ye myght forfayte. And you this to retourne / I straitly commaunde you / that within four dayes ye auoyde my realme / and retourne agayne to hym / For and I fynde you within this my realme the fifth day / ye shall lese your lyfe / and all your heritage for euer. And ye feared the kynges wordes / as it was reason / and so auoyded the realme / and so your aduenture and fortune was good / for truely ye were with my lorde the prince a foure dayes before the batayle of Poycters / And so ye hadde the day of the batayle fourtie speares vnder your charge / and I had therfore. Nowe ye maye se whether I ought to drinke before you or nat sythe I am constable of Acquytayne. The erle of Oxenforde was a shamed / and wolde gladlye he hadde ben thens at that tyme / but he was fayne to suffre and to here those wordes. This sir Johan Chandos sayde to hym in oppyn presence. Therfore it is nat to be maruayled / thoughe this duke of Irelande / who is sonne to the sayd erle of Oxenforde / be displaynfull / in folowynge the steppes of his father. For he taketh vpon hym to rule all Englande aboue the kynges vncles. Well quod some other why shulde he nat / sythe the kyng wyll haue it so.

¶ Thus the people in the Realme murmured in dyuers places / agaynst the duke of Irelande / And he dyde one thyng that greatly abated his honour / & that was / he had fyrste to his wyfe the doughter of the lorde of Coucy / the lady Isabell / who was a fayre Lady and a good / and of more noble blode than he is of. But he fell in loue with a mother damoysell of the quenes of Englande an Almayne borne / and dyde so moche with pope Vrbayne at Rome / that he was deuorsed fro the doughter of the lorde Coucy / without any tytell of reason / but by presumpcion / and for his synguler appetyte / and than wedded the quenes mayde / and kynge Richarde consented therto. he was so blynded with this duke of Irelande that if he had sayd. sir / this is whyte / tho it had ben blacke / the kyng wolde nat haue sayd the contrarye. This dukes mother was greatly displeased with him for that deede / and toke in to her cõpany his first wyfe the lady of Coucy. The duke dyde euell / and therfore at length euell came to hym. and this was the first principall cause that he was behated for in Englande / euery thyng that turneth to euell / must haue a begynning of euell. This duke of Irelande trusted so moche in the grace and fauour of the kyng / that he beleued / that no man shulde trouble hym. And it was a cõmon renome through Englãde / that they shulde be a newe taxe rayled through the realme / that euery fyre shulde paye a noble / and the riche to beare out the poore. The kynges vncles knewe well it wolde be a harde matter to bringe about. And they had caused certayne wordes to be sowen abrode in the cyties and good townes of Englande / as to saye / howe the people of Englande were sore greued with tares and talenges / and howe there was great ryches rayled / and that the common people wolde haue accomptes of the gouernours therof / as the archebysshop of Yorke the duke of Irelande / sir Symon Burle / sir Mychaell de la Pole / sir Nycholas Brãble / sir Robert Tryuilyen / & Peter Goloufer / sir Johan Salisbury / sir Johan Beauchampe / and the maisters of the Staple of the wolles. The commons sayd / that if they wolde make a trewe accõpte / there shulde be founde golde

and syl

and sythe sufficient/ without rayling of any newe subsydies. It is a common usage/ none is gladde to pay money nor to oppn their purses/ if they may lette it.

THis brute and noyse sprede so abrode in Englande/ and specially in the cytie of London/ whiche is chefe cytie in the realme/ that all the cõmons rose and sayde/ howe they wolde knowe howe the realme was gouerned. sayenge/ howe it was longe syth any accompte was made. First they layde longbowes bifore them to syr Thomas of Woodstocke duke of Glouc̃estre/ thoughe he were yonger brother than sir Edmonde duke of yorke. The common people reputed the duke of Glouc̃estre for a valyant and a sage discrete parson. And whan they came before hym they sayde. Syr the good cytie of London recomaundeth them to you/ and all the people ingeneralle requireth you to take upon/ you the gouernynge of the realme. For they knowe well it is nat unknowen to you/ howe the kynge and the realme is gouerned. The cõmon people complayneth them fore/ for the kynges counsayle demaundeth/ tayles upon tayles/ aydes upon aydes/ so that the realme hath ben more greued with tayles and other subsydies/ nat accustomed/ sythe the kynges Coronacyon/ than in sythe yere before/ and it is nat knowen where the richesse is become. Wherfore sir/ maye it please you to prouyde some remedy/ or elles the matter will go vnall/ for the commons cryeth out theron. Than the duke answered and sayde/ fayre sirs I have herde you well spoke/ but I alone can nat remedy this mater/ howe be it I se well ye have cause to cõplayne/ and so hathe all other people. But thoughe I be vncle to the kynge and some to a kyng: though I shulde speke therof/ yet nothynge shalbe done for all that/ For the kyng my nephue hath suche counsayle as nowe about hym/ whome he beleueth better than hym selfe/ whiche counsayle leadeth hym as they lyste. But if ye will come to the effecte of your desyres/ it must behoue you to have of yours accorde and agreement/ all the cyties and good townes of Englande. And also some prelates and noble gloyages of the realme/ and so come togyder/ and to the kynges presence/ and I & my brother shalbe there. And than ye maye saye to the kynge. Right dere sir/ ye were crouned verey yonge/ and yet will ye have ben counsayled/ as yet bythen vnto/ Nor ye have nat taken good regarde to the busynesse of this your Realme/ by reason of the poore and ponge counsayle that ye have about you. Wherby the matters of your realme hath hadde but small and pusill effectes/ as ye have sene and knowen right well. For if God hadde nat shewed his grace/ this realme had been lolle and distroyed. Therfore sir/ here in the presens of your vncles/ we requyre your grace/ as humble subiectes ought to desyre their prince/ that your grace will yeve some remedy/ that this noble Realme of Englande/ and the noble crowne ther of/ whiche is discended to you/ from the noble kyng Edwarde the thirde/ who was ỹ moost nobles kynge that euer was/ sythe Englands was firste enhabyted/ that it maye be susteyned in prosperyte and honour/ and your people that complayneth/ to be kepte and mayntayned in their ryght/ the whiche to do/ your grace hyde swere the daye of your Coronacion. And that it maye please you to call togyther the thre estates of your Realme/ prelates and barownes/ and wyssemen of your cyties and good townes. and that they may regarde if the gouernyng of your realme that is past/ be well or nat. And sir/ if they parceyue that it hath been well/ thanne suche as be in office to remayne styll/ as longe as it shall please your grace: and if they be founde contrarye/ thatie they in courteise maner to be auoyded fro your persone/ and other notable and discrete persones to be sette in to office. First by your noble aduyse/ & by the content of my lordes your vncles/ and noble prelates and barones of your realme. And sirs quod the duke of Glouc̃estre/ whan ye have made this supplycacion to the kynge/ he will thanne make you some maner of answere. If he saye that he will take counsayle in the mater/ than desyre to have a shorte day. And yerse so the mater before hande/ to purre the kynge and suche marmosettes as be about hym to some feare. Saye to hym boldely/ that the Realme will no lenger suffre it/ and that it is materyel/ howe they have suffred it so longe/ and I and my brother/ and the bysshoppe of Caunterburye/ and the Erle of Salisbury/ the Erle of Arundell/ and the erle of Northumberlande will be

wyll be by/ for without we be present there is no wo3de therof. We are the greatest gl'onagers of Englande/ and we shall ayde to sustayne your wo3des. For all we shall say/ how we your best ys but reasonable. And whan he herith vs speke/ he wyll agree there to/ or els he bothe a mysse/ and then apoynt a tyme. This is the best counsayle I can geue you. Than the Lordonnes answered and sayde. Sir/ ye counsayle vs nobly. But sir/ it wyll be harde for vs to bynde ȳ kyng and you/ and all these lo3des togayder in one place. Nay nay quod the duke it maye well be done/ for yt Georges daye is nowe within this fyue dayes. The kynge wyll be than at wyndso3. & ye knowe well the duke of Irelande wyll be there/ and sir Symon Burle and many other/ and my brother and I and there of Salisbury shall be there/ therfo3 pr3oupde for ȳ matter vpenst that tyme. Sir quod they it coude nowe/ and so they departed right well content with the duke of Glouceter. Than whan yt Georges daye came/ the kyng and the quene were at Wyndso3/ and made there a great feest/ as his predecessours haddo done before/ the next daye after the feest of yt George. Thyder came the lordonnes to the nombre of thre score horse/ and of yonke as many/ and many other of dyuers good townes of Englande/ & they lodged in the towne of Wyndso3. The kyng was determyned to departe to a place a three leages thens/ and whan he knewe of the comming of the people to speke with hym/ he wolde the sooner haue ben gone. He sayde he wolde nowe wyle speke with them. But than his vncles and there of Salisbury sayd. sir/ ye may nat with youre honour thus departe. The people of youre good townes of Englande/ are come hyder to speke with you. Sir/ it is necessary that ye here them/ and to knowe what they demaunde/ and there after ye maye answere them/ or els take counsayle to nuisshere them. For thus fell sore agayn all the kynges mynde he was forced to tarye. than they came in to his presence in the great hall alowe/ there was the kynge and bothe his vncles/ and the archebysshoppe of Cauntorbury/ the bysshop of Wynchester/ and the Chancellor/ and the erle of Salisbury/ the erle of Northumberlande and dyuers other. There this people made there request to the kyng/ and a burgeys of London spake for them all/ named sir Simon of Sudbery/ a sage man and well langaged/ and there declared well and boldely the effecte of this informacyon that the duke of Glocester had shewed the/ before as ye haue herde. Whan the kyng had herde hym well/ he sayd. Amonge you comons of my realme/ your requestes are great and long/ they are nat ouer soone to be sprode/ we shall nat be togayder agayne a long season/ and also great parte of my counsayle is nat here present. Therfore I saye vnto you/ gette you home agayne/ & spare in restes/ and come nat agayne/ till the feest of Mygheimas/ without ye be sente for/ at whiche tyme our parlyament shalbe at Westmynster. Than come & bringe your requestes and we shall shewe it to our counsayle/ and that is good we shall accepte it/ and that ought to be refused we shall condempne. But sirs/ thinke nat that we wyll be rewled by out comon people/ that shall neuer be/ ne/ as for our gouernynge nor in the gouernaunce of them ȳ rule vnder vs/ we le nothynge but right & iustyce. Than a seuyn of them all with out boyce answered and sayde. Right redouted soueraygne sayng your gracyous displeasure/ as for iustyce in your realme is right feble/ your grace knoweth nat all/ nor canne nat knowe. your grace nouther demaundeth for it nor enquereth therfore/ and suche as be of your counsayle for bere to shewe it you/ bycause of their owne profyte. For sir/ it is no iustyce to sitte of herdes/ hanges/ and sete/ suche manner of punysshmentes be nat laudable. But sir/ good iustice is to kepe your people in ryght/ and to sette in the wayes and order/ as they myght lyue in peace/ that they shulde haue none occasyon to grudge or to make any commocyon. And sir/ we saye that ye sette vs to longe a daye/ as to Mygheimas sir we may be neuer so well cared as nowe/ Wherfore sir/ we saye all by one assente that we wyll haue accompte/ and that shortely/ of them that haue gouerned your realme/ sythe your Coronacyon. And we wyll knowe where youre Reuenewes is become/ with all the taxes/ tayles/ and subsydies this syxe yeres paste/ and wherein they haue ben bestowed. If suche as are your treasourers make a good accompte/ or here therunto/ we shall be ryght sory/ and suffre them to gouerne styll. And if they can nat acquyte them selfe therin truely/ they shalbe reformed by youre dyuyses/ shall ye thynke it good for that purpose/ as my

as my lordes your vncles & other. With those wordes the kynge beheldе his vncles & beldе his peace / to se what they woldе saye. Than sir Thomas duke of Glouceſter sayde. Sir / in the requeſt and prayer of theſe good people the commons of your realme / I se nothynge therin but ryght and reaſone. Sir quod the duke of yorke it is of trouthe / and so sayde all the other prelates and barons that were there present. Than the duke of Glouceſter sayde agayne. Sir / it is but reaſon that ye knowe where your good is become. The kyng sawe well / howe they were all of one entendе / and sawe howe his chefe Warmoſettes durſt speke no worde / for there were to many great men agaynſt them. Well quod the kyng I am content. Lette them be ryddе awaye / for sommer ſeaſon cometh on and huntynge tyme / wherunto we wyll nowe entende: Than the kynge sayd to the people. Sirs / woldе ye haue this mater ſhortely diſpatchedе / yea sir quod they / and that humbly we beſeche your grace. And alſo we beſeche all my lordes here / and ſpecyally my lordes your vncles to be there at. We are content quod they / for the apeſyng of all parties / as well for the kynge as for the Realme / for ouer parte lyeth therin. Than they sayde agayne. We deſyre alſo the reuerende father in god / the archebyſſhoppe of Cauntorbury / the byſſhoppe of Lyncolne / and the byſſhoppe of Wynchester to be there. They aunſwered and sayde / they were content ſo to be. Than agayn they deſyred all other lordes to be there / that were there preſent / as the erle of Salſbury and the erle of Northumberlande / sir Reynolde Cobham / sir Guy Bzian sir Johñ Felton / sir Mathewe Gournay. and moreouer they sayd / they woldе ordayne that of euery good cyte and towne in Englande / there ſhuldе be a three or four notable perſones / and they ſhuldе determyne for all the hole cõmontie of Englande. Than this mater was determyned / and to aſſemble the ytas of saint George at Weſtmynſter. And there all ỳ treaſourers / collectours / and officers of the kynges to be there / and to make there accomptes beſore theſe sayd lordes. The kyng was content therwith / and was brought to it by fayre neſſe and nat by force / by the deſyre of his vncles and other lordes: It ſemed to hym behouable / to knowe where his treaſoure was become. Thus amiably euery man deyted fro Wyndſore / and the lordes went to London / & the treaſourers and other officers were ſende for throughout the realme / to come with their full accomptes on payne of diſhonourynge / & loſſe of all that they had / and lyfe.

Howe the day of accompte came / and there the officers appered in the preſence of the kynges vncles & commens of Englãde / and howe ſir Simon Burle was priſoner i the toure of London / and howe ſir Thomas Tryuet dyed. Cap. xliii.

The day preſired came that all ỳes apered at weſtmynſter / & ſuche as ſhuldе make their accomptes apered before the kynges vncles / and ſuche other prelates and lordes / with other as were aſſigned to here thẽ. This accompte endured more than a moneth / and ſome there were that made their accomptes nother good nor honourable / & ſuche were puniſſhed bothe by their bodyes and by their goodes. ſir Symon Burle was caſt in arerage of .ii. C. and l. M. frankes / becauſe he was one of the gouernours in the kynges youthe. And he was demaunded where this good was beſtowed / he excuſed hym ſelfe by the byſſhop of yorke & ſir Wyllyam Neuell ſayeng howe he dyde nothyng but by their counſayle / and by the kynges chamberleyns / ỳ Robert Tryuilyen / ſir Robert Beauchampe / ſir Johan Salſbury ſir Nycholas Braule / ſir Peter Goufet / and other. And whan they were demaũded therof before the counſaile / they denyed the mater / & layd all the faute in hym. And the duke of Irelande ſayd to hym priuely bytwene them two. Sir Symon / I underſtande ye ſhalbe arreſted and ſette in priſon / and holde there tyll ye haue payed the ſõme that is demaunded / nothyng ſhalbe abated. Go your waye whether ſoeuer they ſende you / I ſhall ryghtwell make your peace / thoughe they had all ſworne the contrary. I ought to receyue of the conſtable of Fraũce thyrtie .M. frankes / for the raunſome of

sonne of Johan of Bretaygne/ sonne to sayne Charles of Bloys/ the whiche sonne ye and we well is owyng to me/ I shall present the counsayle therwith at this tyme. And fynally the kyng is our soueraigne lorde/ he shall pardon and forgyue it you frely/ for ꝑ profet ought to be his and no mannes els. Syr quod sir Symon Burle/ if I thought nat that ye shulde helpe agaynst the kynge/ and to beate out my braynes/ I wolde departe out of Englande and go in to Almayne/ and to the kyng of Beame for thyder I coulde be welcome: and so let the matter rynne a season tyll the worlde be better apeased. Than the duke sayde. I shall neuer fayle you/ we are companyons and all of one sort. ye shall take day to pay your demaunde/ I knowe well ye maye pay and ye ayde in redy money/ more than a hundred thousande frankes. ye nede nat feare the dethe/ ye shall nat be brought to that poynte/ ye shall se the matter otherwise chaunge before the feast of sayne Michell/ whan I haue the kyng ones at my wyll/ whereof I ame sure. For all that he dothe now at this tyme is by force and agaynst his wyll. we muste apease these cursed londoners/ and lay downe this slaunder & brute that is nowe coyned agaynst vs and ours.

SIr Symon Burle had a lytell truste on the wordes of the duke of Irelande/ and so came before the lordes of Englande/ dukes/ erles/ barons/ and counsayle of the good townes. Than it was sayde to hym. Sir Symon/ ye haue alwayes ben a notable knight in the realme of Englãde/ and ye were well beloued with my lorde the prince. And ye and the duke of Irelande haue had in a maner the gouernynge of the kyng. we haue sene all your maters and well examyned them/ the whiche be nother good nor faire/ which greatly displeaseth vs/ for your owne sake. It is clerely determyned by the hole generall counsayle that ye muste go to prison/ in to ꝑ towre of London/ & there to remayne tyll ye haue brought into this chambre the money of the kynges/ and of the realmes that ye haue gathered. the whiche as it apereth by the treasourers rolles drawth to the some of two hundred and fyfty thousande frankes. Now we like what ye wyll say. Than syr Symon was halfe discomforted and sayd. Syres I shall with a good wyll/ And also it behoueth me so to do/ to fulfyll your commaundement. I shall go where as ye commaunde me. But my lordes I requyre you let me haue a clerke assigned to me/ that he maye write all suche expenses as I haue layde out in tyme past/ in Almayne & in Beame/ in prosecutynge the kinges mariage. And if there be any resydue/ I beseche you let me haue the kynges grace and yours/ that I may haue reasonable dayes to pay it. Syr quod the lordes we are content. Thus syr Symon Burle was in prison in the towre of London.

THan the constable spake of ꝑ William Helmon and of sir Thomas Tryuet/ for they were nat greatly in ꝑ fauour of some of the barones of Englande/ nor of the commontie of the realme/ for the vyage that they made in to Flaunders/ For it was sayd/ that neuer Englyshmen made so shamefull a vyage. The bysshoppe of Norwyche and sir Hughe Caurell/ that was as than capitayne of Calais were excused. & layde to the others charge/ how they hadde taken money for the grueng vp of Dunbourche and Gravelyng/ Some sayd/ that that dede was treason. they were sent for and sir William Helmon came/ but sir Thomas Tryuet was excused I shall shewe you howe. ¶ The same weke that he was sente for/ beyng in his owne house in the Northe pres/ he rode out into the felde vpon a ponge horse that he hadde gadred hym so that the horse came awaye with hym/ ouer bushes and hedges/ and at laste fell in a dyke and brake his necke/ and so sir Thomas Tryuet dyed whiche was great dommage/ and his dethe was greatly complayned with many good menne of the realme. yet for all that his heyres were sayne to paye a certayne somme of florens to the Counsayle to the kynges behoue/ as they sayde. But the chefe encrytyng of these matters came by the kynges vncles/ and by the generall counsayle of the countrey/ as it appered after in Englande. For of trouthe/ thoughe the duke of Glouceftre was the yongest brother in age/ yet he was moost auncyent in the busynesse of the realme/ for he drewe to that opinyon that moost of the noble menne/ and prelates and the commens helde. When that sir Thebus Tryuettes depesicion was made

was made after his dethe/by the maner as ye haue herde here before/therby the penaūce of sir Wyllyam Helmon was greatly allwaged. He entred with the counsayle/and by the meanes of the valyauntnesse of his body/and the good seruyce that he had done dyuers tymes for Englande/as well in Bourdelopes as in Guyen and in Picardye/where he was alwayes proued a good knight. There was nothynge layde to his reproche/but takynge of the money/for the delyueraūce of Burbourche and Graueliynge. Than he excused hymselfe with layre and swete wordes/and made dyuers reasonable reasons/as sayd. My lordes/who so euer were in lyke case as we were in ỹ tyme in the garyson of Bourburke/I thynke wolde do as we dyde. I haue herde sir Johū Chandos and sir Gaultier of Mannp say dyuers tymes/who were right wyse and of great valure. Howe that a man ought of two or iii. wayes chose the best waye/and whereby most to endomage his enemyes. And thus sir Thomas Tryuet and I/beyng in the garysons of Bourburke and Graueliyng/and sawe howe we were enclosed on all parties/and no comforte aperyng to vs from any parte. And perceyued well/howe we coulde nat endure many assautes/for they that laye about vs/were as chosen men of armes/as euer I sawe/or I trowe any other Englysshe menne. For as I knewe iustely by the reporte of our harraude/they were at leest/a sixtene thousande men of armes/knyghtes and squyers/and a.xl. thousande of other. And we were nat paste a three hundred speares and as many archers. And also our garysone was of suche eyrcuyte/that we coude nat entēde on euery place. And that we well perceyued by an assaut that was made vs on a daye/For whyle we were at oure defence on the one parte/they caste in fyre on the other parte/wherby we were greatly abassshed and that our ennemyes right well parceyued. And therfore to saye the trouthe/the Frenche kyng and his counsaile wrought by great gētylnesse/seyng ỹ case that we were in/to gyue vs trewse. For if they had gyuen vs another assaute the nexte daye/as they were ordayned to do/I thynke they hadde taken vs at their pleasure. yet for all this/they courteisly treated with vs/by the meanes of the duke of Bretayne/who tooke great payne in that mater. And where as we shulde haue gyuen theym money for our raunsommes/if we hadde ben taken/as it was lykely/they gaue vs money/wherby we dyde them dommage/and it was in them to haue endomaged vs. We thought we conquered greatly on them whan we had of their money/and departed oure selfe safe and without trouble/and badde with vs all that we had won in all the warre tyme/on the fronters of Flaūders. And my lordes beyde that/to pourge me of all blame/if there be any ꝑsone in Englande or without/knight or Esquyer/except the ꝑsons of my lordes the dukes of Lācastre/yorke/& Glocester/that wyll saye and abyde therby/that I haue done any vntrouthe to the kynge my naturall lorde/or accuse me of any trayson. I am here redye to receyue his gauge/and to putte my body in aduenture by dedes of armes to proue the cōtrarye/as the Judge therto assigned shall ordayne. These wordes and suche other/and the valyauntnesse of the knighte excused hym greatlye/and saued hym frome the parell of dethe: And after warde he retourned agayne in to his fourmer estate/and was after that a ryght valyaunt knyght/and auaunced in to the kynges Counsayle. But as at that tyme/sir Symon Burle was nat delyuered out of ꝓysone/for the kynges vncles hated hym greatlye/and soo dyde all the commontie of Englande. The kynge dyde all that he myght to haue hadd heym delyuered/all the seasone that he laye at Shene/but his counsayle sayd it myght nat be/for his rekenynges were nat clere. Than the kynge departed and ỹ duke of Irelande in his company/and rode towardes Bristowe: and the Quene with other ladyes and damoselles with her.

Howe the kynge of Englande departed from London/and howe syr Symon Burle was beheded at Lōdon and his nephue also/and howe the duke of Lancaster was displeased. Cap. xxiii.

For all that the kynge departed from the marchesse of London/ yet the kynges vncles nor their counsayle departed nat/ but tarried styll about London. ye haue herde often tymes sayde/ that yf the heed be sicke/ all the membres can nat be well/ the malady must first be pourged. I saye it/ bicause this duke of Irelande was so great with the kyng that he ruled hym as he lyste. He and sir Symon Burle/ were two of the principall counsaylours that the kynge had: for they hadde a longe season gouerned the kynge and the realme. And they were had in suspecte that they hadde gadered richesse without nombre/ and the renoume ranne in dyuers places/ that the duke of Irelande and sir Symon Burle had a long season gathered togyder money and sente it in to Almayne: For it was come to the knowledge of the kynges vncles/ and to the counsaylours of the good cyties and townes of Englande/ that before of their partie/ howe they had sente out of the castell of Douer by see in the night tyme in to Almayne/ certayne cofers and chestes full of money. They sayd it was falsely and felonously done/ to assemble the substaunce of the realme/ and to sende it in to other straunge countreys/ wherby the realme was greatly impouerysshed/ and the people were sorowfull and sayde/ that golde and syluer was so dere to gette/ that all marchandyse were as deed and lost/ and they couldc nat ymagin how it was/ but by this meanes.

These wordes multiplied in suche wise that it was ordayned by the kynges vncles/ and by the counsayles of the good townes that were annexed vnto them/ that sir Symon Burle had deserued punisshment of dethe And also the archbysshoppe of Caunterbury sayd/ that in the season whan the sayde kyng shulde haue come with his armye in to Englande/ this sir Symon Burle gaue counsayle that the shryne of sayne Thomas of Canterburye shulde haue been taken downe and brought in to Douer castell. And the noyse was that he wolde haue had it so/ to thentent that if he had ben in any daunger/ to haue taken and stollen it/ and conueyed it out of England These maters were so layde to his charge/ that none excuse coulde be herde/ but on a daye he was brought out of the towre and beheeded lyke a traytour/ god haue mercy on his soule.

To write of his shamefull dethe/ sygheth sore displeaseth me/ howbe it I must nedes do it to folowe the hystorye. Greatly I complayne his dethe/ for whanne I was yonge I founde hym a gentyll knyght/ sage and wyse/ but by this enfortune he dyed.

His nephewe and heyre sir Richarde Burle/ was with the duke of Lancastre in Galyce the same season that this case fell in Englande/ and one of the moste renoumed in all his hoost/ nexte the Constable/ for he was as sourrayne Marshall of all the hoost/ and was chiefe of counsayle with the duke. ye may well beleue that whan he knewe of the dethe of his vncle/ he was sore displeased: And also this gentyll knight sir Richarde Burle dyed in the same iourney on his bedde by reason of sickenesse/ as many other dyde: as ye shall here after/ at place and tyme conuenyent. Whan kynge Rycharde knewe of the dethe of this knyght/ as he was in the marchesse of Wales/ he was sore displeased/ and sware/ howe the mater shulde nat passe/ sithe they had so put to dethe his knyght/ without good reason or tytell of right. The quene also was sorye and wepte for his dethe/ bycause he fetched her outs of Almayne. Suche as were of the kynges counsayle douted greatly/ as the duke of Irelande/ sir Nicholas Brabie/ sir Thomas Treuylyen/ sir Johñ Beauchampe/ sir Johan Salisbury/ and sir Mychaell de la Poule. Also the kyng's vncles had put out of office the archebysshoppe of yorke named William Nenell/ brother germayne to the lorde Neuell of Northumberlande/ whiche bysshoppe had longe ben treasourer of all Englande. And the duke of Glouceste had charged hym to medell no more with the busynelle of the realme/ on payne of his lyfe/ but that he shulde go to yorke or therabout/ where it pleased hym in his benifice/ and dwell ther and medell no further. And also it was shewed hym/ howe the honoure of his lynage/ and in that he was a preest/ excused hym of many great maters/ for preiudicial to his honour And also it was shewed hym/ that the moost parte of the counsayle of the comonalte wolde haue had hym disgraced and putte to dethe/ in lyke maner as sir Symon Burle was.

So he departed fro London and went in to the Northe to dwell on his benifice. with this he & all his lynage were sore displeased/ and thought

thoughte surelye that the erle of Northumberland had brought that matter to passe, for all that he was of his lignage, and were neyghbours. Into his rome was chosen a sygote bayliant, a wise, & sage clerke, the archebyshop of Cauntorbury, who was greatly in the fauoure of the kinges vncles. He was come of the Montagues and Salisburyes, and was vncle to the erle of Salisbury, there was made of the kings counsayle by the aduyce of al the comons, therle of Salisbury, therle Richard of Arundel, therl of Northumberland, the erle of Wetmorlande, the erle of Nottingham, the byshop of Norwych called sir Henry Spencer, the byshop of Wynchester, chaunceliour of England, abode stil in hys office, and was with the kinges vncles the most renomed man in the counsayle, next the duke of Glocester was (yf Thomas Mountague archbishop of Cauntorbury. and well he was worthy, for he was a discrete prelate, and toke great payne to reformme the realme, and to bring it into the right way, and that the kinge should put from him the mal-maisters, that troubled al the realme oftentimes he wouldc speake worth the duke of yorke in the matter, and the duke would say to him, syr byshop I trust, the matters shall otherwyse fall tytell and tytel, then the kinge my nephewe and the duke of Ireland thynketh, but it must be done accordynge to reason, and to abide the time, to be to hastye is no good meane, for surely yf we had not perceyued the be times they would haue brought the kynge and the realme in suche case, that it should haue bene at the poynt of lesing. The French kinge and hys counsayle knewe right wel our dealing & what case we were in, and that caused the frenchmen to anaunce theym selfe, to haue come hyther so puyssauntly, as they woulde haue done, to haue destroyed vs.

Howe the counsayle dyd wt together for the reformation of the kyng and of the realme, and howe by the counsayle of the duke of Ireland the kinge was of the accorde to make warre against his vncles, & against the cities and tounes.

Cap. xcv.

IN like manner as the kynges vncles and the newe counsayle of England beynge at London deuysed the busynesse of England to reformme it, and to bryng it into good rule. So on the other syde, the duke of Ireland and his counsayl ymagyned nyght and daye, howe they myght continue in theyr estates, and to condempne the kynges vncles, as ye shall heare after.

When kynge Richarde was come to Wyndsore and the quene with hym, they kept theym selfe in the castell there: and men that were farre of beleued that the kynge laye there for fauour of the duke of Irelande, who sayd that he would go into Irelande, and it was sayd, that the king would se him dispatched. It was agreed by the generall counsayle, that if he would go into Ireland, he should haue at the cost of the realme fyue hundred men of armes, and fyftene hundred archers, and that he should abyde there three yeare, and to be well and truly payde.

Howe be it the duke had no great wyll to make that vyage, for he sawe well the king was yong and as than he myght rule as he lyst. Therfore he feared if he should go farre of, that the loue and the fauour that he was in with the kynge should aswage. And besyde that he was in suche loue with one of the quenes damoselles called Lancegrone that in no wyse he could leaue the syght of her. She was a fayre and a pleasaunte damosell. and was come with the quene out of the realme of Beame. This duke loued her so entirely, that he would gladly haue bene dyuorced from his owne wyfe, who was doughter to the lord of Coucy, and dyde sende for that entente to Rome to pope Urbane. All the good people of the realme hadde marueyle therof, and dispraysed hym greatly, for that the good Ladye was doughter to the doughter of good kyng Edwarde, and of the good Queene Philyppe. The duke of Yorke and the duke of Glocestre toke that dede in great despyte, but for all ther hate the Duke of Ireland set lytell therby, for he was so blynded with louynge of this damosell, that he pryuyled to be dyuorced and to marye her. He doubted not the Popes graunte, so that he myght gette the kynges and the quenes good wyll, for he reputed hys wyfe that he had French, and brought vp in France

and so was her father the lord of Coney and he hadde not made warre against pope Urbane in the lyfell of pope Clement, wherefore pope Urbane loued not the blood. Therfore he lord. the pope would enclyne the kyng hys nevewe Thus mater the duke put forth and promised to Kantegrone to marye her. This duke had a mother a mayden called the olde countesse of Ormonde, she agreed not to the opinion of her sonne, but blamed him greatly of his folly, and sayde. How god wouldbe sore displeased with hym and pay him one daye for all and that it would be to late to repente, and she toke the duchess to her and kept her out in her estate. And suche as ought the ladye anye good will, gaue her great thankes therfore.

Hus I haue shewed you parte of the busynesse of Englande, that fell in this season. And yet I shall procede further as I was enformed, ye haue heard how the duke of Irelande was aboute the kynge in the marches of Wales, and nyght and daye pmagyned on none other thyng but how he myght bryng about his entent. And so serued the kynge and the Quene, with fayre wordes to please theym, and caused all other knyghtes and squiers therabout, to come to Bristowe to se the kinge and the quene, and made them great sport in hunting, the king suffered him to do what he lyst. The same season that the kynge laye at Bristowe on the ryuer of Syuerne, in the marches of Wales. The duke of Irelande tooke great payne to ryde in and out and specially into Wales, and sayde to suche as would heare hym gentlemen or other, How the kynges vncles to haue the sourainty of the realme, had dismissed out of the kynges counsayle noble, valyaunte, and sage personnages. As the archebyshoppe of Yorke, the byshoppe of Durhame, the byshoppe of London, sir Michaell de la Poule, sir Nycholas Bramble, Sir Johan Salysbury, Syr Robert Tresilyane, Sir Johan Beauchampe, and hym selfe, and had put to death a valyaunt knyghte sir Symon Burle. So that and they multyplyed in theyr estate, they wyll destroye all England. The duke of Irelande rode so moche and preached so to the people, and to the knyghtes and squyers of Wales, and of the countreys therabout, that the most part beleued hym.

And on a daye they came in generall to the kynge to Bristowe, and demaunded of hym, yf that it were his pleasure, as the duke of Irelande hadde shewed them. The kynge answered and sayde, yea truely. And prayed and commaunded them, as they loued hym, to helpe hym, and sayde he would awowe all that he would do. Alwayes howe he thought his vncles were to hyghminded, so that he feared least they would surmounte hym, and take awaye his realme from hym.

And they of the marches of Wales, alwayes loued the prince of Wales, father to the kynge. For by the tydynges they heard out of the marches of London, they thoughte surely that the kyng and the duke of Irelande, had good cause And so demaunded of the kynge what his pleasure was to do. The kynge answered & sayde, howe he would gladlye that the londoners that hadde done hym so greate displesures, were corrected and brought to reason, and hys vncles in lyke wyse. They of Wales sayde they were bounde to obey theyr kyng, not they ought no fayth nor homage to no man but to hym. for he was theyr kynge and sourayne lorde. Wherfore they sayd, they were redy to go whyder soeuer the kyng wold commaund them. The kyng was wel content with that answere and in likewise so was the duke of Irelande. Whan the duke sawe yᵗ the king would shewe that the busynesse was partelynge to hym selfe, and that he hadde so good desyre to distroye his aduersaryes and to bryng them to reason. He had then of great ioye, and sayde to them of his counsaile We can not do better than to retourne to London, and shewe our puissaunce. And so do eyther by fayre wordes or otherwyse, to bryng the londoners to theyr accorde, and to be obeysaunte to the kynges commaundement. Alwayes they enfourmed the kynge, howe that it was a great losse to a realme, whan there be many heades and chefe gouernours and howe there could no good come thereby. and the kynge affyrmed the same & sayd, how he would no longer suffre it, but that he wouldbe fynde suche remedye, that other realmes shoulde take exsaumple by hys

realme.

Dowbtles I repute me if I hadde not good cause to saye / the realme of Englande in this season was in great parell and aduenture to haue ben lost / without recouure. For the kynge was moued agaynst his lynages / and agaynst a great parte of all the good lowers of the realme / and they agaynst hym. And the cytes and good townes one agaynst another. And the peasaunte hadde great indignacyon one agaynst another / so that none coude remedy it but onely god. Whan the duke of Irelande sawe that he had the agrement of the kyng / and of the moost parte of the of the countrey of Walis / he came to the kyng / and sayd. Sir / if ye wyll inuyte me / I make me your lieutenaunt / I shall take .x. m. or .xx. thousande men with me / and go to the marchesse of London or to Oxenforde / your cyte and myne / and there we wyll shewe our puyssaunce agaynst these Londoners / your enemyes / who haue so great indignacyon agaynst you. They haue putte to deathe some of your counsayle. And sir / outher by fayre wordes or otherwyse / we shall bringe them to reason. The kynge sayde he was content / saying / I wyll and ordayne you / to be the cheefe lieutenaunt of my realme / and to rayse hym men where ye can gette them / and leade them whether ye thynke best / to augment our lygnorie and realme. And to the entent that euery man shall clerely se that the boole realme pertayneth to me / I wyll that ye beare with you my banners and standerdes / and other ensamples of warre / suche as I wolde beare my selfe in batayle. And I thynke that if the people se my banners displayed / they shall take courage and hardynesse to susteyne my quarell. And I wyll ye punysh be suche rebelles as wyll not obey you / in suche wyse / as all other maye take ensample by them. I beleue all suche as shall se my banners waue in the wynde / shall put them selfe vnder them / and shalbe afrayde to disobey our commandement. These wordes greatly reioysed the duke of Irelande.

Howe the kyng of Englande made his semble in the countrey of Wales / and about the festes of Bukkowe / a longe the ryuer of Seuerne. Dyuers lordes and knyghtes were sende for / some excused them selfe lawfully / and some came at the kynges commaundement / howbe it they doubted leste great euell shulde come of that enterprise. In this meane season / the kynge and the duke of Irelande had a secrete counsayle betwene them / and determyned to sende some of their men in to the marchesse of London / to se and to knowe howe the kynges vncles dyd / and what they purposed to do. they studyed whome they myght sende in that busynesse to knowe the trouthe. than a knyght cosyn to the duke of Irelande and of his counsayle / called sir Robert Tryuilyen sayd. sir / ye make doute whome to sende that is trusty to London / For the loue of you I shall take on me to do that iourney. wherof the Duke thanked hym / and lykewise so dyde the kyng. Therwith this sir Robert Tryuilyen departed from Bukkowe disguysed / in maner of a poore marchaunt vpon a lytell Nagge / and so came to London / and tooke his lodgynge where he was vnknowen / & so taryed there a certayne space and lerned what he coulde. At last he vnderstode that the kynges vncles and the newe counsayle of Englande wolde kepe a secrete Parlyament at Westmynster / wherfore he thought to go and lye there / to lerne what shulde be doone there. And so he came and lodged at Westmynster / the same daye that their counsayle began / and lodged in an alehouse / right ouer agaynst the palys gate / and there he was in a chambre lokyng out at a wyndowe downe in to the courte / & there he myght se them that went in and out

to the

to the coūsaile and he knewe neuer nother euery man but none knewe hym / bycause of his apparel. At last on a day a squyer of the duke of Glouceſters knewe hym / for he had often tymes ben in his cōpany. And assone as sir Robert Trusplien sawe hym he knewe him well and withdrewe hym self out of y wyndowe. The squyer had suspecious therof / and sayd to hymself. We thynke I ſe ponder sir Robert Trusplen / and to thentent to knowe the trouthe / he entred in to the lodgyng and sayd to the wife. Dame / who is that that is above in the chambre / to be alone or with cōpany. Sir quod she I can nat shewe you / but he hath ben here a longe space. Therwith the squier went vp the better to abuyde hym and salued hym / and sawe well it was he / but he fayned hym self and tourned his tale and sayde: God saue you good man. I pray you be nat unscontented / for I take you for a farmour of myne in Ellere / for ye are lyke hym. Sir quod he I am of Kente / and a farmour of sir Johan of Hollandes / and there be men of the byſſhop of Caūterburyes that wolde do me wrong / and I am come hyther to complayne to the coūsayle. Well quod the squier if ye come in to y palays I wyll helpe to make your waye / that ye shall speke with the lordes of the counsayle. Sir I thanke your grace / and I shall nat refuse your ayde.

Than the squyer called for a potte of ale and dranke with him / and payed for it / and badde hym farwell and departed / and neuer stalled tyll he came to the coūsayle chambre dore / and called the vsher to open the dore. Than the vsher demaūded what he wolde / bycause the lordes were in counsayle. He answered and sayd / I wolde speke with my lorde and mayster the duke of Glouceſter / for a mater that ryght nere toucheth hym and all the counsayle. Thanne the vsher let hym in / and whan he came before his mayster he sayde. Sir / I haue brought you great tydynges. What be they quod the duke? Sir quod the squyer I wyll speke a loude / for it toucheth you and all my lordes here present. I haue sene sir Robert Trusplyen disguysed in a yellayns habyte / in an alehouse here without the gate. Trusplien quod the duke / yea truely sir quod the squier ye shall haue hym or ye go to dyner / if you please. I am content quod the duke / and he shall shewe vs some newes of his mayster the duke of Irelande. Go thy ways & fetche hym / but loke that there be stronge ynoughe so to do that your tayle wat. The squier went forth and toke foure sergeauntes with hym / and sayd. Sirs / take me a farre of and as soone as I make to you a sygne / and that I laye my handle on a man that I go for / take hym and latte hym nat escape. Therwith the squyer entredde in to the house where Trusplien was / and went vp in to the chambre / and as soone as he sawe hym he sayd. Trusplien / ye are nat come in to this countre for no goodnesse. Why lorde the duke of Glouceſter cōmaūdeth that ye come and speke with hym The knyght wolde haue excused hym self & sayde. I am nat Trusplien / I am a fermour of sir Johan of Hollandes. Nay naye quod the squyer / your body is Trusplien but your habyte is nat / And therwith he made token to the sergeauntes that they shulde take him Than they went vp in to the chambre & toke hym / and so brought hym to the palays. ye may be sure there was great prease to se hym for he was well knowen. Of his takyng the duke of Glouceſtre was ryght ioyefull / and wolde se hym. And whan he was in his presens the duke sayd. Trusplien. What thynge make you here in this countre / Where is the kyng / where lefte you hym / Trusplien whā he sawe that he was so well knowen / and that none excusacion coude auayle hym / sayd. Sir / the kynge sente me hyther to lerne tydynges / and he is at Bristowe and hunteth along the ryuer of Syuerne. What quod the duke / ye are nat cōe lyke a wyse man / but rather lyke a fyppe. yf ye wolde haue come to haue lerned tydynges / ye shulde haue come in the state of a knyght. Sir quod Trusplien / if I haue trespalled I are pardone / for I was caused this to do. Well sir quod the duke / and where is your mayster the duke of Irelande. Sir quod he / of a trouth he is with the kyng. it is shewed vs here quod the duke that he assembleth moche people / and the kynge for hym. Whedder wyll he lede that people / Sir quod he / it is to go in to Irelande. In to Irelande quod the duke of Glouceſter / yea sir truely quod Trusplien. And than the duke studyed a lytell and sayde. I Trusplien Trusplien / your busyneſſe is nouther fayre nor good. ye

haue done

haue done great folly, to come into this countrey, for we are not beloued here, and that shall well be seen, you and such other of your retenue haue done great displeasures to my brother and to me, and ye haue troubled to your power and with your euyll counseyle, the kyng and his vncles other nobles of the realme. Also ye haue moued certayn is good to vnes agaynst vs. Now is the daye come, that ye shall haue your payment, for he that doth wel by reason should spede it. Thynke on your vnhappynesse, for I wyll neyther eate nor drynke tyll ye be dead. That worde greatly abashed Trusilien, for gladlye there is no man would heare of his ende. He would fayne haue excused hym selfe with fayre language in lowly humblinge him selfe, for he coulde do nothinge to appease the duke, for he was so enfourmed of hym, and of other of the duke of Irelandes sect, that nothynge auayled hym, wherto should I make lengar the mater sir Robert Trusylien was delyuered to the bailly man, and so lead out of Westmynster and there beheaded, and after hanged on a gibet. Thus ended sir Robert Trusylien.

¶ Howe tidinges came the kynge of the death of his knight, and demaunded counsayle theron. And howe he ordayned the Duke of Irelande soueraygne of all his men of warre.

Cap. xcviii.

Shortly these tidynges came to king Richarde and to the duke of Irelande beynge at Eltham howe sir Robert Trusylien was shamefully putte to deathe.

The kynge tooke that mater in great despyte and sayde and swore, that the mater shoulde not reste in that case. And howe that his vncles hadde done suche wilfoulte wyll or reason, to put to death his men and knyghtes, and suche as had truly serued hym and hys father the prince, whereby he sayde, it seemed that they wouldde take from hym the crowne of England, and ye mater touched hym nere. Than the archebyshoppe of Yorke who was so vnkynde of his counsayle, and had bene longe, sayde. Sir ye demaunde counsayle and I shall geue you counsayle, youre vncles and suche as bene of theyr accord, erreth greatly agaynst you for it seemeth by them they wouldde throwe downe ye be counselled but by traytours. They would haue none to beare any rule but themselfe. It is great perill for all the realme, for if the commons shoulde ryse and rebell, greate mischefe should fall in England, if the lordes and great men be not frended togyther and all one. Wherfore sir, I counsayle you spede remedy with puissaunce. Ye are as now here in a countrey well peopled and manned. Send out youre commaundement to all suche as are bounde to serue you gentlemen and other. And when they be all assembled, send them into the marches of London, and make youre generall capitayne the duke of Irelande who gladlye will take on hym the charge, and let no baner nor penon be borne but all onely yours, to shewe therby that the mater toucheth no man but you, and all the countrey in going thither, wil tourn and take part with you and drawe to your baners, and peraduenture the londiners wyll take your part, for they hate you not, for ye dyd them neuer displeasure All the hurt ye haue had your vncles haue cau sed it. Syr here is syr Nicholas Bramble, who hath bene mayre of London and ye made hym knyght, for such seruice as he dyd you on a day who knoweth and ought to knowe the maner of them of London, for he was borne ther, and it can not be but that he hath good frendes Therfore sir desire his counsayle in this mater? toucheth you so nere, for syr by euyll enformacyon and rumour of the people you may lese your seignory. Than the kyng spake to syr Nicholas Bramble and requyred him to speke And at the kinges request, syr Nicholas sayde, Sir, and it like your grace, and all my lordes here present, I shal speake gladly after the first knowledge that I haue, first I say, I can not beleue but that the most part of the Londoners oweth loue and fauour to the kynge that here is, for perfitely they loued the prince hys father and that they well shewed whan the villaynes rebelled, for accordyng to the trouth if they had taken part with the villaynes, they hadde destroyed the kyng and the realme. And moreouer the kynges vncles haue as nowe a good tyme, for they dispose them selfe among them and enfource the people as they lyst, for there is none to say agaynst them.

Therfore we put vs and all the kynges affy-
ans, and haue put in them of their affinyte, and
haue sent the kyng bitter scornes of the boobetts
of his realme. There can no good be imagined
of thes, nor it can not be knowen perfitly what
they entend. it is a hard matter, but by that they
shewe they wolde put the kynge out of his re-
alme, for they go all by gentilnesse, and the kyng
doth all by gentilnesse. They haue put to bende
that gentyll knyghte. sir Symon Burle, who
hath done the kyng moche seruice, in the re-
alme of England and in other places. Therfore
great fauoure is on hym, that he should haue de-
liuered the Castell of Douer to the frenchmen
And they enfourmed the people that he ranne
the frenchmen to rescue into Flaunders and to
Calais, which was nothing so. And also in the
despyte of the kynge, they haue slayne syr Ro-
bert Tryuilien, and so they will ete after, if they
may attayne to their ententes. Wherfore I
saye, that it were better for the kynge to be vn-
goue and puissaunce than gentilnesse. Euery
man knoweth through y realm that he is king,
and how that at Westminster the noble kynge
Edward made euery man to be swoone, both
lordes prelates and all the good townes, that
after his decease they shoulde take the kyng for
their soueraigne lorde, and the same othe maden
his thre vncles. And it seemeth so many as men
dare speake, that they holde him not to y state
and fourme of a kynge, for he may not do with
his owne what he list, they driue him to his pe-
non and the quene also, which is a hard thyng
for a king and a quene. It shoulde seme they
wolde shewe that they had no wit to rule the
felle, and that their counsayloures be traitours
I saye these thinges are not to be suffered. As
for me, I hadde rather dye than long to lyue in
this daunger of perill. for to se the king so ha-
led as his vncles would haue him. The kyng
than said, Surely it pleaseth not vs, and I saye
ye haue counsayled me as honourably as may
be, for the honour of vs and the realme.

At this counsayle of Windsore it was
ordayned, that the duke of Irelande,
should be lieutenant of all the kynges
men of warre, such as he could get, and
go to London to breake the perfect entrelie of
the londoners. Trusting that if he might onis
speake with them to louene them to his seruice
by reason of such profytes as he would make
them, in the kynges name. And in lyttyll
space after, the duke of Irelande with a
fyftene thousand men, departed from Eastsam
and came to the city of Hereford, where about
he lodged and all his people, And had baners
displayed of the kinges armes, and none other
to shewe that all he did was in the kinges ge-
nerall and quarell. Thinges came to the kynges
vncles, that the duke of Irelande approched to-
wardes London with a.xb. thousand men with
the kynges baners displayed. And on a day all
the lordes were at counsayle, at Westminster,
and had with them the chefe of London, suche
as they trusted best, and there they shewed the
how the duke of Irelande was comming against
them with an armye royall. The Londoners
who were enclined to their partye sayd, syrs let
them come in the name of god. If the duke of
Irelande aduaunce of vs bataple he shall haue
it incontinent, we will close no gate, we haue
for.xb.M. men, not and they were.xx. The du-
kes were right ioyful with that answere, and
incontinent thei sent out knightes, squiers, and
messangers, to assemble men of warre toge-
ther, fro diuers parties, such as were sent for
obeyed, for so they had sworne and promysed
before. Men came from the bishoppe of Can-
terbury and Norwiche, and out of the countyes
of Arundell and Sussex, and of Salisburye,
and Southampton, and out of all the coun-
treyes therabout London, And so greate num-
ber of people came to London and knewe not
what they should do.

How the Duke of Irelande sente
thre knyghtes to London, to knowe
some tidinges. And how the kynges
vncles and they of London went in-
to the feldes to fighte with the duke
of Irelande and his affinitie.

Cap. xxviii.

Now let be to what sperc of the duke of Ireland and of his counsayle be vnto at Oxforde with a.xb. men, home be it the most parte of them were come thyther by constreynt rather than of good courage. Then the duke of Ireland desired to haue the fauours of them of London, and to sende sir Nicholas Brambie, sir Peter Goloser, and sir Michaell de la Pole to the towre of London and to go together by water, and to se the kynges barges in the yght of the towre, to se what the Londoners would do. These thre knyghtes at the duke of Irelandes request, departed fro Oxenford, and the next day they passed the Temmes, at the bridge of Staines, & rode to dyner to Wyndsore the kynges place, and there tarryed tyll it was late, and fro thens rode to a nother house of the kynges called Kensington, and there they lefte theyr horses, and toke boates and wente downe the water with the tide & passed London bridge and so came to the tower and was not knowen for no man was ware of theyr comming. And there they found ready the capitaine of the tower whom the kyng had set ther before, and by him these knyghtes knewe much of the dealynge of them of London, and of the kynges vncles.

And the capitayne shewed them how they were come thyther to lodge in great daunger. Why so quod they? we be the kynges seruauntes, and we maye well lodge in his house, Nay so quod the capitayne, All this citie and the counsayle would gladlye be vnder the obeysaunce of the kynge so that he would be ruled by his vncles and by none other. And this that I shewe you is of good will, for I am bounde to shewe you and to counsayle you the best of my power, but I am in doubte to morowe when daye commeth and that it be knowen in London that seruauntes of the kynges be come hyther ye shal se this towre beseged both by land and water by the Londoners, and not to depart hence till they se and knowe who is lodged within it. And yf ye be found here, ye shall be incontinent presented to the kynges vncles. And than ye may well ymagine what ende ye shall come to, I thynke they be so sore displeased agaynste the kynges counsaile, and against the duke of Ireland that and ye be taken ye shal not escape with youre lyues, thynke well vpon these wordes for I assure you they be true.

¶ These thre knyghtes who had wente to haue some manerynge, were sore abashed, and they determined to tary all night as secrete as they could, for fear of espyeng, and the Capytayne promised to kepe them sure for y nyght, and to kepe the keyes with him. And in the mornyng these knyghtes had diuers ymaginations and counsayles to se how they should speede. And al thynges considered they durst not abide the aduenture to be knowen there, they stode greatly to be there besieged. And or daye came when the rumble was come they rode a barge and passed the bridge and went to Kyngston. And when it was daye, they toke their horses and rode to Wyndsore, and there taried al that night, and the next day they rode to Oxforde and there found the duke of Ireland & his men, to whom they shewed all their doinges, & how they durst not tary at the tower of London, the duke was pensife of those tidinges, and wyste not what to say nor do, for he knewe wel al the people that he had assembled there, were not all of one courage. wherefore he wyst not whether it were better to retourne to the kynge, or to abide that. He toke counsaile with his knyghtes, and finally theyr counsayle refused, that sith the kyng had ordayned him to be Constable ouer al his people, and to correct and to punishe all rebels, that he should kepe the fielde, for if he should do otherwise it should be to his great blame and rebuke, and to bryng him into the indignation of the kyng, and to the we that byganne it were nother good nor ryght. And also they sayd that it was better for him to die with honour and to abyde the aduenture, than to shewe any false courage, but they counsayled him to sende worde what cause he was in, to the kynge to Bristowe. As yet they sayd blessed be god they kept the fieldes and none to recounter them. So thus the duke sent to the kyng, desyring him to send him more aide, which the kyng dyd dayly.

¶ The kynges come to the kynges vncles being at London that the duke of Ireland with his company, were in the marchesse of Oxenforde. There they toke counsayle what was best for them to do. There was with the kynges vncles, the archebyshoppe of Caunterbury the earle of Arundell, the earle of Salysbury the Earle of Northumberlande, and diuers other lordes and knyghtes of Englande, and the rulers of London. There it was ordayned

ned by the duke of Glouceſter that without delaye they ſhoulde ſette oute towarde the feldes, and that the mayre of London ſhould gather to hym all the people in euerye warde, ſuche as woulde ayde them. Saying furthe, howe they would go and fyght with the duke of Irelande wherſoeuer they could fynde hym, the Mayre of London was as than a man of armes. He toke chaſen men betweene the age of twentye yeares and xl. And the lorde were a thouſande men of armes. They departed fro London and went and lodged at Deptford and thereabout, and the nexte daye at Colbroke, and daily the noumbre encreaſed, and ſo toke the way to Kyngtō paſſe the Temmes thereabout, for the bryges betwene Wyndſore and Staines were broken, by the commaundement of the duke of Irelande. So long they iourneyed that they approched nere to Oxenforde, tidinges therof anon came to the duke of Irelande, then he begā to doubte and toke counſayle. Than he was counſayled to take the feldes, and to put his people in order of bataple, and to diſplaye the bynges baners, ſaying by the grace of God and ſaynct George the iourney ſhoulde be his. And was dyuyded ſo it was done. Than they ſowned their trumpettes, and euery man armed hym and iſſued out of Oxenforde in order of bataple, with the bynges baners diſplaied, the day was faire and cleare and a pleaſaunt ſeaſon.

How the kynges vncles wan the iourney agaynſt the duke of Irelande, and howe he fled and diuers other of his company. Cap. xxxi.

Tydinges came to the duke of Glouceſter being within fiue leages of Oxenforde by a ryuer lyde which falleth into the temmes, a lyttell beyonde Oxenforde, how that the Duke of Irelande was drawen into the feldes, in order of bataple wherof the duke of Glouceſter had great ioye, and ſayde, howe he would fyght with him, if he myght paſſe the ryuer. Than trumpettes ſowned the diſlodging and ordered them ſelfe redy to fyght. They were with in two leages of theppenemies, and ſearched to paſſe the ryuer and ſent out people to ſearche the depenelle of the water, and they founde the ryuer in ſuche a poynt, that in xxx. yeares before it was not ſo bare. And ſo the ſcuters paſſed at their eaſe, and rode and aduiſed the maner of their enemyes, and than returned to the duke of Glouceſter and ſayd, Sir, god and the ryuer is this daye on youre part, for the riuer is ſo lowe, that it is not to the horſe belly. And lyr we haue ſene the maner of the duke of Irelande, they be redye rayuged in the felde, in good maner. We can not ſaye if the kyng be there or no, but y kynges baners be there, with the armes of England and of Fraunce, and none other. Wellye the duke a goddes name be it, of that armes I and my brother haue parte, auaunce forwarde in the name of God and ſaynete George, let vs goe ſe them nerer. Than euery man rode forth wyth greate courage, when they knewe they myght paſſe the ryuer at their eaſe, ſo ſhortly, all their hoſt paſſed the ryuer.

Tydinges cam to the duke of Irelande how the kinges vncles were paſſed the riuer of Temmes, and how they ſhoulde haue bataple buckly. Than the duke of Irelande was abaſhed, for he knewe well if he were taken the duke of Glouceſter would cauſe him to dye ſhamefully, ſ that nother gold nor ſiluer ſhuld raunſome him. Than he ſayd to ſir Peter Eſtoſer, and to ſir Michael Pole, lyrs, ſurely my courage beareth me all againſt this iourney, nor I dare not abide the bataile againſt the kynges vncles, for if they take me I ſhal die ſhamefully. How the deuil is it, ſ they be paſſed the ryuer of Temmes. It is but a poze token for vs. Why ſir q the two knyghtes what will ye do? I will ſaue my ſelfe, and you alſo quod the duke, and the reſt ſaue theym ſelues. Well ſir quod the knyghtes, than lette vs drawe our ſelfe aſide on a wynge, and ſo we ſhall haue two kynges on our bake. We ſhall ſe howe our men do, if they do well, than we ſhall abyde for the honour of the king who hath ſent vs hyther, ſ if they be diſcōfited we ſhal take the fyldes, ſ take the aduauntage by flyeyng, and ſaue our ſelfe where we may. This counſayle pay

holden gode. Than the duke and these two knyghtes rode a long there batayle / & made good ordre and sayd. Sirres kepe your ba-tayls in good order / and by the grace of god and sayne George / we shall have this daye a fayre iourney / for the ryght is ours / it is the kynges quarell / therfore we shall spede the better. Thus they rode vp and downe dilygentlynge / as thoughe they were them selfe out of the preace / and so came to one of the corners of the batayle and made a wynge / and therwith there came on the duke of yorke and the duke of Glocester and other lordes / with there baners displayed / makyng great noyse with trumpettes. And as soone as the duke of Irelandes company sawe them comynge in so good ordre / and so rychly / they were so abasshed that they helde none arraye / but tourned there backes and fledde. For ye myght saye / howe the duke of Irelande and his company were fledde and gone. And so than euery man fledde / some hyther and thyder they wyste nat whyder / without makynge of any defence. And the duke of Irelande and the two knyghtes of his company fledde before of there horses / and had no myndе to returne to the towne of Orenforde / but withdrewe them as moche as they myght.

Than ye duke of Glocester sawe the demeanour of his enemyes / and sawe howe they fledde / he hadde re-morse in his conscience / & wolde nat do ye vyell he myght have done: for he knewe well that many of them that were there presente / were there rather by constraynt and by inspyration of the duke of Irelande / than for any good loue. Therfore he sayd to his men. Sirs the the iourney is ours. I charge euery man on payne of dethe / that ye slee no man / without he make defence / and if ye gete any knightes or squyers bryng them to me. This commaundement was done / so that there were but fewe slayne / without it were in the preace as they rode one ouer another. In ye chase there was taken lyrell sir Iohan Beauchampe and sir Iohan Salisbury / and they were presented to the duke of Glocester / who was right ioyous of them. Than the duke rode the waye to Orenforde / and gaue leaue to all his men of warre to retourne to there owne houses / & thanked them of the seruyce they had done to hym and to his brother / and sayd to ye mayre of London and his company. Sirs / departe you all home agayne / whereof they were all glade. Thus departed that armye.

* * *

¶ Howe the duke of Irelande & his company fledde / and howe the kynges vncles were at Orenforde. And howe sir Nycholas Slade was beheeded / & howe the kynge was sent for by the bysshop of Caunterbury. Capi. C.

NOwe shall I shewe / what became of ye duke of Irelande and of sir Peter Golofer and sir Michaell de la Pole. As I shewed before they saued them selfe / as it was nedefull for them / for if they hadde ben taken / they had suffred dethe without mercy. I can nat saye if they went to the kyng or nat / if they dyde they tarried nat long / but departed the realme of Englande assone as they coude. & as I have herde reported they rode through Wales / & toke shyppyng at Carleon and sayled in to Scotlande & came to Edenbrowe / and there they toke another shyppe & sayled costyng Frueslande and the ile of Thexeley and the coūtre of Hollande / and so came and arryued at the towne of Dondrecht. Than were they gladde and as I was enformed, the duke of Irelāde had long before cōueyed by lombardes / moche golde & syluer to Burges for feare of all casualtes: for though he was great with the kyng / yet alwaye he doubted ye kynges vncles / & the cōmons of the realme. Wherfore he made prouision vpon before hande of money / to ayde hym whan nede were / and as it was shewed me / the therfore thousande frankes that he had receyued for the redempcyon of the chyldren of Bretayne / and specially for Johñ of Bretayne for Guy was dead. Whiche money (as it was sayde) he founde redy there at his cōmynge / and he shulde receyue more: In the yere other therfore thousande frankes. Wherfore he was nat abasshed for he had substaūce

sufficient

fufficyent for a longe fpace. And whan duke Iubert of Bauyer whohad Haynalte/ Holande and Zelande in gouernaunce/ bydet the cete Wyllyam his brother/ who as than was lyuynge. Whan he vnderftode that the duke of Irelande was come/ as a fugetyue out of Englande/ in to the towne of Dordzeft. He ftudyed and imagyned a lytell/ and thought he fhulde nat longe abyde there/ feynge that he was fledde out of Englande/ and had the yuell wyll of his coſyn germayns/ to whome he bare his loue and fauour. And alſo he conſydred/ howe the duke of Irelande had bute but yuell with his coſyn germayne/ the lady Iſabell of Englande/ who had been lady of Coucy. Wherfore he commaunded the duke of Irelande/ bycauſe he hadde diſpleaſed his coſyns of Englande and had broken his lauſull mariage/ and wolde mary another wyfe/ That he ſhulde departe out of that countrey/ and gette hym a nother lodgynge/ And that he ſhulde nat be ſuffred to abyde in no towne of that countrey. Whan the duke herde that/ he douted that he ſhulde be taken/ and deliuered in to the handes of his enemyes. And he humpled hym ſelfe greatly to them that were ſente to hym/ and ſayde he wolde gladly obey the duke Iuberres commaundement. And ſo payed and truſſed/ and entred in to a beſſell and all his/ on the ryuer of Wonegue. And dyd ſo moche by water and by lande/ that he came to Berette/ whiche towne pertayned to the byſhoppe of Trtec. There he was well receyued/ And there he taryed tyll he harde other tydynges. Nowe let vs leaue ſpeakyng of hym/ and ſpeke of Englande.

After the endynge of this iourney that the kynges vncles had agaynſte the duke of Irelande beſyde Orenfordе/ and that euery man was gone home. The byſhoppe of Caunterbury and the two dukes taryed ſtyll at Orenfordе/ I can nat tell howe long. And there was beheedede the lytell Beauchampe and ſir Johan of Saliſbury. After that iuſtyce the two dukes retourned to London/ and there taryed a ſeaſon to here ſome tidynges fro the kynge/ and they coulde here none/ but that he was at Briflowe. Thanne the lordes at Weſtmynſter by the inſtigacion of the archebyſſhoppe of Caunterbury/ determyned/ that it ſhulde be honourable for them to ſende to the kynge to Briſtowe/ and ſhewe hym openly that he hath ben greatly agaynſt the moſt parte of his realme/ who loued hym better and wer glader to kepe his honour/ than ſuche mariſtes as he hath beleued/ by whom his realme hath ben in great trouble and perylle. In this meane ſeaſon was brought to London Sir Nycholas Brambis/ who was taken in Wales/ as he fledde from the iourney/ to haue ſaued hym ſelfe/ of whoſe takynge the kynges vncles were right ioyfull and ſayde/ howe they wolde make no ſkoyſe of hym/ but he ſhulde go the ſame waye as the other hadde done before. he coude nother excuſe hym ſelfe but that he muſt dye. He was beheeded without London/ his dethe was ſore complayned of ſome men of London/ for he hadde been mayre of London before/ and had well gouerned his office/ and by the one day great honour to the kyng/ whan he ſlewe with his owne handes Lyfter/ wherby all the rebelles were diſconfyted/ and for that good ſeruyce the kynge made hym knyght. But in the maner (as I haue ſhewed you) he was beheeded/ by reaſon of the ouermoche beleuynge of the duke of Irelande.

After the dethe of ſir Nicholas Brambie/ the kynges vncles ſawe/ that all ſuche as they hated/ and wolde haue oute of the kynges counſayle were deed and fledde away. Than they thought the kynge and the realme ſhulde be brought in to good order/ for though they had layne ſome of the kynges counſayle/ and chaſed theym awaye/ yet they coude nat take awaye the ſignoure of the kyng/ but thought to rule the realme in good fourme/ to the honour of the kynge and his realme. Than they ſayd to the byſſhop of Canterbury. Sir/ ye ſhall go ryde your ſelfe to Briſtowe to the kyng/ and there ſhewe hym what caſe the buſyneſſe of his realme is in/ & recomaunde vs to hym/ & ſhewe hym in our behalfe/ that he gyue no credence of lyght enformacion agaynſt vs: He hath beleued ſome to moche for his owne honour/ and for the pfyte of his realme. And ſaye alſo to hym/ that we requyre hym/ and ſo do all the good people of London/ that he wolde come hyder/ he ſhalbe welcome & receyued ye gret ioye. & we ſhall ſet ſuch conſayle about hym/ ye he ſhalbe well pla

well pleased. And wee charge you retourne not ageyne without him, and beeyre him not to be displeased though we have chased away a meny of traytours that were about him, for by theym his realme was in great parell of leesyng. The bysshop sayd he should do eyght wel his message and so departed and rode forth lyke a great prelate and so came to Bristowe, and the king was there but with a symple company. For surly as were wonte to have bene of his counsayle were dead and fledde away, as ye have heard before. The bysshop was in the towne two nightes and our daye or the king would speake with hym. He was so sore displeased with his uncles, for dryvyng away of the duke of Ireland whom he loued above al men, and for leesyng of his knightes. Fynally he was so counseled, that he consented that the archbysshoppe should come into his presence, when he came before hym he humbled him selfe greatly to the kynge, and there shewed the kyng every worde as the kinges uncles had geuen him in charge. And shewed hym that yf it were his pleasure to come to London to his palys of Westminster, his uncles and the moste parte of all his realme would be eyght ioyous, els they wyll be eyght sory and euell displeased. And sayde syr, without the comforte, ayde, and accorde of your uncles, & of your lordes, knightes and prelates, and of your good cityes and townes of England, ye can not come to anye of your ententes. He spake these wordes boldely and sayde moreouer. Sir ye can not reioyce so much your enemyes, as to make war with your frendes, and to kepe your realme in warre and myschefe. The yonge kyng by reason of the bishops wordes began to encline, howbeit the beheading of his knyghtes & counsayloures came sore into his courage. So he was in diuers ymaginations, but finally he refrayned his displeasure, by the good meanes of the quene, the ladys of Boeme, and of some other wyse knyghtes that were about him, as syr Richarde Stoner, and other. Than the kyng sayde to the bysshoppe Well I am contente to go to London with you wherof the bysshop was eyght ioyous, and also it was to hym a great honoure that he had sped his iourney so well.

Within a short space after the kynge departed and lefte the quene styll at Bristowe, and so came towardes London, with the archbysshoppe in his company, & so came to Windsore, and there the king taryed a thre dayes. Tidinges came to London how the king was comming, every man was gladde. Than it was ordayned to mete him honourably. The day that he departed fro windsore the way fro Blaynsore to London was full of people on horsbacke and a fote to mete the kinge. And his two uncles, the duke of Yorke, and the duke of Gloucestre, and Johan sonne to ye duke of Yorke, the erle of Arundell, the erle of Salysbury, the erle of Northumberlande, and diuers other lordes and knyghtes, and prelates departed out of London, and mette with the kynge a two myle fro Blaynsore. There they receyued him swetely as they ought to do theis soueraygn lord. The kinge who bare yet some displeasure in his heart, passed by and made but smal countenaunce to the, and al the waye he talked mest with the bysshop of London, at last they came to Westminster. The kyng alyghted at his palayce which was redy apparelled for hym. There the kyng dranke and toke spyces and his uncles also, and other prelates, lordes, and knyghtes. Than some toke theyr leaues. The kynges uncles and the archbysshop of Caunterbury, with the counsayle, tarryed still there with the kynge, some in the palys, and some in the abbey, and in the towne of Westmynster to kepe the kyng company, and to be neare togither to commune of theyr busynesse, there they determined what should be done.

Howe by the kinge and his uncles all the Lordes of England were sent for to come to Westminster, to a generall counsayle there to be holden.

A Generall parlyamente was ordayned to be holden at Westmynster and all the lates Erles, Barons, and knyghtes, & the counsayles of all the good townes and cities of England, were sent for to be there, and all suche as held of the king. The archebyshoppe of Caunterbury, shewed to the kinges uncles and counsayle that when kinge Richarde was crowned king of England, and ꝑ every man was sworn and made theyr religes to hym, and that whan he receyued theyr fayethes and homages he was within age, and a knight ought not to governe a realme tyll he be .xxi. yeares of age, and in the meane season to be governed by his uncles, or by his next kinne, and by wise men. The bishop sayd this because the king as then was but new lye come to the age of .xiii. yeares, wherfore he counsayled ꝑ euerye man should be new sworne and renewe theyr religes, and euery man newe to knowledge him for their soueraine lorde. This counsayle was excepted of the kinges uncles, and of all other of the counsayle. And for that entent al prelates and lordes & counsayles of good cities and townes were sent for to come to westminster at a day assygned. Euerye man came thyther, none disobeyed, so that there was much people in London and at Westminster. And king Richard was in his chapell in the palys richely apparelled with his crowne on hys head and the archbishop of Caunterbury sange the masse. And after masse the bishop made a collacyon. And after that the kinges uncles dydde theyr homage to the kynge, and kyssed him and there they sware and promysed him fayethe and homage for euer. And than all other lordes sware, and prelates and with theyr handes ioyned togyther they dyd theyr homage, as it apartayned, and kyst the kinges cheke. Some the kyng kyst with good wyll and some not, for all were not in his inward loue, but it behoued him so to do, for he would not go fro the counsayle of his uncles. But surely if he might haue had hys entent he would not haue done as he dydde, but rather haue taken cruel vengeaunce, for the deth of syr Symon Burle, and other knyghtes that they had put fro him and slayne, wythout deserte as he thought. Than it was ordayned by the counsayle, that the archbyshop of yorke should come and pourge him selfe, for he had alwayes bene of the duke of Irelandes part agaynst the kynges uncles. When the byshop of yorke herde of this he doubted him selfe, for he knewe well he was not in the fauour of the kinges uncles. Therfore he sent his excuse by a nephewe of his sonne to the lorde Nevill, and he came to London and came first to the king, and shewed him his uncles excuse, and did his homage in the bishops behalfe. The kyng toke it well, for he loued him better than the bishop of Caunterbury, and so he hym selfe excused the byshop, or ellen it had ben euell with him, but for the kynges loue they forbare him, and toke his excuse, and so he taryed styll in his bysshoppryche a long space and durst not lye at Yorke, but taried at Newcastell on the ryuer of Tyne, nere to his brother the lorde Nevel and his cosynes. In this estate was at that tyme the busynesse of England, and so of a long space the kyng was not mayster ouer his counsayle, but his uncles and other bare all the rule.

Nowe we will leaue to treat of the maters of England, and speake of the businesse of the kinge of Castyle, and of the kyng of Portyngale, and of theyr warres.

❧❧❧

How the Kynge of Portyngale with his puissaunce assembled wyth the Duke of Lancaster and his puyssaunce, and how they could not passe the ryuer of Derne, and howe a squyer of Castile shewed theym the passage.

Cap. Cii.

THis reason sythe the matter so requireth that I retourne agayne to ꝑ duke of Lancasters iourney, and how he persyeuered al this season in Galice, I shall begin there as I left. for I haue great desyre to make an end of that story. Whan the duke of Lancastre had wonne, and

and conquered the towne and castell of Dauantiche in Galyce / and brought it vnder his obeysaunce / and tarryed there foure dayes / for there he founde well wherwith. Than the fyfthe day he departed / and sayde he wolde go to the castell of Noy / and so he dyde / and lay foure dayes in a fayre medowe a longe a ryuer syde. But the ground he was dryed vp by reason of the heate of the sonne / and the water corrupted / so that their horses wolde not drinke therof / and suche as dyde dyed. Than it was ordayned to dislodge thens / and to tourne agayne to Auranch / for sir Richarde Burle and sir Thomas Worsyngham maysshalles of the hoost / sayd it was not possyble to get the strong castell of Noy but by longe syege / by great expence / and moche artillary. And also tydynges came to the duke of Lancastre / that the kynge of Portugale approched with all his hoost / to the nombre of a thousande speres / and tenne thousande able men. So that the two hoostes togyder were by hede to do a great dede / for the duke of Lancastre hadde fyftene hundred speares knyghtes and squyers / and .xv. thousande archers. These tydynges reioysed greatly the duke of Lancastre / and so dislodged fro Noy and wente a gayne to Auranche in Galyce / and the duke sente for the duchesse his wyfe / and the other ladyes and damoselles: for the duke sayd he wolde abyde there for the kynge of Portugale / and so he dyde.

Ye shall knowe / that whan kyng Iohan of Portugale and his marshalles had take the towne of Ferouill / they rode and approched Auranch to come to the duke of Lancastre. And in their way they founde the towne of Padzone / whiche rebelled against the / but at their first comyng they yelded them to the kynges obeysaunce. The kynge tarryed there and in the marches there about a fyftene dayes / and wasted greatlye the countrey of Vtrayls / & yet they had great plentie comyng dayly fro Portugale. Thus these two great hoostes were in Galyce / and greatly empouerysshed the countre / and the dayes waxed so hote / that no man coude ryde after nyne of the cloche / without he wolde be brent with the sonne. The duke of Lancastre and the duchesse were at Auranche / and their men abyde in the countrey in great powerte for lacke of vytayles for themselfe and for their hostes. Nothynge that was good or swete coulde grow out of the grounde / it was so dryed and brent with the sonne / and that grewe was fyrst waythe / for the season was so hote that all was brent. And the Englysshe men / if they wolde haue any thynge for them selfe or for their hostes / it behoued them or their seruauntes to go a forragyng / a.xii. .xiiii. or twentie myles of / which was great payne and daunger. And the Englysshemen founde the wynes there so strong / hoote / and brynnyng that it corrupted their heedes and dryed their bowelles / and brente their lightes and lyuers / & they had no remedy / for they coude fynde but fyrst good waters to temper their wynes nor to refresshe them / whiche was contrary to their natures. For Englysshe men in their owne countreis are swetely norysshed and there they were fyrst both within & without / they endured great powertie. The great lordes wanted of that they were accustomed vnto in their owne countreis.

Than the knyghtes and squyers and other of Englande / sawe the daunger and myschefe that they were in / and were lykely to be / what for lacke of vytayle and heate of the sonne / whiche dayly encreased. Than they began to murmure and to saye in the host in dyuers places. We feare our tourney wyll come to a smal effect & ende We lye to long in one place. that is true sayd other. There is two thynges greatly contrarye for vs. We leade in our company women and wyues who desyreth nothyng but rest / & for one dayes tourney by their wylles / they wolde reste fyftene. This dishonoreth vs and wyll do / for as soone as we came to Coulongne / if we had gone forwarde we had spedde well / and brought the countre to good obeysaunce / for none wolde haue ben agaynst vs. But the longe taryeng hath enforced our enemyes / for nowe they haue prouyded them of men of warre out of Fraunce / And by the their townes / cyties / and passages be kepte and closed agaynst vs. Thus they discomfyted vs without batayle: They nede nat to fyght with vs / for the realme of Spayne is nat so pleasaunt a lande to trauayle in / as is Fraunce or Englande / wherin are good vil-

lages/ fayre coustreis and swete ryuers/ faire medowes and attemperate ayre for meane of warre/ and here is all the contrarye. What ment ourre lorde the duke of Lancastre (if he thought to wynne this countrey) to leade in his company women and chyldren/ This is a great let and without reason/ for it is knowen in all Spaygne/ and els where/ that he and his brethern are the true enheritours of the countrey/ at leest their wyfes doughters to kyng Don Peter. As for doyng of any conquest or tournyng of any townes/ the women do lytell thesun.

Thus as I haue shewed you/ the people iangled in the duke of Lancasters hoost/ one to another. Than tidynges came to the duke that the kyng of Portugale approched nere/ wherof he was ioyfull. And whan the kynge was within two leages/ the duke with his knyghtes mounted on their horses and rode to mete hym/ and there they mette amiably and all their companyes. The kynges hole hoost was nat there but taryed behynde/ in the guydyng of fyue great lordes of Portugale/ as Pomale of Congne/ Vasc Martyn de mello/ Dolfuche de aline degouse Salnase de Perio/ sir Aline Perrier marshall/ and Johan Radighes Dclat/ and dyuers other/ and the kyng had with him a thre hundred speares. So at Iuranche the kynge and the duke were togyder a fyue dayes and toke counsayle togyder. The fynall conclusyon was/ that they shulde ryde togyder and enter in to the countrey of Campe and to go to the towne of Arpent/ where sir Oliuer of Clesquyne constable of Spaygne was/ but they wyst nat how to passe the ryuer of Derne whiche was fell and ogulous at certayne tymes/ & specially rather in somer than in wynter/ for whan the snowe and frosse meiteth on the mountayns by reason of the sonne/ than is the ryuer moost depest & most dangerous to passe/ for in wynter it is frosyn/ & than the ryuers are but base and lowe. yet for all that they concluded to ryde in to the countre of Campe/ trustyng at some place to fynde some passage This conclusyon was publyshed throughe all their hoostes/ wherof euery man was ioyfull/ for they had lyen a long space sore oppressed and in great daunger at Iuranche & ther about/ and many were sore diseased.

Thus the kyng of Portugale and the duke of Lancastre departed fro Iuranche and rode togyder/ but their hostes were seperated into two parties/ bycause none of them vnderstode other/ nor had no maner of aqueyntace togyder: And also to eschewe riottes or debates that myght haue fallen betwene them/ for portugales are hote & hastye/ and in lykewise Englysshmen be dispytefull and fierce. Thus they were apoynted by the marshals of bothe hostes to lodge and to forrage in dyuers partes/ and nat togyder. Thus they rode forthe and were of that puyssaunce able to fyght for a tourney with kynge Johan of Castell/ and all his adherentes. So longe they iourneyed that they came to they ryuer of Derne/ whiche was nat esily to passe/ for it was depe and with highe bankes/ and full of great brokem stones/ so that but at certayne bridges whiche were broken/ or elles so well kepte/ that it was in maner unpossyble to passe they might nat gette ouer. So these two hostes had great ymaginacios how they might passe. Than so it fell that sir John Holande who was constable of the Englysshe hoost/ and the marshalles/ sir Richarde Butle and sir Thomas Morcaulx/ and their forragers as they rode before/ they encountered a squier of Castell/ called Bonnage Baugher. He knewe well all the passages of the countrey/ and he knewe where there was one passage/ that bothe horsmen and fote men might esily passe the ryuer/ & he came ouer at the same passage/ and was taken and brought to the sayd lordes/ of whom they were right glad. And there he was so streitly examyned/ & also by the wordes of the constable/ who sayde to hym/ howe he wolde quyte his raunsome and gyue hym a good rewarde if he wolde shewe them where they myght passe surely the ryuer/ for they sayde they had herde howe there was one sure passage ouer the ryuer. The squyer who toke but lyght aduysement/ and was couetous of the constables offre/ & was gladde to be delyuered out of their handes/ sayd. Sirs/ I knowe well the passage/ and I shall shewe it you and I shalbe your guyde where as ye and all youre menne maye passe without any daunger.

Of this the constable and marshalles had great ioye & so rode forthe togyder/ and sent worde

wayde of this tydinges to the duke of Lancaſtre and ſo folowed the howarde/ and the conſtables and marſhalles came to the paſſage. Than the ſpanyſſhe ſquyer entred fyrſte in to the ryuer/ & ſhewed them the way. And whan they ſawe the paſſage ſo pleaſaunt they were ryght ioyfull/ and ſo euery man paſſed ouer. And whan the howarde was ouer/ they lodged there to gyue knowledge to all other that folowed after. Than the conſtable kepte his promyſe with the ſquyer that was their gyde. And ſo he departed fro them and rode to Medena del campo/ where the kynge of Caſtyle lay/ a good towne in the countrey of Campe. Than the kynge of Portugale and the duke of Lancaſtre came to the paſſage/ which was called Plaſſe feraye/ bycauſe the grauell and ſande there was firme and ſtable/ and without peryll. There they and their hooſtes paſſed ouer/ and the next day the rerewarde/ and than they all lay in the countrey of Campe. Tydinges came to them of Ruelles/ of Cateſcris/ of Medena/ of Vyle arpente/ of ſayne Phagon/ and to other cyties/ townes/ and caſtels of the countrey of Campe and Spayne/ howe the engliſſhemen and portugaloyſe were paſſed ouer the ryuer of Derne/ and had founde the paſſed/ wherof euery man had maruayle and ſayd. This can nat be done without trayſon/ for they ſhulde neuer haue founde out the paſſage/ but yf ſome of the countre had ſhewed it to them. The kynge of caſtelles lordes knewe how the ſquyer of Caſtyle had ſhewed it them/ and was their gyde. Therupon he was taken and knowleged the trouth/ as he hadde done. Thanne he was iuged to dye/ and was brought to Vyle arpent and there beheeded.

Thowe the tydinges ſpred abrode that the kynge of Portugale and the duke of Lancaſtre were paſſed the ryuer of Derne/ & howe it came to the kyng of Caſtels knowlege. & howe certayne of the engliſſh knyghtes came and rode before Vyle arpente/ and how the king of Portugale and the duke of Lancaſtre determyned there to tary the cõmyng of the duke of Burbone. Cap. C. iii.

When the kynge of Caſtyle knewe howe the kyng of Portugale and the duke of Lancaſtre were in ꝑ fieldes with a great puyſſance and daily approched therof he was ſore abaſſhyd/ and called to hym ſyr Gaulter of Paſſac and ſyr Wyllyam of Lignac/ and ſayde. I haue great maruayle of the duke of Burbon/ that he commeth nat. Our enemyes approche and kepe the feldes/ and none encõtreth them. they waſte our countrey/ and the people of my realme are ryght content that we fyght nat with them. Wherfore ſirs/ I requyre you gyue me counſayle what is beſt to do. Theſe two knyghtes who knewe more of dedes of armes than the kyng dyd/ for they had more vſed it/ and therfore thyder they were ſente oute of Fraunce/ they ſayde: Syr/ ſurely the duke of Burbon cometh without fayle. And whan he cometh we ſhall take counſayle what we ſhall do/ but tyll he come/ let vs make no countenaunce of batayle. Let our enemyes go and come whyder as they lyſt/ lette them kepe the feldes and we ſhall kepe the townes that be ſtronge/ and well prouyded bothe with men and vytayles. They ſhall be in the ſonne and in great heate/ and we ſhall be in the ſhade we & in the freſſhe ayre. They ſhall fynde ꝑ countrey waſted and pylled/ and the more forewarde that they go/ the leſſe ſuſtynaũce ſhall they fynde. And therfore ſyr/ at the begynnynge to eſchewe all inconuenyentes/ all yrcell hooldes were beaten downe/ and maners & churches ſuche as men of the cõtrey wolde haue put in their goodes/ and this was wyſely done. or els nowe your enemyes ſhulde haue founde places to haue refreſſhed in/ and as nowe they ſhall fynde nothyng without they bynge it with them/ but heate and the ſonne on their heedes/ the whiche ſhall burne and ſlee them. And ſir all your townes/ cyties/ and caſtelles are well garnyſſhed and prouyded for with good men of armes/ artylery/ and vytayles. I thynke they ſhalbe ſtarymyſſhed withall/ for that is the lyfe and noryſſhynge of men of warre and their paſſetyme/ for they ryde aboute all the worlde to ſeke aduentures. Therfore ſir be nothynge abaſſhed for we truſte in this buſynes/ we ſhall haue no great domage. The kynge by reaſon of theſe knyghtes wordes was greatly recõforted/ for

he perceyued well they shewed him the trouth and treason.

Nowe let vs speke of the duke of Lancastre and of the kyng of Portugale/ who were in the feldes in the countrey of Campe. They wolde gladly haue bene in some towne to haue refresshed them/ For their foragers whersoeuer they went/ coude fynde nothing and for feare of encountrynges/ they rode nat but in great companyes. And somtyme whan they sawe a village on a hyll/ or on the playne/ than they reioysed and wolde say. Go we thyder/ for there we shalbe all ryche/ and well prouyded/ And thyder they wolde ryde in great haste. And whan they were there/ they founde no thynge but bare walles/ & the howses broken downe/ and not her catte nor dogge/ cocke nor hen/ man/ woman/ nor chylde there/ it was wasted before by the frenchemen. Thus they lost their tyme/ and their horses were leane and feble/ by reason of their poore norisshyng. They were happy whan they founde any pasture/ and some were so feble that they coulde go no further/ but dyed for great heate and pouertie. Pe and also some of the great men dyed and were sore displeased with hoote feuers/ & had nat wherwith to refresshe them/ and some tyme by sodeyn colder that toke them sleping in the nyght. In this case they were in/ and specially in the duke of Lancastres hoost/ for the englisshmen were of a febler complexion than the portugaloys/ for they coulde well endure the payne/ for they be harde and accustomed to the ayre of Castyle. In this case as I haue shewed you the englisshmen were in/ and many dyed/ and namely suche as had but smale prouysyon for them selfe.

Sr Richarde Burle/ sr Thomas Moreaulx/ sir Thomas Percy/ the lorde Fitzwater/ syr Water Ryue of Lynyers/ sir Johan Dambreticourt/ Thyrrey and Guylyam of Soulayne/ and with them a two hundred horse men/ knyghtes and squyers/ suche as wolde auaunce them selfe/ and desyrynge dedes of armes. At a tyme mounted on their horses the best they hadde/ to the entente to ryde to Vyle Arpente/ to awake the frenchmen that were therin/ for they had herde surely how sir Oliuer of Clysson was within that towne/ who was constable of Castyle/ and with hym a great nombre of good men of armes. These lordes with their compayny rode forthe in a morenynge and came to a lytell ryuer that came before the towne/ and passed ouer. The larome rose in the towne and bruyte that the englysshemen were come to the barryers. Thanne knyghtes and squyers armed them quickely/ and came to the constables lodgynge/ and their varletes sadled their horses and brought the to their maisters. The constable wolde nat by his wyll haue suffered them to haue yssued out agaynste the englysshmen/ but he coulde nat let them/ their corages were so fierse: And so they yssued out well horsed/ and in good ordre. Fyrste yssued sir Johan of Barres/ the vicounte of Barlet/ sir Johan of Blaskemont/ sir Peter of Vyllaines/ sir Tristram de la gayll and dyuers other/ with great desyre to fyght agaynst the englisshmen. And whan the englysshmen had made their course before the towne/ than they passed agayne the ryuer/ where as they had passe/ and drewe to gyther on the sandes/ and kayre and easely with drewe fro the ryuer a three bowshottes. Than the frenche knyghtes came ryeng their eyes euery manne his speare in the thyghe. And whan the Englysshmen sawe them/ sodeynly they tourned with their speares in the reste. There was a sore rencontre/ and dyuers ouer throwen on the sandes on bothe parties. And whan that course was done they lefte nat so/ but sterrynglyed to gyther/ but the powder of the subtyle sandes rose vp so thycke/ that one of them coulde nat se a nother/ nor knowe eche other/ so that themselfe nor their horses coulde shant drawe their brethes/ their mouthes were so full of dust/ So that therby eche party was kayne to withdrawe by their cries. Thus they departed/ and no manne slayne/ nor greatly hurte. And because of this course that the englysshe knyghtes made/ they passe that daye but one leage fro the towne of Arpente/ and so retourned to their lodgynges/ and syr mesle toke them/ heate/ colde/ and feuers. The duke of Lancastre wyste nat what to saye nor do/ for he sawe well howe his men fell sicke dayly and lay in their beddes. And he was hymselfe sore wery and beryd/ that gladly he wolde haue layen in his bedde/ and it had nat ben for discouragynge of his people. And on a day he spake with the kynge of Portugale/ and demaun-

ded coun-

ney countayle of hym/ byddynge hym to gyue
his bolde aduyse what was beste to do/ for he
feared greate inconuenyence to fall in his hoste/ than
the kynge sayde. Syr ye knowe well howe that
the Spanyardes and frenchmen wyll not fyght
with vs at this tyme/ they purpose to suffer vs
to waste our vytes and puruyaye/ and
secondly the yeare/ how what wyll ye than counsayle vs to do/ I shall (sayde the kynge
Johan) gyue you my aduyse/ for this reason why/ the Spanyardes
ye knowe/ that ye entre into their countrey/ they
dare not come to you ouer the mountayne/ but
they wyll kepe them selfe in their townes and
fortresses/ and whan ye be departed/ than they
wyll come and set vpon your rerewarde/ and
so shall ye neuer fynde them/ but ye shall
fynde them alwayes redy to fyght/ and
than ye shall be dryuen to retourne backe
to the same ayene/ and before ye that come
ayene/ our enemyes shall haue ouer many
gappes vpon vs/ and so shall we neuer
gete them to fyght/ but they shall kepe
them selfe alwayes in their strengthes/ and
than shall our vytayles fayle vs/ and
so shall we be dryuen to departe out of
Englande by one of your heritayges. This
is not so sodayne wonne/ and specially to agree
with the ryche men assembled before. Let your
men go and passe their tyme in suche tourneys
and bataylles as pertayne to warre/ vnder
your obeysaunce. This may well be quod the
duke/ but than maye fortune to fall/ as I shall
shewe you/ that is. Whan our enemyes seeth
that we haue passed ouer the mother/ you into
Portingale or I into Gascoyne/ or elles Iuglers
or at Cologne. Than the kynge of Spayne
wyll entre with great puyssaunce/ for I haue
herde that he hathe foure thousande speares/
frenchmen and bretons/ and he shall spende as
many mo in his owne countrey. And also the
duke of Burbon dothe to the frenche kynge
meth after with two. M. speares/ and assone
as he cometh he wyll ryde forwarde: so that I se
be than at home in our countreys/ or we can
assemble togyder agayne/ as we be nowe/ our
enemyes shall do vs great domage. Than
the kynge sayde. Well than lette vs kepe styll
the feldes in the name of god/ as for my men
be fers he enough/ and are of good myndes to
aduenture/ and I with them.

THus they determyned to abyde
the comynge of the duke of Bur-
bon/ to se if they shulde be fought
withall than or nat/ for they all
demaunded nothinge but bataple.
The tyme went rype for warde and the sonne
mounted/ and the dayes shewed meruayleously
for it was about myd somer/ whan the sonne
was in his strength/ and specially in Spayne
and Grenade/ and in the hote countreys of
Septentryon. Nor after Pyrell there fell no
rayne nor swetnes fro Heuyn/ wherby euery
thynge was dryed on the erthe. The englysshe
men eate grapes whan they myght get them/
and dranke of the hote wynes/ and the more
they dranke the more they were set a fyre/ and
therby brente their lyuers and longes/ for that
hete was contrary to their nature. Englysshe
men are nourysshed with good metes and with
ale/ whiche kepeth their bodyes in temper: and
there the nyghtes were hoote/ because of the
great hete in the day/ and the mosquytes me-
rueylously colde/ whiche dyspleased them. For
in the nyght they coulde haue no rayngnes on
them/ and so slepte all naked/ and in the mor-
nynge colde take them or they were ware and
that caste them in to feuers and fluxes with-
out remedy. And as well dyed great men as
meane people.

Howe the duke of Lancastre gaue
lycence to his men/ and howe a ha-
raulte was sente to the kynge of Ca-
stylle/ and howe three knyghtes of En
glande went to speke with the king
of Castylle for a sauconduct/ for the
dukes men to passe through his coun-
trey. Cap. C.iiii.

BEholde nowe and se
howe fortune tourned. Pe
maps well beleue that the
duke of Lancastre beynge
in the realme of Castylle/
coulde neuer haue lost by
bataple/ nor his men dys-
comfetted/ nor lose his men as he dyd in that
voyage/ by reason of sykenes. And hym selfe
also nygh dead. And sir Johan Holande who
was constable of the hoost/ whan he saw his
frendes and men thus infected with this ma-
lady/ without remedy/ and herynge the com-
playnt/ of one and other saynge ech to other.
Sy the duke of Lancastre hath brought vs to
dye in Spayne/ cursed be this voyage. We
wyll neuer haue Englysshman more to come
out of Englande to serue hym. He spurneth a
gaynst pryche/ he wolde his men shulde kepe

the countrey whan it is wonne. And whan his men be all deed/ who shall chamne kepe it? Lyke wyse wyth nat that he can any skyll of the warre/ sythe he seeth that none cometh agaynst hym to fyght in batayle. why nolde he nat drawe than into Portugale or into some other place/ than he shulde nat haue the domage nor losse that he hath/ for thus we shall all dye without any strokes. Whan sir Iohan Holande herde and vnderstode these wordes/ for the honoure and loue of his lorde the duke of Lancastre/ whose doughter he had maryed/ he came to the duke and sayd quickly to him. Sir/ it must behoue you to take newe and sharpe counsayle/ your people be in a harde case/ and lykely to dye by sythamesse/ if nede shulde forsume they are nat able to ayde you. they be wery and in a harde case/ and their horses dede/ so that noble men and other are so discoraged that they are nat lyke to do you any good seruyce at this tyme. Than sayd the duke. And what is beste than to do/ I wyll beleue counsaile for it is reason. Syr/ quod the constable/ We thynke it were beste ye gaue lycence to euery man to departe where as they thynke beste/ and your selfe to drawe outher into Portugale or into Gascoyne/ for ye are nat in the case to ryde forwarde. That is trewe quod the duke/ and so I wyll do. Saye you to them how I do gyue them leaue to departe whyder it pleaste the/ outher in to Castyle or in to Fraunce/ so they make no false treaty wyth our enemyes/ for I se well for this season our warre is paste/ And paye euery man their wages/ and yf any be dye they m for their costes. Syr/ quod the constable this shall be done.

Sir Iohan Holande made it be knowen by a trumpet in euery lodgyng/ the entencion of the duke of Lancastre/ howe he dyd gyue lycence to euery man to departe/ whyder they lyst/ and that euery capytayne shulde speke with the constable/ and they shulde be so payed that they shulde be content. This tydynges reioyced some/ some as desyred to departe to chaunge the ayre. Than the barones and knyghtes of Englande toke counsayle/ howe they myght retourne in to Englande. It was thought impossyble for them to retourne by the see/ for they had no shyppes redy/ and were farre fro any porte. And also their men were so sicke with fluxes and fyres/ that there were many dede/ and so sicke/ that they coude nat endure trauayle on the see. Whan all thynges considered they thought it beste to repayre home through the realme of Fraunce. Than spake sayr Hewe/ but he sayd nothyng vnto all the captayns that were wyse tyll they were all assembled. Than sayd sayr Hewe/ we haue made these open warre. The kynge of Englande in his youthe is entysed in this warre wyth the kynge of Castyle/ also the kynge of Arragon/ for he is alyed wyth the frenche kynge. And also he hath done to hym great displesyr/ he hath take and layd in prison at Barsalone the archebysshop of Burdeux/ whom I sente thyder to demaunde the arrerages that the realme of Aragon owyth to the kynge of Englande our soueraygne lorde. And to sende to the frenche kyng it is harde for vs to do. It is sore of/ and perauenture whan our messages cometh to the kynge (he is yonge) and perauenture his counsayle wyll do nothynge for vs. for sir Oliuer of Clysson constable of Fraunce hateth vs mortally/ for he wyll say that the duke of Bretayn his great aduersary/ wyll become englysh. Than some other that were of great renome and imaginacyon sayd. All thynges consydered/ we thynke it best to allay the kyng of Castyle/ we thynke he wyll lyghtly condyscende to suffre vs to passe through his countrey peasably/ and to gette a sauconducte fro the kynges of Fraunce/ Aragon/ and Nauer.

This counsayle was taken/ kepte and herde/ and a Haraulde called Derby was sente forthe to the kynge of Castyle with letters. This haraulde rode forthe and came to Medena de campo/ and there he founde the kynge of Castyle/ and than he kneled downe and delyuered his letters. And the kynge opened them and redde them/ they were written in frenche. Whan he hadde well vnderstande them he turned hym and smyled/ and sayde to a knyght of his. Go and make this haraulde good chere/ he shall be answered to nyght and departe to morowe. Than the kynge entred in to his secrete chambre and sent for sir Phylyppe of Lygnac and for sir gaultyer of Dalfac/ and red to them the letters/ and demaunded of them what was beste to do. I shall shewe you the substaunce of the matter. Syr/ Iohan Holande constable of the duke of Lancastres hoost/ wrote to the kynge of Castyle/ desyrynge

desyrynge

vysyting hym to fende by the herault letters of credence for. ii. of his englysshe knyghtes to go and come there to speke and to treate with hym. Than these knyghtes answered & sayd. Sir it were good ye knewe this / for than shall you knowe what they demaunde. Well quod the kyng / me thynke it is good. Than there was made redy a barge / wherein / accompanyed with sir Thomas Percy / they went and came at the poynting of the constable. This barge was sealed with the kynges armes / & rowed with his owne barge / & an other barge the herault and trompettes in to warde. Than he returned to Arde where the duke & constable were / & the herault delyuered the letters to the constable. Than the knyghtes were clothed & dyuersly go. Sir Thomas Percy / sir Thomas Symon / sir Johan Dambreticourt / and these knyghtes were charged to go on this message to the kyng of Castile. and they depted all one as they myght for some thynge be long / for there were many sycke and lacked phisicions and medycyns / and also fyll be vytayles. Thus Englysshe ambassadours passed by the townes of Arpent / and there the constable of Castyle sir Oliuere of Clysson made the good chere / and made them suppe. And the next daye he sente with them a knyght of his of Tyntemache a Breton / to bryng them the more surely to the kyng / for encountryng of the pyetons of whom there were many spredde abrode. & so long they rode that they came to Medena de Campo / and there they founde the kynge who had gret desire to know what they wolde. & whan they were alyghted at their lodgyng & chaunged & refreshed the they went to the kyng / who made to them good semblaunt / & were brought to hym by the knyghtes of his house. Than they delyuered to the kyng letters fro the dukes Constable / but none fro hym selfe / for as than he wolde not write to the kynge / but they sayd. Sir kyng / we be sent hyder to you fro the erle of Huntyngdon / Constable with the duke of Lancastre / & certaynly ye ought of the great mortalyte and sore sykenesse that is amonge our men. Therfore the constable desyreth you / that ye wolde to all suche as he lyketh to haue their helthe / open your cyties and good townes / and suffre them to entre to refresh them / and to recouer their helth if they maye. And also that suche as haue to doo to passe in to Englande by lande / that they maye passe without daunger of you / of the kyng of Nauerr / and of the French kyng but playnly to retourne in to their owne countreis. Sir / this is the desyre and request that we make vnto you / as at this tyme. Than the kyng answered and sayd soberly. Sirs / we shall take counsayle and aduise what is good for vs to do / & than perfourmde answered / than the kynghtes sayd. Sir / that lyketh vs.

How the three knyghtes obteyned a sauconduct of the kyng of Castyle for their people to passe / & howe dyuers of the englysh men dyed in Castyle / & howe the duke of Lancastre fell in a great sykenesse. Cap. C. v.

Thus they departed fro the kynge at that tyme / and went to their lodgynges / & there tarryed all ye day & the next day tyll none / than they went to ye kyng. Now I shall shewe you what answere ye kyng had of his constable. This request greatly troubled the kyng / for he sawe well his enemys wolde depte out of his realme / & he thought in hym selfe he wolde agre therto / yet he was counsayled to the contrary but / he sent for the .iii. freche capitayns / sir Gaultier of Pallacke and sir Wyllm of Lignac. and whan they were come he right sagely shewed the the desire & requeste of ye constable of the englysh be host / and herupon he demaunded of them to haue their counsayle. First he desyred sir Water Pallacke to speke. he was lothe to speke before other of the kynges counsayle there / but he was sayne so to do the kyng so sore desyred hym. & so by the kynges commaundement he spake & sayde. Sir ye are come to the same ende that we haue alwayes sayd. & that was / ye your enemys shulde wast the selfe / they are nowe discomfyted without any stroke stryking. sir / if ye said folkes desyre to haue comforte & refresshyng in your countre / of your gentylnesse ye maye well graūt it them / so that whatsoeuer they requyre their helthe / they retourne nat agayne to the Duke nor to the kynge of Portugale / but than to depte the streight way in to their owne countreys. And that in the Terme of

fyue yere

fayr peere they arme them nat agaynst you nor
agaynst the realme of Caſtyle. We thynke ye
ſhall gette right well a ſafeconducte for them
of the kynge of Fraunce and of the kynge of
Nauarre/ to paſſe peaſably throughe theyr
realmes. Of this anſwere the kynge was ryght
ioyfull/ for they counſayled hym nat to goo
to his pleaſure/ for he had nat cared what hurt
hym he had made ſo that he myght haue ben
quyte of the Engliſh tunes. Than he ſayd to
ſir Water Paſſache. Sir/ ye haue well and
truely counſayled me I thanke you/ and I
ſhall do accordyng to your aduyſe. Than the
thre Engliſh knyghtes were ſent for.

Whan they were come they entred into the
counſayle chãbre. Than the biſſhop of Bur
ges chaunceller of Nauarre/ who was well
langaged ſayd: ſirs ye knyghtes of Englãd
perteynyng to the duke of Lãcaſtre/ and ſent
hyder fro his counſaill vnderſtande that the
kyng here of his pytie and gentylneſſe/ wyll
ſhewe to his enemyes all the grace he may.
And ſirs ye ſhall accounte to your ſouerayne/
and ſhewe hym fro the kyng of Caſtyle/ that
he ſhall make it to be anſwered throughout his
hooſt by the ſowne of a trumpet/ that his re
ame ſhalbe open and redy to receyue all the
Engliſh tunes holdyng the/ to that at thentre
of euery cyte or towne/ they laye downe their
armure and weapons. And there ſhall they
fynde men redy to bryng them to their lodgy
ges. And there all their names to be written
and delyuered to the capitayne of the towne/
to thentent they ſhulde nat returne agayne
in to Galyce nor in to Portugale/ for no ma
ner of buſynelle/ but to depte in to their own
countrees allone as they may. And allone as
the kyng of Caſtyle my ſouerayne lorde hath
optayned your ſafeconducte to paſſe throughe
the realmes of Nauer and Fraunce to go to
Calis/ or to any other porte or hauen at their
pleaſure: outher in to Britayne/ Rayntou/
Rochell/ Normãdy/ or Picardy. Alſo ſyr kyn
ges pleaſure is/ that all ſuche knyghtes or ſqui
ers of any nacyon whatſoeuer it be/ that en
tred in to this vyage/ in any wyſe arme nat
them ſelfe for ye ſpace of ſixe yere agaynſt the
realme of Caſtyle/ and that they ſwere thus
to do whan they take the ſafeconducte. And of
this cõpoſycyon/ ye ſhall haue letters open to
beare to your conſtable/ and to ſuche cõpany
as ſhal you lyghte. Theſe knyghtes thanked the kynge and his counſayle of their an
ſwere/ ſayd: ſir there be tweayne articles in
your anſwere/ we can nat tell if they will be ac
cepted or nat. If they be nat/ we ſhall fynde a
mayne to your ſore hurte/ if be come nat by
ſhall accepte your offeryng. Well ſayd the kyng
is content (quod they of his counſayle) than
the kyng went in to his chambre. And the
ſer knyghtes and his Engliſh Lombardes kept
theyr compayny with the Engliſh knyghtes
and brought them to theyr chãbre/ where
their dyner was redy apparelled for the/ and
there dyned with them. And after dyner had
leyſer and ſpeces in the kynges chambre and
toke their leaue. Their letters were redy/ &
they toke their hoſtes and ſo departed & rode
to Aylecappes/ and the next day they came
to the towne of Arpent & dyned/ and at night
lay at Nop in Calyce/ and the next daye they
came to Auranches there founde a conſtable
Scot ſuppoſed that in this meane ſeaſon/ one
of the duke of Lancaſters great barons dyed
a right valyant man/ called the lorde Fitzwa
ter: he was greatly bewayled/ but agaynſt
the ſoue[r]aynes pleaſure. His enterment was
honorably done/ the kyng of Portugale and
the duke of Lãcaſtre preſent. And whan theſe
thre knyghtes were come to the Dukes lod
gyng/ they ſhewed all that they had done/ &
ſhewed their letters of confyrmacion of the
ſame. Than ſome ſayde it was a herde cou
enaunt/ and ſome ſayd nay: holdyng opinyon
that it was right counſelle/ perfitely conſyde
ryng the dangers that they were in. Theſe ty
dynges anone ſpredde abrode in the hoſt/ how
the duke had gyuen lycence euery man to de
parte who ſo lyſt. Than ſuche as were ſyche
and ſeble/ deſyryng a freſhe ayre/ departed as
ſoone as they might/ & toke their leaue of the
duke and of the conſtable/ and than they were
truely payd their wages as curteſly as might
be. And ſome were content with fayre wor
des/ and ſo they departed by cõpanyes. Some
went to Arpent/ ſome to Ruelles/ ſome to Bil
cloppes/ ſome to Nop/ ſoe to Medena de Cã
po & other places: & in euery place they were
welcome and brought to their lodgynges/ &
their names preſented to the capitayne. The
greateſt parte of the gentylmen went to Ar
pent/ bycauſe in that towne there were many
ſtraungers/ Bretons/ frenchmen/ normayns
and poicte-

and poicteuyns / ouer whome sir Oliuer de Clesquyn was capitayne. The Englysshemen trusted better in them than they dyde in the Spaynyerdes / and good cause why.

THus as I haue shewed you / the duke of Lancastres army brake vp at that tyme in Castyle / and euery man sought the best for hym selfe. We maye well beleue that this dyde greatly trouble the duke of Lancastre / and great cause why. for he sawe his enterprise fore putte a backe and brought in to a herde case / Howe bett lyke a valyaunt sage prince as he was / he cõforted hym selfe al well as he myght / for he sawe well it coulde none otherwyse be. And whan the kyng of Portugale sawe howe the matter went / and þ their army was broken of / He gaue lycence to all maner of men / except a thre hundred spearres that were come to serue hym. He retayned them styll / and so departed fro Burache with the duke of Lancastre and his wyfe / & rode to sayn Jaques called Cõpostella. And whan the kyng and the duke were there / the kynge tarved there four dayes: And than departed with all his men / and retourned to his countrey to his wyfe / who laye at Porte / a good cytie in Portugale.

NOwe shall I shewe you what befell of dyuers knyghtes and squyers / suche as were departed fro the duke and gone in to Castyle. Dyuers that were entrete with sickenesse / for all their chaungynge of newe ayre and newe medycins / yet they coulde nat scape the perylle of dethe. Dyuers dyed in Arpent / in the meane season that the kyng of Castyle sent to the kynge of Nauerre and to the frenche kyng for their sauecõductes / to passe peasably (wyche was nat soone optayned) dyuers lordes / knyghtes / and squyers of Englãde dyed in their beddes wyche was gret domage / and a great losse to their countrey. In Arpent there dyed thre great barones of Englande / and ryche men. The first was sir Richarde Burle who had ben marchall of þ dukes hoost / another the lorde Ponynges / & the thyrde the lorde Percy / cosyn germayne to the erle of Northumberlande. And in the towne of Noy dyed sir Mauberyn of Lynters a poyteuyn / a ryght noble and an expert knyght. And in the towne of Ruelles there dyed a great baron called the lorde Talbot: So that there died here and there a.xx. great lordes / and a fourscore knightes / and two hundred squyers. This was a great dysconfesture without any stroke stryken / and there dyed of other meane men / mo than fyue hundred. And I herde it reported of a knyght of Englande / as he retourned through Fraunce (his name was sir Thomas Quynbery) that of fyftene hundred men of armes and foure thousande archers / that the duke of Lancastre hadde brought out of the realme of Englande / there neuer returned agayn the halfe parte.

THe duke of Lancastre tyll in a perylous sickenesse in the towne of sayne Jaques / and often tymes the brute ranne in Castyle and in Fraunce howe he was dead / and surely he was in a great aduenture of his lyfe. Thyrrey of Souuayne a squyer of honour / and squyer for þ dukes body was taken with sickenesse and dyed at Belances / he was naturally borne of the countre of Heynaulte. And his brother Wyllyam of Souuayn was with hym tyll he dyed / who in like wyse was in great aduenture of his lyfe. Of a trouthe there was none so hardy / so ryche / nor so wyse / but that they were in feare of thẽ selfe / & euery day loked for none other thyng but deth / and with this sickenesse there were none infected but alonely the duke of Lancasters cõpany. Among þ frenchmen there were none sicke / wherby dyuers murmuracyons were among the spanyerdes / sayeng / þ kyng of Castyle hath done great grace to these Englyshmen to suffre them to lye and rest them in his countre / and in his good townes / But we feare it wyll cost vs greatly / for they haue or are lyke to bring in to this countrey great mortalyte. Than other wolde saye: Ah / they are christenmen as we be / there ought cõpassion and pyte to be taken one of another. this was the communyng among them: And true it was / þ same season a knyght of Fraunce dyed in Castyle for whom gret sorowe was made: For he was gracyous / courteise / and hardy in armes / and was brother to sir Johan / sir Raynolde / and sir Launcelotte of Uoy / and he was called sir John of Uoy / but howe he dyed I shall tell you. He was in a towne of Castyle / called Seghonie / and laye there in garyson: he had an Impostume in his body / and he

and he was yonge & lusty and tooke no hede therof/ but on a day lept on a great horse and rode out in to the feldes/ & spurred his horse/ so that by gambaldyng of the horse the impostume brake in his body/ and whan he was retourned to his lodgynge he was layde on his bedde sicke/ and that semed well/ for the fourthe daye after he dyed/ wherof his frendes were right soroufull.

Howe sir Johan Holãde/ the duke of Lancastres constable toke his leue of the duke/ and he and his wyfe retourned by the king of Castyle/ who made hym good chere/ and howe sir Johan Dambreticourt wente to Barys to acomplyll he a dede of armes/ betwene hym and Bouciquall.

Cap. C.vi.

We maye well knowe that euery man eschewed this sickenesse that was amonge the Englysh men/ and fledde therfro as moche as they myght. All this season sir Johan Holande the dukes constable was still with the duke/ & certayne knights and squyers/ seynge the season of warre paste/ thynkynge to eschewe the perylll of the sickenesse/ sayd to the constable. Sir/ let vs retourne & we wyll go to Bayone or to Burdeux to take freshe ayre/ and to eschewe this sickenes/ for whan so euer the duke of Lancastre wyll haue vs agayne/ lette hym write for vs/ and we shall soone be with hym/ whiche were better than to kepe vs here in daunger and parell. They called so often on hym that on a day he shewed the duke their murmuracyons. Than the duke sayde. Syr Johan/ I wyll ye retourne and take my men with you/ and recomende me to my lorde the kyng/ and to all my brethern in Englande. With right a good wyll sir quod the constable. But syr/ though sycke men haue had great curtesy by the constable of Castyle/ as in suffering them to entre to a byde there at their ease tyll they recouer their helthes/ yet they maye nat retourne agayne to you in to Castyle nor in to Portugale. and it outher they or we take our waye to Calays throughe Fraunce/ than we must be bounde to beare none armure in syre here after against the realme of Fraũce/ without the kynge our soueraygne lorde be present in propre persone. Than the duke sayd. Syr Johan/ ye knowe well that the frenchemen will take on you and on our men (in case they se them in daunger) all the vauntage they can do. Therfore I shall shewe you whiche waye ye shall passe curtesly throughe the realme of Castyle. And whan ye come in to the entre of Nauarre sende to the kynge/ he is my cosyn/ and in tyme past we hadde great alyaunce together/ whiche are nat as yet broken/ for sith the warre began betwene ỳ kyng of Castyle and me/ we haue amiably written eche to other/ as cosyns & frendes/ nor no warre hath ben made by see betwene vs but the frenchmen haue. wherfore I thynke he wyll lightly suffre you to passe throughe his realme. & whan ye be at sayne Johan Pie de porte/ than take the waye to Busquay and so to Bayon/ than ye be in our heritage: And fro thens ye may go to the cytie of Burdeux without daunger of the frenche men/ and there refresshe you at your ease. And whan ye haue wynde and wether at wyll/ than ye maye take the see & lande in Cornwall or at Hampton/ or there as the wynde wyll serue you. Than sir Johan said your counsayle shalbe fulfylled without any faute.

It was nat long after but that the Constable and his company departed/ and there taryed with ỳ duke and duches/ no mo but his owne houshold seruauntes. And sir Johan Holande had his wyfe with hym and so came to the cytie of Camorres and there he founde the kynge of Castyle/ sir Gaultier of Passacke/ and sir Wyllm of Lignacke/ who made hym good chere/ as lordes and knyghtes do whan they mete eche with other. And truely the kyng of Castyle was gladde to se the departyng of the Englysshmen/ for than it semed to hym ỳ his warre was at an ende/ and thought that there wolde neuer issue agayne out of Englande so many good men of warre/ in the duke of Lancastres tyrell/ to make warre in Castyle. Also he knewe well howe

howe there was great trouble and diſcorde within the realme of Englande. Whan the two kynges ſpeede abode in Caſtile/ in the good cytes and townes (where as the Engliſſhe men lay ſicke and were there to ſeke for their helthe) howe that ſir Johan Hollande was come thyder to retourne agayne in to Engla de. They were right gladde therof/ and ſo brewe to hym/ to the entent to retourne with hym/ As the lorde of Thameulx/ ſir Thomas Percy/ the lorde Lilynton/ the lorde of Bra ſeton/ and dyuers other/ to the nombre of a thouſande horſes. ſuche as were ſicke thought them ſelfe haſte hole/ whan they knewe they ſhulde retourne/ their voyage paſte was ſo paynfull to them.

Than ſir Johan Hollande toke leaue of the kyng of Caſtyle/ the kyng gaue to hym and to his cõpany great gif tes/ with mules and mulettes of Spaygne/ and payde for all their coſtes. And than they rode to ſaynt Dyagons and there reſtyll hed thre dayes/ and in euery place they were welcome and well receyued/ For there were knyghtes of the kynges that dyde conducte them/ and payde alwayes for their coſtes. So longe they rode that they paſſed Spay gne and came to Nauerre/ where as the ba taple had ben before/ and ſo to Pauyers and to Groyne/ and there reſted. for as than they were nat in certayne if the kyng of Nauerre wolde ſuffre them to paſſe throughe his re alme or nat. Than they ſent to hym. ii. knigh tes/ ſir Peter Byſſet and ſir Wylliam Nor wiche. They founde the kynge at Tudela in Nauer/ and there ſpake with hym/ & ſpedde ſo well/ that they had grãt to paſſe through Nauer/ payeng for that they ſhulde take by the way: and aſſoone as theſe knyghtꝭ were retourned/ they departed fro Groyne and ſo came to Pampplona & paſſed the mountains of Roũceaux/ and lefte the way in to Bierne/ and entred in to Biſquay ſo to go to Bapon/ at laſt thyder they came/ and there ſir Johan Holande taryed a long ſpace with his wyfe/ and other of the Engliſſh men rode to Bur deaux. Thus this armye brake vp.

So it was/ in the ſeaſon whyle theſe war res endured in Caſtile/ & that the engliſſhmen kepte the feldes. The lorde Bouciqualt the elder of the. ii. bretherne ſent by an herault to ſir Johan Dãbzeticourt/ defyeng to do with hym dedes of armes: as thre coulſes with a ſpere/ thre with an axe/ and thre with a dag get/ all on horſ backe. the knight was agreed therto. And after that ſir Johan Dampzetti court ſent dyuers tymes to accõpliſſhe their feate/ but Bouciqualt came nat forwarde/ I can nat tell what was the cauſe/ nor I wyll nat ſay but that he was a right good knight/ and metz to haue done a greatter feate in armes than that was. And whan ſir Johan Dãbze ticourt was come to Bayone in the company of ſir Johan Holãde/ he was in dyuers ima ginations on his chalẽge/ and thought that honorably he might nat departe out of thoſe partes (ſeyng he was chalenged to do dedes of armes/ & had graunted therto) without he fulfylled the ſame/ for if he returned in to En gland wout doyng of any thyng/ he thought that the frenchmen wolde ſaye that he depted for feare. Than he toke cõſayle of ſir Johñ Holãde and of other/ what were beſt for him to do. He was counſayled to take the waye throughe Fraũce/ with the ſafeconducte the duke of Burbon had gotte hym/ & ſo to go to Parys/ and there to demaunde for ſir Bouci qualt dzeis by the way/ therby at leſt his ho nour ſhulde be excuſed. This counſayle the knight beleued & folowed the ſame/ and ſo de pted fro Bayon and entred in to Bierne/ & ſo came to Artoys & there founde therle of Foix who made hym good chere/ & at his depteyng the erle gaue hym. ii. C. florens and a good horſe. Than he rode forthe through Byern & entred in to the coũtre of Bigoze and ſo in to Tholouſin & in to Carcaſſynois/ and in his cõpany was Wylliam of Sounayne & other ſquiers of Heynault/ retournyng in to their countreis. So longe he rode that he came to Parys/ & at that tyme the kyng was in Nor mandy/ and ſir Bouciqualt as it was ſhewed hym was in Aragon. Than ſir Johñ Dam pzetcourt to acquyte his enterpzice/ preſented hym ſelfe before certayne of the great barons of Fraunce beyng at Parys/ and ſhewed the howe he was come thyder to acquite hymſelf of his chalenge. And whan he hadde taryed there. viii. dayes he depted & came to Calais and they of Heynault in to their owne coun treis. Thus lytell and litell the armye that went into Spayne and into Portugale brake vp.

Howe

How we the duke of Burbone departed fro Auygnon to go in to Castyle with all his host / and came to Burgus in Spayne / and there founde the kyng of Castyle: and how we the duke of Lancastre herde those tydynges: & how we the duke of Burbone departed fro the kyng / and went streyght agayne in to Fraunce. Cap. C.vii.

I thought to be supposed / that the duke Loys of Burbon (who was at the begynnyng of this enterprise and armye / in to Castyle / as dayncodde to be as chefe) was well enformed howe the maters went. If he had knowen it / it shuld haue ben so / he wolde haue made the more halte / for it was long or he entred in to Spaygne / for he tolke a longe waye by Auygnon to se hym that wrote hym self pope Clement / and there tarved a long space / & whan he departed he rode to Mountpelyer & there tarved a fyue dayes / and also at Belyers & Carcallone / Narbone and Parpynyon / and than entred in to the realme of Aragon / to se the yonge kynge there and his cosyn ye quene polant of Bare / and so rode to Barelona and there founde the kyng and the quene his cosyn / and a great nombre of the lordes of the countrey that were come thyder to fest hym / and so they dyde. and whan he had ben there a fyre dayes he went to Valecrensia the great and there he herde fure tydynges howe ye Englysshe armye was withdrawen and passed home warde / and howe that sir Johan Holande was in Mauer goyng howarde / with a great parte of his copany / and howe there had ben a great dethe among them. And also he herde howe his cosyn the duke of Lancastre laye sicke in Compostella in Galyce: and in dyuers places it was sayde / howe he was deed. Howe be it though there were as thanne but lytell to do in Spaygne / yet he thought to passe further / and sende worde of his comyng to the kyng of Castile who was ryght gladde therof / and to mete with hym / came to Burgus in Spayne / and there prouyded greatly for his receyuynge / & suche as were there with hym of Fraūce / were ryght glaude to se the duke of Berbone. Thus the duke passed Valencensia and Saragosa & all the pontes / and entred in to Spayne and came to Burgus / and there he was well receyued / & there was sir Dyuet of Clesquyn constable of Castyle and sir Wylliam of Lignacke / sir Gaultier of Pallacke / sir Johan of Barres sir Johan & sir Raynolde of Roy and dyuers other knyghtes of Fraunce / who lefte their garysons to come and se the duke of Burbone / for there was as than no doute of the Englysshmen nor of the portugaloys / for they were all withdrawen. And the Englysshmen forsake their garysons that they had won in Galyce / for they knewe well they coude nat resyst the army of Fraunce / seyng their compaignyons were departed dyuers wayes / as ye haue herde before.

Tydynges came in to Galyce howe the duke of Burbon was cōe in to Spaygne / and had brought with hym great nōbre of knyghtes of Fraūce / bitte and noyse was more thanne it was in dede / by the one halfe. The cōmons were in great dout / that ye duke of Burbon wolde haue entred there with great force and puissaunce / but that the duke of Lancastre was there amonge them / who greatly conforted them. Tydynges came to the duke of Lancastre / howe that his cosyn the duke of Burbone was come in to Spayne / and was at Burgus with the kynge / and incontynent he sent worde therof to the kynge of Portugale / desyring hym to gather agayne togyther his people / for he knewe nat what ye frenche men wolde do / seyng the Englysshe men were auoyded the countrey. The kyng of Portugale / by reason of suche alyaunce as was betwene them he consented / and departed fro Lirbone and came to Compmbres / and there made his somons throughout his realme / euery man to be redy. And than he came to the cytie of Porte to drawe nere to the countrey of Galyce / and to his father in lawe the duke of Lancastre / who was nat as than in good poynte to ryde / for the sickenesse that he had / howe beit he began to amende. Nowe let vs speke of the duke of Burbon / who was with the kyng of Castyle / who made hym as good chere as he coude / and all other prelates and

lordes

lordes of the realme. And many counsayles there was betwene them/to determyne what they shulde do/ outher to ryde in to Galyce or els to returne. The kyng of Castyle and they of his counsayle sawe clerely/how we the mater shulde belle be for their profyte/and sayd eche to other whan they were togyder. By reason of these frenchmen our landes are wasted and dyssroyed/though they be come to kepe it/we haue taken by them great domage/wherfore we thinke it shulde be good/ to thanke the duke of Burbon for the payne and trauayle that he hathe endured in comynge hyder. And lette vs defyre hym louyngly to withdrawe his men of warre/seynge he nedeth nat to tary here for any warre that is aparente(for as for Galice) the recouery therof shall be but a small mater for vs. Thus they of the kynges counsayle comuned eche with other/and further they sayd. If we ones receyue these people they must be payed of their wages/if nat they will pyll and robbe all the realme/ for the comon people all redy begynneth to complayne: & therfore we thynke it were best to gyue them honest congy to departe. This counsayle was byholden and the kynge well contented there to/ for he sawe well it was the most profyte for his people and realme/ for they coulde take no hurte but it shulde be to his domage and preiudice. So that one daye in the kynges presence the archebyshop of Burgus to the duke of Burbon & before many of the knyghtes of Fraunce shewed and declared to theym their ententes/ as ye haue herde before. And the duke of Burbon and dyuers other knyghtes of Fraunce/ who had rather retourne than to abyde there (for the countrey was nat mete for their complexions) were well contente to retourne/and prepared themselfe therupon. and bycause the duke of Burbone was lasse that came/ he retourned first/and toke his leaue of the kynge/ and sayd howe he wolde returne by the realme of Nauerre. There were great gyftes gyuen him or he departed/and might haue had more if he wolde haue taken it/ but he refused euery thynge/except mules and muletes/ and doggis of Spayne. Than it was publisshed that all frenchmen might at their pleasure departe out of Spayne/ and retourne in to Fraunce. but there tayed styll sir Olyuer of Clesquyn constable of Spayne and the marshals/ and a thre hundred speares of bretons/poictreyns and rayngtons. Thus the duke of Burbone returned. Whan he had taken his congy of the kynge and the quene/ and of other lordes of Castyle/ he was conueyed to Groyne/ and so in to Nauarre. And where so euer he came he was welcome and well receyued. for the duke of Burbone was gracyous/curteyse/honorable/and well renomed. And the kynge of Nauerr receyued him louyngly/and neuer shewed any maner of yuell wyll to wardes the frenche kynge/in that he had taken a way fro him his enheritaūce of the countye of Cuttur in Normandy/for he sawe well the frenche kyng that was as than nephewe to the duke of Burbon/ was in no defaute therof/ for whā it was done he was but ponge. But swetely he shewed the duke all his busynesse/ defyringe hym to be a good meane betwene hym and his cosyn the frenche kynge. The duke promysed hym so to be. Than the duke departed/ and passed thorough the realme of Nauer peasably/ and all other suche as wolde passe. and thus they passed the mountayns of Rousseaulx/ & all alonge the countrey of Bastelles/ and so entred in to Bierne and in to Saluaterra.

Howe the erle of Foyz receyued honourably the duke of Burbon/ and of the great giftes that he gaue him/ and how sir Willyam of Lygnac and sir Gaultier of Bassackes cōpany departed out of Spayne/ and of the incydent that fortuned in the towne of Saynt Phagon. Cap. C.viii.

Whan the Erle of Foyz beynge at Ortays/ vnderstode that the duke of Burbon was at Saluaterra he was glad therof/ and sente for his knyghtes to be aboute him. And on a day in great arape he rode with a fyue hundred knyghtes and squyers two leages out of Ortays/ and mette with the duke of Burbon/ who in lyke wyse rode with a great rout of knyghtes and squyers/and there they met amyably/as great prynces ought to do. And whan they had comuned togyther a certayne space (as it was

shewed me) whan I was at Otays. The erle of Foyse drewe hym a parte in the felde with all his company/and the duke abode styll in a nother parte. Than the Erle sente to the duke thre knyghtes/named syr Espayne de Lyon/ sir Peter Capestan/and sir Benaunt of Nawailes. And whan they came before the duke they sayd. Sir/here is a present that my lorde the erle of Foys hath sent/to you at your returnynge out of Spayne/for he knoweth well ye haue been at great dyspence/Therfore syr he dothe gyue you at your entrynge in to his countrey of Bierne/eyght thousande frankes/and this mulette/and two courssers and two palfreys. Syrs quod the duke/I thanke the erle of Foyse/But as for the florens I wyll take none/as for the other present I wyll receyue them with a good wyll. thus the florens were refused/and the Mules and horses receyued. Than the erle of Foys came to the duke/and brought hym in to the towne of Otays/and lodged him in his owne place/& all other were lodged in the towne. the duke was thre dayes in Otays/and had great chere with dyners and suppers. And there the Erle of Foyse shewed ỳ duke a great parte of his estate. On the fourthe daye the duke departed/and the erle gaue to ỳ knyghtes and squiers great gyftes. As it was shewed me/the compynge thyder of the duke of Burbon/coste the erle of Foyse ten thousande frankes. Thus the duke departed and went in to Fraunce/and rode by Mountpeyer & by the cyte of Puy/and by the countye of Forestes/whereof he was lorde by the lady his wyfe.

For all the departyng of ỳ duke of Burbon (as ye haue herde) out of Spayne/ sir Willyam Lignac and sir Gaultier of Passac departed nat so soone/nor the companyes to the nombre of a thre thousande speares and syxe thousande of other men of warre/and lytell and lytell euer they departed. They were many out of wages and very of the warres/ and so retourned ruell horsed and ruell apayrelled/all to torne and ragged. The metynge with suche people was nothynge profytable/ for they robbed whome soeuer they met/and made warre to all marchaūtes and to men of the churche/and to poore people of the countre where any thinge was to gette. These rutters sayde howe the warre had vndone them/ and howe the kynge of Castyle hadde ruell payed them their wages/wherfore they sayde they wolde pay them selfe. And surely suche cytees/ castels/and good townes as were not stronge in Castyle/douted them greatly. and agaynst them townes and cytes closed their gates for feare of parels/for all was havocke with them without it were well defended. Suche knyghtes and squyers as came by the erle of Foyse to se hym were well receyued/and had gyftes and rewardes geuen them eyght largely. As it was shewed/the comyng and retournynge of men of warre/that passed by therle of Foyse for the sayd iourney/coste hym the some of .xl. thousande frankes.

This season there fell an incydent in the towne of saynt Phagon in Spayne after the departynge of the duke of Burbone/ the whiche coste fyue hundred mennes lyues. So it was that whan sir Gaultier of Passac and sir Willyam of Lignac entred fyrste in to Spayne/their companyes sprede abrode in to dyuerse places in the countrey/and aboute the towne of sayntc Phagon/whiche was a good plentuous countrey. There were many of the bretons/potteuyns/and augenyns/of xaintonge and men of the lowe countreys. And whan they entred fyrste in to sayntc Phagon/ they entred by syxe/ten/fyftene and twenty/so that at laste there were mo than fyue hundred of one and other/maysters and seruauntes/ and euer as they came they lodged them selfe/ and pilled and robbed their hostes/and brake vp coferes & cupbordes/and wolde take what they foūde. And whan the citesyns sawe their demeanoure/to the entent that there shulde no mo entre. whan these straungers were at their reste they cryed alarum in the towne/and the spanyardes were redy for the same all the day before. And so they entred in to the lodgynges where the straungers were/and as they were founde they were slayne without pyte or mercye/and happy were they that were saued. the same nyght there were slayne mo than fyue hundred. The nexte morowe these tydynges came to the capytayns that were comynge to the same towne warde. than they drewe them togyder to take counsayle/And the capytayns determyned that it was no tyme than to be reuenged. for if they dyde/they shulde fynde all other townes and cytes against them/wherof

their

they? enemys wold be right ioyous, but they sayd that whan their voyage shulde haue an ende þ in their retourning they wold thanke them accordynge to their deserues. So they passed forwarde and spake nothynge therof, but they thought the more,

NOw than so it happed that whan euery man returned, except suche as were styll abydyng with the constable sir Diyues of Clysson, and specially those of þ lowe countreys, whan they came together they sayd eche to other, Now lette vs pay for our welcome that we had at sayne Phagon. Lette vs quit them at our departyng. To this they were all agreed, and so gathered together to the some of a thousande fyghtyng men, And they apon then sayne Phagon, entred in to the towne (without any mystrayte that they of the cyte had to them, for they trusted all thynges had ben forgote) The straungers cryed alarme in a hundred places, and cryed slee the villains of the towne, and take all that they haue, for they haue well deserued it. Thanne these bretons and other entred in to the howses where they thought to wyn most, and brake vp coffers, and slewe the men dowue in euery place. They slewe the same day more than four hundred, and the towne robbed and spoyled, and more than halfe brente, which was great damage. Thus these ruters were reuenged for the deth of their companyons, and than they departed fro sayne Phagon.

Howe the kyng of Castel and his counsayle were ryght content with sir William of Lignac and sir gaultier of Passackes company and howe the duke of Lancastre departed fro sayne James to Bayon. Ca. C.xxiii.

TIdynges came to the kyng of Castyl how these companyons had robbed and pilled the good towne of sayne Phagon, & alaste the cursyng to the nombre of a four hundred, & nigh brent þ towne. And it was sayd that if the englysshe men had wonne it with assaute, they wolde not haue sauite so cruelly as they dyd. The same tyme the two knyghtes were present with the kynge, and they were greatly reproued by the kyng and hys counsayle. They excused them and sayd: as god might be their helpe they knewe nothynge therof, but they sayd, they had herde howe they were not content with them of that towne, because whan they entred fyrst in to the realme and came to sayne Phagon, there were certayne of their company slayne, whych grudge by lykyhod they haue borne ever sythe in their hertes. It behoued the kyng of Castyl to let this matter passe, for it wolde haue coste hym ouer much to haue hadde it amended, But he dar not so good wyl to the capteins after, as he dyd before, and that was well seen, for whan they departed and tolde leaue of the kyng to retourne in to Fraūce, yf he had ben pleased with the, it ought to be supposed they shulde haue ben better payed of their wages than they were. For the duke of Burbone that came last and was first that departed, he and his company had all that there, and well rewarded. Thus these people issued out of Castyle by dyuerse wayes, some by Byscaye some by Aragon. Such as were noble and honeste knyghtes and squyers, and lyued well and kepte good rule, they departed for and well horsed and suche as were hardy and aduentured to robbe and pylle, they were well horsed and wel furnished with gold and syluer, and their males full of baggage. Thus it falleth in suche aduentures some wyn and some lese, The kyng of Castyle was ioyfull whan he saw he was clene delyuered of such people.

NOwe let vs somwhat speke of þ duke of Lancastre who lay sicke in hys bed in the towne of sayne James and the burbes hys wyfe with hym and his doughter Katheryn. It is to be thought that the duke day & nyght was not without anoye & for he saw his busynes in a hard parte, and many of his good knyghtes ded, such as he with muche payn had brought with hym out of England. For ther was none that wold treate for any composicion to be had betwene hym and the kynge of Castyle, ner that he wolde take the ryches hys wyfe enherytour of Castell, nor gyue her any parte there of. But he herde his

men say, that they were enfourmed by pylgrymes that came to saynt Jaques, out of Flaunders. Brabant, Heynaut, and other countreis, as they came throughe the realme of Spayngne: They herd the men of warre say to them. Syrs, ye shall go to saynt Jaques and ther ye shall fynde the duke of Lancastre, who kepeth hys chambre for fear of ȳ lyght of the sonne. Recommaund us to hym and demaund of hym in ours behalfe yf we have mad hym sayr warre, or that he be content with us or not. The Englisshmen wer wont to say that we could better daunce than make warre. But now is the tyme come that they rest and lyng, and we kepe the feldes and our frouters, in such wyse that we lese nothyng nor take any domag. Such tales were told to the duke and he toke all in wroth for he had none other remedy. And as soone as he myght ryd he departed, and the duches and hys doughter fro saynt Jaques. For the kyng of Portugale had sent for hym by the erle of Nowaire his constable with a fyue hundred speares, and with him sir Joban Ferant the Ponase of Congus, Ageas Copile, Uernale Martyn de Walo, Galope Ferrant, syr Julde Perez, Jean Rodighes de Lay, Gamnes de Falues, all barons. Thus they departed fro Compostella, and so rod tyll they came to the cytie of Porte. Ther the kyng and the queme of Portugal made them good chere.

And anon after the kyng and the quen departed and went to Conymbres, a dayes iourney fro thens, and the duke taryed ther a fu monthes. In the meane season he ordayned for all hys busynesse and hadde galyes of the kyng, and they wer apparelled, and had with hym the mayster patrone of Portugale, named Alphons Vzcart. And whan they saw good tyme to take the se, the duke and all hys entred in to their vessells, and disancred and toke the se, and wer within a day and a half of Bayon, whych was more than therefore, and rydeages of. And ther the duke tooke lan dyng and found not ther hys Joban Holland nor the other Englysshe men, for they were departed and gon to Burdeux and ther toke shyppyng and so in to England.

The duke taryed at Bayon along spac, and kyed ther of dyuerse of Bayon and Burdeux, and of the lande of Acquytayne of all that was under the obeysaunce of kyng Richarde of Englande, for he had commyssyon sufficient to receyue the pzoffytes of all thole landes, and was called duke and governour of them. Nowe lette us leave to spek a season of the duke of Lancastre and of ȳ Englysshmen, and let us treat of other maters.

Howe the erle of Armynake toke great pain to treat with the compaynons todeparte out of the realme of Fraunce. Cap. C.f.

In this seasō therle of Armynake was in Auuergne was intreatyng of the compaynons such as laye in fortresses in gryson In Auuergne, Quercy, & Lymosen, thys erle hadde great desyre to cause these capitayns to departe out of the realme of Fraunce, and to leaue suche holdes as they were in, for these landes were sore oppressed by them and greatly impouerished. And so he was in communication with them all, except Geffray Teate Noyre, who helde wrichaboze agaynst therle of Armynake. These sayd capitayns should receyue at one payment, two hundred and .l. thousand frankes. And to pay thys somme the sayd landes were bounde, for they were glad to be delyuered of these people, for otherwyse they coude nat labeur the erth, nor occupy their feate of marchaundise nor do any thyng for feare of these pyllers, wythout they were pacted by them. And the charge of their pacteyng drawe well nere to the somme that they shuld pay to haue them departed. And thoughe these countreis had warre with the Englysshmen yet there were amonge them but fewe of the nacyon of Englande: But there were Gascoyns, Bretons, almayns, sorsons, and men of dyuers countreis, who were gathered together to do pyell deles. And whan the composicions of the redempcyon was made and agreed: they excepted Geffray Teate noyre and hys fosterers for he wolde do nothyng for them. Than therle of Armynake prayed the erle Dolphyn of Auuergne, who was a great capytayne, that he shulde treat with ȳ sayd

sayd Geffray/and that he wolde do so moche to go in to Fraunce to the kyng and his coũ sayle/the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyn/ whe as than had the gouernyng of ꝑ realme to haue theyr counsayle and assystence. For without their counsayle agreement/ they durst stepe vp no ferthe in the countrey. The Erle Dolphyn of Auuergne at the requeste of the erle of Armynake toke his iourney to Paris as than the kynge was nat there/ he was at Roane. Thyder rode the erle/and there shewed all the mater to the kynge and his counsayle/but he was nat hastely dispatched/for they douted the treatie of these people/as sayd Sir erle Dolphyn/ we knowe well that the erle of Armynake and you wolde right glad lye the honour and profyte of the realme/ for your partes lyeth therin. ye haue fayre landes there/ But we doute greatly/ that whan these captayns gascoyns/ bernoys/ & other be payed suche somes of money as the compo sicyon requyreth/ wherby the countre shulde be empouerisshed/ ꝑ than within thre or four monethes after they shulde retourne againe and make worse warre than they dyd before/ and entre agayne in to these fortresses. than the erle of Dolphyn answered and sayd. Sirs it is our ententes/ the tayle cessed and gadered/that the money shall nat passe out of Clermonde or Ryon/tyll we be certifyed and in suretie of these people. Well quod the dukes we are content that the money be leuyed and put in sure kepyng in some place in the same countre/ for at the leest it shall serue to make them warre/ if they wyll nat come to some agreable treatis. And that the erle of Armynake and you/the byll hoppe of Clermonde and the bill hoppe of Puy/take ye the charge of this mater/and do so as it may be for your honour/and profite to the coũtre. With right a good wyll sir quod the erle/ and so departed fro the kyng and his vncles fro Roane/ and founde the erle of Armynake his brother at Clermont in Auuergne/ with many lordes of the countre tarrynge there vpon his comynyng. and there he shewed worde for worde that he had with the frenche kyng and his vncles/and the bourgs that were made in ꝑ mater: And how it was their ententes that the tayle shulde be gadered/ and the money therof gadered togyder and putte in suretie in some certayne place/ tyll the very entente of these pylleys might be knowen/ who kepeth castels and garysons agaynst the realme. the same is our entencion quod the erle of Armynake/ and suche it pleaseth the kynge and his counsayle we shall go further in the mater: but for the more suretie it must behoue vs to haue a good and a sure truse with thẽ for all the countrey/tyll the tayle be cessed and gadered. Than there were ambassadours assigned by the erle of Armynake to go and speke with Perot le Bernoys and Amergot Wascell. These two were as soueraygns of the fortresse that they helde on that syde the ryuer of Burdone/ and also to speke with the Borge of Compaygne/ with Bernarde of ꝑ Isles/ with Oliuer Barde abton/ with Seghewe the lorde of Laenplayse/ and dyuers other. All these captayns accorded nat togyder/ for that the one wolde ꝑ other wolde nat. I shall shewe you the reason why.

THey were of dyuers opinyons and of dyuers countreis. They of Armynake / suche as were vnder the obeysaunce of the Erle of Armynake were soone agreed / but all the other wolde nat be ruled by hym. for the chefe company of them and suche as were most renomed to vse grete robbery and pillery were of Bierne / and of the countie of Foix. Howbeit I saye nat but that the erle of Foix wolde the honour of the realme of Fraunce. But whan he herde first howe the erle of Armynake dyde treate with them/ for suche fortresses as they helde in Auuergne/ in Quercy / and in Lymosyn: as he that desyred to knowe the hole substaũce of the mater. Demaunded of them that enformed hym therof/ what the erle of Armynake was mynded to do with ꝑ men that were in the garysons/ whan they were departed out of their holdes/ and whyder he wolde set thẽ in any busynesse or nat. Than he was answered/ and it was said to hym. Sir/ the erle of Armynake wolde kepe them in wages & occupy them in to Lombardy: for as ye knowe well his fader is mayed there/ and before he had Falcone your sone/ for it is thought there shalbe moche a do in Lombardy. whervnto the erle of Foix gaue none answere but fell in to other talkyng/ howbe it he thought neuerthelesse (as it apered aff) for he hadled the mater coyertly. I shall shewe you howe.

The erle of Armynake for any treatie that he coude do to them that were of the countre of Bierne/or of the teneurs of therle of Foix or suche as owed hym any fauour/ coude neuer cause any of them to agree to departe out of their garisons. Nor wolde nat go nother to the erle of Armynake nor to Bernarde his brother in lawe. For therle of Foix who was full of great prudence/ consydred that these two lordes of Armynake & there cosyns/ and with the labriciens were puissaunt men. and sawe howe they gate them frendes on euery parte/ he thought they shulde nat be renforsed/ with them that ought to serue hym. And one thynge that was reasonable the Erle of Foix ymagined. sir Espaygne de Leon shewed it me whan I was at Ortays/ & in lykewise so dyde the erle of Compane/ capitayne of Carlot in Auuergne: and also so dyde the Bourge of Englande. They sayd howe the erle of Foix regarded howe he had had open warre with them of Armynake / thoughe it were peace betwene them (as than) whiche was but a truese/ the whiche was dyuers tymes renewed betwene theym. Therfore he thought that if the erle of Armynake had all those companyons vnder his gouernaunce/ his warres shulde be the fayrer. So that the armynakes and the labricience with their aydes / myght do hym a great displeasure.

This was the cause that suche as owed fauour to therle of Foix/ wolde nat agre to the erle of Armynake. Howe be it they made the beleue that they wolde / but they dyd but dissemble/ for they brake all their apoyntmẽtes. howe be it they rode nat abrode so moche as they dyde before / Whereby alwayes the Erle of Armynake thought to haue come to his purpose. They that agreed to hym were Perotte de Bernoys/ who helde the stronge castell of Salucette/ whiche is chefe and souerayne of all Auuergne and Lymosyne / for their pateryng endured to Rochell. And also Guyllyam of sayne Foye / who helde the castell of Bonteuyll/ and also Margote Marcell/ who helde Loysse before sayne Flour in Auuergne/ and the Bourge of Compaygne and the Englysshe Bourge/ who helde Carlotte. Margote Marcell sayde he was contente/ so that he myght haue in lykewise Perotte/ Bernoys/ and Gessray Teate Noyre/ who helde Madachore/ who was souerayne aboue all other. But he dyde but mocke and dissemble the mater / for he disdayned to fall to any treatie of the erle of Armynakes/ or of any other. For he thought his castell impugnable and well prouyded for seuyn or eyghe yeres/ for he had a passage or two that coude nat be taken fro hym/ but that he myght ryde whan he lyste/ to refresh hym selfe and his company. This Gessray wrote hym selfe in his saueconductes. Gessray Teate Noyre duke of Mandachore/ erle of Lymosyn/ lorde and souerayne of all the capitayns of Auuergne/ Rouergue/ and Lymosyn.

Now let vs leaue to speke of these mateers of farre countreis / tyll we haue cause to returne thetto agayne: And nowe I wyll speke of matters neter home/ as of myne owne nacyon (as it hath ben shewed here before) whan I treated of the ende of the warre of Flaunders / and of the charter of peace that the duke of Burgoyne/ and the duchesse dyde gyue and graunt/ and sealed to them of Gaunt/ in the good towne and noble cytte of Tourney. Therfore nowe to enforce our mater and history/ we wyll speke nowe of the warres of Guerles and of Brabant. And I am quickened so to do/ bycause that the Frenche kyng and the duke of Burgoyne (to whom the mater greatly touched/ by the inconuenientes that gendred therby) were fayne to set to their hãdes to the same warre/ and to come to the bottom therof: And to contynue at length the true history and mater/ I saye thus as foloweth.

Cap. C.xi.

Thowe the erle Reynolde of Guerles/ who had layde all his landes in guage and wyst nat what to do/ cãe for refuge to the archebysshoppe of Coleygne his Vncle / who blamed hym. Thowe ambassadours wente to Berthaulte of Walygnes.

A Longe ſeaſon it was that they of Guerles and they of Brabant had grete hatered togyder / and ſo dyd the countreis to them adioynynge / by reaſon of certayne bondes one agaynſt another. And the mooſt hatered that the brabanders had to the duke of Guerles and to his heyres / was for the towne of Graue / whiche the dukes of Guerles had holden per force a longe ſeaſon agaynſt the brabanſoys. For they ſayd / bycauſe ꝑ the towne of graue ſtode on that ſyde of the ryuer of Muele towardes Brabant / that the duke of Guerles helde it wrongfully. & before ꝑ tyme dyuers cõmunycacions had been and poynctmentes taken / howbeit alwayes the guerloys ſtacke in their herte. Alſo ꝑ guerloys hated the brabãſoys / bycauſe of thre fayre caſtels ꝑ were on that ſyde the ryuer / as Gaulech / Buthe / & Aulle. Whiche caſtelles the duke of Brabãt helde alſo before: And by reaſone (as in redynge I ſhall begynne at the duke of Guerles) Theſe hateredes were often tymes renewed betwene them of Guerles and Brabant. And it was ſuppoſed by dyuers knyghtes and ſquyers that knewe of theyr bedes of armes / that if ſir Edwarde of Guerles who was ſlayne by a marueylous mydent at the batayle of Iulyers / by ꝑ ſhote of an archer that was with the duke Aynceland of Boem duke of Lutenbourge or of Brabante / If he had lyued (with that that his men had had the victorie) he hadde come to his entente in gettyng agayne the thre caſtelles. for he was ſo valiant a man and ſo hardy / that he wolde haue conquered them agayne. ¶ Nowe I wyll declare (as I haue promyſed) how and in what maner theſe forſayd caſtelles came in to the ſignorie of the brabanſoys / and firſt I wyll begyn with the dukes of Guerles.

IN the tyme whan I wrote and ordayned this hyſtorie / there was an Erle of Guerles / called Raynolde / and bycauſe that Guerles is no riche countre / nor ſo great as the duchy of Brabant. This erle came to his lande a ponge man / and had a frewyll to diſpende largely / and thought full lytell of the ende that myght come after. He cared for no thynge but for to accomplyſſhe his pleaſure / and haunted luſtes and tourneys to his grete coſt / to gette hym renome. And euery yere he ſpended four tymes as moche as the value of the reuenewes of his landes. He borowed of the lombardes in dyuers places / he was ſo lyberall and outragious: He ran ſo in dette / that he coulde nat ayde hym ſelfe with any thynge that he had / ſo that his parentes and frendes greatly blamed hym / and ſpecially an vncle of his by his mothers ſyde / He came of the houſe of Ozele / and was archebyſſhop of Coleygne / who ſayde to hym in maner of gyueng hym counſayle. My fayre nephewe Raynolde / ye haue ſo demeaned youre ſelfe / that nowe ye are become a poore manne / and youre lãdes lyeth in pledge in dyuers places. And throughe all the worlde there is but lytell accompte made of poore lordes. Thynke you that ſuche as haue hadde theſe great gyftes of you and profite wyll rendre it againe / as god ayde me no / But whan they ſe you in this poore caſe and haue no more to gyue them / they wyll flye fro youre company and mocke you and youre fouls larges. ye ſhall fynde them no frendes. Thynke nat though I be byſſhoppe of Coleyne / that I ought to breke or myſſill he myne eſtate to helpe you / nor to gyue you of the patrimony of my churche / Surely I wyll nat do it / nor my conſcyence ſhall neuer agree therto / nor alſo ꝑ pope nor the cardynals wyll nat ſuffre it: Therle of Heynalt hath nat behaued hym ſelf (as ye haue done) who hath gyuen Margarett his eldeſt doughter in maryage to the kynge of Almayne Lord of Bauyers / and yet he hath thre other / he wyll marry them all highly. yf ye hadde well borne youre ſelfe / and nat haue layde youre heritage to pledge / nor put out of youre hãdes none of youre caſtels nor townes / ye myght eyſtwell haue fortuned to haue had one of his doughters in maryage / but in the caſe ye be in now / ye ſhall neuer come therto ye haue (as nowe) nother townes nor caſtels that ye maye endowe any woman with all / nat ſo moche as a poore lordſhyppe. This erle of Guerles was ſore abaſſhed with the wordes of the byſſhop his vncle / for he knewe well he ſhewed hym but trouthe: And than for loue and kyndred he deſyredde his counſayle. Counſayle fayre nephue quod the byſſhop: it is to late. ye wyll cloſe faſte the ſtable whan the horſe is loſte: Howe be it I ſo

in all

in all your busynesse but one remedy. What remedy quod the erle? I shall shewe you of the bysshoppe.

Berthaulte of Walygnes (who is as nowe renomed the rychest man of syluer and golde / that is knowen in any place / by reason of the counte of marchaundise that he vseth / bothe by lande and by see. He occupyeth to Dāmas / to Cayre / and to Alexādre. His galyes and marchaundyse are worthe an hundred thousande florens) hath to pledge parte of your heryptage. this Berthault hath a fayre doughter to mary / and he hath no mo chyldren / Great and high barons of Almaygne in those marches haue desyred her in maryage / for them selues and for their sonnes. This I knowe well / and yet they coude neuer come to their entētes / for some he refused and some he thought nat worthy. wherfore I wolde counsayle you that ye shulde treate with this Berthault / desyring to haue his doughter in maryage / so that he wyll redeme all your landes and paye all your dettes / and bryng a gayne in to your hādes / your townes / castelles / and lordshippes / perteynyng vnto your heryptaunce. And I suppose bycause ye be of an high lynage and of great signorie / & haue many townes / cyttes / and castels / bytwene the ryuers of Meuse and Ryne / that he wyll enclyne to your request. Sir quod therle of Guerles / ye counsayle me truely and I shall so do. Than after therle of Guerles assembled togyder his counsayle and frendes / suche as loued hym best / and discouered his entent to them. and desyred them to go in his name to the sayd Berthault of Walignes / and to treate honorably with hym for that mater. Whan these knightes and clerkes came to Berthault / sent fro the erle of Guerles / he made them good chere and made them a curteise answere / and sayd he wolde take aduysement. And he was ryche beyond measure / as worthe a.v. or sixe hundred. M. florens. And desyred the aduancement of his doughter / Thynkynge that he wyst nat where to mary her more highly / than to therle of Guerles (thought to accepte this maryage) but or he fully assented therto in hym selfe / he had dyuers ymaginacions / and cast many doutes and sayd to hym selfe. yf I mary my doughter to this Erle / and he haue chyldren by her and than she happen to dye / as all thynges fall dayly. than he that shalbe made ryche with my goodes / and put agayne in to possessyon of his townes and castelles / happe to mary agayne secondly in to some high blode / and haue chyldren agayne by her. Those chyldren than cōmynge out of noble lynage by their mothers syde / shall be more made of than they chyldren issued of my doughter. yea? And moreouer lyke to be dyspendyted. Wherfore without this be stryckyn I wyll neuer consent therto. How be it I wyll answere these messanges that their cōmynge pleaseth me greatly / and that my doughter shulde be happy if she myght cōe to so great a perfection / as to be conioyned in maryage to the erle of Guerles / thoughe it shulde coste me right derely / so that the matters were clere. But as nowe / euery man knoweth well they be nat clere / but in sore trouble. And also he hath forfayted all his heryptage bytwene the ryuers of Meuse and Ryne. Wherfore to be quyte of this / euery man maye se clerely / he demaundeth my doughter in maryage. and if I gyue her to hym / I wyll knowe howe it shall be. And also / if case that my doughter haue sonne or doughte by hym / I wyll know if they shalbe heyres of Guerles or no / for any other maryage that the erle may happe to haue after. And of this alyaūce I wyll haue good suretie of hym and of them that be nerest of his blode / and of suche as haue any ryght to demaunde any succession in the countie of Guerles / and also prompte of the noble men and good townes of the countre. Thus Berthaulte of Walygnes determyned hym selfe to make answere to therle of Guerles cōmyssyoners.

The nexte daye at an hour assigned the erles messanges came to Berthaldes lodgynge / and there he shewed well that he was a ryche man. Berthault mette them in his hall / and swetely receyued the and spake to them merrily / and than ledde them in to a fayre chambre apparelled and dressed / and it had ben for a kyng / and had there about hym some of his frendes. And whan they were all there assembled and the doore closed: Than Berthaulte desyred them to shewe the cause of their cōmynge / wherupon he wolde make them a fynall answere / and so they dyd. And the deane of Colayne a ryght sage Clerke and colyn

and cosyn to the erle of Gueries speake, and ther shewed the effecte of theyr ambassade (in such wyse, that yt was joy to here hym. Of hys wordes nor of hys requestes I ned not to speke any more, for they haue ben shewed here before, & touched at length. Than Berthaulte answered as he had deuysed in hym selfe the day before, and sayd. Fayre lordes I reput my selfe greatly honored & my doughter also, yf we myght come to so hygh an enterpryse as the erle of Gueries desyreth. And whanne mater is begon, it wold not be prolonged. I say thys because that alyannce by mariage made bytwen the hyghe pryncs and redouted lord therle of Gueries and Mary my doughter pleaseth me right wel, ye make me request that hys landes (whych at thys present tyme, are so fore charged and layde to pledge in the handes of certayn lombardes and other) by reason of thys mariage shoulde be quyt. and that I should rydde hym out of dette, And all thynges that are now darke, I shuld make them clere, I thanke godde hys puissaunt that it lyeth in me thus to do, and I am in good wyll so to do. But fyrst or thys couenaunt be fully agreed, written or sealed that I maye be in surertye wythout trouble or debate, that the chyldren coming of my Doughter may be enherytours to the Eridome of Gueries as the vprites therof do stretche, & that if my lord therle of gueries for tun to dye before my doughter without issue bytwen them that than my doughter may enioy the heritage of Gueries during her lyfe, and after her decease, to returne to the rightful heyr And also I say, yf my doughter haue heyr heyres by my lord therle, and thā therefor tun to dye, thoughe the erle than remary against the seconde tyme, and haue issue by the second wyfe, yet for all that my doughters heyre or heyres shall not be disherited, how be it if it please the erle to remary agayne I am content that he make hys seconde wyfe a dower of all such landes as he hath beyond the ryuer of Muse, marchyng to the bysshop therof Liege, and to the duchy of Brebant, and not to charge the principall seignorie of Gueries. And thus if the erles frendes and parentes, and such as be next of blode, and bane nor chalenge to the seignory of Gueries with the good townes of the countrey, wyll laue to be holde theis deuyses and conenau-

tes, than I content and wyll assent to thys mariage, ye may nowe answere to thys if ye haue any charge so to do. Than the knightes answered whan they had a lytell counsayled togayder. Than one for them all sayd, syr we haue well herde your answere, but we haue none auctorite to confyrmen or to graunt so farforthe as ye demaunde. But we shall retourn to our lord therle and to hys counsaile and shew hym your answer and demaonde and shortely ye shall here fro hym agayne. Than Berthaute sayd syr, as god wyll so be it. Thus they departed out of the chambre.

¶ Howe the erle Raynolde of Gueries was maryed to Mary doughter to Berthault of Malignes, by whō he had a doughter, and after maried agayne in Englande, and had issue two sonnes and a doughter. & howe sir Johan of Bloies wedded theldest doughter of therle of Gueries, and howe after the countie of Gueries remayned wyth the erle of Gueries yongest doughter. Ca. C.xi.

YE haue well herde all the answers & demaundes bytwen the forsayd parties, wherfore I speke no more therof. But (as ye haue herde) whan therle of gueries messangers were returned home agayn, therle was hote in the mater, for he sawe well he could as thā do no better, than to mary Berthalt of Malignes doughter, he was so rich a man, than therle and hys counsaile made and deuysed writynges sufficient and therle set to his seale and his next frends and parēts, in lyke wise so dyd other knightes of Gueries and good townes. And whan al was confirmed & done as Berthault was content, ye mariage was made, & therles dettes payd and hys landes clerely quyt out of daunger. Thā therle tooke newe counsayle, and began a newe lyfe and

date,

in all your busynesse but one remedy. What remedy quod the erle? I shall shewe you by the byll hoppe.

Berthaulte of Walygnes (who is as nowe renomed the richest man of syluer and golde / that is knowen in any place / by reason of the countie of marchaundise that he vseth / bothe by lande and by see. He occupyeth to Dãmas / to Cayre / and to Alexãdre. His galyes and marchaũdyse are worthe an hundred thousande florens) hath to pledge parte of your heritage. this Berthault hath a fayre doughter to marry / and he hath no mo chyldren / Great and high barons of Almaygne in those marches haue desyred her in mariage / for them selues and for their sonnes. This I knowe well / and yet they coude neuer come to their entẽtes / for some he refused and some he thought nat worthy. wherfore I wolde counsayle you ye shulde treate with this Berthault / desyring to haue his doughter in mariage / so ye he wyll redeme all your landes and pay all your dettes / and bring a gayne in to your hãdes / your townes / castelles / and lordshippes / perteyning vnto your heritaunce. And I suppose bycause ye be of an high lynage and of great signorie / & haue many townes / cyties / and castels / betwene ye ryuers of Meuse and Ryne / that he wyll enclyne to your request. Sir ye therle of Guerles / ye counsayle me truely and I shall so do. Than after therle of Guerles assembled together his cõsayle and frendes / suche as loued hym best / and discouered his entent to them. and desyred them to go in his name to ye sayd Berthault of Walignes / and to treate honorably with hym for that mater. When these knightes and clerkes came to Berthalt / sent fro the erle of Guerles / he made them good chere and made them a curteise answere / and sayd he wolde take aduysement. And he was riche beyond measure / as worthe a.v.or fyue hundred.M.florens. And desyred the aduauncement of his doughter / Thynkynge that he wyst nat where to marry her more highly / than to therle of Guerles (thought to accepte this mariage) but or he fully assented therto in hym selfe / he had dyuers ymaginactions / and cast many doutes and sayd to hym selfe. yf I marry my doughter to this Erle / and he haue chyldren by her and than she happen to dye / as all thynges fall dayly. than he that shalbe made riche with my goodes / and put again in to possession of his townes and castelles / happe to mary agayne secondly in to some high blode / and haue children agayne by her / Those chyldren than comynge out of noble lynage by their mothers syde / shall be more made of than ye chyldren issued of my doughter. yea / And moreouer lyke to be dyscherysted. Wherfore without this be auysed I wyll neuer consent therto. How be it I wyll answere these messanges that their comyng pleaseth me greatly / and that my doughter shulde be happy if she myght cõe to so great a perfection / as to be coniogned in mariage to the erle of Guerles / thoughe it shulde coste me right derely / so that ye maters were clere. But as nowe / euery man knoweth well they be nat clere / but in sore trouble. And also he hath forfayted all his heritage betwene the ryuers of Meuse and Ryne. Wherfore to be quyte of this / euery man may se clerely / he demaundeth my doughter in mariage. and if I gyue her to hym / I wyll knowe howe it shall be. And also / if case that my doughter haue sonne or doughter by hym / I wyll knowe if they shalbe heyres of Guerles or no / for any other mariage that the erle may happe to haue after. And of this alyance I wyll haue good suretie of hym and of them that be next of his blode / and of suche as haue any ryght to demaunde any successyon in the countie of Guerles / and also promyse of the noble men and good townes of the countre. Thus Berthaulte of Walygnes determyned hym selfe to make answere to therle of Guerles cõmyssyoners.

The next daye at an hour assigned the erles messanges came to Berthaldes lodgynge / and there he shewed well that he was a ryche man. Berthault mette them in his hall / and swetely receyued the and spake to them merily / and than ledde them in to a fayre chambre apparelled and dressed / and it had ben for a kyng / and had there about hym some of his frendes. And whan they were all there assembled and the doore closed: Than Berthaulte desyred them to shewe the cause of their cõmynge / wherupon he wolde make them a fynall answere / and so they dyd. And the deane of Colygne a ryght sage Clerke and colyn

and coſyn to the erle of Gueries ſpeake, and ther ſhewed theffecte of theyr ambaſſade (in ſuch wyſe, that yt was ioy to here hym. Of hys wordes nor of hys requeſtes I ned not to ſpeke any more, for they have ben ſhewed here before, & touched at length. Than Berthaulte anſwered as he had deuyſed in hym ſelfe the day before, and ſayd. Fayre lordes I repute my ſelfe gretly honored & my doughter alſo, yf we myght come to ſo hygh an enterpriſe as the erle of Gueries deſyreth. And whanne mater is begon, it wold not be prolonged. I ſay thys byeauſe that alyaunce by maryage made bytwen the hygh pryncs and redouted lord therle of Gueries and Mary my doughter pleaſeth me ryghtwel, ye make me requeſt that his landes (wherin at thys preſente tyme, ar ſo fore charged and layde to pledg, in the handes of certayn lombardes and other) by reaſon of thys maryag ſhoulde be quyt, and that I ſhould rydde hym out of dette, And all thynges that are now darke, I ſhuld make them clere, I thanke godof hys puiſſaunt that it lyeth in me thus to do, and I am in good wyll ſo to do. But fuſt or thys couenaunt be fully agreed, wryttten or ſealed that I maye be in ſurete wythout trouble or debate, that the chyldren coming of my doughter may be enheryteurs to the Eridome of Gueries as the lymites therof do ſtretche, & that if my lord therle of gueries for tun to dy before my doughter thout iſſue bytwen them that than my doughter may enioy the herytage of Gueries during her lyfe, and after her deceaſe, to returne to the right-ful herr. And alſo I ſay, yf my doughter haue heyr herres by my lord therle, and thā ſhe for tun to dye, thoughe the erle than remary againe the ſeconde tyme, and haue iſſue by the ſecond wyfe, yet for all that my doughters herre or herres ſhall not be diſheryted, how be it if it pleaſe the erle to remary agayne I am content that he make hys ſeconde wyfe a dower of all ſuch landes as he hath beyond the ryuer of Muſe, marchyng to the biſſhop rike of Liege, and to the duchy of Brabant, and not to charge the pryncypall ſeignorie of Gueries. And thus if the erles frendes and parentes, and ſuch as be next of blode, and haue ſuffi chalenge to the ſeignory of Gueries with the good townes of the countrey, wyll holde to hys honor theis deuyſes and couenaū-

tes, than I content and wyll aſſent to thys maryage, ye may nowe anſwere to thys if ye haue any charg ſo to do. Than the knightes anſwered whan they had a lytell counſayled togyder. Than one for them all ſayd, ſyr we haue well herde your anſwere, but we haue none auctorite to confyrme or to graunt ſo farforthe as ye demaunde, But we ſhall retourn to our lord therle and to hys counſaile and ſhew hym your anſwer and demaonde and ſhortely ye ſhall here fro hym agayne. Than Berthaite ſayd ſyr, as god wyll ſo be it. Thus they departed out of the chambre.

***

THowe the erle Raynolde of Gueries was maryed to Mary doughter to Berthault of Malignes, by whō he had a doughter, and after maried agayne in Englaude, and had iſſue two ſonnes and a doughter. Howe ſir John of Bloies wedded the eldeſt doughter of therle of Gueries, and howe after the countie of Gueries remayned wyth the erle of Gueries yongeſt doughter. Ca. C.xxi.

YChaue well herde all the anſwers & demeuntes bytwen the foreſayd parties, wherfore I ſpeke no more therof. But (as ye haue herde) whan therle of gueries meſſangers wer returned home agayn, Therle was hote in the mater, for he ſawe well he could as thā do no better, than to mary Berthalt of Malygnes doughter, he was ſo rich a man, than therle and hys counſaile made and deuyſed wrytings ſufficient and therle ſet to his ſeale and his next frendes and parentes, in lyke wiſe ſo dyd other knightes of Gueries and good townes. And whan al was confirmed & done as Berthault was content, y maryage was made, & therles dettes paid and hys Landes clerely quyt out of daunger. Thā therle toke newe counſayle, and began a newe lyfe and

ſtate,

ſtre, the wer called good before he was named better after, for than he had well where with he lacked nothyng of that Bertheuit of Walygnes myght ayde hym. The erle bare hym to hys wyfe right honourably, for she was a fayre lady, good, fayr, debrout, and pru dent: but they wer not to gyther paſt a four yeres, but that the lady dyed, And she had a doughter called Isabell, whan therle of Guerles was a wydower he was but yong. Than he maryed agayne right highly, for kyng Edwarde of Englande, father to the good kyng Edward, who beſeged Courney and wanne Calis, he gaue to thys erle Raynold a doughter of hys named Isabell, and by her thys erle had thre chyldren, two sonnes & on doughter. for Raynold and sir Edward, and Jane, who afterward was duches of Guerlers for in lykewyse as Bertram of Walygnes, had ymagined in the begynnyng, whan hys doughter maryed the erle of Guerles, euyn so it fell, for ther was no trouthe kepte to hym. For whan kyng Edward of England, who was vncle to the erle of Guerles chyldren came first in to Almayne to the Emperour Lopes of Bauyers, whych Emperour inſtytuted kyng Edward to be hys byear generall, throughe all the marches of the Empyre, as it is conteyned in the begynnyng of thys boke. Than the counti of Guerles was made a duchy, and the county of Iulyers was made marqus of Iulyers to augment theyr dignities. And to come to our matter, the duke Raynold of Guerles, nephue to kynge Edwarde dyed wythout iſſue, and syr Edward of Guerles was maryed in Heynault, and had to wyfe the yongeſt doughter of the duke Aubert, but the lady was so yong that thys syr Edward neuer touched her carnallye. And so thys syr Edwarde also dyed wythout iſſue, who was a right valyaunt knyght, he was slayn in the batayl that was betwen the duke of Brabant and duke Wincelant before Iulyers. Hys ſuster Jane who was maryed to duke Guylliam of Iulyers had chyldren. And she by ſucceſſyon of her bretherne, layd and toke vpon her to be heyre to the duchy of Guerles, and in lyke wyse so dyed her eldeſt ſuster by the fyrſt maryage. For the two bretherne by the seconde maryage wer both dead, wythout lawful iſſue. Wherfore she layd, she was enherytoure.

Thus fell the dyfference bytwen the two ſuſters, and some of the countrey wonld haue the on and some the other. And the eldeſt ſuſter was counſayled to maryen to some hyghe lygnage, that myght ayde her chalenge and defend her herytag. Than ther was treatye made by the bysshoppe of Colopgne that was than to the lord syr Johan of Blopes, for therle Lopes hys brother as than lyued and the bysshoppe sayd, that he thonld ther by be duke of Guerles, for by ſucceſſyon of the two bretherne dead wythout iſſue male, Therfore by right of mariage & right thuld retourn to her. for non other could chaleng any right but she. And syr Johan of Blopes who alwayes had ben nourysshed & brought vp in the partyes of Holland and England (for ther he had fayre herytage, and had the language of that countre, And he neuer had wyll to mary in Fraunce) layd hys care glad lye to thys treatye, and sawe well he myght therby gaue great poſſeſſyons in the marches that he loued beſte. And also the knyghtes of Holland that wer of hys counſayle, counſayled hym ther to. So he accepted that mariage, but fyrſt for he wolde conclude he sayd he would ryde in to Heynault and Queſnoy to speke with hys cosyn the duke Auberte, to se what counſayle he would gyue hym. But to saye trouthe, duke Aubert wyſt not what to counſayle hym. And yf he dyd, he made no ſemblaunt therof, but dyſſymuled the matter alytell. So that syr John of Blopes wolde no lengar tarye to haue hys counſayle, But toke hys hoyſe and retourned assoone as he could in to Guerles, and wedded thys lady, and dyd put her in poſſeſſyon of the countr. But some ther wer that wouldе not receyue hym to theyr lorde, nor her to theyr lady: For the mooſt parte of the knyghtes and ſquyers and good townes of the countre, held with the duchesſe of Iulyers, for that lady hadde fayre chyldren, wherfore they of Guerles loued her the better.

Thus syr John of Blopes had hys wyfe and poſſeſſyons, wherof coſt hym moche after. For therle Lopes hys brother dyed And than he was erle of Blopes & lord Wanenes in Heynault, and had all the landes in Holland and Zeland, & had in the sayd countries great herytag, and alwaye hys counſayl

counſayled

counſayled hym to purſue for his ryght that he ought to haue by his wife in Gueries / & ſo he dyde to his power. But the almayns are ſo couetous / they wolde make no warre for hym no lenger than his money endured. and the chalenge ꝑ he made to the duchy of Gueries dyd hym neuer profyte / but great domage. Than dyed this gentyll knight ſir Johan of Blopes / in the caſtell and towne of Eſtone Houe / the yere of our lorde god a thouſande thre hundred fourtroze and one / in ꝑ moneth of June / and was buryed in the freres at Valenciennes / beſyde ſir Johan of Heynault his . And than was his brother ſir Guy of Blopes erle / and helde all the landes by ryght ſucceſſyon ꝑ his two bretherne had helde / alwell in Fraunce / Picardy / Heynalt Hollande / and Zelande / as in the countre of Blopes.

I knowe nat howe many yeres after the lady dyed / who had ben wyfe to therle Johñ of Blops / her ſuſter the duches of Julyers abode ꝓtably duches of gueries It was ordayned by thaccorde of the countre / and at the requeſt of the knightes & good townes of the duchy of Gueries / ꝑ they ſhulde take to their lorde ſir Willm of Juliers / eldeſt ſon to the duke of Juliers / for the lãde came to hym rightfully by ſucceſſion of his vncles. and by reaſon therof / duke Aubert and ꝑ duches his wyfe gaue hym there doughter in maryage / who before had ben maried to ſir Edward of Gueries. Thus the lady was doughter of Heynault and duches of Gueries. and whan ſhe maried the duke of Gueries / ſonne to the duke of Julyers they were bothe of one age / wherfore the maryage was the more agreable. This yong duke of Gueries helde hym in his owne countrey / and thelder he waxed / the more he loued dedes of armes / as iuſtes and tourneys. and alwayes the duke was rather Engliſh he than frẽche / and that he ſhewed well as long as he lyued: And alwayes he bare in his mynde / the ꝓuell wyll that his predeceſſours had to the duchy of Brabant. & alwayes he ſought occaſion how he might make warre there for two reaſõs. the one becauſe he was alyed by fayth and homage to kyng Richarde of Englande: the other was becauſe Wyncelant of Boeme duke of Luſeburge and of Brabant / had bought of therle of Mors a great lorde in Almayne / the thre forſaid caſtelles / the whiche I ſhall name a gayne to quicken the mater / Gaulech / Buth and Nulle / on the otherſyde of the ryuer of Muſe in the lande of Falquemount: whiche caſtels aunciently apperteyned to ꝑ duke of gueries and was enheritour to the. And therfore the yõg duke Willm of Juliers duke of gueries was ſõre diſpleaſed / that he might nat recouer his herytage. as long as duke Wyncelant of Brabãt lyued he ſpake no worde ther of. Nowe ſhall I ſhewe you howe it fortuned / to thentent the mater ſhulde be ꝑ clerer to be vnderſtanded.

Howe theſe caſtelles of Gaulech / Buth / and Null came to the duke of Brabant / and howe the duke of Juliers ſuſteyned the infars in his cõtre / who robbed all maner of people. And of the great aſſemble that the duke of Brabant made to go to Julyers / and howe he was diſcõfyted. Cap. C. xiii.

So it was that duke Reynolde of Gueries / colyn germayne to the prince of Gueries / and his brother had before that engaged the thre forſaid caſtels for a ſõme of florens / to an high baron of Almayn called therle of Mors. This erle helde theſe caſtels a ſeaſon / and whan he ſaw ꝑ he coude nat get his money that he had lende on them. He was ſore diſpleaſed and ſent ſuffycient cõmonynge to the duke Raynolde of Gueries. The duke made no compte therof / for he had nat wherwith to redeme them agayne. & the erle of Mors ſawe that he came to ꝑ duke of Brabant / & treated with hym to haue agayn his money for the ſayde caſtelles. The duke herde hym well / becauſe the caſtels marched on the lande of Faulquemõt / of the whiche lãde he was lorde / for ꝑ duke was glad to encreſe his enheritãce / as he that thought wel to ouer lyue ꝑ lady Jane duches of Brabant his wife / & ſo he gate it to his poſſeſſion ꝑ ſaid thre ca-

thre castelles. And in the first he set the lorde of Halle/to be as chefe souerayne. and whan this duke of Guerles was dede/ than sir Edwarde of Guerles toke on hym the herytage and sent to ꝑ duke of Brabant ambassadors/ desyring hym that he might haue agayne the thre castelles/ for the money that was payde for the. The duke wolde make no suche bargayne/ but denyed it. With whiche answere sir Edwarde of Guerles was nat content/ & dalte hardely with the wydowe the lady Isabell of Brabant/ ponger suster to the duches/ whiche lady had wedded the duke Raynolde of Guerles. but thus he troubled her for her dowre. The lady wente in to Brabant and complayned her to the duke of Brabant her brother and to the duchesse/ howe that sir Edwarde of Guerles dyde her great wronge & iniury. And bycause there was a grudge betwene the Brabansoys and the guerloys/ for the lande and towne of Graice/ whiche was in Brabant on that syde the ryuer of Muese Therfore the duke and the brabansoys were more enclyned to ayde the lady. and on a day there were assembled togyder at the callyng of the duke of Brabant a great nombre of men of warre/ a.xii.hundred speares. And sir Edwarde of Guerles made his assemble on the other parte/ and were in that case that it was likely to haue had a bataple betwene them. But the duke Aubert/ the duke of Mours/ & the duke of Julyers mette togyder by a treatie/ and so this assemble departed a sondre wout any thyng doyng. The same yere ꝑ duke Wyncelant of Brabant ouerthrewe the companyons in the cõtrey of Lusenburge/ who had greatly wasted that lande/ and putte many to exyle: and in the towre of the castell of Lusenburge dyed their souerayne capitayne called the lytell Messyn. And also in ꝑ same yere sir Charles of Boesme/ who as than rayned and was kynge of Almaygne and emperour of Rome/ instytuted duke Wynceläs of Boesme and made hym souerayne regarder/ by an instytucion and ordynaunce called in Almayne/ Le langue fride/ that is to say/ holding the couert and sure wayes. So that all maner of people myght go and come/ and ryde fro towne to towne surely and in sauegarde. And the Emperour gaue hym a great parte of the lande and countrey of Dauffay/ on bothe sydes the ryuer of Ryne/ to defende hym therin agaynst the lynsars/ who were a maner of people ryght perylous/ and great robbers without pytie. And also the Emperour gaue hym the souerayntie of the good & riche cytie of Straubourght/ and made him Marques of the holy Empyre/ to augment therby his estate. And surely he couldе nat gyue hym to moche/ for this Duke Wyncelant was lyberall/ swete/ courteise/ amyable/ and noble in armes: & was likely to atchyue many thynges if he hadde lyued long/ but he dyed in the floure of his youthe. Wherof I that haue wryten this hystorye make great complaynt for hym/ that he lyued no lengar/ but tyll he was a.xxiiii.yere of age. The cristme that was in the churche greatly displesed hym/ and that he shewed me often tymes for I was prime of his acquayntaũce. in that in my dayes I traueyled a great parte of the worlde/ two great prynces I knewe and non more hũble nor tretable than they were (that was this noble prince one/ and the other my good mayster the lorde Guy of Blois/ who cõmaunded me to make this hystorye) These two princes were in my dayes/ and were full of humilyte/ larges/ and bountie: without any malyce. They lyued lyberally of their owne/ without oppressynge their people/ or reysing vp of any ryell customes in their lãdes. Nowe let vs retourne to the pythe of the mater/ that I haue begone.

When ꝑ duke of Julyers and sir Edwarde of Guerles/ who called thẽ selfe bretherne/ and their hertes good Englisshe/ for they had ben long ayed with ꝑ kyng of Englande/ and with loue and fauour had alwayes ayded them in their warres. Whan they sawe that the duke of Brabant hadde so hygh a signory/ as to be lorde and souerayne regarder by the Emperour/ and was chefe correctour of all myschoers and robbers/ that he founde lyuyng by the highe wayes of Almaygne. They had therat indygnacion and enuy/ nat for that he dyde well and helde iustyce/ and corrected ryell doers: but of that he had the souerayne regarde & signory ouer lãgue fride/ whiche was parte in their lande whiche offyce was first instytued ꝑ marchaũtes might peasably passe fro Brabant to Heynault/ to Flaunders/ to Fraũce/ or fro Liege to Coleyn:

to Coleyne / and to other cyties / townes and fortresses of Almayne. And nother marchaun tes nor other coulde nat passe nor entre in to Almayne / by the landes and daungers of the duke of Julyers and ye duke of Guerles. And soo it was / that certayne robbers were in the wayes of Linsars. And it were they that had done the dyolence and pillynge through the landes of the duke of Julyers. It was shewed me that the duke had lente them horse and ca skels. Great complaynes came to duke Wen ceslant of Brabant and of Luxenbourge / who as than was at Bruselles / howe that the Lan guetryde whereof he was sourtayne regarder and keper / was broken & violated. and howe they that dyde that dyolence / and robbed the countrey / solourned and euer retourned in to the duchy of Julyers. The duke of Brabant (who as than was ponge and lusty / and puys saunte of lynage and of landes) toke in great dispyte the offences that his people had com playned of / and sayd howe he wolde fynde some remedy / seynge he had in charge to kepe and defende the Languefryde. He wolde nat that through his negligence he shulde take any re proche or blame. And to conclude his bede and to sette reason in there demaundes / and by the counsayle and abuyse that he had / he sente to the duke of Julyers notable personnes / as the lorde of Urquon lorde of Bourgueuall / syr Sceclar archedecon of Hepnalt / Geffrey de la towre / great rowter of Brabante / and other. she wyng to him in wyse and swete maner the offence / whiche greatly toucheth and is pretu dycial to the duke of Brabante / who is keper and souerayne regarder of the Languefryde. The duke of Julyers sayntely excused hym selfe / for by that he shewed he had as lefe haue had the warre as the peace / so that the duke of Brabantes messangers were nat well content: and so toke their leaue of the duke of Julyers / and retourned and shewed the duke of Bra bant all as they had herde and sene. When the duke herde that / he demaunded what was best to do. He was answered by his counsayle say enge. (sir / ye knowe best your selfe. Well quod the duke / and I saye yt it is my entent yn that I wyll nat slepe so in this blame / nor that it shall be sayd that for slouth or sayntehert / that I shulde suffre under my sauegarde robbery to do vilanyes and roberies vnpunysshed. I shewe and wyll shewe to my cosyn of Julyers and to his ayde / that this mater toucheth me nere. This duke cooled nat his entent / but in compleynt set clerkes awarke / and sent to them that he thought wolde ayde hym. Some he prayed / and some he commaunded / and sente sufficyent knoleage of his mynde to the duke of Julyers and to his aides. bothe these lordes made great preparation. The duke of Julyers had but lytell ayde / but of his brother syr Edwarde of Guerles he greatly coforted him with men and with frendes. These two lordes sent priuely for men farre in to Almayne. And bycause that almayns are couetous / belyng to wynne / and it had bene longe before or they were in any place / where they myght get any good aduenture. They wolde haue come in more habundaunce and they had nat knowen that they shulde haue had to do agaynste the duke of Brabante. The duke of Brabante in great aray departed fro Bruselles / and went to Louayne / and fro thence to Trete on the ryuer of Mose / and there he founde a thou sande speares abydynge for hym / and alwaye there came menne to hym fro all partyes / fro Fraunce / fro Flaunders / fro Hapnalt / fro Na mure / fro Lozayne & other countreys / so that he had two thousande and fyue hundred spea res of good men of warre. and also there came to hym out of Burgoyne the lorde of Graunt / and with hym a foure hundred speares / but they came to late / for they knewe nat the daye of the bataylle that I shall shewe you wher with they were sore displeased / whanne they herde that the mater was done without them. The duke of Brabant beinge at Trect / herde but lytell newes of his enemyes. Than he de parted fro Trect the wednysdaye / and wente and lodged in the lande of his enemyes / and there lay all that myght / and the thursday tyll he herde certayne tydynges. It was shewed hym by his coloures that his enemyes were a bode. Than he rode forwarde / and comaun ded to burne in the duke of Julyers lande / and the thursday toke his lodginge beymen. And the bowarde kept the erle Guy of Lignay / erle of Sayne Pole and sir Waleran his sonne / who as than was but ponge of a sixtene yere of age / and there he was made knyght. The duke of Julyers came the same thursday / and lay nere one to a nother. and by all lykelyhode & almay nes knewe the demeanour of the brabanyoys better than they dyde theirs / for on the wednay

betymes whan the duke of Brabant had herd masse/ and that all were in the felde̅s thought nat to haue fought so soone. Than came redy the duke of Iuliers and sir Edwarde of Guerles well mounted with a great batayle. Than one sayd to the duke of Brabante. syr/beholde yōder your enemys put your helmes on your heedes/in the name of god and sayn̄t George. Of that worde the duke had great ioye. The same day he had by him four squiers of great price/ worthy to serue an hyghe prince and to be aboute hym/ for they had sene many dedes of armes. they were called Iohan de Valcon/ Baudwyn of Beaufort/ Gyrarde of Ypres/ and Roulande of Colongne. Aboute the duke were the hurselops/ some a horsebacke with their varlettes behynde them/ with bottelles of wyne trussed at their sadelles/ and pasteyes of samonde/trouttes/and eles wraped in towels. These horsemen greatly combred the place/so that there was such preasse that no man coude stryke. Than Gyrarde of Ypres sayd to ỹ duke/ sir cōmaunde these horses to auoyde the place they shall greatly let vs/ we can nat se aboute vs nor haue knoledge of your reregarde/ nor vowarde/nor of your marshall sir Roberte of Namure. Do let it be quod the duke/ I cōmaunde so. Than Gyrarde toke his glayue in his handes and so dyd his compayons/ and began to stryke on their helmes and on their horses/so that a none the place was voyded of them/ for no man was glad to haue his horse slayne or hurte. Than the duke of Iuliers and ỹ Edwarde of Guerles & their company came on them/ and founde the erle of sayn̄t Poule and his sonne in the vowarde/ and dasshed in so fersely amonge them/ that anone they were broken and discomfited/and there were many slayne/taken/and hurte. that was the batayle that had moste to do. There was slayne Guy the erle of sayn̄te Poule/ and sir Valeran his sonne taken. The batayle tourned to a herde parte for the duke of Brabante/ and for them that were with him. for of men of honour there were but a fewe saued / but outher they were slayne or taken. The duke of Brabante was taken / and syr Roberte of Namure / and syr Lops of Namure his brother/ and sir Wyllyam of Namure sonne to the erle of Namure/ and many other. Also on the duke of Iuliers parte there were some slaine and hurte. but ye know well it is a generall rule/ the great losse euer resteth on them that be discomfyted. howbe it for all the domage the duke of Brabante had in that iourney/ yet they habde one great poynte of remedy & comforte/for sir Edwarde of Guerles was wounded to dethe. And this I saye because it was the opinyon of dyuerse/ that if he had lyued he wolde haue rydden forwarde/ that with puyssaūce he wolde haue come to Bruselles and conquered all the countreye/ for none wolde haue resysted hym. He was hardy and fierce/ and hated the Brabanions/because of the thre castels that they helde agaynst hym. This tourney and victory had the duke of Iuliers in ỹ peyr of our lorde god/ a thousande thre hūdred and a leuen/ on sayn̄t Bartylmewes euyn/on a fridaye.

The duches of Brabant purchased her frendes/and had counsayle of Charles the frenche kyng/who was nephue to the duke of Brabāt and all his bretherne/for they were chyldren of his suster. ¶ She was counsayled by the kynge to go to the kynge of Almayne emperoure/ brother to the duke of Brabante/for whose sake the duke her husbande had taken all that domage. The lady dyd so and came to Conualence on the ryuer of the Ryne/ & there founde the Emperoure/ And there wysely she made her complaynte. The emperoure herde her well/the whiche he was bounde vnto by diuerse reasons. The one because the duke was his brother/and another because he had instytude hym to be his heare/ and soueraygne regarder of the Languestryde. he comforted the lady and sayd/that at the nexte sōmer he wolde fynde some remedy. The lady retourned into Brabante well comforted. And the emperour sir Charles of Boesme slept nat his busynes/ but waked the mater/ as ye shall here. For as soone as wynter was past he aproched to the noble cytie of Colayne/ & there made his prouysion/ in suche wyse as though he wolde go to conquere a realme of defence/and wrote to his dukes & erles that helde of hym/ and commaunded them at the thyrde day of June they shulde be with hym at Ypres/ with fyfty horse a pece/ on payne of lesyng of their landes. and specially he cōmaunded thre/as duke Auberte erle of Haynalte/ that he shulde come to Ypres with fyfty horse/and so he dyd. Whanne these lordes were come / there was moche people. And than syr Charles his sonne sayde that he

wolde

wolde go and entre in to ꝑ landes of duke Iulpers a deſtroy it/ bycauſe of the great outrage that he had done/ as in enteryng in to the felde with an army againſt the emperours bycaire his brother. this ſentẽce was gyuen by playne iudgement in the emperours chambre. Than to that mater regarded the archebyſſhoppe of Trewes/ the archbyſſhoppe of Coloyne/ the byſſhop of Wataice/ the byſſhoppe of Liege/ the duke Iubert of Bauiere/ the duke Olke his brother/ and diuerſe other barons of Almayne (that thought) to dyſtroy the landes of ſo valyaunt a knyght as was the duke of Iulpers/ ſholde be ryght done/ and alſo he was nere of their kynne. They ſayde it were better tyme to ſende for hym/ that he myght come to obeyſaunce. That apoyntment was holden for the beſt/ for the loue of bothe partyes. Than duke Iuberte and his brother came to Iuliers/ and fonnd there the duke/ who was abaſſhed/ and wyſte nat what counſayle to beleue/ for it had ben ſhewed him that the aſſemble that the emperour had made was to come on hym/ without his frendes dyd ſtoppe it. Whan theſe lordes were come to the duke he was glad/ ſpecyally by the tompyng of his two coſyns germayns/ the duke Iubert of Bauiers and the duke Olke his brother/ for he knewe well that they wolde nat his dyſhonoure/ but rather to gyue hym good counſayle/ as they dyd. Their counſayle was to ſhewe you bricfly/ that he ſhulde ſende ſome honorable perſones for the duke of Luſenburge and of Brabant/ whome he helde in curtoyſe priſon in his caſtell of Nydeque/ and ſo he dyd. And whan he was come all thoſe lordes dyd hym great honour/ as reaſon was. And than they all departed togyder/ and came to Ypes and toke their lodgynges. Than the duke Iuberte and his brother/ and the forſayd prelates/ who were the meanes of this treatye. they fore entreated the emperour and his counſayle/ and ſhewed the emperoure how ꝑ duke of Iuliers his coſyn/ of his owne free wyll was come to ſe hym/ and to put hym ſelfe poorely with out any reſeruacyon/ in to his obeyſaunce and commaundement/ and to knowlcdge hym for his ſoueraygne and liege lorde. Theſe ſwete and amyable wordes moſt helped greatly the emperours ire that he had before. Than the emperoure ſayde. Lette the duke come to me. and ſo he dyde/ and kneled downe before the emperoure and ſayde. My ryght redoubted ſouerayne/ I beleue well ye are dyſpleaſed with me/ bycauſe of your brother in lawe the duke of Brabante/ whome I haue helde longe in priſon/ for the which cauſe I ſubmytte my ſelfe to abyde your ordre and your counſayles. To that worde the emperour gaue none anſwere/ but his ſonne ſir Charles/ who was called kynge of Boeſme/ anſwered and ſayde. Duke of Iulpers/ ye haue ben to outragyous to kepe our vncle ſo longe in priſone. And if it were nat at the deſyre of your well beloued coſyns/ duke Iuberte and duke Olke of Bauyers/ this buſyneſſe wolde haue ben ſorer layd to your charge than it is/ for ye haue well deſerued to be hyghly punyſhed. but chaunge your coppe ſo that we haue no cauſe to renewe our yuell wylles againſte you/ for ye do it wyll be coſtly to you. Than the duke of Iulpers bepnge on his knee before the emperoure (where as he ſate in his chayre imperiall) ſayde. My ryght redoughted ſouerayne lorde/ by your pupillaunt dyghnes/ I knowledge my ſelfe to haue treſpaſſed your mateſte/ in that I with an army came againſt my coſyn your bycaire of the empyre/ and in that I haue helde hym as my priſoner/ I deliuer hym vnto you freely and quyte/ and I requyre your grace that you nor he beare me any yuell wyll fro hence forthe. Than the prelates and the princes there beynge preſente/ to helpe forwarde his wordes ſayde. Ryght noble prince this ſuffyſeth that your coſyn of Iulpers hath ſayd. Well quod the emperour/ we are content/ and ſo toke hym vp by the hande. And as it was ſhewed me for the confyrmacyon of more loue/ he kyſſ the duke on the mouth and alſo his ſonne the kynge of Boeſme. And than the duke of Brabante was delyuered out of priſon/ and all ſuche as were priſoners vnder the duke of Iulpers/ and were nat raunſomed before/ were delyuered quyte/ by reaſon of the compoſycion of the treatie. and this done euery manne retourned to their owne. The emperour wente to Prage in Almayne/ and the duke of Brabant in to Brabante/ and whanne the duke of Brabante was retourned/ than he reyſed a newe tayle in his coũtrey to reſtore to his knyghtes parte of their domages.

CC.ii. Howe

Chowe the duke of Brabante dyed/ and howe the duke Guylliam of Guerles treated with the duches of Brabante/ to haue agayne the thre castels/ and what auns were be had/ and howe he made alyaūce with the kynge of Englande. Cap. C.xiiii.

I am yet wyllynge to treate of this matter more at lengthe/ to renforce this hystorye/ and to brynge it to the poynte that I wolde come vnto. ¶ to declare the trouthe/ why Charles the frenche kyng came with a great puyssaunce in to Almayne. I might haue shewed this before but I haue prolonged it (for all thinges though the date and season be paste/ yet they ought to be shewed in this hystory) for whan I knewe that the frenche kynge and the kynge of Englande began to be dely/ than I began to wake to procede this hystory/ more than I dyd before. Therfore I saye thus. Whan duke Wyncelant was returned in to the countrey/ and clere ly delyuered out of prison (as ye haue herde before) Than he was in wyll to dyspyte his landes and castels/ as well in the duchy of Luxembourge/ as elsewhere. and toke his journey to the good cytte of Strawelbourge/ throughe the lande of Sauquemount/ and beheldē thre castels whiche were the occasion of the duke of Guerles euell wyll. He founde therin stronge and kayre/ if he loued the before/ he loued them moche better than: and caused them to be newly fortyfied/ and set workemen a worke/ as masons/ carpenters/ and dykemakers/ to amende euery place. and at his departynge he set a valyaunt knyght to be souerayne keper of these thre casteles. This knyght was called sir Johan Grosset/ who at the dukes commaundemente toke on hym the charge/ at his parell. The duke passed further and dyssired his countrey/ and at his pleasure retourned agayne in to Brabante/ for there was his abydynge. In this season syr Johan of Blois had wedded the olde lady and duches of Guerles/ for the heritage by right came to hym/ by the deth of sir Edwarde of Guerles his brother/ who was slayne (as ye haue herde/ in the batayle of Iuyers.) But his suster the duches of Iulyers stroue with hym and made chalenge/ and the moste parte of the knightes and good townes inclyned most to the ladyes parte/ bycause she had a fayre sonne/ who was able than to ryde. and that was well sene/ for alwaye he was in the warres/ so that sir Johñ de Blois nor his wyfe couldē neuer haue peasable possessyon. But the chalenge of the ryght of his wyfe and the pursute therof/ coste hym aboue a hundred thousāde frankes. For the sonne of duke Wyllyam of Iulyers shewed well in his youth that he was noble and hardy/ and loued dedes of armes/ for he came of noble extractyon. and so was duke of Guerles/ and had in mariage the eldest doughter of duke Iuberte/ who had ben wedded before to sir Edwarde of Guerles/ but he had neuer carnally couppled with her/ for she was to ponge. Thus she was maryed to the lorde Wyllyam of Iulyers/ and he and she were moche of one age. And soo she was styll duches/ as she was before. This ponge duke increased in honour/ wytte/ and prowes/ and in great wyll to haūte dedes of armes/ and to augment his heritage. And his herte was rather engylyshe than frenche/ and sayd alwaye (as yong as he was) that he wolde ayde to sustayne the kynge of Englandes quarell/ for he was nerer of blode to hym than to the frenche kyng. It was shewed hym dyuerse tymes howe the brabansoys dyd him great wronge/ to kepe fro hym the thre castels. Than he answered and sayd. Let vs suffre a season/ euery thynge muste haue his turne/ It is no season as yet for me to awake/ for our cosyn of Brabante hathe many great frendes/ and he is a sage knight/ but a tyme may come that I shall awake. Thus the matter stode a season/ tyll god toke oute of this lyfe duke Wyncelante/ who dyed duke of Boesme/ duke of Luxenbourge/ and of Brabante/ as it hath ben contayned before in this hystory. By the dethe of this duke the duches of Brabant loste moche. Than the ponge duke of Guerles/ who was ryght valyaunt/ and lykely to dysplease his enemyes/ and thought than to get and recouer agayne his thre castelles/ bycause of the debate that was and had ben betwene Brabante and his vncle the lorde Edwarde of Guerles. Than he sente to treate with the duches of Brabant/

to delyuer

to delyuer his caſtelles/for the ſomme of mo-
ney that they laye in pledge for/alwayes ak-
ſyinynge howe they laye but in guage. The
lady anſwered the meſſangers how ſhe was
in poſſeſſyon of them/and helde them as her
owne ryght and enheryteaunce. But bycauſe
ſhe wolde the duke ſhulde be a good neygh-
bour to Brabaunte/that he ſhulde leaue and
gyue vp the towne of Graue/the whiche he
helde in the duchy of Brabant. Whan ỹ duke
of Guerles had herde this aunſwere/he was
nothynge well contente: and thought great
diſpyte therof. And thought and ymagined
many thynges/and couertly he treated with
the knyght/called ſir Johan of Groſſelotte/
chiefe capitayne of the ſayde caſtelles/to aſ-
ſaye if he coude gette them of hym/by byeng
for money/or otherwyſe. The knyght who
was trewe and ſage/wolde in no wyſe har-
ken therto. And ſente to the duke/deſyrynge
hym to ſpeke no more therof: For to dye ther-
fore there ſhuld neuer faut be founde in hym
nor that he wolde conſente to do any trayſon
to his naturall lady. And whan the duke of
Guerles ſawe that (as I was enfourmed)
he dyde ſo moche to ſir Raynolde of Dyſco-
norte/that he toke for a ſmall occaſyon a diſ-
pleaſure agaynſt the knyght: So that on a
daye he was mette with all in the feldes/and
there ſlayne/wherwith the ducheſſe of Bra-
bante was ſore diſpleaſed and ſo was all the
countre/and the caſtelles were putte in other
keppynge/by the agrement of the duches and
of the counſayle of Brabant.

THus the matters ſtode certayne
yeres/and euer there nouell hed
couert hate/what for the towne
of Graue on the one parte/and
for the thre caſtelles on the other
parte: Betwene the duke of Guerles and the
duches of Brabant/and their countreis. and
they of the fronter of Guerles bare alwayes
euell wyll couertly againſt them of Brabant
ſuche as marched nere to them: and dyd euer
to them as moche diſpleaſure as they coude
do/and ſpecially ſuche as were in the towne
of Graue. And betwene the dukes woode
and the towne of Graue/there was but four
leages and a playne countrey/and fayre fel-
des to ryde in. And they of Guerles dyde al-
wayes there as great diſpyte to the brabans-
ſoys/as they myght. And the matter went ſo
forwarde/that ỹ duke of Guerles paſſed the
ſee/and went in to Englande to ſe kyng Ry-
charde his coſyn/and his other coſins: as the
duke of Lancaſtre/the duke of yorke/ỹ duke
of Gloceſtre/and other great barons of En-
glande. He had there good chere for they de-
ſyred to ſe hym/& to haue his acquayntaunce
for the Engliſſhe men knewe well that this
dukes herte/corage/ymagination/and affe-
ction/was rather Engliſſhe than Frenche.
In this vyage he made great alyaunce with
the kynge of Englande/and bycauſe at that
tyme he helde nothynge of the kynge of En-
glande/wherby he ſhulde beare hym fayth/
homage/or ſeruyce. Therfore kyng Richar-
de gaue hym in penſyon out of his coffers/a
thouſande marke by yere: And was counſay-
led to aſſaye to gette his right fro the duches
of Brabant/and was promyſed to haue aide
of the Engliſſhe men/in ſuche wyſe/that he
ſhulde take no domage. And by this meanes
he ſware to be true and faithfull to the kyng/
and to the realme of Englande. And whan
this alyaunce was made/he tooke his leaue
of the kynge and of his coſyns/and other ba
rons of Englande/And retourned in to his
owne countrey of Guerles: and ſhewed the
duke of Julyers all that he hadde done/and
howe he ſhulde haue ayde and helpe of the
Engliſſhe men. And the duke of Julyers/
who by experyence of his age knewe farther
than the duke his ſonne dyde/made no coun-
tynaunce of no great ioye: but ſayd. Sonne
Wyllyam/ye haue done ſo moche/that bothe
you and I maye fortune to repent youre go-
yng in to Englãde. Do ye nat knowe howe
puyſſaunt the duke of Burgoyne is/no du-
ke more myghtie than he: And he loketh for
the herytage of Brabant. Howe maye ye re-
ſiſt agaynſt ſo puyſſaũt a lorde/Howe may
I reſiſt quod the duke of Guerles to ỹ duke
of Julyers his father/The rycher & myghty-
er that he is/the better it is to make warre
agaynſte hym. I hadde rather to haue a do
with a ryche man that hath great poſſeſſiõs
and heryteage/than with hym that hath no-
thynge to leſe/for there is nothynge to be cõ-
quered. For one Buffet that I ſhall receyue
I wyll gyue ſixe. And alſo the kynge of Al-
mayne is alyed with the kyng of Englãde.
If nede be I ſhalle haue ayde of hym. Well

quod the duke of Julyers. Wylliam my fayre sonne/ I feare me ye wyll playe the fole/ your wyll hes and enterprises are more lyke to be vnacomplysshed than atchyued.

I shall shewe you why the duke of Julyers spake somwhat agaynste the wyll of his sonne the duke of Guerles/ and made dout in his enterprise. Kynge Charles of Fraunce laste dissessed before this season ꝑ I speke of he dyde as moche as he coulde alwayes to gette hym frendes on all partes/ for it stode hym in hande so to do/ & for all that he coude nat do so moche as to make resystence agaynst his ennemyes. Howe be it he dyde as moche as he coude by gyftes and fayre promyses/ to sytte in rest and to haue ayde/ so that he gate hym selfe many frendes/ in the Empyre and other places. So that whan the duke of Julyers was quyte delyuered oute of prysone/ and was come to the duke of Brabant. The kynge and he were great frendes togyder/ and by the ordynaūce the Emperour of Rome dyde sette. The duke of Julyers wente to Parys to se the kynge/ and there he was nobly receyued/ and great gyftes gyuen to hym and to his knyghtes. And than he made releke to the kynge for the signorie of Uyerson/ whiche parteyned to the coūtie of Blois whiche lande laye bytwene Blois and Berrey/ and was worthe by yere a fyue hundred pounde of money/ currauntin Fraunce. And there the duke of Julyers sware ꝑ he shulde neuer beare armure agaynst the Crowne of Fraunce. And so as longe as the kyng lyued he kept his othe: For surely as long as kyng Charles lyued he dyde hym no maner of domage/ nor consented to none to be done to the crowne of Fraunce. But whan kyng Charles was deed/ & that Charles his sonne was kynge. By reason of the warres of Flaunders (as it hath been shewed before in this hystorie) And after he tooke his Creacyon at Parys/ He hadde so moche to do that he coude nat take hede in euery place. The duke of Julyers than came nat in to Fraunce/ nor made no relyefe for the landes of Uierssone. Wherfore the duke of Berrey who toke hym selfe as soueraygne/ sayde. Howe the releefes parteyned to hym: And so ceased the landes and toke ꝑ profyttes therof/ and by puyssaūce putte out fro his ryght the Erle of Bloyes: Howe be it the same tyme I sawe them bothe oftentymes togyder/ and neuer debate made bytwene them for any of the sayd landes/ nor any yuell wyll shewed. There was good cause for theym to be frendes togyder/ for Loyes sonne to the erle of Bloyes had in mayage the lady Mary doughter to the duke of Berrey. The duke of Julyers wolde gladly haue entred in to his heryttage/ but he regarded his sonne/ who shulde be his heyre. Therfore he made but lytell counte of the ayde that Loys sonne the duke of Guerles hadde made in Englande. And by this reason he spake the wordes (that ye haue herde here before) to the duke of Guerles/ whan he was retourned out of Englande. Howe be it the duke of Guerles who was yonge and corageous/ toke lytell regarde to his fathers wordes/ and sayde. Sire/ that I haue done I wyll vpholde: for I had rather haue warre with the Frenche kynge than peace/ and rather with hym than with a poore man.

Howe the duchesse of Brabante sent messangers to the Frēche kyng complaynyng of the duke of Guerles/ And howe the kynge & his counsayle were sore busyed with inſydentes that fell in the realme of Fraūce/ as well for the defyances of Guerles as the busynesse in Bretaygne.

Capi. C.xv.

The duchesse of Brabant beynge at Bruselles/ was well enformed of all thise troubles: And howe the duke of Guerles thretned theym of Brabante to make theym warre: The duchesse feared the same and sayde. Ah/ god assoyle the soule of my lorde and hus bande/ for if he hadde lyued/ the Duke of Guerles durst nat haue spoken of any suche matters. But nowe bycause I am a woman and aged he wyll make warre agaynst me. Than the lady cal-

lady cal-

lady called togyder her counſaile to knowe what ſhe were beſt to do/ for ſhe knewe well the duke was hote/ haſty/ and corageous.

¶ The ſame ſeaſone whyle this ladye was takynge of counſayle with her frendes/ the Frenche kynge was defyed by the duke of Guerles/ wherof came a great bruite throughe all the Realme/ and in other realmes therto adioynyng. They had maruayle of theſe newes/ Becauſe the duke of Guerles was but a ſmall prince/ to the regarde of other/ and but of ſmalle landes. Men ſpake therof in dyuers maners/ euery man after his owne opynion: Thaſſe the ducheſſe counſayle ſayde. Madame/ ye haue nede of counſayle: And we ſhall counſayle you to ſende to the Frenche kynge/ and to the duke of Burgoyne be tymes: For ye haue herde howe the duke of Guerles hathe defyed the Frenche kynge/ and all his alyes. If he be in purpoſe to make warre to the realme of Fraunce/ as the bruite renneth that he wyll/ becauſe the Engliſſhe men and the almaygnes are of his alyaunce: He can haue no better entre in to the realme of Fraūce than throughe youre countrey. Wherfore it is good that the kynge and the duke of Burgoyne be aduertyſed therof: And that youre caſtels on the frontiers be well fortifyed and garnyſſhed. For there is nat ſo ſmall an ennemye/ but he is to be doubted. We ſaye nat that ye ſhulde haue great nede to ſeke for ayde or confore all onely for them of Guerles/ but it is good to regarde the alyaunces/ that he maye lightly gette/ as well of Engliſſh men as of almaygnes/ who alwayes are couetous/ and deſyreth to make warre to the realme of Fraunce on truſt of wynnyng. Than the ducheſſe ſayd to her counſayle. Sirs ye ſaye trouthe/ it ſhalbe as ye haue deuiſed. Than ſuche as ſhulde go on that meſſage were apoynted out: As the lorde of Bouc-quemall cheife Stewarde of her houſe/ ſir Johan Opeyn a gracyous knyght/ a clerke and a ſquyer of honoure. The clerke called ſir Johan Grane/ and the ſquyer Nycholas de la Wonoy. All four were of the priuy counſayle with the ducheſſe of Brabant. They departed fro Bruſſelles with letters of credēce and rode to Paris. At that tyme wother the kynge nor the duke of Burgoyne was natte there/ they were at Rohane in Normandye. Than they went fro Paris to Roane where the kynge was.

¶ Than theſe ambaſſadoures came to Rohane/ firſte they treated with the duke of Burgoyne and he made thē good chere/ for he knewe them well/ they deliuered letters to hym/ and he receyued and reed them. Than whā tyme was he brought them to the kynge/ who for loue of their lady receyued thē louyngly. Than the kyng reed their letters and herde them ſpeke/ and anſwered and ſayde. Sirs/ your wordes and requeſtes demaundeth counſayle. Reſorte al wayes to our vncle of Burgoyne & he ſhall here you/ and diſpatche youre buſyneſſe (as ſhortely as maye be) Thoſe wordes contented greatly theſe ambaſſadours/ and ſo went to their lodgynges. The kynge and his vncles with other of his counſayle/ were dayly togyder in counſaile for dyuers cauſes and mydentes newe fallen. The defyance of the duke of Guerles was nothyng pleaſaunt to them/ nor alſo they knewe nat what the duke of Bretayne was purpoſed to do/ becauſe he had taken the conſtable of Fraunce priſoner/ and ſet hym to raūſome to a. C. M. frankes/ and had taken fro him three caſtelles & a good towne: and had greatly fortifyed with men/ vitayls/ and artyllary/ all his garyſons and townes/ & had ſent dyuers tymes letters and meſſangers in to Englande to the kyng and to his vncles: As for the duke of Lancaſtre was at that tyme in Galyce. The counſayle of Fraūce had moche a do to prouyde for euery buſyneſſe/ wherby it was the lengar or ỳ duches of Brabantes ambaſſade had their anſwere. Finally ỳ duke of Burgoyn made thē an anſwere & ſayd. Sirs/ ye ſhall retourne to your lady our aunte & ſalute her fro vs/ and delyuer her theſe the kynges letters & ours. & ſhewe her ỳ her buſineſſe is ours/ and let her nat be abaſſhed for any thyng/ for ſhe ſhalbe cōforted in ſuche wyſe/ that ſhe ſhall well perceyue that her countre of Brabant ſhall take no domage nor reproch. This fayre anſwere contented greatly the ambaſſadours of Brabant. Thus they departed & returned to Paris and fro thēs to Bruſſels/ & made relacion of their anſwere (as ye haue herde before) wherwith the duches was well content.

The ſame

THe same season newes were spredde abrode of holy sayntt Peter of Lusenbourge cardynall / whose body dyde myracles in the cytte of Aupgnon. This holy cardynall was sonne to the Erle Guye of sayntt Poule / who dyed in the batayle of Julyers. This holy Cardynall in his tyme was a good man / noble / holy / & deuoute of lyfe / & dyde many dedes pleasaũt to god. He was swete / courtelle / meke / and a mayde of body: A great almesse man in gyuynge to poore people. He kept nothynge to hym selfe of the goodes of the Churche / but his bare lyuenge: The moost parte of the day and of the nyght he was in his prayers / all wayes he fledde fro the vanyties and superfluyties of the worlde / so that in his yonge dayes god called hym to his company: And anone after his decesse he dyde great myracles / and ordayned to be buryed amonge the poore people: All his dayes he bled humpslyte / and was buryed in the chapell of sayntt Mychaell. The Pope and the cardynalles whan they sawe the myracles that his body dyde dayly encrease and multiplye: They wrote to the Frenche kynge / and specially to his brother the Erle Valeranne of sayntt Poule: desyrynge hym to come to Aupgnon. The Erle wolde nat excuse hym but wente thyder / and there gaue goodlye Lampes of syluer to hange before his auter / and hadde great maruayle of the great beleue and busyenes that the people made there dayly. and for to se hym I wente thyder fro the countie of Foise / and dayly his workes encreased (and it was sayde) that he shulde be canonysed. I can nat tell what fell after.

NOwe ỳ I haue shewed you of his dethe / I shall shewe you of the dethe of another / for I haue nat spoken of the dethe of a kyng of whome great mencyon hath been made of in this hystorie: Howe be it he dyde many dedes vnreclouable / for by hym and his meanes / the realme of Fraũce had moche to do in his tyme.

This was by the kyng of Nauer.

Howe by a straunge fortune the kynge of Nauer dyed in the cytte of Pampilona / and howe Charles his sonne was crowned: and howe Vãchadoze was beseged by the duke of Berrey: and howe the duke of Burgoyne sente to the duchesse of Brabant. Capi. C.xvi.

IT is sayd: and it is of trouthe / that there is nothyng more certayne than dethe. I saye it bycause ỳ kynge of Nauer whan he dyed / thought full lytell that he had been so nere to his ende as he was. If he had knowen therof / paraduenture he wolde haue taken better hede than he dyde. He was in the cytte of Pãpylona in Nauerre / He ymagined howe he wolde reyse a great taylage in his realme / to the some of two hundred thousande florens / and he sente for his counsayle and sayd / howe he wolde haue this money reysed. His counsayle durste nat saye nay / for he was a cruell prynce. Than the moste notable persones of other cyties and townes in his realme were sente for / to come to Panpylona. They came thyder / for they durst nat disobey. Whan they were come all togyther in to the kynges palays / the kynge hym selfe declared forthe the mater why they were sent for. He was a kyng ryght subtyle / sage / and well langaged / and at the conclusion sayde / howe towardes his nedes he must haue the some of .C.C. M. florens / to be reysed of his subiectes / After this maner. the riche to pay .x. frankes / the meane to be cessed at fyue frankes / and all other at one franke. This requeste abasshed greatly the people / for the yere before there had ben a batayle in Nauer / by reason whereof a tayle was layed to the somme of hundred thousande florens: And besyde that he maryed his doughter the lady Jane to duke Johan of Bretaygne / and a great parte of that money as yet nat payde and vngadered. Whan the kynge hadde made his demaunde / he desyred to haue an answere: Than they requyred to take counsayle and to speke togyder. The kyng gaue them respite .xv. dayes. than the chefe

the cheefe of them to make anſwere. The bruite of this taylage ſpredde abroode throughe Nauerre / and euery man was a baſhed therof. At the .xv. dayes ende / the moſte notable perſones of the good cyties and townes returned to Panplona / to the nombre of a threſcore perſones / who had charge to anſwere for all the hole realme. The kynge was preſent at their anſwere makyng / whiche was done in a fayre garden / farre of fro any people / and cloſed aboute with hygh walles. Than they anſwered all with one accorde / and ſhewed the pouerte of the realme / and alleged howe the former tayle was nat as than all leuyed nor gadred / wherfore they beſought him for goddes ſake to haue pytie of them / for they ſayd ſurely the realme was nat able to beare it. and whan the king ſawe that he coude nat eaſely attayne to his purpoſe / he was ſore dyſpleaſed / and departed fro them and ſayd. Sirs / ye are yuell counſayled / take counſayle agayne / and ſpeke yet agayne togyder. And ſo he went in to his chambre / and his counſayle with hym. Than all theſe good perſones were togyder in this garden faſte cloſed in with hygh walles / and the kynge commaunded in no wyſe to ſuffer them to yſſue out / to haue but lytell meate nor drinke. Than they were there in great doute of their lyues / and there was none that durſte ſpeke for them. and ſo it was ſuppoſed that by conſtreynt he had his deſyre / for he ſtrake of a thre of their heedes / ſuche as were moſte contrary to his entente / to gyue feare and enſample to other. Than there fell a ſtraunge inſydence by a marueylous fodayne aduenture / the whiche god ſent lyke a myracle. I ſhall ſhewe you how / as I was enfourmed in the countie of Foyſe at Ortays at the erles houſe / by men of Panpplona / it paſſ nat a thre or four dayes toutnay thence. It was ſhewed me howe this kynge of Nauer in his dayes loued well women / and at the ſame tyme he had a fayre damoſell to his louer / for he was a wydower a longe ſeaſon. On a nyght he laye with her a ſpace / and than retourned to his chambre in a feuer / and ſayd to his ſeruauntes. Dreſſe my bedde / for I wyll reſt me a ſeaſon / and ſo went to his bed / and trymbled for colde / and coulde take no heate. He was an aged man aboute a threſcore yere of age / and of vſage his bedde was wont to be chafed with a baſon with hote coles / to make hym ſwete / whiche often tymes he bled / and dyd hym no hurte. At this tyme his ſeruauntes dyd the ſame / but outher as god wolde or the deuyll / a burnynge flame toke in the ſheetes / in ſuche maner that or he coulde be reſkewed he was brente to the bowels / he was ſo wrapped bytwene the ſheetes. So that he lyued fyftene dayes after in great payne and myſery / in ſo moche that phyſyke nor ſurgery coulde helpe hym / but that he dyed. This was the ende of the kynge of Nauerre. And ſo the poore men of the countrey were quyte of their taylage / and delyuered fro payenge there of to Charles his ſonne / who was a noble good knyght and a ponge / and was kynge of Nauerre / and crowned kynge the ſame ſeaſone that I wrote this byfore / anone after the obſequy done of his father / in the cytie of Panpplona.

I Haue well herde here before of the
p treatyes that hadde ben made in the
counties of Armynake and dolphen
ey / in Auuergne and Lymozyn / who were ene
myes to all their neyghbours. Many of them
were well content to departe / for they thought
they had warred and trauelled the realme of
Fraunce longe ynoughe / thynkynge than to
goo and robbe and pyll in other places. The
duke of Armynake prompted theym to leade
them in to Lumbardy / But the erle of Foyx
who wolde nat lyghtly be dyſceyued thought
the contrary. He helde hym ſelfe ſtyll to ſe the
ende of that buſyneſſe / and euer dylygentely
enquyred / howe the treatyes wente forwarde
in thoſe parties / and whan theſe men of warre
ſhulde departe / and whyder they ſhuld drawe.
And the men of his countrey ſayde / that the
renome was / howe they wolde go and ryne
a bowte a robbynge and pyllynge. Thanne
the Erle caſte downe his heed and ſayde. Al
wayes newes ryne amonge of warre. The
erle of Armynake & Bernarde his brother are
ponge / and I knowe well they loue me nat nor
my countrey. Theſe men of warre may happe
by his meanes to ryne on me and my coun
trey / howe be it I wyll prouyde there fore in
ſuche wyſe / that I truſte I ſhall take no do
mage. It is ſayd / longe prouyſion before ma
keth ſure poſſeſſyon. Thus the erle of Foyx
ſayde to his counſayle / and it was no folyſhe
imagynacyon / as it apered after / if I maye

attaygne

attcygne to the tretynge therof.

We haue herde here before rehersed/ how Geffrey Tete noyr breton/ who hadde longe kepte the garyson of the stronge castell of Vandachor in Lymosyn/ on the fronter of Auuergne & Burbonoys/ wolde in no wyse departe out of ỳ castell/ for he helde it as his owne proper enheryteunce/ and had payed all the countrey there aboute/ and vnder their pateryng the people labored in peace and reste. Thus this Geffrey kepte the estate of a greate lorde. He was a cruell man in his dyspleasure/ he hadde no more pytye to slee a man than a beest. Nowe to come to purpose. whan the tydinges spred abrode in Auuergne and Lymosyn/ of the tayle that was gathered in the countreys/ to the entente to a boyde out of the countrey these men of warre. Than it was brewed that the men of warre in the fortresse of Vandachor shulde departe & to gyue vp the fortresse to the duke of Berrey. By reason of that tydynges the people were contente to pay this tayle. But whan they sawe the contrary (for the most hurte that they had/ was by them of the garyson of Vandachor) thought the money that they had payed at the first gatherynge but lost/ and sayd howe they wolde paye no more/ crosse nor mayle/ without they of Vandachor were constreyned to departe out of the countrey. These tydynges came to the herynge of the duke of Berrey/ who had all the soueraygne charge of the countrey of Auuergne/ Lymosyn/ and Gelnadan. Than the duke and his counsayle sayde. Surely these poore men haue good cause to saye so/ and to be lothe to pay their money for nothinge/ and more ouer sayde/ howe he hym selfe and his counsayle were to blame/ that they layde nat a siege aboute that fortresse/ to kepe them of that garyson fro yssuyng out. Thanne the duke of Berrey ordeyned at the cost and charge of the countrey foure hundred speares of good men of armes/ to beseige Vandachor by bastydes. And soueraigne capytaynes of that company was syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Johan Boesme launce/ a valyaunt knyght of Burbonoyse. These men of armes and knyghtes/ as nere as they myght layde siege to Vandachor/ and made bastydes in foure places/ and by men of the countrey they made great trenches and defence vpon the straytes/ to stoppe their issuinge out. But the capytayne Geffrey set tydell therby/ for he knewe well his garison was well furnysshed with all maner of thynges/ thoughe there came no newe bytayle to them in seuen yere. Also the castell stode in so strong a place vpon a rocke/ that it coude take no domage for any assawte. And for all this siege and bastydes/ they within wolde often tymes issue out by a preuy posterne/ whiche opened betwene two rockes/ so that they wolde issue out vnder couerte/ and ryde abrode in the countrey/ and take prysoners. Other thynge they wolde bringe none to their fortresse/ they coulde nat because of the strayte wayes/ and stronge mountaynes that they muste passe by. And this issue coulde nat be stopped fro them for the aley vnder couert endured fro their garyson a seuen or eight leages/ or they came out in to the feldes/ and whanne they retourned agayne/ by that tyme they were entered a thre leages/ they were as sure there as within their castell. This maner they vsed a longe season. The siege laye more than a yere before the castell. ¶ Nowe let vs leaue speakynge of Vandachor tyll a nother season/ and speke of other newe maters.

The duke of Burgoyne forgate nat the promise that he had made to his aunte the duches of Brabante. He ordayned a foure hundred men of armes/ burgonyons and other/ and made two knyghtes capytayns/ the one syr Guyllyam of Tremoyle burgonyon/ the other syr Seruays of Werande almayne. And the duke sayd to them. Sirs/ ye shall go to your charge on the fronters of Brabant and Guerles/ there as the duches of Brabante wyll apoynt you/ and make to her enemyes as good warre as ye canne. The knyghtes sayde they shulde do their beste/ to fulfyll his commaundemente. They made them redy and gadred their men/ and wente forthe as soone as they myght/ and drewe in to Brabante/ and sente worde of their comynge to the duches of Brabante/ and so passed through the lande of Lussenburge. And than by the ordynaunce of the marshall of Brabant/ they were sente in to the thre castels that the duke of Guerles chalenged and wolde haue againe/ bycause they had ben layde but to pledge. that is to say/ Buth/ Gaylyth/ & Nulle. There they helde them in garyson and made good fronter warre/ & lompyne rode

rode abrode to encountre their enemyes. The duke of Guerles fortefyed hym ſelfe agaynſte them/ and furnyſſhed his townes and caſtels agaynſt them/ for he ſawe well the warre was as than open. So it fortuned that ſyr Wyllyam of Tremoyle/ beſyrynge to auaunce hym ſelfe to do ſome thynge that myght ſownde to his honoure. He ſet his imagynacion on a day on a towne in Guerles/ a foure leages fro his fortreſſe. this towne was called Seaulle/ and he ſhewed ſecretely his entenſyon to ſyr Geruays of Werande his companyon/ who lightly accorded to his mynde. So they gathered their company togyder and departed aboute mydnyght/ and rode a rounde pace too this towne/ and had guydes that brought them to Seaule/ by that tyme it was daylight. Than they reſted them/ apoynted what they wolde do. And as it was ſhewed me/ ſyr Geruays with .xxx. ſpeares/ went on before for to wyne the gate/ and ſir Wyllyam of Tremoyle to folowe after/ bycauſe they feared if they ſhulde haue rydden all togyder to haue been ſpyed. but they thought how they of the towne ſhulde thynke none other/ but that they ſhulde be a certayne nombre of men of armes/ ſent thyder by the duke of Guerles to refreſhe the garyſon. Thus this knyght ſir Geruays with .xxx. ſpeares rode before to the towne of Seaulle. In the mornynge they founde men and women goynge to the towne/ for it was markette day/ they ſaluted theym in the langage of Almayne and rode forthe. The poore men went ſurely they had been men of the countrey pertaynynge to the duke of Guerles that were tydynge to the garyſon. Syr Geruays and his company rode forthe tyll they came to the gate and founde it open with a ſmall warde/ it was ſo erly that the moſte parte of the people were in their beddes. They reſted there and were lorded of the gate. Than incontynent ſir Wyllyam of Tremoyle and his route came galoppynge thyder as faſte as they myght/ and entred into the towne/ & cryed their crye. Thus the towne was wonne without any deffee/ for the men of the towne thought full lytle that the frenchmen wolde haue done ſuch an enterpryſe/ and ꝑ moſte parte of the were in their beddes.

¶ How the frenche men after they had brente and ryfled the towne of Seaulle retourned to their garyſon/ and of the ioy that the duke of Burgoyne and the duches of Brabante made for that dede/ & howe ſir Johñ Boeſme launce diſcomfyted the engliſſhmen. Cap. C. xvii.

This enterpryſe was done on the nyght of ſayne Marten in wynter/ and a thre dayes before there came thyder a knyght of Engläde with ten ſpeares and .xxx. archers/ ſente by the kynge of Englande. This knyght was called ſyr Gyllyam Fykaole. Whan the larum began he was ryſynge out of his bed. He herde that the towne was wonne/ and demaũded by whome. he was aunſwered that it was done by bretons. Ah q' the knyght bretons are puell people/ they wyll burne and pyll the towne/ & than departe. What crye do they crye/ ſyr q' they/ they crye on Tremoyle. Than the engliſſhe knyght cloſed the caſtell/ and helde hym ſelfe & his company within/ to ſe if any reſkewe came. but euery man was ſo abaſſhed that they fled hyther & thyder. The poore people fledde in to ꝑ mynſter/ and ſome auoyded ꝑ towne by another gate. the frenchmen ſette fyre in the towne in dyuerſe places/ howe be it there were many howſes of ſtone and bryche/ that ꝑ fyre couldē nat lightly burne them. The moſte parte of the towne was brent pylled/ and robbed/ ſo that nothyng was lefte that was good/ & the rycheſt men of the towne taken priſoners. The engliſſhe knyght was taken at laſte/ For whan he ſawe that all was loſt he opened the howſe that he was in/ for he douted the fyre/ whan he ſawe the flames and ſmoke in euery corner of ꝑ towne/ and ſo came out with his penon before hym and his company archers and other/ and there valiauntly defended them ſelfes a longe ſeaſon. But fynally he was taken and peſoned priſoner to ſir Gyllyam of Tremoyle/ and all his company taken/ but ſe we ſlayne. Whan the frenche men had done their wylles with the towne of Seaulle in Guerles/ and their barrettes dryuing their pyllage before them they departed for they thought it folye too a byde there/ and went to their garſon fro whēce as they came.

Thus

Thus the duke of Guerles had the firſt buffet and domage/ wherwith he was ſore diſpleaſed whan he knewe therof. and ſo came thyder with a great nombre of menne of warre/ and thought well to haue founde there the frenche men/ but they were gone. Than he newe repayred the towne and furniſſhed it with newe men of warre/ who were more diligent to kepe the towne/ thanne they that were there before. Thus daily the aduentures of warre fell/ ſome ſoſte one daye and ſome a nother. The duches of Brabante/ and all tho of her countrey were gretly reioyſed of this aduenture/ and ſir Gyllyam of Tremoyle/ and ſyr Geruais of Werande atchyued great grace. Than they of the countrey ſayde/ that in the nexte ſommer folowyng they wolde wynne it agayne. Whan the duke of Burgoyne herde theſe tydinges/ and howe that his men ỳ were in garyſon in Brabant dyd well and valyauntly/ he was gladde therof/ and to incorage theym he wrote pleaſaunt letters often tymes to ſyr Guyllyam his knyght. Thus they tarryed there all that wynter/ keping well their frontiers/ & defendyng them ſelfe fro domage. And after the caſtelles and forteresſes of Guerles/ were better taken hede vnto than they were before. Nowe ſhall I ſhewe you of a nother enterpriſe/ that Perote of Bernois dyde in Auuergne/ where he gate great profite/ and by what meanes he dyd it I ſhall ſhewe you at lenght.

IT fortuned the ſame yere and ſeaſon about the tyme of the myddes of Maye/ a. rl. companyons aduenturers iſſued out of Caluſet/ the whiche Perot of Bernoys helde. This forteresſe ſtode in Lymoyn. Theſe companyons rode forthe at aduenture in to Auuergne/ and a Gaſcoyne ſquyer was their capytayne/ called Geronet Ducante/ an experte man of armes. And becauſe the countrey was alwayes in doute of ỳ men of warre that were on the frontiers of Burbonoys/ there was a knyght of the duke of Burgoynes/ called ſyr Johan Boeſme Launce/ a gracyouſe and an amorous knyght/ hauyng great corage to auaunce hym ſelfe. Whyle theſe engliſſhe men rode a brode/ he demaunded what nombre they were of. And it was ſhewed hym howe they were aboute a. rl. ſpeares. What quod he/ it is ſyttell to regarde for. rl. ſpeares/ I wyll ſet as many againſt them. and ſo departe fro thence as he was as than/ and went there as his chefe charge was/ and that was before Mandachor. He gate togyder a. rl. or a fifty ſpeares of Lymoyn and Auuergne/ and Burbonoys/ and with hym there was a knyght called ſir Loys Darabier/ and alſo ſir Loys Babcon/ and the lorde of Layate Obyle. And ſo toke the fyldes without hedyng of any high way/ they knewe the countrey/ & came to a paſſage where their enemyes muſte nedes paſſe/ by reaſone of the mountaynes and ryuers whiche were greate and depe/ by occaſion of the ſnowe fallyng fro the mountayns. They had nat ben there halfe an houre/ but that thenglyſſhmen came thyder and was nat ware of that rencountre. Than Boeſme launce and his chyany/ couched their ſpeares and came againſt their enemyes and cryed their cryes. whan the engliſſhmen ſawe howe they muſt nedes fight/ they turned their faces to their enemyes/ & defended them ſelfe. There was a ſore rencountre/ and certayne ouer thrown on bothe partyes. But to ſay the trouth the frenchmen were better experte men of armes than the auenturers/ and that ſemed well/ for there were none of the aduenturers that returned agayne without it were the baſtelles/ who fledde and ſaued them ſelfe whyle other dyd fyght. There were. xrii. taken and ſyxtene ſlayne on the place/ and the capitayne taken priſoner. and thus they departed.

Howe ſyr Johan Boeſme launce led theſe priſoners to Mount Ferant and howe they of the countrey were glad whan they herde of this enterpriſe/ and howe Generot & his company were ſette to raunſome and deliuered by the money that Perot of Bierne leute hym. Cap. C.xviii.

AFter dyning & ledynge theſe priſoners/ Boeſme launce aduyſed and remembred hymſelfe howe that a moneth before he had ben in the towne of Mount ferrante in Auuergne/ ſporting amonge the ladyes and damoiſels there/ and howe they hadde deſyred hym at a tyme/

ſayenge.

say why. For peraduenture I be not launcelote de
ulake tymes aduentured to the better hap it nat
so fortune / that some one of my company
poure enemyes / I shall here of many good
one of the bamoseis (such newes was ther great
fauoure both Vnder the Lorde) Syr quod he /
I wolde fayne se an englysshman / a flower of
this countrey called Gastonet / make them
me after tymes howe that englysshmen were
perte here of arcons / the which I truely ryght
well to be true / for they ryde verey hyghe a
broder and do many pas pas armement ouer
and endeth dyuerse of our cattayle / and kepeth
them. At whiche wordes this gentylman Boesme
launce and wente her and sayd. Dame if euer
it be my fortune to take my / ye shall se hym.
Syr I thanke you quod the damoseu. Thus
after the forsayde enterprise / whan this pro
myse came in to his mynde / he tolde than the
way to Clermonte / whiche was nat farre of /
and tourned to the way to Mountferant / nat
farre thence. Of his comyng to Mountferant
and of the tourney / he had attayned ayenst
the aduenturers / who forr troubled the coun
trey / all the people of Mountferant were ryght
sory shall / and made hym good chere. Than he
toke his lodgyng / and dwelled hym / the la
dyes and damoiselis came to make hym chere /
and receyued him ryght welly / he was a large
knyght. Than he thanked them / and sayde to
her that had delyred hym before to se some en
glysshe man. Dame / I wyll acquyte me to you
I made you promyse nat paste a moneth a go /
that if it myght be my fortune to take any en
glysshe man / to shewe hym to you / and as this
day god hath gyuen me the grace to mete with
some that be ryght valyant / for in armes they
haue gyuen vs ynoughe to do / how be it we
hadde the victory. They be no englysshemen
naturally borne / they be gascoyns / who make
warre for the englysshmen. they be of Byerne
and hygh Gascoyne / ye shall se them at good
leyser for the loue of you I haue brought them
to this towne / and hey they shall remayne tyll
their raunsomes be payed. The ladyes and da
moselles laughed at him / and toucned the mat
ter to a great sporte / and sayd to hym. Syr / all
we thanke you. And so there he tayed a thre
dayes amonge them / he kept good company
with his prysoners / and put them to raunsome
for he sawe well they were but poore compa
yons aduenturers / and he thought it were
better to hange them / or to smyte them / or raun
some them / rather than me to suffre so many of
them to abyde styll in the towne. And so whan
he departed thence he sayd to Gastonet. Syr /
ye shall abyde here with a certayne / for all the
rest of your company / and the other shall de
parte and go seche your raunsome / And that
ye shall paye / I shall appoynte them that shall
receyue it / and whanne the money is payed ye
shall departe. Therefore remembre well now
what I do for you / if any of ours hereafter hap
pen to be in lyke case / do in lyke wyse. Syr quod
Gastonet / I am bounde so to do / and so we be
all. Thus Boesme launce departed / and re
tourned a gayne to the syege of Mandachor.
Ane a twelue of the prysoners tayed styll in
Mounteferante / and the other departed and
went to Galaset / to Perot of Bernois to hane
of hym .xxii. hundred frankes. They that ta
yed styll at Mountferant lay and made good
chere / and no great wacche layde on them / but
they went vp and downe in the towne at their
pleasure / and so were there .vi. tyme dayes / and
in that season they lerned moche of the fare of
the towne / the whiche coste after a hundred thou
sande frankes.

Than the capytayne of Galaset was
informed of the aduenture of Gas
ton of Mandurant / how that he and
his company were ouer throwen by sir Iohan
Boesme launce / he made tyell therof / and saith
to them that came to hym for the money for
their raunsomes. Syrs / ye are come for money
for their departaunce / how be sayd ye it is nat
for yes truely sir quod they / we trust they shall
nat be alwayes in this lolle / they haue no ga
ges. well sirs quod he / as for me I nother take
for their pledges nor yet for their losses / they
shall haue no hynge of me. I made them nat
to go forthe / they rode at their owne aduenture /
therfore ye may se we them / let aduenture de
lyuer them. Thynke you that I wyll employe
my money after that sorte nay surely. I canne
haue alwayes chapmans ynowe to ryde more
tagely than they ryde. As for me I wyll quyte
out no man / without he be taken in my com
pany. This was the tynall answere that they
coulde gette for Gastonet. Than they sayde a
monge themselfe / it were best that two or three
of vs retourne agayne to Gastonet / and shewe
hym all the case. So thre of them retourned to

Mountferante/ and as they rode they passed by Clermoût/ and sawe well the walles were nat of no great heyght. Than they sayd one to another. this towne is prignable/ if we come hyder on a nyght we maye gette it/ there is no great watche kepte. We muste one tyme bargayne and a nother tyme hye/ we can nat both bargayne and hye all tyme haye. Thus they rode forthe and rode to Mountferante/ and there founde Geronet and his companyons/ and there shewed hym all the answere that they had of Perot of Bernoys/ wherof they were a basshed/ for they wyste nat howe nor where to gette their raunsome. Thus all a daye and a nyght they were in great displeasure. the nexte daye Geronet sayde to them that had brought those newes. Syrs/ I requyre you returne agayne to our capytayne/ and shewe hym fro me ꝑ I haue to my power whyle I was with hym/ serued him truely/ and wyll do yet if it be his pleasure. And shewe hym if I tourne and become frenche to delyuer my selfe/ he shall wyn but lytell therby. And if I do it god knoweth it shall be full sore agaynst my wyll/ and I shall forbeare it as longe as I canne. And shewe hym that if he wyll nowe delyuer us fro hence/ that within a moneth after I shal bring hym to suche a botye/ that he and his company shall wynne a hundred thousande frankes. With that message the thre companyons returned agayne to Galuset/ and shewed Perot their message. Than he studyed a lytell and sayd. It maye well be as he sayeth/ at aduenture I shall delyuer him incontynent. and so opened a cofer wherin was more than three score thousande frankes/ nat gathered of his rentes that he hadde in Byerne/ but the moste parte of pyllage. For the towne he dwelte in before the warres was but of twelue houses/ and the erle of Foix was chefe lorde therof/ and the towne was called Badam/ within three leages of Otays. Than he tolde oute .xxii. hundred frankes/ at a pynch a frende is knowen/ I shall put them in aduenture/ he is well able to wyn them agayne and me/ and he wyll. Thus they departed fro Galuset & returned to Mountferante/ it was a .xxii. great leages betwene/ but they had a good sauccõduct/ wherby they passed in and out without daunger.

Whan Geronet knewe howe he and his company shulde be delyuered/ he was right ioyfull and sente for them that shulde receyue the money and sayde. Syrs/ holde tell your money/ here is all that we owe you. And they tolde out .xxii. hundred frankes. Than they returned for their expenses in their lodgynges/ and payed euery thynge with the largeste/ so that euery man was content. And whan all was payed/ than Geronet hyred men and horses to bringe them to Galuset. Whan syr Iohan Bocime knewe was certified of the receyte of the money/ I thynke he dyd sende for it/ or els lette it stylle there on trust of the strength of the garyson. For the same season sir Peter of Spaine/ as than chaunsellour of Fraunce/ left there his treasoure the whiche he lost the same yere all/ or most parte. Whan Geronet was returned to Galuset/ the companyons made hym good chere/ and after a thre or foure dayes Perot le Bernoys called hym and sayde. Geronet/ the promyse that ye made to my seruauntes was cause of your delyueraunce/ and nothyng els/ for I was nat bounde to paye your raunsome/ seynge ye departed without my leaue/ ye rode forthe but at aduenture/ therfore nowe holde your promyse/ or els there shall be displeasure betwene you and me/ for I wolde fayne knowe I haue nat lerned to lese/ but rather to wynne. Capytayne quod Geronet/ ye haue reason to say as ye do/ and sir I saye thus to you that if ye lyste I shall set you in the towne of Mountferant within .xb. dayes/ in the whiche towne is great treasure and pyllage/ for it is ryche of marchaundyse/ and ryche villaynes be therin great plenty. the chaunsellour of Fraunce syr Peter of Giache/ as it is informed me/ hathe great ryches within the same towne. And I knowe well it is the towne moste symplest kept and leste taken hede to of any towne in the realme. Syr this is that I can saye/ and this is the promyse that I haue made. In the name of god quod Perot le Bernoys/ it is well sayd and I consente therto/ ye knowe well the maner of the towne/ and howe it is kepte and fortifyed. This enterpryse dothe it requyre any great nombre. Syr quod Geronette/ a thre or four hundred speares shall well accomplyshe our feate/ for within the towne there be no men of great defence. Well quod Perot I am contente/ and I shall sygnyfye other capytayns of the fortresses here abouts of the mater/ and we shall assemble to gyder and go thyder.

Than

How Geronet of Mandurante with twelue of his company retoune ned to Mountferant/and how the per rot of Bernoys with foure hundred speares went to Mountferant/and wolde nat entre in to the towne by tnne other waye but ti at the gate.

Cap. C. xii.

A this determynacion Perot sente to the cappytaynes nerre aboute hym and apoynted euery man to mete at Ouser/ a castell in the bysshoprieche of Clermount/ nat farre thens. Whereof somtyme Bache a great pyller a gascoyne was cappytayne. The companyons of seuen fortresses assembled togyder at Ouser englysshe men/ and they were a fourr hundred speares well mounted/ and than they had but fyre leages to ryde. The first that came to Ouser was Perote of Bernoys/ to shewe that it was his entergylle/ and to take cast ayle with the other cappytayns/ by the aduyse of Geronet and accordyng to the informacyon that he had gyuen hym. Than Geronet and a twelue other with hym/ arayed them in the cuse vyllayne marchaundes in cotes of feyle and lewde hoses tyed one to another with baggage on them/ accordynge to the custome of the countrey. And thus they departed fro Ouser in the bakeynge of the daye/ and so rode towardes Mountferant/ and by the marchaundes they entred into the towne about noone. There were none that coude aspye what men they were/ ahby thought fall yet till they hadde drunken of wyne. Thyder of the towne dayned sayd they had ben marchaundes/ came thyder to the fayre to haue bought cloth and drapers/ saynge they came fro Mountpellier/ to bye many thynges/ to agaynst the fayre there shulde come diuerse marchaundyses fro other cytes and townes of the realme. Than Geronet and his company wente to their lodgynge/ to the sygne of the Crowne and sette vp their horses and toke vp a fayre chambre for them/ and kepte them all togyder/ without goynge abroode in the towne tyll nyght of the euge/ and than

made them redy/ and thought well to pay their hoostesse nothynge for their expenses.

At nyght they were busy to dresse their horses and sayd to their hoost and hostesse that their horses hadde sore trauayled all that day/ wherfore they had nede of rest. They prouyded them of plenty of candels/ and so went in to their chambre and dranke and made merry/ but they wolde nat go to bed. So the hoost and the hostesse went to their beddes and lette them alone and had no suspecte of them. Now shall I shewe you what Perot and his company dyd. The sayd day he and with hym sixe other cappytayns/ fyue Perotes Bernoys/ as Chese/ than the Bourge of Compaygne called Arnaloon/ the bourge Inglois/ the Bourge of Carlat/ Apchon Seguyn/ Olyuer Barbe/ Bernadon of the Illes/ & with them there was a great routter of Bearne the lorde of Launcepayne. By hym and by the bourge of Compayne I was afterwarde enformed of this entergylle/ whiche was done about Candelmas/ when the nyghtes be long and colde. And all the same nyght it rayned/ and the wynde blewe so that it was a stormy season/ wherfore the cappytayne of the watche of Mountferant wolde nat out that nyght of his lodgynge/ but lete sent his sonne to the who was but ponge/ of a fyftene yere of age. And as he went fro the one gate to the other/ he fonde foure ponge men watchynge/ and gyuen to lowe and they sayd to the ponge man. Syr/ take of vs this a blanke/ and let vs go home and warme vs/ it is paste a leuen of the cloche. The ponge man counted the money and toke it and they departed fro their watche/ and went to their owne houses. Than Geronet and his company hadde shed at their houses dore/ to se when the watchmen shulde retourne. Than they sawe when the ponge man came fro the watche/ and the watchemen with hym. Than Geronet sayde/ the water goeth well/ this is tyme to worke good nyght for by/ euery manne in their owne is as nowe gone to bedde/ the watche is paste/ we nede to take no care by that. Than with the other Perotes I am sure Perotte le Bernoys and his company ayenst nyght dyuers wayes assault as they may. And in the same tyme they were comynge ayenst the gate were to take the towne/ and rustle with Bernardyns Mayst/ with his gunnyers/ shyppes/ shyppes/ there nat fayre/ Mayst

besyde saint Flour. whan eche of them knewe other they made good cheer/ and demaunded eche other whyder they wolde/ and what they sought in that countrey. Amergot answerd and sayd/ I come to my fortresse of Vyole/ and am goyng to Carlate. In the name of god sayd two of the capytaynes/ the Bourge Tarsiens and the Bourge Compaygne. Sir we be here/ wolde ye any thynge speke with vs. yea quod Amergot/ ye haue certayne prysoners of the countie of Holphyn of Amergne/ and ye knowe well we be in treatynge togyther by the meanes of the erle of Armynake/ wherfore we wolde gladly make an exchaunge with certayne prysoners that I haue in my gard yson. I am sore desyred thus to do by the countesse of Holphyn who is a right good lady and is well worthy to be done pleasure vnto. than the Bourge of Compaygne sayd. Amergotte ye are greatly bounde to do some pleasure to that lady/ for within this thre yere ye haue of her yssuer thre hundred frankes/ for the redemynge of the castell of Merreyer. But syr/ I pray you where is the erle Holphyn at this season. Syr quod the other/ it is shewed me that he is in Fraunce/ commynge vpon the treatie that ye know that we be in hande with the erle of Armynake/ and with erle Holphyn. Than Perot le Beamys sayde. Sir/ leaue this communynge and come on with vs/ and it shall be for your profyte/ and ye shall haue parte of our botye. Sir quod Amergot/ and whyder go you than/ Symp sayde sir quod Perot/ we go streyght to Mountferante/ for this nyght the towne shall be yelden to me. than Amergot sayd. syr/ this is well done that ye go aboute/ for ye knowe well we be in treatie with the erle of Armynake and with this countrey/ wherfore all towns and castels returnyth themselfe halfe assured/ wherfore we shall be greatly blamed thus to do/ and ye shall breke our treatye. Symp sayd the good Perot/ as for me I wyll agree to no treatye as longe as I maye kepe the felde/ it behoueth companyons to lyue. come on your way with vs/ for ye shall haue nothynge to do at Carlat/ for here be the companyons of that fortresse/ and suche as be left behynde wyll not suffre you to entre till their company come home. Well sayd Amergot/ with you wyll I not go but I wyll returne agayne in to my fortresse/ for the mater is thus. Thus they departed one fro another. Perot helde the waye to Mountferant/ and whan they were vnder Clermount there they rested them/ and imagyned on a newe enterpryse/ specially certayne of the gascoyns/ who knewe nat of the enterpryse of Geronet. Than they sayd to the cappytayns. Syrs beholde here this cyte of Clermonte/ the whiche is a ryche cytie/ and rather more pygnable than Mount ferant/ we haue ladders here/ let vs scale it/ we shall haue more profyte here than at Mount ferante. To this poynte they were nere a greed/ but than the chefe cappytayns sayd. Syrs Clermonte is a puissant towne and well peopled and the men well harnessed/ if they be ones moued they wyll assemble togyther and put themselfe to defence. it is no boute but we shulde haue no great auauntage by them. And if we shulde be repulsed perforce and our host taken or ylste/ we shulde yuell escape/ for we be fare fro home. and if the countrey than shulde ryse and pursue vs/ we shulde be in great daunger. we thynke it were better to go on forthe and folowe our fyrst enterpryse/ for the lesynge of a newe enterpryse peraduenture myght cost vs dere.

This counsayle was taken/ and so rode forthe without makynge of any noyse/ so that aboute .xi. of the clocke they were nere to Mount ferant. whan they sawe the towne they rode styll a thre bowe shot of fro the towne. Than Perotte sayde/ beholde here is Mount ferant our company that went before are within the towne. kepe you all styll here close to gyder/ and I wyll go downe this balaye to se if I maye se other any newes of Geronet/ who hathe brought vs to this enterpryse/ and departe nat tyll I come to you agayne. sir quod they go your ways/ we shall abyde you here. Ther with Perot departed from with hym. The weather was so darke that no man coulde se an other fro hym/ and also it rayned/ blewe and snewe/ that it was a meruayllous euell wether. Geronet was as than on the walles and prayed to here some newes. He loked downe ouer the walles/ and as he thought he sawe the shadowe of some man goynge along by the dyke. Perot thought he spyed Geronet/ and began a lyte to whystell softly. And whan they without herde that they came nere to the wall/ for the dyke was that tyme hadde no water. Than Geronet demaunded who was there without. Perot hyed his hyer and sayd/ I am Perot le Beroys/

Geronet

Geronet art thou there / yea ſir quod he I am here. Make you redy and aproche your men / for I ſhall lette you in here in to the towne / for all tho within the towne be a ſlepe in their beddes. What quod Perot / ſhulde we entre here where as we ſtande / god kepe me fro that / I wyll nat entre there / if I entre I wyll entre in at the gate / and at none other place. Ho wyll quod Geronette / and I aſſure you that lyeth nat in my power to do. but ſyr bring your ladders hyder and ſpare nat ſchale / for I aſſure you there is none ſhall let you. Well quod Perot / thou haſte promyſed to lette me in to the towne / but ſurely I wyll nat entre without it be by the gate. Well quod Geronet and I can nat a mende it / for I can nat lette you in at the gate / it is faſte ſhytte / and the kepers be within / but they be a ſlepe. Whyle they were at this ſtryfe certayne of Geronettes cõpany within went vp vpon the walles / to ſe if they myght here any noyſe. And tell there by there was a poore houſe at the foote of the wall / this houſe ſtode alone farre of fro any other houſe / and a poore man dwelte therin a layſour / who had watched all the nyght tyll the ſame tyme / and thanne was goynge to bedde. And as the wynde caryeth noyſe farre of / he herde as he thought men ſpekynge on the walles. For by nyght tyme a man ſhall here farre of. therwith he wente out of his houſe and wente vpon the walles / and ſo met with the men / and as ſoone as he ſawe them he began to crye. Than one of them ſlept forthe and toke him by the throte / and ſayd. Vyllayne thou arte but dede / & thou ſpeke one worde / And ſoo he helde his peace / for he feared dethe. Than Geronet (who had herde the noyſe) ſayde. Sers ſlee hym nat / for he ſhall do vs good ſeruyce / god hath ſent him to vs / for by hym we ſhall bryng ſhe all our enterpriſe. Than Geronet ſayde to Perotte le Bernoys. Syr / retourne to your company / and whan ye here the fyrſt gate open come forthe / and with youre axes breke down the gate nere you / and ſhe vnderſtonde the aventures of the man that they had taken on the walles. Thanne Perot departed and wente to his company / and ſhewed them all the mater (as ye haue herde before)

Howe Geronet lette in Perote le Bernoys and his company in to the towne of Mountferant / wherof the countrey was a frayde / and howe the kynge and his vncles beynge at Parys were ther with ſore diſpleaſed / and alſo the erle Dolphyn of Auuergne. Cap. C.xx.

Than Geronet ſayd to the man ꝑ they had taken. Without thou fulfyll oure deſyre thou arte but dede incontynente. What wolde you that I ſhulde do quod he. I wyll quod Geronet that thou go to the gate and awake the porters / and ſay howe the capytayne wolde haue the gate opened / or els let them delyuer to the the keys / to lette in a certayne marchauntes of Mount Pellyer / who be without with fardelles of marchandyſe to come in to the fayre. Sers quod the man / What and they wyll nat byleue me. yes I warante the quod Geronet / tell them by the token that he was nat at the watche this laſt nyght / but ſent his ſonne. And without thou do this meſſage well and wyſely I ſhall ſlee the with my dagger / and do ſo that thrugh thy faute I leſe nat myne enterpriſe. Whan the poore man ſawe howe he was manaſſed / and perceyued howe they were redy to ſlee him / he was ſore abaſſhed / and ſayd. Syr I ſhall do that ye cõmaunde / to the vttermeſt of my power. And ſo he came to the gate and knocked ſo longe tyll he awoke the porters. Than they ſayd: What arte thou that wakeſt vs this tyme of the nyght / I am ſuche a one quod he / and named his name / I haue ben all this nyght buſy in makyng of certayne geare of the capytayns / and ſo haue borne it home / and whyle I was there / worde came to hym howe certayne marchauntes of Mount Pellier are without the gate with their marchandyſe / and are ſore trauayled and weate with the fowle wether / wherfore the capitayne commaundes you by me to open the gates and let them come in / or els gyue me the keyes and I ſhall let them in by the ſame token that he was nat at the watche hymſelfe this nyght / but ſent

his sonne. That is trewe q the porters abyde a lytell/thou shalt haue the keyes incontynent. Than one of them rose and toke the keys hanginge on a pyn/and opened a lytell wyndowe and delyuered out the keyes. The man toke theym/ And than incontynente Geronet toke them/and at aduenture put in the right key in to the locke and opened ꝑ gate/and than went to the vtter gate/but in no wyse he coulde open it. Perot and his company were without tarynge for openynge of the gate. Than Geronet sayd/sirs helpe your selfe/auaunce forth for I can in no wyse open this seconde gate/ breke it vp with your axes/other wyse ye can nat entre in to the towne. Than they without had redy axes and wedges and hewed ꝑ gate lyke carpenters. And as soone as they coulde gette in a hole they put in axes and wedges to Geronet/that he and his company shuld hewe a sonder the barres of the gate. Than dyuerse men herynge that noyse arose out of their beddes/ and had meruayle what it myght be/for they thought full lytell that the englysshe men shulde haue ceysed them out of their beddes/at that tyme of the nighe. Than the kepers of the gate who had yuell kept their warde/herynge men speke and horses traye and crye/knewe well they were dyscryued/ and rose and came to the wyndowes of the gate/ and begamme to cry with an hygh voyce/trayson trayson.than all the towne began to ryse in great feare/and many thought to saue their goodes and themselfe and fledde to the castell/but they were but a fewe that entred. For the Chatelyn within the castell whanne he vnderstode that the englysshe men had wonne the towne/for feare of lesynge of more/he wolde nat lette no wne his byrdges. Some of his frendes that came first he lette them come in by meanes of a planke/ And whanne he herde the great byrwte in the towne/than he drewe in a gayne the planke/ and after that he wolde no more put it forthe/ but wente aboute to se what defence he shulde make if the castell were assayled. thus I haue shewed you howe the fyrste gate was opened/ and the seconde broken with axes and wedges/ and than they entred fayre and easely. Thise capytayns and their companyons or they entred in to any house/ they rode all the streates in the towne togyther/to se if there were any assemble to make any defence. And whan they had serched euery place/ and founde no man to make any resystence/but a certayne suche as were gone to haue entred into the castell made a lytell defence/but soone they were taken and slayne. What shulde I make longe processe/ Thus the towne of Mounte Ferante in Auuergne was taken on a thursday at nyght/the thyrtenth day of February/ by Perot le Bernoys and his company/ And whan they sawe howe they were lordes of the towne they toke vp their lodgynges at their ease/ without letynge of any house a fyre/ or doynge of any other vyolence. For Perot le Bernois had charged on payne of dethe no man to vyolate any maner of woman or mayden/ nor to lette any house a fyre/ nor to take no good nor prysoner lytell nor greate/ tyll he had fyrste knowledge therof. And also/that no man shulde be so hardy to hurte any churche or trouble any man of the churche/nor to take any thynge out therof. This maner euer Perot vsed whan so euer he wanne any towne or fortresse. But Bellarp Tete noyre vsed alwaye the contrarye/ for he neuer cared for churche nor for nothynge els/ so that he myght haue it and get good/ he cared nat howe.

The same mornynge whanne tydinges of this dede came to the knowledge of them of Clermounte/whiche was but a small leage thens/they were sore abasshed and good cause why/ for their enemyes were nere them. They wyste nat what to say e or do/ but toke good hede to defende their towne. These newes sprede a brode to the castell Neuffe/ to Thyon/ to Vyc/to Issoire/ to Ryon/ and from thence to Auuergne Perse/ to castell of Mounte Pencyer. And all these townes and countreys that I haue named/ the moste parte pertayned to the duke of Berrey. In farre countreys these tydynges sprad a brode/ howe these englysshe men and gascoyns had wonne and taken the good towne of Mount ferante in Auuergne. As many as herde therof meruayled greatly/and were in doute/and the countreys adioynyng were halfe a fraydy/as Auuergne/ Burbonoys/ Forestes/and to Berrey. Whan these newes came to Parys the kyng and his vncles were sore displeased/whiche was good reasone/ for the same tyme the erle Dolphyn was at Parys for the ouerynge of that countrey/ for he hadde the lieutenaygne charge of kepyng

keppynge therof / with the erle of Armynake. Therfore this dede was greatly to their diſpleaſure / for they thought they ſhulde beare ſome blame for that dede / bycauſe it was vnder their rule: But their excuſe was reaſonable / for it was well knowen howe they were in treatie with all the companions / wherfore they thought the countre at that tyme hadde ben in good ſurete. Than incontynent the erle Dolphyn departed fro Parys to go into Auuergne / to ſette an order in the countre and lefte all his trayne behynde hym: And ſo rode but alonely with his page / and toke his waye by Moulyns in Burbonoys to go to Auuergne / and chaunged euery daye freſſhe horſes. And as he rode in this haſte at ſayne Pier the myuſter he herde other tydynges / þ he hadde nat herde before / as I ſhall ſhewe you.

Howe Perot le Bernoys and his company toke their counſaile and determyned nat to kepe the towne of Mountferante: and howe the ſayde Perot and his cõpany departed thens by night with all their pyllage & priſoners / and went and refreſſhed thẽ in the towne of Oulac. Cap. C.xxi.

When it was Fridaye morynge after the towne was wonne on the thurſdaye at nyght (as ye haue herde here before) and that theſe Capitayns were lordes of the towne they bounde faſte all the men / ſo that they coude do thẽ no domage. Than they ſercched all aboute and truſſed in to fardelles: Clothe / naprye / gownes / furres / and other thynges / ſuche as they thought to haue any profite by. And thã they toke counſayle whether they ſhulde kepe ſtyll the towne or no. Some were of the opynion to kepe it ſtyll and to fortifye it: But the moſt parte ſayde / that to abyde there it were great folye / for ſo they ſhulde be cloſed rounde about / and ſhulde be ſurre of ſco their ſocours a forterelles / ſo that if they ſhulde be there beſieged / they ſhulde nat be able to withſtande their enemyes and ſykerly to haue no ſocours / ſo that by longe ſiege they ſhulde be famyſſhedde / for there aboute were many great gentylmen / cyties & good townes. And alſo whan the duke of Berrey ſhulde knowe of this enterpryce / he wyll ſende hyther the mareſchall of Fraunce ſir Loyes Dantrere. And alſo the erle Dolphyn of Auuergne and the erle of Armynake wyll come ofſende and beſiege vs / with many great lordes: As the lorde of the Towre / the lorde Dapthon / the lorde Dapthyer / the lorde of Reuell / the lorde de la Palaye / and dyuers other. yea / and ſpecially hyther ſhall come ſir Johan Boeſme Launce with a great nõbre. All theſe doutes the ſage Perot le Bernoys and Olyue Barbe dyde caſt and cõſyder / and ſayde. If they were there taken they ſhulde leſe all they haue / and fayne to delyuer vp all their forterelles. So theſe capitayns concluded the ſame nyght to departe & to take with them all their botye and priſoners / of whom they had no thaſe two hundred. Than they ſet a ſure garde at the gates / to thentent that none ſhulde yſſue out to bewray their entrepryce. Nowe ſhall I ſhewe you of a ſcrymyſſhe that they of Clermount made with them.

Howe they of the towne of Clermont made a ſcrymyſſhe with theſe pyllers (that had taken and robbed the towne of Mountferante) at the gates of the towne. Cap. C.xxii.

Whaſe theſe tydynges were knowen at Clermõt that the Engliſſhe men had takenne Mountferant / they were ſoore aſtoniſhed / for they were nere neyghbours. So they of Clermont toke counſayle togyder / And without the

out the towne of Cleremounte on the waye towardes Mountferant. There was a chur che of Friers/as fayre/ as stronge/ & as well buylded/as any was in the realme of Fraun ce: Wherunto parteyned a great close/ enuy roned with stronge hyghe walles/ and with in the close full of Vynes: For one pere with another the friers had therof/ a fyftene hū dreles of wyne. Than some sayde within the towne/ that it shulde be best to beate downe the Friers/ bycause it toyned so nere to the gate/or elles it might be to their distruction. Some other sayde naye/ alleygnynge howe it shulde be great pytie and dommage to dis stroye so goodly a house/ and sayde. Sirs/ lette vs go to Mount ferant/ and scrimysshe there with our ennemyes/ and let vs besiege them/there they shall neuer scape vs. For the knyghtes and Squyers of this countrey of Burbonoys and of Forestes wyll drawe hy ther: So that within these foure dayes sure lye they shalbe besieged. Whyle they were thus debatynge of the matter/ there were a thresore compaygnions made them selfe re dy to departe out of the towne/ to go se their ennemyes/ and to scrimysshe with them. There was no man dyde lette them/ for of the best of the towne were in that company/ desyrynge to wynne honoure: and toke with them a. rrr. crosbowes/ and so rode towar des Mount feraunt. Thanne after them is sued out of Cleremounte mo than two hun dred men a fote/ and folowed after. Thanne horsemen rode streyght to the Barryers of Mount feraunte. Tidynges came in to the towne to the Capitayns/ howe that they of Cleremount were come to byfette them/ and were before the barryers/ of whiche tidynge they were greatlye reioysed/ and a hundred armed them and mounted on their horses/ and oppned the gate & issued out on a froune and cryed saynt George. And whan the cleremō tops sawe them comyng so fiersely they were afrayed/ and vanquysshed within them selfe and beganne to recule without shewynge of any face of defence/ and so fledde hyther and thyder: They that were best horsed at the cō mynge out of Cleremount and were the for mast/ sayeng: howe they wolde be the fyrste that shulde make assaute/ were than the fyrst that retourned agayne to the towne/ and the gascoyns after them: So that if the gascons horses had been as go as the Cleremontoys/ there hadde but a fewe of them entred agayn in to their towne: Howe bett they were cha sed tyll they mette with the fote men/ who in lykewise than fledde and kepte none ordre/ and lepte into the Vynes and in to the dykes to saue them selfe. The crosbowes that came out of Cleremount/ kepte better array than their company dyde: For they close togup der toke a dyne parde and bent their bowes/ and made dyssage of defence: and kepte them selfe there tyll all the Englysshe menne were withdrawen backe agayne to Mountferant. They of Cleremont lost twelue of their men sire slayne and fourteene taken. Thus it fell of that enterprise/ and all that day euery mā trussed and made redy to departe the same nyght after/ and by fore of the Clocke euery man hadde trussed vp their baggage/ and la ded their horses and sette them selfe a foote. They past nat a thresore on horsebacke/ and so sette forwarde in the stretes theis somers and caryages: they hadde well a foure hun dred horse charged with clothes/ napyre and furres/ and other thynges necessary. They founde in the towne cotes and presses full of stuffe/ but they lafte them clene voyde. They bounde their prisoners two and two togup der: And whan they were all redy and that it was nyght/ they oppned the gate and issued out: They had taryed in Mount feraunt no more but eyghtene houres. They sette their cariage before them/ and thā their prisoners and foote men/ and the capitayns on horse backe came after them. The nyght was dar ke and the countrey nat aduysed of their de partynge/ wherefore they were nat pursued/ and about mydnight they came to Oulacke/ fro whens they came the seconde day before: there they rested them.

It was shewed me that they wanne by the same voyage a hundred thousande frankes/ besyde their prisoners. Sir Peter of Gy ache chaunceloure of Fraunce loste for his parte in redy money/ thyrtie thousande fran kes or aboue.

The companyons were well counsay led to leaue Mount ferau it in Au uergne so soone as they dyde/ For if they had taryed there two dayes lenger than they dyde

they dyde/ they hadde nat departed without great daunger/ and paraduenture with loſſe of their lyues. For all the knyghtes and ſquiers of the countrey gathered togyder and came thyder with puyſſaunce to haue layde ſiege to the towne/ and the lordes of the countrey (as ye haue herde before named) none tarped behynde. And the erle Dolphyn was come within two dayes iourney/ but than he herde tidynges howe the Engliſſhmen and Gaſcoyns were departed to their owne forte-reſſes: and there the trouthe of the hole matter was ſhewed hym. Whan he knewe the trouthe/ he rode than more at his eaſe & came to Sayat Purſayne/ and fro thens to Moulyns in Burbonoys: And there he founde the duches of Burbone his doughter/ who was ſore a frayde of that aduenture/ Howe be it whan ſhe knewe that the aduenturers were gone ſhe was gladde therof/ for thaime ſhe thought her countrey more ſuter than it was before. By my faythe quod the erle I wolde it had coſte me greatly/ that they had tarped ſtyll at Mount Ferant tyll I had come thyder: For if they were there nowe they ſhulde haue an yuell ende. We coulde nat haue had a better enterpryſe in all Auuergne/ wherby to haue recouered all the forteresſes that they holde. It ſemeth well they are ſkyllfull men of warre/ that they tarped there no lengar: they are gone to their owne holdes with all their pyllage and priſoners. Thus the Erle and the ducheſſe his doughter comuned togyder. And Perot le Bernoys and Olyue Barbe/ the Bourge of Copayne/ the Bourg angloys/ Apthon Seguyn/ and the other captayns of the forteresſes whan they were cõe to Oulacke/ they departed their botye/ pyllage/ and priſoners. And ſome they raunſomed/ and the other they ledde to their forteresſes/ Some to Caſtlat/ and ſome to Caſlucet/ All the countre of Auuergne tooke better hede to they holdes/ than they hadde done before: Howe be it the erle of Armynake and the erle Dolphyn ſonne to Perotte le Bernoys (Sayings howe falſely and traytorouſly he had taken and ſtollen the townes of Mountferant and robbed it/ and ledde away the priſoners) counſaylynge hym to make theraſ amendes. Tenſyuynge howe they were in treatie togyder for a peace. Perotte anſwered and ſayde: Sayng the ſame gracyon for my ſelfe and ſeuyn other Capitayns that were with me at the takynge of Mountferant/ were neuer at no maner of treatie with their Erles/ nor we toke nat this towne fraudulently/ nor ſtale it: But I entred in at the gate whiche was oppned redy to receyue me. If I and my compayny hadde been ſworne to any treaty/ we wolde haue kepte it ſurely/ But we were neuer of that entencyon nor wyll be. In this caſe the mater ſtoode and the lordes coude haue none other anſwere. Sir Peter of Gyache was ſore diſpleaſed/ for the loſſe that he hadde: And as for them of Mountferant/ recouered them ſelfe as well as they myght. Thus this aduentures fell.

Howe the duke of Berrey maryed the lady Mary his doughter to the erle of Bloys ſonne: And howe the ſame yere the ſonne of the duke of Berrey maryed the lady Mary of Fraunce/ ſiſter to the yong kyng Charles of Fraunce. Cap. C. xxiii.

In the yere of our lorde God/ a thouſande three hundred fourſcore and fyre/ in the moneth of Auguſt/ Guye the erle of Bloyes and the Lady Mary his wyfe departed fro ỹ towne of Bloyes/ well accompanyed with knyghtes and ſquyes/ ladyes and damoſelles to go in to Berrey/ and they had with theym their ponge ſonne/ who hadde eſpouſed the yere before/ Mary doughter to the duke of Berrey. and the entencyon of the erle of Bloyes and of the cõteſſe his wyfe/ was that whan they ſhulde come to Burgus in Berrey/ to ỹ reſte to ỹ ſayd mariage. In lyke wiſe it was the entencyon of the duke of Berrey & of the duches his wyfe. Thus whil all theſe ptyes were come togyder/ than theſe two chyldren were eſpoſed togyder in mariage with the chriſ-

che of

che of saynt Stephyn in Burgus by a Cardynall / the chaunceliour of Berrey and the bysshoppe of Poyters had the yere before ensured theym togyder. At this mariage of Loyes of Bloyes and of the lady Mary of Berrey in the cyte of Burgus / was made great feest and tryumphes with iustes & tourneyes. This feest endured eight dayes. whā this was accomplyssched / the erle of Bloyes and the countesse tooke leaue of the duke of Berrey and of the duchesse / and so returned to Bloyes and hadde with them their ponge doughter. Also in the same yere Johñ of Berrey sonne to the duke of Berrey called Erle of Mouytpensier / maryed the lady Mary of Fraunce suster to the ponge kynge of Frāce. In the same yere that these Maryages were thus made: In the tyme of lente / the duchesse of Berrey and Mary of Fraunce her doughter / and her sonne rode to the towne of Bloyes / to se the Erle Bloyes and the countesse / and their chyldren. They were receyued into the Castell of Bloyes with great ioye. At all these maters Sir Johan Froissarte was present: And whan they had ben there in great feest thre dayes / they departed and toke their way to Poyters: but they went by water by the ryuer of Loyre to Amboyse / and fro thens in charres and on horsebacke / tyll they came to Poytou. There the duchesse helde her house mooste cōmonly in a good castell and good towne called Chynon In this yere dyed Mary of Fraunce beyng ponge / who was wyfe to the erle of Mouytpensier. In lykewise soone after dyed the lady Jane of Arrayne duchesse of Berrey. Thus the duke of Berrey and his sonne were to marry agayne (as they dyd) but nat ouer soone. Of the whiche maryages / and specyalyse of the dukes: I shall shewe you here after / whan the mater shall requyre to haue it declared.

We haue well herde here before / howe the duke of Guerles had defyed the French kyng dispytefully / whiche was spoken of far and nere. For as the bruyte was / it was nat done in no curtesse maner / but out of the style and vsage of all other defyances. Trouthe it is / I sawe my selfe certayne wry-

tynges in paper / the whiche was sayde to be the true copy: But bycause I sawe it nat vnder seale / nor auowed as such maters ought to be that touche great princes / suche as is the Frenche kyng / therfore I gaue no great credence therto: Howe be it / it semed well that this defyaunce was displeasaunt to the realme / & wolde haue it amended. And that the duke of Guerles shulde excuse hym of the spytefull wordes that were in the defyaunce. The kynges coūsayle wolde in no wyse that the mater shulde rest so / for the great lordes of Fraunce sayde. Without the kyng founde some remedy / they and all the realme shulde be greatly to blame: And they sayd howe the kynge was ponge and forwarde / and ꝑ was well sene in his iourney in Flaunders. And if he go nat forwarde nowe to reuenge this dede / men wolde speke dyuersly of the nobles of the realme of Fraunce / who shulde counsayle the kynge / and are sworne to kepe and defende his honour / and to refourme all that is myslorded. And to the entent that the kynge nor the realme shulde beare no blame the lorde of Coucy toke payne in the mater: And shewed well howe the mater touched hym nere. He knewe the almayns better thā he dyde any other / for he hadde been often in their copanyes / as well for the chalenge that he made to the duchy of Iustryche / as for other myspendes that he hadde among them.

The kynges vncles sawe well howe all the nobles of the Realme were well enclyned to haue the mater redressed / and specially the duke of Burgoyne hadde great affection therto / for the duke of Guerles harped and pyled the duchesse of Brabantes iaunetrey / The whiche enheryteaunce shulde retourne to hym after ꝑ dethe of the two ladyes who were right aged / both the duches and her suster. Wherfore he wolde that suche by warre or other meanes / that the duke of Guerles were apeased. Howbeit all spyt of all that was requisyte to make all the membres of Fraunce one and of one opynyon: First shulde be a fayre iourney for the kynge to go out of Fraunce to Almaygne to conquere landes and countrees / The whyche the kynge coulde nat do / without he had all his holle power & myght hym for to

nat knowen whyder the almyghtye who be
courteous people wolde helpe and allyst the
duke of Guelles ouernat. Also furthermore
the duke of Burgoyne and the other noble
men of Fraunce sawe well howe the duke of
Bretayne was in great differēce with the re-
alme of Fraunce and began marueylously.
The wold by his babes that he had as lyst ha-
ue warre with p realme of Fraūce as peace
And the lordes knewe well howe he prauy-
ded his tonnes / ships / artelry / and cyties with great
prouision of men / vitayls / and artillary / to
defende any siege. And beyōdes that certayn
men he wrasted to England wold moyne
treatable wordes to make alyaunce for them
And the Englysh men were walying therto
to the entent that their warre with Fraunce /
myght be the better for them after. Thanne
the counsayle of Fraūce wolde nat that there
shulde be lefte behynde them suche a myst in
Bretaygne / but that first it myght be putte a
waye by good meanes and conduite. They
thought they wolde nat putte the realme in
that doute. If the kynge shulde goo to Ma-
ygne and leaue the realme behynde / as
this the kynges vncles purposed / they
wyste nat howe to kepe the duke of Bre-
tayne / for as thanne suche as they had sent thy-
der were retourned: as the bysshoppe of Li-
gers / sir Johan of Vyen / and sir Johan de
Beull. They shewed the kyng & his vncles
howe they had done nothyng to purpose. Wh
the duke of Berry aduysed to sende to Bre-
tayne to entreat with the duke his cosyn / the
erle of Stampes who was a sage persone &
a treatable. Than the duke beyzed hym and
sayde. Fayre cosyn / it behoueth that ye go in
to Bretaygne to speke with our cosyn the du
ke there. If ye fynde hym harde and highe
of wordes / chafe nat with hym / treate hym
swetely and after a good maner. And speke
sagely to hym / and bryng hym in to good rea
son and it may be: And shewe hym howe the
kynge and I and my brother of Burgoyne /
wolde nothing to hym but good loue & peace
And if he wyll abyde and holde with vs / we
shall alwayes be redy to do hym pleasure. &
also shewe hym that as for the castels that he
holdeth of the cōstables / how that for a small
occasion he hath sealed them. But & it wolde
please hym to rendre them agayne / it shulde
be greatly to his honour. And howe that the
kynge shall gyue hym as fayre and as good
as they be / in any other place where he wyll
chose in the realme. Good cosyn do so moche
as to bringe vs some good tydinges / and for
any tarieng there / departe nat fro hym tyll ye
bryng some mater to passe: and haue well in
your remembraūce all this busynesse and all
his answere / and the order of his estate. The
erle of Stampes answered and sayde. Sire /
all this shalbe done right gladly.

After that the erle of Stāpes had this
charge fro the duke of Berry to go in
to Bretayne to the duke his cosyn: He taried
nat long but made hym self redy and passed
by Chartres / and throughe the good countre
of Maygne / and so came to Angers and there
founde the quene of Naples / who hadde ben
wyfe to the duke of Anjou: Who was called
kyng of Naples / of Cicyle / of Hierusalem / &
duke of Pole / of Calabre / and erle of Proū-
uence: And in her company her two fayre sonnes
Lowes and Charles. The lady receyued
her cosyn the erle of Stampes ioyfully / and
there was Johan of Bretayne who loued nat
the duke of Bretayne / but he was nat in po-
wer to shewe forthe his puell wyll / nor to a-
mende it. Whan therle of Stampes had ben
there a daye and a night / he tooke his leaue &
departed and rode to Chasteaulr / and tour-
neyed so long that he came to the cite of Nan
tes and there refresshed hym. And than he de
maūded where the duke was / and it was shew
ed hym howe he was in the marches of We
nes & therefore the duke who receyued him
ioyously / for they were nere cosyns togider.
The erle of Stampes who right well coude
acquyte hymself amonge great pryntes and
lordes (for he had ben brought vp amonge
them in his youthe) acquytedde hym self
right sagely with the duke. And shewed nat
the principall affection of his corage at his
fyrste commynge / but dissymuled two or thre
dayes / and whan he sawe his tyme he humy-
led hym self greatlye to the duke / the rather
thereby to drawe hym to his entent / and than
sayd. Sire and my right dere cosyn / ye ought
nat to marueyle thoughe I am come so farre
of to se you / for greatlye I haue desyred it.
And than notably he shewed hym the charge
that he hadde to saye to hym / on the behalfe
of the duke of Berrey / of the whiche wordes

the duke

the duke made light. And for resolucion of any swere at that tyme/ the duke sayde. Colyn ye knowe well this that ye haue sayde is true me. I shall remembre me and ye shall abyde here with vs as long as it shall please you/ for your comyng vnto vs great pleasure. Other answere the erle coulde not haue/ as at that tyme. The erle taryed there a fyftene dayes/ and the duke shewed hym great loue/ and shewed hym the fayre castell of Crupy/ which was newe to Wannes/ the which the duke had newely made/ and there he toke parte of his pastaice. And alwayes whanne he came a conuenyente tyme/ he shewed secretly and sagely the cause of his comyng. And euer the duke answered hym so couertly/ that the erle coulde haue no certeyn answere/ to make any relacion of a hundred thousande frankes/ nor of the castels that he helde of the constables/ the whiche yet at the ende he dyd/ and that was without requeste of any persone/ what it was lefte loked for/ (as I shall shewe you hereafter as I was enformed) whan the erle Stampes saw that he laye there in vayne/ than he thought to take his leaue/ and to retourne into Fraunce/ and so he dyd. The duke gaue hym leaue/ and at his departynge gaue hym a fayre whyte palfrey/ apareiled and it had ben for a kynge/ and gaue hym a fayre ryng with a stone/ well worthe a thousande frankes. Thus the erle departed and retourned by Angers/ and there founde the quene of Napoles/ and Johan of Bretayne/ who greatly desyred to here tydynges/ and sayd. Fayre cosyn/ I thynke ye haue fared well/ for ye haue taryed longe out. Than the erle shewed parte of his busynesse/ but specially how he had spedde nothynge. Whan he had taryed there a day/ he departed and went to Towrs/ and at last came in to Berry/ and founde the duke at Mehun/ a castell of his/ whiche he had newly made/ and had workemen dayly theron. Whan the duke of Berry sawe the erle of Stampes he made hym good chere/ and demaunded tydynges of Bretayne. There he declared fro poynt to poynte all that he had sene and herde/ and sayde: howe in no wyse he coulde brake the duke of Bretayne fro his purpose. The duke of Berry passed the matter lightly/ whan he sawe it wolde be none other wyse. And so retourned in to Fraunce to the king and to the duke of Burgoyne his brother/ and shewed them howe he had spente his

to Bretayne to the duke bycause the erle of Stampes/ and declared in euery poynt howe he had spedde. Thus the matter rested/ whan they sawe none other remedy.

Howe after the departynge of the duke of Lancastre all that euer he had wonne in Galyce/ the frenchmen recouered it in lesse than fyftene dayes/ and howe the englysshmen that had ben there/ that warre blamed and spake euell of the countrey of Galyce/ and howe the frenche kynge sent for the duke of Irelande. Ca. C.xviii.

IT hath been rehersed here before in this hystory/ howe the englysshmen dyd in Galyce/ howe the duke and the duchesse/ and his doughter came to the Porte of Portyngale/ and there taryed a season with kynge Johan of Portyngale/ and with the ponge quene/ doughter to the duke of Lancastre (as ye haue herde here before) It anoyed greatly the duke/ and nat without a cause/ in that he had done nothynge for his profyte all that season in Castyle/ but that he badde done was to his great domage/ his men dede of sykenes of the best of his company/ knyghtes and squyers. And suche conquest as he badde made with great payne and cost/ he sawe well it shulde be soone recouered agayne by the kynge of Castell. And in dede so it was. For as soone as he was departed and entred in to Portugale/ and that the spanyardes and knyghtes of Fraunce/ suche as were taryed there with sir Oliuer of Clesquyn constable of Castyle/ sawe that the duke of Lancastre was departed/ and that in maner all his englysshmen were departed fro hym. Than they sette forwarde to reconquere agayne all that had ben lefte of the realme of Castyle/ the whiche was soone done/ for they of the townes/ castels/ & cytees in Galyce/ had rather to haue ben vnder the obeysaunce of the kynge of Castyle/ than vnder the duke of Lancastre/ without

out he

all he had been able to haue kepte the felde/ to haue defended the countrey. For they of Caſtyle/ Lombardy/ and of Italy/ of olde cuſtome they ſaye (Lyue he that is ſtrongeſt/ and he that wynneth) All that euer the duke of Lancaſtre had wonne for the ſpace of Caſtre to the begynnynge of July/ all was wonne agayne and refreſhed with newe frenchmen and men of Caſtyle/ and the engliſſhmen that were left there by the duke in garyſons (who thought to haue taryed there peaſably all the wynter) were ſone put out/ ouerthet by ſayre meanes or perforce/ and ſome ſlayne/ ſuche as wolde not yelde vp/ and ſome returned by fauerſoure to paſſe by Portugale/ ſo to Bayon or to Burdeaux. And of all this the duke of Lancaſtre was well aduertyſed/ he beynge in the cytie of Porte in Portugale/ but he coude not remedy it/ whiche was ryght ſore dyſpleaſaunte to his herte. It is not to be beleued the contrary/ for the more noble/ valyaunt/ and ſage that a man is/ diſpleaſures to hym be the more bytter and paynefull. howe be it the duke wolde ſay often tymes (and bare out a good face) If we haue loſt this yere/ by the grace of god a nother ſeaſon ſhall be for vs. the fortunes of this worlde are meruayllous/ they can not be alwayes permanente. Alſo the kynge of Portugale gaue hym alwayes good comforte/ and ſayde. Syr ye may abyde here and kepe your eſtate/ and wryte to youre bretherne and frendes in Englande/ that they maye ſende you this nexte Marche a fyue or ſyxe hundred ſpeares/ and two thouſande archers/ and I ſhall gather to gyder my power and people/ who haue good myndes to make warre in to Caſtyle/ ſo we ſhall make a good warre. ſometyme one countrey wynneth and a nother loſeth. The duke of Lancaſtre thanked the kynge of Portugale of his good comforte and offre. Howe beit for all that the kyng was ye dukes ſonne in lawe/ and had maryed his doughter/ and that he ſayde was of a good wyll. yet for all that the duke diſcouered not all his courage/ for he knewe well Englande was in trouble/ and great debate amonge the lordes/ and howe the lordes habbe matters ynowe to attende vnto/ as well for the kepynge of the frontiers againſt Scotlande/ as for to treate with the duke of Bretaygne. And the kyng knewe well that whan the duke came out of Englande/ there was a do to ſette for warde his armye/ wherfore he thought it ſhulde be harde to get any newe ayde thence/ ſeynge the realme at ſo many great charges all redy/ and alſo he thought well that ſuche engliſſhmen as were retourned wolde no more come thyder agayne/ but thought rather that they ſhulde by tyme ſeke other to come. the duke conſidered all theſe maters in his mynde/ and whan he had ben a ſeaſon at the cytie of Porte with the kynge of Portugale/ than on a daye he ſayd. Syr/ it ſhulde be for my profyte to retourne to Bayon/ and to the marches of Burdeaux for dyuerſe reaſons. He ſawe well his beynge in Portugale coulde do hym ſpecyall auaūtage/ for there he was not on his herytage that he deſyred/ but he ſayde his goynge into the archebyſſhoppryche of Burdeaux and of Auloſe/ and ſo to retourne by Bygorre/ and ſo by the lande of the lombryſſence/ of the countie of Foyſe/ and countie of Armynake/ and ſo by Garonne/ Bordone/ and entrynge in to Piergourte and Querchyn/ Rochellops/ Xayntonge/ Triſſynge/ Poictou/ Auuergne and Lymoſyn/ wherin were many garyſons and caſtels holden of the engliſſhe parte/ who wolde all make warre for his ſake. Wherfore he ſayd it were better for hym to be amonge theym to counſaile and encorage them/ than to be in any other place. And alſo he ſayde howe Portugale was farre of to here any newes out of Englande/ and alſo he knewe well ye engliſſh men wolde be lothe to come thyder/ bycauſe of the long voyage by ſee/ and alſo he knewe well that ſhyppes of Spaygne/ of Galyce/ and of Caſtyle were goynge and comynge on the ſee in and out to Flaunders with their marchandyſes/ whiche was alſo great daunger for encounterynge of them. All theſe thynges conſyderd/ the duke of Lancaſtre prepared for his departynge/ and had ſhyppes apoynted hym by the kynge/ and a patrone called Alphons Vzetat. Whan theſe galyes were redy and the wynde good/ the duke and the duches and her doughter/ toke leaue of the kynge of Portugale and of the quene/ and ſo toke ſhyppynge and entred on the ſee/ abyoynge goddes pleaſure and wynde. They had wynde and weather at pleaſure/ ſo that they aryued at Bayon of whoſe comynge they of the countrey were ioyfull/ deſyrynge ſore to ſe them.

Whan the duke and the duches and their doughter were aryued at Bayon. Tydynges

therof ſprdde abyde/ and they of Bardeloys were ryght ioyfull therof. Thanne Johan of Pardpame ſeneſchall of Burdeaux/ and the ſeneſchall of the landes came thyder to ſe the duke/ and ſo dyd other gentlemen of the countrey/ as the lorde of Mucydente/ the lorde of Duras/ the lorde of Roſem/ the lorde of Landuras/ the lorde Leſpare/ the lorde of Newchaſteaux/ and other knyghtes and ſquyers of the countrey. Thus they came dayly/ ſome at one tyme ſome at a nother/ all they offred hym their ſeruyce/ as they ought to do to their lorde. Thus the duke taryed at Bayon/ and often tymes ſente in to Englande to the kynge his nephewe/ and to his other bretherne. But for all his waityng he was nothyng comforted nother with men of armes nor archers/ for as the worlde wente than/ the dukes buſyneſſe was lytell taken hede vnto/ nor lorde/ knyght/ nor ſquyer to make any haſt to auaunce forwarde to the ayde of the duke of Lancaſtre. for ſuche as had ben in Portugale made ſuche reporte through the realme of Englande/ that no man had corage to auaunce thyder/ but euery man ſayd the voyage in to Caſtyle is to farre of from vs. It is more profytable for vs to haue warre with Fraunce/ for that is a good ſwete countrey and temperate/ and good lodgynges and fayre ſwete ryuers. And in Caſtyle there is nothynge but harde roches and Mountaynes/ whiche are nat good to eate/ and an vntemperate ayre/ and troubled ryuers/ and vnycrte meates/ and ſtronge wynes & hote/ and poore people/ rude/ and euell arayed/ farre of from ouraunce. wherfore it were folly to go thyder/ for if we entre in to any great cytie or towne there wenynge to fynde marchaundyſes/ we ſhall fynde nothynge but wyne/ larde/ and empty coffers. This is contrarye to the realme of Fraunce/ for there whan it is fortune to wyn any towne or cytie/ we fynde ſuche ryche ſpoyle that we be aſſayled therof/ and it is good to make warre where we may haue profyte. let vs aduenture there/ and leaue the vnhappy warre of Caſtyle and Portugale/ where is no thynge but pouerte and domage. Thus the engliſſhe men ſayde in Englande/ ſuche as had ben in Caſtyle/ ſo that the lordes perceyued well how that voyage was out of the fauoure of the engliſſhe men. Alſo the realme was in trouble/ and the tuityon of Cruyſyen and outher but newly done/ and the duke of Irelandes departed out of the Realme/ and kynge Richarde came to the gouernyng of hym ſelfe/ the whiche he hadde nat well learned. Alſo by reaſon of ſuche ſuſpentes the matters abode in harde caſe for the duke of Lancaſtre/ beynge in the cytie of Bayon/ where he bode all that ſeaſon.

All theſe buſyneſſes as well in Caſtyle and Portugale/ as in Englande (and of the departyng of the duke of Irelande) was well knowen with the frenche kynge and his counſayle. Than to haue more parfyte knowledge/ it was ordayned by the frenche kynge and by his vncles to ſende to Tretie to ſ duke of Irelande/ where as he was/ and to gyue hym a ſure ſauecondyt to come into Fraunce and to tarye there as longe as bothe partyes were pleaſed. It was behouable to ſende for hym by ſpeyall meſſangers/ and ſure wrytyng fro the kyng/ or elſ the duke of Irelande wolde nat haue come there/ for he knewe well that he was out of the loue and fauoure of the lorde Coucy/ who was a great baron in the realme of Fraunce/ and was of a great lynage. He had no cauſe to loue hym (as ye haue herde before) for acordynge to the trouthe the duke had nat well acquyted hym ſelfe to his wyfe/ who was doughter to the lorde Coucy. And certaynly it was the principall thing that tooke awaye the good renome of his honour/ bothe in Fraunce and in other places. And in lyke wyſe he was blamed/ defamed/ and hated in Englande/ as well as in Fraunce. Whan the frenche kynge had concluded to ſende for the duke of Irelande/ the lorde of Coucy ſpake as moche agaynſt it as he myght/ but there were ſo many reaſons layde to hym (and alſo becauſe the kyng wolde haue it) that he was contente to ſuffre it. The frenche kynge who was but yong deſyred greatly to ſe the duke of Irelande/ becauſe he was reputed to be a good knyght/ and alſo becauſe it was ſayd how he was ſo well beloued with the kynge of Englande. Thanne he was ſente for by a knyght and a clerke/ a notary of the kynges. Whan the Duke of Irelande herde tydis how the frenche kynge had ſente for hym/ he had mariaple therof/ and hadde diuerſe imagynacyons for what entente he ſhulde be ſente for in to Fraunce/ howe be it fynally he thought he myght

myght go surely in to Fraunce to se the kynge by reason of hys saueconducte/ and to returne agayne at his pleasure. Than he departed fro Calays/ and rode forthe with thepm that the kynge had sent to hym/ and rode so longe that they came to Paris/ for as than the kyng was there in his castell of Lowre. There the duke was well receyued of the kynge and of his vncles. The frenche kynge desyred him to abyde there styll and apoynted hym a place to kepe his house/ & state in/ for the duke had ynough so to do/ for he had conueyed out of Englande good ynough. And also ȳ constable of Fraunce ought hym certayne money for the raunsome of Johan of Bretayne/ the whiche was nat all payed as than. Thus the duke wente whan it pleased hym to se the kynge/ and habde good chere. and at all feastes/ tultes/ and triumphes the duke was alwayes sente for.

¶ howe the Constable of Fraunce wolde nat accorde that the kyng shulde go in to Almayne/ bycause of the tumultes of the realme/ and howe the duke of Bretaygne fournysshed his garysons & made alyaunce with the kyng of Englande and with the kynge of Nauerre/ and of the army made by the englysshemen.

Cap. C.xxv.

We haue herde before howe the erle de Stampes was sent in to Bretayne by the duke of Berry/ thynkynge to haue brought the duke of Bretayne with fayre wordes to his mynde and entencyon/ But he coulde nat brynge it about/ but retourned a gayne without attemptynge any thynge of his purpose. wherof they in Fraunce were greatly abasshed/ and specially suche as were of the kinges counsayle/ for they knewe well the kyng had great desyre to go in to Almayne/ to se the landes of his cosyns the duke of Gulyers/ and to be reuenged of the hygh wordes and cruell defyaunces of the duke of Gueldres. The wyse men of the counsayle of Fraunce sythe as conceyued well the mater imagyned therin great parell to the realme/ for they clerely perceyued howe the duke of Bretayne wolde in no wyse condyscende to reason/ but holde styll his purpose. They thought it was greatly prejudycyall to the honoure of the realme of Fraunce/ for hym to take the constable of Fraunce/ and to sette hym at raunsome at a hundred thousande frankes/ and to kepe three of his castelles and a good towne. And also they sawe howe the duke of Bretayne was makynge of great alyaunces with the kynge of Englande/ and knewe well howe the duke fortifyed greatly his townes and castels in Bretayne/ and were aboute to get hym frendes in dyuers partyes/ in so moche that many of the noble menne of Bretayne wyste nat what to do/ outher to go in to Fraunce or to abyde there styll with the duke and to take his parte agaynst the kynge of the realme of Fraunce/ the whiche they neuer thought to do/ for the moste parte of the knyghtes and Squyers of Bretaygne were alwayes good frenche/ But the counsayle of Fraunce doubted that if the kynge wente out of the realme with his puyssaunce/ the whiche he muste nedes do if he shulde goo in to Almaygne/ that than the duke of Bretayne to bryng in to his countrey the englysshmen/ outher at saynte Malowe/ at saynt Mathewes/ or at Lamballe/ or Camperle/ or Lantriguet at Guerrando/ or Bowne/ or at Wennes/ or on the see coste. For the englysshemen coulde nat haue a better entre in to Fraunce than by Bretayne. So that they knewe nat (the kynges honour saued) howe to breke the duke of Bretayne fro his purpose. Some of the kynges counsayle sayde/ it shall be to the kynges dyshonour if he breke nat the dukes purpose/ for ȳ duke is nat lorde peasably ouer his owne countrey/ for we thynke the lordes/ knyghtes/ and squyers of Bretayne wyll nat be agaynst hs/ to mayntayne the dukes opynion/ therfore in the name of god lette the kynge kepe on his voyage/ and lette the constable and other lordes abyde in their countreys and defende the Realme. This opynyon was well vpholde with many of the kynges counsayle. but than some other sayde naye therto/ and sayde howe the kyng coulde nat well go out of his realme without he had his constable with hym/ for he

is moze wyser and hathe moze experyence in warre than a great nombre of other. Thus they argued. Than some other sayd lette two of the kynges vncles go or one of them at the lest/ and laye it to the duke of Burgoyne that he shulde go with two thousande speares/ and syxe or seuen thousande of other men of warre/ and sayde/ it was moste meete for hym to go/ for that warre touched hym nere/ bycause it moued by reasone of the duchy of Brabante/ and that he shulde haue with him them of Brabante/ of whome he shulde fynde in nombre to the some of seuen hundred speares/ and .xx. or thurty thousande of other comons of the countrey of Brabante. Than a nother sorte sayde. Sires/ your oppynyons be nat good/ for the kyng wyll go/ he nameth hymselfe the chyefe of this warre/ for he is defyed/ wherfore he muste go/ consyderynge the charge is his/ it is good that he go/ for he is ponge/ and the moze he contynueth the warre the better he shall loue it. than some other sayd. Who is he that is so hardy to counsayle the kynge to go in to Almayne/ in to so farre a countrey/ amonge theym that be hyghe and prowde people/ and great payell it is to entre vpon them. And if the kynge were entred/ yet it were great daunger the retour/ynge agayne. for when they shall knowe the kynge and all the nobles of Fraunce to be entred in to their countrey/ they wyll than assemble all togyder/ and kepe suche a countrey as they knowe/ and we nat/ and so they maye do vs great domage/ for they are couetous people aboue all other. And they haue no pytie/ if they haue the vpper hande/ and are harde and cruell handelers of their prisoners/ and putteth them to sondry payues/ to compell theym to make their raunsomes the greater. and if they haue a lorde or a great man to their prisoner/ they make great sporte therof/ and wyll conuey hym in to Bosme/ or in to Iustreche/ or in to Valenne/ and kepe hym in some castell inhabytable. They are people worse than sarazins or paynyms/ for their excessyue couetousnesse quencheth the knowledge of honoure. Lette vs go and put the kynge in daunger amonge these people/ and if any thynge happen to fall amysse/ as the chaunces of fortune are marueylous/ what shall be sayde than/ howe we haue brought the kynge thyder to betray him/ and to the dyscruccyon of the realme/ and nat for the augmentynge therof. God defende the realme fro all domage and parell. If the kynge go he muste haue parte of his noble men with hym. And if mysse fortune fall/ the realme of Fraunce is lost without recouery. Therfore loke wysely if it be good to counsayle the kynge to go that voyage in to Almayne. Than some other/ suche as had wysely conjected all parelles in their imagynacyons sayd. In the name of god lette nother the kynge go/ nor pretende thyder no puyssaunce. For though the duke of Guerles who is but ponge/ and that ponthe of wytte haue made hym to defye the kynge/ which was nat done by no greate wysedome/ nor good counsayle/ but rather done by foli/ by pryde of ponge people/ who wolde fyze or they haue wynges. And sythe he hathe thus defyed the kynge/ lette hym alone and suffre hym to pursewe his defyaunce/ the realme of Fraunce is great/ if he entre in to the realme in any maner of wyse/ the kynge shall sone be enfourmed therof/ and than he shall haue a iuste cause to fyzte by his people/ and to go and fyght agaynste hym/ where so euer he fynde hym/ or els to make hym fyze or yelde hym in the felde/ and therby the kynge shall haue moze honour and lesse charge than to go in to Guerles/ for suche as knowe the countrey saye/ that or we can come to the duke if he lyste/ we muste passe a foure great ryuers/ the lesse of them as great as the ryuer of Loyre at Namurs or Charite. Also they say/ it is a fowle countrey and puell lodgynges.

The noble men and counsaylours of Fraunce were thus in dyuers imagynacyons on this voyage/ that the kynge wolde make in to Almayne/ and surely it had ben a vanned the soner forwarde and they had nat doubted the benym that myght growe by the occasyon of Bretayne/ and of the duke there/ that mater drewe theym a backe. And in dede they had good cause to doute it/ for the duke of Bretayne was well enfourmed of the defyaunce that the duke of Guerles hadde made to the frenche kynge/ and howe that the ponge kinge Charles wolde go in to Almayne. The duke loked for nothyng els/ but that the kynge shulde be ones departed out of his realme of Fraunce/ he hadde ordeyned and concluded bytwene hym and the englysshe men/ to suffre the englysshe army to entre in to his countrey.

And

And alſo he had by ſubtyle meanes drawen to his ayde the moſte parte of the good townes of Bretaygne/and ſpecyally Nauntes/Wennes/Remes/Lentriguier/Guerrãdo/Lambale/ſaynte Malo/and ſaynte Mathewe de tyn poterne/but the noble men he coulde nat gette to his opynyon. Than the duke imagyned if the lordes ſhulde go with the conſtable of Fraunce in to Almayne/thanne his warre and entente ſhulde the ſoner come to paſſe. He cauſed his townes and caſtels to be well prouyded for/with vytayles and artyllary/and he ſhewed well howe he inclyned rather to the warres than to haue peaſe. Alſo he had great alyaunce with Charles the ponge kyng of Nauerre/and the duke promyſed hym/that if he might come to his entent (to haue puyſſaunce of men of armes and archers out of Englãde) he wolde bringe them ſtreight in to Normandy/and recouer fyrſt the good townes and caſtels that kynge Charles of Fraunce vncle to the kynge of Nauerre/had taken fro hym by his men/as the lorde of Coucy and outher. Of this the kynge of Nauer had great truſt/and by reaſon therof he helde in humble loue the duke of Lancaſtre who was at Bayon/for by twene theym was great alyaunces. And of all this I ſawe great appatence/as I ſhall ſhewe after.

IN the yere of our lorde god a thouſande thre hundred fourſcore and eyght/the ſeuenth daye of Apryll/it was concluded by the kynge of Englande and his counſayle/and by his vncles/the duke of yorke/and the duke of Glouceſtre/that the erle Rycharde of Arundell ſhulde be heed and chefe of an army on the ſee/with hym a thouſande men of armes/and thre thouſande archers/and to be at Hamton the fyftene day of May/and there to fynde his nauy redy apparelled. And euery man that was apoynted to go to be there redy at that daye. And the kynge of Englande on ſaynte Georges daye nexte after/helde a great feaſt at his caſtell of Wyndeſore. And there were the cheſe lordes that ſhulde go with therle of Arundell/and there they toke their leaues of the kynge and of the quene/and of all other ladyes/and ſo came to Hampton at their daye apoynted/and entred in to their ſhyppes the twenty day of May/whiche was a fayre clere day. There was the erle of Arundell/the erle of Notyngham/the erle of Deuonſhyre/ſyr Thomas Percy/the lorde Cliffordе/ſir Johñ of Waterwyke/ſir Willyam de la Pole/the lorde Cameur/ſyr Stephyn de Libery/ſyr Willyam Helman/ſyr Thomas Morceaux/ſyr Johan Dambrecicourt/ſyr Roberte Sere/ſir Peter Mountbery/ſir Loys Clombo/ſir Thomas Coq/ſyr Willyam Pulle/and dyuers other. They were of good men of armes a thouſand ſpeares/and aboute a thre thouſande archers. They had with theym no horſes/for they truſted if they might come to their ententes to entre in to Bretayne/and there to refreſſhe them where as they ſhulde fynde horſes nowe at a good price to ſerue them. The daye that they departed fro Hampton was ſo fayre and peaſable that it was metuayle. they drewe to wardes Normãdy nat purpoſyng to lande in any parte/but to paſſe by the frontiers of Normandy and Bretayne/tyll they herde other newes. They had in their nauy certayne veſſels called Ballengers/who ſayled on before to ſe if they myght fynde any aduenture/in lyke maner as knyghtes do by lande go before the batayles to diſcouer the coũtrey and enbuſſhes. Nowe we ſhall leaue a ſeaſon of ſpekynge of this army/and ſpeke ſom what of the buſyneſſe of Guerles & Brabant/and ſhewe howe the ſiege was layde to Graue.

Howe the brabanſoys layde ſiege to the towne of Graue. And howe the conſtable of Fraunce toke ſaynte Malo and ſaynte Mathewes/and ſet there men in garyſon/and howe the duke of Lancaſtre was at Bayon greatly diſcomforted/in that he coulde gette no maner of ayde.

Cap. C. xxvi.

AS it hath been ſhewed here before of the auncyent dukes of Guerles/& howe the eldeſt ſonne of the duke of Guerles (of whome I treat at this preſent tyme) was maryed to the doughter of Berthalte of Malynes/therby to bringe him out of daunger/and to reteyne againe his

herytage / the whiche was in ſore trouble be-
fore. and the duke of Guerles ſonne to the duke
of Julyers to entertayne and to kepe ỳ towne
of Graue agaynſt the brabanſops / as he had
cauſe and ſuſte tytle. Whan he ſawe howe he
coulde nat gette agayne his thre caſtels / Gru-
leth / Buth / and Aulle on the ryuer of Muſe /
pertaynynge to his herytage / and to the coun-
trey of Guerles / thought than to attrybute the
towne of Graue to his herytage for euer. this
duke had a baſtarde doughter / maryed to the
ſonne of the lord Bzuke / who was enherytour
to the towne of Graue. So there was an amy-
able treatye bytwene them / as bytwene the fa-
der and the ſonne. and there the lorde of Bzuke
gaue the towne and ſygnory of Graue to the
duke of Guerles / in preſence of the knyghtes
of Guerles and Julyers. and for that cauſe the
duke of Guerles dyd recompence the lorde of
Bzuke with the landes of Bzelde / on the ry-
uer of Lighen in the duchy of Guerles / mar-
chyng on the countrey of Holande aboue Bza-
baunte. In this towne of Bzelde there was a
fayze caſtell / and the towne great and profyta-
ble / how be it the towne of Graue was better.
This the duke of Guerles dyd to the entent to
haue a ſuſte tytle to kepe the towne of Graue
agaynſt the bzabanſops. The duches of Bza-
bant and the bzabanſops ſaid / howe the lorde
of Bzuke had it but to pledge / and that they
myght quyte it out whan they wolde / but the
duke of Guerles ſayd nay therto. By reaſon
whereof the warre moued. So that in the mo-
neth of May / the bzabanſops came and layde
ſyege to the towne of Graue / with many lor-
des / knyghtes / and ſquyers / and with the py-
ſſaunce of other good townes in Bzabante.
And thyder they bzought engyns / ſpzingals /
and other babylimentes of warre. They were
a. xl. thouſande one and other / there was ſkry-
myſſhynge dayly. The towne of Graue ſtan-
deth on the ryuer of Muſe on the ſyde of Bza-
bante / and there is a bzydge ouer the ryuer to
go in to the countrey of Guerles. In this ſiege
euery thynge was plenty / and as good chepe
of euery thynge / as though they had been be-
fore Bzuſels. Euery day there was ſkrymy-
ſhynge at the barrpers of Graue / of ſuche as
wolde aduenture them ſelfe. Some tyme they
were put a backe / and ſome tyme they dzoue
their enemyes in to their towne / as chaunce
of aduenture fell. The duke of Guerles was
well infourmed of this ſiege. He laye a foure
leages fro Aymarde / and wzote often tymes
in to Englande / where he truſted to haue ſo-
court by reaſon of the englyſſhe army / wherof
the erle of Arundell was capptayne on the ſee /
as ſone as wynde and wether wyll ſerue them
to come to Guerles to reyſe the ſyege before
Graue. The duke of Guerles knewe well that
the towne of Graue was ſtrong and well for-
tyfyed / ſo that he thought it coulde nat be wonne
by none aſſaute / but outher by trayſon or by
treatye. He truſted theym of Graue to be ſure
and faythfull to hym. Thus the ſiege endured
longe before Graue. And the erle of Arundels
army was on the ſee / and tooke no lande / but
ſtyll kepte on the frontiers of Nozmandy / So
that the nozmans fro agaynſt Mounte ſaynte
Wychell / and downe alonge to Depe to ſaynt
Ualery and to Croty / were nat well aſſured
wherto they ſhulde take hede. The pozte and
haurns of Nozmandy were refreſſhed by the
frenche kynge / with good men of armes and
croſe bowes / to reyſte agaynſte all parelles.
And by the marſhall of Blanche wyll was ſette
in the towne of Carentyne / ſtandyge on the ſee
(whiche before of olde tyme pertayned to the
herytage of kynge Charles of Nauerre) the
lorde of Ambze and the lorde Coucy / two gret
lordes of Nozmandy. And the Conſtable of
Fraunce toke the towne of ſaynte Malo and
the towne of ſaynte Mathews / and as ſoone
as they knewe that the englyſſhe men were on
the ſee / they ſette men in to thoſe townes in the
name of the frenche kyng. In this ſeaſon they
thought ſurely to haue open warre with the
duke of Bzetayne / for the knyghtes and ſquy-
ers ſayde / that the armye on the ſee of the en-
glyſſhmen were ſente thyder for none other pur-
poſe / but ſente for by the duke of Bzetayne to
lande in his countrey. They ſayd it was none
other wyſe / for alwayes the ſhyppes kepte on
the coſte of Bzetaygne / without force of we-
ther ſome tyme cauſed them to departe. yet al-
wayes bzeuely they retourned agayne to the
ſame coſte.

Chaue herde here before / howe the
duke of Lancaſtre was departed out
of the realmes of Caſtyle and Poz-
tugale. the imaginacyons that he had turned
hym to great diſpleaſure / for he ſawe well his
buſyneſſe was ſore troubled and darked / as
fortune

foꝛtune often tymes falleth in ſondꝛie plons/ ſometyme good ſometyme yuell/ whan it is leſt thought on. Foꝛ whan the duke of Lancaſtre departed out of the realme of Englande/ acõpanyed with good mẽ of armes and archers he thought than to haue ſped otherwiſe than he dyde. He ſawe and herde/ howe that in xb. dayes he had loſte all Galyce/ whiche was a long ſeaſon oꝛ he had won it/ the ſpace of xvi. weekes. And beſyde that his men deed a ſparcled abꝛode/ ſome here and ſõe there/ and hoped of no confoꝛte out of Englãde/ foꝛ the Engliſſhmen were wery of the warre of Spayne. They thought it ouer long and farre of fro them. So the duke of Lancaſtre thought his buſyneſſe in a harde caſe/ ſeyng no comfoꝛte/ he ſpake lytell but he thought moche moꝛe. In his ymaginacyon he lyconed his iourney to the voiage that the duke of Anion made in to the realme of Naples: Foꝛ whan he departed out of the realme of Fraunce/ he was well furnyſſhed of all maner of thyng/ and wente with great richeſſe/ puiſſaunce/ & a great nombꝛe of noble men of armes knigh tes and ſquiers: & at the ende all were ſlayne and loſt. Thus the duke of Lancaſtre reckoned his voyage to come to nothynge/ by reaſon of ſuche diſconfoꝛte as he had. The erle of Foix/ who was in his countre of Bierne/ and was right ſage and ymaginatyue/ ſayd and accompted the duke of Lacaſters vyage but loſt/ as intrecouerynge of the realme of Caſtyle/ whiche he chalenged. The duke of Lãcaſtre who was a ſage and a wiſe pꝛince/ and valyaunt amonge all his diſconfytures/ yet ſometyme he toke cõfoꝛte to hym ſelfe. I ſhall ſhewe you howe and by what meanes.

He ſawe well he had a fayꝛe doughter by the lady Conſtaunce his wyfe/ doughter to done Peter kyng of Caſtyle/ in whoſe right and clayme he made his warre in Caſtyle. He thought thoughe foꝛtune were agaynſt hym at that tyme/ yet it myght tourne good to his doughter/ who was fayꝛe and ponge/ foꝛ ſhe had ryght to the heritage of Caſtyle/ by reaſon of her mother. and thought ẏ ſome valyaunt man of Fraunce wolde be gladde to couet to haue her in maryage/ as well foꝛ the right that ſhe hadde to the realme of Caſtyle/ as foꝛ her hyghe lynage: Foꝛ it myght well be ſayde/ that her extraction was of the hygheſt lynage of Chꝛiſtendome. Wherfoꝛe the duke of Lãcaſtre wolde gladly haue had ſome treatie of mariage with ſome noble mã of Fraunce. He knewe well the Frẽche kyng had a yong bꝛother called the duke of Towꝛayne/ who he thought ſhulde be able to recouer his doughters ryght in Caſtyle: Foꝛ he knewe well that the puyſſaunce of Fraunce helpe in his aduerſaries/ in the heritage of Caſtile. wherfoꝛe he thought ẏ if they wolde take his parte/ they myght lightly putte his doughter in poſſeſſyon of the realme of Caſtyle/ if he myght marry her to the Frenche kynges bꝛother.

Howe the duke of Berrey ſent letters to the duke of Lancaſtre to Bayon: and howe the duke ſent the copye of the ſame letters in to Foix & in to Nauer/ to thentent to haue them publyſſhed in Spayne: And howe the duke of Bꝛetayn demaũded coũſayle of his men in all his buſyneſſe.

Cap. C. xxvii.

In this ymaginacyon reſted the duke of Lancaſtre/ nat all onely on the duke of Towꝛayne/ but alſo on the duke of Berrey/ Foꝛ (as ye haue herde here befoꝛe) ẏ duke of Berrey and his ſonne were wodoweꝛs bothe their wyues deed. This mater I the auctour of this boke knewe of ſurette/ foꝛ the ſame tyme I was on the fronters of Berrey & Poitou/ in the countie of Bloys/ with the right honoꝛable loꝛde Guy erle of Bloys by whom and at his deſyꝛe/ I folowed the cõtynuaũce of this hiſtoꝛie. The duke of Berrey ſet all his entencion and pleaſure to be agayne maryed: And ofte tymes he wolde ſay among his men/ howe that a loꝛde was lytell woꝛthe without a lady/ noꝛ another mã without a wyfe. Than ſome of his coũſayle ſayd to hym. Sir marry agayne your ſon/ therby your houſe ſhalbe the moꝛe ioyfull. Alas qꝑ the duke my ſonne is yong. Why ſir qꝑ they/ haue ye nat ſene howe the Erle of Bloyes hath maryed his ſonne/ whoſe as ponge as he to your doughter? That is trouthe quod the duke/ let ſe name a wyfe foꝛ him. Sir quod they/ we

they/ we ſhall name the duke of Lancaſters doughter. With that worde the duke ſtudyed a ſeaſon and gaue none answere/ and ymagined ſore: and than to ſuche as were of his ſecrete counſayle/ he ſayd. ye ſpeke to mary Iohan my ſonne to my coſyn the duke of Lancaſters doughter: by ſaynt Denyce ye haue well deuyſed/ but ſhe ſhulde be a good wyfe for our ſelfe/ and ſhortely I ſhall write to our coſyn the duke of Lancaſtre: He is at Bayone as I am enformed/ I wolde ſende hym worde howe I ſhall ſende ſhortely to hym ſome of my counſayle to treate of this maryage: But I ſaye nat for my ſonne/ I ſhall marry hym in ſome other place. Whan his counſayle herde hym ſaye ſo they ſmyled/ Than ꝑ duke demaunded wherat they lmiled. Sir ꝙ they we laught/ at that ye had rather haue a good tourne your ſelfe than your ſonne ſhulde. by my fayth ꝙ the duke and good reaſon why: For my fayre coſyn of Lancaſtre wyll nat ſo ſoone agre to my ſonne as to my ſelfe. Than incontynent letters were written in to highe Gaſcoyne to Bayon to the duke of Lancaſtre/ and ſente by honourable meſſangers. Whan they came to ꝑ duke they delyuered their letters. The duke toke and reed the/ and whan he had well parceyued the effecte of the mater/ he was right ioyfull and made good chere to the meſſagers/ and ſhewed that he was well content therwith/ and wrote agayne by them other letters ryght amiably. Certifyeng the duke of Berrey howe he was right ioyfull of his letters. Theſe meſſangers returned and fonde their lorde in Poitou/ preparyng hym ſelfe to go in to Fraunce: for the Frēche kyng and the duke of Burgoyne had ſent for hym/ for to cōmune of the ſtate of Bretayne. Than he opyned the letters that his coſyn the duke of Lancaſtre had ſente hym/ and had ioye of the anſwere/ & thought ſurely to purſue the matter to effecte/ but he myght nat leaue his voyage in to Fraunce/ and ſo went thyder as ſhortely as he coulde. Thanne he wrote to a knyght of his called ſir Helyon of Liguacke who as than was ſeneſchall of Rochell/ and of the countre of Rochtloys. Cōmaundyng hym that incontynent on the ſight of his letters/ he ſette all thyng there in good order and than to come to hym to Parys withoute fayle. Whan ſir Helyon of Lignac who was at Rochell vnderſtode thoſe tidynges/ & perceyued by the duke of Berreys letters/ howe he was ſent for in all haſt/ he made hym redy/ and in his abſence he made two capitayns at Rochell/ two valyaunt men to be gouernors of all Rochelays. They were of the countre of Beauſe/ the one called ſir Peter of yon/ & the other ſir Peter of Tayllepy. This done ſir Helyon tooke his waye in to Fraunce the ſhorteſt way he coude/ for he knewe nat what the duke wolde do with hym/ that he ſente for hym ſo haſtely.

NOwe let vs ſōwhat ſpeke of the duke of Lancaſtre who was at Bayon/ and had great ymaginacions of ꝑ buſynelle that his coſyn the duke of Berrey had written to hym of. Firſt he wolde nat that it ſhulde be hydden but rather publyſſhed abrode/ to the entent that his enmyes ſhulde knowe it/ & ſpecially in the houſe of kynge Iohan of Caſtyle. And ſo the duke of Lancaſtre wrote to dyuers/ and ſent them the coppe of the duke of Berreys letters: ſhewynge by his writyng/ that he had great affectyon to treate of the maryage/ betwene his doughter and the duke of Berry. Firſt he ſent his letters to the erle of Foix/ becauſe he knewe well ꝑ to the erles houſe prepared all maner of gentylmen knightes and ſquyers/ as well comyng & goynge to the kyng of Spayne/ as on pylgrimage to ſaynt Iames. Alſo he wrote to the kyng of Nauer/ who had to his wyfe ꝑ kyng of Caſtels ſuſter/ and had by her many chyldren: to thentent that the bruite therof ſhulde the better be certifyed in the kyng of Caſtels court/ rather than by flyeng wordes. alſo the duke wrote of this mater to the kyng of Portugale/ but he wrote no worde therof i to England to the kyng nor to his bretherne/ for he knewe well he ſhulde haue no thanke for his enterprice/ as they were nat content in dede/ (as ye ſhall here after) whan ꝑ mater requyreth it. In the meane ſeaſon we ſhall ſpeke of other maters/ as of the duke of Bretayne/ the mater ſpeth there after.

WHan the duke of Berrey was come into Fraunce to the kyng and to the duke of Burgoyne his brother/ and to other of his counſayle: As the byſſhoppe of Langers/ the byſſhoppe of Laon/ ꝑ lorde of Coucy/ and other barons of Fraūce/ than beyng

beyng there of the kynges secrete counsayle. They had many metynges to cõmune togyder/ as well of the state of Guerles (whyder the kyng had great affection to go) as of the duke of Bretaygne/ whom they coude bring to no reason/ nor wolde nat obey/ nor wyste nat whom to sende to hym that he wolde beleue/ for there hadde ben many valyant men and sage with hym/ but all that auayled nothyng/ for they coude bring nothyng to passe as they desyred/ wherof the kyng & his counsaile was sore troubled. For they vnderstode well that the duke of Bretaygne had all that wynter prouyded and fortified his townes and castelles/ and shewed howe by lyklehode he hadde rather haue warre than peace: and the wyselt of the counsayle sayd. We spake of goynge in to Almayne/ but we ought rather to speke of goynge in to Bretaygne/ and to putte downe the duke there/ who is so highe mynded that he wyll here no reasone/ and is alwayes agaynst the crowne of Fraũce/ and disdayneth to be obedyent therunto/ we shal haue no reason of hym without we force hym therto: For and if he be suffred he wyll be to presumptuous he feareth no man/ nor he loueth nor prayseth no man but hym selfe/ this is a clere case. If the kynge go in to Almaygne and leaue his realme bare of men/ as he muste do if he go thyder/ The duke of Bretaigne than wyll suffre the Englysh men to come in to his countrey/ & so entre in to Fraũce. The appataunce herof is great/ for there is all redy a great army of archers on the see and they kepe styll on the coste of Bretaygne for if wynde and wether putte them of/ yet euer they drawe thyder agayne/ & lyeth there at ancre/ besemyng tarying tyll the warre be oppn/ Wherfore we thynke it were good yet to sende agayne to the duke/ the bysshoppe of Langers and the erle of Saynt Ponle/ for the duke and the erle haue maryed two susters. Maye sers nat to yo maister pues/ who was a very Breton. If ye wyll sende to the duke agayne/ ye can nat sende one more agreable to hym than the lorde of Coucy/ for in lyke wyse they haue maryed two susters/ & haue loued marueylously togyder/ and haue euer written eche to other. Fayre brother/ & with the lorde of Coucy sende whom ye wyll. well quod the duke of Burgoyne: Maister pues/ sythe ye haue begon name you therest. Sir/ with right a good wyll sithe it pleaseth you/ With the lorde of Coucy sende sir Johan of Vyen and the lorde de la Ryuer. These be the three lordes as I shall bring hym to reason/ if he wyll euer come to any. Thus let it be q̃ the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne/ than they were apoynted and charged what they shulde saye/ & wherupon they shulde grounde their matter/ and to handell hym by fayre wordes. Thus they tarryed a certayne space or they departed fro Parys. The duke of Bretayne knewe well of their comyng or they departed fro Parys/ but he coude nat tell whan. And he sawe well the mater touched highlye in that the lorde of Coucy came. The duke had many ymaguiacons on that mater/ and discouered his mynde to certayne of his cõsayle: as the lorde of Mountbouchier/ & demaunded counsayle of hym and of other/ and sayd. Sers/ I here as the brute rõneth/ that the duke of Lancastre shulde mary his doughter in to Fraunce to the duke of Berrey: and the mater is so forwarde/ that sir Helyon of Lignacke is goyng to the duke to Bayon/ & the duke greatly enclyneth to this mariage/ wherof I haue great marueyle/ for my fayre brother of Lancastre hath nat written to me therof/ so that I knowe nothyng of the mater but by herynge saye: He was nat accustomed so to do/ for in all his maters touchyng Fraũce/ he was wont to write to me. than his cõsayle answered and said. Sir/ if it be thus/ it must behoue you to chaũge your purpose/ or els it shalbe greatly to your losse and daunger/ and bring your coũtre in to warre/ whiche were good to eschewe: For ye nede nat to make warre sythe ye maye be in peace/ yea/ and desyred therto. Also my lady your wyfe is great with chylde/ the whiche ye ought to regarde. The kynge of Nauer can but tytell ayde you/ for he hath enoughe to do for hym selfe. Also the duke of Lancastre who is a sage and a valyant prince (as it is sayd) shall mary his doughter to the duke of Berrey. This shalbe a gret begynnyng to entre in to a treatie of peace betwene Englande and Fraũce/ or elles a long truse: And by reason therof ye shall se at the ende the kyng of Castell putte out of his realme/ as they haue kepte hym in and the rather if the duke of Lancastre and the Englysh men be agreed with hym: and also it is of trouthe/ that the lorde Coucy

admyrall of Fraunce and the lorde de la Ryuer/ are cõmyng hyder. ye maye well knowe that is for some great cause touchynge the kyng/ who busyeth hym selfe for his coñstable and for his Realme. And by lykelyhode the kynge and his vncles wyll knowe prestisely what ye wyll do/ and whether ye wyll kepe styll your opynyon or nat. And if ye kepe styll your purpose/ it is to be ymagined/ that the great armye that is prepared for to go in to Guerles shall tourne agaynst you. Nowe remembre well what comforte ye are likely to haue yf ye haue warre with Fraunce/ whiche ye are moost lykely to haue/ if the duke of Lancaster marry his doughter into Fraūce/ as he semyng he wyll/ for he can nat bestowe her better to recouer her herytage. Also ye knowe well that the moost parte of the prelates/ barons/ knyghtes and squyers/ and cyties and good townes/ are in maner agaynst you. Therfore sir/ sithe ye demaunde counsayle of vs/ We saye that ye had neuer so moche cause to adayle you (as ye haue nowe). Therfore putte to your hande to kepe well your herytage/ whiche hath cost the shedyng of so moche blode/ sweate/ and trauayle: and refrayne somwhat your yre and hatred. We knowe well ye beare great displeasure to sir Olyuer Clysson. he hath done you many displeasures/ and ye hym/ a paraduenture may do/ though he be nat lyke vnto you. the frēche kynge and his vncles wyll mayntayne hym agaynst you/ for he shall be Constable. And if kynge Charles that laste dyed (who loued hym so well) hadde lyued/ and ye done as ye haue done: We knowe well it shulde rather haue cost the kynge halfe his realme/ thanne he wolde haue suffred it. But kynge Charles his sonne is yonge/ he taketh nat so good hede to all maters nowe/ as he wolde do tenne yeres here after. He cometh on and ye shall go. If ye entre in to a newe warre agaynst the Frenche men (beside all that we haue shewed you) ye shall do it without our counsayle/ and without the counsayle of any man that loueth you. It behoueth you to dissymule what soeuer ye purpose to do here after. What nede you to kepe the thre castelles pertaynyng to sir Olyuer of Clysons herytage/ after the maner ye take them? Whether it be so ye haue peace or warre/ they shall coste you more the keppinge of theym in thre yeres/ than they shall profyte you in twelue yeres. Sir delyuer them agayne out of your handes without any delyre/ and whan the renome therof spredeth abrode (as there is nothynge done but it wyll be knowen) that without constreynt ye haue delyuered them of your owne mynde/ ye shall therby attemper and mollifye euery mannes displeasure/ and it shall greatlye please the duke of Burgoyne/ who ye knowe well hath nat done so moche agaynst you as he myght/ in all your busynesse. And that is by the meanes of the good lady his wyfe your cosyn/ She hath many fayre children who are nerre of blode to you. therfore sir/ consyder fro whens ye came and are issued/ departe nat fayre of fro thens that ye ought to approche nere it were folye/ in Englande ye hadde neuer thyng to do. Also the Englysh men haue prouyghe to do amonge themselfe. They shewe you fayre semblaunt of loue/ and prompte to do for you all that they maye/ but they do it for their owne aduauntage and for nothynge elles. ye haue proued them or this/ ye were norisshed amonge the in your youthe.

How we the duke of Bretayne delyuered vp the thre castelles of sir Olyuer Clissons: and how he receyued louously the lorde of Coucy and his company ambassadours fro the frēche kyng: And how the duke of Lācastre made grete chere to sir Helyon of Lignacke seneschall of Xaynton/ ambassadoure fro the duke of Berrey. Cap. C.xxviii.

When the duke of Bretayne had herde his counsayle spoke/ and cast so many reasonable doubtes/ he was abasshed/ and stoode styll a season without spekynge of any worde/ leanynge in a wyndowe lokyng downe in to the courte/ his counsayle beyng aboute hym/ he stode in a great study: at last he tourned and sayde.

said. Sirs/ I se well that ye haue highly coũ sayled me/ and I se well I haue nede of no thyng so moche as of good counsayle: But howe may any loue be nourished/ where is no thyng but hate? Howe mape I loue Oliuer of Clysson/ that hath done me so many displeasures/ Wherfore of all the thynges that euer I dyde in this worlde/ I mooste repente me of that I dyd nat put hym to dethe whan I had hym in my castell of Ermyne. In the name of god sir quod they of his counsayle/ (if he had ben slayne) but ye ought nat to haue raunsomed hym/ nor taken his heritage. For Johan of Bretayne and the Vycount of Roberts sonne be his heyres/ and heritours to all his landes: for his doughters are their wyues. Wherfore they wolde haue entred into the heritage as their owne/ for their recort is in to the Parlyament chambre at Parys. For ye haue receyued all redy great blame in Fraunce for that ye haue done/ and kepynge of the thre castelles. The constable hath entred his quarell and plee agaynst you in the parlyament house of Parys/ and there sentence wyll be gyuen agaynst you/ for there is none to answere for you agaynst any article that the Constable hath layde agaynst you. Than sir Oliuer of Clysson and his heyres shall haue iuste cause and quarell to make warre agaynst you in his owne tytell. And if the kynge with other of your owne countrey of Bretayne wyll make you warre and ayde your ennemyes/ ye haue nede thasie to haue more puyssaunce to defende you/ thasie we can se that ye are lyke to haue. Wherfore sir/ while the plee hangeth/ ye were best to delyuer agayne the thre castelles and haue thãke/ than to abyde the sentence to be gyuen agaynst you. Sir agre/ for suche dommages as ye haue done as well as ye canne/ therby shall you wade out of all sclaundre/ the whiche a prince ought to dout for his dishonour And sir/ cõforme you to peace/ and contynue in loue with them that ye ought to do/ that is the Frenche kynge your soueraygne and naturall lorde/ and my lorde the duke of Burgoyne and your cosyns his chyldren. ye may take ensample by that ye haue sene in youre dayes: your cosyn germayne therle of Flaũders/ who was a myghtye prince and a sage/ yet by mysdẽtes in thende of his dayes there fell to hym suche marueylous aduentures/ þ without he had humyled hym selfe to the frenche kynge/ to his vncles/ and to the nobles of the realme he had loste his heritage/ and by their ayde and helpe he recouered it. Well sirs quod the duke/ sithe I haue demaunded counsayle it behoueth me to take it/ and I accepte your wordes that ye haue spoken.

¶ This mater wente so forwarde that the duke of Bretayne/ who was in possessyon of the thre castelles of the constables (as ye haue herde here before) he sent for his men that was in them/ and rydde his handes clene of them: and there were stablyshed men in them for the constable: But this restytuicion was nat sufficyent in the opynion of the frenche kynges counsayle/ wõout the duke restored agayne the money that he hadde taken of the Constable: and beside that the duke to come personally to the kyng to Parys to make his excuse before all the peres of the realme/ and to abyde on the mendes makynge/ suche as the kyng and his counsayle shulde iudge by good deliberacion. And whan the knowledge of the restytucion of these castels was come to the lorde of Coucy/ and to the other lordes that were apoynted to go in to Bretayne to the duke. Than the lorde of Coucy sayde to his company. Sirs/ we haue the lesse to do/ I beleue the duke wyll gyue credence to vs whan he heareth vs speke. I was enformed that before these thre barons departed fro Parys/ the dukes of Berrey and of Bourgoyne had them in counsayle and sayde. Sirs/ ye muste entreate the duke of Bretaygne with fayre and swete wordes/ & nat rigorously. And shewe hym howe þ duke of Bourgoyne wolde that he shulde come to Parys to the kyng: but at leest shewe hym howe he muste come to the halfe way to the towne of Blayes/ and there we shall mete with hym and speke togyders /These thre lordes said they wolde do as they were cõmaũded. They rode forthe & came to the cytie of Rennes in Bretayne/ & there demaũded tidynges of the duke/ and it was shewed them howe he was at Vannes and than they rode thyder. Their cõmynge was anon knowen in the dukes court/ for they had sent before their herbygers to take vp their lodgynges. The duke had about hym his counsayle and

admyrall of Fraunce and the lorde de la Ryuer/ are cõmyng hyder. ye maye well knowe that is for some great cause touchynge the kyng/ who bulyeth hym selfe for his cõstable and for his Realme. And by lykelyhode the kynge and his vncles wyll knowe pryuelyp what ye wyll do/ and whether ye wyll kepe styll your opynyon or nat. And if ye kepe styll your purpose/ it is to be ymagined/ that the great armye that is prepared for to go in to Gueries shall tourne agaynst you. Nowe remembre well what contrete ye are likely to haue yf ye haue warre with Fraunce/ whyche ye are moost lykely to haue/ if the duke of Lancaster marry his doughter into Fraũce/ as he lemyng he wyll/ for he can nat bestowe her better to recouer her herytage. Also ye knowe well that the moost parte of the prelates/ barons/ knyghtes and squyers/ and cyties and good townes/ are in maner agaynst you. Therfore sir/ sithe ye demaunde counsayle of vs/ We saye that ye had neuer so moche cause to adurle you (as ye haue nowe). Therfore putte to your hande to kepe well your herytage/ whyche hath cost the shedyng of so moche blode/ sweate/ and trauayle: and refrayne somwhat your yre and hatered. We knowe well ye beare great displeasure to sir Olyuer Clysson. he hath done you many displeasures/ and ye hym/ & paraduenture may do/ though he be nat lyke vnto you. the Frenche kynge and his vncles wyll mayntayne hym agaynst you/ for he shall be Constable. And if kynge Charles that laste dyed (who loued hym so well) hadde lyued/ and ye done as ye haue done: We knowe well it shulde rather haue cost the kynge halfe his realme/ thanne he wolde haue suffred it. But kynge Charles his sonne is ponge/ he taketh nat so good hede to all maters nowe/ as he wolde do tenne yeres here after. He cometh on and ye shall go. If ye entre in to a newe warre & gaynst the Frenche men (beside all that we haue shewed you) ye shall do it without our counsayle/ and without the counsayle of any man that loueth you. It behoueth you to dissymule what locuer ye purpose to do here after. What nede you to kepe the thre castelles pertaynyng to sir Olyuer of Clysons herytage/ after the maner ye take them? Whether it be so ye haue peace or warre/ they shall coste you more the kepynge of them in thre yeres/ than they shall profyte you in twelue yeres. Sir delyuer them agayne out of your handes without any delyre/ and whan the name therof shredeth abrode (as there is nat thynge bone but it wyll be knowen) that without cõstreynt ye haue delyuered them of your owne mynde/ ye shall therby attrempet and molifye euery mannes displeasure/ & it shall greatlye please the duke of Burgoyne/ who ye knowe well hath nat done so moche agaynst you as he myght/ in all your busynesse. And that is by the meanes of the good lady his wyfe your cosyn/ She hath many fayre chyldren who are nerre of blode to you. therfore sir/ consyder fro whens ye came and are issued/ departe nat farre fro thens that ye ought to approche nere it were folye/ in Englande ye hadde neuer thyng to do. Also the Englysshmen haue ynoughe to do amonge them selfe. They shewe you fayre semblaunt of loue/ and prompte to do for you all they maye/ but they do it for their owne aduauntage and for nothynge elles. ye haue proued them or this/ ye were norisshed amonge them in your youthe.

Howe the duke of Bretayne delyuered vp the thre castelles of sir Olyuer Clissons: and howe he receyued tyously the lorde of Coucy and his company ambassadours fro the frẽche kyng: And howe the duke of Lãcastre made grete chere to sir Heiyon of Lignacke seneschall of Xayntonge/ ambassadoure fro the duke of Berrey. Cap. C.xxviii.

When the duke of Bretayne had herde his counsayle spoke/ and cast so many reasonable doubtes/ he was abasshed/ and stoode styll a season without spekynge of any worde/ leanyng in a wyndowe lokyng downe in to the courte/ his counsayle beyng aboute hym/ he stode in a grete study: at last he tourned and sayde.

saide. Sires/ I se well that ye haue highly counsayled me/ and I se well I haue nede of nothynge so moche as of good counsayle: But howe may any loue be norysshed/ where is nothyng but hate? Howe maye I loue Olyuer of Clysson/ that hath done me so many displeasures/ Wherfore of all the thynges that euer I dyde in this worlde/ I mooste repente me of that I dyd nat put hym to dethe whan I had hym in my castell of Ermyne. In the name of god sir quod they of hes counsayle/ (if he had ben slayne) but ye ought nat to haue raunsomed hym/ nor taken his heritage. For Johan of Bretayne and the Vycount of Rohers sonne be his heyres/ and heritours to all his landes: for his doughters are theire wyues. Wherfore they wolde haue entred into the heritage as theire owne/ for theire resort is in to the Parlyament chambre at Parys. For ye haue receyued all redy great blame in Fraunce for that ye haue done/ and keppynge of the thre castelles. The constable hath entred his quarell and plee agaynst you in the parlyament house of Parys/ and there sentence wyll be gyuen agaynst you/ for there is none to answere for you agaynst any artycle that the Constable hath layde agaynst you. Than sir Olyuer of Clysson and his heyres shall haue iuste cause and quarell to make warre agaynst you in his owne tytell. And if the kynge with other of your owne countrey of Bretayne wyll make you warre and ayde your ennemyes/ ye haue nede thafie to haue more puyssaunce to defende you/ thafie we can se that ye are lyke to haue. Wherfore sir/ while the plee hangeth/ ye were best to delyuer agayne the thre castelles and haue thake/ than to abyde the sentence to be gyuen agaynst you. Sir agre/ for suche dommages as ye haue done as well as ye canne/ therby shall you wade out of all sclaundre/ the whiche a prince ought to dout for his dishonour And sir/ conforme you to peace/ and contynue in loue with them that ye ought to do/ that is the Frenche kynge your soueraygne and naturall lorde/ and my lorde the duke of Burgoyne and your cosyns his chyldren. ye may take ensample by that ye haue sene in youre dayes: your cosyn germayne therle of Flaunders/ who was a myghtye prince and a sage/ yet by vnlydētes in thende of his dayes there fell to hym suche marueylous aduentures/ þ without he had humbled hym selfe to the frenche kynge/ to his vncles/ and to the nobles of the realme he had loste his heritage/ and by their ayde and helpe he recouered it. Well sirs quod the duke/ sithe I haue demaunded counsayle it behoueth me to take it/ and I accepte your wordes that ye haue spoken.

¶ This mater wente so forwarde that the duke of Bretaygne/ who was in possessyon of the thre castelles of the constables (as ye haue herde here before) he sente for his men that was in them/ and ryode his handes clene of them: and there were stablysshed men in them for the constable: But this restytucion was nat sufficyent in the opynion of the Frenche kynges counsayle/ without the duke restored agayne the money that he hadde taken of the Constable: and beyde that the duke to come personally to the kyng to Parys to make his excuse before all the peres of the realme/ and to abyde on the mendes makynge/ suche as the kyng and his counsayle shulde iudge by good deliberacion. And whan the knowledge of the restytucion of these castels was come to the lorde of Coucy/ and to the other lordes that were apoynted to go in to Bretaygne to the duke. Than the lorde of Coucy sayde to his company. Sirs/ we haue the lesse to do/ I beleue the duke wyll gyue credence to vs whan he heareth vs speke. I was enformed that before these thre barons departed fro Parys/ the dukes of Berrey and of Bourgoyne had them in counsayle and sayde. Sirs/ ye muste entreate the duke of Bretaygne with fayre and swete wordes/ & nat rigorously. And shewe hym howe þ duke of Bourgoyne wolde that he shulde come to Parys to the kyng: but at leest shewe hym howe he muste come to the halfe way to the towne of Blopes/ and there we shall mete with hym and speke to gyders These thre lordes sayd they welde do as they were cōmaūded. They rode forthe & came to the cytie of Rennes in Bretayne/ & there demaūded tidynges of the duke/ and it was shewed them howe he was at Wannes and than they rode thyder. Their cōmynge was anon knowen in the dukes court/ for they had sent before their herbygers to take vp their lodgynges. The duke had about hym his counsayle and

saple & great lordes/ suche as he trusted most the more honourably to receyue these lordes. Whan they entred in to the towne of Wānes they had good chere/ and lordes and knyghtes of the dukes mette them/ and specially the lorde de la wall. there they alyghted at their lodgynges & refresshed them selfe/ and after mounted on their horses and rode to the dukes castell called la Mote/ where they foūde the duke who came agaynst them/ and receyued the right ioyously and sayd: howe they were all right hertely welcome/ and toke the lorde of Coucy by the hande/ and made hym good chere & sayde. Fayre brother ye be welcome/ I am glad to se you in Bretayne. I shall shewe you sporte of huntyng at hartes and flyeng with haukes or we depte a fewe. Sir quod the lorde of Coucy I thanke you/ I and my company shall be glad to se it. There was shewed betwene them great lyklyhode of loue: and the duke brought hym to his chambre/ sportyng and talkyng of many ydell matters/ as lordes do often tymes whan they mete/ and haue nat sene togyder longe before/ they wyll fynde many sondrie pastymes. and specially I knewe four lordes the best entertayners of all other that euer I knewe/ That was the duke of Brabant/ the erle of Foix/ the erle of Sauoy/ and in especiall the lorde of Coucy: For accordynge to myne aduyse/ in all goodly pastymes he was a souerayne maister/ whiche bruite he bare amonge all lordes and ladyes/ in Fraunce/ in Englande/ in Almaygne in Lombardy/ and in all places where as he had ben conuersant And in his tyme he had ben sore traueyled & sene moche in the worlde: and also he was naturally enclyned to be gentyll. & thus whyle these lordes were merry talkynge togyder/ there was brought spyces and wyne and so they dranke/ and than toke their leaues and retourned to their lodgynges. Thus the mater went forthe ye fyrst day/ without makyng of any mencyon of any thyng that they were come for.

NOwe let vs somwhat speke of sir Helyon of Lygnacke/ whom the duke of Berrey hadde sent to the duke of Lancaster. The knyght came to Bayon and alyghted at his lodgynge/ and apparelled hym selfe to go and speke with the duke of Lācaster/ who knewe well of his comyng/ and sent right honourably two of his knyghtes to mete with hym/ and they brought hym to the duke. And whan sir Helyon was in the dukes presence he kneled downe/ and saluted hym as it apertayned. The duke receyued hym right honorably and tooke hym by in his armes/ & toke hym by ye hande and ledde hym in to his chābre/ for he mette hym in the hall. Thanne the knyght delyuered his letters fro the duke of Berrey. The duke reed them and thanne he drewe to sir Helyon/ and the knight declared to him the cause of his comyng. Than the duke answered right courtesly and sayd. Sir/ ye be right welcome/ and sayd howe the mater was weyghte that he was cōe for/ wherfore it requyred counsaile and delyberacion. Thus sir Helyon tarved at Bayon with the duke of Lancastre more than a moneth/ and alwayes he was serued with fayre wordes: And the duke alwayes fedd hym forthe and made semblant that he had great affection to treate for this mariage with the duke of Berrey/ Howe be it the trouthe was contrary/ for all that he shewed was but dissymulacion. and the cause that he was holde there so long with hym/ was for none other thyng/ but that the bruite therof myght come abrode/ and specially in to ye realme of Castyle/ for there lay all his affection: The duke sayde to sir Helyon. Sir/ if I treat with the duke of Berrey to haue my doughter in mariage/ thafie he must ioyne with me with all his puyssaūce to encounter myne aduersaries of Spayne/ If he wyll recouer the heritage of my doughter/ whom he shulde haue to wyfe: Than sir Helyon sayd. Sir/ I haue no charge to conclude any thyng: so forwarde. But sir/ if it please you or I depte/ ye maye write all your pleasure by me/ and I shall returne & shewe my lorde the duke of Berrey all your entent: And I am sure (he hath suche affection to the mater) he wyll agree to euery thynge that he may do by reason. I beseche no more quod the duke of Lancastre. Thus sir Helyon of Lygnacke tarved a season at Bayon/ and had good chere made hym by the dukes cōmaundement.

Howe the kynge of Castyle sente his ambassadours to the duke of Lancastre to treate for a maryage / to be had bytwene his sonne and the dukes doughter / and howe at the requeste of the duke of Berrey a truse was made by the duke of Lancastre in the countreys of Tholousyn and Rouergne. Cap. C.xxix.

TIdinge came in to the realme of Castyle in to dyuerse places / and specyally to kyng Johan of Castyle / and it was sayde to hym. Sire / ye knowe nothyng of the treatye that is bytwene the duke of Berrey and the duke of Lancastre The duke of Berrey wolde haue in maryage the lady Katheryne / doughter to the duke of Lancastre and to the lady Custance his wyfe. And if this maryage take effecte (as it is lyke to do) it shalbe a great alyaunce: For the duke of Berrey is nowe / as one of the chefe rulers in the realme of Fraunce / and is vncle to the kyng. He shalbe beleued what soeuer he saye or purpose to do (as it is reason) whether it be by meanes of peace or longe truse / On the other parte / the duke of Lancastre is eldest of all his brethetne / that be vnties to the kyng. He shall also be beleued / for he is sage and pupssaut: and by that it semeth the Englysshmen are wery of the warre. This maryage bytwene the Duke of Lancasters doughter and the duke of Berrey / is lykely to be a great meane to make a good peace bytwene Fraūce and Englande / and than shal we here stiche styll in the warre / for the duke of Lācastre wyll folowe and pursue his chalenge of the realme of Castyle / and the right ỳ he hath by his wyfe he shall gyue it to his doughter / and so than shall we haue warre bothe with Fraunce and Englande. These doutes were sayde to the kynge of Castyle. And at that tyme all the Frenchmen that had serued long in the realme of Castyle were retourned in to Fraunce: and the chefe of the kynge of Castyls counsayle sayd to hym. Sir take hede to ye neuer had so great ayde of good counsayle / as ye haue at this present tyme. For sir / a perylous myst is lyke to be engendred bytwene you and the duke of Lācastre / and that shall come by the meanes of Fraūce. Howe so quod the kyng / howe may that be? In the name of god sir quod they / the bruite and renome spredeth throughe all this countrey / and els where / howe the duke of Berrey shall mary the duke of Lācasters doughter. And sir / ye maye be sure that shall nat be / but by the meanes of a great alyaunce: so that therby here after / ye maye be as farre cast behynde by them / as ye haue ben auaunced. Whan the kyng of Castyle knewe thois tidynges he was right pensyue / & sawe well howe his counsayle shewed hym the trouthe Than he demaunded counsayle of them that he trusted best / howe he shulde perteuer and deale in all his busynesse / and they counsayled hym well and truely / as the mater requyred: as I shall shewe you.

I knowe well (as ye haue herde be fore in this hystorie) Howe kynge Henry of Spaygne made a peace / with Peter kynge of Arragone / on the full poynctment that the kyng of Arragon shulde gyue his doughter in maryage to the kynge of Castyle. This was Johan who is nowe kyng: and by this conjunction of maryage / they were I peace and their realmes. Of this Johan sonne to Henry / and of the doughter of Arragon there came a sonne. Than dyed the lady: and after the dethe of kynge Henry of Castyle / this kyng Johan by the counsaile of his men maried agayne the lady Beatrice doughter to Fernando kynge of Portugale / and they hadde a sonne called Henry / he was but ponge. Than the counsayle of Castyle sayd to the kyng. Sir / we se in all these doutes but one remedy. What is that quod kyng Johan? Sir we shall shewe you quod they / your yong sonne Henry may well breke this maryage / bytwene the duke of Berrey and the duke of Lancasters doughter / for it is to be beleued / that the duke of Lācastre and the duches his wyfe / had rather marchant with you and with your sonne than with the duke of Berrey. In the name of god ỳ the kynge pe laye well / I shall herken to this mater. I thynke our people wyll lightly enclyne thereunto: by that mariage we shulde haue peace

with Englande / bothe by lande and by water. Therfore sirs / chose out them that were mete to go in our name / to treate on this matter with the duke of Lancastre. Sir q they / it is requisyte that they be discrete persones / and that the matter be wisely handeled / and in the secretest maner that maye be: to the entente that ye tonne nat in the indignacyon of the frenche kynge. For nowe a dayes envy raynneth greatly / and sooner reporte is made of yuell than of good / and the yuell sooner reysed by than the good. For if they of Fraūce knowe that ye treate with the duke of Lācastre / the frenche kynge and his counsayle wyll demaūde wherupon ye treate with the duke / by reasone of the great alyaunce made in tyme past / bytwene pour father & Fraūce. And also the frenche men haue alwayes sustayned pour warre. Wherfore sir / pour treaties must be done secretely / and sende to the duke sage men and secrete / and well enstructed of pour busynesse: And sende nat forthe with boost and pryde / tyll euery thynge be in a sure case. It is true quod the kynge / name them that be mete to go on that voyage. Sir quod they sende pour confessour frere Fernādo of Farre and the byll hoppe of Seghene / who was somtyme confessour to the kynge pour father / and Peter Gardelopes / who is well languaged. I am content q the kynge / lette them be sente for / and well enfourmed what they shall say / they wolde or this tyme haue treated for a peace but we wolde natte here them. For the duke of Lancastre wolde none other wyse / but that I shulde haue forsaken the Crowne of Castyle / the whiche I wyll neuer do. Than these thre were sent for to Burgus in Spayne where the kyng was Than it was sayd to them by the kynge and his priuye counsayle. Sirs / ye muste go to Bayon to the duke of Lancastre / and shewe them all their instructions. They sayde they were redy to accomplysshe the the kynges commaūdement: And so sette forthe on their iourney / nat in no great estate but symply / for they wolde nat be knowen that they wente to the duke of Lācastre / as ambassadours to treate for any alyaunce / for they knewe nat howe to spede. Thus they entred in to Nauerre and came to Pampylona / and there founde the kynge and the quene. First they came thyder bycause the quene was suster to the kynge of Castyle. There they hadde good chere / but they nouther shewed the kyng nor the quene where about they wente: And so passed thorough the countrey by the mountayns of Rossault and entred in to Brisquay / and so rode tyll they came to Bayon.

Hase they were come to the towne of Bayon / sir Helyon of Lignacke was styll there / who was sente fro the duke of Berrey (as ye haue herde here before) But after the cōmynge of the castylyans they tarved nat longe after / for frere don Fernando the kynge of Castyls confessour came to the duke of Lancastre / for he knewe hym better than any of the other. He began somwhat to breke the mater / & to shewe the cause of their cōmynge. The duke opened his eares to his wordes / and was gladde to here those tidynges / and sayde. Frere Fernando ye be welcome. And the same day sir Helyon of Lignacke was delyuered. And as I vnderstode / the duke accorded the same tyme to a truse on all partes. for such as made warre for hym in Acquitayne / Bygorre / Thoulous / and other place / to endure vnto to the fyrste day of Maye / in the yere of our lorde god a thousande thre hundred fourscore and nyne. this truse to contynue all the countrey to the ryuer of Loyre / and no further. This truse was concluded at the request of the duke of Berrey / to the entent that he myght sende to and out to the duke of Lancastre. For before they of the fortresses of Mortagne on ỳ see / of Bonteyll / of Rouuergue / of Quercyn / of Pyergourt / and they on the ryuer of Garon / were people without mercy / they wolde knowe no manne / wherfore these two dukes accorded to this truse / the whiche was well kepte. Whan sir Helyon of Lignacke departed fro ỳ duke there was great loue shewed / for the duke sayd howe the mater pleased hym right well: Howe be it the duke sayd playnlye he wolde neuer marey his doughter in to Fraunce / without the content and accorde of the kyng of Englande his nephue. And also by the agrement of the counsayle of Englāde but he sayd / he trusted so to order the mater / that all shulde do well. Thus sir Helyon of Lignacke departed and returned in to Fraūce / and shewed the duke of Berrey his letters that the duke of Lancastre had sent hym / and shewed

and ſhewed hym by mouthe all the maner howe euery thyng wente/ and ſo ꝑ duke was well content. ¶ Nowe lette vs ſpeke of the kynge of Caſtyls ambaſſadours/ to whome the duke of Lácaſtre gaue good eare/ ſo dyd the duches/ for all their hertes and ymaginations lay euer on their chalenge of Spayn.

¶ The duke made theſe ambaſſadours good chere/ they came before the duke and the duchelle/ and there ſhewed their meſſage. firſt they treted for peace/ and there the frere preached in the dukes chãbre/ the duchelle preſent: And ſhe ſhewed the duke the entent of all his wordes/ for ꝑ duke vnderſtode hym nat parfitely: The lady vnderſtode hym well/ for in her youthe ſhe was brought vp in Spayne. The duke for all that the mater of their cõmyng was pleſaũt to hym/ yet he diſcouered nat to haſtely his entente/ but ſayd. Sirs/ it wyll be very harde to make peace in that place/ where as great hatered and warre is reſydent/ and ſpecially with them that be diſherited and kepte from their heryptage: Sayeng/ howe he wolde nat leaue the warre without he myght haue the crowne of Caſtyle/ the whiche he layde was his right: The frere and the bill hoppa ſayd. Sir/ betwene your right and ꝑ right of the kynge our lorde there is but one meane/ and we haue founde it/ if it may pleaſe you. What waye is that quod the duke? Sir quod they it is this. ye haue by my lady youre wyfe a feyre yonge lady to marry/ and the kynge of caſtile our ſouerayne lorde hath a feyre yong ſonne/ if they two myght mary togyder the realme of Caſtyle ſhulde be in peace/ and all that is your right ſhulde retourne to you. For ſir/ better can ye nat beſtowe your heyre who is diſcẽded of the right lyne of Caſtyle. The entent ye arme you (kyght/ aduenture youre ſelfe/ and traueyle your body) is all onely for the right of your heyre. That is trewe quod the duke/ but than I wyll that the coſtes ꝑ I haue ſuſteyned in the purſute there be recompẽſed. For I wyll ye knowe it hath coſt me and the realme of Englande/ fyue hundred thouſande frãkes/ wherof I wolde gladly ſe ſom recouerance. Sir quod the frere/ if our treatie be agreable to you/ we truſt to fynde ſuch a meane that the mater ſhall take good effect Well quod the duke ye be welcome/ and how ſoeuer it be or howeſoeuer it ſhalbe/ or I retourne in to Englande (outher in to Caſtyle or in to Fraunce) I ſhall mary my doughter for I haue dyuers offres moued vnto me/ but maters of ſo great a weyght are nat lightly cõcluded/ at the firſt tyme. For my doughter whome I repute (as rightfull enheritour to ſpayne) I wyll knowe him well ꝑ ſhall haue her in marryage. that is but reaſon quod the frere. Thus as I haue ſhewed you this treatie began/ betwene the duke of Lácaſtre and theſe parties/ as well of Caſtyle as of Fraũce. He made euery partie good chere/ and made no full anſwere: but in his ymagination the treatie of Spayne (the kynges ſonne to mary his doughter) ſemed beſt to his purpoſe/ becauſe in tyme to come his doughter ſhulde be quene of Caſtyle. alſo the duches his wyfe enclyned moſt to that treatie. ¶ Nowe let vs leaue to ſpeke of the duke of Lancaſtre & of all theſe treatyſe/ and retourne to ſpeke of the duke of Bretaygne.

¶ Howe the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne departed to go to Bloys and howe the duke of Bretayne cãe thyder/ and howe the dukes dyde ſo moche that they had hym to Parys in maner agaynſt his wyll.

Cap. C. xxx.

AS I haue ſhewed you here before/ ꝑ duke of Bretayne made good chere to the French ambaſſadours and ſpecially to the lorde of Coucy. For as I was enformed/ he was ꝑ chiefe that brake the duke fro his purpoſe/ by reaſon of his fayre and ſwete wordes: Howbe it the lorde Johan of Vyen and the lorde de la Ryuer dyde tyght well their deuoyre. but often tymes great princes and lordes wyll ſoner be entreated by one man/ rather than by another. Wothe payne it was to cauſe the duke of Bretayne to agree to go to the towne of Bloys/ to mete there the dukes of Berrey

and of Burgoyne / but he was brought thyder by fayre wordes: And he sayde surely he wolde go no further thanne to the towne of Bloys / and the lorde of Coucy sayd he desyred nothynge elles. These thre lordes were with the duke of Bretaygne certayne dayes / and than toke their leaues and retourned into Fraunce / and shewed the dukes of Berry and of Burgoyne howe they hadde spedde. Therupon these two dukes made them redy to go to Blopes to mete there with the duke of Bretaygne / and sente thyder before to make prouysyon / as apertayned. Firste thyder came the duke of Berrey and he was lodged in the Castell / and there he founde the countesse / her sonne / and her doughter. They receyued hym honourably. The erle Guye of Bloys was as than in his owne countrey at the castell Reygnaulte / and made no greate counte of the commynge of the duke of Bretaygne / he thought it sufficyent that his wife and chyldren were there. Than thyder came the duke of Burgoyne with a goodly trayne and in his company came sir Wyllm of Heynaulte and his sonne erle of Ostrenante / and Johan of Burgoyne sonne to the duke called erle of Neuers. The duke lodged also in the castell / and there he lde his estate. Than after came the duke of Bretaygne with no great trayne / other than of his house: he passed nat a thre hūdred horses / for his entēcyon was / that whan he had ones sene the two dukes and spoken with them / to retourne in to his owne countre (without goynge any further in to Fraunce) But the entente of the other two dukes was other wise: for they said whyder he wolde or nat / he shulde go to Parys.

The duke of Bretaygne hym selfe lodged in the castell of Bloyes / in a chanons house of sayne Saupour: and his men lodged downe in the towne / & so dyd ỳ other of all the dukes seruauntes: but the lordes laye in ỳ castell / the whiche was fayre / great / and stronge / one of the fayrest castelles in all the realme of Fraunce. There these Dukes made good chere togyder and shewed great loue / and they thanked the duke of Bretayne of his cōmyng to the towne of Bloyes: And the duke answered and sayde / howe he was come thyder for the loue of them with great payne (for he sayned hym selfe nat well at ease) Than these two dukes fell in communynge with the duke of Bretayne / shewyng hym ỳ the he was come so fast forwarde that he had done nothyng without he went to Parys to se the kynge / who greatly desyred to se hym. The duke of Bretaygne began greatlye to excuse hym selfe of that voyage / and layde many reasons / & sayd howe he was nat well at his ease to make so longe a iourney / nor also he was nat accompanyed therafter. Than he was sweetely answered that sauyng his displeasure / he shulde nede no great trayne to go se his souerayne lorde / and as for his rydinge / he shulde lacke nouther thayre nor lytter to labour at his ease / For they said he was bounde to do homage to the kynge / for as than he had nat done it before. The duke sayd (excusynge hym selfe) that whan the kynge were come to his lawfull age / and had the hole Realme in his owne gouernaunce / than he wolde come to Parys (or whyder it shulde please the kynge) and than do his homage accordyng to reason. The other dukes sayd / that the kynge was of age & wysdome sufficyent to receyue homage: and howe that all other lordes of the realme except he / had done their homage and made relieft / affyrmynge howe the kynge was .xxi. yere of age. Whan the duke of Bretaygne sawe howe his excuses coude nat be taken nor herde (sayde) Well sirs / if I go to Parys it shalbe greatlye agaynst my wyll / and to my preiudyce: For whan I come there / I shall fynde and se dayly before me sir Olyuer of Clysson / whom I can nat loue nor neuer dyde / nor he me (who shall attempte me with rygorous wordes) My lordes / regarde well what inconuenyentes shall ensue of my goynge thyder. Sir (quod the duke of Burgoyne / sayde he) syn haue ye no dout therin for we shall swere solempnely to you / that without it shall be your owne pleasure / ye shall nouther se nor speke with the Constable nor with Johan of Mountforde / as longe as ye shall be there. Of this sir ye shall be sure / but ye shall se the kynge who desyreth to se you / and other lordes / knyghtes / and squyers of Fraunce / who shall make you good chere. And whanne ye haue done that ye loke for / ye shall retourne agayne without peryll or dommage (Wherto shulde I make longe processe) So moche

the duke

the duke of Bretayne was deſyred with faire wordes that he conſented to go to Parys/ on the promyſe that the Conſtable nor Johan of Mountforde ſhulde nat come in his preſence/ the whiche the dukes ſware faythfully to byholde/ and therupon he pmyſed to go to Parys. Thre dayes thyſe dukes were at Blayes/ and eche of them feaſted other ryght nobly/ and the counteſſe and her chyldren in lyke maner. And whan euery thyng was accomplyſhed/ the two dukes toke leaue of ye duke of Bretayne and retourned to Parys: But ſir Wyllyam of Hernaulte retourned nat to Parys with the duke of Burgoyne his fathers father: but rode forth vnto the counteſſe of Blayes who made hym right good chere/ and tarryed there a thre dayes/ ythan toke his leaue and retourned in to Fraunce/ by the Caſtell Dune and Bonpuall.

¶ Howe Lewes kyng of Cyecyle entred in to Parys in eſtate royall/ and howe the duke of Bretayne entred on the nyght of ſayne Johñ the Baptyſt: The yere of grace/ a thouſande thre hundred fourſcore & ſeuyn. and of a dede of armes doone before the kyng at Mountereau faulte yon/ bytwene a knyght of Englande called ſir Thoms harpingham/ and a frenche knyght named ſir Johñ de Barres. Cap. C. xxxi.

The duke of Bretayne rode to Bopgency on the ryuer of Loyre/ & there he ordered his buſineſſe to go to Parys. The ſame tyme before ye duke of Bretayne entred in to Parys/ there entred the quene of Cyecyll and of Hieruſalem/ ſometyme wyfe to the Duke of Anion/ who was called kyng of thoſe countrees/ and alſo of Naples/ and with her was her ponge ſonne Lewes/ who was as thanne (in all Fraunce) named kyng of all the ſayd landes. And in their company was Johan of Bretayne brother to the lady. She ſente worde before of her cõmynge to the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne/ aduertyſyng them/ howe ſhe brought in her company her ponge ſon Lewes their nephue/ deſyryng to knowe whether he ſhulde entre into Paris as a kyng/ or elles ſymply as Lewes of Anion. The two dukes ſente her worde (aduiſyng and counſayling her) that he ſhulde entre as kyng of Naples/ of Cyecyle/ and of Hieruſalem. And ſente her worde/ that thoughe he were nat as thanne in poſſeſſyon of the Realmes/ yet they wolde entyſe the Frenche kyng that he ſhulde ayde hym to conquete them/ for ſo they ware to do to their brother kyng Lois. After this maner the lady prepared for her ſelfe/ and came and entred in to Parys/ and made her ſonne to ryde throughe the hyghe ſtretes by ſayne Jaques/ ſo to his lodgynge in grene in eſtate royall/ accompanyed with Dukes/ erles/ and prelates a great nombre. There the lady tarryed with her ſonne/ and thanne went to ſe the kynge at his caſtell of Loure/ abydynge there the commynge of the duke of Bretayne.

¶ Howe the duke of Bretayne entred in to Parys/ and came to the caſtell of Loure to the Frenche kynge. Cap. C. xxxii.

When the duke of Bretayne approched nere to Parys/ he reſted one nyght at the quenes Bourge/ and the nexte daye he entred in to Paris. great lokyng for hym was in Paris/ bycauſe he had before putte in daunger the Conſtable of Fraunce/ and had ben ſente for dyuers tymes and wolde neuer come tyll than. Men ſpake therof dyuerſly/ and on a ſondaye beyngt Mydſomer daye at tenne of the clocke afore noone/ the duke of Bretayne entred/ the yere of our lorde god a thouſande thre hundred fourſcore and eight in to Parys/ at hell gate/ and paſſed a long the ſtrete of ye Harpe/

and ouer the bridge fayne Michell/ and so be fore the palais well accompanyed with lordes and knyghtes. There was sir Wyllyam of Heynaulte erle of Ostrenaunt/ his faire brother Johan of Burgoyne/ and before him roode sir Wyllyam of Namure. Thus he came to the Castelle of Loure/ and there alyghted (as he rode throughe the stretes/ he was greatlye regarded of the common people) And whan the duke was alyghted and entred in at the gate/ he remembred what he shulde do and saye. And before hym was the lorde of Coucy/ the erle of Sauoy/ sir Johñ of Uyen/ sir Guye de la Tremoyle sir Johñ of Uernayle/ the erle of Weault/ sir Johan of Uoye/ sir Johan of Barres/ and nere to hym was sir Wyllyam of Namure/ Johan of Burgoyne/ and the erle of Ostrenaunte. And behynde hym the lorde Mountforde of Bretayne and the lorde of Waleftroyt/ they were of his kynne and prouy coulayle. there was great preace to se hym and the halle but lytell/ and the boordes were couered for the kynge to go to dyner. And the kynge stoode there redy before the table and his .iii. uncles beside hym/ dukes of Berrey/ of Burgoyne and of Burbone. As soone as the duke was entred euery man made place/ so that ỳ duke myght se the kynge. Firste he made one curtesy/ and so passed forthe a tenne or .xii. paces Than he made the seconde curtesy and rose a gayne/ and so passed forthe tyll he came before the kynge: Than the thirde tyme he kneled downe bare heeded and saluted the kyng and sayd. Sir/ I am come to se your grace/ god mayntayne youre prosperyte. I thanke you fir quod the kyng/ and we haue great desyre to se you: We shall se and speke with you at more leysar/ and therwith toke hym vp by the armes. Than the duke enclyned hym self to all the other princes/ eche after other. than he stode styll before the kynge without spekynge of any worde. The kyng tore behinde hym. Thanne the Stewardes and officers came forthe with water and ỳ kyng washed and the duke of Bretaygne putte his hande to the bason and to the towell. And whan the kyng was sette/ the duke toke his leaue of the kyng and of his uncles. and the lorde of Coucy and the erle of fayne Poule with other lordes/ conueyed hym in to the court where his horses were. and there mounted and so returned to his lodgynge in the strete of ỳ Harpey and none tarryed with hym of them that conueyed hym/ but suche as came with hym out of Bretaygne to Parys.

After all this the duke of Bretaygne spake at leysar with the kynge & his uncles/ so that euery man was well contente with hym/ and he tooke well euery thynge that had ben promysed to hym/ for he sawe nother the constable nor Johñ of Bretayne. Whan ỳ lordes sawe that euery thyng was in good state/ and that they neded nat to doute the duke of Bretaygne/ seynge they had hym at Paris (for they thought he shulde nat departe thens tyll he had done in maner/ euery thyng as the kynge wolde) than it was thought good tyme to ordeyne forth for the voyage in to Guerles (whyder the kyng had great affection to go) to subdue the duke of Guerles/ who had so shamfully defied the kyng (the whiche cõsydred) was nat thoght good to be suffred. Than it was ordayned/ that the lorde of Coucy shulde drawe to the marches of Reymes and Chalons in Champayn/ and to regarde for the kynges passage that waye/ and to moue the knyghtes & squyers in Bare and in Lorayne to go with him/ whyder he wolde lede them/ nat spekynge of the kyng/ but bearyng them in hande that he wolde go to recouer his ryght in Justryche. The lorde of Coucy thus departed fro Parys/ and wente to Chalous in Champayne/ and there tarryed a moneth and retayned on all partes knyghtes and squyers i Bare and in Lorayne/ in Champaygne/ and in Rethelois. And the fréche kyng departed fro Parys whan he had cõmuned with the duke of Bretaygne of dyuers maters (and nat fully accomplyshed) for the lute in the courte of Fraunce is longe whan they lyste/ and right well they canne foode for the people to make theym spende moche/ and bringe lytell to effecte. The kynge came to Moustreau ou faulte yon/ in the marchesse of Brie and Castrenoys/ and there he helde his courte/ and often tymes chaced hartes and other wylde beestes in the forest of Brie. The same seasone there was a dede of armes done there/ betwene an Englisshe knyght who was there with the duke of Irelande/ called sir Thomas Hat

pyngham/ and ſir Johan of Barees/ wherof
great bruite was made in Fraunce and other
places. Their chalenge was/ fyue courſes
with a ſpeare/ fyue ſtrokes with the ſworde/
fyue with a daggar/ and fyue with the axe/
and if any of their weapons brake than they
to gette newe/ tyll their chalenge were accõ-
plyſhed. Theſe two knyghtes on a day lept
on their horſes well armed/ as appertayned
(The kynge and all other lordes beyng preſ-
ſent and moche people) and came togyder
foure courſes ryght hautaunty (and as me
thought the blage was chaſe/ their Helmes
were tyed but with a lace/ to the entente the
ſpeare ſhulde take no holde). the fyrſt courſe
ſir Johan of Barres ſtrake the Engliſſhe
knyght on the targe/ in ſuche wyſe/ that he
bare hym ouer the horſe croppe/ ſo that he laye
ſtonyed on the grounde/ and moche payne to
releue. Than they perfourmed forthe all the
reſte of their chalenge/ in ſo goodly maner/
that the kyng and all the other were well cõ-
tent with them.

Howe the erle of Arundell beyng on the ſee more than a moneth came to the hauyn of Marante/ a lytell fro Rochell: And howe he ſent a meſſãgere to Perotte le Bernoys/ that he and other capitayns ſhulde kepe the feldes. Cap. C.xxxiii.

IT is long ſythe I made any mencyon of the Engliſſhe armye on the ſee/ wherof Rychard Erle of Arundell was capitayne/ and vñ hym many knyghtes/ ſquyers/ and archers of Englande. I ſhall nowe ſomwhat ſpeke of hym/ for the mater requyreth it.

I haue herde here before of the treatie that the kyng of Englande made with the duke of Bretaygne. This nauy on the ſee all this ſeaſon/ laye euer coaſtyng the frontiers of Bretaygne and Normãdy/ if wynde and wether hyaue thẽ thens/ they euer came thyder agayne. And they had in their fleete ſome ſmall veſſelles called Balyngers/ who wente euer and ſcoured the ſee. The fleete had layne at ancre more than a moneth agaynſt the yle of Bretaſſhe nie Bretayne. And there they herde tidynges/ howe the duke of Bretaygne was gone to Blopes to ſpeke with the dukes of Berrey/ of Burgoyne/ And howe they were ſo agreed/ that the duke was gone to Parys. And the tenõe came throughe Bretaygne/ howe the duke hadde good chere of the Frenche kynge/ and was welcome to hym and to all his counſayle at Parys/ and ſhulde nat departe thens tyll the maters were in good eſtate. Whanne the erle of Arũdell herde thoſe tidynges he was penſyue: and wente to counſayle what was beſt to do/ & whyder they were beſt to drawe to enploye their ſeaſon. Than they determyned to drawe to Rochellois though they hanno caſtelles there/ yet they hadde men ynowe there to kepe the felde/ and to abyde all the puyſſaunce of Kaynton and of Poyctou/ ſo that they ſhulde ſignyfy their eſtate in to Auuergne and in to Lymoſyne/ ſo that they myght ſende to paſſe throughe Bretaygne. As than the treuſe was nat confyrmed on the ryuer of Loyre: but they were a treatynge to begynne the fyrſte daye of Auguſte. And ſir Helyon of Lignacke was goyng or cõmyng (as the erle of Arundell ymagined) ouchet to the duke of Lancaſtre to Bayone/ or elles ret outnynge in to Fraunce. They hadde in their naupe a Breton bretonaunt of the nacyon of Wannes/ ſeruaunt to ſir Wyllyam Helmon/ who coude ſpeke well foure maner of languages/ That is to ſaye/ Bretyſſhe/ Engliſſhe/ Spaynyſſhe/ and Frenche: and gaue hym in commaundement to go a lande and ſayde to hym. Go thou the mooſt prcuyeſt wayes thou canſte (thou knoweſt all the preuy wayes of the countrey) and gette the to the garyſon of Chaluſet/ and haue vs all recommaunded to Perotte le Bernoys/ and ſhewe hym fro vs/ that he ſette forthe a compayny of men of armes/ ſuche as be in garyſons for the kynge of Englande/ and make warre in his tytell/ þ ſhalbe beare no letters for feare of takynge. Thou mayeſt go lyke a marchaunt of Rochell to by wynes; and ſaye to Perot that he reyſe vp theſe men of warre and kepe

and kepe the coultreys of Berrey/ Auuergne/ and Lymosyn in boute/ and kepe the feldes/ for we shall lande in Rochelloyes/ and shall make there suche warre/ that it shalbe herde of and well knowen. The Breton sayde he shulde do his message/ if he hadde no great lette by the waye. He was set a lande on the sandes/ and (as he that knewe all the countrey of Bretayne) went of from all the great townes/ and passed by the countrey of Poytou and entred in to Lymosyn/ and so came to Chalucet/ whereof Perot le Bernoys was capitayne. The messangere came to the barreres/ and gaue knowledge of his comynge to them of the garyson. After he had ben examyned at the gate he was lette in/ and so brought before Perotte/ and dyde well his message/ wherof Perot had great ioye/ For he greatly desyred to here tidynges of the armye on the see. Than he sayd to the Breton/ thou arte welcome: Bothe I and all my companions haue great desyre to ryde forthe abrode/ and so shall we do/ and accomplysh he that thou hast shewed vs.

THus Perotte le Bernoys made hym prest and sente to Carlate to the Bourge of Champaygne/ to the capitayne of Oulache/ Oliuer Barbe/ and to the capitayn of Aloyse beside Saynt Floure/ Aymergotte Marcell/ and to other capitayns a longe the countrey in Auuergne and Lymosyn. desyryng all these to make thé redy/ for he wolde ryde oute abrode/ for he sawe it than a good season for them. cõmaundynge them to leaue sure men in their garisons tyll their returne. These companyons who hadde as great desyre to ryde abrode as Perot (for they coulde nat ware ryche without some other loste) made thé redy and came to Chalucet/ where they assembled. They were well to the nombre of foure hundred speares/ they thought them selfe sufficient to do a great feate. they knewe no lorde in the countrey as than able to resyste them/ nor to breke their enterprice. for the siege of Vandachore of sir Wyllyam of Lignake nor of Bortme Laũce/ was nat defeated as than. Thus they rode forthe and were lordes of the feldes/ and passed Auuergne on the ryght hande/ and tooke the ryght waye to Berrey: for they knewe well ỹ duke was nat as than there/ but was in Fraunce with the kyng at Mastereau or faulx yon.

Nowe lette vs leaue to speke of Perot le Bernoys and of his enterprice/ and speke of the erle of Arundell and of his armye on the see/ and shewe howe he persewed after he was departed fro the coste of Bretayne.

WHan the erle of Arundell ỹ suche lordes as were with hym were departed fro the coste of Bretayne/ they sayled with good wynd and wether/ for ỹ tyme was fayre ỹ pleasaunt/ and goodly to beholde ỹ shippes on ỹ see. They were a fyscore one and other/ with baners and streemers wauynge in the wynde/ glysteryng with the lordes armes agaynst the sonne. Thus they went sayling by the see freshly (like a horse newe cõmyng out of the stable prapeng and cryeng/ and fomyng at the mouth) The see was so prompe and so agreable to thé/ as thoughe by figure the see shulde haue said to them. be merry for I am for you/ and I shall bring you to good porte and hauen without peryll. Thus these lordes sayled frontyng Poytou and Xaynton a cast ancre before Rochell/ in ỹ hauen to warde Marant. Than some of their cõpany seyng the fludde comyng/ entred or it were full water in to bottes mo than two hundred one and other/ and arryued here to the towne of Marant. The watche of Marant had spied the Englysshe flete/ and sawe how the bottes were commyng to lande warde with the fludde. Than he blewe his trũpe and made great noyse/ to awake the men of the towne to saue them selfe/ so that many men and women toke their goodes and wente and saued them in the Castell/ the whiche came well to passe for them/ or els they had lost all. Whan they sawe the Englysshmen come at their eyes/ they toke that they had and lefte the rest/ and saued their bodyes. The Englysshe archers and other entred in to the towne/ ỹ fell to pyllage (therfore they came thyder) but by reason they founde there/ sauyng coffers voyde and emptye/ all their goodes was withdrawen in to the Castell. As for Corne/ wyne/ salte bacons/ and other prouision they founde ynoughe/ for there was more than four hundred tonne

dred towne of wyne in the towne. Wherfore they determyned to abyde there a certayne ſpace to kepe that prouiſyon. It came well to paſſe for them / for they ſayde if they ſhulde departe thens / all ſhulde be withdrawen in to the fortreſſes / and caryed awaye by the ryuer to Fountney / as moche as they myght / and the reſte diſtroyed. They taryed all that nyght in the towne. They came thyder in the euenyng / and ſente worde to them on the ſee what caſe they were in / and the cauſe why they taryed. The erle of Arundell and the o-ther lordes ſayde / howe they had done well. This nyght paſſed. The nexte morowe whan the tyde began to retourne / they diſan-nexed all theyr ſmall veſſelles / and euery man went in to them / and putte all theyr harneſſe in to botes and barges / and lafte theyr great ſhippes ſtyll at ancre / for they coulde nat tur-nere to the lande for lacke of water. and they lafte an hundred men of armes and two hun-dred archers ſtyll there to kepe theyr ſhippes whiche laye at the mouthe of the hauyn. tha with theyr ſmalle veſſelles they arryued at Warant / and toke lande at theyr leyſar / and ſo lodged all betwene Warant and ſtowne of Rochell / the whiche was but foure leages fro thens. Thyrtye ſpredde abrode in the countrey / howe the Engliſſhe men were ar-ryued at Warante / a foure hundred fightyng men: the playne countrey / the good townes and caſtelles were a frayde and made good watche. Than they of the vyllages fledde a-waye / and caryed theyr goode vnto fortreſſes and in to other places / as ſhortely as they myght.

How they of Warroys and Ro-chellois were ſore afrayed of the En-gliſſhmen that were a lande / & how they of Rochell made a ſcrimyſſhe with them / and howe after the En-gliſſhmen had pylled the countrey about Warant / they drewe agayne to the ſee with theyr pyllage whiche was great. Cap. C.xxxiii.

If the Engliſſhmen had ben furniſſhed with horſes it had been greatly to theyr profyte for ye coun-trey as than was vnprouy-ded of men of warre / name-ly of ſuche as were able to haue mette with them. Trewe it was / the lorde of Partenay / the lorde of Pons / the lorde of Lyniers / the lorde of Tanyboton / Sir Geffray of Argenton / the lorde of Montendre / ſir Ay-mery of Rochechouart / the vycount of Rowans / and dyuers other knyghtes and ſquyers of Poictou and of Xaynton / were as than in the countrey: but they were nat togyder / for e-uery man was in his owne fortreſſe / for they were nat ware of the Engliſſhe mens com-mynge thyder. If they hadde knowen a mo-nethe before that the Engliſſhe menne wolde haue ryued there / they wolde haue prouyded therfore / but they knewe it nat. This fell ſo-daynly / wherfore they were the more afrayde and euery man toke hede to kepe his owne / & the men of the countrey to gette in theyr cor-nes / for it was about the begynnynge of Au-guſte. Alſo there was no hede Capitaygne in the countrey to bringe menne togyder. The duke of Berrey who was chefe ſoue-raygne of Poictou / was but newely gone to Parys. The ſeneſchall of Xaynton was nat in the countrey: And the Seneſchall of Ro-chell ſir Helyon of Lignacke was nat at Ro-chell / nor in the countrey / he was in great buſynneſſe to ryde in and out betwene ye duke of Berrey and the duke of Lancaſtre. By theſe reaſons the countrey was the more fe-ble / for where there is defaulte of good hee-des / there muſt neyes be defaulte in the body and in the fote: And he that hath no foote can do nothynge that is worthe. Thus theſe lor-des were in feare two wayes. They had the Engliſſhmen armed before them that came fro the ſee: And on the other ſyde they herde newes fro Berrey and fro Limoſyn / that Pe-rot le Bernoys rode abrode with fyue or ſixe hundred fyghtynge men with hym / and was entred in to Berrey. So they wyſt nat wher to they ſhulde take hede / but euery manne to kepe his owne. For the renome went / howe theſe two hoſtes ſhulde mete togyder / ou-ther in the countrey of Poictou or Xaynton, This was the opinyon of dyuers.

True it

TRue it was/ that in the towne of Rochell (the same season that the Englysshe men were landed at Warant) there was two baylys knyghtes/ the one called sir Peter of Jouy/ and the other sir Tayllepye/ whome sir Helyon of Lignache had lefte at Rochell to kepe the towne and countre therabout. whan tydynges came to Rochell how the erle of Arundell and the armye that had ben so longe on the see/ were a lande and lodged besyde Warant. Than these two knyghtes sayd to the that were vnder their charge (and to the mayre of Rochell and men of the towne) sirs it must behoue vs to go and loke on these Englysshe menne. It is shewed vs howe they be arryued in these parties/ I and my companion wyll go and gyue them their welcome/ for the whiche they shall paye vs/ or els we them: For we shalbe blamed if we suffre them to rest in peace/ sythe we haue the charge of the keppynge of this countre. there is one poynte good for vs/ they haue no horses: They are men of the see/ and we be well mounted: We shall sende our crosbowes before/ they shall wake them/ and shote & hurte them/ and whan they haue done they shall retourne. Than the Englysshe men wyll issue out after them a fote/ and we shall suffre our crosbowes to passe homwarde/ and than we shall receyue our enemyes at the spere poynt We shall haue of them suche aduantage/ that we shall do them great domage. Euery man that herde these knyghtes speke/ reputed the for noble valyaunt men/ and agreed to their counsayle: And there assembled togyder/ what one and other a twelue hundred. The nexte mornynge at the breakyng of the daye/ euery man was redy & assembled togyder. and the crosbowes and men a fote issued out and went a great pace to reyse the Englysshemen out of their lodgynges. and in the meane season the horsmen made them redy vpon a .iii. hundred/ for there were dyuers knyghtes and squyers come to Rochell. Certainly/ if by any maner inspyracion thenglysshemen had knowen of their commynge/ that they might haue made an embussh be (but of two hundred archers and a hundred men of armes) there had nat one Frenchman retourned agayne. Whan they of Rochell came to the Englysshe mens lodgynges/ it was early in the mornynge/ and their watche was retourned to their lodgynges. Than the Frenche crosbowes began to shote and entred in among their lodgynges/ and hurte many. The Englysshe men lyeng on the strawe had maruayle of the noyse/ & many were hurte or they knewe that they were Frenche men. And whan the crosbowes had shotte euery man a syxe shottes/ or there about/ they retourned (as it was before apoynted). Than approched the horsmen and entred among the lodgynges/ therwith the hoost began to shyre/ and knyghtes and squyers dyde we togyder in to the feide. And whan the Frenche men sawe the hoost shyre and drawe togyder/ they drewe backe and retourned towarde Rochell a good pace/ for feare of the shotte of Englysshe men/ who followed them nere to Rochell. Than the Erle of Arundell with foure hundred men of armes folowed after a great pace/ euery man his speare in his hande or on his necke. The preace of the Frenche fotemen was great at the entrynge in to Rochell/ and alwayes the two Frenche knyghtes were behynde/ & lette their men forwarde tyll they were within the barriers: and euer the Englysshe men folowed/ in suche wyse/ that the two Frenche knyghtes were in great danger to be taken or slayn They were sore lette at/ bycause they semed to be the chiefe capitaynes (as they were in dede) so that sir Peter Jouy hadde his horse slayne vnder hym/ and with great payne his men saued hym/ and drewe hym within the barryers. And sir Peter Tayllepye was stryken through the thye with a glayue/ and with an arrowe throughe the ballenet in to the heed/ and his horse fell downe deed within the gate. At the entrynge in to the towne there were many slayne and hurte/ more than .xl. the men of the towne were aboue ouer the gate and caste downe stones and shotte out bombardes/ so that the Englysshe men durste approche no nerer.

Thus wente the first scrymyll betwene them of Rochell and the Englysshe men/ and whan they hadde scrymyll hed nere to noone/ The erle of Arundell sowned the retrayte: Than they withdrewe in good order/ and retourned to their lodgynges & vnarmed them and toke their ease/ & they had well wherof. they lacked nouther wyne nor fleshe. The Englysshe men tarryed there about a fyftene

dayes

dayes/ abydinge all aduentures. But after that/ they of Rochell issued no moze oute to scrimysshe/ foz they sawe well the Englisshe men were wise and valyaunt/ and also ỳ two capitayns were hurt/ wherfoze the other had good cause to sytte styll in rest. The Erle of Arundell sent a thze oz four tymes abzode in to the countrey of Rochelloys to warde Bressmute/ and in to the lande of Towars/ and dyde great dõmage/ wherof all the countrey was a frayde. The Englysshmen had done a great enterprice if they had ben furnysshed with hozsmen/ & in the countre they gatte but fewe: foz as soone as they herde of their landynge/ euery man catyed all that they hadde in to the foztresses. And whan this army had taryed there a fyftene dayes/ and were well refresshed/ & sawe that no man came agaynst them and parceyued the wynde good foz thé/ they dzewe them in to their shippes/ and taryed with them moche wyne & fresshe flesshe and so entred in to their vessellis/ and dzewe vp their sayles and toke the see: and the same daye they mette with. xii. shippes of Bayon goynge in to Englande/ charged with wynes and other marchaũdises: so they toyned togyder and made good chere. They gaue to the erle of Arundell two peces of Galcoyn wyne. Thus they sayled foz the aduenture.

¶ Nowe lette vs speke of Perot le Bernois and of the other capitayns that were in his cõpany/ howe they dzewe agayne in to their foztresses.

¶ Howe Perot le Bernoys and his cõpanyons reloyzted agayne to theyr holdes with great pyllage. & howe the duke of Guerles couldе haue no ayde of the Englysshe men/ to reyse the siege before Graue: and howe the brabansoys made a bzidge ouer the ryuer of Meuse/ the whiche they of Guerles dyde bzeke/ bzinne/ and dystroy: as ye shall here after.

Cap. C.xxxv.

The same seasone that the Englysshe armye was at Marant/ Perot le Bernoyes and his route/ to the nõbze of four hundzed speres were abzode and passed by Lymosyn and came to Berrey. And on a daye they tooke all the marchauntes that were in the towne of Blake in Berrey/ on the whiche daye there was a great fayze/ wherby they had great profite and good prisoners/ and than passed further and came to Selles in Berrey/ and pylled and robbed the towne. Thus Perot and his companyons rode abzode in the countre and dyde great dõmage/ foz there was none that came agaynst them. The countrey was soze a frayde on bothe sydes the ryuer of Loyze/ vnto the coũte of Bloys and of Thourayne. They coude nat ymagin what these two armyes were purposed to do/ some sayde they shulde mete togyder but they dyd nat. foz the army on the see dzewe agayne to the see/ and Perot in lykewise to his foztresse. Whã they had pylled and wonne great richesse in the countrey/ euery man wente to their owne foztresse to saue that they had gotte. There was none other dede of armes done that season in Auuergne and Lymosyn. Thasie began the truce on that syde the ryuer of Loyze the whiche shulde endure to the moneth of Marche: But styll the siege endured before Vandachoze/ by sir Wylliam of Lignacke/ sir Johan Boetine Launce/ sir Johan Butlere and other. Foz sir Geffray Teate noyze was so proude and cruell/ that he sette nouther by truce noz peace/ and all on the truste of the strength of his foztresses. ¶ Nowe lette vs leaue speakyng of the siege of Vandachoze/ and shewe here after what ende it toke/ and speke nowe of Brabaunte and of Guerles.

¶ I knowe well (as it hath ben cõteyned here before in this hystoze) the ducheste of Brabant was determyned to make warre agaynst the duke of Guerles/ and caused the siege to cõtynue before the towne of Graue/ with a great puyssaunce of knyghtes and squyers/ and other men of the good townes of Brabante: and their entencion was nat to departe thens/ tyll they had the towne

the towne of Graue at their wyll. And the du
chesse to shewe ꝑ the mater touched her nere
she laye at Boyes a four leages thens. The
hoost was plentifull of euery thynge. They
were often tymes refresshed with newe pro
uisyon cõmyng fro dyuers partes/ aswell by
see/ by fresshe water/ & by the ryuer of Mu
se as by the lande of Brabant. This siege long
endured/ and they had there great ingyns be
fore the towne to caste in great stones/ whi
che dyde great domage. And besyde that to
enfeble the people within/ they caste in to the
towne all deed carcyne (and the wether was
hote) the whiche greatly anoyed them with
in. The clere ayre was sore corrupted with
the euell ayre. Somtyme the knyghtes and
squyers of Brabant wolde come to the bar
ryers and scrimysshe with them of ꝑ towne/
and there were many feates of armes done/
For there were men in the towne (sette there
by the duke of Guerles) that were redye to
shewe forthe their prowes whan tyme was.
The duke of Guerles lay at Nimay & coude
nat remedy the mater nor repulse the siege/ nor
yet fight with his enemyes/ for he had no pu
issaunce therto/ But he hadde sente in to En
glande certifyeng what ease he stode in/ tru
styng to haue had socours fro thens/ but he
had none/ For at that tyme there was moche
trouble in Englande. For there was sette a
newe counsayle about the kynge by the mea
nes of his vncles and tharchbysshop of Cã
terbury. About the feest of saynt Johan the
Baptyst/ there was a counsayle in Englande
to knowe if there shulde be sente any ayde of
men of armes & archers to the duke of Guer
les or nat: But euery thyng consydred/ they
thought it best naye. For renome ran in En
glande howe the Frenche kyng made a gret
assemble/ but no manne knewe whyther they
shulde drawe. The Englysshe men by ymа
ginacyon douted that they wolde cõe to Ca
lais: On the otherside they douted the scot
tes/ wherfore they wolde nat sende their men
of armes and archers out of the realme. Also
they knewe howe there were many menne of
warre on the see/ wherfore it was conuenyent
to kepe their owne realme/ Therfore the no
ble men of Englande sayd: Lette the duke of
Guerles alone/ he is wyght valyant and is a
stronge countre/ he wyll do well ynoughe a
gaynst the brabansoys. Also he shalbe confor
ted by ꝑ almayns if nede be/ for they be alyed
with hym and his neyghbours. They haue
bene with hym or this agaynst the Frenche
men. Thus the maters wente in Englande/
but they within the towne of Graue endured
the payne/ with lautes and sore scrimmyssh yng
They of Brabante deuysed whyle they laye
at the siege/ to make a bridge of tymbre ouer
the ryuer of Meuse/ therby to entre in to the
duchy of Guerles: And to ouer ronne the cõ
trey/ and to kepe that no vitayle shulde come
to the towne of Graue. And therby to besege
it bothe before and behynde/ and on all par
tes/ to kepe it fro vitayling/ for they had men
nowe so to do. They sette many carpentars
a worke with all dylygence/ and they dyde so
moche that their worke was so forwarde/ ꝑ
the bridge was nere ouer the water within a
speares cast. The duke of Guerles had per
fite knowledge of the makyng of this bridge
and dyde lette them alone tyll it was nyghe
made. But whan he sawe it was nerehande
fynysshed/ than he came before it with gon
nes and other artillarye: And shotte fyre to
the bridge/ in suche wise/ that the bridge was
brente and broken/ and the brabansoys loste
all their labour/ wherwith they were sore dis
pleased/ and than toke counsayle what was
best for them to do.

Howe the brabansoys passed the ryuer throughe the towne of Rauesten/ ouer the bridge there/ and so entred in to Guerles. Than the duke departed fro Nimay with thre hundred speares/ and came agaynst thẽ and discomfyted them bytwene Rauesten and the towne of Graue.

Cap. Cxxxvi.

A Thre lytell leages fro ꝑ towne of Graue is the castell of Rauesten/ parteynynge to the lorde of Bourne/ who was gouuerne and bayle of the duchy of Brabant. He was desyred by the duchesse counsayle & by other lordes and knyghtes/ that he shulde open the towne of Rauesten/ and suffre their hoost to

hoſte to paſſe thꝛoughe/ to entre in to the coun
trey of Guerles / And at their delꝛes he was
content. The duke of Guerles lyenge at Ny
may was ſurely infourmed (by ſuche eſpyall as
he had) howe the lozde of Bourne wolde gyue
his enemyes fre paſſage to entre into his coun
trey / thꝛough the towne of Rauelten / wherof
he was penſyue and malecolyous / foꝛ he ſawe
well he had nat men pnowe to reſiſte the puy
ſaunce of Bꝛabante / foꝛ they were well a.xl.
thouſande menne one and other. On this the
duke had many pmagynactions. And fynally
all thynges conſydꝛed / he determyned in his
mynde to aſſemble all his men togyder and
to take the feldes / and to come towardes the
towne of Graue / to the entente that if they of
Bꝛabant entred in to Guerles / than he wolde
entre in to Bꝛabant. Foꝛ he thought ſurely nat
to be incloſed within the walles of any towne.
Than the duke ſpake to the lozde of Gheſtne /
a great baron of Guerles / who was his pꝛin
cypall counſaylour / and ſhewed hym his ſayd
mynde and entente. And fyrſte this lozde was
nat of the oppynon that the duke ſhulde take
the feldes with ſo ſmall a nombꝛe. Well quod
the duke / and what ſhall I do than? Shall I
ſuffre my ſelfe to be incloſed in one of my to
wnes? and in the meane tyme they ſhall bꝛenne
and eyple my countrey. That ſhulde be ouer
dere to me to abyde. I make a vowe to godde
and to our lady quod the duke / I wyll dꝛawe
in to the feldes / and reſyſt my domage as nere
as I may. And as he oꝛdeyned ſo he dyd. The
nexte moꝛnyng he departed fꝛo Nymay (after
he had ben at churche / and made his offꝛynge
to our lady of Nymay) Than he and his men
dꝛanke a lytell / and ſo mounted on their hoꝛ
ſes. He was a thꝛe hundꝛed ſpeares / rather leſſe
than mo / and tooke the feldes / and dꝛewe to
wardes their enemyes the nexte way. Beholde
what a great cozage this duke was of. Some
ſayd it was a great outrage. Howbeit he lyke
a cozagyous knyght full of comefoꝛte ſayde.
On on foꝛwarde in the name of god and ſaynt
Geoꝛge agaynſte our enemyes / foꝛ I had ra
ther dye in the felde with honoure / than with
dyſhonour to be cloſed within a towne. With
hym was the lozde of Gheſtne / a balyant and
a ſage knyght / chefe ruler of his armye / and
the lozde of Hauſeberth / the lozde of Hutkeim
ſir Oſtes lozde of Ualꝛe / & dyuers other good
knyghtes and ſquyers of balyaunt cozage.

The ſame daye that the duke of Guer
les was in the feldes early in the moꝛ
nyng / the ſeneſchall of Bꝛabant with his men
knyghtes / ſquyers / and men of the good to
nes in Bꝛabant / by the conſente of the lozde of
Bourne / paſſed the ryuer by the bꝛidge of Ra
uelten / to the nombꝛe of ten thouſande men.
The ſeneſchall of Bꝛabante / the lozde of Ly
gnier / the lozde of Bourguenall / the lozde of
Gence and other / were ryght ioyfull whanne
they ſawe they were ouer the ryuer of Meuſe.
They ſaid than amonge themſelfe / howe they
wolde go the ſame day and make a courſe be
foꝛe Nymay / and burne the mylles and ſaw
bours and the villages there about. but ſoone
after that they herde other tydynges by their
foꝛe ryders / ſuche as they had ſent to diſcouer
the countrey. Than tydinges alſo came to the
duke of Guerles / howe a ten thouſande of his
enemyes were paſſed the ryuer of Meuſe / at
the bꝛidge of Rauelten. Than the duke ſtode
in a ſtaye / and toke counſayle what was beſte
to do. Some were foꝛ abaſhed bycauſe they
were but a handefull of men to the regarde of
their enemyes / who were thurty oꝛ.xl. againſt
one. Some ſayde / howe myght endure thꝛe
hundꝛed ſpeares agaynſte ten oꝛ twelue thou
ſande men. It lyeth nat in our puyſſaunce to
ouercome them. But it lyeth well in their po
wer ſoone to ouercome vs. Some knyghtes
came to the duke / and counſayled him to dꝛawe
towardes Graue. Thanne the duke ſayde he
wolde nat / foꝛ in no wyſe he wolde be cloſed in
any towne that he hadde / but ſayde ſurely he
wolde go and fyght with his enemyes / foꝛ his
cozage he ſayd gaue hym to dyſcomfyte them.
and ſaid as he dyd befoꝛe / that rather he wold
dye with honour / than to lyue with ſhame. We
ſhall quod he this day ouercome our enemies /
Wherby we ſhall haue greate pꝛofyte and ho
noure. Therfoꝛe all that loue me / ſet foꝛwarde
and folowe me quyckly.

The wozdes that the duke ſpake incoꝛa
ged all his men / and ſpecyally ſuche as
herde hym / and euery man ſhewed ſemblante
to be of great cozage to fight. euery man made
hym redy and laced on his baſnet / and gyrte
their hoꝛſes / and ſet them ſelfe in good aray to
gyther / and rode foꝛthe an eaſy paſſe to kepe
their hoꝛſes well bꝛethed. there were certayne
newe knightes made. Thus they rode in good

arape to wardes Rauesten. By that tyme the brabansops were ouer the ryuer. Thanne tydynges came to the Seneschall of Brabante/ how the duke of Guerles was in the felde/ and so nere them that incontynent they shulde mete togyder. Suche as herde those tydinges first had meruayle of that aduenture. Than they beleued surely that for euery man that the duke of Guerles had/ that he had been syre. Than they rested to sette them selfe in ordre/ but they had no leyser. For therwith came on them the duke of Guerles with his route close togyder/ as faste as spurres wolde dryue their hozses/ crienge their crye/ our lady of Guerles/ with their speares in the restes. There was a squier of Guerles greatly to be praysed/ for the great desyre that he had to exalte his renome. he galoped before all the batayle/ and was the firste that iusted/ and entred in amõge his enemies. the squier was called Arnolde Wozdec. With that courle he bare one to the erthe rudely/ I canne nat tell if euer he was releued or nat/ for the preasse was so greate/ that harde it was/ if one were downe to be releued agayn/ without it were by great helpe. At this first rencountre there were of the brabansops a fire scoze downe to the erthe. There were many beaten downe/ and small defence made by the Brabansops/ for they were sodenly taken. and so shulde men of warre do/ that thinke to do domage to their enemyes. For the brabansops for all that they were so greate a nombre/ and so many great men/ yet they were so farre a sonder/ and out of arape/ that they coulde nat gette to gyther in ordre of bataple/ but their batayle was pearsed throughe and sparkled a brode/ some here and some there/ so that the lozdes of Brabante coulde nat come to their owne men/ nor their menne to theym. And suche as were behynde/ whanne they herde the noyse and bzewte/ and sawe ye dust and powder ryse/ it semed to them properly that the boyce of the dyscomfeture came on theym/ and howe all their company were ouercome. So that the feare therof caused them to tourne and to flye towardes Rauesten agayne/ and some toke the ryuer at aduenture bothe a foote and a hozsebacke/ without serchyng of the depenesse/ or without haupnge of any gupde. And as they fledde they thought euer their enemyes had been at their backes. By this dyscomfeturynge of them selfe there were drowned and in parell/ moe than twelue hundred in the ryuer of Wense/ for they lepte in one vpon a nother lyke beestes/ without ordre or reason. And some of the great lozdes and baronce of Brabante/ whome I wyll nat name/ for it shulde be blame to them and to their heyres/ to be noted to flye away so shamefully/ and to seke for their sauegarde nother the right passage of the ryuer/ nor yet the brgh way to the towne of Rauesten/ but rather other straunge wayes to flye fro their enemyes. In this myschefe fell that daye the chyualrye of Brabante/ bytwene the towne of Graue and Rauesten many were slayne and taken/ For suche as came to raunsome yelded lightly/ and the almayns were gladde to take them/ for the profyte that they thought to haue by theym. And suche as retourned to the lodgynges before Graue abasshed them that were there spenge at the spege/ for they came lyke men clene discomfyted. They came flyenge so faste that they lacked bzethe/ so that they coulde skante speke any wozde (that they sayd/ was) Syre gette vs all hence for we be all dyscomfyted/ there is no comefozte. Whan they in the boost vnderstode the trouthe of the mater/ and sawe their company in that case/ they were than so abasshed & strayed/ that they had no leyser nor pupssaunce to take their owne goodes/ nor to take downe their tentes nor pauylyons/ nor to trusse hozse/ carte/ nor wagon/ but sodaynely departed without byddynge adewe/ and lefte all behynde. They were so affrayde that they made no countenaunce of abydynge. They toke with theym nother bytayle nor carpage/ but suche as hadde hozses lepte on them/ and fledde a waye towardes the dukes wodde/ or els towardes Hondan/ or to the mount sayncte Geruays/ or to Gertras/ and Wozdec. They had none other care but to saue them selfe fro their enemyes. And if they within the garyson of Graue had soner knowen of the dyscomfeture/ it had been greatly for their profyte/ and had slayne or taken many of their enemyes in their flyenge/ but they knewe it nat tyll it was late/ howbeit whan they issued out they founde great plentye of Tentes and pauylyons/ and prouysion of engyns/ gonnes/ and artyllery/ which they brought in to their towne at good leyser/ for there were none to saye them naye. Thus brake vp the siege of Graue to the great domage of all the brabansoys/ wherof great bzute ranne in dyuers countreys/ howe that a handfull

handefull of men diſcomfyted .xl. thouſande/ and reyſed the ſiege. there was taken the lorde of Bourgurnall/ and the lorde of Lupey/ and other to the nombre of ſeuentene baners/ they were hanged before the ymage of our lady of Aymay/ for a perpetuall memory.

Howe the duke of Guerles after he had diſcomfyted the brabanſoys he wente agayne to Aymaye. And howe tydynges came to the frenche kynge/ and howe the kyng ſente ambaſſadours to the kyng of Almayne.

Cap. C. xxxvii.

I haue great payne to recorde or to wryte of this ſhamefull diſcomfyture of the brabanſoys/ for blemyſſhynge of their honoures. but becauſe I promyſed/ and ſaid in the begynnyng of my boke/ that if I ſhall wryte truely this hyſtory/ I muſt make true relacion of the mater/ who ſo euer it do touche. Nowe to procede further/ the ponge duke of Guerles had and optayned this iourney/ in the yere of our lorde god a thouſande/ thre hundred/ fourſcore and eyght/ aboute Mawdlyn tyde/ in the moneth of July. And whanne this diſcomfyture and chaſe was paſſed/ and the felde clene delyuered (whiche was done within the ſpace of two houres) Than the guerlops aſſembled to gyder in the felde/ and made good chere and were ioyfull. They had good cauſe ſo to be/ for their good aduenture/ for they had as many priſoners or mo/ than they were them ſelfe in nombre. Than their haraudes ſought out the dede bodyes of bothe partyes/ and amonge other there was ſlayne a ponge man/ ſonne to the erle of Namure/ called Walleyer of Colles/ lorde of Balaſter/ of whoſe dethe the duke of Guerles was ſory and ſore diſpleaſed/ and that he ſhewed well/ for greatly he complayned his deth/ and ſayde/ howe the dethe of a ponge knyght diſpleaſed hym greatly/ for he was a ryght luſty knyght/ pleaſaunte and ioly/ and alſo the yere before he had ben in Pruſe with the duke of Guerles. Some counſayled the duke to retourne to the towne of Graue/ and there to refreſſhe theym/ and to brynge thyder their priſoners. Nay nat ſo quod the duke/ for at my departynge fro Aymay I auowed to our lady there that if I ſpedde well/ to returne thyder to offre to our lady/ wherfore I wyll with a mery chere that we all retourne thyder/ and thanke our lady/ who hath ſent vs the victory of our enemyes. No man durſte ſaye nay agaynſt the dukes mynde. And ſo they rode thyder a good pace/ it was but two good leages fro thence as the batayle was/ anone they came thyder. Whan tydynges came to Aymay of the trouthe of that buſynes/ men/ women/ and children were ioyfull/ and the clergy iſſued out and receyued the duke with great ioy. and the duke of Guerles incontynent with his knyghtes wente to the churche/ where the ymage of our lady was/ in whome the duke had great affyaunce/ and there in the chapell he was vnarmed of all his peces in to his doublet/ and gaue all his armure to the churche/ in the honour of our bleſſed lady/ thankynge her of the iourney that he hadde atchyued. And there all the penons of the lordes that were taken that day were hanged vp before our lady. I cannot tell if they be there as yet or nat. Than the duke went to his lodgynge/ and ſo dyd euery manne with their priſoners/ for they thought ſurely they ſhulde well paye for their ſcot/ therfore they made good chere.

Great bruteſyd abrode of this duke of Guerles/ who had thus ouer throwen the brabanſoys/ wherby he was more douted than he was before. The duches of Brabante (who laye at the dukes wood with her trayne) whan ſhe ſawe howe euell the mater wente agaynſt her/ and that the ſyege of Graue was rayſed/ ſhe was ſore diſpleſed and good cauſe why/ for it touched her nere. Than ſhe ſette a garyſone at the dukes wood/ to kepe frontier there/ and ſo retourned through Champayne and came to Bruſelles/ and wrote often tymes to the duke of Burgoyne/ aduertyſynge hym of her eſtate/ for all her hope of recouerance was in hym. ye may well knowe and byleue that this diſcomfyture of the brabanſoys was ſoone knowen in the frenche kinges courte/ but

lorde Mountforde & the lorde of Waleftroit/ and so sayled downe the ryuer of Loyre/ and passed vnder the bridge of Bloys/ and so went a longe the ryuer to Nauntes in his owne countrey. ¶ Nowe let vs leaue to speke of the duke of Bretayne/ and as farre as I couthe here he helde well the couenaunte made betwene the frenche kynge and hym/ and dyd nothyng after to be remembred tyll I closed this boke/ I can nat tell what he wyll do hereafter/ if he do I shall speke therof accordyng as I shall knowe. Nowe I wyll retourne to the frenche kynge/ who prepared for his tourney in to Guerles.

Whan the lorde of Coucy was come to the kyng to Montreau/ he shewed the kyng & his counsayle howe he had sped/ and howe that all the knyghtes & squyers in Bare/ in Lourayne/ in Burgoin/ & to the ryuers of Ryne and Some were redy to go with hym. the kyng had therof gret ioy/ & sayd by the grace of god he wolde the same yere se his cosyns the duke of Iulliers and Guerles. Fyrste they determyned whiche way they shulde take/ for the surest & shortest way (some sayd) that right way was to go by Thyerasche and to passe by the frontier of Hanolt/ and of Liage/ & to passe through Brabãt/ and so to entre in to Guerles/ and to passe the ryuer of Meuse at Trecte/ and so to entre into the lande of Iulliers/ and fro thence in to Guerles. Of this determynacion the kynge and his counsayle wrote to the duches of Brabant and to the countrey/ shewynge them the ways that the french kynge purposed to kepe. It pleased ryght well the duches/ but the countrey wolde nat agre therto/ but sayd howe the kynge and the frenchmen shulde haue no passage that way for it shulde be greatly to their domage. The good townes and the knyghtes of Brabante were of that opynyon/ and sayd to their lady the duches/ that if she cõsented to suffre the frenche men to entre into her countrey/ they wolde neuer ayde nor socoure her agaynst the duke of Guerles/ but surely they sayd they wolde close their townes/ and go and defende their landes agaynst the frenchmen/ sayeng howe they shulde lese more by their passinge through their countrey/ than if their enmyes were in the myddes therof. whan the duches perceyued the wylles and ententes of the people/ as well knightes as other/ she sawe no remedy/ but to dyssymule the matter. than she charged sir Johan Ogyer and syr Johan of Graue/ and Nycholas de la Woney/ to go in to Fraunce to speke with the frenche kyng & with the duke of Burgoyne/ to excuse the countrey of Brabant/ that he shulde nat take his voyage that ways/ for they of the countrey thinke they shulde be sore greued and dissroyed/ if he shulde passe through their countrey/ and she cõmaunded them to saye/ that as for herselfe she coude be well content therwith/ and had done all that she coulde that it myght so haue ben. They accordynge to their ladyes wyndo departed fro Bruxelles & rode to warbeq Barys/ and dyd so moche by their iournays that they came to Mouftreau fault yon/ where the kynge and his vncles were/ and there was nothynge spoken of/ but of their comynge in to Guerles. The duchesse ambassadours fyrste came to that duke of Burgoyne/ and shewed hym their letters and their message. And he at the requeft of his aunte was meane to the kynge and to his counsayle/ and also the lorde of Coucy dyd what he myght. In so moche that their fyrste purpose/ as passynge through Brabant to entre in to Guerles was broken/ and the duches and the countrey excused. Than it was accorded that they shulde go along the realme/ whiche way they sayd was moste honourable for the kynge/ and also for the Brabansoys/ bycause of their lordshyp/ and other.

Than it was concluded/ and such named as shulde go in vawarde. There were ordeyned .x.rb. hundred hewers of woodes/ bedgers & dykers/ to make playne the wayes. The frenche men had way good enough thorough the realme tyll they came to Ardayne. Than their good wayes began to fayle/ than they founde hygh woes dyuers and sauage/ and valles/ rockes/ & mountaynes. These pyoners were sente before the vawarde with a thousande speares/ to abuyde the best passage for the kyng and for the hoost/ and for their carryage/ wherof they had .v.rii. M. cartes besyde other carpages/ and they to hewe downe the hygh woes of Ardane and to make them playne/ and to make newe ways where neuer none was before/ for no man passed that way. Euery man toke great payne to do their dylygence/ and specyally suche as were aboute the kynge/ for they had neuer so great affection to go in to Flaunders/ as they had than to go into Guerles. and the lorde of Coucy was sent to Auignon/ to hym that called hym selfe pope Clement/ I knowe nat for what cause/ & the

bicount

dercount of Meaulx/sir Johan Roy/and the lorde de la Bone/ had the gouernaūce of his men tyll he retourned agayne.

Nowe let vs somwhat speke of sir Guy of Dacourt & of maister pures Ostent who were sent to the kynge of Almayne. They rode so long that they came to Coualence where the kyng was. And whan they hadde refresshed the they went towardes the kyng/ who was enformed of their comyng before: and he had great desyre to knowe what entent they came for. He assembled his counsayle/ & than these two lordes came before the kyng of Almayn and curtesly dyd salute hym & delyuerd their letters of credence fro the french kyng. ỳ kyng tooke & redd them/ & than regarded the sayd sir Guy/ & we shall se your charge/ ỳ knyght spake right sagely & by great leyser: & shewed the kyng & his counsayle how the frenche kyng w his army royall wyll come in to the frōtyers of Almayne/ nat to make any warre agaynst hym/ but agaynst his enemy ỳ duke of Guerles/ who had highly defied the kyng their maister with shamfull wordes/ & out of the style of all other defyaūces/ ỳ whiche the frenche kyng nor his counsayle can in no wyse suffre. Wherfore sir q they/ the kyng requyreth you/ as ye be a noble kyng & of his blode and he of yours/ as all ỳ worlde knoweth: ỳ ye wyll nat fortyfye/ ayde nor mentayne the pryde of this duke: but ye to holde ỳ aliances and cōfyrmacions tofore done & sworne betwene thempire of Almayne & the realme of Fraūce/ ỳ whiche he wyll fermly kepe on his pte: Than ỳ kyng answered & said. Sir Guy we are enformed ỳ our cosyn the frēche kyng wyll assemble together great nōbre of people He neded nat for so smal a mater to assemble suche people/ & to spende so moche to seke his ennemy so fast of/ for if he had desired me/ w̄ lesse trauayle I coude well haue caused ỳ duke of Guerles to haue cōe to mercy & reason. Sir q the knyght/ we thanke you ỳ it pleaseth you to say so/ but the kyng our maister regardeth but lytell his expenses nor trauell of his men/ but he regardeth his honour/ & to this his counsayle is agreed. & syth ỳ you nor your counsayle is nat myscontent with our maister (who wyll in no wyse violate nor breke ỳ ordinaūces & confirmacions of olde tyme made betwene ỳ two realmes of Fraūce & almayn) but kepe & mentayne it/ on the payne ỳ is ordayned/ therfore sir we be sent nowe to you. Well q the kyng I beleue you well. & as for your cosyn ỳ frenche kyng I shalbe welcome in to these grees/ as for me I thynke nat to shewe. Therwith the messagers were right ioyous/ & thought they had sped very well. than they desyred to haue letts agayne/ ỳ kyng said they shulde haue. That day they taryed & dyned with the kynge & had good chere/ & after dyner they wente to their lodgynges. Wherto I shulde I make long processe/ they sped so well that they had letters & suche answere as pleased thē well. Than they toke leaue of ỳ kyng of Almayne/ & retourned the same way they came. Nowe let vs speke of the frēche kyng.

Howe the erle of Bloys sent to the frenche kyng. ii. C. speares/ & the duke of Lorayne and the lorde Henry of Bare came to the kyng. And howe the dukes of Julyers and Guerles knewe that the frenche kyng came on them. Cap. C.xxxix.

TO accōplysshe this voyage/ euery lorde in Fraūce apelled the selfe of euery thyng nedefull. ỳ lordes/ knightes & squiers/ & other men of warre departed fro their owne places/ as well fro Auergne/ rouergne/ quercy/ lymosyn/ poytou/ & xayntou: as fro Bretayne/ normādy/ antou/ tourayn/ & chāpayn/ and fro all the iurisdictiōs of ỳ realme of Frāce. Fewest men came out of fardest cōtrees and ỳ most nōbre out of Burgoyn/ picardy/ bare/ & lorayne. & because they of the body of Fraūce were in the waye/ therfore they were best trauelled. It was ordayned by ỳ kyng & his counsayle/ ỳ no man shulde take any thyng in ỳ cōtree thout payeng therfore/ to thētent that ỳ poore men shulde nat be greued. but for all ỳ ordinaūce/ ỳ whiche was well knowen and spred abrode/ & vpon payne of great punysshyon. yet the men of warre ofte tymes sore trauelled ỳ cōtrees as they passed through/ they coude nat abstayne/ for they were but yuell payde of their wages/ and they must nedes lyue. That was their excuse whan they were blamed for their pyllage by the constable/ marshalles/ or capitaynes. The erle of

Bloys

Bloyes was sente vnto / to sende two hun-
dred speares of chosen men / and was prom-
sed well to be payde. I can nat saye howe he
was daite with all / but he sente to serue the
kynge two hundred speares / out of the coun
tie of Bloyes. And capitayns of them was /
the lorde of Vyenne / sir Guyllyam of Saynt
Martyne / sir Wyllyam of Chaumont / and
the lorde Montigny: these foure had the go-
uernaunce of the erle of Bloys bande. They
drewe lytell and lytell towardes Champayne
thyder they were ordayned to go. Than the
Frenche kynge departed from Moustreul
Faulte yon / and tooke the waye to Chalons
in Champayne. As than the duke of Berrey
was nat come / for or his departyng he loked
to here tidynges fro sir Helyon of Lignache
whom he had sente to the duke of Lancastre
to Bayon / to haue to his wyfe ye dukes dough
ter: as ye haue herde before. But he had her
nat / For the duke of Lancastre dissymuled
with hym / and helde styll the knyght with
hym at Bayon. He treated with two parties
but he rather enclyned to the kynge of Ca-
stylle than to the duke of Berrey / and in lyke
wyse so dyde the lady Custaunce his wyfe.
The duke made good chere to bothe parties
to the entent to enflame them the fouer to the
marryage of his doughter. The kyng of Ca-
stylls messangers sore trauepled in treatyng
of this marryage: They rested nat to ryde in
and out betwene the parties: They offered
great gyftes to those messangers / but they of
fred nothynge to sir Helyon of Lignacke.
Whan it was knowen in ye realme of Fraūce
that the kyng was at Chalous on his waye
towardes the duchy of Guyenne / than euery
man departed fro their houses and drewe af
ter the kyng. Than came the duke of Berrey
and lodged at Espinay / and the duke of Bur
bone at another place / the erle of Marche / ye
erle Dolphyn of Auuergne / the erle of Saynt
Pole / and the erle of Toutayne. And with
the kynge was the duke of Burgoyne / the
duke of Lorayne / the duke of Tourayne / the
constable of Fraunce / sir Guye of Tremoile
sir Johan of Beull: And the countrey about
Chalous and Raynes / more than .xii. leages
all about was clene eaten vp with the men of
warre. As than the lorde of Coucy was nat
retourned fro the pope: Than retourned sir
Wyllyam of Nacourt and mayster Pues Or-
rit / and founde the kynge and his vncles at
Chalous. The kyng was ioyous of their co
myng and demaunded tydynges. They shew
ed the kyng what they had founde done /
and sayd howe the kynge of Almayne had
made them good chere / and sayd to the kyng.
Sir whan the kyng had reed the copye of ye
defyaunce that the duke of Guerles had sent
to you / bothe he and his coūsayle were right
content therwith: and sayd howe it was done
by great presumpcyon and pryde. And he can
patceyue none other / but he and his coūsayle
is well content with your enterprise / and ye
shall haue no let by hym: & the kynge is well
content to vpholde and mayntayne the auci-
ent alyances that is betwene the empyre and
Fraūce: he sayth ye shall haue no dout ther
of. Herof the Frenche kyng was right ioyfull
howe be it some sayd / that whether the kynge
of Almayne wolde or nat / the kyng had pur-
sumed sufficient to do what he wolde with-
out daūger of all hym. than the kyng ordey-
ned to departe fro Chalous in Champayne /
& dyepted & toke his way right to great Pre.

Whan the kynge came to great Pre he ta-
ried ther a fyue dayes / he coude make no gret
iourneys / there was so moche people before
hym and behynde / and rounde about hym / so
that he was constrayned to ryde esely to ha
ue good lodgyng / and because of the great p
uyson that folowed after the hoost. Fro the
first compayny to the last cōtayned .xxiiii. leag-
ges of that countrey / & styll dayly came peo-
ple. The cite of great Pre receyued the kynge
in to his towne and countre / and offred all at
the kynges pleasure. The kyng was well co
tent with hym / & therle was apoynted to the
vantgard. Thyder came to the kyng ye duke
of Lorayne & sir Henry of Bare / with a faire
company of men of armes. The duke of Lo-
raine was ordayned to be with his sonne the
lorde of Coucy / & sir Henry of Bare to abide
with the kyng. the pioners were sore beseyed
in the forest of Ardayne / to cutte downe wode
and to make wayes where neuer non was be
fore / they had great payne to fyll the valeys
to make the waye playne for the carryage to
passe. There were a thre .M. that dyde no-
thyng els. Whan ye duches of Brabāt knewe
surely howe the kyng was on his waye / and
approched the lordshyp of Bolayne / she was

therof

therof ryght ioyfull/ for ſhe thought at that voyage ſhe ſhulde be well reuenged of the duke of Guerles/ & howe the Frenche kyng ſhulde bryng hym to reaſon. And alſo his father the duke of Julyers/ who had done to her many anoyaunces: Than ſhe departed fro Bruſelles/ and in her company the erle of Hammes in Arthain/ the lorde of Boceiates and dyuers other/ and tooke her waye to Liſſenbourge to ſe the kynge and to ſpeke with hym. She paſſed ye ryuer of Meuſe and the ryuer of Huy/ and at laſte came to Ballonques and there taryed the kynge/ for he ſhulde paſſe therby/ and ſo he dyde: For whan he departed Graunt Pre/ he paſſed the ryuer of Meuſe at Moylay with all his hooſt/ & rode ſmall iourneys. Than tydynges came in to the duchy of Julyers and in to Guerles/ that the Frenche kynge was comynge on them/ with a hundred thouſande men: And that he had neuer ſo moche people togyder before. He was nat ſo great a company whanne he came to Burbourc/ where he thought the Engliſſhe army had ben gretter than he founde theym. The duke of Julyers than began to dout/ but the duke of Guerles made nothyng therof/ but ſayde. Lette them come/ the further they come the more werper ſhall they be and they and their carrages ſhall ware feble and their prouiſyons ſhall waſte and wynter ſhall drawe on/ and I am in a ſtronge countrey. They ſhall nat entre at their eaſe. They ſhall recule backe ſomtyme otherwiſe than by the ſowne of the trumpettes/ and it ſhall behoue them to be alwayes togyder/ which they can nat be/ if they wyll entre in to my coũtre: And if they diſtrought and be out of ordre/ they ſhall ſoone be taken vp whether they wyll or nat. Howe be it to ſaye the trouthe quod the duke/ our coſyn of Fraũce is of a good corage: he ſheweth and dothe as I ſhulde do. Thus the duke of Guerles deuyſed amonge his knyghtes/ but the duke of Julyers was ſore aball hed/ for he ſawe well the French kynge wolde his lande were but drente and loſte. Than he toke counſayle of his brother the Archebyſſhoppe of Colonge and of his coſyn the byſſhop Leage/ ſir Arnolde of Hoznes/ howe he ſhulde do to ſaue his lande fro brennyng and exylyng. Theſe two prelates counſayled hym and ſayd. how it muſt nedes behoue hym to hũble hym ſelfe to the Frenche kynge and to his vncles. The duke ſayde/ he was well content ſo to do.

∴ ∴

Howe ſir Helion of Lignacke made his repoꝛte to the duke of Berrey And howe the lorꝺes of Scotlande aſſembled togyder in the Cytie of Berdane/ and determyned to reyſe vp an army to entre in to Englande And of an Engliſſhe ſquyer/ who was takenne by the Scottes/ who knewe the ſecretneſſe of bothe realmes Englande and Scotlande. Cap. C.xl.

Than by the counſayle of the byſſhoppe of Treyt and by the aduyſe of the byſſhoppe of Colonge/ ye byſſhoppe of Laege was ſente to the French kynge to treate for ye duke of Julyers. The kynge approched/ but he paſſed nat two or thre leages a daye/ for his trayne was great bytwene Moylay and oure lady of Amount/ where as the duke of Berey and all his route/ with mo than fyue hundred ſperes was lodged. Thyder came to the duke of Berrey ſir Helyon of Lignacke/ and ſir Wyllyam his brother. Sir Wyllyam came fro the ſiege before Uanchador/ for the duke had ſente for hym/ and the duke of Burbone had ſente for ſir Johan Boeſme launce. and they had lefte ſtyll at the ſiege all their companyes/ and had lefte for capitaynes ſir Johan Butlere and ſir Lopes Dambier: And ſir Helyon of Lignacke came out of Galcon fro Bayon/ fro the duke of Lancaſtre. The duke of Berrey made hym good chere/ and demaunded tydynges. Sir Helyon ſhewed hym and ſayd. Sir/ the kyng of Caſtyle ſeketh on the duke of Lancaſtre to haue peace with hym/ and treateth ſore to haue his ſone the prince of Wales/ to marry with the dukes doughter. With that worde the duke of Berrey was penſyfe and ſayd. Sir Helion/ yet I ſhall ſende you ones agayne to knowe more cer-

moze certayne / and the byll hoppe of Poy-
cters with you / but as at this tyme we haue
ynoughe to do. Also the same weke the lozde
of Coucy retourned fro Jurgnon and came
to the kyng to Irdane / euery man was glad
of his cõmynge.

Ye haue herde here befoze / how we kyn-
ge Richarde of Englande had some
trouble: He agaynst his vncles / and
his vncles agaynst hym / with other dyuers
incydentes / as by the duke of Irelande and
other / and many knyghtes in Englãde bred
and beheeded / and the archebyll hop of yozke
brother to the lozde Neuell / was at a poynte
to haue loste his benefyce. And by the newe
counsaylers about the kyng / and by the arch
byll hoppe of Caunterbury: the lozde Ne-
uell (who had ben the chefe ruler and kepar
of the fronters of Nozthumberlande agaynst
the scottes fyue yeres togyder) was as than
put out of wages. He had befoze euery yere
fyrtene thousande frankes / out of the countie
of yozke and byll hopzike of Durham. And
there was sette in his stede the lozde Henry
Percye / and he hadde to wages by the yere
but a.xi. thousande Frankes. Wherof other
lozdes of his lygnage / thoughe they were of
his kynne / yet they hadde therat great enuy
and indignacyon one agaynst another: And
all this knewe ryght well the scottes. Than
the lozdes and knyghtes of Scotlande de-
termyned ones agayne to reyse vp an army /
and to make a toutney in to Englande. they
sayde it was as than good tyme and houre /
foz they sawe the Englysshmen were nat all
of one accozde. And where as often tymes
past / they had receyued great buffettes / than
they sayd it was good tyme foz them to be re
uenged. And to the entent that their purpose
shulde nat be knowen / they ozdayned a feest
to be holden on the fronter of the wylde scot-
tes / at a cytie called Berdane / where assem-
bled in maner all the lozdes of Scotlande.
At this feest they concluded and made full
promyse / that in the myddes of Auguste / the
yere of our lozde god / a thousande thze hun-
dred fourscoze and eight / They shulde mete
all with their puyssaunce on the fronters of
Gales / at a castell in the hyghe fozest called
Gedeours. Thus at that tyme they depar-
ted eche fro other. And of this couenaũt there
was none of them that made their kyng pry-
uy therto / Foz they sayd amonge them selfe /
their kyng was no manne of warre. There
came to Gedeours at the day apoynted. first
the erle James Duglas / sir Johan of Mo-
rette / erle of Marche and of Donbare / sir
Wyllyam de Fin / and sir Stephyn Erle of
Monstres / sir Jacebauce of Duglas / sir Ro
bert Juerteque / sir Marke Odzemmeu / sir
Wyllyam Lynsey / & sir James his brother /
Thomas of Berry / sir Alysaunder Lynsey /
the lozde of Sechyn / sir Johan of Sobelas
sir Patryke of Dõbare / sir Johñ Sencleire /
sir Patryke of Hotcbozne / sir Johan sonne
to ꝑ lozde Womogomerry / sir Adam of glas
duyn / sir Wyllyam Reburyn / sir Wyllyam
Stonache / sir Johñ of Halpe bzeton / sir Al
bert / and sir Robert Lander / sir Stephyn fre
seyle / sir Alysander Ramsey and sir Johan
his brother / sir Wyllyh Wozberech / sir Wa
bert Herr / sir Wylliam of Waleran / sir Johñ
Amoustan / and Daup his sonne / Robert Co
lennsey / and dyuers other knightes and squi
ers of Scotlande. In thzescoze yere befoze
there was nat assembled togyder in Scot-
lande suche a nombze of good mẽ / they were
a.xii.hũdzed speares and .xl. thousande men
besyde with their archers: but i tyme of nede
the scottes can lytell skyll with their bowes.
They rather beare axes / wherwith they gyue
great strokes.

Than they were thus mette togyder
in the marchelle of Gedeours they
were merry / and sayd / they wolde ne
uer entre againe in to their owne houses tyll
they had ben in Englande and done suche de
des there / that it shulde be spoken of .xx. yere
after. And to the entent to make sure poynt-
ment / they assigned a daye to mete at a chur-
che in a fayze lãde called zedon. Tidynges
came in to Nozthumberlande (as nothynge
can be hydde if men putte to their dilygence
to knowe) bothe to therle and to his chyldze /
to the seneschall of yozke / and to sir Mathue
Redman capitayne of Berwike / of this great
feest that had ben at Bzedane. And to therent
to knowe wherfoze it was / these lozdes sente
to serche couertly by heraudes & mynstrels.
The scottes coude nat do their maters so se-
cretly / but ꝑ lozdes of Englãde knewe howe
men rose in scotlãde / & how they shulde mete
agayne

agayne at Gedeours. Bute of this came to Newcastell vpontyne: And whan the lordes knewe of this/ euery man toke good hede to his charge/ and prouyded them selfe redy to assemble if nede were/ and this they dyde secretly/ bycause their enterprise shulde nat be broken. Euery man helde hym selfe in their owne houses/ and were determyned to mete togyder/ as soone as they knewe that the scottes came forwarde and sayd. If the scottes come forthe we shall haue knowlege therof/ If they drawe towards Carlyle we shall entre at another parte in to their countrey/ and we shall do them more dommage than they can do vs/ for their countrey is all open. We maye go where we lyst/ and our countre is strong/ and the townes and castelles well closed. And the better to knowe the state of the scottes/ they sent a gentylman of Englãde/ who knewe ryght well the marcheste of Scotlande/ and specially the forest of Gedeours where ỹ scottes shulde assemble. And the Englysh squyer went so forwarde/ that without espyeng he came to the churche of Zedon/ where the scottysh lordes were. And he entred in amonge them lyke one of their seruauntes/ and there he herde and knewe a great parte of thententes of the scottes. and at thende of their counsayle the squyer went to a tree where he hadde tyed his horse/ and thought to haue founde hym there/ but he was gone. for a scotte (who be great theues) had stollen hym awaye. He durste nat speke for hym/ but so went forthe a fote boted and spurred. And whan he was gone fro the churche two bowe shotte/ than there were two scottysh knyghtes deuysed betwene them selfe and sayd one to another. felowe/ I haue sene a marueyle/ beholde ponder a man gothe alone/ and as I thynke he hath lost his horse/ for he came by and spake no worde/ I wene he be none of our company/ lette vs ryde after hym to proue my sayeng. They rode after hym and soone ouertoke hym. Whanne he sawe them comynge/ he wolde gladly haue ben thens. They came to hym and demaunded whether he wolde and from whens he came/ and what he had done with his horse. He began to varry in his sayeng/ and answered nat directely to their purpole. They turned hym/ and sayde he shulde go and speke with their lordes. They brought hym again to the churche of Zedon/ and presented hym to the erle Douglas and to other lordes: they examyned hym and parceyued well he was an Englysh he man. Than they sayde they wolde knowe the trouthe why he came thyder. He was yuell wyllynge to shewe the trouthe/ but they handled hym in suche wise/ that he was fayne to shewe all the mater/ for they bare hym in hande/ without he wolde shewe the trouthe/ incõtynent he shulde lese his heed: and if he wolde shewe the trouthe/ he shulde haue none yuell. There they knewe by hym that the lordes of Northumberlande had sente hym thyder: to knowe the estate of their enterprise/ and whiche waye they wolde drawe. Herof the scottes were right ioyous/ and wolde nat for a great good/ but that they had spoken with this squyer. Than they demaunded agayne of hym/ in what parte the Englysh he lordes were/ and whyder there were any aparence that they wolde assemble togyder/ and what waye they wolde take to entre in to Scotlande: Outher by the see syde by Berwyke/ or els by Donbare: or els the highe waye by the countie of Monstres towarde Stretcelyn. The squyer answered and sayde. Sirs/ sithe it behoueth me to say the trouthe I shall.

Whan I departed from them fro Newcastell there was none aparence of their assemblyng/ but they be on a redynesse to departe/ as well to daye as to morowe. And as soone as they knowe that ye set forwarde and entre in to Englande/ they wyll nat come to mete with you/ for they be nat of ỹ power so to do/ nor to fyght with you/ sythe ye be so great a nombre/ as it is sayd in Englande that ye be. Why quod the erle of Noret: what nombre do they repute vs at? Sir quod he it is sayd howe ye be .xl. thousande men and .xii. hundred speares. And sir/ if ye take the waye in to Gales they wyll go by Berwike/ and so to Donbare/ to Edenborowe/ or els to Alquest. and if ye take nat that waye than they wyll go by Carlyle/ and in to the mountayns of ỹ countrey. Whan the lordes herde that/ eche of them regarded other. Than the Englysh he squyer was putte to the kepyng of the Constable of Gedeours/ and comaunded that he shulde be surely kepte: than in the same place they wente agayne to counsayle.

The lor-

The lordes of Scotlande were ryght ioyfull of that they knewe surely the entent of their ennemyes / and than they demaunded counsayle what waye was best for them to take. The moost wyse & best experte in warre spake fyrst / and that was sir Archanbas Duglas and therle of Fenne / sir Alysander Ramsey / sir Johan Saynt clere / and sir James Lynsey: They sayd for feare of faylynge of our entent / we counsayle that we make two armyes / to the entente that our ennemyes shall nat knowe whervnto to attende. And lette the moost parte of our hoost and carryage go by Carleon in Galles / and lette the other company (of a thre or four hundred speares and two thousade of other well horsed) drawe towardes Newcastell vpon Tyne / and passe the ryuer and entre in to the bysshoprike of Durham / and burne and eryle the countrey. We shall make a great dyscull in Englande or our ennemyes be prouyded / And if we se that they do folowe vs (as they wyll do) Than lette vs drawe all oure companyes togyder / and take a good place and fyght with them. We doute nat but we shall haue honoure. Than lette vs be reuenged of the dommages they haue done to vs. This counsayle was accepted / and ordayned that sir Archanbas Duglas / therle of Fenne / the erle of Surlancke / the erle of Monstres / the erle of Ware / therle of Astroderne / sir Stephyn of Fresyle / sir George of Donbare / and sixtene other great lordes of Scotlande shulde lede the moost parte of the armye towardes Carlyle. And the erle Duglas / sir Myge erle of Ware and of Donbare / and the erle Johan of Mozette. These thre to be capitaynes of thre hundred speares of chosen men / and of two thousande other men and archers / and they to go towardes Newcastell and entre in to Northumberlande. Thus these two hoostes departed eche from other / eche of them prayenge other / that if the Englysshmen folowed any of their armyes / nat to fyght with them / tyll bothe their armyes were ioyned togyder. Thus in a morynge they departed fro Gedeours and toke the feldes.

Howe the erle Duglas wanne the penon of sir Henry Percy / at the barryers before Newcastell vpon tyne: and howe the scottes brente the castell of Wondien / and howe sir Henry Percy and sir Rafe his brother toke a duyle to folowe the scottes to conquere agayne the penone that was lost at the scrimyll he. Cap. C.xli.

Whane the Englysshe lordes sawe that their squier retourned at agayne / at the tyme apoynted / & coud knowe nothynge what the scottes dyd / nor what they were purposed to do / than they thought well þ their squyer was taken. The lordes sent eche to other to be redy whan soeuer they shulde here that the scotts were a brode / as for their messanger they thought hym but lost. Nowe lette vs speke of the erle Duglas and other / for they had more to do than they that wente by Carlyle.

Whan the erles of Duglas / of Mozet / of de la Ware / and Donbare departed fro the great hoost: they toke their waye / thynkyng to passe the water / and to entre in to the bysshoprike of Durham / and to ryde to þ towne and than to retourne / brennyng and eryling the countrey / and so to come to Newcastell / and to lodge there in the towne in the dispite of all the Englysshe men. And as they determyned so they dyde assaye to putte it in vre / for they rode a great pase vnder couert / without doyng of any pyllage by the waye / or assautyng of any castell / towre / or house: But so came in to the lorde Percyes lande & passed the ryuer of Tyne without any let / a thre leages aboue Newcastell nat farre fro Bralpathe / and at last entred in to the bysshoprike of Durham / where they founde a good countrey. Than they beganne to make warre / to slee people and to brenne pyllages / and to do many sore displeasures. As at that tyme the erle of Northumberlande and the other lordes and knyghtes of that countrey knewe no thyng of their comyng. Whan tydynges cãe to Newcastell and to Durham / that the scottes were

ne here depart / and that they nyght well se by the fiers and smoke above in the countrey. The erle came to Newcastell and two fourneys and sente commaundement to every man to come to Newcastell / to pursue to Scotland / and shall sette it on fyre on my faith / quod sir Henry / ye maye be sure ye shall not passe the bounder of this countrey / but ye be met withall / in such wyse that ye shall make none assaute there. Well syr quod the erle Douglas / come this nyght to my lodgynge and seke for your penon / I shall sette it before my lodgynge / and yf ye wyll come to take it away. And than it was late and the lordes withdrewe to their lodgynges and refreshed them with such as they had. they had but fewe vyandes. They made their fyres good watche for they thought surely to be assayled / for the woordes they had spoken / but they were not. For syr Henry Percy was counsayled not soo to do. The nexte day the lordes departed and returned to Newcastell and so entered a certayn and a towne called Houcham / where the sayd Henry was lorde / and made a right good banquet. Than the lordes asked / how they called those bridges / and how farre they were from Durham / and how farre it was to Durham. Than they answered and sayd / the nexte bridge is called Framwelgate / and the seconde Elvet bridge. Than the lordes were well content / and sayd they wolde lye that nyght without the bridge of Framwelgate. Than the lordes departed and rode forthe to Durham / and whan they came nere the towne they alyghted and ordayned their battayles / and so rode forthe in good order / and whan they came to the bridge of Framwelgate they founde it well kepte and defended / and there was a great assaute / but the nyght came on and departed them / and made ende to all / the captayne within was a Scotysshman / and had in the towne with him a great nombre of men of armes / and archers / and specially of Scottes / whan the lordes were departed from the bridge they went to their lodgynges / and refreshed them / and set good watche / and layde their ordynaunce before the bridge / and shotte all nyght. Than the lordes assembled to counsayle to determyne what they shulde do. The moste parte were of the opinion that the next day they shulde passe ouer the bridge without grauntyng of any assaute and so they dyd / and rode forthe in good order / and whan they came to the bridge

be well defended. Euerymā accorded to his
sayeng/what for their honour and for the loue
of hym. Also they lodged there at their ease/
for there was none that troubled theym/ they
made many lodgynges of bowes and great
herbes/and fortified their campe largely with
the maresse that was therby/and their carria-
ges were sette at the entre in to the maresses/
and had all their beestes within the maresse.
Than they apparelled for to saute the next day/
this was their entencyon.

DOwglasse had spoke of sir Henry Percy
and of sir Rafe his brother/ and the wel
come what that they dyd. They were sore dys-
pleased that the erle Douglas had wonne the pa-
uon of their armes/all out troubled greatly their
honours/ if they dyd nat as sir Henry Percy
sayd he wolde. For he had sayd to the erle Dou-
glas that he shulde nat carry his penon out of
Englande/and also he had openly spoken afore
all the knyghtes and squiers that were at
Newcastell. The same euenyng there stronglye
lurely that the Douglas and many other
scottes lodged/ were sette in their lodgynges
lyke besyeged. Therwith all the Englysshmen
sacke be ware/ and stode in their armes/ and kept
gayrde/ for they were nere vnto their enemyes
to hym. Sirs/ there is nought to wayte for
tome many lodes/ if the erle Douglas haue
wonne your penon/ he shall nat bere it
came to the gate to fetche it with his mayny
tru/ I assure you that many of them shall
hym ryght sore. Syr/ he sayd this vnaduise
kno he well all these was of the contrary
brode in the londe/ and how that many
nat meruayle of hym/ with that many
uentures were happened afore this with
be/ to the entent to bye the worshyp of the
and the nombre that they were at/ it was
boue. xl. thousande men/ they were in the
dole be/ and be it tolde that they were
it were better to fyght/ for they
hundred Englysshmen/ and all
our countrey in aduenture. Than
captayn sayd/ Syrres ordeyne
bodies be redy/ for they
tydynges came in there as
the scottes/ and sayd all
and what they were/ and

T howe syr Henry Percy and his
brother with a good nombre of men
of armes and archers went after the
scottes to wynne agayne his penon/
that the erle Douglas hadde wonne
before Newcastell vpon Tyne/ and
howe they assailed the scottes before
Mountberke in their lodgynges.

Cap. C.xlii.

IT was shewed to sir
Henry Percy & to his bro-
ther/and to the other knyght
tes and squyers that were
there by suche as had folo-
wed the scottes fro Newe-
castell/and had well aduy-
sed their demeanyng/who sayd to sir Henry and to
syr Rafe. Syrs/ we haue folowed the scottes
proude/and haue discouered all the countrey.
The scottes be ryght doundant and haue taken
fyr Dyamōd Umphrell their gode castell/ & fro
thence they be gone to Mytenbridge/ and there
they lape this nyght/ what they wyll do to mo
rowe we knowe nat. They are ordayned to a
byde there/ and fyersly their great hoost fo
nat with them/ for as all they passe nat there
thre thousande men. Whan sir Henry herde that
he was ryght glad and sayd. Syrs let vs leape on
our hakes/ for by the layth I owe to god and
many lorde my father/ I wyll go feke for my
penon/ and dyslodge them the same nyght
knyghtes and squyres that herde him agree
shewed their good reporte/ and prayed him
hym redy. The same euenyng the byshop of
Duresme came to Yorke with a good company
from home. Whan he herde that the scottes were
before Newcastell/ and howe that the lorde
Percy and many other lordes and knyght
were assembled to fyght with the scottes. Therfore the
byshop of Duresme to entende the tydynges
hath assembled vp all the clergye/ and to
comynge to Durham. Whan sir Henry Percy
herde nat where his company/ for he had
with hym fyfty men of armes knyghtes and
squyres with their archers/ and fyue hundred
thought the Englysshmen were nought with
the scottes/ for they were nat but the hoost
scottes/ thre thousande strong. Than they
apparayled them for the most valyaūt manner/ and
for the

ſuyth in good ordynaunce to abe the ſame day as
the ſcottes hadde gone and rode in Northumbre
a fourn ſpeall wages for theyre/ and ſayde many
but they coude not ſpede ſadde bycauſe of their
fourrum. Sone after ſyr Percy had ſuyth to ma
ſome layre he made to their reſcuſe/ and bare wyth
of treuſe lyons and ſhuppes of the ſelfe all
that day/ and thought to ryde ryght in the mid
ſtreng to cole of the day to gyue a newe aſſaute.
Then eache ſyde of the engliſhmen came on
them and entred into the longe ſtrete/ beryng
it bare bee the moſtere longe ſpeares/ and there
were but bowmen and ſeruauntes. Then the
engliſhmen ſuyed theyre ſpeares and entred
into the longe ſtrete/ and ſo knewe well where
ſuche aſſray is/ noyſe is ſone reyſed/ and it ſo
turned well for the ſcottes/ for when they ſawe
the engliſhmen came to make them/ than the
bowes ſente a cruſtayne of theyre ſeruauntes at
forneen/ ſo they ran the with the engliſhmen
at the ſpere of the longe ſpeares/ and in ſ ſame
ſtrete they ſlewe and ſparkled them/ nother
man wolde lyue bonelyes bodyes cayptayned
perſon. The fyghte was ſore on bothe the ſyde
longe ſo ryghte as moſte hadde ben in a manes
bayerte was on the moneth of Auguſt and the
weather fayre and temperate.

Thus the ſcottes were diſcomfyte to gyder
and without any noyſe departed fro
their longe ſpeares where abouts a ſpeall meſſe
ſayde/ whiche was greatly for their aduaun
tage/ for all the day before they had well ſtuffe
ſed the place/ and ſlepe amonge them ſelfe. If
the engliſhmen come on ſo ſodenly/ than
we wyll do there ſ than/ for it is a ſuperfluous
thyng to thynke/ if men of warre entre into
our longe ſpeares/ if they ſo then we wyll mete
in ſuche a place/ a there ſhalbe we ſhall wyn
or leſe. When the engliſhmen entred in to the
ſtrete/ at the firſt they founde ouertrauers the bo
wes/ and as they entred further in al wayes
they ſodenly were ſette to defe them and to fyg
hte with them. Then ſodenly came the
ſcottes fro aboute the mountayne/ and ſette on
the engliſhmen as they were ware/ and cryed
their crees/ whereof the engliſhe menne were
ſore aſtunyed. Then they cryed Percy/ and
the other parte cryed Douglas. There began
a ſtrayte batayle/ and be the ſyde encountred
ſyr Wyllyam Stewarde of Scotte partye/
and ſyr Wyllyam Douglas/ with the engliſhmen
and greatly defyred to diſcomfyte their ene
myes/ and ſette at their pas and greatly dyd
put a backe the ſcottes/ ſo that the ſcottes were
nere diſcomfyted. Than the erle James Dou
glas (who was yonge ſtronge/ and of great
herte to gette prayſe and grace/ and was wyl
lynge to defende to haue it/ and cared for no
payne nor trauayle) came to the with his ban
ner and cryed Douglas Douglas. And ſo dyd
ſyr Percy and ſyr Hewe his brother/ who had
great indygnacion againſt the erle Douglas
bycauſe he had wonne the penon of their ar
mes at the barreres before Newcaſtell/ came
to that parte/ and cryed Percy/ that two ba
nerd mette and there menne/ there was a ſore
fyghte. The engliſhmen were ſo ſtronge and
fought ſo valyauntly that they reculed the ſcot
tes backe. There were two valyaunte knyghtes
of ſcotte/ under the baner of the erle Douglas
called ſyr Patryke of Helborne and ſyr Pa
trykes his ſonne/ they acquyted them ſelfe that
day valyauntly. the erles baner had ben won
and they had not ben/ they defended it ſo valy
auntly/ and to the reſcuynge therof came many
ſtarre of armes/ that it was greatly to their
commendacion/ and to their heyres for euer
after.

It was ſhewed me by ſuche as had been
at the ſame batayle/ as well by knyghtes
and ſquyers of Englande as of Scotlande/
at the houſe of the erle of Foix. for anone after
this batayle was done I met at Orthes two
ſquyers of Englande called Johan of Hew
caſtell/ and Johan of Cameron. alſo when I
retourned fro Bourdeaux I founde alſo there a
knyght and ſquyer of Scotlande/ I knewe
them and they knewe me/ by ſuche tokens as
I ſhewed them of their countrey/ the I durſt
of their bokes in my youthe had ſtudyed ryght as
well all the reames of Scotlande/ and I was ab
ſtayned ſyftene dayes in the houſe of erle Wyl
lyam Douglas/ lyke to the ſame erle James
of whome I ſpake of nowe.

In a caſtell a fyue leagues fro Edenbourow in
the countrey of Lodiell/ the ſame tyme I ſawe
there this erle James a ſyre yonge chylde/
and a ſiſter of his called the lady Blaunche/
and I was enformed by ſuche ſtoute perſones
how that batayle was as fers a batayle for gli
and knyghtly dedes hath been done of bothe ſydes a

wombyd/and Ibotson it well for ought/men on the one partye and scotes on the other party/are good men of warre/for when they come there to a perce fight without sparynge/there is no boobyrnesse them as longe as ther ben (wapons/ apes/or bagges wyll endure/but lye on eche other/and when they be well beten and that the one party hath optayned the victory/ they then gladlye lo in their bones of armes and are so lopfull/ that suche an beten han they shall be transformed as they go out of the felde/so that hardly eche of them wyll come nere nere other/but at their departynge curtesyly they wyll saye/ god thanke you. But in fyghtynge one with a nother there is no playe nor sparynge/and this is true/ and that shall well apere by this sayd encounter/ for it was as hardy ly fought on as combe be devised/ as ye shall here.

¶ Howe the erle James Douglas by his valyantnesse encouraged his men who were vexed and in a maner discomfyted/and in his so doynge he was wounded to deth. Cap. xliii.

Knyghtes and Squyers were of good courage and bolde partes to fyght valyantly/ remayned there but a fewe/ but bestowed them selfe with goodly feates of armes/ for knyghtes and squyers seem so inured to gyve at home ther/ that ther ben but fewe places of nother party/ where the scottes shewed great hardynesse/ and fought merely/ with great delyte of battayle. the englysshmen were there as nere/ be we be it I say not but englysshmen dyd assaye ouercome them selfe/for euer the englysshmen han nother ben ouercome in the felde/ nor to lye. Thus as I have sayd the bandes of Douglas and Percy and their men/ were nere eche agaynst other/ enuyous who shulde wynne the honnour of that iourney. But the begynnynge the englysshmen were so stronge/ that they excluded backe their enemyes. Than the erle Douglas who had of great hardynesse and knyghtly courage/ leyngs that men coude not recouer the place and to them mynyshe hys hour/ he rode in to the fyll hamell and entred in with a grete/ that he made them gyve place/ and he was so well armed that he bare well of suche strokes as he receyued/ that he wente nere for nought/ but euer he layenge on/ made hym a large waye to passe on the felde/ and to ouercome his enemyes. But anone he was ouertaken with thre speares all at ones/ that ran dyuers upon hym/ the one hytte his horse/ and the other gaue hym a great stroke upon the helme/ and the thyrde persed hym through the thyes/ and the speare entred into the erthe/ and there lefte hym/ for he was borne downe to the erthe/ and there he coude not be remeued. Many of the knyghtes and squyers followed hym/ but all/ for it was my ghesse on horsbacke/ but by the ouerthrowe of the horse the englysshmen knewe well they had been ouerthrowen/ the scottes they took and slewe it was/ for they had ben ouerthrowen/ if hym had ben the erle Douglas/ they had been chased to fyghte and ouercome/ but that ouerthrowe was letten vpon. Nor all the scottes knewe not of that aduentures/ tyll the ende of the batayle/ for if they had knowen it/ they shulde haue beente fast prepared and dyscharged/ that they neuer shulde haue come ageyne. Thus as the erle Douglas was fallen to the erth he was fastened in to the bore with an axe/ and another stroke throughe the thyes. The englysshmen pulled further and toke no heede of hym/ they thought none other wyse/ but that they hadde layed a man of armes vpon the other parte the erle George he is of eche and of Dombarre fought right valyantly/ and gaue the englysshmen many strokes/ and ouer all Douglas/ and sette on the fronte of Percy. Also Sir Iohan of Agurre with his bandes and men fought valyantly/ and sette fyercly on the englysshmen/ and gaue them so moche to do/ that they wyst not to whome to attende.

¶ Howe in this batayle Sir Rafe Percy was sore hurte/ and taken prysoner by a scotte the knyght. Cap. xliiii.

Of all the batayles and en-
counterynges that I haue made
mencion of here before in all this
hystorye / yet ne ystmalle / this bat-
tayle that I here of nowe / was
one of the fayrest and best fought ren / without cow-
wardes or fayntt herres. for there was nother
knyght nor squyer but that dyde his deuoyr
and fought hande to hande. this batayle was
lyke the batayle of Poytyers / the whiche was
valyauntly fought and endured. The erle of
Northumberlandes sonnes sir Henry and sir
Rafe Percy / who were there foure tayne tayn-
tayns acquyted them selfe nobly / and sir Rafe
Percy entred in so farre amonge his enemyes
that he was closed to / and hurte / and so sore
handeled that his brethe was so shorte that he
was taken prysoner / by a knyght of the erle of
Wozetters / called sir Johan Wakyrell. In the
takynge the Scottysshe knyght demaunded
what he was (for it was in the nyght / so that
he knewe hym nat) And sir Rafe was so sore
ouercome and bledde fast that at laste he sayd /
I am Rafe Percy. Than the fourre sayde / sir
Rafe rescue me or ellse no. I take you for my
prysoner. I am Wakyrell. well quod sir Rafe
I am content / but than take hede to me / for I
am sore hurte / my hoses and my gresues are
full of blode. Than the knyght sawe by hym
the erle Wozet / and sayde. Sir here I delyu-
uer to you sir Rafe Percy as prysoner / but let
lette good hede be taken to hym / for he is sore
hurte. The erle was ioyfull of those wordes /
and sayd. Wakyrell thou hast well wonne thy
spurres. Than he delyuered sir Rafe Percy
to certayne of his men / and they stopped and
wrapped his woundes / And styll the batayle
endured / nat knowynge who had as than the
better / for there were many taken and rescu-
ed agayne / that came to no knowlege.

Nowe let vs speke of the yonge Lorde
erle of Douglas / who dyd maruayls in
armes or he was beaten downe. whan he was
ouerthrowen the preace was great about hym /
so that he coulde nat relese / for with all arte he
had his bodye wolde. His men folowed hym
as nere as they coulde / and there came to hym
sir James Lyndesy his cosyn / and sir Johan
and sir Water sayntt clere / and other knyghtes
and squyers and by hym was a gentyll squyer
of his who folowed hym all the day / and a cha-
pelayne of his / nat lyke a preest / but lyke a bat-
tayntt man of armes / for all that nyght he fo-
lowed the erle with a good axe in his handes /
and styll chaynged about the erle / there as
he lay / and reculed backe some of the englysshe
men with gret strokes that he gaue. Thus he
was founde fyghtynge nere to his mayster /
wherby he hadde great prayse / and thereby the
same yere he was made archedeacon of Abre-
dan. This preest was called sir Wilyam of
Nozberwyche / he was a tall man and a hardy
and was sore harte. whanne these knyghtes
came to the erle they founde hym in an euell
case / and a knyght of his lynage by hym / cal-
led sir Roberte Hatte / he had a fyftene woun-
des in one place and other. Than sir Johan
Saynte clere demaunded of the erle howe he
dyd. Myghty euell cosyn quod therle / but thank
ed be god there hath been but a fewe of myne
enemyes that hathe dyed in their bodyes.
But cosyn / I requyre you thynke to reuenge
me / for I recon my self but dead / for my herte
fayntech often tymes / Why cosyn / what are
you / I praye you tayse vp agayne my baner /
whiche lyeth on the grounde / and my squyer
Dauy Colleonne agayne. But syr (quod he) no
dere to remue (for soo in what case ye stande
for if myne enemyes knewe it they wolde re-
turne / and our frendes discomforted. The two
brethrene of Saynt clere and sir James Lyn-
sey dyd as the erle badde dispryed them / and
reysed vp agayne his baner / and cryed Dou-
glas. Suche as were behynde and herde that
cry drewe together and set on their enemyes
valyauntly / and reculed backe the englysshe
men / and many ouerthrowen / and so dyuers the
englysshe men backe beyonde the place where
as the Erle laye / who was by that tyme peec
and so came to the erles baner / the whiche sir
Johan Saynt clere helde in his handes / and
many good knyghtes and squyers of Scot-
lande aboute hym / and styll company dyde
to the cry of Douglas. Thyder came the erle
Wozetter with his baner well accompanyed /
and also the erle de la Mare and of Dou-
bare. And whan they sawe the englysshe
men reculs / and their company assem-
bled togyder / they renewed a
gayne the batayle /
and gaue ma-
ny harde
and sadde strokes.

Howe the scottes warne the batayle agaynst the englysshe men beside Otteburge / & there was taken prisoners sir Henry and sir Rafe Percy / and howe an Englysshe squyer wolde nat yelde hym no more wolde a scottysshe squier and so dyed both and howe the bysshope of Durham and his company were discomfyted amonge themselfe. Ca. C.xlv.

TO saye trouth the englysshmen were sorer travayled than the scottes / for they came the same day fro Newcastell upon Tyne / a fare englysshmyles / & went a great pase / to the entente to fynde the scottes whiche they dyd / for that by their fast goynge they were nere out of brethe / and the Scottes were freshe and well rested / which greatly anayed them / whan tyme was of their busynesse. For in the laste skrymysshe they reculed backe the englysshe men / in suche wyse / that after that they coude no more assemble together / for the scottes past through their batayles. And it fortuned that sir Henry Percy and the lorde of Mountcombre a valyaunt knyght of Scotlande fought togyther hande to hande ryght valyauntly / without lettynge of any other / for euery man had ynough to do. So longe they two fought that perforce of armes syr Henry Percy was taken prisoner by the sayde lorde of Mountcombre.

THe knyghtes & squiers of Scotlande as sir Ware Mowbrey / sir Thomas Auremesquyn / syr Wyllyam / syr James / and sir Alysaunder Lyndsey / the lorde of Faulcon / syr Johan of Sayute de Laur / syr Patryke of Monbare / sir Johan and syr Water Sayntclere / sir Johan Wakyrell sir Guy stewarde / syr Johan Halebreton / syr Alysaunder Ramsey / Roberte Colounne and his two sonnes / Johan and Roberte / who were there made knyghtes / and a hundred knyghtes and squyers that I can nat name. All these ryght valyauntly dyd acquyte them selfe. And on the englysshe party before that the lorde Percy was taken and after / there fought valyauntly syr Rafe Longbie / syr Mathewe Redman / syr Thomas Ogle / sir Thomas Gray / sir Thomas Heron sir Thomas Wyston / sir Johan Lyrbon / sir Wyllyam Walsyngham / the baron of Heton / sir Johan of Couperoup / the seneschall of Pycke / and dyuers other fotemen. Wherto shulde I write longe proces / this was a sore batayle and well foughten / And as fortune is alwayes chaungeable / though the englysshmen were more in nombre than the scottes / and were ryght valyaunt men of warre / and well experte / and that at the fyrste fronte they reculed backe the scottes / yet fynally the scottes optayned the place and victory / and all the forsaid englysshmen taken and a hundred mo / saynge sir Mathewe Redman captayne of Bermyghe / who whan he knewe no remedy nor recouerraunce / and sawe his company flye fro the scottes / and yelded theym on euery syde / than he toke his horse and departed to saue hym selfe. The same season aboute the ende of this discomfyture / there was an englysshe squyer called Thomas Heleton / a goodly man & a valyant man / and that was well sene / for of all that ryght he wolde nother flye nor yet yelde hym. It was sayd he had made a bowe at a feest in Englande / that the first tyme that euer he sawe englysshe men & scottes in batayle / he wolde so do his deuoyre to his power in suche wyse / that eyther he wolde be reputed for the best doer on bothe sydes / or els to dye in the payne / he was called a valyaunt and a hardy man / and dyd so moche by his prowes that vnder the baner of the erle of Mozette he dyd suche valyauntnesse in armes / that the scottes hadde marueyle therof / and so was slayne in fyghtynge. The scottes wolde gladly haue taken hym alyue but he wolde neuer yelde / he hoped euer to haue been rescewed. And with hym there was a scottysshe squier slayne / colyn to the kynge of scottes / called Symon Glandyn. His dethe was greatly complayned of the scottes. This batayle was fierse and cruell tyll it came to the ende of the discomfyture / but whan the scottes sawe the englysshmen recule and yelde theselfe / than the scottes were curteys and sette theym to their raunsome / and euery man sayde to his prysoner. Syr / go and harnesse you and take youre ease / I am your mayster / and so made their prisoners as good chere as though they had ben brethern / without doyng to them any domage. The chase endured

dured a fyue englyſh themyles/ and if ꝑ ſcottes had been men pnowe there had nowe ſcaped/but outher they had ben taken or ſlayne: And if Archambault Douglas and the erle of Fen/the erle Surlane and other of the great copany (who were gone towardes Carlyle) had ben there/ by all lykelyhode they had taken the byſſhoppe of Durham/ and ꝑ towne of Newcaſtell vpon tyne. I ſhall ſhewe you howe. The ſame euenyng that the Percyes departed fro Newcaſtell (as ye haue herde before) the byſſhop of Durham with the reſt hande cõe to Newcaſtelle ſuppers. And as he ſatte at the table he had ymagynacion in hym ſelfe/ howe he dyd nat acquite hym ſelfe well to ſe the Engliſſh men in the felde/ and he to be within the towne. Incontynent he cauſed the table to be taken away/ and cõmaunded to ſadell his hoſſes/ and to ſowne the trũpettes/ ꝑ called vp men in the towne to arme them ſelfe and to mount on their hoſſes/ and foote men to ordes themſelfe to departe. And thus euery man departed out of the towne/ to the nombre of fyue thouſande: two thouſande on hoſſebacke and fyue thouſande a foote. They toke their waye towardes Ottenbourg where as the batayle had ben/ and by that tyme they hadde gone two myle from Newcaſtell/ tidynges came to them/ howe their men were fyghtynge with the ſcottes. Therwith the byſſhoppe reſted there/ and incontynent came no flyeng faſte/ that they were out of breethe. Than they were demaũded howe the mater wente: they anſwered and ſayde. Right ruell. We be all diſconfyted. Here cometh the ſcottes chaſynge of vs. Theſe tidynges troubled the Engliſſh men and began to doute. And agayne the thirde tyme men came flyeng as faſt as they might. Whaſte the men of the byſſhoprike of Durham herde of theſe ruell tidynges they were aball hed/in ſuche wiſe/that they brake their arrayꝭ ſo that the byſſhoppe coude nat holde togyder the nombre of fyue hũdred. It was thought that if the ſcottes had folowed them in any nombre flyeng that it was night that in thentryng in to the towne/ ꝑ the Engliſſh men ſo aball hed/ the towne had ben won.

The byſſhoppe of Durham beyng in the felde had good wyll to haue ſecoured the engliſſhmen/ ꝑ recõforted his men aſmoche as he coude/ but he ſawe his owne men flye as well as other. Than he demaunded coũſaile of ſir Wyllyam Lulley and of ſir Thomas Dyſſorde and of other knyghtes/ what was beſt to do. Theſe knyghtes for their honoure wolde gyue hym no coũſayle/ For they thought to retourne agayne and do noſhyng/ ſhulde ſo wente greatly to their blame/ and to go forthe myght be to their great dõmage/ and ſo haue dyll ꝑ wolde gyue none anſwere. and the lenger they ſtode the fewer they were/ for ſome dyll ſtale aways. Than the byſſhoppe ſayde. Sires/ all thynges conſidered/ it is none honour to putte all in parell/ nor to make of one ruell dommage twayne. We here howe our company be diſconfyted/ ꝑ we can nat remedy it: For to go to recouer them/ we knowe nat with whom nor ꝑ what nombre we ſhall mete. Lette vs retourne fayre and eaſely for this night to Newcaſtell and to morowe we lette vs drawe to gyder and go loke on our enemyes. Euery man anſwered/ as god wyll ſo be it. Therwith they retourned to Newcaſtell. Thus a man maye conſyder the great defaute that is in men/ ꝑ be aball hed and diſconfyted. For if they had kepte them togyder/ and haue turned agayn ſuche as fledde/ they had diſconfyted the ſcottes. Thus was the oppinion of dyuers. And byeauſe they dyde nat thus/ the ſcottes had the victorie.

Howe ſir Mathue Reedman departed fro the batayle to ſaue hym ſelfe/ and howe ſir James Lymſaye was taken priſoner by the byſſhoppe of Durhame: And howe after the batayle ſcurrers were ſente forthe to diſcouer the countrey. Cap. C.xlvi.

I ſhall ſhewe you of ſir Mathewe Reedman/ who was on hoſſebacke to ſaue hym ſelfe/ for he alone coude nat remedy the mater. At his departynge ſir James Lymſay was nere to hym/ and ſawe howe ſir Mathue departed. And this ſir James to wyn honour/ folowed

ꝑ chaſe

in chase sir Mathue Reedman/ and came so nere hym/ that he myght haue stryken hym with his speare if he had lyst. Than he said. Ah sir knyght tourne/ it is a shame thus to flye. I am James of Lymsay/ if ye wyll not tourne/ I shall stryke you on the backe with my speare. Sir Mathew spake no worde/ but strake his horse with the spurres sore/ that he dyde before. In this maner he chased hym more than thre myles. And at laste sir Mathue Reedmans horse stombled and fell vnder hym. Than he lepte hastely on ꝑ erthe and drewe oute his swerde and toke corage to defende hym selfe: And the scottes thought to haue stryken hym on the brest/ but sir Mathew Reedman warued fro the stroke/ and the speare poynt entred in to the erthe: Than sir Mathue strake a sonder the speare with his swerde. And whan sir James Lymsay sawe howe he had lost his speare: He caste away the tronchon and lyghted a fote/ and toke a lytell batayle axe that he carryed at his backe/ and handeled it with his one hande/ quickely and deliuerly/ in the whiche feate scottes be well experte. And than he sette at sir Mathue/ and he defended hym selfe prouerbly. Thus they tourneyed togyder/ one with an axe/ and the other with a swerde/ a longe season/ and no man to lette them. Fynally sir James Lymsay gaue the knyght sir the strokes/ and helde hym so harde/ that he was putte out of brethe/ in suche wyse/ that he yelded hym selfe and sayde. Sir James Lymsay/ I yelde me to you. Well quod he/ and I receyue you/ refuse it no refuse. I am content quod Reedman/ so ye deale with me lyke a good companyon. I shall not fayle quod ꝑ Lymsay/ and so putte vp his swerde. Well sir ꝑ Reedman/ what wyll you now we that I shall do? I am your prisoner/ ye haue conquered me. I wolde gladly go agayn to Newcastell/ and within fyftene dayes I shall come to you in to Scotlande where as ye shall assigne me. I am cotent quod Lymsay: ye shall promyse by your fayth to present your selfe within this.xv. weekes at Edenborowe: And where soeuer ye go to reporte your selfe my prisoner. All this sir Mathue swore and promysed to fulfyll. Than eche of them toke their horses and toke leaue eche of other. Sir James returned/ and his entent was to go to his owne cõpany the same way that he came/ and sir Mathewe Reedman to Newcastell. Sir James Lymsaye coulde not kepe the ryght waye as he came/ it was darke and a myst: And he hadde not ryden halfe a myle/ but he ouer rane to fare with the byll hoppe of Durham/ and no thynge hym dyd Englysshmen with hym. He might well escaped if he had wolde: But he supposed it had been his owne cõpany that had pursued the Englysshmen. Whan he was among the one demaunded of hym what he was. I am quod he sir James Lymsay. The byll hoppe herde those wordes/ and stepte to hym/ and said Lymsay ye are taken/ yelde ye to me. Who be you quod Lymsay? I am ꝑ the byll hop of Durham. And fro whens come you sir ꝑ Lymsay? I come fro the batayle ꝑ the byll hop/ but I stroke neuer a stroke there. I go backe to Newcastell for this night/ & ye shall go with me. I maye not chose quod Lymsay sithe ye wyll haue it so. I haue taken and I am taken/ suche is the aduentures of armes. Whom haue ye taken quod the byll hop? sir quod he I toke in the chase sir Mathue Reedman: And where is he ꝑ fro the byll hop? by my fayth sithe he is retourned to Newcastell/ he desyred me to truste hym on his fayth for thre weekes/ and so haue I done. Well ꝑ the byll hop/ lette vs go to Newcastell and there ye shall speke with hym. Thus they rode to Newcastell togyder/ and sir James Lymsay was prisoner to the bill hop of Durham.

Nder the baner of the erle de la mare and of Dõbare/ was taken a squyer of Gascone called Johñ of Newcastell. And vnder the baner of the erle of Worcet was taken his companyon Johñ de Cauterpn. Thus the felde was clene auoyded or the daye apered. The scottes drewe togyder and toke gydes and sente out spurriers to se if any men were in the waye fro Newcastell to the entent that they wolde not be troubled in their lodgynges/ wherin they dyd wisely. For whan ꝑ byll hop of Durham was come agayne to Newcastell & in his lodgynge/ it was sone spyed/ & wyst not what to saye nor do. For he knewe by howe his cosins ꝑ Percies were slayne or taken/ & all ꝑ knyghtes ꝑ were with the. Than he sent for all ꝑ knyghtes and squyers that were in the towne/ And whan they were come he demaunded of them if they

tes to assayle them/ but returned without doyng of any thyng/ for they sawe well they myght rather lese than wyn. When the Scottes sawe the Englysshe men recule/ and that they shulde haue no batayle: They wente to their lodgynges and made merry/ and chase a daynes to departe fro thens: And bycause that sir Hale Percy was sore hurte/ he desyred of his master that he myght retourne to Newcastell/ or in to some place/ where as it pleased hym/ vnto such tyme as he were holle of his hurtes. Dpon this/ as soone as he were able to ryde/ to retourne in to Northlande/ outher to Edenbozowe or in to any other place apoynted. The erle of Mare/ vnder whom he was taken/ agreed therto/ and delyuered hym a horse lytter and lent hym a wape. And by lyke conenaunt dyuers other knyghtes & squyers were suffred to retourne/ and tooke terme outher to retourne/ or elis to paye their rauncon/ suche as they were apoynted vnto. It was shewed me by the enformacyon of the Scottes/ suche as had been at this sayd batayle/ that was betwene Newcastell and Dertoughe/ in the yere of our lorde god a thousande thre hundred fourscore and viii. the xix. daye of August. Howe there were taken prisoners of the Englysshe parte. xiii. and xl. men one and other. And slayne in the felde and in the chase. xviii. hundred and xl. and yet hurte me than a thousande. And of the Scottes there were a hundred slayne/ and taken in the chase me than two hundred: for as the Englysshmen drewe whan they sawe any aduantage/ they returned agayne and fought. By that meanes the Scottes were taken and none otherwyse. Euery man may well conseyue that it was a well fought felde whan there were so many slayne and taken on bothe parties.

Thowe the Scottes departed and caryed with them their Douglas beer and buryed hym in the abbey of Melrayns: And howe sir Archambault Douglas and his company departed fro before Carlyle/ and returned in to Scotlande. Cap. clxiii.

After this batayle thus [illegible] they made them redy to departe. So they departed & rode with them the more parte/ and many knyghtes of Englande/ & tooke the wape to the abbey of Melrayns. At their departynge they sette fyre in their lodgynges and rode all the nyght/ and yet lay that nyght in the Englysshe grounde/ none dayred the. The nexte daye they dislodged early in the mornyng/ and so came that daye to Melrayns/ Item an abbey of blacke monkes on the bo[rder] bytwene bothe realmes. There they re[st]ed/ and buryed the erle Iames Douglas. The seconde daye after his obsequye was done reuerently/ & on his body layde a tombe of stone/ and his baner hangyng ouer hym. Whether there were as than any mo erles of Douglas/ to whome the lande retourned or not/ I can not tell. For I sir Iohn Froissart made mone of this bake was in Scotlande in [the] erldom called of Mare/ hauyng erle Douglas at whiche tyme he had two chyldren/ a sonne and a doughter: but after there were many of the douglasses/ for I haue sene a.b. brethern all squyers bearyng the name of Douglas/ in the kyng of Scotlades house. Dauid. they were sones to a knyght in Scotlade called sir Iames Douglas. & they bare in their armes gules/ thre oryels goules/ but as for the heritage I knowe not who had it. As for sir Archambault Douglas of whom I haue spoken before in this hystorye in sondry places/ who was a valyaunt knyght/ & greatly redouted of the englysshmen/ he was but a bastarde.

Than these Scottes hadde ben at Melrayns abbey/ and done there all that they came thyder for. Than they departed fro thens & wente in to their owne countrees/ and suche as hadde prisoners some lefte them alwaye with them/ and some were raunsomed and suffred to retourne. Thus the Englysshe men founde the Scottes right curteise and gentyll/ in their delyueraunces and raunsome/ so that they were well contente. This was shewed me in the countye of Barns in the yere of our lorde by a knyght

knyght named Johan of Newcastell / who was taken prisoner at the same tourney / vnder the baner of the erle of Ware and Wombarne / and he greatly grapsed the sayd erle / for he suffred hym to passe in maner / as he delyuered hym selfe.

Thus these men of warre of Scotlande departed and raunsomed their prisoners / as soone as they myght spede curtesly / and so returned lytell and lytell in to their owne countrees. And it was shewed me and I beleue it well / that the Scottes had by reason of that iourney / two hundred thousande frankes for raunsomyng of prisoners. For sythe the batayle that was before Sterculyne in Scotlande / where as sir Robert of Bruces / sir Wyllyam Douglas / sir Robert Versey / sir Symon Fresell / and other Scottes chased the Englysh men thre dayes / they neuer had iourney so profytable nor so honorable for them as this was. Whan the kynges came to their company of the Scottes that were beside Cambrydge / howe their company had discomfited the Englysh men before Oreuelingh / they were greatly rebuked & displeased in their myndes / that they had not ben there. Than they determyned to lodge and to drawe in to their owne countrees / for the more parte of their company were withdrawen / thus they dislodged and entred in to Scotlande.

Nowe lette me leaue to speke of the Scottes and of the Englysh men that were there and lette me retourne to the yonge Charles of Fraunce / who with a great power of men came in to Almayne to brenne the duke of Burgoynes countrey.

Than the Frenche kynge and all his hoste entred the countrey of Lutzenbourgh / and came to an abbey where as the predecessour of the duke of Brabant was buryed / there the kynge taryed two dayes. Than he departed and toke the waye through the Barroys / and lodged within a leage where as the duches of Brabant laye / She sent worde of his comyng thyther to the duke of Burgoyn / and he brought her in to the felde to speke with the kynge / who receyued her right honorably / and there they talked to gyder. Than the duches returned to Valenciennes / and thyder the kynge went with sir Johan of Vyen and sir Guy of Chymay. And the next dayes the kynge went forwarde / approchyng to the lande of the enemyes / and came to thetrynge in to Almayne / on the frontyers of the duchy of Iulyers. but or he came so fas forwarde / Arnolde dulle bysshop of Liege had been with the kynge and had greatly entreated for the duke of Iulyers / that the kynge shulde nat be vtterly content with hym / though he were father to the duke of Guyenne / for he excused hym of the dedaces that his sonne had made ayenst hym / bycause it was nat by his knowlege ne consent. Wherfore he sayd it were pytie that the father shulde bere the defaut of the sonne. This excuse was nat sufficyent to the kynge nor to his counsayle / for the entent of the kynge and his counsayle was / without the duke of Iulyers wolde come and make other maner excuse / and to prouyde hym selfe to the kynges plesure / his countrey shulde be the first that I shulde bere the burdone. Than the dulle bysshop of Liege and the lordes of Brabant / and the counsayles of the good townes offred to the kynge and his counsayle / help the dulle bysshop of Liege for his nyece to passe and expulse / payeng for them / the kynge refused / and wolde nat / but he wolde that they shulde kepe their dutie to the kynge / as long as it pleased them. The kynge thanked them / and so departed / and wolde nat [illegible]

tes to assayle them/ but retourned without doyng of any thyng/ for they sawe well they myght rather lese than wyn. When the Scottes sawe the Englysshe men cerule/ and that they shulde have no batayle: They wente to their lodgynges and made merry/ and thanke ordayned to departe fro thens: And bycause that the Kyng Percy was sore hurte/ he dyrected of his maister that he myght retourne to Newcastell/ or in to some place/ where as it pleased hym/ vnto such tyme as he were hole of his hurtes. Wyndsynge/ as soone as he were able to ryde/ to retourne in to Scotlande/ eyther to Edenbourowe or in to any other place apoynted. The erle of Moore/ vnder whom he was taken/ agreed therto/ and delyuered hym a bonde letter and sent hym a sauf. And by this conuenaunt bytwen other Englysshe & Scottes were suffred to retourne/ and tooke terme eyther to retourne/ or vnto the pope their tyraunce/ lyche as they were apoynted vnto. It was shewed me by the custome men of the Scottes/ lyche as hath been at this layd batayle/ that was betwene Newcastell and Otterbourne/ to the pays of our lorde god a thousande three hundred fourtyene and fyue. The xix. daye of August: there were there taken prisoners of the Englysshe parte. xiij. and .xi. men and other. And slayne in the felde and in the chace. viij. hundred and .xi. and fore hurte me then a thousande. And of the Scottes there were a hundred slayne/ and taken in the chace me then two hundred: for as the Englysshe men stode whan they sawe any aduantage/ they retourned agayne and fought. By that meanes the Scottes were taken and mete otherwyse. Euery man maye well conseyue that it was a well fought felde whan there were so many slayne and taken on bothe partes.

After this batayle thus fought/ many men re[turned] home/ and the erle Douglas was layd in a chare/ and brought vnto the Monkes that were in Melrose Abbeye. Than they prepared to bery him. And they departed a lande with them fyue hundred men/ and mo than .vi. hundred of Englande/ and toke the wayes to the abbey of Melrose. At their departynge they sette fyre in their lodgynges and toke all the pray/ and yet lay that nyght in the Englysshe grounde/ none denyed them. The nexte daye they dyd lodge euen in the morownyng/ and so came that daye to Melrose/ It is an Abbey of blacke monkes in the bo[r]der betwene bothe realmes. There they tooke/ and buryed the erle James Douglas. The seconde daye after his obsequye was done reuerently/ in his body layde a tombe of stone/ and his baner hangyng ouer hym. Where there were as then aye mo Erles of Douglas/ to whome the lande retourned or not/ I can not tell. For I the yonge Froissart[e] auctour of this boke was in Scotlande in [the] erles castell of Mounte/ yonge erle Douglas at whose tyme he had two styrtyn/ a lorme and a bought: but after there were many of the douglasses/ for I knew syre [illegible] all squyres bearyng the name of Douglas/ in the kyng of Scotlandes house. And they were sonnes to a knyght in Scotlande called syr James Douglas. & they bare in their armes gold be/ fore .iij. goules/ but as for the heritage I knowe not who had it. As for syr Archambault Douglas of whom I haue spoken before in this hystorie in sondry places/ who was a valyant knyght/ & greatly renoumed of the Englysshe men/ he was ben a bachelar.

Than these Scottes hadde ben at Melrose maye abbey/ and done there all that they came thyder for. Than they departed ryde fro abbet and wente in to their owne countreis/ and suche as hadde pyty/ some lefte them abyde with them/ and some were constrayned and suffred to retourne. Than the Englysshe men founde the Scottes right curteise and gentyll/ in their behauynges and countenaunce/ so that they were well content. Thus went he and me in the countrey of Barnedale/ tyll we came to Jedworth/ by a knyght

knyght named Johan of Newcastell / whom was taken prysoner at the same tourney / vnder the baner of the erle of Mare and Dombare / and he greatly grawted the sayd erle / for he suffred hym to passe in maner / as he delyuered hym selfe.

Thus these men of warre of Scotlande departed and raunsomed their prysoners as soone as they myght agree eche other / and so retourned lytell and lytell in to their owne countrees. And as we haue herd vnderstande / we leue it well / that the scottes had by reason of that iourney / two hundred thousande frankes for raunsomyng of prisoners. For sythe the bataple that was before Aberuelyne in Scotlande / where as sir Robert Vienne / sir Wyllyam Douglas / sir Robert Versey / sir Symon Fresell / and other scottes chaced the Englysshmen thre dayes / they neuer had iourney so profitable nor so honorable for them as this was. When the kynge came to the abbey of Cambusken / where their company had left their pauylions / they were greatly displeased / but there remayned / they set fyre on them / and so departed / and lodged in to their owne countrey / where as they company were / with their men / thus they dyd lodged and passed in to Scotlande.

Nowe lette vs leaue to speke of the scottes and of the Englysshmen / that were retorned and lette vs retourne to the kynge of Fraunce / who with a great power was come in to Almayne to helpe the duke of Guyenne to reuenge [illegible]

[illegible] the kynge and all [illegible] were passed the ryuer [illegible] at the bridge of Cambron [illegible] the lowest [illegible] plaine [illegible] and the lande of Juliers [illegible]

[illegible] he made [illegible] destroyed [illegible] all / except the castelles and good townes. Thus the frenche kynge entred in to the countrey of Luxembourgh / and came to an abbey where as the tyrant of Gaynte duke of Brabant was buryed / there the kynge offred two dayes. Than he departed and toke the wape throughe Balconque / and lodged within a leage where as the duches of Brabant laye / she sent worde of the kynge there to the duke of Burgoyn / and he brought her in to the felde to speke with the kynge / who receyued her right honorably / and [illegible] to order. Than the duches returned to Balconque / and the duke of Burgoyn was conueyed with sir Johan of Ligne and sir Guy of Armoule. And the next dayes the kynge went to warde / and bynge to the lande of the enemyes / and came to the kynge in to Almayne / on the frontiers of the duchy of Juliers. But or he came so fas forwarde Arnolde bysshop of Liege had been with the kynge and had greatly entreated for the duke of Juliers / that the kynge shulde be right content with hym / though he were father to the duke of Guerles / for the trespas hymself the defiaūces that he had made afore hym / he was ayded by his knowlegyng and consent. Wherfore he sayde it were pyte that the father shulde bere the defaut of the sonne. This excuse was not suffysaunt to the kynge nor to his vncles / for the entent of the kynge and his counsayle was to thynke the duke of Juliers wolde come and make vtterance of accorde / and to yelde hym selfe to the kynges pleasure / his countrey shulde be the fyrst that shulde bere the burdone. Than the bysshoppe of Liege and the dukes of Brabant and the counsayle of the good townes offred to the kynge and his counsayle / holde the bysshoppe of Liege for his ampe tyme / and repaye the kynge [illegible] there expenses / and to tarye with them there / as long as it pleased them. The kynge thanked them / and so dyd his vncles / and wolde not [illegible] that they shulde [illegible]

Howe the duke of Iulyers came and excused hym selfe/ of the defyaunce that his sone the duke of Guerles had made to the frenche kyng/ and so became his subiecte: & of dyuers feates of armes done betwene the frenchmen and the almayns before Rencongut. Cap. Cxlviii.

Thus the bysshoppe of Liege retourned to the duke of Iulyers and to the archebysshoppe of Colongne/ and shewed the what he had done and therupon they toke aduyse. The duke of Iulyers had great dout of eryling & wasting of his countrey/ and sent for the knightes of his countrey to haue their counsayle & aduyse/ and howe the frenchmen approched. The lorde of Coucy who was in the towne and with hym a thousande speares/ and the duke of Lorayne with hym: and the viconte of Meaulx with two hundred speares. When the frenchemen approched the frontiers of Almayne/ then they rode togyder in good ordre and lodged wisely/ for there were a thousande speares of lyghtes almayns/ to gouerne the ryder of kyng gathered togyder. And they be noted to be the greatest pyllers and robbers of all the worlde: And they alwayes purswed and coosted the frenchmen to haue them disparcyed/ to no thyng aduayle. The frenche men doubted the same/ and durst not ouer go aforwarde but in great compayny. And as I vnderstode the Bourguignons the elder and the Lorde of Coucy/ were aduertysed and brought to Almayn. these two almayns rode alwayes couertly/ lyke spyes lyeng in wayte lokyng for their praye. Thus vsed the frenche men hyde and take well ware. Thus when the frenche kyng was come forwarde/ as in the entre of the duchy of Iulyers/ The duke of Iulyers who wolde not lese his countrey/ beleued the counsayle of the archebysshoppe of Colongne and the bysshop of Liege. These two entreated for hym to the kynge/ and brought the mater to that poynt/ that his lades were in rest and peace/ by meanes of suche exemptions as followeth. These two prelates bydde so muche/ that they brought the duke of Iulyers in to the kynges presence and before his vncles & the duke of Lorayne/ and other great lordes of Fraunce of the blode royall. And when he was before the kyng he kneled downe/ and meekly excused hym of the defyaunce that his sonne had made/ and sayd how his sonne was a foole/ and that he had neuer counsayle of hym to do as he dyde/ but dyde it of his owne wyll: and desired the kyng/ sayeng. Sir/ to the entent to bring hym to the knowledge of reason/ by your presence I wyll go to hym and shewe hym his folly/ as quickely as I can/ and counsayle hym to come and make his excuse before your grace and your counsayle. And if he wyll not thus do/ but be agaynst my counsayle/ I shall abandon to you all the townes and castels in my countrey/ and to gouerne for me of warre/ and to make warre agaynst hym/ tyll ye haue taken hym to mercy. Then the kyng regarded his brother/ his vncles/ and his counsayle/ and it seemed to hym that this offre was fayre and reasonable/ and so dyd all other. Then the kyng toke vp the duke of Iulyers (who was on his knee/ whyle he spake to the kyng) and sayd to hym. Sir/ we shall haue counsayle and shewe it on your behalfe/ and to morowe. Then the duke rose vp & rode vp tyll by the hyll hoppes that bysshop hym thyder. Then the kyng and his vncles/ and suche of his priue counsayle dyned togyder and beraued their water long/ with dyuers opinions. The duke of Bourgoyne to whom principally the mater touched/ because of the mariage of Brabant: wherin he challenged to haue great right of enheritaunce/ after the dethe of the duches Jane/ because of the lady Margaret his wyfe: and also to lay the reuenues/ he was the chefe causer of the kynges comyng thyder with all his puissance. Therefore he wolde that euery thyng might be for the best and to the entent that a good peace might be made betwene all ptyes/ that there shuld be no more warre/ he counsayled the kyng that he should not breake the voyage in lokyng and redily for any answere: Then he sayd to the kyng. Sir/ and it lyke your grace I wolde be a mediator betwene you and the duke of Iulyers/ for I trust/ that in all thynges that I shall bryng to a good ende/ that there shall be no more warre betwene you and the duke of Iulyers/ and

a traytour by reason he had so holpen and a
made all our kingdome with me of his/that we ought
to helpe him. He answerth to the kyng a great
thyng for his body/his country/his townes and
castelles/to be at the kynges commaundement
except that ayenst the duke of Guerles he will
entrell/and came not vnder the answeres of the
defyaunce that he had made. To speke a-
gaynst the kynge to reason/it is a great thynge/to that
with be the duke of Iulyers/the duke of Guer-
les shall be the myghtyest/and the cause to cor-
rect/and the more he shall bought vs/and so/
ners come to obeysaunce. Wherfore I counsayle
that we offre him reasonable/for he metely bar-
gayneth hym selfe/and other great lordes of
Almayne entreate for hym. To these wordes
there was no contrary opynyons/but all con-
formed by one assent. Then the bysshoppes of
Colayne and of Liege were called to these
counsayle/who had ben chefe entreatours in
this busynes/and to them it was declared how
they were to goo vnto/and from thence to chaufe/
what tydynges the duke of Iulyers shulde fynde
and saule to vs/if he wolde yeue his answere fa-
uorably and to be to vs. They all thre be-
thought them/and sayd that they wolde go
on this seurte the duke of Guerles was therof
hym selfe right glad to/and the great courage
that he had done/to retorne to haste to pursuade
a peace as the frenche kynge/and specially by
further full defyaunce/out of the style of cyuyll or
reason/and to cause him to come to reason and
mercy. And if he wolde not thus do/but abyde
styll in his opynyon (though feble wyth and
counsayle) than the duke of Iulyers to were
and seale to renounce hym for all ayde or fa-
uour that he myght do/and to become his ene-
my/as other be/and to suffer suche as shall be
appoynted by the kynge and his counsayle to a-
byde there all this wynter/to lye in garysons
in the countrey of Iulyers/to make frontier
warre ayenst the duke of Guerles/and there
to be well entreated and recyued.

These two prelates were called to the
kynges counsayle/to the entents that
they shulde forme to the duke of Iu-
lyers these ayeles/and so they dyd. And than
the duke farre well herde that it behoued hym
to agree/or els to haue his landes ouer ryuen
and wasted/wherfore he assured and swore
and vowed to vpholde all the kynges delyuer/so
that his landes shulde not be occasion nor cry-
led/and he made confente that he shulde
be myghtyest ayenst. Thus the duke of Iulyers
became the frenche kynges man/and made re-
lefe for his landes of Vierson/beyng bycause
Bloys and Berrey/and supped that nyght at
the kynges table. Fyrste sate the bysshoppe of
Liege and the bysshoppe of Colayne/than
the kynge/the duke of Burgoyne/the duke of
Thurayn/the duke of Iulyers/and the duke
of Barbone.

Thus the duke of Iulyers was in rest
and peace by the forsayd meanes/and
the kynge and his armye were lodged in his
countrey/the whiche was pleasaunt and plen-
tyfull of all vytayles. Than the duke of Iuly-
ers went towardes the duke of Guerles his
sonne/But or he came there/there was dyuers
feates of armes done in the countrey for the al-
maynes who be cauterous/of enemyes by nyght
or by daye wolde stop and be them selfe and sette
on the frenshe mens lodgynges to kepe them
wakynge/and sometyme they wanne and some
tyme they lost. But for one almayne that was
taken/there were euer foure frenchmen taken.
And on a daye the constable of Fraunce and
the lorde Coucy/the duke of Lorayne/the mar-
shall of Blamuill/sir Iohan of Vien/sir Jo-
han de la Tremoyle/with a foure thousande men
of armes came before a towne in Guerles cal-
led Venenge/and shewed them selfe before it in
good ordre of bataple. The same tyme the duke
of Guerles was within the towne/and prepa-
red moche their demeanour/but he made none
issue out/for he had not men ynowe wherof he
was ryght sore displeased. Thus the frenche
men were there in good ordre of bataple the
space of foure houres/and whan they sawe that
none wolde issue out/they departed and retur-
ned to their lodgynges. The same euenynge
about the duke of Berreys lodgyng/certayne
lumbers and squyers de be together/to the
entent to ryde to be in the mornynge in to the
landes of their enemyes to brenne some aduenture/
and promysed eche other to ryde togyther
lyke brethern. They were in nombre about
a hundred speares. But whan the mornynge
came all their purpose was broken/for there
was a squyer of Bourgoyne called Godmot a
valyaunt man of armes/he pertayned to the
lorde of Liegre. whan he sawe that they had re-
fused his company/and wolde not delyuer hym

to go with them/ he was sore displeased/ and
broke his wyde to a nother sorte of compayn-
ons/ so that they were to the noumbre of thyrty
speares. They rode forthe togyther/ and toke
all that mornynge and coulde fynde none ad-
venture. And when Gobynos sawe that they
shulde retourne without doynge of any featte
he was sore displeased/ and sayde to his com-
pany. Hyrde/ rode on fayre and easely/ and I
with my page wyll ryde aboute this wode/ to
se if any enbusshe be hydden therin/ and tary
ye at the fyrst ponder Mountayne. They agreed
to hym. Thus he and his page rode forthe cō-
spynge the wode. Whan he had rydden a lytell
waye/ he herde one whystell in the wode/ and
strake his horse with the spores/ and came to
the syde of the wode/ and there he founde an al-
maygne guerlons cuttynge of wode. Than Go-
bynos toke his glayue and came rynynge at
this man/ wherof the man was sore abasshed.
Than Gobynos made sygne to hym that he
shulde go with hym/ and thought that his com-
panyons per shulde se that he had founde some
what/ and thought the same manne shulde bo-
the some scrupe in their lodgynges/ and so
Gobynos rode on before on a lome hackney/
and the almayne folowed hym a foote with a
betwynge axe on his necke/ wherwith he had
wrought in the wode. Gobinos page kepte on
his mayster's courser and bare his baslemente
and speare/ and folowed them halfe slepynge/
bycause he had eaten so early. And the almayn
who knewe nat whyder he shulde go/ nor what
they wolde do with hym/ thought to delyuer
hymselfe/ and came fayre and easely to Gobyn-
nos/ and lyfte up his axe and strake hym suche
a stroke on the hed that he clane it to the teth/
and so ouerthrewe hym starke dede/ the page
knewe nat therof tyll he sawe his mayster fall.
Than the yllayne fledde in to the wode and
saued hymselfe. This aduenture fell to Gobi-
nos/ wherwith suche as knewe hym were sore
displeased/ and specially they of Auuergne/
for he was the ruine of armes that was moste
doughted of the englysshmen in those partes/
and he that dyd them most domage. If he had
been in prysone he shulde haue ben quyckly out/
and if it had been for twenty thousande frankes.
¶ Now lette vs retourne to the duke of
Iulyers.

Who we the duke of Iuliers and the
archebysshop of Colen gate departed
fro the frenche kynge/ and wente to
Aymay to the duke of Guerles/ and
bo we by their meanes he was recon-
syled and brought to peace with the
frenche kynge and with the duches
of Brabante. Cap. C.lix.

Vnto we tell/ as it hathe
ben shewed here before/ howe the
duke of Iulyers made his peace
with the frenche kynge/ by meanes
of the bysshoppes that treated in
that behalfe/ and also to saye the trouthe/ the
duke of Lorayne his cosyn tolde great payne
in the matter. And (as ye haue herde) the duke
prouyded to go to his sonne the duke of Guer-
les/ and to cause hym to come to the kynges
entrey/ as is to make hym warre. Thus the
duke of Iulyers was layne to prouyde at ea
all his counsayl had ben lefte. Thus the duke
of Iulyers and the archebysshoppe toke their
journey to go into Guerles/ and passed the ry-
uer and came to Aymay/ where as the duke
was/ who receyued his father with great ioye
as he was bounde to do/ for there is nothynge
so nere a man as his father and mother. But
he was nothynge glad of that he herde howe
that the duke his father was agreed with the
frenche kynge. Than the duke of Iuliers and
the bysshop shewed hym at length the hole ma-
ter in what case he and his lande stode in. He
made lytle therof/ for he was so sore alyed with
the kynge of Englande that he wolde nat for-
sake hym/ for his herte was good englysshe/
and so excused hym selfe greatly/ and sayde to
his father. Syr/ let me alone/ I wyll abyde the
aduenture/ and if I take domage by treason of
the frenche kynges company/ I am ponge y-
nough to beare it/ and to be reuenged hereafter
on some parte of the realme of Fraunce/ or by-
pon my neyghbours the Brabanders. there is
no lorde cause haue warre without some do-
mage/ sometyme lese/ and sometyme wynne.
When his father the duke of Iulyers herde
hym so hyghe in his oppynyons/ he was sore dis-
pleased with hym/ and sayde. Sonne Iulyers/
for whome make you these wordes/ and who

be they

be they that shall stuffge your homage. Sayd quod he/the kynge of Englande and his puyssaunce/and I haue got retenaple that I haue ye typonges of the englysshe army that is on ye ter/for if they were come as they haue promysed me to be/I wolde haue wasted the frenche men ofterer thanne ones or thre tymes. What quod his father/do you trust and abyde by the englysshemen/they are so beloued in euery quarter/that they wote not to whome to answere. The duke of Lancastre our cosyn/lyeth at Bayon as at Burdeux/and hath entred out of Spayne in a small ostre and slayn his men and spoyled/and he hath sente to Englande for to haue me vtterly of armes and archers/and he can not get to the nombre of .xx. speares. Also the englysshe men haue had but late in playne battayle a great domage in Normandye/for all their chyualry aboute Kenealleh vpon Eyre were ouerthrowe/ and taken/so that as nowe the estate of Englande is not in good quyete wyse ne welle. Wherfore it is not for you to truste at this tyme on the englysshemen/for of them ye shall haue no comforte. Wherfore I counsayle you to be ruled by me/and we shall make your peace with the frenche kyng/I shall be so meke that ye shall neuer receyue shame nor domage. Syr quod the duke of Gurlers/be we mad I with myne honoure accorde with the Frenche kynge though I shulde lese all my hole lande/ & go dwell in some other place/surely I wyll not do it/I am to fere alyed with the kinge of Englande/and also I haue defyed the frenche kynge. Thynke you that for fere of hym I shulde vnlace my harnoys/or brake my scale? ye wolde I shulde be of thonward/I requyre you let me alone/I shall defende myself right well agayne them. I set nought by their threts nyther. The mores/and sarasyns/and cursed turkes shall to fight for me/or the tyme of Iesu my lyue come that they shall be so meke/that the hayreste of them shall wyll be them selfe at home in their owne londes.

Thus at the begynnynge of this treatie the duke of Iulyers and the bysshoppe of Colayne coulde not brake the duke of Gurlers purpose/and yet they were with hym a fyue dayes/and euery day in counsayle. And whan the duke of Iulyers sawe no other/he began sore to argue against his sonne and sayd. Sonne/if ye wyll not be ruled me surely I shall displease you/and as for your enheritaunce of the duchy of Iulyers/ye shall neuer haue one foote therof/but rather I shall gyue it to a straunger/who shall be of puyssaunce to defende it agaynste you. ye are but a foole if ye wyll not be ruled my counsayle. Whan the duke of Gurlers sawe his father enflamed with ire/ than to apease his displeasure sayd. Syr/than counsayle me to myne honoure/and at your desyre I shall learne therto/for syr I wolde fayn obeye your and wyll do. Than the duke of Iulyers sayde. Sonne/now ye speke as ye shulde do/and I shall take for your honoure as moche as I wolde do for myne owne. Than it was deuysed by great deliberacion of counsayle/that for to saue the honoure on all parties/that the duke of Gurlers shulde go to the frenche kynge and to do hym honoure and reuerence/as he ought to do to a kynge/and to make his excuse of the defyaunce that he had sente to the kynge/and to say after this maner. Syr/I trowe it is there was a letter at a tyme sealed with my seale sente in to Fraunce/which came to your knowledge/in the whiche ther were contayned defyaunce/pertayninge to your grace and to your realme/with moche dishonorable/out of the ryght style and vsage that princes and lordes defye other/ the whiche I wyll not answere for/ne that the wordes passed out of my mouthe/not by my commaundement/any wordes touchynge or defamynge your name or signnyory/and syr/to declare that this myne excuse is of trouthe/and that it maye be had out of all suspecte/I shall declare the trouthe of euery thynge. Syr/by reason of the great alyaunce and fauour that I haue borne to my ryght redouted lorde the kynge of Englande/at his requeste and his counsayle/I sente vn to Englande foure of my doughters/and betweene them my seale to seale to any thynge that they concluded vpon/ they sealed this letter and not I/for I neuer knewe before the sealynge of that letter/what was conteyned therin. Syr/I requyre your grace accepte this excuse for this is trewe. but for as for the alyaunce and fauour that I haue made to my lorde the kynge of Englande I wyll neuer breke it/nor do contrarye to that he commaundeth me. But syr/at his requeste and commaundement I wyll helpe you as any other whom it shall please hym who so euer they be/

except myne owne naturall lorde the kynge of Almayne/to whome I am made seruaunt by my mouthe spoken / and by myne handes in his. But syr/ for the honoure of you/ your kynge and in recompensynge the payne and trauayle that ye haue suffered in your iourney comynge hyder/ to knowe the foundacion and trouthe of the defyaunce/ I shall swere to you and kepe it/that I shal neuer make warre agayust you nor defye you / but fyrste ye shall be signyfyed therof an hole yere before. And fyrst myne howse shulde suffyce you. To this deuyse the duke of Guerles sayde/ I am well contente thus to do/ in this there is no dyshonour nor blame to me/as I thynke.

THus on this poynte departed the duke of Iulyers from his sonne the duke of Guerles/and with hym the archebysshoppe of Colongne/and so they returned in to Iulyers and came to Endelher. And whan tyme was they wente to the frenche kynge / and shewed him all the poyntes and artycles before rehersed/and sayd. Syr/ loke what ye will do with the duke of guerles/ for rather than fayle ye shall not haue of hym. The frenche kynge greatly desyred to se the duke of Guerles his cosyn/ by cause he had put hym to so moche payne/ wherfore the sooner he enclyned to this treatye. And the duke of Burgoyn who wolde also that the duches of Brabant and her countrey shulde abyde in rest and peace/ he toke payne to bringe this treatie to effecte/ and that the duke of Guerles myght come to speke with the kynge. And also there was one thynge that made them the sooner agree/ wynter approched and the nyghtes began to be longe and colde / and also the lordes of Fraunce were enformed that Guerles was no countrey to reste in/ in the tyme of wynter. and also dayly they had reporte howe they lolde of their men/ bothe knyghtes and squyers by the lymyters almayns/ who dayly lay in wayte for them. So many reasons and consyderacyons were layde and alledged that they fell to accorde / and the duke of Guerles agreed and the duke of Iulyers his father/ & the duke of Lorayne and the bysshop of Colongne brought hym in to the kynges tente / where there was with the kynge his thre vncles/ and his brother the duke of Tourayne & the duke of Bare/ the erle of Marche/ the erle of Sayntpolle/ the erle dolphyn of Auuergne the erle of Comynge and the constable of Fraunce. There the duke of Guerles knelyd downe before the kynge/ and as it was enformed me/ the kynge toke hym vp/ and there humbly and wyselye he excused hym selfe of the defyaunce that he had made to the kynge. And moreouer he swore/ that if euer he wolde defye the kynge or make warre to the realme of Fraunce that he wolde gyue the kynge knowlege therof a yere before/ and the countreys of Guerles and Brabante to be styll in the same case as they be in at that same present tyme. Thus the matter concluded betwene them. and the duke of Guerles supped with the kynge the same nyght at his table/ he was greatly regarded / bycause he had put the kynge to so moche payne and coste. This treatie and conclusyon was put in writynge and seled / and whan all was done the lordes toke leaue to departe. but or they departed the duke of Guerles demaunded of the kynge/ that all suche prysoners as the frenche men had taken in that warre / that he myght haue them delyuered franke and free. He had his desyre / they were delyuered. Thanne the kynge demaunded of the duke / that all suche prysoners as his men had taken in that voyage shulde be delyuered and rendred agayne. Than the duke of Guerles excused hym selfe/ and sayde. Syr that I can not do/ I am but a poore man/ and whan I knewe of your comynge I fortified my selfe the best I myght with men of warre/ knyghtes and squyers fro beyonde the ryuer of Ryne/ and other places/ and I promysed them that what so euer they wanne in this warre/ it shulde be their owne. wherfore I can take nothinge fro them of that they haue wonne/ & I wolde/ I haue neither puyssaunce nor power to do it/ for if I wolde I were rygoure to them/ they wolde make warre agayust me. wherfore sir/ may it please you to lette it passe/ for I cannot remedy it. The kynge sawe he coulde haue nothyng els/ he suffred it to passe/ and imagyned that he and his realme were riche ynough to encrease poore men/ wherfore he let it passe/ and spake no more therof/ and at their departure all of them were contented eche. Than it was ordeyned to by lodge and to retourne the same way they came/ and then it was sayd that the frenche kynge shulde be at the cyte of Rayns at the feest of all sayntes / and there to holde a great

great feest. Thys nuryy man dyd adyse and
aduyse. ¶ Nowe lete us speke of the en-
glysshe army on the see.

¶ Howe the erle of Arundell and the
knyghtes of Englande beyng on the
see / by fortune of the wynde came to
the Hauyre besyde Rochell / whose be-
synge there was signyfyed to the Lorde
of Vyenne / and of the departynge of
the erle of Arundell. Cap. C.l.

IN the meane seasone
whyle the frenche kyng was
in Guyenne / the englysshe
army was on the see / wher-
of the erle of Arundell was
chefe capytayne / and lorde
of the lande of Harecourt
and many barons of the myddle londe
with hym / so the soo ouerwent hym with
them. Alwaye lyghtly bytwene the feest of Saynt
Remy and all Sayntes / was perylous feason
for stormes and wynters parte / and about
the same tyme there rose suche a tempeste that
it sparkled abrode the englysshe army in suche
wyse / that the barynes marynes there was
sore abasshed / so that purpose they were con-
strayned to take for lande. And the erle of Arun-
dell with other bellyke with hym / whether
they wolde or nat / were fayne to take succour in
a hyrell haurn called the Hauyre / a two
leagues fro Rochell / and the wynde was so stry-
mable can se bore / that they coude not departe
thens. Whanne tydynges therof came to Roch-
elle / they were in great doubt of the fyrste
lette the englysshmen wolde come vnto them and
do them great damage / and closed the gates
and bulne them fayre a bay and abasshe. Than
many spyes came to them fro them of the
Hauyre / howe the englysshe men were but a fewe
Bessellers / and came thyder by force of wynde
and weather / and may do noy nothynge but to the
parte agayne / and that the erle of Arundell
was there / and the lorde Henry Beaumonde /
sir Wyllyam Bohun / & many other
barons of Englande. ¶ Than they of Rochell toke
counsayle what thynge was beste for them to
do / and all thyng consydered / they sayd howe
they shulde but easly acquyte themselfe / if they
went nat to skrymysshe with them. The same
season before the castell of Bouteuyll / was syr
Loys of Sauxere marshall of France / and had
besieged within the fortresse Gyllam of Sayne
Foye a gascon / and with the marshall a great
company of Poyteuyn / of Xayntonge / of Pier-
gourt / of Rochell / and of the lowe marches / for
all were nat gone to to Hunayne with ye kyng.
This syr Loys was fourrayour capytayne o-
uer all the frenssh / betwene Mountpellyer
and Rochell / tyll the retourne of the kynge Cou-
syn. They of Rochell sent worde to the marshall
of the ragyllyaunce beynge at Hauyre / whan
he herde thereof he was ryght ioyfull / and sent
to them that they shulde make redy seuen or
eyght galeys / and to mow them forthe / for he
wolde ryde by lande and fyght with the En-
glysshmen. They of Rochell dyd as they were
commaunded / and syr Loys departed fro his
syege / and dyde it by / for he thought it shulde
be more honorable for hym to fyght with the
erle of Arundell and the englysshe men / rather
than to compasse tyll his syege. Than he
mounted Rochell / and all knyghtes and squy-
ers enfourmed hym. I can nat tell ye what ma-
ner vpon the erle of Arundell had knowledge /
howe the marshall of Fraunce with a great
puyssaunce of knyghtes and squyers was co-
myng en fyght with hym at Hauyre / whiche
tydynges were nat very plesaunte to the erle
of Arundell / howbeit the wynde was some
what lasse / and the see smoyly. Than the erle
shaped vp anchres and sayled in to the see in
suche good season / that if he had tarryed lenger
after / he had been enclosed in the haurn and
euery man taken for to conpment thyder come
the galeys of Rochell / well manned and fur-
nysshed with artyllery and gonnes / and came
streyght vers the haurn of the Hauyre / and fonde
the englysshe men departed. They purseued af-
ter a two leages in the see and shotte gonnes /
howbeit they durst nat longe pursue for fere
of coubusshmentes on the see. Than the frenche
shippes returned / and the marshall of Fraunce
was sore displeased with them of Rochell /
that they sente hym worde so late. The erle of
Arundell take the ways by the ryuer of Gi-
ronde / to come to Burdeaux / and therby syr
Bertyllemewe Brunchell was prysoner / for Gyllonne

¶ .iii. of Sayntonge

of fayre for prouyded his garyson of that he nedyd/ in the meane tyme ꝑ the marshall went to fyght with the englysshe men.

Nowe let hs retourne somwhat to speke of the duke of Lancastre/ howe he was in treatie with the spaynardes/ and also with the Duke of Berry/ for the marryage of his doughter. The kynge of Castyle treated with hym for his sonne the prince of Castyle/ to the entent to haue a peace with the englysshemen. Also the duke of Berry treated to haue the duke of Lancastres doughter for hymselfe/ for he had great delyre to be maryed. And the duke of Lancastre lyked a lage imagynatyf e prince/ sawe well howe it was more profitable for Englande and for hym/ to mary his doughter in to Castyle/ rather than to the duke of Berry/ for therby he thought to recouer the herytage of Castyle in tyme to come/ for his doughter. And if he shulde gyue her to the duke of Berry/ and the duke fortune to dye/ his doughter than shulde be but a poore lady/ to the regarde of other/ bycause the duke of Berry had chyldren by his fyrst wyfe/ who shulde haue all the profyte. Also the duchesse of Lancastre enclyned to the kynge of Castyles sonne. So that shortly Helyon of Lignac was departed fro the duke of Lancastre/ and retourned to the duke of Berry/ beynge as than in Almayne/ thus the kyng of Castyles messagers were well herde/ in suche wyse/ that their wordes were noted and their offers accepted/ and the couenaunte made and sworne betwene Katheryne of Lancastre and the kynge of Castyles sonne/ and writynges and publike instrumentes and obligatory bondes made and concluded/ without reple or repentaunce. So ꝑ the duches of Lancastre after euery thyng set in ordre shulde bring her doughter Katheryn in to Castyle.

All this season the frenche kynge was styll in the frontyers of Iulyers/ conclusyonge with the duke of Guerles/ as ye haue herde before/ and howe they departed. And as the frenche men retourned/ it fortuned on the frontiers of Almayne on a nyght about mydnyght/ as the stone showe fayre/ certayne almayns robbers and pyllers/ that dyd lette nother by peace nor warre/ but alwayes sought for their aduauntages/ some pertaynynge to the lorde of Blaquenem/ and to sir Peter of Couchy/ they were well lodged/ and came and assayled the frenche hostis/ and where they might haue most profyte and aduauntage/ and so passed by the lodgyng of the vycount of Meaulx/ and sawe no fyghtynge/ and returned without any noyse makynge/ ouerthe passynge or retournynge/ and came agayne to their enbusshe/ and than had them what they had seen and founde. And incontynente their almayns came and entred at their aduauntage into the frenchmens lodgynges/ and wan them/ we I can not tell howe many/ and tooke right many of armes prysoners. There was taken the lorde of Vieuville/ and the lorde of Mountcarell. This aduenture the frenche men hadde the same nyght/ by reason they made but esy watche/ and were but euell ordred. The next day when these tydynges were knowen howe the lorde of Vieuville/ and the lorde of Mountcarell were taken/ the frenche men were sore displeased/ and tooke better hede after. When the frenche kynge departed fro the countrey of Iulyers none taryed behynde/ euery man dyd wete to their garysons/ sir Guyllam of Tremoyle and sir Bernard Furnandes/ and all other/ and the brabanyons by the waye euery man wente home. And in the retournynge of the frenche men/ it was ordeyned by great deliberacion of counsayle/ that the frenche kynge (who had ben vnder the gouernynge of his vncles/ euer syth the dethe of the late kynge his father) shulde than take on himselfe the gouernynge and charge of his hole realme/ and his vncles to cease of the gouernynge/ for they had ynough to do in other busynesses. The kynge as thanne was paste twenty yere of age. This was openly publysshed/ and euery man thought it was reasonable. The kynge came to Rennes at the feest of all sayntes/ and there helde a great feest/ and his vncles with hym. And there they had fyrst knowledge that the kynge of Castyle/ and the duke of Lancastre were concluded vpon a peace and vpon a maryage to be had/ betwene the kynges sonne and the dukes doughter. Than the frenche kyng spake with the duke of Berry/ and sayde. Fayre vncle ye haue sayled of your entent/ a nother tyme lyke to entoy the myght that ye wolde haue had/ home fayre you therto/ what sayeth your cosyn? The duke of Berry sayde. Syr I saye nothynge but well/ if I haue sayled there/ I shall spede in some other place. Then the frenche men began to

murmure

murmure vpon this mariage/ and saide. this can nat be done without great alyances/ whi che shalbe a thynge greatly preiudycyall in tyme to come to the realme of Fraunce. And shi che as considred the botom of the mater saide: howe that if Castyle/ Englande/ and Portugale be all of one alyaunce and accorde/ these thre realmes/ what by see and by lande/ they may make warre to the realme of Fraunce. Wherfore they saide/ it were good that the kynge shulde sende and prouyde remedy by tymes/ consyderinge that this vnhappy kyng of Castyle hath made alyances in maner with a dead man: For the duke of Lancastre is as a man without mast and puyssaunce. Also they saide/ howe the kyng of Castyll ought nat to make any alyaunce with any man/ without the counsayle of the frenche kynge. If he do/ the kynge may sende hym worde that he wyll make hym as lowe a varlette/ as he hath made hym a great lorde. Lette the kynge make warre agayns the realme of Castyle and putte out the vnhappy kyng/ sonne to a bastarde/ and lette the kyng gete the realme to his owne handes/ sythe the duke of Lancastre/ who as yet hath no great heritage: he shall well and sagely gouerne it. Howe can ye dare this kynge of Castyle make ye treate for any peace or alyaunce with the duke of Lancastre/ without the knowledge or consent of the frenche kynge/ who hath so moche ayded/ honoured/ and aduaunced hym? He had loste his realme/ if the puyssaunce and blode royall of Fraunce had nat ben: He hath well marchaundyced/ and yet he wyll marchaundyse. But if it be (as it is sayd) lette hym be shamed and dysherited/ and lette hym haue suche punyshyment/ that he may well knowe that he hath euell done.

These wordes multiplyed/ in suche wyse/ that all thynges consydered/ The kyng and his vncles/ and his counsayle/ determyned to sende in to Castyle to kynge Johan/ and to shewe hym on the frenche kynges behalfe/ that he be well auysed and take hede what he dothe: And that he be nat so hardy to make any treatie or alyaunce with the Englysshemen/ nat with the duke of Lancastre/ in any thyng y shulde be preiudycyall to the Croyne or realme of Fraunce. And if he haue done/ or do/ or thynketh to do: Lette hym be sure that the puyssaunce of Fraunce shall/ as moche or more sette hym a bacbe and hynder hym/ as it hath auaunced hym before: And that the kynge and the realme shall entende to do nat kynges actes/ but to dystroye hym. Than it was consydred who shulde do this message. And it was thought that who somer shulde do it/ ought to be a hardy man & well spoken/ and sagely and valyauntly to declare the kynges pleasure. It was thought that a meane and a symple persone ought nat to do that message. Than there were thre persones named the lorde of Coucy/ sir Johan of Vyen admyrall of Fraunce/ & sir Guye de la Tremoyle. Of these thre to take one to go in to Castyle on this voyage. And all thynges consydred/ sir Johan of Vyenne was apoynted to go. Than the kynge and his counsayle sayd vnto hym. Admyrall make you redy/ ye shall go on this voyage/ and ye shall haue none other letters to the kyng of Castyle but of credence/ ye are sufficyently instructed of the mater wherupon ye be sente. And saye vnto the kynge of Spayngne/ that he aduyse well and cause to be aduysed: And to rede and cause to be red/ the alyaunces/ ordynaunces/ and pactes/ swoine and sealed betwene hym and vs: and marke well youre answere that ye shall haue of hym and of his counsayle/ and therupon we shall take our grounde to procede further. The admyrall answered and sayd/ it shalbe done.

¶ Howe the Admyrall of Fraunce was ordayned by the frenche kyng and his counsayle as ambassadour/ to go to the kynge of Castyle. And howe the Duke of Berrey sente to the erle of Foize to treate for a maryage/ betwene the Duke of Berrey & the erles doughter of Boulonge.

Cap. C.li.

The

The admyrall of Frauce tarryed nat long at Paris/ but made hym quyckly re dye to departe/ and tooke his leaue of the kyng and of his vncles/ and tooke his waye by Burgoyne/ bycause he wolde go by Auygnone to se the pope and his brother/ and so he dyde. ¶ Nowe lette vs leaue spekẙg of hym/ and speke somwhat of Geffray Tete noyre/ who was enclosed and besieged within the castell of Vandachoze. But fyrste we wyll speke of the duke of Berrey who had great desyre to marry/ as he well shewed within that yere. Whan he sawe that he had fayled of the duke of Lancasters doughter/ he was enfourmed that the erle of Boulonge had a fayre dough ter named Jane/ doughter to the lady Elyz nour of Compynges/ howe be it she was nat with her father nor with her mother/ she was in the countrey of Bierne with the erle of Foix her great frende and cosyn. She hadde ben there brought vp and nourysshed a well entreated the space of syxe yeres/ in the ca stell of Ortayes/ without coste or charge to fa ther or mother. The erle often tymes hadde ben desyred to haue had her maryed: but al wayes the erle answered that the damoysell was to ponge. Specially sir Bernarde bro ther to the erle of Armynache hadde desyred to haue her/ and promysed that if he myght haue her in maryage/ the warre shulde ende betwene them/ for the chalenge of the lande of Byerne. But for all those promyses/ the erle wolde nat agree therto/ but answered euer/ howe that his cosyn was to ponge. but a monge his owne men he wolde saye other wyse. For as sir Espaygne du Lyon shewed me/ he wolde saye/ howe they of Armynacke myght well repute hym for a beest/ if he shul de graunt their desyre/ seynge it was to his domage. For if he shulde graunt them his cosyn in maryage/ he shulde strength them/ and enfeble hym selfe. Sayeng/ howe they of Armynake helde by force and nat of right the countie of Compynges/ the whiche herye tage is by his mother and aunte come of the cosyn of Boloyne. I wyll well they knowe I shall mary her in so stronge a place and puissaunt to make warre with them for the herytage of Compynges. For as nowe there is none to an swere but a deed man.

Thus whan the erle of Armynacke & sir Bernarde his brother/ sawe that they coulde nat come to their pur pose/ as long as her aunte lyued. Than they sayde to the duke of Berrey/ that this lady shulde be a fayre maryage for Johan of Ber rey his sonne. And by their settyng out the duke sente sufficyent and noble messangers into Byerne to the erle of Foix. Desyryng hym that all quell wyll myght be sette aparte and euery thynge pardoned of tymes paste/ and that he myght haue the damoysell of Bou longe/ for Johan his sonne in maryage. So that the erle of Boulonge/ father to the dam moysell sholde therto agree and assent. The erle of Foix made good cheere to these ambassadors but he excused hym for that maryage/ & sayd howe the lady his cosyn was to ponge. And also he sayde/ howe that whan the countesse of Boulonge her mother delyuered her in to his charge/ she caused hym to sweare/ that he shulde neuer gyue her in no place/ with out her knowledge and consent. And in no wyse he sayde he myght/ nor wolde nat breake his promyse nor othe/ and he sayd many ought to desyre hym therunto. This excuse the Erle made/ for he knewe well that his cosyn of Co mynges/ who was with the erle of Urgell her brother in the realme of Arragon/ wolde nat agree therunto. Thus the ambassadors of the duke of Berrey returned without a ny thyng doyng to their purpose. And whan they were gone (as sir Espaygne du Lyon shewed me) the erle sayde ah. The duke of Berrey and his counsayle myght well repute me for an ignorant/ whan he wolde haue me to enforce myne enemyes. Johan of Berry is cosyn germayn to myne aduersaries of Ar mynake. that bargayne shall I neuer make/ I shall rather mary her in to Englande. It hath been spoken of to sir Henry of Lanca stre erle of Derby/ cosyn to the duke of Lan castre. If I thought nat greatly to displease the Frenche kynge/ there shulde none other haue her but he. As yet I knowe nat what I wyll do/ for I shall rather mary her at my pleasure/ than they of Armynake shulde ha ue her ageynste my wyll. But me thynketh to do ayenst leaue. I wyll nat to trouble my selfe in the matter.

Whan

Whan the duke of Berrey knewe the certe
tie that the duke of Lācastre shulde marry his
doughter to ꝑ king of Castyls sone/ & that he
coude nat bicche that mariage in no wyse: he
was a.v. or sure dayes so pensyue/ that none
about hym durst demaude what he ayled: at
last he declared his entent to thē of his coun
saile. that they shuld to hym sir/ if ye haue fay
led of the duke of Lancasters doughter/ ye
maye recouer another/ as great and as good
(as she is) howbeit she is very ponge for
your age. Wherfore we can nat tell if the erle
of Foix wyll refuse it for that cause/ whe hath
the lady in his gouernaunce. Ye quod the du
ke/ that is the doughter of the Erle of Bou
longe/ the erle of Foix hath refused Johan of
Berrey/ howbeit in the name of god let vs
pet assaye. Than the duke wrote to the Erle
of Foix/ signifyeng hym ryght swetely that
he wolde sende to hym foure lordes: as therle
of Tancrere the lorde de la Ryuer/ sir Guy de
la Tremoyle/ and the Vycount Dalley/ to
treate with hym to haue for hym selfe in ma
ryage the doughter of Boulonge/ hoping pur
der his kepyng/ so it myght be to his pleasure/
and desyred the erle to sende hym an answere
in writyng the bote of his mynde/ to thentent
that his messangers shulde nat trauayle in
vayne/ nor lese there wages. The erle of Foix
receyued the messagers that brought the wri
tynge ryght amyably/ and wrote agayne by
them to the duke of Berrey: sayeng/ how we he
was right gladde of thatte offeryng/ & wolde
be redy to receyue the sayd lordes/ pother in
Foix or in Byerne/ so that the Erle of Bou
longe and the countesse/ father and mother to
the lady be agreed therunto. And as their re
tourne whan the duke of Berry herde his an
swere he was right ioyfull/ and all that wyn
ter dyd he purswe/ what busy & chere that he
myght attayne to this mariage the nerre for
ward after. He coude nat bring his purpose a
boute shortely/ for he knewe well the erle of
Foix was no man lightely to be wonne/ for he
was sure he shulde haue many delays. Where
fore the duke thought to worke wyselye/ & sent
secretall messangers to pope Clement/ who
was cosyn and nerest hym to the counsell of
Boulogne. The pope was right ioyeuse whā
he knewe ꝑ his cosyn myght to ryngle be ma
ryed/ as to the duke of Berrey/ vncle to the
Frenche kyng. Than the pope wrote to the
other

of Foix/ signifyeng hym right honorably/ & ab
rydgyng hym that he shulde nat vary fro ꝑ
treatie of that mariage/ for therby their ly
nage shulde be enhaunsed. Thus the erle of
Foix receyued letters fro all parties & he an
swered them all/ for right well he coude dis
mule in suche busynesse. He helde all the par
ties in good loue and fauour/ bothe the pope
and ꝑ duke of Berrey. yet there was nat the
wyser of the bothe nor of their counsayls/ ꝑ
coude knowe perfitely what the erle of Foix
thought surely to do. ¶ Nowe lette vs som
what leaue speakyng of this mater/ and re
tourne to the siege of Marchadoze.

Ye haue herde here before in this hystorie/
how sir Wyllm Lignac and sir Johā Bour
launce/ & dyuers other knightes and squiers
of Auuergne and Limosin had besieged ꝑ ca
stell of Marchadoze/ and Geffray Tete noyre
within: But they coude nat wyn it by no ma
ner of assaut/ for they within were prouyded
of all thynges necessary for. xii. yere/ though
they had no refresshyng. They without ofte
tymes wolde come out of their bastydes and
scrymysshe. Durynge the siege many feates
of armes were done/ & dyuers hurt on both
ptes. And so it fortuned at a scrymysshe Gef
fray Tete noyre was there hym selfe/ & auan
ced so forwarde/ that he was stroken through
the basenet in to the hed with a quarell/ so
that he was fayne to kepe his bedde/ wherof
all his company was sore displeased/ and the
reason that he lay there was no scrymysshig:
of this hurt if he had ben well kept he might
sone haue ben hole/ but he kept hym selfe nat
quiet/ and specially for lechery/ the whiche he
derely bought/ for it cost hym his lyfe: but or
he died he knewe well before there was no re
medy but dethe/ for it was playnly shewed
hym/ by reason of his yuell rule. He was in
structed of dethe for his hed apostumed/ wher
fore he was counsayled to declare his wyll &
to make hym redy to god ward: than he made
his testament. First he called to come before
hym all the fourteaygne companyons of the
garyson/ suche as were best expert in armes.
Than he sate vp in his bedde and sayd. sirs
and derely beloued companyons/ I knowe
well I am in great daunger of dethe: we ha
ue all yong season ben togyder/ & kepte good
company: I haue ben your maister and true

capitayns

capitayne to my power. Wherfore I wolde gladly in my lyfe dayes se that ye haue another capitayne / that truely shulde acquyte hym to you all / and to kepe this fortresse. for I shall leaue it well prouyded of euery thynge necessary pertenyng to a castell of warre bothe of wyne / vitaylles / and artyllary / and other thynges requysyte. Wherfore I demaunde of you all in generall / if ye be abuysed of any capitayne or capitayns meetely to be chosen to gouerne you and this castell / as men of warre aduenturers ought to do / for suche hath ben alwayes the warre that I haue vsed. I haue made warre moche vnder the shadowe of the kyng of Englandes quarell. I haue alwayes be desyrous to be there as somwhat was to be gotten / & so alwayes companyons aduenturers ought to do / further as desyre frates of armes to aduenture them selfe. Here in these frontiers is a good countrey and fruytfull / and great profyte to be gotten therin / thoughe the Frenche men nowe beliege vs / it wyll not endure alwayes: the syege and there batayles wyll breke ere long. Syrs / and were me to my demaunde. Nowe ye chosen any capitayne amonge you? The companyons stode styll and gaue none answere. and whan he sawe that they spake not he begonne to speke agayne with swete wordes and sayd. Syrs / I thynke surely of this my demaunde ye haue thought before tyme well. Wherfore syrs / as I haue layne here in my bedde / I haue thought and deuysed for you. Syr quod they we beleue it well: and it shalbe more agreable to vs that it cometh of you / rather than of vs. And syr / syr we it vs if it please you. Syrs quod he / I shall declare it to you / and name hym that I meane.

How we Gesfray Tenetoyre dyde chose a capitayne ouer his company: and how he made his testament / & so dyed. And how the duke of Guerles departed fro his countre to go in to Spruce / and of the inconuenyent that fell to hym in the lande of the duke of Stolpe / where he was taken prisoner and decapyted. Cap. Clxi.

Syr quod Gesfray / I knowe well ye haue alwayes serued and honoured me / as men ought to serue there fourtayne and capitayne / and I shall be gladder if ye wyll agree to haue to your capitayne one that is descended of my blode. Beholde here Aleyne Rouy my cosyn and Peter his brother / who are men of armes and of my blode. I require you to make Aleyne youre capitayne / and to sweare to hym fayth / obeysaunce / loue / and loyalte here in my presence / and also to his brother: Howbe it I wyll that Aleyne haue the fourtayne charge. Syr quod they we are well content / for we haue ryght well chosen. Then all the companyons made theym seruyture to Aleyne Rouy and to Peter his brother. Whan all that was done / than Gesfray spake agayne and sayde. Nowe syrs / ye haue obeyed to my pleasure / I thanne you great thanke / wherfore syrs / I wyll ye haue parte of that ye haue holpen to conquere. I saye vnto you / that in yonder chest that ye se stande yonder / there is to the some of xxx. thousande frankes / I wyll gyue them accordynge to my conuenent. Wyll ye all be content to fulfyll my testament / howe saye ye? Syr quod they / we be right well contente to fulfyll youre commaundement. Than sayde he / I wyll and gyue to the Chapell of Saynt George here in this Castell / for the reparacions therof a thousande and fyue hundred frankes: And I gyue to my louer / who hath truely serued me two thousande and fyue hundred frankes: And also I gyue to Aleyne Rouy youre newe capitayne foure thousande frankes: Also to the porteres of my chambre I gyue fyue hundred frankes. To myne officers / I gyue a thousande and fyue hundred frankes. The rest I gyue and bequith as I shall shewe you. ye be vpon a tyrytte companyons all of one sorte / ye ought to be obeysaunt and all of one alyaunce / without debate / enuye / or heyst amonge you. All this that I haue shewed you / ye shall fynde in yonder Chest / I wyll that ye departe all the substaunce equally and truely betwene you thyrtie. And if ye be not thus contente / but that the deuyll wyll set debate betwene you / than yonder powder is a straunge axe / broke by the

coffer

ester and gette it who can / to those wordes
euery man answered and said. Sir and dere
master / we are and shalbe all of one accord
for we have so moche lauch / doutes you
not we will lacke no ester / nay lacke no peny
of that ye have ordayned and commaunded.

Thus Geffray Teate Noyre made his te-
stament and lyued not paste two dayes after /
and was buryed in the chapell of saint George
within the castell. His will was accomplis-
shed / and this .xxv. thousande frankes beyn-
ded as he had ordayned. And Aleyne Roux
and Peter Roux his brothers / were capyta-
yns of the castell of Tarascon. All this sea-
son the siege still endured / but there were but
fewe scrymysshes made. Howbeit when the
dethe of Geffray Teate noyre was knowen
in Auuergne and Lymosyn / the knyghtes &
squyers there were right ioyfull thereof / and
douted lesse than they dyde before. For thus
Geffray in his tyme was sore douted / for he
was a good and a sage captayne and expert
in all warre.

NOwe lette vs retourne to the duke
of Guerles and to the werke that fell to
hym in this season / because I have
spoken of hym before: For he was mocyd the
Frenche kyng his vncles / and his brother / &
other nobles of Fraunce came to the entre of
the countrey of Guerles: and the kyng dep-
ted thens and the duke / hauyng no great da-
mage. And when the duke of Guerles sawe
that all the men of warre were departed / and
that he was apeased with the duches of Bra-
bant and with all his enemyes / by reason of
the compolicion that was made / as to vnder-
stande by the towne of Greue vpon certayne poyn-
tes and artycles / ordayned betwene the duke
of Burgone / the duches of Brabant / and the
duke of Guerles. Than he thought (to the
tent to employ his season) to go in to Pyerd-
ye made hym redy / and gate hym company
of knyghtes and squyers of his owne coun-
trey / and other places. And about the feest of
saynt Martyn he rode forthe throughe Ha-
naynge / and in euery place where as he pas-
sed he had good chere. And so longe he rode
that he came to the lande of Juliers / I knowe
not by what aduenture. Certayne men layde
awayte on hym / and in the fyldes set on hym
as he was vnarmed / and ouercame hym and all
his men / so that they lost all their horses / ar-
mure / vessell / golde and syluer / and were all
leyde prysoners to a towne / and there sware
faythe and trouthe to paye their raunsomes /
and specially the duke of Guerles became pro-
myse and made promyse to pay his raunsome
to a squyer called Arnolde / his surname I
know not nat. Than duke and prysoners were
leyde to a stronge towne in the lande of the
duke of Iuliers / whether the duke was there
or nat I was nat enformed therof, but when
the great mayster of Pruslande herde
the duke of Guerles was taken as he was come
tyng in to their countrey / they were sore dis-
pleased therwith / and sayde howe the matter
shulde nat rest in that case / for they to suffre
it shulde be greatly to their blame. Than
they tepsed vpwen and departed ten Dutche
bridge / and came with a great strength of
men towardes the towne and castell / where
as the duke of Guerles was in prison. When
the squyer that had taken the duke was en-
formed of the comyng of the great mayster
of Pruce with suche a puyssaunce broughte
greatly / and determyned nat to abyde the
comyng to the castell / but thought to depart
But or his departure he came to the duke of
Guerles and sayd to hym. Sir duke / ye are
my prisoner and I am your mayster. Ye are
a gentylman and a true knyght: ye have swo-
rne and geuen me your fayth wherefore I
go and will go / ye ought to folowe me: I
can nat tell if ye shall come or nat / the great may-
ster of Pruce or nat / he comyth hyder with a
great puyssaunce: I thynke nat to abyde hym
tary you here if ye will / I will carry with me
your fayth and promyse. The duke to those
wordes gaue eare and were: and the squyer
tooke his horse and departed / and wente to a
place stronge ynoughe: And at his departyng
he sayde agayne to the duke. Sir / ye shall
fynde me in suche a place / he named hym a
stronge castell and oute of all hyghe wayes.
And when he was gone the great mayster of
Pruce came to the duke of Guerles where
as he was / for there was none to lette hym
and so delyuered the duke out of prison: and
if he hadde founde the squyer there surely he
had been slayne. Than the great mayster of
Pruce retourned to Cornyl bridge / and the
duke of Guerles with hym.

I shall

Shall shewe you what fell of this
dispuete. That it was/ great bruit
ran in bytens touchyng/ and spec-
ally in Braygne of the makyng of the duke
of Guerles/ many men that lytteren hoped
great warre shold ryse/ Thus when the duke
of Guerles was come to Cornet besyge and
was delyuered/ as ye haue harde: than he ser
mandyed hys counsel/ howe he shuld beehaue hym
self to the kynge/ that sente hym/ and
commaundyd the wardeyn that he shuld speke
at his departyng. Than he thought on hym selfe
that it was best he wolde bathe hym selfe/
but truely acheyued his fayre/ and sayd to the
great maister of Rodes/ that he wolde no lenger
tary there/ but go to the kynge that sente
hym. And so bytrumped to do his mys-
dynge that the great mayster coude saye or
do: Assoyled hym apon/ absolu apon/ nor
after dyner/ thought not coude the duke to ab-
syde/ but that he wolde nedes go to ꝓ towne
where/ as the kynge was/ whyle he called his
counsel: euery man that herde therof/ repu-
ted it for a great vnaduysednesse. When they
came to knowledge of his frendes and kyn-
dnes/ than they treated for his delyuerannce.
and so he was delyuered by the helpe & mean-
nes of the duke of Brabant/ who toke great
payne in the matter: howbe it the duke of
Brabant or he coueted that the duke of guer-
les shulde be delyuered out of daunger/ and
out of his lande; wolde in any wyse that the
duke of Guerles shulde swere and seale/ that
he and his heyres neuer after that dayes/ nor
make other warre for hym/ shulde take any ve-
geaunce for that matter/ by ways of dyssymu-
lacion or otherwyse. Thus he was sayne to
do or he departed. This auenture had the
duke of Guerles that yere. Nowe let vs
retourne to sir Johan of Hyen admyrall of
Fraunce/ and shewe what he dyde and what
he sayd to the kyng of Castyle/ on the Frenche
kynges behalfe.

Howe sir Johan of Hyen dyd his
message to kynge Johan of Castyle/
for the Frenche kynge and his coun-
sayle/ and what answere the kynge
of Castyle made. Cap. C.liii.

The admyrall of Fraūce
goyng forth in his iourneye/
that he entred into Castyle/
and remembred where he
shulde the kynge. It was
shewed hym howe he was
at Burgus/ he rode thy-
der/ and alyghted at his lodgynge and re-
freshed hym/ and than made hym redy to go
to the kynges palays: and he was receyued
after the maner of the countrey right honora-
bly/ for the loue and honoure of the Frenche
kyng. And he was brought in to the kynges
chambre/ & there the kyng receyued hym ioy-
fully. Than he delyuered the kynge his let-
ters. The kyng redde them and called his cou-
sayle a parte/ and whan they perpued by his
letters that he had credence/ than the admy-
rall was called forthe/ and was commaunded
to declare the entent of his commynge. And he
who was redy sayd in fayre language. Syr
kyng and all ye of his counsayle. The frenche
kyng hath sente me to you/ because it is come
to his knowledge/ howe ye shall marry your
sonne to the duke of Lancasters doughter. Syr
sir/ ye knowe well that he is ꝓ kyng my mas-
ters aduersary. The kyng and his counsayle
haue great maruayle howe ye may here or en-
tende to any treatie in all the worlde for any
marryage without their knowlodge. for they
saye and true it is/ that marryage of chyldren
can not be without alyaunce/ and amyte of
peace and loue. Syr/ he sendeth you worde
by me/ that ye be well aduysed what ye haue
done/ or are mynded to do. And ꝓ in no wyse
it be preiudiciall to the kyng nor to ꝓ realme
of Fraunce/ nor therby to breke the boundes
and alyaunces that hath ben sworne and sea-
led betwene kyng Henry your father/ ꝓ pre-
lates and noble estate of this your realme/
and the noble kyng and realme of Fraunce.
Beware well that they in no wyse be broken
for if they be and were openly knowen/ pe
pon in the churches sentence/ and to be excom
municate on payne vnpardonable: And al-
so to be in the indygnacion of the kynge and
of all the nobles of Fraunce/ and bely de that
to haue them your great enemyes. Syr/ this
is the commaundement of the kyng & his coun
sayle/ that I shall shewe to you.

When ꝓ kyng of Castyle & parte of his coun
sayle/

Castyle/ suche as were there had brought the kynges ambassadours/ they were shall hed/ and ryche of them lodged/ but none that gaue any answere but sayde/ we shall hoppe/ and at the laste a lyttell hoppe spake and sayde. Syr Johan/ ye are newly come in to these partes/ and the kyng and all we/ saye ye we be right ryche and welcome. The kyng hath sent hyther and vnderstande what ye haue to say/ ye shall haue shortly an answere/ and in a day or two/ soone after/ they came and sayde/ the kyng of Castyle shall obtayne all that he desyreth quod sir Johan of Ryen/ and soone the kynges ambassadours departed from Castyle/ and came to the kynge of Portyngale/ and shewed me howe he sayed there/ and howe he was receyued/ and that he was not determyned to departe without answere/ and howe he had spoken with the kynge/ and the kynge had promysed hym to gyue hym answere/ and howe he was lodged in the towne of Coymbre/ and howe he had dyned with the kynge/ and howe the kynge had made hym and his men good chere/ and howe the kynge had promysed hym to gyue hym answere/ that they shulde haue the kynge of Castyle not his counsayll in no maner of thynge/ for they had nat done nor shulde nat do any thynge with the kynge of Englande/ that shulde be hurte or vnprofytable to the realme of Portyngale/ the alyaunce that had been made and sealed betwene the kynge of Castyle and hym/ he wolde kepe/ and neuer to be agaynste the kynge of Castyle nor his/ but yf he made warre on hym/ and howe the kynge of Castyle had promysed hym to gyue hym answere/ that they shulde haue the kynge of Castyle not his counsayll in no maner of thynge/ for they had nat done nor shulde nat do any thynge with the kynge of Englande/ that shulde be hurte or vnprofytable to the realme of Portyngale/ the alyaunce that had been made and sealed betwene the kynge of Castyle and hym/ he wolde kepe/ and neuer to be agaynste the kynge of Castyle nor his/ but yf he made warre on hym/ and howe the kynge of Castyle had promysed hym to gyue hym answere/ that they shulde haue the kynge of Castyle not his counsayll in no maner of thynge/ for they had nat done nor shulde nat do any thynge with the kynge of Englande/ that shulde be hurte or vnprofytable to the realme of Portyngale/ the alyaunce that had been made and sealed betwene the kynge of Castyle and hym/ he wolde kepe/ and neuer to be agaynste the kynge of Castyle nor his/ but yf he made warre on hym/ and howe the kynge of Castyle had promysed hym to gyue hym answere/ that they shulde haue the kynge of Castyle not his counsayll in no maner of thynge/ for they had nat done nor shulde nat do any thynge with the kynge of Englande/ that shulde be hurte or vnprofytable to the realme of Portyngale/ the alyaunce that had been made and sealed betwene the kynge of Castyle and hym/ he wolde kepe/ and neuer to be agaynste the kynge of Castyle nor his/ but yf he made warre on hym/ and howe

great domage in the countrey / for they toryed there a fyftene dayes / and no man encountred them. the marshall of Blanchestle was in Normandy / but he hacnes nat of their compynge / if he had he wolde haue prouyded for the matter. And whan the eagle the men had done their enterprise / and done great domage to the countrey of Normandy / almoche as a bilioed thousande frankes came bake. Than they turned backe / and passed agayne the watches / and returned to Cherbourg / and dyd put all their conquest in sureties and sauegarde in to their shyppes. And whan they had wynde & weather / and their shyppes charged / than they entred and byfanced and toke the see / and returned in to Englande / & arryued at Hampton. Thus the army of the erle of Arundell on this syde conclued in that season.

Tho we spy Loys of Lancere wente to se the erle of Foyse at Ortays / and tho we be fore the duke of Lancaster at Burdeaux / there were debes of armes done bytweene fyue frenchmen and fyue englysshmen / and tho the duches of Lancastre wente with her doughter in to Castyle to kynge Johan. Cap. Clviii.

At this seuen syr Loys of Lancere marshall of Fraunce went to Langueduc / in the marches of Thoulouse and Carcassone / and he harnessed well of the trompettes that were bytweene the duke of Berry and the erle of Foyse / but the in wyage of the duke of Berrenges doughter / whom the duke of Berry wolde haue thoughte the hande fell were right ponge. Than the marshall had affection to go se the erle of Foyse as I was enformed by his men at Ortays / for hym he came thyder be fore he went thyre. Be cause of the comynge of the frenche kynge / and I shall shewe you why a lytel fore. The frenche kynge was in the pongecaus and before to wrangle / and he hym selfe was at thees in Languedoc / where is a great countrey / ryche full of vytayle / townes and castelles and all thyng ryght at his

desyre and wolde / for the duke of Berry and his vncle / who had the gouernaunce of that countrey / had greatly impouerysshed and put low the countrey / by taylles and great oppressyons / the complaynyng whereof came to the kynges eares / by reason that he was newly entred in to the gouernaunce of his realme. Than the kynge sayde he wolde go in to Languedoc to refresshe that countrey / and also to go and se the good towne he had neuer seen before / and also to other townes he had bene sore wolde homers and large of prese of. Thus the marshall went before on his way / and departed fro the erle of Foyse / with a fyue hundred speres / and rode so longe / he came to Carbone in Bygorre / and sir Charles de Dreux in Berne. And the erle of Foyse who was signyfyed of his comynge was sore afrayd / and remembred all his offences that the towne of Ortays shulde be well apparelled to receyue him / for he sayd the marshall somewhat pleased hym right well. Howbeyt he dyd his men bere stobe / and the erle rode out in to the felde to mete with hym / and made hym good chere. Soo he was at Ortays after noone / and the marshall sayd to the erle / howe the frenche kynge had great affection to se the countrey of Languedoc / and to se hym. Than the erle answered and sayd. Syr / the kynge shall be right welcome / and gladly I wolde be to se hym. yea / but sir quod the marshall / it is the kynges entencion at his comynge playnely to knowe whether ye will holde with hym or with his enemyes / for ye holde neuer at one with no body. Sir quod the erle I thanke you of that ye haue spoken vn to me / for sir / though I wolde neuer agree me / yet take no parte there hath been good cause why. But for the warre bytwene Englande and Fraunce / I haue nothynge to do therwith / I holde my countrey of Bierne of no man / but of god and the swerde. Howbeit I am to put my self in remembraunce of the displesure of one kynge or other / yet I knowe well myne aduersaryes of Berry make their boaste in them is to bringe me in the indygnacion of both partyes / for the cause of whiche wente in to Aquayne by the sufferaunce of the erle of Armynake / the cause wolde haue gone no warre / he may be well greued therwith / he hath bene of

Johan

Johan Chandos had not broken his purpoſe/ but I thanke god alwayes I haue borne my ſelfe as medely and as coūgerly as I coulde/ and ſhall do as longe as I lyue/ and whan I am dede/ let the maters go as they wyll. Than the erle of Foyſe and the marſhall paſſed the tyme tyl prece. And at there departure the erle gaue hym a fayre courſer/ a fayre mule/ and a nother good horſe/ all theſe to gyther rychely ap pyled and apareiled. And he gaue to ſyr Ihon de Grete of Thalus and to ſyr Raymonde Duk puyn/ to eche of theſe two knyghtes fraūches/ and to fyue other ſquyers/ to eche of them fyfty frans. Than the marſhall toke leaue to departe to Tholous. And I (ſyr Iohan Froyſſart) was there the ſame tyme/ and wolde haue departed two dayes with hym/ but the erle of Foyſe wolde not ſuffre me/ and ſayd I ſholde not as than departe. So it behoued me to byde his pleaſure. Sir Loys departed fro Orays and robert Canbe/ and the lorde Dolphyn of Ver gyne conueyed hym/ and ſyr Peter of Caleſtan tyne of the erle of Foyſ accompanyed.

Ame the ſame ſeaſon there was a Burgoyne a herot of armes borne be fore the duke of Lancaſtre/ by true en gendrure of his owne houſe/ and fyue frenche menne/ ſome of them were of the marſhall of Frāces houſe. Fyrſt/ by ſ Perron Dalagnie a gaſcone englyſſhe/ agaynſt ſyr Peter Dan pigmont frenche. Secondly betwene ſyr Ara gon Raymon englyſſhe/ agaynſt the baſtarde of Chaūigny frenche. The thyrde/ betwene Loys Walapure/ capytayne of Agremonte frenche/ agaynſt Jaquemyn Coine de Cette englyſſhe. Fourthe betwene Jehan de Vaures frenche/ and the ſonne of the lorde of Chaumonte gaſcone englyſſhe. The fyfte by Guillyam Foucalt frenche/ againſt the baſtarde of the lorde of Chaumont englyſſhe. And to ſe theſe armes accompliſhed/ diuers knyghtes and ſquyers of Bierne of theſe of Foyſ houſe/ rode there way vnnethe Bardeaux/ I went with them to compayny. betwene Orays and Bardeaux is but xviii. myle. There we ſawe the ſayde armes borne before ſayde. And ſo in the preſence of the duke of Lancaſtre and the duches/ their doughter/ and other ladyes and damoſels of the countrey. Theſe knyghtes were not all armed at ones/ but euery man by hym ſelfe/ with his fyue men apart: their armes were fyue courſes with a ſpeare/ fyue ſtrokes with a ſwoorde/ fyue with an axe/ and fyue with a dagger/ and all a horſebacke. And this they dyd in the bayes/ and none of all theſe hurte/ but ſyr Raymon ſlewe the baſtardes horſe/ wherwith the duke of Lancaſtre was ſore diſpleſed/ and blamed greatly the knyght becauſe he bare his ſpeare ſo lowe/ and the duke gaue the baſtarde one of his horſes. Whan this was accompliſ ſhed/ euery man reyted to their owne houſes.

Alone after the duchеſſe of Lancaſtre ordayned to goo in to Caſtyle/ and to leade with her Katheryne her doughter/ who ſholde haue in marryage the kynge of Caſtyls ſonne. And the duchеſſe entente was/ ſyth ſhe wolde entre in to Caſtyle to go to Man tuell/ where ſometyme was ſ bataple betwene kynge Don Petre her father/ agaynſt kynge Henry of Caſtyle/ and of ſyr Bertram of Cleſ quyn. And there ſhe purpoſed to make ſuffre ens quiry where the kynge her father lay buryed/ and to brygge vp his bones/ and to haue them to the cyte of Cyuill/ and there to bury them agayne rychly/ as it appertayned to a kynge. In the begynnynge of March/ whanne the ſonne began to mount/ and the bayes to en creaſe/ than the duches of Lancaſtre was redy with her doughter/ and ſo departed fro Bur deaux and went to Bayon/ and there the duke of Lancaſtre toke leaue of her/ and he retour ned to Burdeaux. And the ladyes rode forthe to Dax/ and there ſhe was well receyued/ for the eyre of Dax was vnder the obeyſaunce of the kynge of Englande. There ſhe reſted two dayes/ and than paſſed throughe the countrey of Baſquenes/ and paſſed by the paſſe of Rou ceraile/ and entred in to Nauerre/ and came to Pampilona/ and there founde the kyng of Na uerr and the quene/ who receyued the duchеſſe honourably. The quene of Nauerr was ſiſter to the kynge of Caſtyle. The duches and her doughter were a monethe paſſynge throughe the realme of Nauerr/ for they tarryed with the kynge and with the quene a certayne ſpace/ and their coſtes and charges were borne and payed for. Than they entred in to Spaygne/ and at the entre of the realme they founde of the kynge of Caſtyls ſeruauntes redy there to receyue them/ accordynge as they were com maunded. And than the ponge prince was cal led prince of Galyce.

Howe the duches of Lancastre departed fro the kynge of Castyle/ and wente to Mantuell to brynge her fathers bones to Ciuyll/ and howe the frenche kynge sente ambaxadours to the erle of Foyse to treate for the mariage of the duke of Berrey his vncle/ with the doughter of the erle of Bolayne. Cap. C.lv.

When all these matters were renewed and the mariage confyrmed/ than the duchesse of Lancastre lefte her doughter with the kinge & with her yonge sone Edmonde that shulde marry her/ who was of the age of eight yeres. the duches toke leaue of the kynge to go to Mantuell/ the kynge sent with her of the greatest men of the courte to accompany her. Thus she came to Mantuell/ and dyd so moche that she knewe the certaynte where her father was buryed. Than he was dygged vp/ and his bones wasshed and bawmed/ and wrapped in leade/ and brought to the erle of Ciuyll/ and there receyued with processyon without the cyte/ and the bones brought in to the cathedrall churche/ and there reuerently and solempnly his obsequy was done/ and there at was kinge Johan and his yonge sonne the prince of Galyce/ and the most parte of prelates and barons of the realme. After the obsequy doone/ euery man returned to their owne places. The kynge of Castyle wente to the vale of Dozy/ and his lorde and his yonge wyfe with hym/ and the duchesse of Lancastre to Medena de Campo/ a good towne/ whereof she was lady/ by reason of the confyrmacyon of the peace/ there she lay a season. Nowe lette vs leaue to speke of them and of Castyle/ tyll a nother tyme/ and let vs speke of the mariage of the duke of Berrey/ and also of other occurrentes that folowed.

The duke of Berrey who had maryed the lady Jane of Armynake to his fyrst wyfe/ after she was dyscesed/ he hadde great imaginacyon to be maryed agayne/ and that he wolde shewed. for whan he sawe howe he had myssed of the duke of Lancastres doughter/ he thought sothen to write/ and sent messangers to Charle Dalcon of Foys/ who had the kepyng of the erle of Bredinages doughter/ more than the space of xxxv yeres. And because the duke of Berrey coulde not come to this mariage/ but by the daunger of the erle of Foyse/ for and there for pope/ father/ mother/ nor frende that the damoysell had/ the erle wolde be nothynge without it were his owne pleasure. Than the duke of Berrey desyred effectuously the frenche kynge his nephewe/ and the duke of Burgoyne his brother to helpe and assyst hym in this mariage.

The frenche kyng laughte and had good sporte at the duke of Berrey his vncle/ because he was olde/ and so hote in loue/ and said to hym. Fayre vncle/ what shall ye do with a yonge mayde/ ye is not muche pere of age/ and ye be. el. by my fayth it is great folye for you to thynke therof/ I speke for my cosyn Johan your sonne/ he is yonge/ the matter is more mete for hym than for you. Syr quod the duke/ I haue spoken all redy for my sonne/ but the erle of Foyse wyll in no wyse agree therto/ because my sonne is of the blode of them of Armynake/ who be at warre together/ and haue ben longe. If the lady be yonge I shall spare her a yere or four yere/ tyll she be a parfyte woman. Well fayre vncle quod the kyng/ I feare me she wyll not spare you so longe/ but sythe ye haue so great affection therto/ I shall ayde you as moche as I may. It was not longe after but that the kynge ordayned the lorde de la Heuze and Syr Bercan his fourth sonne chamberlayne/ to go on a voyage to the erle of Foys/ and with them the erle of Dampe. And the duke of Burgoyne ordayned to go thyder on his behalfe the bysshop of Autune/ and Syr Symon of Tremoyle/ and the duke of Berrey besyde Johan erle of Saunce/ a sage and a valyaunt knyght to go with the other. These foure lordes were appoynted to go to the erle of Foys/ and to labyre to haue the yonge lady in mariage for the duke of Berrey. The ladies departed and appoynted to mete togyder at Auignon with pope Clement/ about Candelmas they departed and toke the waye to Auignon/ and so to Auignon. They passed by Mountpelyer/ and toke by small iourneys and great ordynaunce/ and passed by Nerbone and came to Carcassonne/

Carcassone/ and there they founde sir Loys of Sancere marshall of Fraunce/ who receyued them with good chere/ and he shewed them moche of the erle of Foys estate/ for he had ben there within two monthes before. Than they departed fro Carcassone and wente to Thoulouse and there rested/ and than sente messangers to the erle of Foys to Ortays in Byerne. And there began to treate for this marryage/ but it was farre of/ for at the begynnynge the erle of Foyse was colde/ bycause the duke of Lancastre had sente to hym to haue the same lady for his sonne the lorde Henry erle of Derby. By reason of this longe tarynge and delayeng of this treatye it was said and noysed that the marryage shulde nat be. And all theire answeres that they had fro the erle of Foyse/ wherby they sente worde therof to the duke of Berrey/ who was at Nonnette in Auuergne. And the duke who had none other desyre but to bringe the matter aboute/ wrote often tymes agayne to them with freshe messangers/ desyryng them nat to cease tyll they had brought the mater to passe. And the erle of Foyse who was sage and subtyle/ sawe well the aduentage that the duke of Berrey had/ and the hoped that he was the colder than he/ and he handeled the matter so wysely/ that by the full agrement of all partyes/ and yet for he desyred therto/ he hadde thyrty thousande frankes for the charges of the ladyes expenses/ for suche peres as she had ben with hym/ if he had more demaunded more he shulde haue had/ but he dyd it so to haue thanke of the duke of Berrey/ and that he shulde perceyue that he had done some what for hym.

Than this mater was concluded and all partyes agreed/ thanne the erle of Foys sente his cosyn the lady to Mor leans/ accompanyed with fyue hundred speares/ of whome were cappitayns syr Espaigne du Lyon/ syr Raynolde Guyllam/ syr Peter Taleban/ sir Joan of Carasse/ sir Manaske de Nomables/ and sir Pier of Bees/ and in the feldes the lady was delyuered to the frenche ambassadours/ on the behalfe of the duke of Berrey. There was syr Loys of Sancere with a fyue hundred speares/ and other company/ who receyued the lady/ and there tooke their leaues and departed. They of Foyse returned/ and the frenche men ledde forthe the lady. The duke of Berrey had sente to her chariots and charrettes richely garnysshed/ and house/ hackeneys/ and aparell for her body and for her hed/ as freshe and as ryche as though it had been for the frenche quene. Thus they rode forthe/ and I sir Johan Froyssart auctor of this boke rode in their company/ for often tymes when I wolde haue taken leaue of the erle of Foys/ he wolde saye to me/ howe I had no nede to make so great haste/ and badde me whan I wolde retourne to go in good company/ so I retourned in this fayre company. This yonge duchesse of Berrey (for so I wyll name her fro hence forthe) and all her company rode so longe that they came nere to Auignon. There she rested at a towne called Vile Neufe/ without the towne of Auignon/ in a house of the popes. And the nexte daye aboute nyne of the clocke/ all the cardynals that were there at that tyme mette with her/ and so passed the bridge of Rosne in grete estate/ the lady rydynge on a whyte palfrey whiche the pope had sent her. Than she came to the popes palays in Auignon and there alyghted and went to se the pope/ who sate in cloyster in a chayre pontyficall. The pope kyst her mouth bycause of lygnage. Than the duchesse and her company wente to dyner with many cardynalles/ to the house of the cardynall of Thurym/ nere to the popes palyce. This was on a wednysdaye/ and the nexte daye they all dyned in the same house agayne. I may well saye that the comyng of this lady to Auignon cost the pope the some of tenne thousande frankes. The frydaye she supped in the palays and tooke her leaue of the pope/ and the saturday she departed and rode to dyner to Orange/ and there lay all night/ for her cosyn germayne was prysoner there of. The sonday she departed and her carryage before and passed to Valance/ and than to Vyen/ and so to Lyon sur le Rone/ and there rested two dayes/ than fro thens to Byesse/ and so entred in to the countie of Forestes/ and passed through the countrey/ and so came to la Paleste in Burbonois and so to Moulyn/ than to Nanche/ and so to Ryon in Auuergne/ and there rested two dayes or the duke of Berrey came thyder/ who came thyder on Whytsonsyn/ and on Whytsonday betymes he maryed the lady. This was a noble weddynge and a grete feest/ there was the erle of Bolonye/ the erle of Estampes/ and the erle Dolphyn of

Burrgyne. this feest and iustes endured fourtene dayes. All this Sir Johan Froyssart auctor of this boke sawe with myne eyen/ for I was there presente.

Tho we certayne wyse men treated for a peace to endure thre yeres betwene Fraunce and Englande/ and all their alyes aswell on the one parte as on the other by lande and by see.

Cap. C.lvi.

We haue herde here before howe there was a treuse taken betwene all partyes and garysons/ betwene the Ryuer of Loyr and the ryuer of Dordone/ and of Gerounde/ vnto the feest of sayn̄t Johan Baptyst/ endured as than in the yere of grace a thousande thre hundred fourscore and nyne. This treuse durynge/ there were some great men and sage on bothe partyes/ both of Englande and of Fraunce/ that busyed them selfe to treate for a peace to endure thre yeres/ both by water and by lande. And the entencyon of them that treated in this mater was to compryse in their treatye for the frenche party/ all suche as were beleyed with their warre. First to haue comprysed the realme of Castyle holy/ as well by lande as by water/ and in lyke maner the realme of Scotlande. And on the englysshe partye shulde be compryzed all their alyes/ and the kynge and realme of Portugale/ and dyuers barones of bygh Gascon. These entreatours had moche payne and trauayle or they came to their ententes/ for the scottes wolde in no wyse assent. For whanne worde therof came to kynge Roberte of Scotlande fro the frenche kynge/ his owne persone wolde lyghtly haue greed therto/ for he desyred no warre. On a daye he called before hym all the barones and prelates of Scotlande/ suche as ought to gyue counsayle in that mater/ for without their knowlege the kynge wolde do nothyng/ if he had done/ they wolde nat haue kepte it. There openly was redde in all their presence/ the letters that the frenche kynge had sente thyder to the kynge/ and to the realme of Scotlande/ the entente wherof was/ that the frenche kyng wolde haue them of Scotlande to be compryzed with him/ and to agre to a treuse by thre yeres by lande and by water betwene Englande and them. This tydynges was harde to them/ and they sayde. The frenche kynge canne do nothynge but to haue treuce/ whan it is tyme to make warre. We haue in this parte ouercome the englysshmen/ and the season is ryght good/ and lyhely that we shall ouercome them agayn the seconde tyme: yea/ and the thyrde also. There was great debatynge of the matter betwene them/ but in no wyse they wolde consente therto. Fynally they ordeyned to sende a bysshoppe and two knyghtes in to Fraunce to the kynge and to his counsayle/ to the entent to brake the treaties/ and to shewe the good wyll of the scottes that they had to the warre. The bysshoppe of sayn̄t Andrews and syr Archambaute Douglas/ syr Willyam Lyndsey/ and syr Johan sayn̄t Clere. These departed as soone as they myght/ and toke the see and arryued at Sluse and than rode to Paryse. and before the kynge and his counsayle they shewed their letters of credence/ sente in the name of all the barones and prelates of the realme of Scotlande. They were well herde/ and the frenche men perceyued well the great affection that they hadde to procede/ and to compryse the warre agaynste Englande/ howbe it the treatye was so farre past and prompted that it couldē nat be treuoked agayn̄. Than the scottes were swetely answered/ howe there was no remedy but that they muste nedes proceede to the peace. Thus the frenche men tooke a treuse/ by meanes of suche as treated for the mater/ there were dyuers metynges betwene the partyes at Basingham/ betwene Boloyne and Calays. So often they mette and debated the maters that a treuce was taken/ graūted and accorded/ betwene Englande and Fraunce (for suche as were treaters of the mater/ were prelates/ gretlordes and wyse menne of bothe realmes) and all their abbettentes and alyes/ by see and by lande/ to endure fermely without dissymulacyon of any shadowe of male engyn/ the space of thre yeres. The entreatours of the frenche partye were at Boloyne/ as the bysshoppe of Bayeux/ the erle Dalery of sayn̄t Pole/ sir Willyam of Melyn/ sir Nycholas Braque/ and sir Johan le Mercier. And at Calays for the

Englysshe

Englysshe parte was the bysshop of Dureham/sir Wyllyam Montague erle of Salysbury/sir Wyllyam Beauchampe capitayne of Calais/Johan Lanon and Nycholas of Gaderthe/and Richarde Rodil clerke doctor in lawe. Thyse metre togyder in the myddes of the ways betwene Calays and Bolayne. at a place called Walpogham.

In this tyme great brute was in Fraunce and in other places/of a great feest and iustes that the ponge kyng Charles wolde make at Parys/at the fyrst comyng of Isabell ye frenche quene: agayns whiche feest knightes/ squyers/ladyes and damoselles apparelled them to be at that tryumphe: Of the whiche feest I shall speke more here after/and of the charter of the peace that was engroced & sealed betwene the parties.

I shall knowe that whan I sir Johan Froyssarte authour of this hystorye was departed fro Calays fro the erle of Foys/as ye have herde here before: and wente in copany with the lorde de la Ryuer and the lorde Guyllyam of Tremoyle/ who brought the ponge duchesse of Berrey/ doughter to the erle of Boulonge to ye duke of Berrey/who wedded her in the towne of Ryon in Auuergne/as it is conteyned here before in this hystorye: for at all these maters I was present/ wherfore I maye well speke therof. And whan I came to Parys I founde there the gentyll lorde of Coucy a good lorde of myne/who had newly maryed a ponge lady/doughter to the duke of Lorayne: whyche lorde made me good chere/ and demaunded of me newes of the countrey of Foys and Bern/ and of pope Clement beyng at Auygnon/ and of the mariage betwene Berrey and Boulonge/ and of another great frende of myne and good lorde and mayster/ therle Dermunt dolphyn of Auuergne. And to all his demaundes I answered all that I knewe/ so that he was content. Than he desyred me to go with hym in to Cambresys/ to a castell that the kynge had gyuen hym/ called Creuecure/a two leages fro Cãbray/ and nyne leages fro Valenciennes. And so I rode in his cõpany. And as we rode by the way he shewed me/ howe the bysshoppe of Bayeux and the erle of Saynt Pole and other were at Bologne sent thyder by the frenche kyng/ to conclude the truce. And howe that for kyng Richarde kynge of Englande there were at Calys/the bysshop of Durham & therle of Salysbury/ & other. and howe they had been there the space more thanne a moneth/ abydynge for the ambassadours of Scotlande/ who were as than newly come thyder. He sayde howe his cosyn the erle of Saynt Pole had written to hym therof/ and howe the frenche kynge had sente to the kynge of Scottes/ and to his counsayle that he shulde agree to the truce/for the englysh men wolde consente to no peace/ without the Scottes were comprised in the same. Thus we rode tyll we came to Creuecure/ and there I was with hym thre dayes. Thã I toke leaue of hym and went to Valencennes/ and there I taryed fyftene dayes. Than I wente in to Holande to se a gentyll lorde and good mayster of myne the erle of Bloyes/ and founde hym at Stochoucke. he made me good chere and demaunded of me some tydynges/and I shewed him such as I knewe. I taryed with hym a moneth there and at Gede. Than I retourned in to Fraunce to knowe the trouthe of the abstynence that was taken betwene Englande and Fraunce at Walpogham. Also I purposed to be at the feest that shulde be at Parys at the entre of the frenche quene/ to knowe the trouthe of all these maters/ I retourned throughe Brabaunt and so came to Parys/ eyght dayes before the feest began. Than I fell in company with the lordes of Fraunce and of Scotlande/suche as had ben at the makynge of the truce betwene Englãde and Fraunce. And I fell in acquayntaice with sir Guyllyam of Melyn/ who shewed me all the hole mater/ and howe the erle of Saynt Pole was passed in to Englande to se kynge Richarde/ and to confyrme the truce that was graunted for thre yeres: and that he shulde retourne agayne to be at the said great feest. Than I demaunded of the said sir Guyllyam/what lordes of Scotlande had ben at the sayd treatie. I demaunded it/bycause in my youthe I had ben in Scotlande/ and serched all the realme to the wylde scottes. And whyle I was there I taried a space in ye court of kyng Dauyd of Scotlande/ & there I had acquayntaice of the most parte of ye lordes & knightes of Scotlãde/therfore I demaunded who had been there. And this sir Melyn answered

swered me and saide/ howe there had ben the
byssshop of Uzedon/ s sir James and sir Da
uyd Lyndsay/ and sir Water of saynt Clere.
I bare his sayeng awaye/ and dyde putte in
wrytynge all that I habde sene and herde.
And shall shewe the trouthe what I sawe/ s
knewe of this feest/ and of the fyrst entryng
of quene Isabell in to Parys.

Of the ordynaunce of the entre of quene Isabell in to the towne of Parys. Cap. clvii.

The sonday the twetie daye of June/ in the yere of oure lorde god/ a thousande thre hundred foure score and nyne. there was people in Paris and without/ suche nombre/ that it was marueyle to beholde. And the same sonday in the morynyng there was assēble made in the churche of saynte Denyse/ of noble ladyes of Fraunce/ suche as shulde accompany the quene/ and of suche lordes as shulde assyst the quenes lytters s other ladyes. And there was of the burgesses of Parys twelue hundred an horsebacke rayned in the felde on bothe sydes of the way/ apareilled in gownes of one sute/ of clothe of Baudkyn/ grene and crymosyn. And the olde quene Jane and her doughter duchesse of Dzlyance/ entred fyrste in to Parys one houre before noone/ in a lytter couered/ well accompanyed with lordes/ and passed through the hyghe strete of saynte Denyse/ and so rode to the palays/ and there tarped for the kynge. That day these two ladyes went no further. Than ꝑ frenche quene and the other ladyes set forwarde/ as the duchesse of Berrey/ the duchesse of Burgoyne/ the duches of Thourayn/ the duches of Bare the countesse of Neuers/ the lady of Coucy/ and other ladyes and damoselles all in good ordre. all there lytters were apareilled as richly as myght be. But ꝑ duches of Thourayne had no lytter/ she rode a lone vpon a fayre palfrey richly apareilled/ and she rode on the one syde by the quenes lytter/ and it was assysted with the duke of Thourayne and the duke of Burbone/ at the fore hed on bothe syden. And in the myddes on bothe sydes the lytters were the duke of Berry and the duke of Burgoyne/ and at the fete was the lorde Peter of Nauer and therle of Ostrenaunt. The quenes lytter was richely apparelled and discouert. Than nexte folowed on a ryche apparelled palfrey the duchesse of Berrey/ s she was assisted with the erle de la Marche and with the erle of Neuers/ and she rydinge a softe pace betwene them bothe. Than folowed the lytter all discouered and open of the duchesse of Burgoyne/ and Margarete of Heynalte her doughter countesse of Neuers. That lytter was assysted with the lorde Henry of Bare and the yonge erle of Nanure/ called sir Guylliam. And than ꝑ lady of Dzlyaunce on a palfrey richely apparelled/ and the lorde James of Burbone and the lorde Philyppe Dartoys assysted the lady of Dzlyaunce. Than another lytter with the duchesse of Bare/ and the doughter of the lorde of Coucy. Of other ladyes and damoselles that came after in chariottes and palfraye/ and knightes that folowed/ there was name cion made. And as for fergeauntes and officers of armes had busynesse ynoughe to do to make way/ and to byche the preace. There was suche people in the steetes/ that it semed that all the worlde had ben there.

At the fyrst gate of saynt Denise entryng in to Parys/ there was a Heuyn made full of sterres/ s within it yonge chyldren apparelled lyke angelles swetely synging. And amonge them an ymage of our lady holdyng in fygure a lytell chylde playeng by hym selfe/ with a lytell appil made of a great nutte. This Heuyn was hyghe and richely apareilled with the armes of Fraunce with a baner of the same clymyng of golde/ castyng bis rayes. This was deuysed by the kynge for the feest of the iustes. The quene and the other ladyes as they passed vnder in at ꝑ gate/ they had great pleasure to beholde it/ and so had all other that passed by. Than whan the Quene and the ladyes were passe by/ than they came a softe pace before the foutayne in a strete of saynt Denise/ whyche conduyte was couered ouer with a clothe of fyne asure/ paynted full of flours de lyces of golde/ and

te/ and the pyllers were sette full of the armes of dyuers noble lordes of Fraunce. and out of this fountayn there yssued in great stremes Puysant and clarre: And about this fountayne there were yonge maydens richely apparelled/ with ryche chapelettes on their heedes syngynge melodiously. Great pleasure it was to here them: And they heldē in their handes Cuppes and gobiettes of golde/ of dyuers and gryeuous to drinke/ all suche as passed by/ And the quene rested there and regarded them/ and had great pleasure of that deuyse/ and so dyde all other lordes and dames selles that sawe it.

THan after/ vnder the myddest of the Tryumphe/ in the strete there was a stage/ and therupon a castell. And a longe on the stage there was ordeyned the Palle of kynge Salhadyn/ and all there deedes in personages/ the Christen men on the one partye/ and the Sarazins on the other parte. & there was in personages all the lordes of name/ that of olde tyme haue ben armed/ and had done any feates of armes as ỳ Palle of Salhadyne/ and were armed with suche armure as they than bled. And aboue a lytell aboue them there was in personages the Frenche kynge and the twelue peeres of Fraunce/ armed with the blason of their armes. Whan the Frenche quenes lytter was come before this stage/ she rested there a season. Thanne the personages on the stage of kyng Richarde departed fro his company/ and wente to the Frenche kynge/ and demaunded licence to go and assayle the Sarazins/ and ỳ kyng gaue hym leue. Than kynge Richarde returned to his twelue companyons. Thanne they all sette them in order/ and incontynent wente & assayled the kynge Salhadyne and the Sarazins. There in sparte there semed a great batayle/ and it endured a good space. This pagiaunt was well regarded. Thanne the quene passed forthe and came to ỳ fyrste gate of sayut Denyse. And there was a castell ordayned/ as was at the fyrste gate: and a heuyn clouded/ and full of sterres richely dressed/ and therin the figure of God ỹ tryune in maiestie/ the father/ the sonne/ and the holygoost. And within the heuyn dyuers in figure of angelles swetely syngyng/ whyche pagiaunt was greatly praysed. And as the quenes lytter passed vnder the gate of Paradise/ there were two angelles came out and came downe holdynge in their handes a sythe crowne of golde/ garnysshed with precious stones. And they sette sayre and easely the crowne on ỳ quenes heed/ syngyng right swetely this verse. Dame/ as ye be enclosed betwene the Floure de lyces/ so ye be quene of the realme of Fraunce/ & so dyde we agayne in to paradyse. Than they passed forthe and came before the chapell of sayut James. And there was a scaffolde richely dressed/ on the right hande as the quene rode/ couered ouer with ryche arras/ and drawen aboute with curteyns/ in maner of a chambre. And within there were nat playeng vpon organs ryght swetely: And all the strete of sayut Denyse was couered ouer with clothes of sylke and chamlet/ suche plentie/ as thoughe suche clothes should cost nothynge. And Sir Johan Froissart authour of this hystorie was present/ and sawe all this/ and had great marueyle where suche nombre of clothes of sylke were gotē. There was as great plentie as though they had ben of Alysandre or Damas/ and all the houses on bothe sides of the great strete of sayut Denise vnto the bridge of Paris/ were hanged with clothes of Arras of dyuers hystories/ the whyche was pleasure to beholde. Thus they passed forthe a soft pace and so came to the gate of the chatelet of Paris: and there the quene rested to se the other goodly deuyses that were there ordayned.

AT the gate of the chatelet of Paris there was a castell made of woode & tymbre/ as strongly made/ as it should haue endured. xl. yeres. The whyche castell was enbatylled/ and at euery lope there was a man of armes armed at all peces. And in ỳ same castell there was a bedde made/ richely encourtepyed and appareiled/ as it had been to haue stande in the kynges chambre. & this bedde was called ỳ bedde of Iustyce: and in this bedde there lay by figure sayut Anne. In this castell there was a playne/ for the castell conteyned a grete space: & this playne was full of trees/ and full of Harts/ conies & hyndes that flewe in and out: For whan they were a brode they flewe thider agayne for fraut of ỳ people. And out of these trees there yssuede

whyte

whyte harte/ and wente to the bedde of Iu-
styce: and out of the other parte of the wode
there yssued out a Lyon and an Egle propete-
lye/ and fyersly they approched the harte and
the bedde of Justyce. Than came there out
of the trees a.xii. ponge maydens richely ap-
parelled/ with chapelettes of golde on their
heedes/ holdynge nakyd swoydes in their ha-
des/ and they wente betwene the harte/ the
Lyon/ and the Egle/ and there they shewed
them selfe redy to defende the harte and the
bedde of Justyce. This deuyse ye quene and
all other had great pleasure to regarde. than
they passed forthe and came to the brydge of
Parys/ whiche was couered and richely be-
sene. The couerynge of grene and cramoysyn
full of sterres/ and the sterres hanged to our
ladyes churche. And by that tyme that the
quene and the ladyes were passe the brydge/
and approched to the churche of oure Lady/
it was late: For all the waye as they wente/
they rode but a softe pace. And or the Quene
and the ladies entred in to the churche of oure
Lady/ they sodde by they waye other playes
and pastymes/ greatly to their pleasure.

¶ Yonge all other there was a mayd-
ster came out of Geane. He had tied
a corde on the hyghest house on the
brydge of sayne Myghell ouer all ye houses/
and the other ende was tyed on the hyghest
towre in our ladies churche. And as ye quene
passed by/ and was in the gret at strete called
oure ladyes strete/ bycause it was late. This
sayde mayster with two brennynge candel-
les in his handes/ issued out of a lytell stage
that he had made on the hyght of our ladyes
towre: And synging he went vpon the corde
all a longe the great strete/ so that all that
sawe hym/ hadde maruayle howe it myght
be: And he bare styll in his handes ye two brin-
nynge candelles/ so that it myght well be sene
ouer all Parys/ and two myle without Pa-
rys. He was suche a tombler/ that his lyght-
nesse was greatlye prayed. And before the
churche of our lady the hyll hoppe of Parys
was reuelled with the armes of our lorde Je-
su Christ/ with all the colledge and great no-
ble of the clergy. There the Quene alyghted
of her lyttere/ and was taken in
downe by the four dukes/ that is to sayer the
Duke Berrey/ the duke of Burgoyne/ ye duke
of Thoureyne/ and the duke of Barbone/
and all other ladyes in lyke wyse taken do-
ne by them that were their assysters/ bothe
out of their lyttere and fro their hakes/ and
in good order. So they entred in to the chur-
che. The hyll hoppe and the clergy before the
synging/ in ye honour of god and of our bles-
sed lady. the quene was ledde and assysted and
brought vp to the hyghe auter/ and there she
kneled downe and sayde her prayers/ suche
as pleased her/ and offred to the value of
xviii. lady foure clothes of clothe of golde/ and
the goodly crowne that the angelles dyde set
on her heed/ and than incontynent sir Johan
de la Kyuer and sir Johan le Mercyer deli-
uered the hyll hoppe of Parys a moste riche
crosse. And the hyll hoppe and the four du-
kes dyd sette it on the quenes heed. Than
they returned agayne through the churche/
and the quene and the ladyes sette agayne in
their lyttere/ as they were before. There
were no than fyue hundred torches brennynge
for it was late. Thus they were brought to
the palays of Parys/ where the kynge/ the
yong quene/ and the banquette of Olyuance
her doughter were. There the quene and the
ladyes lyghted fro their lyttere/ and ryght so
they no brought in to seuerall chambres: and
the lordes went to their lodgynges/ after the
daunsynge was paste.

¶ The nexte daye Monday/ the kynge
made them all a dyner at his palays.
And at the houre of the high masse/
the quene was ledde with the forsayd foure
dukes in to the holy chapell: and there in the
masse season the quene was sacred & anoyn-
ted/ as a Quene ought to be: And the arche-
byll hoppe of Rouane dyde the obeseruance/
who was called sir Wyllyam of Vyen. After
the masse songe solempnely/ the kynge and
the quene retourned in to their chambres/ and
all other ladies suche as had chambres in the
palays. Than anone after the kyng and the
quene retourned in to the halle/ and all other
ladyes. The great table of Marble that al-
wayes standeth styll in the halle/ was nine
lengat with a great plaunche borde of xxx.
of foure inches thycke/ whiche borde was ri-
chely couered. And about the great table/
ouerthwarte one of the sydes/ was the kyn-
ges syluer bordynge bordes/ brennynge full of bullen
of golde

of golde and syluer/ whiche was greatly re-
mered of many that sawe it. Before the table
a longe discendyng downe/ there were bare
rpers made of wode with thre stages/ & there
were stregaunres and tryers a great num-
bre keepynge the entrees/ to the entente that
none shulde entre/ but suche as were scrup-
tours of ꝑ table to ꝑ hall was so full of peo-
ple that a man coulde not tourne hym but it
made payne. Mynstrelles a great nombre
playenge playnely played/ euery man after his facul-
te. Than the kyng and the prelates/ and the
quene and the ladyes wasshe/ & sate downe
at the tables. At the kynges table sate downe
an erle/ the first bysshop of Norym/ than the
bysshoppe of Angeres/ than the kynge/ and
by the kynge the archebysshoppe of Rohan.
The kynge satte in a surcote of crymsyn tyre-
red with armyns/ & a riche crowne of golde
on his heed. Than the quene/ and by her the
kyng of Nauarre/ than the duches of Berry/
than the duches of Burgoyne/ and ꝑ duches
of Thouraine: Than the lady of Auuers/
and the good damoysell of Bare/ than the la-
dy of Coucy and vycont of Narcenant. Tho
there sate not at the hyghe table/ saue ye two
neces all sate the lady of Ayrdle/ wyfe to the
Capytayne of Cumayse. And at two other tables
a longe by vnder the hall/ lxxxvi. mo than fyue hū-
dred ladyes and damoysels. The preace was
so great/ that it was great payne to serue the
with their meates/ whiche were gret & no
table. I haue not to do to make great proce
therof/ I shall sowhat speke of the pastymes
ꝑ were made betwene the meales/ the whiche
had been great pleasures for the kyng to haue
sene/ if he had tarped out the hole tyme.

Nere in the myddes of the palays
there was a castell made of tymbre
xl. foote longe and quadrante fote hyghe
with foure towres/ in euery quarter one and
one in the myddes/ hyghter than the other.
This Castell was fygured for the tyme of
Troye/ and the towres in the myddes for the
palays of Troye: And they were pesshed with
the armes of the Troyans/ as of kyng Priā
mus/ Hector his sonne/ and his other chyl-
dren. And also the armes of suche other kyn-
gen and prynces/ as were vnder or in Troye
with kynge Priam. This castell went vpon
wheles/ the whiche myghte be remoued euery
wape properly. This castell came to assayle
another sorte that was therby in a pauylyon/
whiche also wente vpon wheles/ so sotelly &
couertly/ that the mouynge therof coude not
be parceyued/ and there was ꝑ armes of the
kynges of Grece/ and of other suche as were
at the syege. Also there was a shoppe prepre-
ly couered/ wherin myght well be a hundred
men of armes/ and all moued by the crafte of
wateres/ bothe the Castell/ Pauylyon/ & ship.
They of the Pauylyon and of the shoppe/
assayled ryght the castell/ and they within the
Castell made great defence. But this sporte
endured not longe/ for the preace of the people
was so sore about them/ that no man coulde
flyte. The people were sore chafed with the
heate/ and payne to mache payne. And there
was a table by the parlyament chambre dore
where sate many ladyes and damoselles.
Ther was by reason of the preace ouerthrowen
to the erthe/ and the ladyes caused sodainly
to ryse without order/ and sore chafed with
the preace and heate that was in the palays.
The quene her self was at the poynt to haue
been sore displeased: Perforce a backe doore
was broken vp to gette fresh be ayre. The la-
dyes of Coucy was sore displeased. Whane the
kynge sawe this mater/ he commaunded to
cease/ and the tables in great hast to be taken
vp/ to let the ladyes and damoselles at large.
They lefte takynge of wyne and spyces and
wente to their chambres. Than some of the
ladyes tarped styll in the Palays/ and some
wente out to the towne to their lodgynges/ to
be chembre at their ease: for with preace and
with heate/ they had been sore greued. The
lady Coucy wente to her lodgynge/ & helde
her there tyll it was late.

Than about fyue of the cloche the
Frenche Quene/ accompanyed
with the forsayd duchesses/ de-
parted fro the palays of Parys
and toke their lyttres all open/
and so wente throughe the stretes to the kyn-
ges lodgynge/ called Saynt Poule/ on the ryu-
er of Sayne/ with the quene there were mo
than a thousande horses. And the kyng went
fro the palays to the ryuer of Sayne/ & toke
there a barge/ & wente by water to his house
of Saynt Poule. For all that ꝑ house was
great and large & well arayed/ yet ꝑ kyng
had caused

had caused in the great court nere to the gate
fro the Ryuer/ to be made a great halle with
che was couered ouer with clothes of the ar-
mes of Normandy. And the walles were hã-
geb with clothes of arras of sondye hystor-
ies. In this hall the kynge gaue the ladyes
a supper/ but the quene kepte her chãbre/ for
was no more fene purpose. The other ladies
and the kyng and the lordes daunsed and re-
uelled all that nyght/ nerchande till it was
daye in the morowe. Than euery man de-
parted and went to their lodgynges to slepe
for it was good tyme. Nowe I shall shewe
you what gyftes and presentes they of Parys
gaue on the Tuesday before noon to the quene
and to the duchesse of Thourayne/ who was
but newly come in to Fraunce out of Lom-
bardy/ for she was doughter to the duke of
Mylayne: and she had the same yere wed-
ded Lopes duke of Thourayne. She was
named Valentyne/ she had neuer before ben
at Parys/ therfore the burgesses of Parys
gaue her her welcome.

On this Tuesday about .vii. of the
clocke about .x. burgesses of Pa-
rys of the most notable persones of
the cyte/ all in one suite of clothynge came to
the kynges house of saynt Pole/ & brought
a present for the quene through the streets of
Parys. The present was in a litter richely
wrought/ and borne betwene two strong mu-
ly apparelled like two ouncient lege
persones. The litter had a celer of ashynne
fyne clothe of syluer/ so that the vysailes that
were in the litter might well be ene. When
they came to saynt Pole/ they sent
to the kynges chamber/ whiche was kyng
apparelled to receyue them/ for all wayes fu-
ere as longeth any thyng are welcome. The
three burgesses sette downe the litter on the
erthe in the myddes of the chamber. Than
they kneled downe before the kyng and sayd.
Right hye and excellent noble kyng/ your
gelles of Parys prefereth vnto your grace these
vysailes here in this litter/ in the wele truyng
of your quene/ and the gouernance of your
ryne of Fraunce. Than the kyng sayd gen-
men I thinke you/ there are right goodly and
riche. Than the burgesses rose & drewe backe
a fyer with to be spectatours. When they were
gone/ the kynge sayd to his daughter Lady

bes and to Montagu/ who were by him.
Sirs/ let vs go vnto this litter/ & se what
presentes we haue. Than the kynge well
regarded them. First there were foure pot-
tes of golde/ fyue lauers of golde/ & fyue platy
tes of golde: All these were wayed & proued
and fyftie marke of golde. Than there came
another route of burgesses richely apparelled
all in one liuery/ came to the quene and pre-
sented her another litter/ whiche was borne
in to her chambre/ the kynge sayd he wold se
what they were/ they kneled downe there & her
grace and sent her that present. Within this
litter was a shippe of golde/ two great dagon
of golde/ two dodge boyes of golde/ two fal-
tes of golde/ fyue pottes golde/ fyue lauers of
golde. xii. Lampes of syluer/ two basons of
syluer. The some was thus numbred marke/
what golde what syluer. This present was
brought in a litter by two men/ one in
semblaunce of a Baker/ and the other in sem
blaunce of an Vintener. The thirde present
in lyke wise was brought in to the chambre of
Thourayne chambre by two men/ fygured
as the seasons of the yere/ richely
apparelled/ with white sylkes about them
bordered lyke garlandes. The litter was fayre
and riche/ couered with a fyne clothe of sylke
and brought by .vii. burgesses all in one ap-
parell/ who gaue this present to the sayd du-
chesse. In the whiche presente there was a
shippe of golde/ a great potte of golde/ two
ewers golde/ two great platters golde/ two
basins golde/ fyue platters syluer/ two doson fyne
syluer/ two basyn boules syluer. Some
golde and syluer two hundred marke. This
present greatly displeased the duches of Thou
rayne/ as it was reason/ for it was goodly &
richely garnished/ & perchaunce thinked them of their
gyftes. Than the sayd burgesses their presentes
were yeuen to the kyng & quene/ and to the
duchesse of Thourayne. It was greatly to
be maruayled the valour of these presentes/ &
of the gentlenesse of the persones. For it
was shewed me by one whych sawe all these pre-
sentes that there was .x. thousande marke in
these thre sondry vessels of golde. Thes
sayd presentes thus deliuered/ it was
nere to dyner: Than they sayd the kyng and
the quene & other lordes dyned in their cham-
bres/ & ladyes in their owne: for it was the
guyse at euery great feste or solempne in to

the feste

the felde of Saynt Katherynes where as there was ordeyned stages and scaffolders a great nombre / for the kynge and the quene and other to beholde the iustes.

Howe I shall name by order the knyghtes that were called the kynges knyghtes / of the sonne of golde there were thyrtie of the.

Felle the duke of Betrey / the duke of Burgoyne / the duke of Burbone / the erle de la Marche / sir Jaquemarte of Burbone his brother / the lorde Coucy / sir Oliuer of Clysson constable of Fraūce / syr Johan of Vyen / sir James de Vyen lorde of Espaygny / syr Guy of Tremoyle / sir Guyllyam his brother / sir Philyp of Bare / the lorde of Rochefoune bretone / the lorde of Mares / the lorde Beamond / syr Johan of Bar beuon / the baylie of Fraūce / the lorde of Toucy / noyman / syr Johan of Barres / the lorde of Pantoyllet / the lorde of Rochfoucault / the lorde of Garancieres / sir Johan of Harpedanne / the bastarde Dyury / syr Wyllyam Harpell / syr Raynolde of Roye / syr Geffrey of Charny / syr Charles de Chargny / and the Captayn of Lygnac. All these knyghtes were armed and clothed vnder there in the same tente / and aboute vnder of the clothe they were in the place of saint Katerynes / and there was come ladyes and damoyselis. And fyrste the quene came thyder in a chare richely apparelled / and all other ladyes in good ordre / and entred in to the scaffolders that were ordeyned for them. Than came the frenche kyng rych apparelled to iuste / with the pallyne he loued right well / he was well accompanyed. Than the iustes began / there were many ladyes of dyuers countreys. Syr Guyllyam of Heynalt erle of Ostrenant iusted right goodly / and so dyd suche knyghtes as came with hym / as the lorde of Gommynes / sir Johan of Andregenes / the lorde of Cantan / syr Rufell of Tranlegynes / and sir Clinquart of Hanne / all these had their pauyses of the armys of the ladyes. Also there iusted well the duke of Irelande / who was all that season with the frenche kynge. Also there iusted well a knyght of Almayne / before the Epe called sir Seruays of Ostrante. Thus iusted these well contynued / but there were so many knyghtes that one coulde nat ryme for another / and the dulle with synynge of their hoses was so great / that it troubled them sore. The lorde of Coucy dyd maruelously well. Thus iustes contynued tyll it was nyght / than they departed / & the ladyes brought to their lodgynges. The kynge with his company was brought to his lodgynge of Saynt Pole / and there was a supper for the ladyes / with suche baboundance / that it were harde to reporte it / and the feest and reuell with synynge and daunsynge tyll the nexte morynge the sonne ryslynge. And the pyse of the iustes of the anstoerers / that had best done and longest contynued / was gyuen to the frenche kynge / by consente of all the ladyes / and iudgement of the harauldes. and of the chalengers the Haute of Flaunders bastarde brother to the duchesse of Burgoyne. The knyghtes complayned of the dust / so that some said they lost their sedes by reason therof. The kynge made prouysion for it / he ordeyned more than two hundred barrelles of water that watred the place / wherby the grounde was well amended / and yet the nexte day they hadde dulle ynough and to moche. Than the secondeye came to Paris the erle of Saynte Pole fromte oute of Englande / he had made great haste to come to these iustes and feestes and he had lefte behynde hym in Englande sir Johan of Chatell Morant / to bringe the charters of the treuce with hym. The erle of Saynte Pole was well welcomed of the kynge and of all other lordes / and the Quene and all other were glad of his comynge.

On the secondeye after dyner euery man dyd to the felde / and the ladyes came thyder in goodly arap / as they han done the daye before / and mounted vpon their stages. Than the iustes began sperfully and was well contynued tyll it was nyght. Than euery person retourned / and the ladyes had a great supper at Saynte Polle. Than the pyses were gyuen by consente of the ladyes / and iudgement of the harauldes. of the anstoerers / the pyse was gyuen to a squyer of Hapnalte called Johan de Flaron / who was come thyder to the company of the erle of Ostrenant. and of the chalengers / the pyse was gyuen to a squyer of the duke of Burgoyne / called Johan de Poleures. And agayne the thyrdeye iusted knyghtes & squyers all nyght / euery man payned hym selfe to do well / and it endured tyll nyght. And the ladyes supped agayne at Saynte Polle / and eyther the pyse was gyuen

of the bitter partie to the Charles of Bruoys/ and of them within to a squyer of the quenes/ called Lone. The fryday the kynge made dyner to all the lapdes and damoselles/ and about the ende of the dyner/ there entred into the hall (the kyng syttyng at the table) the duc chesse of Berry/ the ducchesse of Burgoyne/ the duches of Thouraync/ the coutes of Sapnt Polle/ the lady of Coucy/ and a great meny of other lapdes and damoselis. they brought in two knyghtes on horsebacke/ armed at all peces for the iustes/ with their speares on their thyes. The one was sir Raynold of Roy/ and the other sir Bouciquant ye yonger/ and there they two iusted goodly togyther. Than came fyrst other knightes/ ye Raynold of Troyes ye Guyllyam of Namure/ ye Charles of Bruoys/ and the lorde of Garancyeres the lorde of Hantoyllet/ Larbenoys of Offembe and bruces other. all these iusted there the space of two houres before the kynge and the lapdes. than they returned to their lodgynges. That fryday suche lapdes and damoselis as wolde retourne to their owne houses/ toke their leaues of the kynge & of the quene/ and also suche lordes as wolde departe. The kynge and the quene thanked them of the payne they had taken/ comynge to his feste.

¶ howe the lorde of the Chateau Morante/ whom the erle of Sapnte Polle had lefte behynde hym in Englande/ retourned in to Fraūce with the charter of the frēuce/ sealed by kynge Richarde and his uncles/ to endure the pese by see and by lande. Cap. C.lviii.

After that all these lordes and ladyes were returned fro this great feste to their owne houses/ than the lorde of Chastell Morant/ whome the lorde of Sapnte Polle had left in Englande retourned in to Fraūce/ to the kynge and to his counsayle/ and shewed forth the charter of the frenche/ sealed by kynge Richarde of Englande/ and by his uncles and other/ to endure the pese/ as well by see as by lande/ and the wordes in the charter sayd. That who soeuer hycharth by any maner of chalenge/ any poynte or article contayned in that treatie/ shulde be taken and reputed as traytour/ and to pynne in a mortall punysshyn. And bycause that the lorde of Coucy was sometayne capytayne chosen by the kynge and his counsayle/ to defende and kepe the outmarche marches/ bytwene the ryuer of Durdone and the see/ and all the countrey of Auuergne and Lymosyn. The copy of this wrytyng was delyuered to hym/ to the entent that he shulde publysshe and shewe it to all them that wolde do any thynge to the contrary. And also the entent that they of Flanders/ of Chalusset of Dorbesbourg/ and of the garysons ye mere were for the englysshemen/ shulde have knowledge of that treuce/ that they shulde make none trouble if they fell in the payne. In lyke wyse the marshall of Fraūce/ the lorde Loys of Sancerre had also the copy thereof/ whome was regyst marshall for the gouernaūce of the outmarche marches of Languedoc/ fro the ryuer of Rosne and the kynges of Arragon/ and about the countreys and seignyories apendaūt to the ryuer of Dordone/ as the countreys of Beaucaire/ of Carcassone/ of Tholous/ of Auuergne/ of Bagen/ of Quercy/ of Bygorre/ of Spergourte/ and of Lymosyn. and in these countreys were diuers garysons/ that vnnethe regarded or obeyed any peas or treuce/ but alwayes entended to make some mischefe/ as the castell of Tulbyer/ & the stronge castell of Lambez in Bygorre/ on the frontiers of Arragon/ they were greatly feared of their neyghbours.

¶ The mariage of kyng Loys sonne to the duke of Anion/ to the doughter of kynge Peter of Aragone/ and how he went with the queue of Sicile his mother to Auignon/ to the pope Clemente. Cap. C.lix.

In this tyme there was a treatye made of a marryage betwene Loys of Anlowe / sonne to the duke of Anlou / who wrote hymself kynge of Napoles / of Cypryll / and Jherusalem / and cite of Prouynce / and the doughter of kynge Peter of Aragon. The quene of Napoles went to Auygnone to se pope Clement / and there she founde the lorde of Coucy / and had in her company her ponge sonne Loys. The lorde of Coucy was ryght ioyous of her comynge. The quene was receyued ryght honorably of pope Clement / and of the cardynalles / as she was well worthy / for she was a noble woman / and a dilygent in all her busynesse. There she desyred the lorde of Coucye to helpe to conuey her sonne Loyes in to the realme of Arragone / and to be about hym tyll he were marryed. The lorde of Coucye wolde nat refuce it / but ordayned hym self so to do and sayde. Madame / there was no byage this seuen yere / that I wolde be more gladdere to accompany me / than to go in to the marches of Cypryll / Naples / with my lorde your sonne / if I had lycence of the kyng my soueraygne lorde. But quod the lady I thanke you / I se well your good wyll / I doute nat but the kyng wyll be content that ye go with my sonne in to Aragon: And the quene of Aragon wyll be glad to se you / for your doughter hath maryed her brother sir Peter of Arragon. The lorde of Coucy agreed to go this voyage. Thus the ponge kynge of Cypryll tooke his iourney well accompanyed / whan he had taken his leaue of the Pope and of his mother / all weppynge: For at the departynge of the mother and the sonne / caused theyr hertes to relente: For they shulde departe fayre a sonder / & knewe nat whan to se togyther agayne For it was ordayned / that whan the maryage was accomplyshed / that the ponge kynge and the ponge Quene shulde take the se at the porte of Barcelone / and there go and aryue at the porte of Naples / or ellis where as they myght.

So longe this ponge kynge Loyes iourneyed / that he passed Auuergne / Pelpoy and Burgoyne and so came to Sauoye / where he was receyued ryght ly[illegible] of euery man. There they refresshed the[m] and their hoyses one day / and than departed and wente to Parpygnen: the fyrst towne of the realme of Arragon. The comyng of this ponge kynge was well knowen in the court of the kynge of Arragon. He sente medme to mete with hym and to conuey hym / as the by count of Roquebertyn and sir Raymonde of Baigues. So long they rode / that they came to the cyte of Barcelone / where the kynge & the Quene and there doughter was. There the ponge kyng was nobly receyued / and specially the quene of Arragon was ryght ioyous of the comynge of the lorde of Coucy / and thanked the ponge kynge her sonne that shulde be / for bringynge of hym in his company / and sayd / that all other maters shulde be and arbytrye the better. This Marrage was confyrmed betwene these two chyldren / but bycause wynter approched / they delayed their voyage goyng to the Se / For in wynter the great Sees are perillous. They sayd they wolde make their prouysyon that wynter / to go in to Naples the nexte Marche after. The lorde of Coucy beyng in Arragon / receyued letters fro the Frenche kynge / commaundynge hym to retourne. Than he toke his leaue of the kynge of Arragon and of the quene / and of the ponge kyng and his wyfe / and of all other lordes suche as were there / and departed. And if he myght haue had leyser / he wolde haue retourned by Auignon to haue sene the pope and the olde quene of Naples. But he sente to them his excuse / and returned by Auuergne in to Fraunce.

Whan this marryage was made betwene the ponge kyng Loyes of Cypryll / and the doughter of the kynge of Arragon / wherby there was great alyances betwene the parties / and they of Arragon were bounde to ayde & to serue the ponge kynge / to bringe hym in to the realme of Naples / and nat to leaue hym tyll he had recouered peasably of Naples and of Cypryll / with the appendaunces / as Pule and Calabre / and the cyte of Gaet / the whiche Margarete of Durasshe hyld. The aragonoys shulde serue hym as longe as his warre endured with .ii. hundred speares at there coste and charge / & a thousande cros bowes / and a thousande gasbelers. Whan this weteryns of Aragon

was come / and that the wyndes were apeased / and ꝑ waters swaged of their rages / and the wodes reuerdured / and that their prouysions were made redy at Barcelone / and the galees redy suche as shulde go with the ponge kynge. Than he and his ponge quene tooke their leaues of the kynge of Aragone and of the quene / who wept at their departyng. than the quene recōmaunded the ponge quene her doughter to the erle of Roodes / a valyaunt knight / & to sir Raymon of Baighes. These two toke ꝑ speciall charge / notwithstandinge that the erle of Urgell and the erle of Lyns were thre in a great company. In these galees were a fyftene hundred speares / two thousande croſ bowes / & two thousande of other men of warre / with dartes & pauesses. They wente thus fortified and well accompanyed / to resyst the better if nede were agaynst their ennemyes. And also to resyst all rencouters vpon the see / for it is a longe waye by the see fro Barcelone to Naples. And Margarete of Duras their aduersary myght trouble them by the way / therfore they thought to go sure wyse. ¶ Howe we wyll leaue to speke of this ponge kyng of Cicyll and speke of other busynesse of the realme of Fraunce.

¶ Howe the frenche kynge had determyned to go and vysyte the farre partes of his realme: & howe he went fyrst in to Burgoyne, and to Auygnon to se pope Clement. Cap. C.lx.

After this great feest was accomplisshed here / as ye haue herde before / euery lorde and lady went home to their owne houses / as ye haue herde here before. Now is it tyme that we speke of the kyng Charles of Englande / for thys yere he had determyned to go a vysite his realme / specially the duchye of Aquytayne / called Guyenne. For the kynge had there but fewe men of warre / who were as than chefe of his garyson. Then he ꝑpared hym to go

Auygnon to se pope Clement and the cardynalles / who desyred to se hym / and also to go to Tholous / for they sayd to the kyng. Sire a kyng in his youthe ought to vysyte his realme / and to knowe his people / and to ordre how they be gouerned / the whiche shulde be greatly to his profyte / and the better to be loued with his subiectes. The kyng lyghtly enclyned to their counsayle / for he had desyre to trauayle and se newe thynges. And ꝑ lorde de la Ryuer who was but newly come out of those marchesse / herde great complayntes of the people of Tholous / of Carcassone / & of Beaucayre. and they desired greatly to se the kyng / for they had ben sore charged with tayles and aydes by ꝑ duke of Berry / by the informacion of a seruaunt of his called Bertrache / who had pyte of no man: he so pilled the people that nothynge was lefte / therfore he counsayled the kynge to go thyder to prouyde some remedy / And also that the kynge shulde sende for the erle of Foise to come to hym to Tholous. The kyng made him redy to go thyder / and sente afore all the way that prouysyon shulde be made for his comyng / & sente worde therof to his vncle the duke of Burgoyne and to his vncle the duchesse / how he wolde come a longe thoughe their countrey / and wolde se his cosyns their children / and to bring in his company his brother the duke of Thourayne / and his vncle de Bourbone / whiche pleased greatly ꝑ duke and the duchesse. And the duke caused to be proclaymed a feest and a iustes to be holden at Dyjon / and knyghtes & squyers of Burgoyne / of Sauoy / and of other marches adioyning were requyred to be at this feest. And euery man pared them selfe accordingly.

Thus whyles the kynges prouysyon was a makyng / to go to Auygnon & to Languedoche. ¶ The duke of Burgoyne on his parte made great prouysyon to receyue the kynge / and so dyde euery man in their marchesse / that purposed to be at ꝑ feest at Dyjon. The same season other matters fell in Fraunce. ye haue herde howe the duke of Irelande (who was called erle of Dubuche) was banysshed here out of Englande / by the vncle of kyng Richarde / and specially the duke of Glouseter had greeted dyspleasure to hym & to them / wherfore he was

was ſtode in to Hollande / and tarped there
but a ſmall ſeaſon / in the towne of Dorpreth
for he was fayne to departe thens. For duke
Aubert / who was lorde of that towne and of
Holande / denyed hym the tarpeng in his cou-
trey / for he wolde nat kepe hym agaynſt the
wyll of his cosyns germayns of Englande /
for all that the kynge of Englande had wri-
ten for hym / yet he was fayne to departe and
to go to Treues a fraunches towne for all ma-
ner of people / payeng for that they toke. And
the duke of Irelande had ynough to paye.
For be lyde that he brought with hym / he had
thyrtye thoulande frankes out of Fraunce
fro the Conſtable / for the redemption of Jo-
han of Bretayne. And he was come to ſ fre-
the kyng vnder ſaueconduyte / and was there
with hym more than a yere. The kyng made
hym good chere / by cauſe he was a ſtraunger /
Howe be it trewe it was / thoughe this duke
was with the kyng / yet Loyde of Coucy ha-
ted hym in his herte / for he had good cauſe.
For though the duke in all aduentes was pro
uyded of wyſe / honoure / eloquence / and of
grete largeſſe / yet he had greatly treſpaſſed
agaynſt the lorde of Coucyes doughter / who
was his wyfe laufully eſpouſed. And forſoke
her without any tytell of reaſon / but by falſe
and yuell temptacyon and diſceyte / was diſ-
ceyued. And toke another wyfe / a damoſell
of the quene of Englandes of the countrey of
Boeme / & the kyng and ſ quene of Englande
ſynfully conſented thereto. And was diſpen-
ſed by pope Urbane of Rome / at the inſtaunce
deſyre of the kynge and quene of Englande.
This ſynne greued greatly the conſcience of
the duke of Irelande. And by cauſe the lorde
of Coucy / who was of the counſayle of Fraun-
ce / and well worthy ſo to be / for he had done
good ſeruyce / & was well able to do. He pur-
red ſo moche by meanes of his frendes / as ſir
Diguet of Chyſſon and the lorde de la Ryuer
ſir Johan Wayuer and other / That it was
ſayde to the duke of Irelande / that he ſhulde
departe out of Fraunce / and to go and cheſe
hym ſelfe another place to abyde in / where he
lyſt / ſo that it be nat in the realme of Fraun-
ce / and thyder he ſhulde ſurely be conueyed. The
duke of Irelande ſawe well / howe he was
dayly in payll by meanes of ſ lorde of Cou-
cy and his lygnage. Wherfore he thought it
ſhulde be beſte for hym to go farre off rather
than to abyde nere. than he aduiſed to drawe
in to Brabant / and deſyred the kyng to write
to the ducheſſe of Brabant / ſ it wolde pleace
her to ſuffre hym peſably to abyde in her cou-
trey. The kynge wrote to his aunte the du-
cheſſe of Brabant / and ſhe conducted to the
kynges deſyre. The duke of Irelande was
conducted by men of the kynges to Louayne
and there he tarped / and ſometyme he went to
a caſtell nat farre of fro the towne of Louay-
gne / the whiche he had borowed of a knyght
of Brabant. With the duke of Irelande was
the archebyſſhop of Yorke / who in lyke wiſe
was banyſſhed out of Englande / all for one
cauſe. Thus byſſhoppe was one of the Ne-
ueuelles of Englande / who in the countrey of
Northumberlande were puiſſaunt men / bothe
of landes and of lynage. There tarped theſe
two lordes at Louayne or there about / as I
herde ſaye / as longe as they lyued. For they
coude neuer come to mercy nor peace with ſ
kynge of Englandes vncles. I can no far-
ther ſpeke of them.

About the feſt of ſaynt Mychell the
Frenche kyng departed fro his houſe
of Beautie beſyde Parys / and lefte
there the quene / and toke his waye by Troy
in Champayne to go in to Burgoyne / & his
vncle the duke of Burbone / and duke Loyes
of Thouraine and the lorde of Coucy / and
many other lordes and knyghtes in his com-
pany. The kynge rode ſo longe that he came
to Dignon. The duke of Burgoyne and the
erle of Neuers his ſonne were come before
to the Chaſtelon on the ryuer of Sayne. Whā
the kyng was come to Dignon / the ducheſſe
of Burgoyne and the coūteſſe of Neuers her
doughter receyued the kyng ioyfully / and all
other lordes for loue of the kyng. And to his
welcomynge to Dygnon / many ladyes and
damoſels were come thyder to ſe hym. There
was the lady of Sully / the lady of Vergy /
the lady of Pagny / and dyuers other fayre la-
dies and freſſhe / and well apparelled. Than
begā freſſynge / daunſynge / and carolynge.
Theſe ladyes enforſed them ſelfe to daunce &
to ſyng / and to make ioye for loue of ſ kyng:
and ſ duke of Thouraine / the duke of Bur-
bone & of the lorde of Coucy. Monday / tueſ-
day / and wednſday / all thre dayes there was
goodly iuſtes / and prices gyuen to ſ beſt do-

ers. The kynge was eight dayes in ꝑ towne of Dignon in great triuphe and ſporte. The .x. daye he toke leaue of his vncle the duke of Burgoyne/ and of the ducheſſe and their chil dren. Thentent of ꝑ duke of Burgoyne was ſhortely after to folowe the kyng his nephue and to go with hym that iourney. The kyng departed fro Dignon/ whan he had taken his leaue of all ladyes and damoſelles/ and rode ſo long by his iourneys that he came to Vile neufe beſyde Auignon. There his houſe roy all was apparelled for hym/ & there was the cardynals of Ampens/ of Aigreuell/ of ſaint Marcell/ of Chatell neufe/ and mo than xiii. other came and mette the kyng in the felde/ & all were gladde of the kynges comyng.

THe duke of Berrey was come to Auygnon and was lodged in the popes palais/ but he cãe to Vyle neufe to the kynge/ and laye in the ſpuerre of arras called Amontays/ in the way to Mount pelyer. The duke of Burgoyne arryued there the nexte day that ꝑ kyng came thyder/ by the water of Rone/ for the duke toke a barge at Lyon ſur le rone. Thus the kynge and theſe four dukes were togyder. Than they determyned to paſſe the bridge of Auignon and to go vſe the pope. And about .ix. of the clorke in the mornyng the kyng paſſed the bridge/ accompanyed with his brother and his thre vncles and .xii. cardynalles/ and ſo went to the popes palays/ and pope Clement was redy in his chambre of conſyſtorye /ſyttyng in his chayre of papalyte. Whan the frenche kyng came in to the chambre and ſawe the pope he enclyned hym ſelfe/ and whan he came nere ꝑ pope roſe/ and the kyng kyſſt his hande & his mouthe. Than the pope ſate downe and cauſed the kyng to ſyt downe by hym/ on a place purpoſely prepared for hym. Than ꝑ dukes kyſſt the popes hande and ſate downe amõge the cardynals. Anone it was tyme of dyner/ than they dyrewe in to the popes great chambre/ where the tables were redy couered. the pope walſhed & ſatte downe at a table alone and kept his eſtate. The frenche kyng ſatte downe at another table alone/ and the cardynalles and dukes ſatte downe in order. The dyner was plentyfull/ & after dyner they had wyne and ſpyces. Than the kyng and ꝑ foure dukes went in to their chãbres/ eche of them had a chambre apparelled in the palays/ and there they tarryed certayne dayes. The .v. day after that the kyng came thyder/ ꝑ ponge erle of Sauoy coſyn to the kyng/ and nephue to the duke of Burbone came thyder. The kyng was right ioyfull of his cõmyng. The frenche kynge/ the duke of Thourayne his brother/ and the erle of Sauoye/ who were lyght of corage and of ſpyryte/ thoughe they were lodged in the popes palays/ nere to the pope and to the cardynalles: yet for all that they wolde nat abſteyne to daunce and to carroll/ and to make ſporte amonge the ladyes and damoſelles of Auignon. And the erle of Geneſne brother to the pope/ brought theym in aquayntaunce with the ladyes and damoſelles of the towne. The kynge gaue great gyftes to the ladyes and damoſelles/ wherby he had great laude and prayſe.

THe pope and the cardinals were ryght ioyfull of the kynges beyng there/ as it was reaſon that they ſhulde ſo be/ for without the loue of the frenche kynge their porte ſhulde haue ben but ſmall. For they cõſydred or ought to haue conſydred/ that there was no kynge chriſtned/ that were obedyent to them/ except it were for loue and fauoure/ and alyaunce of the frenche kyng. The kynge of Spayngne and the kynge of Scottes obeyed this pope Clement/ and the kynge of Aragon was but newly ſo determyned/ and that made the quene yolande of Bare (who was coſyn germayne to the frenche kynge) elles he had nat done ſo/ for before/ the kynge of Aragon and his father before hym was as neuter. Therfore this pope and cardynalles ought well to feeſt the frenche kyng/ ſeynge their puyſſaunce and profyte that they lyued by to kepe their eſtate/ came by meanes of the frenche kyng. Thus the kyng tarryed there a certayne ſeaſon in great ioye & ſporte. And for ioye of the kynges cõmynge thyder/ the pope opened his graces to all clerkes beyng in the courte for the ſpace of a moneth. And gaue the nominacions to the kyng/ of all colledges/ cathedrals/ and to euery coledge two prebendes/ and reuoked all other graces before gyuen/ and wolde that the kynges graces ſhulde gyue before (as they dyd) wherby many of the kynges clerkes were promoted.

ced. Alſo the pope gaue graces to the duke of Thourayne/ the duke of Berrey/ the duke of Burgoyne/ and to the lorde Coucy/ all other were ſtopped that had ben graunted before. The pope was ſo curteiſe & lyberall/ that for loue of the kynges comyng/ he graūted euery thyng that was aſked.

When the kynge had ben there a certayne ſpace/ the pope ſhewed hym his complaynt/ howe that the other pope of Rome greatly hynered his ryght/ & made moche trouble and diſtruce in ỹ churche. The kynge herde hym well/ and promyſed this pope Clement that after his returne agayne in to Fraunce/ he wolde entende to none other thynge/ but to bringe the churche in one accorde. With thoſe wordes the pope was greatly conforted. The kynge toke his leaue and retourned to Lyle Neufe/ and ſo dyde his brother and vncles of Berrey & Burgoyne. And there on a daye the kynge made a dyner to all the cardynalles and to the erle of Geneſne brother to the Pope. After dyner they toke there leaues for the kyng ſayd/ that the nexte day he wolde ryde towarde Montpellyer/ and he thanked them of the reuerēce that they had done to hym. The cardynalles retourned to Auygnon. Than it was ordayned that the kynge ſhulde departe the nexte daye/ his brother and the duke of Burbone in his company. And ſo he dyd/ & toke leaue of his vncles of Berrey and of Burgoyne/ and ſayde/ howe they ſhulde retourne in to their owne countreis/ for they ſhulde go no further with hym at that tyme: For he ſayde he wolde go to Tholous and ſende for therle of Foix to come thyder. His vncles were cōtent therwith/ for as than the kyng had ſuche counſayle about hym/ that the duke of Berrey and the duke of Burgoyns hoped were nat herde/ without it were in ſmall maters. The gouernyng of Laguedoche was taken awaye fro the duke of Berrey/ and deuyded in to Seneſchaunces to the kynges profyte/ wherof the countreis and marcheſſe of Carcaſſone/ of Beſyers/ of Narbone/ of Fonges/ of Bygore/ and of Tholous/ were greatly reioyſed. For before that ſeaſon they had been ſore oppreſſed with tayles/ that the duke of Berrey had reyſed on them: as ye ſhall here after whan the mater requyreth it.

Whan the duke of Berrey & the duke of Burgoyn ſawe that the kyng wolde go to Montpellyer and vſyte Laguedoc/ and wolde nat ſuffre thē to go in his copany/ they were ſore diſpleaſed therwith. howbeit ſagely they diſſymuled the mater/ & ſayde eche to other. The kyng gothe in to Languedoc to make inſpeccyon on thē that gouerned there/ & to make a treatie wt therle of Foix/ who is ỹ moſt prouydeſt erle now lyuyng. he neuer loued nor prayſed any neyghbour that euer he had/ nouther Frenche kyng/ Englande/ Spaygne/ Arragon/ nor Nauer. The kyng taketh with him of his counſayle/ no mo but Ayuer and Myrcer/ Mōtague and the Beghe of Villayns. Howe ſaye you to this brother ỹ the duke of Berrey? The duke of Burgoyne anſwered and ſayd. The kynge our nephue is ponge/ and he beleueth ponge counſayle: they ſhall diſceyue hym/ for ſurely the concluſyon ſhall nat be good/ and that ye ſhall ſe. It muſt behoue vs to ſuffre for this preſente tyme/ but the tyme ſhall come that ſuche as counſaileth him ſhall repent and the kynge alſo. Let hym go on goddes name whider it ſhall pleaſe hym/ and let vs retourne in to our owne countreis/ As long as we holde togyder/ there is none ſhall do vs any wronge. We are two of the cheſe membres of Fraunce. Thus theſe two dukes deuyſed togyder/ & the Frenche kyng departed the nexte day and toke the waye to Nymes/ and rode thyder to dyner. The ſaid two dukes taryed ſtyll with the Pope thre dayes/ and ỹ lorde of Coucy in lyke wiſe. the fourthe daye they departed & rode in to their owne countreis/ and the kyng went fro Nymes and laye all nyght at Lunell.

Whan the kyng depted fro Lunell he went to dyner to Montpellyer/ it was but thre lyttell myles. There he was receyued of ỹ burgeſſes/ ladyes/ and damoſelles of the towne/ for they greatly deſyred to ſe the kynge/ and many riche preſentes were gyuen to hym/ for Montpellyer is a puiſſaunt towne/ ryche/ & full of marchandiſe. The kynge prayſed the towne moche/ and well conſydred their puiſſaūce. And it was ſhewed the kyng that the towne hadde ben moche richer before thanne it was at that preſente tyme: For the duke of Anjou and the duke of Berrey/ eche of them in their tourne hadde greatlye pylled them.

The

The kyng was sorye that ꝯ good people had endured so moche dõmage/ and sayd/ how he wolde reforme the countre in to a better state Than it was / shewed the kynge/ that the poueretie of that towne was nothyng/ to that he shulde fynde forwarde/ For that towne of it selfe hath good meanes of recouerance/ by reson of the marchandise ꝯ is there vsed/ both by lande and by see. But in the marchesse of Carcassone & Tholous/ & therabout/ where as the said two dukes had the gouernaunce. Loke on what thyng they had pupillaunce to laye on their handes there was nothyng left but all taken away. For ye shall fynde ꝯ people there so poore/ that suche as were wont to be rithe and puissaunt/ nowe they are scant able to labour their vynes nor landes. It is a great pyte to se them/ their wyues/ and chyldren. for they haue had euery yere fyue or sixe taples layde on their shulders/ and are rauysshed to the thirde or fourthe parte of their substaunce/ & somtyme to all togyder. One taple coude nat be payde/ but ꝯ another was redy in ꝯ necke therof. for ꝯ as it is well knowen/ these two dukes poure vncles whyle they ruled in Languedocke/ they haue leuyed in ꝯ countrey fro Vyle Neufe in to Tholouse/ rounde about to the ryuer of Garon/ and retourning to the ryuer of Dordone/ the some of xxx. hundred thousande frankes. And specially sythe the duke of Anion departed/ the duke of Berrey hath done the moste dõmage for he founde the playne countrey and cõmõtie in good case/ for the duke of Anion tooke but of the ryche men/ who had wherwith to paye. But the duke of Berrey spared nother poore nor riche/ for he gadered all before him specially by one of his counsayle his treasourer named Betysache/ who is of the nacyon of the cyte of Besyers. As ye shall here by the complaynte of the people that wyll crye out on hym. To these wordes the kyng said. As god haue my soule/ I shall prouyde for this matter or I retourne/ & I shall punisshe the trespasours. For I shall make an inquysycion of the seruauntes and officers of myne vncles/ suche as had ruled here before in the parties of Languedocke/ and suche as haue deserued shalbe correcte.

The kynge taryed at Mount pellyer the space of xxi. dayes/ for the ayer of the towne and the pastyme of ladyes and damoselles/ suche as he founde there pleased hym greatly. To saye trouthe the kynge (as at that tyme was in his lusty youthe/ and lyght & ioyeuse of spyryte. He daunsed and caroled amonge the fayre ladyes and damoselles of ꝯ towne somtyme all nyght: And gaue and made bankettes and suppers largely/ and wolde gyue to the ladyes and damoselis ryngges of golde and chaynes/ to them that he reputed worthy The kynge dyde so moche that he had great laude and prayse. And some of them wolde that he had tarryed there lenger than he dyd/ for he kepte ceuell/ daunsyng and solas: and euery day it was newe to begyn. ¶ Ye haue herde oftentymes said/ howe the sporte of ladies and damoseles encorageth the hertes of ponge lusty gentylmen/ and causeth them to desyre and to seke to gette honour. I say this bycause with the kyng there was thre gentylmen of highe enterprice and of great valure and that they well shewed/ as ye shall here. Fyrst there was the ponge sir Boucequant/ the other sir Raynold of Roy/ and the thirde the lorde of sayne Pye. These thre knyghtes were chamberleyns with the kyng/ and well beloued with him for they were well worthy They were frell he/ and serued hym well in armes/ and in all other maters. These thre beyng at Mountpellier among the ladyes & damoselis/ they toke on them to do armes the next somer after. And as I was enformed/ ꝯ principall cause that enclyned the therto was/ as I shall shewe you. ye knowe well as it hath ben reherced here before in this hystorye howe that in ꝯ dayes of kyng Charles there was an Englysshe knyght called sir Peter Courtney (a valyaunt knight in armes) cõe out of Englande in to Feraute to Paris/ and demaunded to do armes with sir Guy of Tremoyle/ in the presence of the kyng or of suche as wolde se them. sir Guy wolde nat refuse his offre/ and in the presence of the kyng and of other lordes/ they were armed on a daye & ran togyder one course. And than the kyng wolde nat suffre them to ryn agayne togyder/ wherwith the Englysshe knyght was right ryall content. For as he shewed/ he wolde haue fulfylled his chalenge to the vttraunce/ but he was apeased with fayre wordes. and it was sayde to hym/ that he had done enough he ought to be content therwith. The kynge

and the

and the duke of Burgoyne gaue hym fayre
gyftes and presentes. Thanne returned a-
gayne towardes Calays. And the lorde of
Clary who was a fresshe and a lusty knyght
was charged to conuey hym. Thus rode so
longe togyder that they came to Lucyenes/
where as the countesse of sayne Poules laye/
suster to kynge Richarde of Englande. The
lady was joyfull of the comynge thyder of
sir Peter Courtney/ for she hadde maryed
hyder his cosyn the lorde of Courtney/ but he
was dede yonge/ and after she maryed the erle of
sayne Poule. The Englysshe men called her
ma dame Courtney/ and nat Countesse of
sayne Poule.

Howe sir Peter Courtenay came in to Fraunce to do armes with sir Gupe of Tremoyle/ And howe the lorde of Clary conueyed hym/ and by what occasyon he dyde armes with hym in the marchesse of Calays. Cap. Cli.

Thus as sir Peter of Courtney and the lorde of Clary were at Lucyenes in Artoys with the countesse of sayne Poule/ who was ryght ioyous of their com
pany. And as they deuy-
sed of many thynges/ the countesse demaun-
ded of sir Peter Courtney/ what he thought
of the Duke of Fraunce. He answered and
sayd. Certaynly madame/ the Duke of Frau
ce is well and goodly serued/ as can nat be
better serued in our countrey. Sir quod the la-
dy/ and the lordes of Fraunce and the manere
there contente you/ sythe they nat made you
good cheer. Certes madame quod he/ their
cheer contented me hallynghe well/ but in
one case that I call es the Duke/ they haue
nat ellys acquyted them ryght. And madame
quod he/ I trust that the lorde of Clary
here present hadde come in to Englande/ and
promised to haue done armes with any man/
he shulde nat haue departed/ but hadde had
as hym

answered at his pleasure. But I am serued
to the contrary. For we it was sir Gupe de
la Tremoyle and I were armed in the fylde
eche agaynst other/ and ranne togyder but
one course. Than it was shewed me fro the
kynge that we shulde do no more/ sayenge
howe we hadde done ynough. Wherfore ma
dame I saye and wyll say where soeuer I be
come/ that I couldé fynde none to do armes
with me/ and that was nat in my defaute/ but
in the knyghtes of Fraunce. The lorde of
Clary noted well his wordes/ and helde his
peace with great payne. Howebeit at the last
he answered hym/ bycause he had the charge of the co
uoyaunce of hym. Than the countesse sayde.
Sir ye departed right honorably fro Frau-
ce/ whan ye obeyed to the kynges desyre/ for
ye coude do no more/ sythe it was his plea-
sure that ye shulde nat.

A comyng/ returnyng/ and doyng
as ye haue done/ none can saye any
faute in you. All suche as shall here
there of/ on this syde the see and on the other/
shall repute in you more honourable blame
wherfore sir I requyre you become me there
with. Madame quod the knyght so I wyll and
shall do/ I shall neuer take thought for it.
Thus they lefte that mater and tolden other
talkynge: There he taryed all that daye and
nyght. The nexte morynge sir Peter Court
nay toke his leaue of the Countesse of sayne
Poule/ and she gaue hym at his departynge
a lytell chayne of golde/ and to the lorde of
Clary another. Thus in the morynge they
departed fro Lucyenes/ and toke the waye to
Boulogne and came thyder and there laye
all nyght/ and the nexte daye rode towardes
Wargyson to go to Calais.

Itwene Boloygne and Calays are
but seuyn or eyght leages/ and tayre
playne waye. Whan they came nere
to Calais/ there sir Peter of Courtney sayd
to the lorde of Clary. Sir/ we be come in the
kyng of Englandes lande/ and ye haue well
acquyted you in that to me payaunce of me and
of your company/ I thanke you. The lorde
of Clary who had all pleasure in his herte/ for
the wordes that sir Peter had spoken as re-
cyted in the presence of the countesse of sayne
Poule and other. Whiche wordes he thought
he wolde

he wolde nat suffre to reste in that cafe/for he
reputed hym to haute and to hyghe agayn
the honoure of the chiualry of Fraunce/ for
he vnderstode hym that he fayd howe he was
come oute of Englande in to Fraunce/ to do
armes/ and how there were none that wolde
aunswere hym. Than the lorde of Clary at
their leaue takynge sayde. Sir Peter/ ye be
nowe in the kynge of Englandes lande/ and
sir/ I haue conueyed you hyder by the com-
maundement of the kynge my maister and of
the duke of Burgoyne. And ye remembre
well this laste daye whan we were in ꝑ coun
telle of sayn Poules chambre/ who made vs
good chere. ye spake there ouer largely/ as
me thynketh/ to the great preiudyce & blame
of the knyghtes of Fraunce. For ye sayde/
howe ye came fro the kynges courte/ & coude
fynde none to do armes with you. By ꝑ whi
che wordes maye be vnderstande/ that there
is no knyght in Fraunce that dare do armes
or iust with you/ thre courses with a speare.
Wherfore sir/ I wyll that ye knowe that here
I offre my selfe/ thoughe I be one of ꝑ moost
symplest knyghtes in all Fraunce. And saye
and iustifye/ that the realme of Fraunce is
nat so voyde of knyghtes/ but that ye shall
well fynde two we to do dedes of armes with
you. And sir/ if ye lyste ye shall fynde me re-
dy to aunswere you/ be it incontynente/ this
nyght or to morowe. I saye nat this for any
hatered that I haue to your persone. I do it
all onely to mayntayne the honour of our p-
tie/ For I wolde nat ye shulde retourne to
Calais or in to Englande/ to make youre a-
uaunt that without strooke strephen/ ye shulde
discomfyte the knyghtes of Fraunce. Sir an
swere me if it please you to my wordes. Sir
Peter Courtney was soone counsayled what
answere to make/ and sayde. Sir of Clary/
ye spake well/ and I accepte your demaunde
And I wyll that to morowe in this same pla
ce/ ye be armed at your pleasure/ and I shall
be in lyke wise. And than lette vs ryde ech
at other thre courses with a speare/ and ther-
by ye shall wynne agayne the honour of the
frenche courte/ and ye shall do me a greate
pleasure. Sir quod the lorde of Clary/ I ac-
cepte you/ I shall nat fayle to be here at the
hour ye haue assigned. Thus these two kn-
ghtes prouyded ech other to iust. The lorde
of Clary retourned to Harguysen/ & there
prouyded hym of his armure/ sheilde/ speare
and horse. He hadde none all that he lacked
for on the frontiers of Calays and Bologne
men were come prouyded. There he made
his prouysyon/ as shortly as he myght/ for
he wolde nat that ouermany shulde haue
knowen therof. In lyke manner sir Peter
Courtney whanne he came to Calays/ he fay-
gate nat the prompte that he had made. But
prouyded hym of good armure/ and of ryche
thynge elles. As for harnesse he had reby-
sushe as he had caryed with hym out of En-
glande in to Fraunce. As at that tyme sir Jo
han Bernes was capitayne of Calays. Sir
Peter shewed hym the promise ꝑ was made
betwene hym and the lorde of Clary. Than
sir Johan Bernes sayde/ howe he wolde ac-
company hym thyder/ and other good frie-
wes of Calays. The nexte daye these two
knightes came to the place apoynted/ the En
glysh knyght came moche better accompa-
nyed than dyde the frenche knyght/ for the
capitayne of Calays was with hym. Whan
they were come togyder/ there was but fewe
wordes betwene them. They knewe well
ynough wherfore they were come. they were
bothe well armed and horsed/ and toke their
sheldes. Than they toke their speares with
sharpe heedes well fyled/ and spurred their
horses and ranne togyder. The fyrst courte
they fayled/ wherwith they were bothe sore
displeased. At the seconde misse they mette so
togyder/ that the lorde of Clary strake the
Englysh knyght throughe the targe and
throughe the sholder a handfull/ and ther-
with he felle fro his horse to the erthe. The
Lorde of Clary passed fayre and kepte his
course and turned and rode styll/ for he sawe
well howe the Englysh knyght was vnhor-
sed/ & howe that many men were about hym
He thought surely than that he was hurt/ for
his speare was brokenne in peces. Than he
rode to them. And the Englysh men came
to the lorde of Clary and sayde. Sir/ ye be no
courteise knyght. wherfore quod the lorde of
Clary. bycause ꝙ they ye haue hurt this kny-
ghtes sholder/ ye might more curteisly haue
iusted. Sirs ꝙ he/ that curteisly saye nat in my
seyng I was appoynted to iuste for the same
cause or worse nyght some fallen to me as well
as to hym. Howe be it sirs I requyre you de-
maunde of hym yf he wyll iuste with me/ whyder he
wyll do

wyll do any more or natte. Than sir Johan Bemes sayde. Nay naye sir knyght/ ye may departe whan ye lyste ye haue done enough. Than the lorde of Clary departed with his company/ and the Englysshe men ledde sir Peter Courtney to Calays/ to be healed of his hurtes. And the lorde of Clary retourned in to Fraunce/ thynkynge that he hadde right well done/ and that he shulde haue had for that dede great laude and prayse/ But I shall shewe you what fell therof.

When tydynges came to the French kyng and to the duke of Burgoyne/ and to their counsayle howe that the lorde of Clarye had done armes with sir Peter Courtney/ in retournynge to Calais/ so that the sayde sir Peter was hurte/ and in parylle of dethe. The kynge and the duke/ and specially sir Gupe of Tremoyle were sore displeased with the lorde of Clary/ and sayde: howe he had done (at the leest) as moche as to lese his landes/ and to be banysshed the realme of Fraunce for euer/ without remyssion. And for other (suche as wolde hym no good wyll) sayde: howe he hadde done lyke a false traytoure/ seynge a straunge knyght vnder the kynges sauegarde/ shulde be requyred by hym to do dedes of armes/ and by ꝑ meanes to be brought to the iopardye of dethe. They sayde suche a dede ought nat to be pardoned. The lorde of Clary was sente for: he came to the kynge and to the duke of Burgoyne. There he was rebuked and layde to his charge/ and demaunded howe he durste be so outragious to haue ought to straunger that was come to the kynges court for good loue and to exalte his honoure/ to be mates of armes/ and depted them with good loue and ioye. And the entente that he shulde nat be troubled by the way/ in his retournyng was delyuered to hym to conduyte and than at the departynge of dethe or armes/ he to be holde to do armes with hym in case of iustes mortall/ without lycence of his soueraygne lorde of whom he holdeth his lande. It was shewed hym the trespace was so great/ that it was nat to be pardoned/ but to be punysshed to highnes/ that all other shulde take exaumple therby. The lorde of Clary whan he herde these wordes he was sore displeased for he thought he hadde done well/ and for to haue had thanke. Than he sayde. My lordes/ it is of trouthe/ sir Peter of Courtney was delyuered to me to conducte and to kepe hym company tyll he came to Calais/ or to the frontiers therof. And of all that I hadde in charge I haue well and truely acquyted my selfe/ and at nede be/ I shall proue it by the wytnesse of hym selfe. And trewe it was/ that by ꝑ waye whan we came to Lucyen to the countesse of Saynt Poule/ who receyued vs made vs good chere. There sir Peter Courtney hadde certayne wordes/ as I shall shewe you.

The countesse demaunded of hym and sayde. sir Peter of Courtney. howe are ye content with the Lordes of Fraunce/ and with the maner of Fraūce? he answered courtesly and sayd. Madame/ the maner of Fraunce is right noble and goodlye. As for the lordes of Fraunce I am right well content with their chere/ excepte in one thyng/ and that is with great payne and trauayle and great coste/ I haue issued oute of Englande to do dedes of armes/ and so came to the fresche kynges court/ but there I knewe nat with whom to do armes. Thus my lordes/ whan I herde hym saye so in the presence of so noble a lady/ as the countesse of Saynte Poule/ sustre to the kynge of Englande/ the wordes were right heuy to me to beare. howbe it I suffred them for that tyme/ bycause I had the charge of the conueyaunce of hym. I neuer made semblaunt therof to hym/ as longe as we were in company togyder within the realme of Fraunce. And at our leaue takynge in the marchelle of Calais/ trewe is/ than I layde vnto hym the sayde wordes and sayd/ howe they were nat courtesly spoken/ nat honorably. For the wordes sounded that the chyualry of Fraunce was so abated/ that none durst do dedes of armes with hym Than I sayd/ if he wolde abyde therby/ that I was one of the knightes of Fraunce borne of the nacyon. And I sayd I wolde nat that he shulde make his auaunte in Englande/ that he coude nat fynde in Fraūce/ nor by the waye/ with whome to do armes. Therfore I sayde I was redy/ and desyred to do armes with hym/ and to fulfylle his pleasure and desyre/ as to ryyne three courses with a speare/ the same daye or the nexte. Certaynly my lordes

my lo3des/ I sayde these wo3des for the ho/nour of the realme of Fraunce/ and the ry3/tualey therof. And me thought he had great ioye therof/ and accepted to do armes with me the nexte day and so dyde I/ and the nexte day we mette at the same place. He was a cõ/panyed with them of the garyson of Calais/ And with me there were certayne of the fron/teers there/ knyghtes and squyers: as ỹ lo3de of Mount carell and sir Iohan of Longuy/lers. There we iusted togupder as well as we coude/ and the aduenture of armes fell so ỹ at the seconde course I strake him through the shulder/so that he fell to the erthe. Than I retourned againe to knowe if he wolde do any more. Than the capitayne of Calis sayd it was sufficient that was done/ and that I myght departe whan I lyst. And than I re/tourned. I beleued I had ryght well done/ and well defended the honour of the realme of Fraũce/and of the knightes therin. Thus I haue shewed you the very trouthe of this dede/for my well doyng of this armes shall folowe/ I repo3te me and wyll abyde the iu/gement of my lo3de the Constable/ and my lo3des the highe marshalles of Fraũce. And besyde that/to the voice and discrecion of the knyght hym selfe sir Peter curtney/at whose requeste I dyde these armes. And also I re/po3te me to all knyghtes and squyers of ho/nour/bothe of Fraunce and of Englande/ cre/dably enfourmed of the hole matter.

WHan the lo3de of Clary had shewed the matter/ and sagely made his ex/cusacion/as ye haue herde. Ie great ire aswaged the yre and displeasure of them that had complayned of hym. Howbe it for all his wo3des and excusacions/ he coude nat be delyuered/but was cõmytted to prysone. I there taryed a long season in great daunger/ of lesyng of all his landes / and to be banys/shed for euer. but the lo3de of Coucy and the duke of Burbon/they labo3ed sore for his de/liuerãce/and with moche payne they made his peace/ with the ayde of the countesse of saynt Puole/ before whom the wo3des were spoken. Than at his deliuerance it was sayd to hym. Sir of Clary/ ye supposed to haue done ryght well/ howbe it ye dyde shames/fully/ whanne ye offred to do armes with sir Peter Courtney/ who was vnder the kyngs saue garde/and deliuered to you to conduyte to Calays by the kynges cõmaundement. ye dyde a great outrage/ whan ye reuersed the wo3des the whiche were spoken but in spo3t before the coũtesse of saynt Poule. Do3 ye had done it/ ye ought to haue returned to ỹ kyng and haue shewed hym ỹ wo3des that shulde haue sowned agaynst the honour of ỹ knyght/tes of Fraũce: & than what coũsayle the king had gyuen you/ ye ought to haue folowed. & bycause ye dyde nat thus/ye haue hadde this payne. Beware better another tyme/ & thãke the lo3de of Burbone and the lo3de of Coucy of your delyuerance/ for they haue sore la/boyed for you: & also ỹ lady of sayne Poule. Quod the lo3de of Clary/my lo3des I thãke you all/ howe be it I thought I hadde done well. Thus he departed.

Howe the iustes at sayne Inguel/bert/other wise called Sadyngtide were enterprised: By sir Reynolde of Roy/ the yonge sir Boucyquant/ and the lo3de of sayne Pye.

Cap. C.lxii.

THe frenche kyng lay at the good towne of mou/lyner in great myrthe and sport/ and at a banket that the kynge made to the La/dies and damoselles of the towne/ there was reher/sed all this sayd matter of the lo3de of Clary and of sir Peter Courtney. True it was/ I began to speke of the valyaunt knyghtes/ of the yonge sir Bouciquaunt/ sir Reynolde of Roy/ and the lo3de of sayne Pye. The whi/che thre enterprised to do dedes of armes in the frontier before Calais in the tyme of Au/gust nexte after/ abydyng all knyghtes & squy/ers straungers the terme of.xxx. dayes/ who/soeuer wolde iuste with them in iustes of peace or of warre. and bycause thenterprise of these thre knyghtes came to the frenche kyng and his counsayle to be an high enterprise. There it was sayd to them/ that they shulde prouy/de

in wyt

in that ryght he cause the kyng moste certainly dout therof/ that if they were to bryng to ouer purpose/ that the kyng ony be amended therby cause the kyng nor his countayle wold be nat diligent ony thynge that shulde be vnreasonable. Thus the knyghtes and lordes sayd/ It is but reason that we do thus/ we shall vse bout. Then they rose vp and toke leue and retorned home to dyner as followeth.

NOw therbe that we haue to come to the knowledge of noble gentlemen/knyghtes and squyers straungers/ as well of the duke of Lancastre as of dyuerse other of hys countrey/ whyche were in the marches of Calays/ the fourty day of the moneth of Septembre come kyng and there contynued thyrty dayes complete/ the feyrdayes onely except/ and dayly accall manner of knyghtes and squyers/ gentlemen straungers of ony manner of nacyon whatsomeuer they be that wyll come thyder for the disadnyge of two persones/ parties sharpe or rebettes at their pleasure. And without ony longynges shall be the shelters of our armes/ both on the shelde of peace and of warre/ and whoso euer wyll auel/ lette hym come by fore the day before/ and with a rod to the whyche he hyde be pleased/ if he touche ony of the sayde of warre/ the next daye he shall iust with whyche of the two he wyll. And if he touche the shelde of peace he shall haue the iuste of peace and of warre. So that who somer touche ony of the sheldes the wyll cause to be the wod that names touche and shalbe there trumped by vs to recyue their names/ and all these knyghtes straungers as wyll iuste/ to hange their noble armes on their parties (who shall be instructed by vs what ought to be done in this case). And we requyre all knyghtes and squyers straungers that wyll come and iuste/ that they thynke this pennaunce to be that we do this for ony pryde/ enuye or yll wyll/ but all only we desyre haue their honorable company and acquayntaunce/ the whyche with ouer entyre hertes we beleue. And none of our parties shall be content with ony new dede/ nor ony of them that wyll come to iuste with vs/ without ony manner of fraudes/ aduauntage or malt engyn/ but euery thynge to be ordred by them that shall be commytted by eyther parte to gouerne the iustes. And by these that all gentlemen noble knyghtes and squyers to whom this shall come to knowlege/ in that it shulde be enacted here and stablished we haue sealed this present writynge with the seales of our armes. Written at Mountpellyer the twenty daye of Nouembre in the yere of our lorde god a thousande thre hundred fyfty and syxe. Thus endeth the Rol/ Bourgoynne/ Gascoyne/ Poyc.

IF the high courage and enterpryse of those thre knyghtes the french kynge was ryght ioyfull therof/ and or the matter went forwarde euery thynge was well ordayned and sene/ that no faute shulde be therin founde. Some of the kynges counsayle thought it was nat reasonable/ that these armes shulde be borne so nere to Calays/ for the englysshe men myght take it for a parlyamente/ on the whyche wolde be ensewed/ by cause of the treuce that was bytwene Englande and Scotlande/ to endure for thre yere/ wherfore they sayde there ought nothynge to be wryten nor boone/ that shulde be occasyon of ony dyscension to be had bytwene the realmes. The kynge toke counsayle vpon this matter a hole day/ and wyste nat what to do/ they wolde fayne haue byden it. But the auncyent sayde/ it were nat good alwayes to contende to the purpose of ponge people/ for often tymes they by mape greue the prudentes/ rather pull than do good. Howbe it the kynge who was ponge inclyned greatly to these knyghtes/ and sayd. Lette them do their enterpryse/ they are ponge and corageous/ they haue prompted a fayre dome to be it before the ladyes of Mountpellyer/ we wyll that the matter go forwarde/ let them parfyte we their enterpryse. Whanne euery man sawe that it was the kynges pleasure/ there were none but he sayd agaynst it/ wherfore the knyghtes were ryght ioyfull. And so it was concluded and agreed that the matter shulde go forwarde as the knyghtes had wryten and sealed. Then the kynge sent for the thre knyghtes into his chambre apart/ and sayd to them. Syrs/ in all poynt nowynge regarde vpryght the honour of vs and of our realme/ and to mayntayne your astate/ spare nothynge/ for we shall nat fayle you for the expence of ten thousande frankes. The thre knyghtes kneled downe before the kynge and thanked his grace.

THus the frenche kynge toke his sporte in the good towne of Mountpellyer a fyftene dayes/ made feste with ladyes and

damoyselis

my lo3des/ I sayde these wo3des for the ho-
nour of the realme of Fraunce / and the cy-
ualry therof. And me thought he had great
ioye therof / and accepted to do armes with
me the nexte day and to dyde I / and the nexte
day we mette at the same place. He was a cō-
panyed with them of the garyson of Calays/
And with me there were certayne of the fron
teers there / knyghtes and squyers: as ꝑ lo3de
of Mount carell and sir Johan of Longuy-
lers. There we iusted rogayder as well as
we coude/ and the aduenture of armes fell so
ꝑ at the seconde course I strake hym throughe
the shulder/so that he fell to the erthe. Than
I retourned againe to knowe if he wolde do
any moze. Than the capitayne of Calis said
it was sufficient that was done / and that I
myght departe whan I lyst. And than I re-
tourned. I beleued I had ryght well done/
and well defended the honour of the realme
of Fraūce/and of the knightes therin. Thus
I haue shewed you the very trouthe of this
dede/for my well doyng of this armes shall
folowe/ I repo3te me and wyll abyde the iu-
gement of my lo3de the Constable/ and my
lo3des the highe marr halles of Fraūce. And
besyde that/to the voice and direction of the
knyght hym selfe sir Peter courtney/at whose
requeste I dyde these armes. And also I re-
po3te me to all knyghtes and squyers of ho-
nour/bothe of Fraunce and of Englande/cre
dably enfourmed of the hole matter.

Than the lo3de of Clary had shewed
the matter / and sagely made his ex-
cusacions/as ye haue herde. Ye great
lye alwaged the yre and displeasure of them
that had complayned of hym. Howbe it for
all his wo3des and excusacions/he coude nat
be delyuered/but was comytted to prisone. I
there tarryed a long season in great daunger/
of lesyng of all his landes / and to be banys-
shed for euer. but the lo3de of Coucy and the
duke of Burbon/they labo3ed sore for his de-
lyueraūce/and with moche payne they made
his peace / with the ayde of the countesse of
sayne Paule/ before whom the wo3des were
spoken. Than at his deliuerance it was said
to hym. Sire of Clary / ye supposed to haue
done ryght well / howbe it ye dyde shame-
fully/ whanne ye offred to do armes with sir
Peter Courtney/ who was vnder the kynges
saue garde/and delyuered to you to conduyte
to Calays by the kynges cōmaundement. ye
dyde a great outrage/ whan ye renewed the
wo3des the whiche were spoken but in spo3t
before the countesse of sayne Poule. Wher ye had
done it/ ye ought to haue returned to ꝑ kyng
and haue shewed hym ꝑ wo3des that I shulde
haue towned agayust the honour of ꝑ knyght
tes of Fraūce: Than what counsayle the king
had gyuen you/ ye ought to haue folowed. For
because ye dyde nat thus/ye haue hadde this
payne. Beware better another tyme/ & thāke
the lo3de of Burbone and the lo3de of Coucy
of your deliuerance / for they haue sore la-
bo3ed for you: & also ꝑ lady of sayne Poule.
Quod the lo3de of Clary/my lo3des I thāke
you all / howbe it I thought I hadde done
well. Thus he departed.

Howe the isles at sayne Inguer-
bert/other wise called Gadyngrid
were enterprised: By sir Reynolde
of Roy/the ponge sir Boucyquant/
and the lo3de of sayne Pye.

Cap. C.lxii.

The frenche kyng lay
at the good towne of mont
pellyer in great myrthe and
ioyse / and at a banket that
the kynge made to the La-
dies and damoselles of the
towne / There was reher-
sed all this sayd matter of the lo3de of Clary
and of sir Peter Courtney. Trewe it was/ I
began to speke of the valyaunt knightes of
the ponge sir Bouciquaunt/ sir Reynolde of
Roy/ and the lo3de of sayne Pye. The whi-
che tyme entreprised to do dedes of armes in
the frontier before Calais in the tyme of Pa-
mes nexte after/ abydyng all knightes & squi-
ers straungers the terme of.xxi. dayes/ who
soeuer wolde iuste with them in iustes of peace
or of warre. and because thenterprise of these
three knyghtes semed to the frenche kyng and
his counsayle to be an high enterprise. There
it was said to them/ that they shulde passe
in yll

Of the great busyne that we have to come to the knowlege of nobl^e gentlemen knightes and squiers straungers/ as well of the realme of [illegible] as elsewhere of force bountevous [illegible] Inglysshemen/ in the meetinge of [illegible] the twenty day of the moneth of [illegible] come ageyne/ and there contynue tyll [illegible] plete the sayd dayes and treatye/ and to receyve all manner of knyghtes and squiers/ gentlemen straungers of any manner of nacyon/ what soever they be that will come thyder for the tenhaunce of their armes/ either charge or rebatter at their pleasure. And therfore our lorde geve us the grace of his holy spyryte/ that we may so entreate one another/ that we may departe from hens in good peace and love/ and whosoever will fall into any vylanye ayenst the sayd treatye/ and will not come thyder the day before/ and make a rode to the marches there to be presente the tenthe ♀ the day of marche/ the nexte daye he shall fall with myche of the thre he will. And yf between the thre dayes of peace he shall have the dayes of peace and of warre. And that whosoever touche any of the sayd thynges or cause to be the which myght cause any suche as shulde there interrupte by no interception of his armes/ and all other knightes straungers as well ferther as hyther to have some noble thynge emprysed by his what ought to be done in this case. And he requyre all knyghtes and squyers straungers that will come and ride/ that they thynke non vnaqueyntaunce in the that we do this for any pryde/ haterd/ or yll will/ but alonely we do it to have thyse honorable company and aqueyntaunce/ the which with all our hertes we desyre. And also of our behalfe shall be ordayned with good men at armes/ no/ none of them that will come to ride both day/ without any manner of fraudes/ covenaunge/ or male engyn but every thynge to be ordered by them that shall be chosyn by ether parte to governe the lystes. And be made that all gentlemen noble knyghtes and squiers to whom this shall come to knowlege or that it shulde be enquyred ferme and stable/ we have sealed these presente with the sealing of our armes. Written at Mountpellier the twenty daye of Nouembre/ in the yere of grace one thousande three hundred fourscore and xpan and signed thus. Raymond de Roy/ Bourciquaut/ sayne Pere.

Of the high courage and enterprise of those three knyghtes the frenche kynge was ryght ioyfull thereof/ and of the matter went forwarde every thynge was well ordayned and fonde/ that no faulte shulde be therin founde. Some of the kinges counsayle thought it was not reasonable/ that these armes shulde be doone so nere to Calays/ for myght the men might take it for a passage/ on the whiche wolde be ensewed/ by cause of the treatye ♀ taken betwene Englande and Scotlande/ to endure for three yeres/ wherfore they sayde there ought nothynge to be wryten nor doone/ that shulde be ageynst any ordenaunce that shulde be had betwene the realmes. The kynges counsayle satisfyed on this matter/ a hole day/ and wyste not what to do/ they wolde thynke have blowne. Suche as were sage sayde it were not good always to condescende to the pleasure of yonge people/ for often tymes they myght growe impedymente rather than thynke good. Howbe it the kynge who was yonge inclyned greatly to these knyghtes/ and sayde. Lette them do their enterprise/ they are yonge and courageous/ they have promysed to come to it before the ladyes of Mountpellyer/ we will that the matter go forwarde/ let them parfourme their enterprise. Wherin every man sawe that it was the kynges pleasure/ there were none durste say ageynst it/ wherfore the knyghtes were ryght ioyfull. And so it was concluded and agreed that the matter shulde go forwarde as the knightes had written and sealed/ than the kynge sent for the two knyghtes into his chambre aparte/ and sayd to them. Sirres/ in all your voyage regarde vpsely the honour of vs and of our realme/ and to mayntayne your alle/ thynge/ for we shall not fayle you for the expence of ten thousande frankes. To the two knyghtes lowted bowne before the kynge and thanked his grace.

Thus the frenche kynge toke his sporte in the good towne of Mountpellyer a fyftene dayes/ moste parte with ladyes and

damoysels

my lo;des/ I sayde these wo;des fo; the ho-
nour of the realme of Fraunce / and the cy-
uatry therof. And me thought he had great
ioye therof / and accepted to do armes with
me the nexte day and so dyde I / and the nexte
day we mette at the same place. He was a co-
panyed with them of the garyson of Calais/
And with me there were certayne of the fron
teers there / knyghtes and squyers: as ꝑ lo;de
of Mount cartil and sir Johan of Longuyl
lers. There we iusted togupder as well as
we coude / and the aduenture of armes fell so
ꝑ at the seconde course I strake hym through
the shulder / so that he fell to the erthe. Than
I returned againe to knowe yf he wolde do
any more. Than the capitayne of Calis said
it was sufficient that was done / and that I
myght departe whan I lyst. And than I re-
tourned. I beleued I had ryght well done/
and well defended the honour of the realme
of Fraūce / and of the knightes therin. Thus
I haue shewed you the very trouthe of this
dede / fo; my well beyng of this ambes shall
folowe / I repo;te me and wyll abyde the iu-
gement of my lo;de the Constable / and my
lo;des the highe mast halles of Fraūce. And
beside that / to the voice and discretion of the
knyght hym selfe sir Peter curtney / at whose
requeste I dyde these armes. And also I re-
po;te me to all knyghtes and squyers of ho-
nour / bothe of Fraunce and of Englande / ere
dably enformed of the hole matter.

Than the lo;de of Clary had shewed
the matter / and sagely made his ex-
cusacios / as ye haue herde. It great
lye alwaged the yre and displeasure of them
that had complayned of hym. Howe be it fo;
all his wo;des and excusacions / he coude nat
be delyuered / but was co;mytted to p;sone. I
there taryed a long season in great daunger/
of lesyng of all his landes / and to be banyf-
shed fo; euer. but the lo;de of Coucy and the
duke of Burbon / they labo;ed sore fo; his de-
liuerāce / and with moche payne they made
his peace / with the ayde of the countesse of
sayne Paole / before whom the wo;des were
spoken. Than at his deliuerāce it was said
to hym. Sir of Clary / ye supposed to haue
done ryght well / howe be it ye dyde shame-
fully / whanne ye offered to do armes with sir
Peter Courtney / who was vnder the kyng
saue garde / and deliuered to you to tarowent
to Calays by the kynges co;maundement. Ye
dyde a great outrage / whan ye remewed the
wo;des the whiche were spoken but in spo;t
before the countesse of sayne Poule. Fo; ye had
done it / ye ought to haue returned to ꝑ kyng
and haue shewed hym ꝑ wo;des that I shulde
haue sowned ageynst the honour of ꝑ knyght
tes of Fraūce: & than what counsayle the king
had gruen you / ye ought to haue folowed. &
bycause ye dyde nat thus / ye haue hadde this
payne. Beware better another tyme / & thāke
the lo;de of Burbone and the lo;de of Coucy
of your delyuerāce / fo; they haue sore la-
bo;ed fo; you: & also ꝑ lady of sayne Poule.
Quod the lo;de of Clary / my lo;des I thāke
you all / howe be it I thought I hadde done
well. Thus he departed.

How the iustes at sayne Inguis
bert / other wise called Sādyngfelde
were enterpised: By sir Reynolde
of Roy / the ponge sir Bouciquant /
and the lo;de of sayne Pye.
Cap. C.lxii.

The frenche kyng lay
at the good towne of mont
pellyer in gret myrthe and
spoat / and at a banket that
the kynge made to the La-
dies and damoselles of the
towne / There was reher-
sed all this sayd matter of the lo;de of Clary
and of sir Peter Courtney. True it was / I
began to speke of these valyaunt knightes / of
the ponge sir Bauciquaunt / sir Reynolde of
Roy / and the lo;de of sayne Pye. The why-
che this enterpised to do dedes of armes in
the frontier besyde Calais in the tyme of the
mes nexte after / abydyng all knightes & squi-
ers straungers the terme of .xxi. dayes / who
soeuer wolde iuste with them in iustes of peace
or of warre. and bycause thenterpryse of these
two knyghtes semed to the frenche kyng and
his counsayle to be an high enterpryse. There
it was said to them / that they shulde purueay
in yo;

In Hayrnaut because the kyng wolde se thaym dres themself that they were to bryng to outerageous / that the kyng myght amende them / because the kyng nor his counsayle wolde not vnderstande any outrage that shulde be done vnto them. Thus the kyng was armed and redy. It is but reason that we do thus / sothall the worde. Than they toke a clerke and caused him to wrote as followeth.

1 Do the great desyre that we haue to come to the knowlenge of noble gentlemen knightes and squyers straungers / as well of the realme of Englande as els where of force to encrease [illegible] Iuggyng / in the moneth of [illegible] the twenty day of the moneth of [illegible] comyng and there contynue tyll xv dayes complete the feyrdayes excepte / and to receyue all maner of knyghtes and squyers gentlemen straungers of any nacyon whatsoeuer they be that wyll come thyder for the breakynge of speres / and that shall do so to their pleasure. And without any lettynge shall be the shelders of euery man both on the shelders of peace and of warre / and whosoeuer wyll make lette to come vnto the sayd feest / and make a rode to the barryers the which shall be pleasaunt for them to breke of warre / the nexte daye he shall fast with whiche of the three he wyll. And yf he bouche the shelde of peace he shall haue the sadles of peace and of warre. So that whosoeuer touche any of the shelden shelde or sadle to be the two dayes nexte as shalbe there lefte by the receyuers there names / and all suche knyghtes straungers as wyll iuste / to bryng forth a noble man out their partye / who shall be nombred by the whole ordre to be done in this case. Item we requyre all knyghtes and squyers straungers that wyll come and iuste / that they doo not make any maner in the that we do this for any pryde / hatred / or pryde wyll / but all onely we do it to haue honorable company and acquayntaunce / the whiche with our entyre hartes we desyre. And none of our shelden shall be cladden with pryce nor syluer / nor none of them that wyll come to iuste with vs / without any maner of fraude / aduauntage / or malengyn but euery thynge to be ordred by them that shall be chosyn by vs that parte to gouerne the iustes. And to make that all gentlemen / noble knyghtes and squyers to whom this shall come to knowlege / in that it shulde be enacted ferme and stable / the haue sealen these presentes with the seales of our armes. Wryttyn at Mountpellier the twenty daye of Nouembre in the yere of our lorde god a thousande three hundred fourty and seuen. Signed thus. Capucius vil Roy / Bourgnuant / Capnis Gyre.

Of the high courage and enterpryse of thyse two knyghtes the frenche kynge was ryght ioyfull thereof / and of the mater went forwarde tyll yonge was well aduysed and sene / that two faultes shulde be therin founde. Some of the kinges counsayle thought it was not reasonable / that ryche men shulde be boone to nere to Calays for the englysshe men myght take it for a pylfynge / on the whiche wolde be aryse to / vpraule of the treuce ytaken betwene Englande and Scalles / to endure for the yere. Wherfore they sayde there ought nothynge to be wrytten nor boone / that shulde be occasyon of any displeasure to be had betwene the realmes. The kynges counsayle setten on this matter a hole day / and wyste not what to do / they wolde fayne haue broken it. But he was sage sayde it were not good at wayes to confounde the purpose of yonge people / for often tymes there hope growe into dyuers / rather pull thanne good. Howbeit the kynge who was yonge inclyned greatly to these knyghtes / and sayd. Lette them do their enterpryse, they are yonge and courageous / they haue promysed / I wolde to do it before the ladyes of Mountpellyer / we wyll that the mater go forwarde / let them parfourme their enterpryse. Whanne euery man sawe that it was the kynges pleasure / there were none durste say agaynst it / wherfore the knyghtes were ryght ioyfull. And so it was concluded and agreed that the mater shulde go forthe as the knightes had written and sealed / than the kynge sent for the fyue knyghtes into his chambre aparte / and sayd to them. Syrs / in all your doynge regarde onely the honour of vs and of our realme / and to mayntayne your aduauntage / spare nothynge / for we shall not fayle you for the expence of ten thousande frankes. The fyue knyghtes kneled downe before the kynge and thanked his grace.

Thus the fresshe kynge toke his sporte in the good towne of Mountpellyer a fyftene dayes / makyng feste with ladyes and

damoselis

damoiselx. And the kynge and his counsayle had parfytely regarded the ludgynge and neces-sytes of the towne/ for gretyously he was come thyder for the same cause/ and by the adu-yse of his counsayle euery thynge was well reformed and brought to good effect/ and the-re oppressyons broke away/ wherby the good people had ben fore encombred. Than the kynge toke his leue of the ladyes and da-moiselles/ and in a morenynge he departed and went to dyner to Aspremont/ and enyght lay at Tibers/ the nexte day to Belpers/ where he was goodly serued/ for the good men of the towne greatly desyred to se hym/ and so dyd all the countreys/ bothe of Gothenan/ of Cabe-dan/ and of Narbone/ for they were redy to make complaynctes to the kynge of the duke of Berrys officer called Beuf ache/ who had pylled the countreys. This Beufach for that tyme the kynge came for Avignon he rode al-wayes in his company/ but no man durst hym as they thought/ for they myght haue ga-uen hym mayminges if they had wyll/ but they drawe hym farther with fayre wordes/ and fay-ned promysed hym not hynge but honours/ al-though the contrary. The kynge entred into Belpers by nyght/ there a fore as after noone/ he was met with processyon without ȳ towne with all the clergy and burgesses/ and ladyes and damoselles/ as the kynge came by kynge they were a bothe sydes of the waye/ and dyd their reuerence. So he came to the cathedrall churche and there alyghted at the dore/ where there was an autre made richely garnysshed with tapestry and cyrpes. There the kynge knelyd downe and dyd his prayers/ and than entred in to the churche with the bysshoppe of Belpers/ and his vncle the duke of Burbone and other lordes folowyng after. Than the kynge went to his lodgynge to the Palays/ whiche was not farre thence/ and his vn-cle the duke of Thourayne and the duke of Burbone with him/ and the other lordes were lod-ged and abode in the towne/ where as they were well and easely lod-ged/ for Belpers is a good cyte.

Of the complaynctes made to the kyng by the people of Languedocq/ the tenure of Belpers/ agaynst Beuf-ache treasourer to the duke of Ber-rey of the great extorcyons that he had made/ and of the confession that he made/ and of the cruell dethe that he had in the fayre towne.

Cap. .cxxii.

What dayes the kynge was at Belpers ingeate-ryng entreuryl amonge la-dyes and damoselles/ and all that tyme Beufache was nothynge spoken vnto/ but the enquesytours whyl were ordeyned by the kynge/ who secretly enquyred of his dedes/ and they founde by enquest dy-uers cases horrible/ not to be pardoned. The fourth day that the kynge had ben there/ this Beufache was called before the kynges counsayle in a chambre/ and there openly it was declared vnto hym. Beufache/ ma-ny complaynctes ben made vnto vs/ and dy-uers wrytyngs that ye haue/ There was there vpon hym a great nombre of billes of complaynctes that were put vpon the kynge agaynst hym/ makyng mencyon of the extorcyons that he had done to the people. All these billes of complaynctes were redde before hym one after another. To some he answe-red nothynge/ makynge no countenaunce/ and to some he playnly denyed them and sayde. I know nothynge of these matters/ saye them to the ser-uauntes of Beaucayre/ and of Carcassonne/ and to the chaunceliour of Berrey/ it pertay-neth to them to answere to these matters. Howbeit finally it was shewed him that he muste kepe prysone for a tyme/ tyll the matter were better examyned. He obeyed bycause he myght not chose. Before as he was in prison the enquysitours went to his lodgynge/ and toke into their handes all suche writynges and accomptes as they founde there/ whether per-tayned to such matters as he had intermedled with all before/ and they marked them as lon-ged vnto/ and found in them the extorcyons of great somes of money/ suche as had ben rey-sed and leuyed of the people. Than he was de-manded

maunded where all that money was become and whether the summes were true or not/ he answered and sayde/ as for the summes ye true/ and the money delyuered to the duke of Berry/ and so paste throughe his handes and his treasurers/ where of I haue good quyttaunces in my longynge and suche a place/ the whiche quytaunces were sente for before the counsayle and there they were redde/ and they agreed with the summe of his receyte. Than the counsayle and the ambassadours were appeased/ and Berylache sente agayne to newe castle perforce. Than the counsayle remayned togyther on that matter/ and sayde/ It seemeth that Berylache is clere of suche causes as are layed to his charge/ for the money that hathe been receyued the duke of Berry hathe had it payed & ouer it hath been spente.

All thinges castyd vpon/ Berylache excusacyons were lawfull for the duke of Berry was the moste courteous man in all the worlde/ so he myght gette good he cared not where nor howe he hadde it/ and when he had it he wolde lende me it but symplye/ and many lordes and knyghtes toke moste parte. Than the kynges counsayle sawe no faute in Berylache/ wherby he shulde lese his lyfe. some were of that opynyon and some contrary/ & sayde. Berylach hath done so many cruell dedes/ and hathe so pouerysshed the people for to accomplysshe the desyre of his lorde the duke of Berry/ that the blode of the poore people cryeth out/ and sayeth/ howe he hathe deserued hethe. For he that is ignorant of the partyes and counsayles with his maister/ and spyngthe powerte of the people/ he ought in good maner to leue the wreth to the duke his maister/ and if the duke wolde not haue hethe by iustyce shulde haue come to the kynge/ and to his counsayle/ and haue shewed them the pouertie of the people/ and howe the duke of Berry hath dealte with them/ than he hab ben well excused. The Berylache was sente for agayne to the counsayle/ and streytly examyned where the money that hathe been gathered was become/ for they founde the lesse of thyrty hundred thousande frankes receyued. He answered therto and sayde. My lordes/ it were harde for me to tell where my lorde the duke of Berry hathe bestowed it. Specyally he hath layde out on hys vyages and reparacyons of castels and houses/ also he hath bought certayne landes in the countye of Valoys/ and in the Countye of Estampes. Also he hathe spente moche in byenge of precyous stones and tapestries/ the whiche ye knowe well he hathe alwayes been desyrous to bye. Also he is well stuffed to mayntayne the affaire that he hathe alwayes kepte. Also he hath gyuen suche gyftes and rewardes to his haulte and Seygnoz/ and to his seruauntes about him in suche wyse that they be ryche men. Well Berylache good they of the counsayle / and ye haue had for your parte to your syngulere profyte a hundred thousande frankes. My lordes quod he, that I haue hadde was by the consente of my lorde the Duke of Berry / for he wolde that his seruauntes shulde become ryche. Than the counsayle sayde all with one voyce. I Berylach that wolde ye folysshly spoken/ that ryches is nat good nor reasonable that ye quell goeurne ye shall retourne agayne in to prison/ and we shall take further aduyse/ on that ye haue sayd and spoken. ye must abyde the pleasure of the kynge/ to whome we shall shewe all your reasones. My lordes quod he all shall be as ye will. Than he was agayne sente to prisone/ and there remayned four dayes or he was sente for agayne.

Than these tydynges were spredde abrode in the countrey that Berylach was in prison/ and that iniquyte was made of his dedes/ and that it was publysshed that who so euer had any matter to byen shulde come for the. therby moche people came to Bestyers/ and put vp supplycations to the kynge of the cruell dedes of Berylach. Some complayned of hym that he hadde by cryed them without cause or reason. And other complayned of hym that he hadde by force taken their wyues and doughters. When the kynges counsayle sawe so many grete causes layde to Berylache/ they were sory therof. And beside all these complayntes he was foge hated with the people. And all this come to hym by reason to fyll the duke of Berrys purse/ he dyd euer what he wolde haue hym to do. The kynges counsayle wyste not what to do / for than there was come thyder two knyghtes from the duke of Berrey / the lorde of Mantenelet and syr Peter Gyppn/ who had brought let-

tres to the kynge for the duke/ and they in the dukes behalfe anowed all that ever Betysach had doone before/ and the duke requyred the kynge and his counsayle to have agayne his man and treasourer. The kynge had greate hatred to Betysach/ bycause of the euell name and fame that ranne vpon hym. The kynge and the duke of Thourayne his brother inclyned greatly to have had hym hanged/ sayenge howe he habde well deserued it. But the kynges counsayle durste nat iudge hym for dought of the duke of Berrey. They sayde to the kynge/ for if the duke of Berrey anowe all his dedes what so euer they be/ we canne nat se by no waye of reason that he hath deserued dethe/ for the seasone that he medled in these countreys by cellynge of tayles/ subsydyes/ and aydes/ and receyuynge of them/ he dyd it at the instance of the duke of Berrey who had at that tyme there puyssaunce royall/ as well as ye have nowe. but for ayderynge to the desertes of his dedes/ ye maye seale in to your handes all his moueables and herytages/ and leaue hym in the same case as the duke of Berrey founde hym fyrste/ and with his goodes make restytucion to suche poore man as he hath done hym. What shulde I make longe processe/ Betysache was at the poynte of his destruccion with the losse of his goodes/ tyll at the laste other tydynges came in place. I shall shewe you what.

I can we nat nor I coulde nat knowe but by knowledgyng of hym selfe/ if he were in dede so euell as he iudged hymselfe/ he sayde he was an herytyke and had done many horrybles dedes. As it was herde me there came some to hym on a nyght be ynge in prysone to put hym in feare/ whether they were his frendes or foes I knowe nat/ they sayde. Betysach thou art in a harde case/ the french kyng/ his brother/ and the duke of Burbone bothe hate you mortally/ there be so many complaynts put vp agaynste you for dyuers places/ of suche oppressions as ye have doone whan ye had rule in Languedoc/ so that they all iudge you to be hanged/ for ye canne nat scape with the losse of your goodes/ the whyche hath ben offred to the kynge. But the kynge who hateth you mortally/ hath answered howe that all your goodes are his/ and your body also/ the whyche he sayeth he wyll nat kepe longe. I shewe you this for good wyll/ for to mooue it is thought ye shall be delyuered to be iudged to dye. Whan worses greatly afrayed Betysach/ and sayde to them. Is there no remedy. yes quod they/ to me. Howe say howe ye wolde speke with the kinges counsayle/ & than parther they wyll come to you vpon lenthe for your to them/ and whan ye be in their presence/ than say thus. Syrs for as I knowe/ knowledge my selfe I have greatly displeased god/ and for the displeasure he hath to me this false slaunder is reysed on me. Than they will demaunde of you wherin. Than ye shall answeere/ howe ye have a longe season vsed to poure fayth/ and that ye be an herytyke/ and hope styll that opinyon. Whan the bysshop of Besyers shall here that he will than chalenge to have you in his kepynge/ than ye shall be delyuered to hym/ for suche causes ought to be declared by the lawe of the churche/ thanne ye shall be sente to Auignon/ there wyll be none against the duke of Berrey/ the pope wyll nat displease hym/ and by this meanes ye may be delyuered/ and nothyng lese body nor goodes. But if ye byde styll in the vse that ye be in/ ye shall nat scape passe to morowe/ but that ye shall be hanged/ for the kynge hateth you bycause of the slaunder of the people. Betysache who trusted on that false enfourmacyon/ for he that is in parell of dethe knoweth nat well what to do/ wherfore he answered and sayde. ye be my frende and counsayle we truely/ wherof god thanke you/ and I trust the tyme shall come that I shall thanke you. The next morowe he called the gayler and sayde. Ferende I requyre you cause suche menne and suche to come to speke with me/ and named suche as were the enquyrours ouer him. The gayler shewed them howe Betysache wolde speke with them. They came to hym and demaunded what he wolde. He answered and sayde Sirs/ I have serched my conscience/ I knowledge my selfe I have lyghtly displeased god/ for longe tyme I have vsed agaynst my fayth I never beleued of the Trinyte/ nor that the sonne of god wolde come so lowe/ as to come fro Heuen to come in to this worlde to take humayne kynde of a woman. for I beleue and saye/ that whan we dye there is nothynge of the sowle. Ah sayntes Mary quod they/ Betysach ye are greatly agaynst holy churche/ your wordes demaundeth fyre/ abuyde you better.

bette. I cannot tell quod Berysache whether my wordes be false or true/ but I haue holden this opynyon sythe I haue had knowledge/ and shall holde it tyll I dye. The enquysitours make here no more of hym at that tyme/ and were glader to fynde some maner agaynst hym thereby to put hym to deth. Than they cõmaunded the gayler to kepe hym straytely/ and to suffre no man to speke with hym/ to the entente that he shulde not be trouayled fro that opynyon. Thanne they went to the kynges counsayle and shewed them all the matter/ than they went to the kynge and shewed hym all the maner of Berysache (as ye haue herde) whereof the kynge had great maruayle/ sayd. We wyll that he be put to dethe/ it is an euell man/ he is a false heretyke and a theefe/ we wyll he be brente and hanged/ than he shall haue as he hath deserued/ he shall not be excused for all myne vncle of Berry. Thes these tydynges were spredde abrode in the cyte of Orleyns/ howe Berysache hadde of his owne voluntary wyll without any constraynt confessed howe he was an heretyke/ and had vsed longe the synne of bougery/ and howe the kynge had sayde howe he shulde be brente and hanged/ wherof moche people were right sory for/ for he was sore hated. the two knyghtes that were come thyder fro the duke of Berry were greatly abashed and wyst not what to suppose. Than syr Peter Mesquyn sayde to the lorde of Nantonelet. Syr/ I feare me Berysache is betrayed/ peraduenture some persone hath ben with hym secretly in the prysone/ and hathe borne hym in hande that if he holde that horyble erroure/ that the churche than shall chalenge hym/ and so be sente to Auignon to the pope/ and therby be holpyn. Holde that he is/ he is dyspeyred/ for the kyng sayeth he wyll haue hym bothe brente and hanged. Lette vs go to the prysone to hym and reforme hym/ and bringe hym to a nother state/ for he is farre out of the waye and euell counsayled. They wente strayte to the prysone/ and desyred the gayler that they might speke with Berysache. The gayler excused hym selfe and sayde. Syrs ye muste pardone me/ for I am straytely charged to suffer no manne to speke with hym/ and also here be foure sargeauntes of armes sente by the kynge to kepe hym/ and we dare not breke the kinges cõmaundement. Than the two knyghtes sawe well howe they lefte in hym/ and howe there was no redresse by all speche/ but that Berysache shulde dye. than they retourned to their lodgynge and clothed and dyghted them selfe/ and retourned to their lorde the duke of Berry and shewed hym all the case.

The chclusion of Berysach was sodayne

That the next daye shulde suche one the clocke he was taken out of prysone/ and brought to the bysshoppes palayse/ and there were redy the iudges and officers spyrituall/ and the bayly of Orleyns/ ready for to the prysoner/ and sayde. Beholde syrs here is Berysache shome I delyuer in your iugynge an heretyke and a tynner in bougery/ and if he had not ben a clerke he had been iudged ayr this accordynge to his deserte. Than the officyall demaunded of Berysach if it were true hym accordynge as he was accused/ and to confesse the trouth there openly before all the people. And Berysache who thought to haue escaped well/ and to haue escaped by reason of his confessyon/ he answered and sayde that all was trewe. He was demaunded this thre tymes/ and at euery tyme he confessed it to be trewe before all the people. Thus ye maye knowe whether he was dyscepued or nat/ for if he had made no suche confessyon he had been delyuered/ for the duke of Berry had fully auowed all his dedes/ the whiche he had doone at his commaundemente in the countrey of Langue doc. But it was to be supposed that fortune played her tourne with hym/ for whanne he thought to haue been moste assuredest on the heyght of fortunes whele/ he was tourned by so downe fro her whele/ as she hathe doone a hundred thousande mo sythe the worlde began. Than Berysach was delyuered agayne by the spyrytuall iudge to the bayly of Orleyns/ who vnder the kinge ruled the temporalte/ the whiche Berysache without delaye was brought to a place before the palays. He was so hasted forwarde/ that he had no leysure to answere nor to sayenay/ for whan he sawe a fyre redy prepared in ỳ place/ and sawe that he was in the handes of the hangman/ he was sore abashed/ and sawe well than that he was dyscepued and betrayed. Than he cryed out a loude/ requiryng to be herde. but than was no hede taken to his sayenge/ but the hangeman sayde. It is ordeyned that ye shall dye.

suppose pull maiden haue brought you to
an yuell ende. He was lodged to execute his
dethe/ and the fyrst mahe erpt three nayles
erpled a poppe of galowes/ and therto tyed a
chapnet of yron/ and at the ende therof a colar
of yron/ the whiche was put about his nechat
and than the chaine drawen by a hye and tyed
vnder the galowes. Than he erped
and sayde. Duke of Berrey they cause me to
dye without reason / they do me wronge. As
sone as he was tyed to the galowes/ there was
fetre kindle about dyse fagge/ rodes/ and fa-
gottes/ and fyre put therto/ and incontynente
the fagottes were a fyre. Thus Berysache
was hanged and brente/ and the frenche kynge
out of his chaumbre myght well se hym if he
wolde. To this poore ende came Berysache/
and so the people were reuenged of hym. And
for to saue the trouthe he had done many cru-
elnes and damages to the people/ where he
had the gouernynge of the countrey of Lan-
guedoc

How the frenche kynge kepnge at Tholouse sente for the erle of Foix who came thyder and dyd homage to the kynge for the counte of Foix. Cap. C.xxiii.

After this cruell iudgyn the frenche kyng tarped not
longe after at Beziers/ but
departed and toke the way
to Carcassone and alwayes
lyth he his departure fro Re-
paynon / his marshall syr
Lops of Pantere rode in his company. The
kynge rode so longe by his iournays that he
vysited the countreys and kepte not the right
hyghe wayes. He was at Caberstan/ at Nar-
bone/ at Lymons/ at Mountz Royall/ and at
Pongaut/ and than he retourned to Carcas-
sone/ and there tarped foure dayes. Than he
rode and passed vpte Fouca / Burgnolles/
and Mongistarre/ and so came to Tholouse/
and the burgesses there who greatly desyred
to se the kynge / receyued hym ioyfully / and
mette the kyng without the towne/ all in a lyt-
tle

[illegible]

nesse / and so with great solempnyte he was
brought to the castell of Tholouse. There at
the yate gate the kinges many fayre presentes
were with the kynge was greatly reioysshed.
Whan the kynge had ben there thre dayes/
than he was counsayled to sende for the erle of
Foix/ who was come out of Bierne in to the
counte of Foix/ and was in the towne of Na-
sers/ foure leages fro Tholouse/ for he durste
of the kinges state and dygnyte. The mar-
shall of Fraunce and the lorde de la Ryuer were
appoynted to go for the erle of Foix. They de-
parted on a mondy day/ and lay at a cyte in
Tholousyn called Fezdayn/ and the next day
they came to Nasers. The erle of Foix who
knewe well of their commyng receyued them
nobly for the loue of the kynge / and also he
knewe the lordes well/ he had sene them before.
Syr Lops of Pantere had the worde / and
sayd. Syr my lorde of Foix the kynge our so-
uerayne lorde hath sente vs to you/ Semaun-
dyng you to come to se hym at Thou'ouse/ and
also he wyll trauayle so farre that he wyll come
and se you in your owne countrey/ for he grea-
ly desyreth to se you. The erle of Foix anu-
swered and sayd. Syr Lops I wolde not the
kynge had so great trauayle to me / it is mor-
mete I haue it for hym / wherfore if it plea-
se you ye shall shewe hym that I shall be at Tho-
louse within foure dayes. That is well sayde
syr quod they/ we shall returne and shewe him
these tydynges fro you. So be it qd he / how-
be it ye shall abyde here all this dayes and re-
freshe your selfes/ and to morowe ye shall de-
parte / they obeyed and tarped that dayes and
the nyght at their pleasure / and the erle beyn-
ged with them sagely & crafftely / for he was a
man by reason of his fayre language/ to drawe
out by one meanes as other the secretes of ony
herte. The nexte dayes they rode leaue ech of
other/ and rode so long that the same day they
came to Tholouse/ and founde the kinge play-
enge at the tenne with his vncle the duke of Bur-
bone. Than the kynge demaunded of them a
lowde and sayde. Syr is howe saye you / wyll
the erle come or no. yes sir quod the lorde de la
Ryuer/ he hath great affection to se your grace
he wyll be here with you within these foure
dayes. Well quod the kynge and we wyll glad-
ly se hym. The two knyghtes departed fro the
kynge/ and lefte hym playeng & went to their
lodgyngs and to reste them/ for they had ryden

that

that daye a great journey. The erle of Foix who was at Mafyers / remembred well the voyage that he had to do. He made hym redy and sente before to Tholous for his purpoos accordingly. He had sent on to Burne for knyghtes and squiers / for mo than two hundred to serue and to accompany hym that voiage.

The daye that the erle of Foix had appointed he entred in to the Cyte of Tholous / with no thanfyre hundred horses / and well accompanyed with knyghtes and squyers. There was with hym Bonniquell and the Yebi his brother / the vycount of Lyomgne his cosyn / the lorde of Conserans / the lorde of Mauleyne / the lorde of Quare / the lorde of Lunage / sir Espaygne du Lyon / the lorde of Roquepayre / the lorde of Lane / the lorde of Belache / the lorde of Perle / sir Peter of Tabestayne / sir Monaunt of Nomailles / sir Richarde de la Beere / sir Arnolde of Saynt Valyll / and dyuers other. Sir Peter of Byerne and sir Arnolde his two brethren / and two bastarde sonnes / sir Job hayne and sir Espaygn of Foix. The entencyon of the erle was to enherite these two his brethren / in to the moost parte of all the lande of Byerne. Of the whiche lande he myght do therwith at his pleasure / for he held it franke and free / holdynge of no man but of Godde. Thus the erle toke his lodgynge at the Freres preachers. There he kept his house / and his men lay as nere there about as myght be. The burgeses of Tholous made hym great chere for they loued hym well / for alwayes he had been their good neyghboure / curteis and reuable: for he neuer suffred any of his company to do them any displesure nor tyolence wherfore they loued hym moche the better. They gaue him many fayre presentes of wyne and other thynges / so that he was well contente. He entred in to Tholous whan it was nere myght. The nexte daye about ten of the clocke he toke his horse / & suche other of his company as pleased hym / mo than two hundred knyghtes and squyers men of honour. And in that estate he rode along through the stretes / to the Castell where the kynge was. Than he alyghted in the fyrst court entryng in to the castell. Than the erle mounted vp the greces in to the great hall. The freche kyng was come out of his chambre in to the hall / and there taryed for the erle / and had great delyte to se hym / for his great valure and renome that ran on hym. Therle of Foix who was a goodly prince and of a formall stature brace heeded entred in to the hall. And whan he sawe the kynge and other lordes of Fraunce / the kynges brother & his vncle / he made his reuerence to the kyng and to none other / and kneled downe on his one knee. Than he arose and passed forthe / and at the thirde tyme he kneled nere to the kynge. The kyng toke hym by the hande and enbraced him and toke hym vp and sayde. Erle of Foix my right cosyn ye be right welcome / your comyng greatly reioyseth vs. Sir quod the erle I thanke your grace that it pleaseth you to say so. There the kynge and the erle talked togyder / the whiche wordes I haue nat all. Thanne the kynge went to dyner. At the kynges table at the vpper ende sate the archbysshop of Tholous / than the kynge and his vncle the duke of Burbone / than nexte the erle of Foix / than sir Johan of Burbone erle of Marche and of Vandome. At that table sate no mo. At the seconde table sate sir Johan de la Bere the erle of Harcourte / sir Philyppe of Bare / & foure knyghtes of the erle of Foix. And at another table there sate the marshall sir Lopes of Lanzee / sir Roger of Espayne / and eyght other knyghtes of the erles. This was a great dyner and well stuffed of all thynges / and after dyner and grace sayd / they toke other pastymes in a great chambre / and herynge of instrumentes / wherin the erle of Foix greatly delyted. Thanne wyne and spyces was brought. The erle of Harcourt serued the kynge of his spyce plate. And sir Gerrarde de la Spet serued the duke of Burbone. And sir Monnaunt of Nomailles serued the erle of Foix. Thus about four of the clocke the erle tooke leaue of the kyng and of the other lordes. He issued out of the hall / and in the courte were his horses redy / and his men. The erle mounted / and all suche as accompanyed hym / and so retourned to his lodgynge / and was well contente with the chere that hadde ben made to hym and his / and prayed it moche to his knyghtes.

Thus betwene the Frenche kynge and the Erle Gastoyne of Foix be-tyxte at Tholous / There was dyuers reas-

ties and

ties and apoyntmentes of loue/and the mar-
shall of Fraunce and the lorde de la Ryuer/
dyde their payne to helpe it forwarde. The
erle of Foix made a dyner to the duke of thou-
rayne and to the duke of Burbone/ to therle
de la Marche/ and to other great Lordes of
Fraunce. This dyner was great and sump-
tuous/ and sytting at the tables mo than .xx.
hundred knightes. And or the dyner was ful
lye ended/ the frenche kyng who had dyned
in the castell/and with hym sir Charles de la
Brethe and sir Philippe of Bare/ and his
two cosyn germayns. Than the kyng sayde.
Go we thyder: and so he dyde but with .xii.
in his company. The erle of Foix was great
lye reioysed/in that it pleased the kyng to come
to his lodgyng/and so was all the company.
There was spoxte after dyner of wrestlyng
and castynge the barre/the stone & the darte/
bytwene the frenche men and the Gascoyns
Thus they passed the tyme tyll it was nere
hande nyght. Than the kynge and the other
lordes retourned. The erle of Foix gaue the
same daye to the kynges knightes and squy-
ers/ and to ꝑ duke of Thourayne and to the
duke of Burbone/mo than threscore coursers
palfraves and mulettes/ all with whyte sa-
dels redy drest to apoynt. Also he gaue to the
kynges mynstrelles and other/ two hundred
crownes of golde. And to the heraudes and
officers of armes other two hundred crow-
nes/ so that euery man praysed the larges of
the erle of Foix. The fourthe daye after the
erle came to the kynges palais/well acompa
nyed with lordes and knyghtes of Byerne
and of Foix/ to se the kynge and to do as he
was requyred/ that is to saye/ to do his ho-
mage for the countie of Foix/ with the appen
dauntes/reserwyng the lande of Bierne. Be
fore that secretely there had been great trea-
ties bytwene the kynge and the erle of Foix/
by meanes of the lorde de la Ryuer & sir Jo-
han Mercier/and the bysshoppe of Noyon/
who was newly come thyder fro Auygnon.
It was sayd/that the erle desyred of ꝑ kyng
that his sonne Jobbayne of Foix/ myght af-
ter the erles decease/ enherytte the countie of
Foix. By that the erle whan soeuer he dyed/
shulde leaue to the kyng a hundred thousande
frankes in money. And sir Galyon his bro-
ther to haue the land of Ayze in Bierne with
the Cytie/ and the Mounte of Marsen/ and
all other landes that the erle of Foix hadde
bought in Bierne/ shulde retourne to the he
ritaige of the bycount of Castyllon. Thise
ayrgumentes were in debate and in diffe-
rences bytwene the erle and the baronnes and
knightes of his countrey. Some sayde/ he
coude nat do thus with a generall consent of
all Byerne and Foize. And bycause that the
meane homage of the countie of Foize was
dewe to the frenche kyng/therfore the kyng
sayde to the erle and to the barons of Foix.
Sires/ I holde in my handes the homage of
the lande of Foix. and if it be so in our dayes
that the lande of Foix be vacant by the dethe
of our cosyn the erle of Foix/ than we shall so
determyne and apoynt by the aduise of good
counsayle/ that Jobbayns of Foix and all o-
ther men of the countie of Foix shall holde the
content. Those wordes well coronted therle
of Foix/ and the other lordes and knyghtes
of Foix that were there present. Their ordy-
naunces written and sealed/ the erle toke his
leaue of the kynge and of all other great lor-
des/ but that daye he dyned with the kyng &
than went to his lodgyng. The nexte day he
departed fro Tholous and lefte his furriers
behynde hym/ to paye for euery thyng. The
erle passed the ryuer of Gyronde by ꝑ bridge
of Tholous/ and retourned in to his coun-
trey by the mount of Marsen/ and so to Or-
tayes. Than he gaue leaue to euery man to
departe/sauyng his ordynarye. It was sho-
wed me and I beleue it well/ that the cōpyn
ge of the frenche kyng in to Laguedocke/ in
to Tholous/& in to thole marchesse/ cost the
erle of Foize mo3e than threscore thousande
frankes. The erle was so lyberall/that what
soeuer it cost hym/he payde it wyllyngly.

∴ ∴

¶Of the feate and couenaunt that
was don bytwene the kyng and the
duke of Thourayn his brother/ whi
che of them shulde soneste come to pa
rys fro Montpellyer/ whiche is a hū
dred and sythe leages a sonder/ ecpt
of them but with one knyght.

Cap. C.lxv.

The

The frenche kynge be
ing at Tholous/he ordred
all his hal mesle/and remo
ued y seneschales
and officers/and tolde them
the countrey in to good e-
state/ that euery man was
well contented. And on a day/the kyng (pre-
sent/his brother/his uncle of Barbone/& the
lordes of Fraūce and Gascoyne) to the entent
to haue a perpetuall memorie) gaue to hym
kyng charles de la Uyethe/for
the augmentacion of his honour/two quar-
ters of armes of Fraūce with floure delyces
for a fore ꝑ lordes de la Uyethe bare alwayes
in their armes/a felde of goules playne with-
out any other thyng. nowe they be quarted
with the armes of Fraūce/whiche kyng the
lorde de la Uyethe toke for a great gyfte. whi
the lorde made the same daye a great dyner/
whiche cost hym more than a thousande fran
kes/and he gaue to herandes xxvjtt frācs. xx.
hundred frankes. Anone after it was orday-
ned that the kyng shulde departe fro Thou-
louse to retourne in to Fraūce/euery man
made hym redy and toke leaue of the kynge/
the bysshop of Tholous/the seneschall & the
burgeses/and lordes and damoiselles of the
towne. The kynge departed & rode that nyght
to the newe castell of Aroy/and so forwardes
euery daye/so that he came to Mountpellyer/
where he was ioyfully receyued/& there ta-
ryed thre dayes for the ladyes and damoiselis
there pleased hym moche. Than he had great
desyre to retourne to Paris to se the quene. on
a daye as he cōmuned in sporte with his bro-
ther of Thourayne/he sayd. Fayre brother I
wolde that you and I were at Paris/and all
our chare here shyll as it is/for I haue great
desyre to se the quene and youre foure sustres of
Thourayne. thā the duke sayde. Sire we
can not be there with wyll thyng/it is a faire
journey hens. that is true ꝙ the kyng/yet I
thynke I myght be soone there & I wolde. ꝙ
the duke with helpe of good horses/for so
coude I be/but my horse must beare me. well
quod the kyng laye a wager you and I who
shall be there soneste. I am content ꝙ the du-
ke/for he was euer redy to wyn money of the
kyng. The wager was layde betwene ꝑ kyn
ge & the duke/ that who soeuer of the twayne
came soneste to Paris shulde wyn of the other
xxv.

lande frēkes of other/& to departe the nexte
day all at one hour/& eche of them to take but
one knight or seruaūt with them. there was
no man that durst breke their wager. ꝑ nexte
day they departed as it was ordayned. The
lorde of Caracters rode with the kyng/ and
the lorde of Uieuyll was with the duke of
Thourayn. thus these four rode night & day
lyke yong lusty galātes: they chaūged many
horses: thus they rode in poste. ꝑ duke of bur
bone returned by Puy in Auuergne/& rode
vnto his grādfather by the way/ vnto Dol
phyn of Auuergne/& the countesse & their cyl
dren/of whō there were to the nōbre of eight/
what chere what doughters/ all brethren &
sisters to ꝑ duches of Burbone his wife/but
that was by reason of two mariages. Thus
the frenche kyng and his brother the duke of
Thourayne rode in great hast/ eche of the to
wyn the wager. Tōward well the great pay-
ne of these two great & riche lordes. youthe &
lyberte of corage made them to do that enter-
prise. their estates abode behynde. The fren
che kynge made it foure dayes & a halfe or he
came to Paris/ and the duke of Thourayne
no more but foure dayes & a quarter of a day/
they folowed eche other so nere. ꝑ duke wan
the wager/ by reason ꝑ the frenche kynge re-
sted himself about. viii. of ꝑ clocke at Trois
in Champayne/and the duke toke a barge in ꝑ
ryuer of Seyne/and went a longe the ryuer
to Melyn/ and there toke his horse & rode so
tyll he came to Paris/ and so wente to sayut
Poule to the quene & to his wyfe/& demaun-
ded tydyngs of the kyng/for he wyst nat whe-
ther he were come or nat. & whan he knewe ꝑ
the kyng was nat come he was ioyfull/& said
to the quene. Madame/ye shall shortly here
tydyngys of ꝑ kyng. He sayd trouthe/for the
kyng came soone after. Whan the duke of thou
rayn herde that the kyng was come/ he went
and met hym & sayd. sire/ I haue won my wa-
ger let me be payd. it is reason ꝙ the kyng &
so yet shall there they shewed before ꝑ ladies
all their money/ & how ꝑ in foure dayes and a
halfe they were come fro Mountpellier to pa
ris/ whiche was. C. lx. leages a londe. The
ladyes tourned all the matter to sporte & laū-
ghyng/ but they well iuged that they had en-
dured moche payne. and iuged that youthe &
corage of herte caused the to do it. & the duke
of thourayn was truely payd for his wager.

Of the

¶ Of the dethe of pope Urbayne of Rome called the Antepape/ & howe pope Clement wrote to the frenche kyng and to his vncles/ & to the vnyuersite: & of the election of pope Bonyface by the cardinalles of Rome. Cap. C.lvi.

ABout the sayd season dyed at Rhome pope Urbane the. vi. the romayns were sore displeased with his dethe/ for he was well beloued. he was buryed in the churche of Saynt Peter and after his obsequy done well and reuerently. Than the cardynalles went in to the conclaue to chuse a newe pope/ and so they dyde/ or that pope Clement knewe therof in Auygnon/ for it was ten dayes past or they knewe it. And assone as pope Clement and his cardynalles knewe therof/ they assembled togyder at the popes palays/ and had great cõmunycacion togyder/ and were in great hope that the bulpuelle of the churche shulde lese and be concluded/ and to come to a full vnyon/ for the errour had longe endured. They thought that the cardynals at Rome shulde nat agree so soone to entre in to conclaue/ but rather to submitte them selfe to pope Clement at Auygnon. They sent also worde to the fre the kyng of ỹ dethe of Urban called the antepape/ and desyred hym (the sooner to come to their purpose) that he wolde wryte to his cosyns the kynge of Almayne and the kynge of Hungry/ to therle of Hertuses & to the duke of Austreych/ who had euer holden with pope Urbane/ that they shulde nowe cease/ & helpe to make rest and peace in ỹ churche/ & to shewe them by his letters/ that in our fayth there ought to be no varyacion. for as there is but one god in heuyn/ so ther ought to be but one god in erthe. The same season ỹ duke of Burgoyne was with the kyng at Parys/ to whõ pope Clement & the cardynals wrote in lyke maner. than the kyng shewed his vncle these newes/ and was right ioyfull of saide. Fayre vncle/ we haue had grete desyre to go with great puissaũce to Rome to destroy them selfe/ but as nowe our iourney is well chaunged/ for Urbane the antepape is dede/ as Clement hath written to vs/ and he thynketh that the cardynals wyll nat entre in to conclaue to chuse any newe pope/ but rather to come to Auygnon & to submyt the selfes vnder pope Clement. and we are desyred by hym & by the cardynalles of Auygnon/ for the most sweete wordes that can/ letters to our cosins ỹ kyng of Almayne and to his brother the kyng of Hungry/ & to ỹ erle Hertuses & to ỹ duke of Austreche. What counsayle wyll ye gyue me to do. The duke of Burgoyne sayd. Sir/ trewe it is pope Urbane is dede/ but as yet we knowe nothyng of the state of the cardynals at Rome/ nor of the Romayns/ nor whether they wyll kepe there olde opinyon or nat. I feare it wyll be harde for them to leaue it/ for the Romayns are maysters ouer the cardynalles. Syns they made them to chuse the archebysshop of Bare/ and made hym pope/ and so mayntayned hym to chende. And so if nowe by force they cause the cardynalles to entre in to conclaue/ and to chuse a pope at their pleasure. Wherfore sir: ye shall nat nede to entre to farre into the matter/ as to desyre them that wyll be but lytell for you/ as they haue shewed yet hyderto. Abyde sir tyll ye here other newes. And parauenture it maye so be/ that the cardynalles at Rome shall nat be all of one accorde/ and parauenture wyll dissymule with the Romayns/ and chuse none other pope but Clement. And to speake their fauour to prouyde them/ to cause Clement to come to Rome/ whiche he wyll do right gladly on that condycion. And if the mater go so than shall it be tyme for you to wryte to all ỹ princes chrystned/ that yes of the opinyon contrarye to you/ in the best maner ye cane to reduce the Scisme/ and to bryng the churche to an vnyon & peace/ as by reason euery man ought to do. But as yet ye be nat sure howe the mater gothe: it is best ye abyde the aduenture therof. It shall nat be longe or we here other tydynges.

¶ Than the duke of Burgoyne habde sayde these wordes to the kyng and to his counsaile/ there was none that spake contrarye therto. The kynge thought his wordes were reasonable & sayd. Fayre vncle/ we beleue it is good reason that ye say/

pese

¶ Of the pettyng vpalth & dyng of the stronge castell of Mauleon in Lymosyn / of the partyenge to the Gascoyns from the Frenche.

Chaue herdetofore

to their pleasure out and in the abode in the countrey at their pleasure. Thus Blayne and Peter might well obey any peace or truce that were taken betwene England and Fraunce. Thus caused they with their bonde to abide and tarie at their pleasure wherby the countreis of Auuergne and Limosyn were lost and wasted. And the duke of Berrey sent them rantes for Wyllyam Burlee and Sir Johan Bodins Launce who had done them diuers displeasures. Whiche were ioyned and assisted by them and fauoured as aforesayd / howe they wolde seruice them by whom they wolde retire by reason of their pryse. And as for lone they ne cared not and well kept the garrison and longer but to remayne as to their owne enheritaunce. To the whiche desyre the same sayde duke of Berrey well gladly harde them. Also they desyred to remaunde an hundred thousande frankes / by cause that somme money somme be made. And also they sayde they wolde haue against their enemy and the two knyghtes also prisoners / by reason of a safeconduct that they wolde lay in a great towne. Wherfore howe what a foole he was to imagine such a thynge / to deliuer of two knyghtes and to haue the money / of any shall came to them therby it ought not to be displeased. Upon this determynacion they putte out of the castell one of their barbettes / and sayde to them. Go thy way to the / fetche the hostages and suffre them to take the. The trompe to be brought to Sir Wyllyam Burlee and to Sir Johan Bodins Launce. Then delyuered them the letter from beyond sea to be for an answere / for them was touched by no and them also greatly. The butler sayd it shulde be done / for he thought none euill / and so went to the French hostis

[illegible]

[illegible] and when he came nere to the hostis he perceyued where he walked / he and two mo and sayd he wolde gladly speke with Sir Wyllyam Burlee or with Sir Johan Bodins Launce. Whiche knewe hym well for as then they were togyder. When he came to them he made his reuerence and gaue them a letter and delyuered to them the letter that Blayne and Peter Roux had sente them. Of the whiche they had great meruayle and so toke the letter and redde it / and therin they founde how that Blayne & Peter Roux wolde speke with them for their profite. When they herde that they had more meruayle than they had before / a double of trayson. Howe be it they sent them worde that if they wolde come out of the castell / and speke with them without they wolde assure them to entre agayne in to their fortresse without daunger or trouble. This was the answere of the butler brought to their maisters. Quod Blayne and Peter Roux sayd / we thynke we may be sure ynough by their worde / if the dare farther and so lese be at the worst / they are true knyghtes and also we shall speke both them for a token wherby we drynke they will gladly intende. The nexte morowe they appointed to ryde towarde to the gate / a mayden be ar a planche bonde hangyng by two chaynes and ilued out and rode on the planche. Then Sir Wyllyam Burlee and Sir Johan Bodins Launce came thyder and lyghted of their hors and made their meane to drawe backe. Then the two captayns with them said. Sirs may we fayrly come out and speke with you fayrly quod the knyghtes. Shall we be assured against of your parte without trayson. Ye fayrly quod they without doute. Then Blayne and Peter Roux passed the drawe bridge come to the / so they four were togyder without other company. Then the two French knyghtes sayd. Sirs / howe sore you what communycacion we shall be howe with you / Accepte we requyre to pulle up your Castell to be at truce fyue quod they on a condycion / that ye to gyue us an thousande frankes for ye ransome that is in the castell / for we are sore of the warre we wolde drawe in to Burgoyne. These two knyghtes were right glade of these wordes and sayde. Sirs ye spoke to good a market / and we shall here you gladly. But as no be we be warned [illegible] the [illegible]

by we ſhall prouyde for it. Well ſirs q they of Manchador whan ye are redy gyue vs knowledge/ and we ſhall kepe couenaunt. But firſt/ kepe this mater ſecretly and ſagely/ for if it were knowen amonge myne owne company they wolde take vs perforce and ſlee vs/ than ſhulde bothe you and I fayle of our ententes. Syr quod they nought nat therof we ſhall ſo conuey the matter ꝑ we ſhall take no damage. Therwith they departed one fro a nother/ the bretons entred in to Manchador/ and the frenche knyghtes retourned to their baſſydes.

Sir William Butler and ſyr Johan Boeſme ſaide/ in this mater thought nothynge but good/ ſuppoſynge that the bretons wolde nat diſceyue theym/ as to haue their money and to betraye them alſo. in contynente they wrote to the duke of Berrey/ who was as than at Ryon in Iuuergne. they ſent with the letter a gentleman named Guyomell of layute Vpdall/ and informed hym of all the mater/ thynkyng how it ſhulde be toyouſe tydynges to the duke/ for he greatly deſyred to haue that caſtell. This ſquyer tooke the letter and departed fro the baſſydes/ and rode ſo longe through Lymoſyn & Iuuergne that he came to Ryon/ and there he founde the duke of Berrey/ and delyuered hym his letters fro the two knyghtes. The duke reed the letters/ and whan he had well vnderſtande the contentes therof the duke was glade/ and a none after the duke called his counſayle and his treaſourers/ and ſaid. Sirs beholde here is newe tydynges/ our knyghtes that kepeth the baſſydes before Manchador haue written to vs that they are in certayne treatte with the capytayns within the caſtell/ they offer to yelde vp the fortreſſe for the ſome of tenne thouſande frankes/ that is no great ſome for euery yere it coſte them of Lymoſyn and of Iuuergne to kepe warre againſt them/ more than therefore thouſande frankes. We wyll accepte their offre betymes leſte they repente them hereafter/ therfore my treaſourers make vp the ſome of tenne thouſande frankes/ we wyll lende them to the countrey/ and whan I am in poſſeſſion of the caſtell I wyll ſayſe a tayle in Lymoſyn and in the frontiers/ whiche were vnder their paſſyage/ they ſhall pay me the double. Sir quod the treaſourers/ it ſhall be made redy within theſe fyue or ſyxe dayes. Well quod the duke I am contente. Thus that matter was concluded. The treſourers made redy the money in crownes of the ſonne/ and put it in to foure coffers. The ſame daye that the money ſhulde haue been ſente/ there came to Ryon to the duke of Berry/ the Dolphyn of Iuuergne and the lorde of Beueyll/ for certayne maters touchynge them ſelfe. They were welcome to the duke/ and the Duke was ſo toyfull of the treatte for Manchador that he coude nat kepe it ſecrete/ but ſhewed to theſe two knyghtes the letters ſente to hym fro ſyr William Butler/ and ſyr Johan Boeſme Launce. Whan they herde it they ſtuyped a lytell. Than the duke ſayde/ ſyr wherfore do ye muſe/ ſe you any ſuſpectiouſnes in this mater/ I pray you ſhewe me or I ſende the money. Syr quod the erle Dolphyn/ ye know well howe therle of Armynake and I were ordeyned to by and to gette agayne as many fortreſſes as we coude in the countreys of Iuuergne/ Carneſyn/ Rouergne/ and Lymoſyn. With dyuers we made treatyes/ but for all ꝑ ever we coulde do/ we coulde neuer bryngе them of Manchador to herkyn or to leane to any matter of treatte/ nother to gyue it vp/ nor to ſelle it. whan we ſpake therof they wolde ſkante make vs an anſwere. and ſyr I know well if they now wyll make this treatie with you/ it is nat for defaute of vitayles/ for if none came to theym this eyght yere yet they haue ynough/ wherfore we haue marueyle what ſhulde moue them therto at this preſente tyme/ therfore it maketh vs to doute of treaſone/ for men of warre incloſed in fortreſſes are ſore imagyners/ and whan their imaginacion inclyneth to any euell dede/ they wyll craftely colour it/ wherfore ſir take good aduyſe. Well ſyrs quod the duke ye haue ſayd well/ we ſhall prouyde for the mater more ſubſtancyally than I thought to haue done.

Than the duke of Berrey called to hym one of his knyghtes/ called ſyr Peter Weſſyn/ and ſayde to hym. Syr ye ſhall go with this money to the baſſydes before Manchadore/ and ſaye to ſyr Wyllyam Butler & to ſyr Johan Boeſme launcelot that in the mater they wrote to me of/ that they deale therin ſubſtancyally/ and that they truſt nat to moche in the bretons within Manchador/ and ſhewe them that we haue herde more tydynges than they be ware of/ wherfore lette

theym be well aduyſed of all poyntes. Thus this knyght departed fro Ryon with the money/he rode with his company tyll he came to the baſtydes/whyther he was welcome. The ſomers with the money were dyſcharged and put in ſauegarde. Than ſyr Peter Deſpyn opened his meſſage and ſaid. Syrs my lorde the duke of Berrey ſendeth you worde by me that as touchynge the treatye that ye are in hande withall/touchyng the garyſon of Ranchador he cõmaundeth you to worke wyſely/ that ye leſe nat bothe your bodyes and the money that he hath ſent you. alſo he ſayth he hath herde tydynges that pleaſeth hym nothynge/ wherfore he wyll ye take good hede & be well aduyſed/ for he douteth of traſon/ he ſayeth that often tymes the cõtrey of Auuergne and Lymoſyn wolde haue gyuen for the fortreſſe of Ranchador therfore thouſande frankes/ and nowe to offre it for ten thouſande/cauſeth my lorde the duke and his counſayle to haue ſuſpecte. The two knightes whan they herde that they were perſyue/ and aunſwered and ſayde. Wele well double wytte is better than ſyngle/ye ſay well/we thanke you of your aduyſe/and ye ſhall abyde here ſtyll with vs and helpe to counſayle vs as it is reaſon / within theſe two dayes we ſhall ſe howe ỹ matter ſhall come to paſſe/ he ſayde he was contente ſo to do. Thayne anone after theſe two knyghtes ſente a barlet to the caſtell of Ranchador/ for it was as than trauce bytwene the parties/ſigny fyed to Alayne Rour and to Peter Rour/ that the tenne thouſande frankes were redy/ and deſyringe theym to kepe their promeſſe. And they anſwered the barlet/that they wolde kepe their promeſſe ſurely/ and that whanſo euer they wolde come/ to ſende theym worde therof.

ALayne and Peter Rour who thought no good as it was knowen and ſued/ whan their purpoſe was broken and knowen for they had deuyſed to haue taken ſir Willyam Butler and ſyr Johan Botſme launce/as they ſhulde haue entred in to the caſtell of Ranchador by reaſone of a great towre that was within the caſtell/ the whiche was always able to beate the caſtell. Theſe two knyghtes bretons who entended nothynge but malefle/ layde in buſſhement in this towre thyrty men in harneſſe/to the entent that whan the frenche men were entred in to the caſtell/ thynkynge to be lorders therof/that in the night theſe thyrty ſhulde yſſue out/ and ſlee take the frenche men at their pleaſure. Whan they had thus ordayned/ than they ſente to ſyr Willyam Butler and to ſir Johan Botſme launce/that they ſhulde come and bringe with them their money/ and they ſhulde haue the caſtell opened. Of theſe newes the frenche men were ioyous/ and ſayd to the meſſanger. Retourne to your maſters and ſhewe them that to morowe in the morynyng we ſhall come thyder. The meſſanger retourned and ſhewed this to his maſters. The frenche knyghtes wente to counſayle together and dyd caſt more doutes than they dyd before/ by reaſon of the wordes that the duke of Berrey had ſente them by ſir Peter Deſpyn. Than they ordeyned and concluded to lay a buſſhemente of their men nere to the caſtell / and than they with thyrty of their men harneſſed vnder couert ſhulde go before and entre into the caſtell/and to regarde wyſely the caſtell within / and to caſt all maner of doutes / and than if they ſe any thynge to ſuſpecte/than one of them to blowe a horne/and to kepe the bridge and gate open / and at the ſowne of the horne the buſſhement to come to the gate as faſte as they canne / and to entre and take reaſon of the caſtell. Thus as it was ordayned ſo it was done. The next morynyng euery man was redy/ & the buſſhement layde of a fyre ſcore ſpeares/ and the two knyghtes with thyrty in their company couertly armed came to Ranchador/ and ſyr Peter Deſpyn was with them/ with the money truſſed properly in thre panyers vpon two ſomers. they founde the two bretons redy at the barryers/ who opened the barryers agaynſte their comynge. Whan they were entred and within the gate/ than the two bretons wolde haue cloſed the gate after them/ but the frenche knyghtes ſaid. Nay ſyrs nat ſo/ be ye true marchauntes or nat/ ye knowe well ye muſte yelde vp to vs this caſtell for the payeng of the ſõme of tenne thouſande frankes/the which is here redy. ye maye ſe them here vpon this ſomer/ if ye kepe trouth with vs ſo ſhall we do with you. With theſe wordes Alayne and Peter Rour wyſt nat what to ſay/ but to bringe the frenche men out of ſuſpecte they aunſwered. Syrs ye ſaye well/ we are contente as ye pleaſe. Thus they wente forthe and lefte the barryers open/ for if it had

it hadde ben closed the bussshment coulde nat haue entred to haue come tyme ynough to haue resysted the falle turne that the bretons had deuysed. For ymagyners shulde haue euery thyng as they wyll/ and if there were nat counter ymaginers agaynst the. Bothe the frenche men and bretons entred in at the gate/ than Iayne and Peter Rour wolde haue closed the gate/ but than the frenche men sayd. Syrs let the gate alone/ we wyll haue it open/ it is reason/ we are redy to delyuer you our money according to our promesse. Well syrs quod the bretons/ lette se laye forthe the money. With a good wyll quod the frenche men. There they layde forthe a coueryng and the floryns layde a brode. In ỳ meane season whyle Iayne and Peter Rour beheld the fayre some of florence/ the frenche knyghtes went aboute to se the maner of the castell. Thanne syr Peter Mesyyn came to syr Willyam Butler & sayd. syr cause this great towre to be opened/ or ye paye all your money/ for there may be within it a bussshmente/ whereby we maye be atrapped and lose bothe our bodyes and the money also. Than syr Willyam sayd to Iayne. Syr/ open this towre/ we wyll se it open or we delyuer our money. Syr quod Iayne I came nat do so/ the keyes be lost. With those wordes the frenche knightes had more suspecte in the mater than they had before/ and sayd. Iayne it can nat be that ye shulde lese the keyes of the souerayne towre of this castell/ open it with fayrenesse/ or els we shall open it perforce/ for ye haue promysed and sworne to rendre to us the castell as it is without fraude or male engyn/ and therfore you to haue ten thousande frankes/ the which some is here redy to be delyuered. than Iayne answered ayayne and sayd/ I wyll nat open it tyll I haue receyued ỳ money/ and layde it in sauegarde. than whan I haue receyued the money I shall serche for ỳ keys. Sirs quod they/ we wyll nat abyde so longe/ we se clerely by your wordes that your meanyng is nat good/ for you wyll dyscyue and betraye us/ wherfore we lay our hades on you Iayne and on your brother Peter/ in the name of the kynge our souerayne lorde and the duke of Berrey/ we wyll haue this towre incontynent opened perforce/ and serche euery place within this castell bothe aboue and beneth/ to se if ye haue layde any bussshemente or nat/ and if we fynde in the castell any thyng done by you/ that ought nat to be done/ ye are lose without redempcyon or pardone/ for reasone wyll so/ and if we fynde the castell as it ought to be we shall kepe our bargayne with you well & truely/ and shall conducte you whyder ye lyste/ to the gates of Auignon if ye wyll. whan Iayne and Peter Rour sawe howe the mater wente/ and that they were arested they were sore abasshed/ and were as halfe dede/ & repented them that they had doone so moche/ for they sawe well they were dyscepued. Than the frenche knightes percepued well howe they were culpable/ and that the mater was nat well. than they made a signe to hym that bare the horne to blowe/ & so he dyd. whan the frenche bussshement herde it they came to ỳ castell as faste as their horses coulde ryn & sayd. Go we to Than chadore they blowe for vs/ it semeth our men hath nat founde the castell according as it was promysed/ we thynke there be some trayson/ anon they were come to the castell/ for they were nat farre of/ the barryers were open and kept by the frenchmen/ for the bretons within were nat maysters of the castell/ for their bussshemente were within the towre. The frenche men entred and founde the capytaynes in the courte comynynge with the bretons.

Than Iayne and Peter were sore abasshed/ seynge so many of their enemyes aboute them. And as for them that were within the towre knewe nothynge of the besynesse nor coude se nor here nothyng the towre was so thycke. some that were within sayde. Harke syrs me thynke I here moche murmurynge without/ we may be dyscepued frenche men be subtyle/ we thought to take/ but I feare we be taken/ our capitayn Iayne is dyscepued and we to/ I feare we shall nat issue out without their congye. Thus whan the frenche men sawe how they were lordes of the castell/ they were than bolder than before/ and tooke and put vp agayne their floreyns/ & sayd to Iayne. delyuer vs the keyes of this towre/ for we wyll se what is within. The bretons prolonged the mater and sayde. Syrs begynne fyrste to serche in other places and than returne to this towre. The frenchmen answered. Iayne/ ye do but prolonge the mater/ for we wyll begynne here fyrst. and outher at ones delyuer the keyes or els thou shalte be slayne with these daggers. whan the two bre-

therwe herde that they douted the dethe/ they
ſtudde fro it as longe as they myght/ howe be
it to ſaye the trouth it had been more honora-
ble for them to haue bern ſlayne there than to
haue taryed any lenger/ for afterwarde they
dyed a ſhamefull dethe/ as ye ſhall here. And
Alayne Rour beyng in this daunger yet pra-
ctyſed a nother crafte/ if it wolde haue ſerued/
and ſayd. Syr Wyllyam and you ſyr Johan/
it is of trouth that within this toure are thyrty
men in harneſſe/ my brother and I dyd ſette
them there with moche payne/ for we knewe
well they wolde neuer agree to our apoynte-
mente/ therfore we haue cloſed them within
this towre to be ſure of them/ tyll ye haue the
full poſſeſſyon of the caſtell/ and there ye may
haue them and ye wyll/ they are all good pri-
ſoners/ and delyuer vs our money as ye haue
promyſed/ and lette vs go our wayes. Whan
the frenche knightes herde that they were ſom-
what better content than they were before and
ſtudyed a lytell/ than ſir Wyllyam Butler ſayde/
how ſo euer it be/ for we delyuer our money we
wyll haue knowledge of all the keyes of this
caſtell/ therfore ſhew vs where they be. Whan
Alayne ſawe it wolde be none otherwyſe/ he
ſente for them in to his chambre. Whan they
were brought to the place than it was demaun-
ded whiche keyes ſerued for ỹ towre. Alayne
full fore agaynſte his wyll ſhewed forthe the
keyes of the great towre. Than they opened
the towre/ and founde within the thyrty com-
panions in harneſſe bydde priuely within the
towre. Alayne and his brother were fore aba-
ſhed whan they ſawe the frenchmen entre into
the towre/ and harde the wordes that ſir Wyl-
lyam Butler ſayd/ whiche were theſe. Syrs/
yſſue out fayre & eaſely one by one/ if nat ye are
all but deed/ we take you as priſoners/ feare
nat the dethe ye ſhall haue no hurte/ ſo ye wyll
ſhewe the trouth of that we ſhall demaunde of
you. Whan they ſawe the frenche men and vn-
derſtode that they ſhulde nat be ſlayne but ta-
ken as priſoners/ they layde downe their wea-
pons and harneſſe/ and yelded them ſelfes/ for
they ſawe well defence coulde nat auayle them.
There the thyrty men were taken and put a
parte and examyned/ and there they confeſſyed
the treaſon before Alayne and Peter Rour/
who coulde nat denye it. Than the knyghtes
of Fraunce ſayde to them. Syrs/ it greatly
diſpleaſeth vs to ſynde you in this defaulte/
we cannot punyſſhe the maiter the cauſe is
ſo weighty/ we ſhall put it to the diſcretyon of
the duke of Berrey/ if he wyll haue pytie on
you we ſhall be glade therof/ we truſt he wyll
for the hope that he wyll haue for the recou-
uryng of this caſtell/ for it was the place that he
moſt deſyred to haue agayne of all the worlde.
Theſe wordes ſomewhat comforted theym.
They were put in to a chambre vnder ſure ke
pynge/ and other in to dyuers chambres and
towres. Than the caſtell was ſerched about
and beneth/ there they founde great preyſy-
on/ and lefte it all there ſtyll and toke away no
thynge therof at their departynge/ and as for
golde/ ſyluer/ and harneſſe/ therof was made
a boty & euery man had his parte/ and the pri
ſoners the knyghtes had them for their parte.

Thus as I haue ſhewed/ the ſtronge
caſtell of Uanchadore was taken by
the frenche men in this ſeaſon. And
than ſyr Wyllyam Butler ſette there a capy-
tayne a ſquyer of Lymoſyn a halyaunt man/
called Piers Madych/ and with hym a thyrty
ſpeares of good men of warre/ and they raun
ſomed their pryſoners ſuche as were worthy
to be raunſomed/ and ſuche as were great pyl
lers and robbers/ and frenchmen borne/ they
ſtrake of their hedes/ and hanged them vpon
gybettes/ newe made before the caſtell gate.
Than the frenche knightes departed to go to
Lyon to the duke of Berrey/ & toke with them
Alayne and Peter Rour. Tydynges ſprange
abrode howe the ſtronge caſtell of Uancha-
dore was taken/ wherof the countrey of Au-
uergne and Lymoſyn & thoſe marcheſſe were
greatly reioyſed/ for the caſtell had bern out of
the frenche mennes handes more than fyftene
yere/ and durynge that ſeaſon that garyſons
had done great damage to the countrey. Sir
Wyllyam Butler founde in the caſtell a ponge
ſquier of Bretayne/ a fayre pong man named
Monadich/ and was coſyn to Geffray Tet
noyre/ and he was but newely come thyder to
lerne to exercyſe bedes of armes. He had ben
brought vp in an abbaye in Bretayne/ & was
come out of the houſe bycauſe he wolde be no
monke. The frenche men wolde haue ſtryken
of his hed amonge other/ but ſir Wyllyam But
ler had pytie on hym and ſaued his lyfe/ with
that he wolde become frenche and ſerue hym.
Thus the frenchmen rode to the duke of Ber
rey/

rey/and brake vp their baſſydes. The men of armes departed and went euery man to their owne/and ꝑ capytaynes came to Lyon to the duke of Berrey/& ked with them the bastons/ who deſyred the on the waye ꝑ they ſhulde nat enfourme the duke of Berrey to ſore agaynſt them. the frenchmen promyſed to fulfyll their deſyre. So longe they rode that they came to Lyon/ and there founde the duke and the ducheſſe/ who receyued them with great ioy/ for he rehersed it to be a gret acte/the conquering of the caſtell of Manchadoze/ and gaue them fayre gyftes & preſentes. Than they demaunded of the duke what his pleaſure was ſhulde be done with Jayne and Peter Rour.he anſwered he wolde take aduyſe in that matter/ and ſo toke counſayle/and there it was determyned that he ſhulde ſende them to the kyng. And ſo they were delyuered to the ſeneſchall of Auuergne/and he cõueyed them to Parys/ and there they were put in priſon in the caſtell of Sayncte Anthony/ in the kepynge of the vycount of Aſſer/who as at that tyme had the kepynge of ꝑ caſtell. And they had nat ben longe there but that they were delyuered to the preuoſt of Parys/and put in to the chatellet and there iudged to dye as traytours and robbers of the realme of Fraunce. Than they were delyuered to the hangman and faſt bounde and layde in a carre and brought with trompettes to the place of execucion named ꝑ halles/ and there ſet on the pillery and turned four tymes aboute in the ſyght of all the people/ and there was openly red and publyſſhed all their dedes/and thã beheeded and quartered/ & their quarters ſent to the four cheſe gates of the cyte. Thus Jayne and Peter Rour loſt ſhamfully their lyues/& the caſtell of Manchadoze.

¶Of the dedes of armes at ſaint Ingylbertes contynuyng thyrty dayes agaynſte all cõmers of the realme of Englande and other countreys euery man thre courſes. Ca. C.lxviii.

In this ſeaſone and in the meane tyme that the truce was thus betwene Englande and Fraunce/ bothe by lande and by ſee/though the kinges and their ſubgiettes helde well the peace/yet was there certayne pyllers & robbers in Auuergne who made warre to the poore men on bothe ſydes the ryuer of Dordone/but the capytayns that had gyue vp their forteresſes by reaſon of that treatie diſſymuled the matter. By reaſon of their diſſymulacion the cõtrey of Auuergne receyued great domage/ſo ꝑ the complaintes therof came to Parys. Than the french kyng was counſayled to ſende to the kynge of Englande/ſignyfyenge hym of the ſtate of theſe robbes that made warre thus in the countrey vnder coloure of their pateſynge/ the whiche ought nat to be done. I thinke the kyng of Englande ertuſed hym ſelfe of the mater. And to prouyde therfore.the ſame ſeaſon the thre forſayd knyghtes/that is to ſay the ponge Bouciquant/Raynolde of Roy/& the lorde of ſaint Pye/who had enterpriſed to do armes about the marches of Calays/were to ſaynte Ingilbertes/made them redy to acõplyſſhe their deſyre & to fulfyll their promeſſe & the right of armes/for it was openly declared & publyſſhed/ and ſpecyally in ꝑ realme of Englande/in the which realme there were knyghtes & ſquyers aſſembled to the mater/and were in great imaginaciõs to knowe what they might beſt do. Some ſaid it ſhulde be greatly to their blame and reproche/ ſuche an enterpriſe taken ſo nere to Calays without they paſſed the ſee/ & loke on thoſe knightes that ſhulde do armes there. Suche as ſpake moſt of the mater was/ firſt ſyr Johan of Holande erle of Huntyngdon/ who had great deſyre to go thyder/alſo ſir Johan courtney/ſir Johan Traiſcton/ſir Johan Golouffer/ſyr Johan Ruſſell/ſyr Thomas Shyrborne/ſyr Willyam Clyſton/ſire Willyam Clynton ſire Willyam Taylboys/ſir Godfrey Seta/ſyr Willyam bacquenay/ſyr Johan Nobeas/ſyr Johan Dambreycourt/ſyr Henry Beamond and dyuers other/mo than a hũdred knightes and ſquiers/all theſe ſayd. Let vs prouyde to go to Calays/for the knightes of Fraunce hath nat ordayned that ſporte ſo nere our marches/but to the entent to ſe vs there/and ſurely they haue done well/ and do lyke good companions/and we ſhall nat fayle them at their buſynes. This mater was ſo publiſſhed abrode in Englande/that many ſuche as had no deſyre to do dedes of armes theym ſelfe/yet they ſayd they wolde be there to loke on them that ſhulde. Suche as thought to be there ſent afore to Calays to make prouyſion

to kepe their astate/ and sente ouer their horse and harnes bothe for peace and warre. Whan the day aproched/ sir Johñ Holãde brother to the kyng of Englãde first passed the see/ & mo than. C. knyghtes & squiers with hym/ & arryued at Calys/ & there toke vp their lodgyng.

In thentryng in of ỳ moneth of May/ these thre yong knyghtes of Fraũce/ suche as shulde do dedi of armes at saynt Ingilbertj. thus first they cãe to Bolayne & tarved there a season/ & than came to thabbay of saint Ingilbertj. Than they vnderstode how there were a great nõbre of knyghtes & squyers cõe out of Englande to Calays/ wherof they were ryght ioyfull. And to the entent that the bure shulde cõe to Calays/ they ordayned in a fayre playne betwene Calays and saynt Ingilbertes thre fressh grene pauilyõs to be pyght vp/ and at the entre of euery pauylyon there hanged two sheldes with the armes of the knightes/ one shelde of peace a nother of warre/ and it was ordayned that suche as shulde ryn & do dedes of armes/ shulde touche one of the sheldes/ or cause to be touched/ whiche as pleaseth them/ and he shulde be delyuered accordyng to his desyre. to speke of this mater I shall shew you. The. rri. day of the moneth of May accordyng as it had ben publisshed/ these thre frech knyghtes were redy in the place to furnysshe their interprice. And the same day knightes & squyers issued out of Calays suche as wolde iust/ and also suche other as had pleasure to regarde that sporte/ and they came to the sayde place apoynted and drewe all on ỳ one parte. The place to iust in was fayre grene & playne. Syr Johan Holande first sente to touche the shelde of warre of sir Boucyquant/ who incontynent issued out of his pauylyon redy mounted with shelde & speare. These two knightes drewe fro other a certayne space/ and whan eche of them had well aduysed other they spurred their horses & came togyther rudely/ and Boucyquante strake the erle of Huntyngton through the shelde/ and the speare heed glente ouer his arme & dyd hym no hurt/ and so they passed forthe/ and tourned and rested at their ease. This course was greatly praysed. The seconde course they met without any hurte do ynge/ and the thyrde course their horses refused and wolde nat cope. The erle of Huntyngton who had gret desyre to iust and was somwhat chafed came to his place/ abydynge that sir Boucyquant shulde take his speare/ but he dyd nat/ for he sawed that he wolde no more ryne that day agaynst therle. And whan the erle sawe that/ he sent his squyer to touche the shelde of warre of the lorde of saynt Pye. And he that wolde nat refuse issued out of his pauylyon/ and toke his horse/ shelde/ and speare. And whan the erle sawe that he was redy spurred his horse/ and saynt Pye in lyke wyse/ they couched their speares/ but at the metyng their horses crossed/ but with the crossynge of their speares the erle was vnhelmed. Than he retourned to his men/ and incontynent he was rehelmed and toke his speare/ and saynt Pye his/ and than ran agayne/ and met eche other with their speares in the myddes of their sheldes/ so that nere hande they were bothe borne downe to the erthe/ but they gryped fast their horses with their legges/ and so saued them selfes/ and retourned to their places/ and toke their brethes. Syr Johan Holande who had great affection to do honorably/ toke agayne his speare & spurred his horse/ and whan the lorde of saynt Pye sawe hym comyng he dasshed forth his horse to encountre hym/ eche of them strake other on their helmes that ỳ fyre flasshed out. With ỳ ataynt the lorde of saynt Pye was vnhelmed/ and so they passed forthe and came agayne to their owne places. This course was greatly praysed/ and both frenche and englysshe sayd that those thre knyghtes/ the erle of Huntyngton/ sir Boucyquant/ and the lorde of saynte Pye/ had ryght well done their deuoyrs without any domage eyther to other. Agayne the erle desyred for loue of his lady to haue a nother course/ but he was refused. Than sir Johan Holande went out of the renke to gyue place to other/ for he had ronne all his fyre courses well and habylly/ so that he had laude & honoure of all partyes. Than kept forth a gentle knight of Englãde called the erle Marchall/ he sent to touche the shelde of warre of sir Raynolde of Roy/ who issued out of his pauylyon armed at all peces/ and toke his horse/ shelde/ and speare. And whan these two knyghtes were a sonder they spurred their horses & came fyersly togyther. The first course they fayled by outragyng of their horses/ wherwith they were sore displeased. At the. ii. course sir Raynolde was stryken & the spere broken. the. iii. course eche strake other on their helmes yͭ suche force/ ỳ the fire flewe

lewe out/ & there Wark hall was vnhelmed who passed forthe & returned to his place & iusted no more ỳ day/ for he had don ynough than cãe forth ỳ lorde Clyfford/ a right apt & a valyãt knight of Englãde/ cosyn germayn to sir Johñ Chãdos/ who was a noble valiant knight in his dayes/ he sent to touche the shelde of warre of sir Bouciquant/ incontynent the knight issued out of his pauylyon wt shelde and spere. These two knightes came rudely togider & strake eche other on ỳ helm that the fyre sparcled. Their speares brake nat nor the knightes lost no styropes/ so passed by & came to their places & made thẽ redy to ryn the.ii.course/ & so came togyder wout any sparing. sir Bouciquãt brake his spere but he was vnhelmed & yet fell nat. they passed forthe & came to their places. Sir Lopes Clifford made hym to iust agayne but Bouciquant dyd nat put on agayne his helme/ ỳ seyng/ the lorde Clifford aduysed to pforme his course with another. Than he sente his squyer to touche ỳ shelde of warre of ỳ lorde of saynt Pye/ who came forthe redy to iuste. They ran togyder & met eche other/ ỳ lorde Clifford brake his speare in thre peces on ỳ lorde of sayntpyes shelde/ and the lorde of sayntpye strake the lorde Clyfford on the helme/ so that he was dishelmed/ & so passed forthe/ eche of them dre we to their place/ and the lorde Clyfford ran no more that day/ for it was shewed hym howe he had right honorably borne hym selfe that daye. Than came forth a noble knight of englãde called sir hẽry Beamõde/ he caused to be touched sir bouciquantes shelde of warre/ who was soone redy to answere/ they ran togyder. the lorde Beamõde crossed & Bouciquant strake hym so rudely/ that he bare hym to therthe & passed forthe. ỳ knight was relieued by his men and set agayne on hors backe/ & so ran again togyder two other courses without any dõmage. thã sir Peter Curtney who had great delyre to ryn thre courses/ caused his squyer to touche all thre sheldes of warre/ wherof ỳ frẽchmen had maruele & demaũded what he entẽded therby/ he answered/ that it was his pleasure to ryn with eche knight.ii.courses/ without he were lette by the way. his delyre was graunted. Than sir Raynolde du Roy ran first. They came togider with good aduysemẽt/ howbeit the first course they fayled for their horses refused at ỳ rope/ wherwith they were sore displeased. they failed nat at ỳ ii.course/ but sir Raynold du helmed the englisshe knyght/ & passed forth & returned to his place & held hi styl for he had con his two courses. Than ỳ lorde of fait Pye cae forthe to iust & ran eche agaynst other & brake their speres/ & the.ii.course the lorde of saint Pys strake sir Peter Courtney a croise/ & sir Pet strake hym on ỳ helme & vnhelmed hym/ & so cãe to their owne places. than sir Bouciquat to acõplish he sir Peters delire came forthe & ran & met eche other in ỳ myddys of their shyldes so rudely/ ỳ both their horses stakered in the place. more hurt there was nat. ỳ.ii.course they vnhelmed eche other. These.vi.courses done/ sir Peter Courtney desyred to ryn one course more with one of ỳ thre knightes which as pleased thẽ/ but he was refused/ & it was sayd to him ỳ he had done ynough for ỳ day/ so he rested. Than preced forthe a gẽtylman of Englãde called sir Johñ Goulouter/ he sent to touche ỳ shelde of sir Raynolde du Roy/ who was redy to answere. they ran frely togider & ataynted ech other of the helmes without dishelmyng or brekyng of their pretes/ & so passed by. the secõde course their horses refused to mete. the.iii.course they met in their shyldes & brake their staues. the fourth course they mist. the.v.course they vnhelmed eche other & returned to their places. Than a valiant knight of Englãde called sir Johñ Rouleau/ who was a well trauelled knight & well knowen/ he touched the shelde of ỳ lord of saint Pye/ ỳ knight was redy to answere. they ran togyder & met so rudely ỳ their horses stayed with ỳ rope. ỳ.ii.course their horses swarued a syde & myst eche other/ wherof the knight were displeased. & the.iii. course they met & strake eche other in ỳ viser of their helmes/ so ỳ they were bothe vnhelmed. The englysshe knyght returned to his cõpany & iusted no more. Than came forthe sir Peter Shirborne a yong knight & touched ỳ held of sir Bouciquant/ ỳ knight was redy & ran togider & myst/ by outraging of their horses they taried nat long but ran togider agayne the.ii.course/ & strake eche other in the syght of their helmes/ sir Bouciquãtes spere brake thenglysshe knyght spere helde/ so ỳ therby sir Boucyquant was vnhelmed so rudely/ ỳ the blode ran out at his nose/ & so he returned

to his

to his paueylyon & can no moze that day/for it was nere night/but sir Peter Iherbozne wolde nat leue so but wolde ryn out his .iii. course/ he sent to touche the shelde of the lozde of saint Pye/who was incontynent redy. They ran togyder & tainted eche other on ꝑ helmes but their speres grated nat/ if they had/ by moost lykelyhood they had taken hurte/ the .ii. course they strake eche other on ꝑ shildes & brake their staues in thre peces/ & thegilfl he knight was bozne to therthe/they ran no moze ꝑ day/for it was nere night. Than the englysh men dzewe togyder & departed and rode to Calays/ and there deuysed that nyght of that had ben done that day. In lykewyse the frenchmen rode to saynt Ingylbertes & communed & deuised of ꝑ had ben done ꝑ same day.

The tuesday after maye/ all suche as shulde iuste that day or wolde gyue the lokyng on rode out of Calis & came to the place apoynted/and the frenchmen were redy there to receyue the. the day was fayze and hote. Whan thenglysh men were armed/ than sir Wyllyam Clyfton an expert knight of Englande/ caused his squier to touche the targe of sir Bouciquant. Incontynent the knight issued out of his pauylion armed at all peces. the two knightes came togyder & taynted eche other on the shelde and passed by without dzekyng of their speares. The .ii. course they crossed on their helmes. the .iii. course they encountred eche other so on ꝑ shildes ꝑ their hozses stode styll. the .iiii. course was well enployed they vnhelmed eche other. The englysh he knight ran no moze/ it was said to hym he had done ynough. Than on thegilfl he ꝑte came forthe a lusty yong knight called sir Nicholas clyn ton/he touched ꝑ lozde of saynt Pies shelde/ the knight anon was redy. they met togyder so cuyn ꝑ eche of the brake their speres in iii. peces/ with suche force ꝑ the knightꝫ were in daũger to haue taken domage/ but they passed by & cãe to their places. the .ii. course they tainted eche other on ꝑ helmes & passed by. ꝑ iii. course their hozses crossed & sayled. ꝑ .iiii. course ꝑ lozde of saynt Pye vnhelmed the englysh he knight/ who ran no moze ꝑ daye/ for men said he had well & valiantly done & quyted hym selfe/ & how other must haue place to iuste. Thã a kynsman of therle of Hũtingdon cãe forthe called Wyllyam Stamert/ he caused to touche ꝑ shelde of ꝑ Raynold of Roy. they ran togyder wt fre wyll & tainted eche other/ ꝑ englysh he knight lost his spere. the .ii. course they met/ but thegilfl he knight swaued aside/ I can nat tell whether the faut was in the knight or in ꝑ hozse/ but sir Raynolde strake hym so rudely on ꝑ targe ꝑ he lost retreted & so passed by/ & made the redy to ryn the third course/ & so tainted eche other on ꝑ helmes/ ꝑ the fire sprang out & lost both their speres. ꝑ iiii. course they ataynted eche other in ꝑ sight of their helmes/ wt that course sir Wyllyam Stamert was dishelmed & nigh bozne to therthe howbeit he fell nat/ & returned to his cõpany & ran no moze ꝑ day. Than another squyer of Englãde cãe forth called Lãcastre/ he sent to touche ꝑ shelde of sir Bouciquant. they ran togyder & tainted eche other on ꝑ helmes ꝑ the fire flewe out/ & marueyle it was ꝑ they had nat ben vnhelmed. It was nat long tyll they ran the .ii. course but their hozses crossed/ the third course they were both vnhelmed/ and the englysh he squyer iusted no moze ꝑ day. Than a yonge knight called sir Jouit Tapt boise iusted with the lozde of saynt Pye/ and encoũtred eche other on ꝑ shildes and brake their staues/ the .ii. course their hozses crossed/ and the .iii. course they were bothe vnhelmed/ the englysh he knight ran no moze that day. Than stepte forthe sir Godfray of Serca a gentyll knight and a good iuster/ & that was well sene by hym/ he encoũtred with sir Raynolde du Roy. They came right togyder & mette in their shildes/ the speres were good and wolde nat brake/ so ꝑ it made their hozses to recule/ and than recouered & kepte styll their speres/ and than ran agayne the seconde course/ the reised in faute of the hozses and nat of the knyghtes/ and they lost bothe their staues. they ran agayne the .iii. course The englysh he knight strake sir Raynolde on the helme that he was vnhelmed/ and sir Raynolde strake ꝑ englysh he knight on the targe so rudely and with suche strength (for he was called one of the best iusters in all the realme of Fraunce. Also he iused in armours with a yong lady whiche aueyled hym in all his busines) that he pierced thegilfl hmans targe clene through/ & the speare heed entred in to the arme/ and the spere brake & the trenchon stacke styll in ꝑ shelde & in the knyghtes arme/ yet for all ꝑ the knight made his turne & came to his place fresh lyk. than his cõpany

dzewe

vpewe out the tronchyon & bounde his arme/ and sir Raynolde retourned to his cõpany.

Of that courte sir Raynolde du Roy was greatly prayed on bothe ptes/ for all ỹ hurtyng of the knight/ for suche is the aduentures of armes/ to some good to some yuell. Than came forthe an Esquyer of Englande called Blaquet/ and sent to touche the shelde of the lorde of sayne Pol/ who was redy to answere They couched their speares & ran togyder. ỹ first courte they tapyted eche other on their helmes and loste their staues. they toke their staues agayne/ and in ỹ aprochyng their horses crolled and so passed by/ and retourned agayne to their places. They tarved nat long but ran eche at other/ with ỹ courte Blaquet strake ỹ lorde of sayne Pol a bye on ỹ helme and gaue hym a sore stroke/ & sayne Pol strake hym in the sight of the helme a sorer stroke so that therwith he was so vnhelmed/ that ỹ bocle behynde brake/ and the helme fell to the grõde. Than Blaquet retourned to his copany/ & iusted no more that day. And ỹ lorde of sayne Pol sate styll on his horse abydyng other comers. Than a gentyll knight of Englande called sir Johñ Bolcas/ touched the shelde of the lorde of sayne Pol/ who was there redy to answere. they strake eche other on the shelde that it was maruelle they were nat perced/ for their speres were strong/ howbe it they passed by & loste their speares without any other dõmage. The .ii. courte they tapyted on the helmes/ without any hurte/ & passed by. ỹ .iii. courte they crolled. the .iiii. courte the lorde of sayne Pol vnhelmed rude lye sir Johan Bolcas. After that courte the englysh he knight ran no more. Than a yong knyght of Englande richely armed/ named Thomelyn Wallydone/ he touched ỹ shelde of warre of sir Boucyquant. He was interrogyment answered. The first courte they crolled on the helmes. the .ii. courte they met/ and Thomelyn brake his spere in trõchons/ and Boucyquant strake hym so sore/ that he bare hym to the erthe ouer his horse backe. Than his cõpanyon toke hym vp and he iusted no more. Than another squyer of Englande called Nauerton/ touched the shelde of sir Boucyquant/ sayeng howe he wolde reuenge his company/ whom Boucyquant had ouerthrowen in his ptence/ who was redy to answere The first courte they strake eche other in the diser of their helmes/ without any other dõmage. the .ii. courte they strake eche other in their shelder/ so ỹ their horses recule & brake their speares in thre peces. Than they retourned to their places & toke newe speares/ and met agayne togyder. sir Boucyquant receyued a great stroke on ỹ shelde/ but he strake Nauerton/ in suche wyse that he was vnhelmed/ who ran no more that day/ for euery man sayde he had well acquyted hym selfe. Than another squyer called Sequaqueton an experte man of armes/ sente to touche the shelde of sir Raynolde du Roye/ the knyght was redy to answere well mouted with shelde & speare. They mette so rudely that Sequaqueton bare hym selfe well fro sallynge/ for he had suche a stroke that he sore reuersed howbeit he releued and passed forthe/ but he loste his spere. The nexte courte they mette rudely on their helmes/ so that the fyre flasshed out. The .iii. courte Sequaqueton was vnhelmed/ so that bothe he & his horse were astonyed and retourned to his company/ and iusted no more that day nor no man els/ for the night aproched: than the Englysshe men retourned to Calys/ and the frenchmen to sayne Ingylbertes.

ye may well knowe that Charles the frenche kyng was sore desyrous to be at those iustes/ he was yonge & lyght of spirite/ & glad to se newe thynges. It was shewed me that fro the begynning to thendyng he was there present/ disgysed as vnknowen/ so that none knewe hym but the lorde of Garãsyers/ who cãe also with hym as vnknowen/ and euery day retourned to Hargison. Than on ỹ wednysday the englysshmen rode fro Calais and came to the place of ỹ iustes. Than a squier of Englande called Johñ Sauage/ sente to touche the shelde of warre of sir Raynold of Roy/ the knight was redy in his pauylion & issued out and mouted on his horse. thã they came togyder with great randon/ and strake eche other on their shelders/ in suche wise that if their shelders had nat broken/ outher one of the men or bothe had ben striken to ỹ grõde This was a goodly & a daungerous courte/ howbeit the knyghtr toke no domage. Their speres brake to their hãdes & the heedr stacke styll in their shelds euery man feered they had ben hurt/ so euery ptie cãe to their cõpany. & whan it

whan it was knowen that they had no hurt/ euery man was ioyfull and sayd/ howe they had done ynough for that day. but those wordes pleased nothyng Johan Sauage/ for he sayd he was nat come ouer the see to ryn but one course. Those wordes were shewed to sir Raynolde du Roy/ and he answered & sayd. It is reason that he be answered/ outher by me or by some of my cõpany. Than they toke newe shildes and speares/ and ran agayne togyder/ but at the cope their horses crossed and so sayled ech other/ wherwith they were sore displeased/ & for angre cast awaye their speres & toke newe. And at the thirde course they raynted eche other in the syght of their helmes/ in suche wyse/ that bothe were vnhelmed: euery man prayed that course. The englysshe men came to Johan Sauage & sayd. howe he had ryght honorably acquyted hym selfe that daye/ & howe he had done ynough/ for there were other to ryn. He obeyed & ran no more/ and alyghted of his horse/ and kept on a small hackeney to se other ryne.

Than a Squyer of Englande came forthe colyn to the erle Marshall/ called Wyllyam Basquenaye/ He touched the shelde of sir Boucyquant/ The knyght was redy to answere. They came to gyder as streyght as they coude deuyse/ and strake eche other in the syght of the helmes/ in suche wyse/ that bothe were vnhelmed. they passed forthe their course strake and freely. Anone they were agayne helmed/ and ran togider and strake eche other on their shildes/ and brake their speares withoute any other dõmage. the thirde course they crossed wherwith they were sore displeased. The fourthe course Wyllyam Basquenay was agayne vnhelmed/ & so ran no more that daye. Than a nother Englysshe squyer called Scot/ ran agayne the lorde of saynt Pye. the fyrst course they encoũtred so rudely/ that their horses staggered & the speres helde yet they lost their speres. Than they made them redy to ryn the seconde course/ & they met in suche wyse/ that the lorde of saynt Pye was vnhelmed/ & the squyer moche prayed for that course. Agayne the thirde course they encoũtred eche other on the shildes/ in suche wyse that Johan Scot was stryken downe ouer his horse crope. thus the lorde of saynt Pye was reuẽged. Thenglysshe squyer was relcued & brought to his cõpany and ran no more that day. Than another englysshe squyer called Bernarde Stapleton he touched the shelde of the lorde of saynt Pye they came togyder and raynted eche other on their helmes that the fyre flasshed out/ & so passed by without any other dõmage/ and kepte styll their speres. the.ii. course they mette in their shildes rudely/ yet they kept their horses & so passed forth their course. The thirde course they vnhelmed eche other. thenglysshe squyer ran no more that daye. Than stepte forthe a gentyll knyght of Englande/ yonge and fresshe/ a iolly dauncer and synger/ called sir Johñ Arũdell/ he ran agayne the Raynold du Roy. At the fyrst course they mette rudely & strake eche other on their shildes/ but they helde them selfes without fallynge/ & passed forthe their course/ but they lost their staues. The.ii. course they attaynted eche other on their helmes/ that sparcles of fyre flewe out without other dõmage. The.iii. course they crossed and loste their staues. the.iiii. course they raynted on their helmes. The.v. course they brake their speres on their shildes/ and than sir Johñ Arũdell ran no more that day. Than another squyer of Englãde called Nicholas Seon a proper man of armes/ ran agaynst sir Boucyquãt. The fyrst course they strake eche other on their helmes a great attaynt. the.ii. course they strake eche other on their shildes/ in suche wyse that their horses were astonyed/ and lost their speares. the.iii. course they strake eche other on the helmes/ & Nicholas Seon was vnhelmed and ran no more. Than another squyer came forthe called Johñ Marshall/ & ran agaynst sir Boucyquant for he was redy lokyng for nothyng but to rest/ he toke his speare and couched it in the rest. The fyrst course they mette rudelye on their shildes & lost their staues. the seconde course they raynted on their helmes/ & the third course they adupsed well eche other and met rudely. Johan Marshall brake his staffe in thre peces/ & sir Boucyquant strake hym on the helme/ in suche wyse/ that he was vnhelmed/ and so returned and ran no more that day. Than ete forthe a lusty yonge knyght of Englande who desyred greatly to wyn honour/ called sir Johñ Clinton/ he bare sylure broken with azure/ a molet sylure in the cheef. He touched the shelde of sir Reynold du Roye

who

who was redy to anſwere/ and was glade of the cõpynge of that knyght/ they came to theyr places and toke their ſpeares. the fyrſt courſe they taynted on the helmes and paſſed forthe. The ſeconde courſe they ſtrake eche other on their ſhelders and paſſed by and loſt theyr ſtaues. The thirde courſe they taynted on their helmes/ ſo that the fyre flewe out. the fourthe courſe they croſſed. the fyfthe courſe was well enployed/ for eche of them brake their ſpeares. The two knyghtes were ſore chafed/ and ſhewed well howe they had grete deſyre to proue their ſelfes. The ſixte courſe eche of the vnhelmed other. that courſe was greatly prayſed. The Engliſſhe knight ran no more that daye/ for he had done ynoughe.

Thanne Roger Leau another Engliſſhe ſquyer auaunced forthe. He bare ſyluer and ſables quarterly in the myddes a croſſe goules. he touched the ſhelde of the lorde of ſaint Pye. The firſt courſe they encountred ſo rudely that their horſes were aſtoned/ for their ſpeares helde. The ſeconde courſe they taynted on their helmes and paſſed forthe. At the thirde courſe Roger Leau was vnhelmed & ranne no more.

THan auaũſed forthe a ryght gentyll knight of the nacyon of Heynaulte in the marcheſſe of Oſtrenaunt/ but fro his youthe he had been brought vp in the courte of the noble kynge Edwarde of Englande. This knyght was called ſir Johan Dambretycourt/ he was brother to the good knyght ſir Euſtace. He bare in his armure parte Golde and Ermyne. He touched the ſhelde of ſir Raynolde du Roye. The fyrſte courſe they taynted on their helmes/ that the fyre folowed. The ſecõde courſe they entred ſo rudely/ that it was marueyle howe they ſcaped without dõmage/ for eche of the were noble Juſters/ and feared nother payne nor dethe. The thirde courſe ſir Raynolde du Roye was rudely vnhelmed/ and ſir Johan Dambretycourt paſſed forthe his turne and came agayne to his place. And ſir Raynolde du Roye retourned to his company/ and ſhewed howe he wolde no more iuſte that daye. Than the Engliſſhe knight deſyryng to iuſt more/ ſent to touche the ſhelde of ſir Boucyquant. They ran togyder ſo ſterdily & ſtrake eche other in their ſhelders/ that it was marueyle they had not ben peaced throughe. the ſeconde courſe they taynted on their helmes/ and paſſed forthe and loſt their ſpeares. The thirde courſe they mette ſo rudely/ that eche of the was vnhelmed. Than the Engliſſhe men ſawe togyder and ſawe that it was nere hande nyght/ toke their leaues and hepted towarde Calais. That nyght there was none other cõmynge/ but of the iuſtes that hadde ben done that day. The Frenche men wente to Wargylon/ and deuyſed there as their pleaſure.

ON the thurſdaye the fourthe day of the wehe/ the Engliſſhe men being at Calais/ aſſembled togyder all ſuche as had nat Juſted/ & were come ouer the ſee for that entent. They cõcluded to returne agayne to ſaynte Ingylbertes to do armes/ ſo they mounted on their horſes and rode out of Calays and came to ỹ place/ where as the iuſtes ſhulde be done. There was redy the thre knyghtes of Feaunce in their pauylions and ſuche other as ſhulde ſerue them. Fyrſt there came in to the place a knight of Englãde called ſir Godfray Euſtace/ he touched ỹ ſhelde of ſir Boucyquant/ who incontynent iſſued out of his pauylion redy to anſwere. The knyghtes adupled eche other/ and ran togyder and taynted on their helmes/ and paſſed forthe their courſe and kept ſtyll their ſtaues. The ſeconde courſe they ſtrake eche other in the myddes of their ſhelders/ & their ſpeares brake without any dõmage/ and paſſed forthe and came agayne to their places. The thirde courſe eche vnhelmed other. the Engliſſhe knight iuſted no more/ for it was ſayd to hym he had right valyauntly acquyted hym ſelfe/ and alſo that he muſt ſuffre other to iuſte.

Than an Engliſſhe ſquier came forthe to iuſte called Rayne Borowe/ he touched the ſhelde of the lorde of ſaynt Pye/ the knyght was redy to anſwere. The fyrſte courſe they taynted on their helmes that the fyre flewe out/ they paſſed forthe their courſe and retur ned agayne to their places. ỹ ſeconde courſe they brake bothe their ſtaues. The.iii. courſe they vnhelmed eche other. The Engliſſh man ran no more/ for it behoued other to iuſt after. Than another Engliſſhe ſquyer cal-

led

led Scrope touched the shelde of sir Boucq quant. The fyrste courle they crolled. The seconde courle they tapnted on their helmes. The thirde courle Scrope was ouerthro wen/ tha he was relcued and brought to his company/and ran no moze.

Than a knyght of Behaygne/ one of the quene of Englandes knyghtes/ called Herchaunce/ who bare in his armes fyluer/ thre Cyphens fete sable armed azure. He was demaunded with whome he wolde iuste/he answered with Boucicquant. Than they made them redy and ran togup der/but the knygit of Behaygne made a fos faute/wherof he was greatly blamed ꝑ he de meaned his courle so yuell. The Englysh men sawe well howe he had forfaite his ar mure and hoyse/ if the Frenche men wolde. Of this courle there was great cõmunyca cyon betwene the parties/ but finally it was pardoned/ the better to please the Englysh men. Than Herchaunce requyred agayne to iuste one courle/he was demaunded against whome he wolde ryn. He sente to touche the shelde of sir Raynolde du Roy/ and he was redy to answere. The fyrst courle they mette in the myddes of their shyldes/and sir Ray nolde du Roye/ who was one of best iusters in ꝑ realme of Fraũce/ strake thother knight clene fro his hoyse/in suche wyse/ that menne thought he had been dede. Herchaunce with moche payne was relcued and brought to his company. The Englysh men were nat dis pleased in that he was ouerthrowen/bicause he ran the fyrste courle so vngoodly. So he ran no moze that daye.

Than came in a squyer of Englande/ called Robert Storborne. he touched the shelde of ꝑ lorde of sayne Pye/who was redy to answere. The fyrst courle they tayn ted on their helmes. The secõde courle they strake in their shyldes and lost their speares The thirde courle eche vnhelmed other. the Englysh squyer ran no moze. Than Johñ Worlande touched the shelde of ꝑ Raynold du Roy who was redy to answere. The first courle they tapnted on their helmes. The se conde courle they encountred eche other that their hoyses were attoyned/ and lost bothe their staues. The thirde courle Johan Wor lande was steyken to the grounde/he was re leued and iusted no moze. Thanne anothe squyer called Johan Woten/ he touchyd the shelde of Boucicquant/ the knyght was redy The first courle they tapnted & passed forth the seconde courle they tapnted on their hel mes and lost their staues. The thirde courle Johan Woton was vnhelmed. He ranne no moze that daye/but gaue place to other.

Than Jaqueuyne Scrope touched the shelde of the lorde of sayne Pye/ who was redy mounted. The fyrst courle there horses crolled/ wherwith they were sore displeased The seconde courle they tapnted on their hel mes/that the fyre flewe out and lost their spe res. The thirde courle Jaqueuyne Scrope brake his speare/ but the lorde of sayne Pye strake hym so rudely/ ꝑ he fell ouer his hoyse crope to the erthe/ he was relcued and ranne no moze that daye. Than another squier cãe forthe called Guylyam Maquelee. He ran agaynst sir Boucyquaunt who was redy to answere. The fyrste courle they tapnted on their helmes/that the fyre flewe out. ꝑ courle was prayled of euery partie. The seconde courle they strake eche other in the sheldes & loste their staues. The thirde courle they vn helmed eche other/ so that bothe sate barrher ded in their copes. They ran no moze that daye/ for they had done pough. Than ano ther Squyer of Englande called Nycholas Leau/ he touched the Shelde of the lorde of sayne Pye/he was redy to answere. the first courle they strake eche other so sore on ꝑ shel des/that if their staues had nat broken it had ben to their great dõmage/but they helde the selfes well fro fallyng. The secõde cope they attapnted eche other on the helmes that the fyre flewe oute/ for their strokes crolled and so passed by. The thyrde was a goodly cour se/for they strake eche other so euen in ꝑ sight of their helmes/ that eche of them vnhelmed other/so clenely/that their helmes flewe in to the felde ouer their hoyse cropes. the iusters ceased for that daye/ for there was none En glysh man that offred to iust any moze that day. Than the erle of Huntyngdon and the erle Marshall/ and the lorde Clyfforde/ the lorde Beamont/ sir Johan Clynton/ sir Jo han Dambretyncurt/sir Peter Shyrborne/ and all other knyghtes that had iusted those

four

foure dayes with the frenche knyghtes thanked them greatly of theyr paſtaunce/ and ſaid. Syrs all ſuche as wolde ought of our partye haue accomplyſhed theyr beſynes/ wherfore nowe we wyll take leaue of you/ we wyll returne to Calays/ and ſo in to Englande. And be aſſured well that who ſo euer wyll ought with you ſhall fynde you here theſe thyrty dayes/ accordynge to the tenoure of your chalenge: and yf ony come into Englande/ ſuch knyghtes as belyke to do dedes of armes/ we ſhall delyuer them to come to byſyde you. Then the knyghtes thanked them and ſayd. They ſhall be right hertely welcome/ and we ſhall delyuer them accordynge to the ryght of armes/ as we haue done you/ and more ouer we thanke you of the curteſy ye haue ſhewed to vs. Thus in curteſe maner the engliſhe men departed from Ingilbertes and rode to Calays/ where they taryed nat longe/ for the ſame daye after they toke ſhyppynge & ſayled to Douer/ and was there by noone/ and the ſondaye after rode to Rochеſter/ and the vette day to London/ and ſo euery man to his home. The foure frenche knyghtes kepte ſtyll theyr place at layne Ingilbertes. The frenche kynge and the lordes of Gaſtonoyes/ who had ben there all that ſeaſon was vnknowen/ (whan the engliſhe men were departed) they neuer ſeaſed rydynge/ tyll they came to Crapll on the ryuer of Oyſe/ where the quene was at that tyme. After that the Engliſhe men came in to Englande I herde nat that ony me came ouer to do ony deedes of armes at layne Ingilbertes/ howe be it the thre frenche knyghtes helde ſtyll theyr place tyll theyr thyrty dayes were accomplyſhed/ and than at theyr leyſar they retourned euery manne/ and came to Parys to ſe the kyng and the duke of Thouraync and other lordes that were at Parys at that tyme/ who made them good chere/ as reaſon requyred/ for they had behaued them ſelfe/ wherby they atchyued great honour of the kyng and of the realme of Fraunce.

¶ Of the enterpryſe and voyage of the knyghtes of Fraunce and Englande/ and of the duke of Burbone who was chefe of that army/ at the requeſte of the genouoys/ to go in to Barbary to beſeege the ſtrong towne of Auffryke. Cap. C.lxx.

I ſhall nowe declare the maner of an hygh and noble enterpryſe that was done in this ſeaſon by knyghtes of Fraunce/ of Englande/ and of other countreys/ in the realme of Barbary. Syrs/ I haue concluded the armes that was doone at layne Ingylbertes/ nowe wyll I ſhewe of other maters/ for to me it is great pleaſure to declare them/ for yf pleaſure had nat inclyned me to wryte and to enquyre for the trouthe of many maters/ I had neuer come to an ende as I haue done. Nowe ſayeth the tetre of the mater that I wyll procede on/ ſo in this ſeaſon there was ſpredde abrode in Fraunce and in dyuers other countreys that the genouoys wolde make an army to go in to Barbary with grete proviſion/ as well of vytayle as of the water and wyneger/ with gales and beſſelles for all knyghtes and ſquyers that wolde go in that voyage. the cauſe that moued them thus to do I ſhall ſhewe you. Of a longe tyme the aſſyrians had made warre by ſee on the frontiers of the genouoys/ and pylled and robbed their Ilandes/ ſuche as were obeyſant to them/ and alſo the ryuer of Genes lay euer in parell and daunger of them of Auffryke/ whiche was a ſtronge towne on ſ parties/ garnyſhed with gates/ towres/ and dyche and thycke walles ſ kept dykes. And lyke as the ſtronge towne of Calays is the key whereby who ſoeuer is lorde therof may entre into the realme of Fraunce/ or in to Flaunders at his pleaſure/ and may be ſee of by lande ſodenly inuaded with great puyſſaunce/ & do many great feates. In lyke wyſe by compariſon this towne of Auffryke is the key of the barbaryns and of the realme of Auffryke/ and of the realmes of Bougne/ and Thounes/ and of other realmes of the infydeles in thoſe parties. This towne dyd moche displeaſure to the genouoys/ who are greate

marchauntes / and by them of Iustyke they were often tymes taken on ꝓ se / as they went or returned fro their feate of marchaundyses. Than the genouoys who were eyther a pursuaunt bothe by lande and by see hauyng great ingnories / they regarded the bedes of the aduersaryes / and also conspyred the complayntes of suche illes as were under their obeysaunce / as the ille Dable / the ille of Myze / the ille of Guerle / the ille of Bostan / the ille of Gozgonem / and vnto ꝓ Guile of Lyon / to the cytees of Barbonne and Tuille / and vnto the ille of Maylloyke / whiche thre illes be vnder the obeysaunce of the kynge of Aragon. Than the genouoys by comon accorde agreed to sende in to the frenche courte / and to offre to all knyghtes and squiers that wolde go with them to beseige this towne of Iustyke / to fynde them galees / and other vessels charged with bysquet / swete wates / and wynegre / at their coste and charge / so that one of the frenche kynges vncles or els his brother the duke of Thouraync / who was yonge and lusty / and lyuely to conquere honour / shulde be capytayne generall. And the genouoys furthermore promysed .vij. thousande crosbowes genouoys well furnysshed / and eyght thousande of other with speares and pauesses / at their coste & charge. This the genouoys dyde because they knewe that there was a treuce betwene Englande and Fraunce for the yere / wherfore they supposed that knyghtes and squyers as well of Fraūce as of Englande / wolde be glad to be doynge in some parte.

Than tydynges came first into Fraūce of this voyage / the knightes and squiers of the countrey were right ioyfull / and the messangers fro Genne were answered that they shulde nat departe tyll they were well herde / and so to haue socour / their requeste was so reasonable / as to the augmentynge of the crystem fayth. Thus they were caused to tary a season at Parys. There to debate that mater / and to se who shulde be chefe soueraync of the armye for that voyage / and to whome euery man shulde obey. The duke of Thouraync of his owne voluntary wyll / offred hym selfe to go. but the kyng and his vncles wolde in no wyse agree therto / sayenge howe it was no voyage for hym / and they consydred well howe ꝓ genouoys desyred outhes to haue hym or els one of the kynges vncles. Than it was agreed that the duke of Burbons vncle to the kynge shulde be soueraygne and chefe of that armye / & shulde haue in his company the lorde of Coucy. When the ambassadours of Genne were answered that it was concluded without faple ꝓ they shulde haue ayde of knightes and squyers of Fraunce / and the kynges vncle the duke of Burbone to be soueraync and chefe capytayne / wherof these ambassadours were well contente / and toke their leaue of the kynge and of his counsayle / and retourned in to their owne countrey. Tydynges anone spred abrode in ꝓ realme of Fraunce of this voyage into Barbary. To some it was pleasaunt / and to some nat delectable / and many that wolde haue gone wente nat. There was none that went but on their owne charge and coste. No lorde sente any but of their owne seruauntes. Also it was ordeyned that none shulde passe of the nacyon of Fraunce / without lycence of the kynge / for the kynge wolde nat that so many shulde haue gone to leaue the realme destitute of knyghtes and squyers. Also it was agreed that no barlettes shulde passe / but all gentlemen / and men of feate & defence. Also to please all other nacyons / knyghtes & squiers straungers had free lyberty to come and to entre into this honorable voyage / wherof all knyghtes straungers greatly prayse the frenche kynge and his counsayle for that dede. The duke of Burbone who was one of the chefe of the realme sent incontynent his officers to Genues to make prouysyon accordynge to his astate. The gentyl erle of Auuergne sent also to Genues to make his prouysions / and the lorde of Coucy was nat behynde. Also syr Guy de la Tremoyle / and sir Iohan of Vyen admyrall of Fraunce / and all other lordes and knightes suche as were ordeyned to go in that voyage / sent to make their prouysions / euery man after his degre. Also dyd sir Philyppe de Artoys erle of Eawe / and sir Philip of Bar / the lorde of Harcourt / sir Henry Dantoyng. Also out of Bretayne and Normandy many lordes & other apareyled them selfes to go into Barbary. Also of Haynalt the lorde of Ligne / the lord of Haureth / and for the of Flaunders there was great suspicion made. Also the duke of Lācastre had a bastarde sonne called Henry of Lancastre / he had deuocion to go in ꝓ same voyage / & he prouyded him of good knightes

and

and squyers of Englande/ that accompanyed hym in that voyage. The erle of Foix sent his bastarde sonne called Iohanne of Foix/ well prouyded with knightes & squiers of Bierne. Euery man prouyded themselfes nobly and riche for other/ and about the myddes of May they ꝑ were furthest of fro Gene set forwarde to come to Gennes/ where as ꝑ assemble was apoynted/ and where as all their galees and vesselles were assembled. It was a mouneth or they coude all assemble there. The genoueys were right ioyfull of their comyng/ and gaue great ꝓfremes to the chefe lordes/ the better therby to wynne their loues. They were nombred whan they were togyther by ꝑ marshals xviii. hundred knyghtes and squyers. Than they entred in to the galees and vesselles that were prouyded for them/ well furnisshed of all thynges necessary. Thus they departed fro the porte of Gennes aboute the feest of inuencion/ in the yere of our lorde god a thousande thre hundred fourscore and ten.

¶ Great pleasure it was to beholde their departynge and to se their standardes/ getons/ and penons wauynge in the wynde and shynynge against the sonne/ and to here ꝑ trompettes & clarions sowynge in the ayre/ with other mynstrelsy. The fyrste night they lay at ancre at the entrynge in to the high see. all varlettes & hoyses abode behynde/ a hoyse that was worthe fyfty frankes at their departyng was solde for ten frankes/ for there were many knyghtes and squiers that wyste nat whan they shulde returne. they coulde nat haue fyue hoyses kept at Gennes for a franke a daye/ and therfore at their departynge they made money of them/ and that was but lytell. There were a hundred galees garnisshed with men of warre/ crosbowes/ & pauoises/ and mo than a. C. of other vessels laden with puysson & other necessaryes. The nexte day at the breke of the daye they weyed ancres/ and rowed all that day by force of oores and the nyght folowynge/ collyng the lande. The thyrde day they came to Portefyn/ and there cast ancre and taryed there all that nyght/ and the next day they came to a nother porte & towne called the porte Vendre/ and there taryed and refreshed them. The next day they passed further into the grete see in the name of god & our lady/ and sayntе George/ & fyrste they founde the isle of Mahe/ and than ꝑ isle of Guerke/ the isle of Argoens/ and the isle of Sardyne/ & passed the Gulfe of the Lyon/ which was a daungerous & a boysterous passage/ but they coulde nat eschewe it the waye ꝑ they take/ they were there in great parell all to haue ben lost. the season was so troublous & tempestes so terryble/ that ꝑ wyste maryner ꝑ there was coude gyue no counsaile but to abyde the auenture/ & the wyll of god/ whether the fleete departed a sonder some here and some there/ they wyst neuer where. This tempest endured a day & a nyght. whan this tempest was ceest/ and ꝑ wyndes pacyfyed/ than the patrons & pylottes set their courses to drawe to the isle of Cõmeres/ a. xxx. myle fro Iustrykе. and fro the towne thyder as they entended to go. For at the goynge out of the Gulfe of Lyon/ the patrones sayde one to a nother/ if it fortune that we be driuen a sonder by force of wynde and wether/ than lette vs drawe to the isle of Cõmeres/ and there lette vs tary eche for other. And as they hadde deuysed so they dyd/ for the fyrst that came thyder tarped tyll the last came/ and or all coulde assemble there togyder it was a fyne daies. This isle of Cõmeres is a pleasaũt isle/ thought it be nat grete. There the lordes refreshed themselfe and thanked god/ whan they sawe they had loste none of their compayny. Thanne the lordes and patrons toke counsayle what was best for them to do/ consyderynge they were so nere ꝑ towne of Iustrykе.

¶ Nowe I wyll leaue to speke of these lordes of Fraunce for a season/ and speke of other maters that was done in that season in Fraũce/ and specyally in the countrey of Auuergne/ in the marches of the lande of the erle Dolphyn/ who was forthe in the sayd voyage.

*** ***

¶ Of a cappytayne a robber and a pyller of the countrey/ called Aymergot Marcell/ who helde a stronge castell in the marches of Rouergne called the Roche of Vandois/ and howe it was besieged by the vicount of Meaulx/ and of the takynge therof/ and howe Aymerygotte was taken and brought to Paris. Cap. C. lxx.

In this seaſon whyle this aſſemble was a makyng to go in to Barbary for a good entente / as to eraſe the croſſen faythe / certayne robbers and pyllers in Auuergne / & Rouergne / and in Lymoſyn / were of contrary myndes / for though the coũtreys thought themſelfe in ſurete / by reaſon of the chartre of the treuce that was taken betwene Englande and Fraunce / whiche had ben proclayned and publyſſhed in all forteresses / and before all the capytayns that made any warre / or helde any forteresses of the engliſſh parte. And an artycle there was / that who ſo euer brake or violated any poynt or artycle compriſed in the treaty ſhulde receyue pu nyſſhyon of dethe / without hope of any remyſ ſion / eſpecially Perot le Bernoys capytayne of Caluſet / Amergot Marcell / Olyue Barba capytayne of Doulac / in the marches of Au uergne / were enclosed by name in the charter of the treuſe / to the entent that yf they or any of theirs dyd or conſented to do any thynge con trary / that they ſhulde not excuſe them ſelfe. ſome of the capytayns that feared to dye a ſhamfull dethe / or to ryme in to the indygnacion of the frenche kynge / helde ſurely all the poynctes of the charter. But ſome dyd not ſo whiche they derely bought / as ye ſhall here after.

Ye ſhall knowe as it hath ben here before re herſed / howe Johan erle of Armynake & Ber narde dolphyn of Auuergne / and therle Cler mounte / were in treatte with certayne capy tayns that helde forteresses in the ſaid coũtreys agaynſt the frenche kynge. Theſe ſayd lordes made ſuche dylygence that they brought by ners of theſe capytayns to compoſycion / and to the ſellyng of theis forteresses. Their treaty and compoſicyon was that they ſhulde renounce the warre betwene Englande & Fraunce / and hauynge the treuce they to go with the erle of Armynake in to Lombardy / or whyder as he wolde leade them / to ayde hym in his warre a gaynſt the lorde Galeas erle of Vertues / who had diſherited his coſyn germayns / chyldren to his vncle the lorde Barnabo / as it hath ben ſhewed here before / and ſo what to haue theis ayde and to auoyde the countrey of theſe rob bers & pyllers / who had done ſo moche hurte in the countrey / bothe to men and women / the ſayd erle of Armynake / and the erle Dolphyn his coſyn / toke gret payne in that matter. But at the inſtant requeſtes & prayers of the good menne of the cyttes and townes of the playne countreys aforeſayd / ſo that there was a tayle gadred in Auuergne / Gurnaldon / Rouergne Carnoſyn / and in Lymoſyn / to the ſũme of two hundred thouſande frankes / ſo that poore and riche payed ſomorth / that ouers ſolde & layde to pleuge their herytages / and were glad ſo to do to ryde at reſte in their countreys. And the good men thought by reſon of payeng of this money / and auoydyng of the ſayd fyue rob bers & pyllers / that they ſhulde than haue ben quyte for euer of them / but it proued not ſo in ouers places / eſpecially of Amergot Mar cell and of his men. For after that the caſtell of Alops was peiden vp and ſolde by Amergot Marcell to the erle of Armynake / whiche for treſſe ſtode in the herte of all Auuergne / this Amergot was well worthe in redy money a hũdred thouſande frankes / whiche he had go ten by robbry & pyllage / and by raunſomings of men / and pataygnge of the countrey / and he had kept the rule more than ten yere. Therle of Armynake deſyred gretly to haue in his com pany the ſayd Amergot Marcell & thought nat to leaue him behynde him for two reaſons. One was / bycauſe he wolde gladly haue the counſayle & aduyſe of hym / for he was expert and ſubtyle in all feates of armes / both in ſau tynge / ſcalynge / and ſtealynge of forteresses. The ſeconde reaſon was / the erle feared that if this Amergot ſhulde abyde behynde in the countrey / thoughe he hadde ſolde to hym the forteresse of Alopis and other forteresses / yet he might do moche domage in the coũtrey of Au uergne and Rouergne / wherfore therle made great labour to haue hym. But Amergot diſſymuled the mater and ſaid. What I ſe the certayne of the erle of Armynakes de partyng / than I knowe myne owne wyll is ſo good that I wyll nat abyde behynde. Other an ſwere the erle couldo nat get of hym. The erle of Armynake laye at Commynge and about Tholouſyn / in his countrey / and there made his aſſemble / whiche voyage had ben moche haſted / and the voyage in to Auſtryche hadde nat been / that letted hym a ſeaſon / for ouers knyghtes and ſquyers that went in that voy age had promyſed hym / and this voyage in to Barbary came ſo ſodenly that it hynded

his

his voyage. When tydynges was knowen in Fraunce of the treaties that the erle of Armynake had made with the sayde capytayns in Auuergne/there was made as moche haste as myght be to pay the money to the capytayns.

Aymergot Marcell was sore displeased with hym selfe in that he had solde and delyuered the stronge castell of Aloyse/for he sawe his owne aucrorite thereby greatly abated/and parceyued well howe he was the lesse feared/for all the season that he kept it he was doubted and feared/and honoured with all men of warre of his parte/and had kept a great astate alwayes in the castell of Aloyse. The patrymony of countreys that he helde vnder subiection/was well worth yerely twenty thousande florayns. When he remembred all this he was soroufull/his treasour he thought he wolde not myngle/he was wonte dayly to serche for newe pyllages/whereby encreased his profyte/and than he sawe that all was closed fro hym. Than he sayde and imagyned/that to pyll and to robbe (all thynge considered) was a good lyfe/and so repented hym of his good doing. On a tyme he sayd to his olde companyons. Syrs there is no sporte nor glory in this worlde amonge men of warre/but to vse suche lyfe as we haue done in tyme past. What a toy was it to vs whan we rode forthe at aduenture/and sometyme founde by the way a rych prieur or marchaunt/or a route of mulettes of Mountpellyer/of Narbone/of Lymons/of Fongans/of Besyers/of Tholous/or of Carcassone/laden with clothe of Brusselles/or peltre ware comynge fro the fayres/or laden with spycery fro Bruges/fro Damas/or fro Alysaundre/what so euer we met all was ours/or els raunsomed at our pleasaunce/dayly we gate new money/and the pyllaryes of Auuergne and of Lymosyn dayly prouyded and brought to our castell wheate mele/breed ready baken/otes for our horses/wyne/good wynes/beffes/and fatte mottons/pulleyne/and wylde foule/we were euer furnysshed as though we had ben kynge. whan we rode forth all the countrey trembled for feare/all was ours goynge or comynge/Rowe tolde me Carlade/and the Bourge of Compayne/and Ieane Perrot of Bernoys tooke Calaster/Rowe dyd we scale with hym all yde the stronge castell of Marquell/pertaynynge to the erle Dolphyn

I kepte it nat paste thre dayes but I receyued for it on a fayre table fyue thousande frankes/and forgaue one thousande for the loue of the erle Dolphyns chyldren. By my fayth thus was a fayre and a good lyfe/wherfore I repute my self for a dyscreued in that I haue renoyed vp the fortres of Aloys/for it wolde haue ben kepte fro all the worlde/and the daye that I gaue it vp/it was fourny shed with vytayles to haue ben kepte seuen yere without any reuytayllynge. This yle of Armynake hathe dyscryued me/Oliue Barbes Perot le Bernoys shewed me howe I shulde repente my selfe. certayne I sore repent me of that I haue done. And whan suche of his companyons as had serued hym longe herde hym speke those wordes/they parceyued well howe he despaked them with all his herte vnfayned. Than they sayd to hym. Aymergot we are all redy yet to serue you/lette vs renewe agayne our warre/and lette vs gette some stronge holde in Auuergne or in Lymosyn/and let vs fortifye it/and than syr we shall soone recouer our losynges. we shall make a goodly fyght in Auuergne and in Lymosyn/for as nowe the erle Dolphyn and Hugh his brother are out of the countrey/a dyuers other knyghtes and squyers of thette company in to the voyage of Barbary (and specyally the lorde of Coucy/who hath the souerayne regarde ouer the kynge of all those marches/therfore we shall nat nede to feare hym/nor the duke of Berrey/for he is at Paris/so thus we shall haue ouer a good season. Well quod Aymergot/I haue good wyll thus to do/sauynge I ame by name expressed in the chartre of the treuse. What for that syr quod his company/ye nede nat care therfore if ye lyste. ye are nat subgiette to the frenche kynge/ye owe hym nother fayth nor obeysaunce/ye are the kynge of Englandes mayne/for your heritage (whiche is all dyscryued and lost) lyeth in Lymosyn/and syr we multiply. and though we make warre to yde the englysshmen wyll nat be displeasaunt with vs/and suche as be in our rule wyll blame vs not. And syr we haue no we good tytle to make warre/for we be nat now in Auuergne why the tournaunce was made that we be bounde vnto. lette vs ryde to the dyuynyns of the bylages whanne we be ones in a stronge holde/and commaunde them to paye vs a raunsom/or els to make vs warre. Well syrs quod

Aymergot/ fyrſt lette be prouyde for a ſtronge place to abyde in and to drawe vnto whan we nede. Some of theym ſayde/ for we knowe where there is a ſtronge holde/ with a lytell newe fortifyenge/ pertaynynge to the herytage of the lorde of the Towre/ no man kepeth it/ lette vs drawe thyder and fortifye it/ than may we at our eaſe ryme in to Auuergne and Aymoſyn. Where ſyeth this place quod Aymergot/ Syr quod they within a leage of the Towre/ and it is called the Roche of Uandoys. It is trewe quod Aymergot/ I knowe it well/ it is a mete place for vs/ lette vs go thyder and fortifye it. Thus on this purpoſe they concluded/ and on a day aſſembled togyther and wente to the Roche of Uandoys. Than Aymergote auewed the place to ſeke it were worthe the fortifyenge therof. And whan he had well auewed the ſytuacion therof/ and the defences that myght be made there/ it pleaſed hym ryght well. Thus they toke it and fortifyed it lytell and lytell or they began to do any diſpleaſure in the countrey. And whan they ſawe the place ſtronge ſufficyently to reſiſt a gaynſte ſiege or aſſaute/ and that they were well horſed and well prouyded of all thynges neceſſary for their defence/ than they beganne to ryde abrode in the countrey and tooke pryſoners and raunſomed them/ and prouyded their halle with fleſſhe/ meale/ ware/ wyne/ ſalte/ pyron/ and ſteele/ and of all other neceſſaryes. There came nothynge amyſſe to theym without it hadde ben to heuy or to hote. The countrey all aboute and the people/ wenynge to haue ben in reſte and peace by reaſon of the truce made betwene the two kinges and their realmes/ they began than to be ſore aballyed/ for theſe robbers & pyllers toke them in their houſes/ and where ſo euer they founde them/ in the feldes labouryng. and they called them ſelfes aduenturers. Whanne the lorde of the towre knewe that he had ſuche neyghbours ſo nere hym/ he was nat well aſſured of hym ſelfe/ but fortifyed and made good watche in all hys townes and caſtelles. The counteſſe of Dolphyn a ryght valyaunt lady and of grete prudence/ beinge with her chyldren in a good towne and ſtronge caſtell of hers called Mar den/ ſyr was nat well aſſured of her ſelfe whan ſhe herde that Aymergote and his company had fortifyed ye Roche of Uandoys. She ſent dayly tydynges to all her caſtell and fortreſſes

them with men of warre/ as Marquel/ Ou dable/ Chyllac/ and Blere/ and in to other pla ces/ to the entente they ſhulde nat be ſurpry ſed/ for ſhe greatly douted this Aymergot be cauſe he hadde of her before at one payment fyue thouſande florayns. Surely all the coun trey of Auuergne and Aymoſyn began greatly to be a frayde. Thanne the knyghtes and ſquyers/ and men of the good townes/ as of Clermount/ of Mounte Ferante/ and of Ry on/ determyned to ſende to the frenche kinge/ and ſo they dyd.

In the meane ſeaſon whyle the ſayde counteſſe and the other good men of the countrey dyd ſende to the frenche kinge and to the duke of Berrey/ who as than were at Parys/ Aymergot and his company fortifyed greatly the Roche of Uandoys. full they made a lodgynge for their horſes. Whan all other aduenturers who were diſcharged out of wages herde howe Aymergot made warre agayne/ they were ryght joyfull therof/ and many came to hym. Anone he had mo of theſe robbers and pyllers than he wolde haue they demaunded no wages of hym/ but all onely that they myght be of his bande/ for all ſuche as myght be of his company they knewe well they ſhulde ryghtly wynne ſomewhat/ for they were habandoned to robbe and to pyll. Thus they rode vp and downe and made them ſelfe to be knowen in dyuers places. There was no ſpekynge in Auuergne and Aymoſyn but of them of Roche Uandoys/ the countrey was ſore afrayde. They of Caluſet (wherof Pe rotte le Bernoys was capytayne) helde and kepte fermely the truce that was made/ and whan he ſawe that Aymergot Marrell ouer ranne ſo the countrey/ he was ſore diſpleaſed with hym/ and ſayde howe he dyd euell/ and ſent hym worde that he nor none of his ſhulde come in to Caluſet/ nor in to none other place where he had any rewle. Aymergot cared no thynge for that/ for he hadde places ynowe to drawe vnto. beſyde that he had menne ynowe/ and dayly encreaſed/ for ſuche as were myſ dred to do euell dyde we to hym dayly. Perot of Bernoys charged ſuche as were vnder his rule on payne of there lyues that none ſhulde ryde out to do any domage to his neighbours for he ſayde he wolde ſurely kepe the truce.

Dyuy

Olyuer Barbe capytayne of Oulat dyſſymu-
led the matter/ ſayeng howe he wolde kepe the
treuce/ howbe it as it was ſhewed me ſome
of his men ſomtyme wolde ryde forthe ſcrete-
lye/ and what they danne he wolde haue the
profyte therof. The men of the countreys of
Clermount/ of Mount Ferant/ and of Ryon
who were goynge in meſſage to the frenche
kynge/ and to the duke of Berrey. They ſped
ſo in their iourneys that they came to Parys/
and there founde the kynge/ the duke of Ber-
rey/ the duke of Thourayne/ and the conſta-
ble of Fraunce ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon. They
came fyrſte to the duke of Berrey and to his
counſayle/ and ſhewed the cauſe of their com-
mynge/ howe Aymergot Marcell made warre
and deſtroyed the countrey of Auuergne/ and
howe the puell people daily multyplyed/ wher
forе they deſyred for goddeſſake to haue ſome
remedy. ſayenge if theſe puell people ſhulde
longe contynewe/ they wolde diſtroy the coun
trey of Auuergne/ and the frontiers of Lymo-
ſyn. Whan theſe tydynges came to the kynge
and to the duke of Berrey/ they were ſore diſ-
pleaſed/ for they had thought all had been in
peace/ by reaſon of the treuce. Than the kyng
demaunded if they of the garyſon of Caluſet
and Oulac dyd any puell or nat. They aun-
ſwered and ſayd/ they complayned of no man
but alonely of Aymergot Marcell and of his
company/ who hathe fortifyed the Roche of
Vandoys. Thanne the kynge and the duke of
Berrey aunſwered and ſayd. Syrs ye good
people take good hede to your ſelfes and we
ſhall prouyde ſhortely a remedy/ that ye ſhall
well perceyue. retourne to your places and
ſhewe this aunſwere to them that ſente you
hyther. Theſe good men of Auuergne were
well content with theyr aunſwere/ and taryed
there two dayes/ and thanne retourned and
toke theyr leaue ſpecyally of the duke of Ber-
rey and ſo departed.

The frenche kynge and his counſayle
forgate not theſe tydynges/ nor the
duke of Berrey/ whome the matter
touched greatly/ becauſe he helde great here-
tages in Auuergne/ therfore he auaunced the
buſyneſſe. ye haue herde here before howe the
lorde of Coucy was ordayned by the kynge
and his counſayle to be capytayne/ and to haue
the ſoueraygne rewle of all the countrey/ fro
the ſee by Rochell/ vnto the ryuer of Gyronde
and to Burdeaux on the ryuer of Geron. As
than the lorde of Coucy was not in the coun-
trey: He was goynge in the voyage to Bar-
bary/ with other lordes of Fraunce/ and of
other countreis. Howbeit at his departyn-
ge he ordayned his coſyn ſir Robert of Be-
thune Vycount of Meaulx to be his lyeute-
naunt in the ſayde countrey. Than the kyng
ſayde/ howe it was moſt metefull that the vy-
count of Meaulx ſhulde haue the charge of
that voyage to go in to Laguedoche/ rather
than any other perſone. He was at Coude
on the ryuer of Marne. The kynge wrote to
hym. The meſſangere founde hym with his
wyfe at Coundе/ and there he delyuered his
letters fro the Frenche kynge. The vycount
receyued theym/ and whan he knewe what
they mente/ he ſayde he wolde obey the kyn-
ges commaundement. He prepared hym ſelfe
as ſoone as he myght/ & departed fro Coude
and rode ſo long that he cam to Parys where
he founde the kynge and his counſayle/ who
ſayd vnto hym. Vycount make you redy/ aſ-
ſemble the men of warre of your retynue/ for
ye muſt go in to Auuergne. There be of thes
pyllers and robbers/ of whome Aymergotte
Mercell is chiefe/ as we be enformed/ who
diſtroyeth and ſore trauayleth the good peo-
ple there. Do ye ſo moche as to driue theym
out of that countrey: And if ye maye attrap
the ſayde Aymergotte bring hym to vs/ and
we ſhall haue great toye therof. It is ordayn-
ed that there ſhalbe delyuered to you/ ſuche
ſommes of money at Clermount/ that ſhall
ſuffyce for your men of warre. And to go fro
hens thyder ſpeke to oure treaſourers/ & they
ſhall delyuer you for your expenſes. Make
haſte/ for it requyreth dyligence. The Vy-
count aunſwered howe he was redy/ and ſo
went to his lodging. And there he wrote let-
ters to knyghtes and ſquyers in Fraūce and
Picardy of his acquayntaunce & retynewe/
that they in all haſt ſhulde mete with hym at
Charters/ and there to make their muſters.
ſuch as he wrote vnto obeyed/ they loued the
Vycount/ for they helde hym for a good capi
tayne. So they came to the ryte of Char-
ters at their day prefyxed. There aſſembled
a two hundred ſpeares of good men of warre.
Whanne they were aſſembled/ they departed

fro Char-

fro Charters and tooke the waye towardes Auuergne/ and so came in to Burbonoys. tydynges came in to Auuergne howe socours was comyng to them out of Fraunce/ wherof all the countrey was peroysed.

IT was nedefull that these men of warre came thyder so soone as they dyde/ for and they hadde tarved but fyre dayes lenger/ Aymergot Marcell and his bande had thought to haue ourre ronne the playne countrey/ betwene Clermount and Montferrant/ and about Ryon to Ganape. And if they had made that voyage they hadde done great dommage to the countrey/ more to the valewe than a hundred thousande frankes/ for in those marchalle laye the eyches of Auuergne/ and no man shulde haue resysted the/ for the countrey as thanne was voyde of any man of warre. And also the bruyt was/ that Aymergotte Marcelles company was farre and in noumbre thanne they were in dede. Aymergotte was redy to haue made this tourney/ but tydynges came to hym howe socuers it was by pylgrimes or by clyppes that the vycount of Neaulx with a great company was comynge agaynst hym to make hym warre/ and to putte hym out of his fortresse of the Roche of Uandoys. Thise newes letted his enterprize/ and kepte hym stylle within his holde/ and thought they shulde be besieged. Than Aymergot Marcell began to doughte and repented hym of that he hadde done/ for he knewe well yf that he were takenne/ there shulde no raunsome go for hym. Thanne he sayd to some of his company. I am shamed: I haue beleued ouell counsayle: Couptoulneste shall distroye me/ without I haue comforte. Thanne they sayde to hym. Sir/ why doughte ye thus? We haue sene you the hardyest man of armes of all these marchelle. We haue a good garyson and well prouyded and we aremen of defence/ and loue as well to defende oure bodyes/ as ye do to defende yours: ye can lese nothynge but we muste lese also. If by aduenture ye be taken/ ye shall make your fynaunce accordynge to reason. We haue good pnoughe and we haue wherwyth ge. If we be taken it lyeth in our heedes/ we gette none other remission. We shall selle our lyues dere. Lette vs defende our selfe as well as we can/ be nat aboue hed with any thynge that we here or se. We thynke we shall nauenede to care for any siege. Lette vs warre manfely. Thus these companyons confoted Aymergot Marcell.

THe vycounte of Neaulx with his company came forward tyll they came to Molepns in Burbonoys. There the duchesse of Burbone/ doughter to the Erle Dolphyn receyued the vycount and his knyghtes ryght honorably/ and made theym to dyne. Than they passed forthe and laye that nyght at Saynt Pursant/ and fro thens to Ganape and so to Argre Pyse/ and than to Ryon/ and fro thens to Clermount where they were well receyued with the byll hoppe and with theym of the towne. There the men of warre had money/ for there was a tayle gadered and delyuered at Clermont. Thanne they passed forthe and came to oure lady of Dozmail a four leages fro the Roche of Vandoyes. There the vycount rested and sente for the knyghtes and squyers of Auuergne and of Lymosyn. There they assembled. They were than to the nombre of foure hundred speares one and other/ and about a hundred crosbowes of genowayes. There was with the vycounte of Neaulxe the lorde of Montague/ Vermendoyens/ and his brother the lorde of Dommart/ and sir Bernard de la Ryuer/ sir Guyllyam Butler/ the lorde of Domme/ the lorde de la Roche/ the lorde of the Towre/ sir Loys Dambyer/ the lorde of Saynt Ampylle/ and sir Robert Dalphyn/ and dyuers other. And captayns of the genowayes were two baypaunt squyers/ the one named Aubert of Nespynolle and Calinace. And as than chefe Stewarde with the vycount of Neaulx was a gentyll squyer called Lopes of Leslynell. These genowayes and crosbowes were armed at all peces/ elles they shulde not haue paste wages with the vycount.

Than

Whaſe Aymergot Marcell and Guyot du Pail his vncle/ vnderſtode that theſe men of warre of Fraunce/ of Picardy/ of Auuergne/ & of Gene were come to our Lady of Boznall/ and were mynded to come & laye ſiege to their holde of Roche vándoys. Than they aduyſed what was beſt for them to do to make defence. Fyrſte they conſydred well/ that it was nat for them to kepe any houſe/ ſeyng they ſhulde be beſieged. nat farre of fro the Roche of Uandois there was another ſtronge holde called ſayne Soupetye/ vnder the rule of Aymergotte Marcell/ and there was his wyfe/ and thyder he ſente all his pages and horſes and the moeſt parte of all his ryche ſſe. This roche of Uandoys was well fortifyed/ and it ſtode in a ſtronge grounde. The lorde of the Towre was ſore blamed of them of the countrey/ that he had lefte that place vnfortifyed and vnpruoyded It was comonly ſayde in Auuergne/ ỳ they myght thanke the lorde of the Towre for all the dómage they had taken/ becauſe he might well haue kepte the Roche of Uandoys/ or if he wolde nat haue kepte it for coſt/ he myght haue delyuered it to the men of the countre/ ỳ they myght haue raſed it/ in ſuche wyſe/ that it ſhulde nat haue ben tenable/ but he left the walles hole and entyer/ as he founde them. This Roche of Uandoys is ſette a monge highe mountayns/ and that rocke ſtandeth a parte/ and on the one ſyde the walles be of a rocke. They had ſo fortifyed it/ that it coude nat be aſſayled but on the fore parte by ſeyſmyll hynge. The Uycount of Meaulx departed fro our lady of Boznayll/ and knightes and ſquyers/ and genouoys crof bowes/ and ſo came before the Roche of Uandoys. there lyke good men of warre they layde their ſiege/ and lytell and lytell amended their lodgynges. Whaſe the countelle of Alfyne beinge at Sardes/ knewe the trewe tidynges that the Roche of Uándoys was beſieged ſhe was right ioyfull. And becauſe that ſhe thought that the Uicount of Meaulx was come ſo farre (as out of Fraūce and Picardy) that he had brought with hym no tentes nor pauylyons. Shee ordayned for hym two fayre and good tentes/ parteynyng to theyr dolphyn/ and ſente them to the Uycount/ by maner of lendynge of them to hym durynge the ſiege. The vycount toke the preſent in good gree/ and recōmaunded hym hertely to the countelle/ thākyng her for the tentes that ſhe had ſente hym/ for they ſhulde do hym good ſeruyce. The lorde of the Towre was in his owne countrey/ and was within a myle of a caſtell of his owne/ ſo ỳ he lacked nothyng: other knyghtes and ſquiers made proūſion as well as they myght. They had vitayles plentie fro all partes at a reſonable price. the ſeaſon was fayre/ dre/ and hote/ as in ỳ moneth of Auguſt. The knyghtes and other cō panyons reſtrayned theym ſelfes vnder the grene bowes. Than tidynges came in to the hooſt that dyde put the lordes and their com panyons in dout. It was ſhewed them that the garniſons of their ennemyes/ as of Caluſſet and of Douſacke aſſembled togyder/ & were determyned in a morenynge to awake the hooſt or they were ware/ and to reyſe the ſiege. Than the vycount of Meaulx and his knyghtes toke counſayle togyder and determyned to ſende a heraude to Perot of Bernoys capitayne of Caluſette and to Olyue Barbe capitayne of Douſac to knowe their myndes/ to the entent that they were nat ſurpriſed/ but that they myght be aſſured of the Engliſſhe garyſons. And accordyng as they had aunſwere agayne/ therafter to prouyde for them ſelfe. They ſente an heraude and inſtructed hym what he ſhulde do and ſaye. the herauide departed fro the hooſt and rode to Caluſet/ and there by aduenture founde Perotte at the barryers with many of his compayny/ who were there ſportyng and caſtyng the ſtone. Than the meſſanger lyghted from his horſe and demaunded for the capitayne. He was brought to hym/ and whan he came before hym he dyde his meſſage fro poynt to poynt. Than Perot le Bernoys ſayde. Herauide/ ſaye to youre mayſters that we wyll holde and kepe as affermely and trewly/ the truce that is taken bytwene Englande and Fraunce/ in lyke maner/ as we wolde they ſhulde kepe with vs. And if we knowe any of outs that wyll breke or byolate the peace by any maner of inuydent. If we maye take them/ we ſhall do ſuche correccyon as apartayneth to be doone/ as we haue promyſed. And we wyll that ye ſaye to youre mayſters/ that loke what Aymergotte hath done/ was

without

fro Charters and toohe the waye towardes Auuergne/ and so came in to Burbonoys. The tydynges came in to Auuergne howe socours was comyng to them out of Fraunce/ wherof all the countrey was reioysed.

IT was nedefull that these men of warre came thyder so soone as they dyde/ for and they hadde tarryed but fyre dayes lengar/ Aymergot Marcell and his bande had thought to haue ouer ronne the playne countrey/ bytwene Clermount and Montferrante/ and about Ryon to Ganape. And if they had made that voyage they hadde done great dommage to the countrey/ more to the valewe than a hundred thousande frankes/ for in those marchelle laye the tychelle of Auuergne/ and no man shulde haue resysted the for the countrey as thanne was doyde of any man of warre. And also the bute was/ that Aymergotte Mercelles company was farre no in nombre thanne they were in dede. Aymergotte was redy to haue made this tourney/ but tydynges came to hym howe socuer it was by pylgrymes or by clppes that the vycont of Meaulx with a great company was comynge agaynst hym to make hym warre/ and to putte hym out of his forterelle of the Roche of Vandoys. These newes letted his enterprize/ and kepte hym selfe within his holde/ and thought they shulde be besyeged. Than Aymergot Marcell began to doughte and repented hym of that he hadde done/ for he knewe well if that he were takenne/ there shulde no raunsome go for hym. Thanne he sayd to some of his company. I am shamed: I haue beleued euell counsayle: Couptousnesse shall distroye me/ without I haue comforte. Thanne they sayde to hym. Sir/ why doughte ye thus? We haue sene you the hardyest man of armes of all these marchelle. We haue a good garyson and well prouyded and we are men of defence/ and loue as well to defende oure bodyes/ as ye do to defende yours/ ye can lese nothynge but we must lese also. If by aduenture ye be taken/ ye shall make your fynaunce accordynge to reason. Ye haue good enoughe and we haue nothynge. If we be taken it lyeth vnder hedes/ we gette none other remyssion. We shall selle oure lyues dere. Lette vs defende our selfe as well as we can/ be not abasshed with any thynge that we here or se. We thynke we shall nat haue nede to care for any syege. Lette vs warre vs sely. Thus these companyons comforted Aymergot Marcell.

THe vycounte of Meaulx with his company came forward tyll they came to Molayns in Burbonoys. There the duchesse of Burbone/ doughter to the Erle Dolphyn receyued the vycount and his knyghtes right honorably/ and made theym to dyne. Than they passed forthe and laye that nyght at Saynt Pursant/ and fro thens to Ganape and so to Argte Pyole/ and than to Ryon/ and fro thens to Clermount where they were well receyued with the byll hoppe and with theym of the towne. There the men of warre had money/ for there was a tayle gadered and delyuered at Clermont. Thanne they passed forthe and came to oure lady of Dozmail a four leages fro the Roche of Vandoyes. There the vycount rested and sente for the knyghtes and squyers of Auuergne and of Lymosyn. There they assembled. They were than to the nombre of foure hundred speares one and other/ and about a hundred crosbowes of genowayes. There was with the vycounte of Meaulx the lorde of Montague/ Vermendoys/ and his brother the lorde of Dommart/ and sir Bernard de la Ryuer/ sir Guyllyam Butler/ the lorde of Domme/ the lorde de la Roche/ the lorde of the Towre/ sir Loys Bambyer/ the lorde of Saynt Ampylle/ and sir Robert Dalphyn/ and dyuers other. And captayns of the genowayes were two balyaunt squyers/ the one named Aubert of Nelyppolite and Callinace. And as than there was with the vycount of Meaulx was a gentyll squyer called Loyes of Leglyncll. These genowayes and crosbowes were agreed at all peces/ elles they shulde not haue passed yes with the vycount.

Whan

Whan Aymergot Marcell and Guyot du Pail his vncle/ vnderſtode that theſe men of war of Fraunce/ of Picardy/ of Auuergne/ & of Gene were come to our Lady of Domail/ and were mynded to come & laye ſiege to their holde of Roche Vandoys. Than they aduyſed what was beſt for them to do to make defence. Firſte they conſydred well/ that it was nat for them to kepe any houſe/ ſeyng they ſhulde be beſieged. nat farre of fro the Roche of Vandois there was another ſtronge holde called ſaynt Soupeyre/ vnder the rule of Aymergotte Marcell/ and there was his wyfe/ and thyder he ſente all his pages and houſes and the moſt parte of all his ryche ſelle. This roche of Vandoys was well fortifyed/ and it ſtode in a ſtronge grounde. The lorde of the Towre was ſore blamed of them of the countrey/ that he had lefte that place vnfortifyed and vnpruoyded It was comonly ſayde in Auuergne/ ỽ they myght thanke the lorde of the Towre for all the domage they had taken/ becauſe he might well haue kepte the Roche of Vandoys/ or if he wolde nat haue kepte it for eaſe/ he myght haue delyuered it to the men of the countre/ ỽ they myght haue raſed it/ in ſuche wyſe/ that it ſhulde nat haue ben tenable/ but he left the walles hole and entyer/ as he founde them. This Roche of Vandoys is ſette a monge highe mountayns/ and that roche ſtandeth a parte/ and on the one ſyde the walles be of a roche. They had ſo fortifyed it/ that it coude nat be aſſayled but on the fore parte by ſcrympſh hynge. The Vycount of Meaulx departed fro our lady of Dozeynall/ and knightes and ſquyers/ and genouoys crof bowes/ and ſo came before the Roche of Vandoys. there lyke good men of warre they layde their ſiege/ and lytell and lytell amended their lodgynges. Whaſe the countelle of Alyne beinge at Sarres/ knewe the trewe tidynges that the Roche of Vandoys was beſieged ſhe was right ioyfull. And becauſe that ſhe thought that the Vicount of Meaulx was come ſo farre (as out of Fraſice and Picardy) that he had brought with hym no tentes nor pauylyons. She ordayned for hym two fayre and good tentes/ parteynyng to their Dolphyn/ and ſente them to the Vycount/ by maner of lendynge of them to hym durynge the ſiege. The vycount toke the preſent in good gree/ and recōmaunded hym hertely to the counteſſe/ thākyng her for the tentes that ſhe had ſente hym/ for they ſhulde do hym good ſeruyce. The lorde of the Towre was in his owne countrey/ and was within a myle of a caſtell of his owne/ ſo ỽ he lacked nothyng: other knyghtes and ſquiers made prouiſion as well as they myght. They had vitayles plentie fro all partes at a reſonable price. the ſeaſon was fayre/ drie/ and hote/ as in ỽ moneth of Auguſt. The knyghtes and other cōpanyons refreſhed theym ſelfes vnder the grene bowes. Than tidynges came in to the hooſt that dyde put the lordes and their compayons in dout. It was ſhewed them that the garniſons of their enemyes/ as of Caluſet and of Douſacke aſſembled togyder/ & were determyned in a mornynge to awake the hooſt or they were ware/ and to reyſe the ſiege. Than the vycount of Meaulx and his knyghtes toke counſayle togyder and determyned to ſende a heraude to Perrot of Bernoys capitayne of Caluſette and to Olyue Barbe capitayne of Douſac to knowe their myndes/ to the entent that they were nat ſurpryſed/ but that they myght be aſſured of the Engliſh be garyſōs. And accordyng as they had aunſwere agayne/ therafter to prouyde for them ſelfe. They ſente an heraude and inſtructed hym what he ſhulde do and ſaye. the herauide departed fro the hooſt and rode to Caluſet/ and there by aduenture founde Perrotte at the barryers with many of his compayn/ who were there ſportyng and caſtyng the ſtone. Than the meſſanger lyghted from his horſe and demaunded for the capitayne. He was brought to hym/ and whan he came before hym he dyde his meſſage fro poynt to poynt. Than Perrotte Bernoys ſayde. Herauide/ ſaye to youre maiſters that we wyll holde and kepe as aſſermely and trewly/ the truce that is taken betwene Englande and Fraunce/ in lyke maner/ as we wolde they ſhulde kepe with vs. And if we knowe any of ours that wyll breke or violate the peace by any maner of incydent. If we maye take them/ we ſhall do ſuche correccyon as apartayneth to be doone/ as we haue promyſed. And we wyll that ye ſaye to youre maiſters/ that loke what Aymergotte hath done/ was

without

without our counsayle/ for he neuer shewed vs of his purpose. We dyde charge hym and all his/ that he shulde nat medyll in our seignorie/ if he dyde/ he shulde haue an yuell ende. The herauldе was hadde in to the fortresse and there dyned. Than he tooke leaue and there was gyuen hym ten frankes. than he departed and demaūded the way to Dousacke/ and founde there Olyue Barbe/ capitayne of that fortresse. The herauldе spake to hym in lyke maner/ as he hadde doone to Perotle Bernoys. Olyue Barbe answerred that in no wyse he wolde breke the treuse/ by cause he wolde nat be vil honored/ and there he gaue hym ten frankes/ and than departed and retourned to his mayster/ before ꝓ roche of Uandoys. Than the knyghtes were sore desyrous to here tidynges/ they drewe about the dyscoūt. There the herauldе shewed how he had ben at Calyset and at Dousacke/ and what answere he had of the capitayns. than the Uecount prayed moche Perotte le Bernoyes and Olyue Barbe/ and was as than out of doute/ and so contynued their siege.

¶ The siege beyng before the Roche of Uandoys/ euery day there was scrimyll hung ꝑ often tymes some hurte with shotte of the genouoys crosbowes/ for the genouoys were good shoters. Thus the siege cōtynued a nyne weekes. Thenterprise of the garyson was greatlye to the aduauntage of them within/ I shall shewe you the maner howe. It certayne places they might issue out at their pleasure/ in dyspyght of all their ennemyes/ for ꝑ they shulde haue kepte them fro their issues/ they had nede to haue had mo than fyue. M. men. Thus duryng the siege Aymergot was ryght ymaginatife and conseyued all thynges/ and sawe well howe he had nat done well/ but to tourne his dede in good maner/ and to thentent that the Roche of Uandoys shulde styll remayne w hym. He sent in to Englande a varlet of his with letters of credence/ to the kynge of Englande and to the duke of Lancastre. And of this purpose he brake his mynde to an vncle of his called Guyot du Pail/ a man of a thre score yere of age/ who had greatlye vsed dedes of armes/ and knewe moche of ꝑ worlde When Aymergote had shewed hym the maners howe he wolde sende in to Englāde/ this Guyotte was well agreed therto/ and sayde howe to sende a wyse man thyder coulde do no hurte. Than they sente a varlet/ who had ben brought vp among them. Aymergot enstructed hym and sayde. We shall sette the out of this house in saue garde out of all peryll/ and thou shalte haue golde and syluer ynoughe. Thou shalte go in to Englande with these letters/ one to the kynge/ another to the duke of Lācastre/ and the thirde to the kynges counsayle/ and all these letters are of credence. Than they wyll demaunde of the the occasyon of thy cōmynge thyder. And after thou hast made thy recomendacion/ thou shalte saye ꝑ Aymergot Perrell their poore soudyour and subiecte/ and redy with good wyll to do them seruyce/ is enclosed and besieged in a lytell fortresse partenyng to the fraultie of Lymosyn/ belongyng to the kynge of Englandes heretage. And they that lye at the siege/ trauerseth & taketh great paynes daylye to wyn vs that dothe defende the fortresse. And the capitayne of them without is a lorde/ cosyn to the lorde of Coucy called sir Robert vycount of Meaulx/ set there by the Frenche kyng. Therfore desyre the kynge & his counsayle/ and specially the duke of Lancastre who hath the souerayne gouernaunce in Burdeloys/ and of the kyng of Englādes heritage in these pties. That it wolde please them to write and to cōmaunde the vycount of Meaulx to depte fro the siege and to repayre his army. And to write to the Vycount that he is about to breke the peace that was taken at Balyngham/ betwene Bolongne and Calays. And bycause I am in doute what answere the vicount wyll make to these letters (for he is somwhat stronge and frowarde) Therfore desyre that I maye haue in lyke wyse letters fro the kyng and his counsayle/ and fro the duke of Lancastre to the duke of Berrey. For if the duke of Berrey wyll/ my contynent the siege shall be rayed. And for the more suretie/ desyre to haue with ꝑ some knight of honoure of the kynges house or of the duke of Lancasters/ suche one as the duke of Berrey knoweth/ and the other lordes of Fraunce. And shewe hym fro me that I shall gyue hym a. C. frankes. Remembre all these wordes and do thy message accordingly and shewe the that thou spekest withall that this lytell fortresse that I haue fortified/ if it

maye

maye abyde ſtyll Engliſſhe. It ſhall come well to poynte/ and ſpecially to the that wyll make warre in theſe partues for the kynge of Englande/ for the fortreſſe ſtādeth on the fron tiers of the countrey/ for therby maye be won at a ſeaſon in Auuergne and Lymoſyn/ two thouſande frankes.

Than Aymergot Marcell & Gupot du Pail his vncle had well inſtruc ted this varlet/ and that the letters of credence were writen and ſealed/ and de lyuered. The varlet departed by nyght and was well accompanyed and conueyed a fore to another fortreſſe pretynynge to Aymergot called ſaint Sauuery. There he toke a horſe ſuche as he wolde chooſe/ for he hadde a great iourney to ryde. He rode forthe through the realme of Fraūce lyke a Frenche man of Auuergne/ and ſo came to Calais and acquayn ted hym ſelfe with the Captrayne ſir Johan Beauchampe/ and ſhewed hym parte of his buſyneſſe/ to the entent to haue the ſoner paſ ſage/ as he had. So he came to Douer and than toke his iourney to Lōdon. And it was his fortune that the kynge of Englande and his two vncles/ and the duke of Lancaſtre and the kynges counſayle were the ſame tyme at the palais of Weſtmynſter in counſayling for maters of Northumberlande/ for the ſcot tes helde nat well the truſe/ as complaynctes were made. The ſame tyme Aymergottes varlet came to Lōdon and there toke his lod gynge/ and ſhewed his hoſt parte of ỹ cauſe of his commynge. His hoſt brought hym to Weſtmynſter/ and cauſed hym ſarite to ſpeke with the duke of Lancaſtre who was in his chambre. it was or he went to the counſayle. there ỹ varlet delyuered hym his letters. the duke toke & reed them. Than he drewe hym a parte/ & demaunded what credence he had. Than the varlet ſhewed hym all the hole ma tter/ as ye haue herde here before. The duke herde hym well/ and demaunded if he had a ny mo letters/ and he ſayd that he had letters to the kyng and to his counſayle/ that is well quod the duke/ I ſhall cauſe the to haue au dyence. than the duke went to the counſayle. And whan he ſawe the hour and tyme he mo ued the varlettes mater/ and by the dukes an nouncement the varlet was ſente for. Than he delyuered to the kyng and to his counſayle the lettters/ they were opned and reed: and than he was demaunded what was his cre dēce/ and the varlet who was hardy and nat aball hed/ ſhewed the buſyneſſe of Aymergot Marcell right ſagely/ and the better aſſured bycauſe euery man gaue hym good audiēce. Whan he had ſaid as moche as he wolde/ thā he was anſwered/ that the kyng wolde take couſayle in the mater and make an anſwere. Than he went out of the counſayle chambre and taryed tyll he had an anſwere.

The anſwere was/ that the kynge wolde write to the vycount of Nye aulx and alſo to the duke of Berrey accordyng as Aymergot had requyred/ and in lyke wiſe ſo prompted the duke of Lanca ſtre. and whan the letters were writen/ there was a gentyman of the duke of Lancaſtres apoynted to bere theſe letters. So they paſ ſed the ſee/ and with them went Derby an he ralde the better to forther the mater/ bycauſe he was aquaynted with the lordes of Auuer gne/ and ſpecially with the duke of Berrey. The gentyman of the duke of Lancaſters named Herbery/ went with the better wyll/ bycauſe the varlette promyſed hym in the be halfe of Aymergot a hundred frankes. Thus they thre departed and came to Douer/ and fro thens at a tyde to Calis. And whan their horſes were vnſhypped/ they toke the waye to Boloygne and ſo throughe Picardy/ and went to Parys/ & fro thens in to Auuergne. And whan they approched nere to Lymoges nes/ and to the coutre where the roche of Vā dopes was ſette. They rode about the more ſecretely to come thyder.

Thus as I haue ſhewed you theis meſſangers dyde ſo moche that they came nere to the roche of vā dopes. Whanne they were nere where the ſiege laye/ the ſquyer and the herauide thought it for the beſt/ nat to entre in to the towne at that preſent tyme. But they ſent the varlet in to the towne/ ſaye eng they wolde do well ynough without his company. For they ſayd if he ſhulde be ſeen with them/ they at the ſiege wolde ſuppoſe that he had ben ſente in to Englande for the. the varlet obeyed/ & in the nyght he entred in to ỹ towne without daūger. than Aymergot

Marcell

Marcell q Gupot du Hall made hym good chere/ and had marueyle that he had spedde his tourney in so shoꝛt a spaꝛe. There he shewed howe he had spedde/ and howe a squier of the duke of Lancastres and a heraude was come with him with letters fro the kyng and fro the duke of Lancastre/ bothe to the Vycount of Meaulx and to the duke of Berrey if nede were. And why quod Aymergot Marcell/ are they nat come hyder into this castell Sir q the yarlet/ they sayd they two wolde do their message well inough/ noꝛ they wold haue no man sene in their copany that shulde come fro you. They are the wyser q Gupot du Hall/ therby it shall seme that the mater toucheth the kyng of Englãde and the duke of Lancastre. Sir it is trewe quod the yarlet. Of thoꝛ tidynges Aymergot was ioyfull and sayde to the yarlet. Thou hast well and diligently spedde thy maters/ and that in a shoꝛte season/ I shall well rewarde the foꝛ thy labour. Thus the squyer and the heraude came streight to the syege and demãded foꝛ the Vycoũtes lodgynge. They were bꝛought thyder and there they founde the Vycount beholdyng men castyng the stone. than they kneled and saluted hym and he them agayne/ and demaũded fro whens they came. They answered and sayd/ howe they cãe out of Englande/ sent thyder by their kyng and by the duke of Lancastre. ye are welcome q the Vycount/ what mater hath bꝛought you in to this wylde countrey. Sir quod the heraude beholde here this squyer of the duke of Lãcastres/ who hath bꝛought to you letters fro the kynge of Englande and fro the duke of Lancastre/ if it please you to rede thẽ. and bycause I cõwhat knewe the countrey I am come in his company. Than the squyer delyuered his letters/ and the Vycount receyued them and beheld the seales/ and knewe well they came out of Englande. Than he tooke one aparte that coude rede/ and there he reed the letters fro poynt to poynt two oꝛ thꝛe tymes/ tyll he knewe well what they ment. thã he studyed & regarded well the kyng of Englandes wꝛityng/ who sayd in his wꝛityng that he had marueyle that he wolde lodge/ kepe/ and reste hym with an army of men of warre on his heritage. & that he dothe dayly all that he can to bꝛeke the peace/ whiche he ought in no wyse to do/ foꝛ it is greatly pꝛ

iudiciall to them that haue sette to their seales to the confyrmacion of the peace. and the conclusyon of the letters was/ howe the kyng cõmaunded them incontynent after the sight of his letts that he and his company shulde departe and rayse their siege/ and suffer Aymergot Marcell peasably to enioye the heritage parteynyng to his heritage/ whiche hath cost hym great goodes the fortifying. These wordes and suche other were contayned in their letters all to the ayde of Aymergot Marcell. In lyke maner as the kynges letters spake the duke of Lancaster sange the same note/ commaundyng lyke the excellent duke of Acquitayne and of all that duchy. And whan the Vycount of Meaulx had well ouꝛsyen hym self he sayde. Sayr sires/ these tidynges that ye haue bꝛought requyꝛeth counsayle and aduyse/ I shall take counsayle and than ye shall be answered. Than they were made to dyne of the Vycounters wyne. In the meane tyme the Vycount toke counsayle/ foꝛ he sent foꝛ the lorde of the Towre & foꝛ sir Guyllyam Beuerley/ sir Robert Dolphyn/ sir Lopes Dabyry and also foꝛ the lorde Montagup/ and foꝛ sir Berat de la Syuer/ who was of his house. And whan they were all togyder/ he shewed the wordes/ and shewed them the cause why he had sent foꝛ them/ and there caused the letters to be reed before them. Whan these lordes herde that/ they had great marueyle how these letters coude be bꝛought out of Englande/ foꝛ as than they had nat sayne at the syege past a moneth. I shall shewe you quod the Vycount what I suppose. Aymergot Marcell is a subtell man/ as soone as he sawe that he shulde be besieged/ I thynke he sent incontynent some messanger in to Englande to ascayne these letters/ the whiche I maye obey if I lyste/ but I shall answere them shortly But as in that the kyng of England and the duke of Lancastre cõmaundeth me to do/ I will nothynge obey their cõmaundementes/ foꝛ I am nat bounde to obey thẽ/ but all onely the Frenche kynge/ by whose cõmaundement I am sent hyder. Call foꝛthe the squyer and the heraude I shall make them their answere/ they were bꝛought foꝛthe. Than the Vycount began to spebe as folowth.

you Derby and Tomelyn Herbery/ thus ye be named accoꝛdyng to the tenour of your letters/

letters/ and as it apereth ye be sent hyther fro
the kynge of Englande/ fro the duke of Lan
caster/ they are enfourmed I can nat tell how
suche by Aymergot Marcell or by some o
ther that wolde ayde him/ and hath ben in En
glande in his name/ howe I am at this present
tyme with an hoste of men of warre lodged on
the haryetage of the kynge of Englandes/ and
he commaundeth me to departe and voyde my
lodge/ and to suffre Aymergot Marcell peas
ably to enioy this petyt fortresse/ whiche is the
cause for moche the foure penge/ and also they
sende me worde to me I wo put my selfe in pa
ssion by thonour ageyn that I shulde consent
to breke the peace/ sealed and confermed be tw
ixte the pieces betwene the two kynges and
their realmes. Fayre sires I say vnto you that I
wyll do nothyng that shall be against the trai
te of peace/ I wyll kepe the treute/ and do no
thynge ageynst it/ and though I am lodged
here it lyeth nat in my power to breke. I am sub
get to the fayre kynge who hath sent me hy
ther/ and hath admytted me as his marshall
of this hoste/ for reame to the knowe
lege of the kynge my maister and his coun
sayle/ by grenous complayntes of the noble
men and other of the countrey of Auuergne and
Auuergny/ howe they are wasted and dom
maged/ by the meanes that Aymergot
and his strong place by reason therof is/
whiche was voyde and nat inhabyted/ wherfore
our soueraygne kynge hath me made it a house
of pleasaunce and solace/ but a stronge fortresse and a
perforyng place for theues/ robbers/ and mur
derers/ wherupon I am commaunded to be here
to defende the countrey/ and to the entent that
suche as vsually vse in the fortresse shulde
nat vse their wanhonesse/ but to pay
sylle them by suche fauour as apertayneth
to myne estate/ and I am determyned to put
no man to raunsome without I can by no maner
commaundements of my maister I wyll obey/
and shall do the best I can to kepe peace and
truce/ and I say vnto you I wyll nat departe vntyll
vndoubted mony be had/ for I know what they
are/ and what they can do/ and I know that they
will nat be ouercome. And if ye wyll
go to my lorde your maister/ and say that I am commaunded
to kepe the peace/ and that I am determyned to
kepe the same/ and that I will nat be ouercome
but by myght of armes/ and that I am redy
to make you this answere/ ye may retourne
when it please you/ and when ye come there
as ye wolde be/ say none other wyse nor no lesse
than I haue sayde to you/ for often tymes re
portes nat truely set/ enfourmeth lordes often
tymes otherwyse than the trouthe is in dede.
Syr quod the squyer we are come hyther for
none other purpose but to reporte the trouth
of that we here and se/ and sythe ye wyll none
other wyse do/ we nede no lenger to abyde here
and so toke their leaue. And there was gyuen
to the harauldes ten frankes/ for the honour of
the kynge of Englande and the duke of Lan
caster.

Than they were departed they toke the
hyghe way to Clermount/ and sayd
they wolde ageyne to Parys/ & whan
they were halfe a leage on their way than they
began to entre in to their matter and sayd. Sy
per we haue done nothynge/ it behoueth vs to
go to the duke of Berrey in to Auuergne/ who
is lorde of this countrey/ for he writeth hym
selfe duke of Berrey and of Auuergne/ the by
cause of Beaulx dare nat displease the duke
if he comaunde hym to departe/ and we haue
letters fro the kynge our maister and fro the
duke of Lancastre to hym/ wherfore it is rea
son that we delyuer them/ and that we maye
knowe his entente. They concluded on that
purpose/ and so rode to Clermounte/ thyder
they were welcome/ for the harauldes knewe
the countrey/ and whan they were demaunded
what they were/ they answered that they were
messangers sent fro the kynge of Englande/
and than they demaunded where the duke of
Berrey was/ and it was shewed them that the
duke and the duches was in a castell of theirs
named the Moneere. The harauldes knewe it
well/ for they haue ben there before. Than they de
parted fro Clermount/ and rode to Vpon
and so forth to Moneere. There is a hyghe
mountayne to passe or one come to the castell.
Whan they came there the duke of Berrey with
many other was spoylynge without the gate/
the hall was hanged with byerres. Than
they were brought to the duke/ who for the loue
of the kynge of Englande and of the duke of
Lancastre made them good cheer. The squyer
delyuered his letters to the duke/ who recey
ued them/ and opened and red them at leysyr
two tymes ouer. Than he studyed a lytell and

answered them curtesly and sayde. Syrs for the loue of our cosyns in Englande we shall gladly do our power. Of the which answere the squyer and the harauide were ryght ioyouse/and thought than howe they had sped all their mater/ but it was nat so as ye shall here after. howe be it the duke of Berrey at the begynnynge dyd his deuoyre to haue raysed the siege/to please therby the kynge of Englande and the duke of Lancastre/ who desyred that the siege myght be rayed before the Roche of Vandoys/ and that the lytell fortresse myght abyde styll to Aymergot Marcell/z if he haue done any thyng to displease the frenche kyng or his cousyns/the kynge of Englande wolde se that there shulde be amendes made. And the duke of Berrey bycause he wolde acquyte him truely to the engylsshe mennes desyres/ suche as were in his house/ he wrote incontynente letters well endyghted to the bycount of Meaulx/ and these letters were red or they were sealed before the engylsshe men/ who thought them well ordayned. These letters were sente by a notable squyer of the duke of Berreys to the bycount of Meaulx/ who receyued them and opened them. Than the bycount caused them to be redde before suche lordes as were there with hym/ whyle the messanger was a drinkynge. for they made hym good chere/for the loue of the duke of Berrey/ as it was reason. Syrs quod the bycounte/ we shall nat be in rest syth the duke of Berrey wyll beare Aymergot/ who is the man of the worlde that this twelue yere hath moste greued and trauerled the countrey of Auuergne. I had thought that the duke had hated hym greatly/ but it semeth nay/sythe he hath expressly comaunded that I shulde departe fro hence. But by my fayth at this tyme I wyll nat obey this letter/ but I wyll make excuse by reason of the kynge and his cousayle/ who sent me hyder: and at my departynge fro Parys he straytly comaunded me that for any comaundements fro any persone/ and if it were nat fro the kynge hymselfe/ that I shulde nat departe fro hence tyll I had taken the stronge holde of the Roche of Vandoys/ and Aymergot therin/ whiche I wyll do if I canne/ and nowe the duke of Berrey comaundeth me the contrary/ for he chargeth me incontynent his letters seue/ that I shulde reyse the syege. By my fayth I wyll nat do it. Syr quod they that were abouts hym/ ye spehe royally and truely/ and we shall abyde with you/but we suppose the occasion that the duke of Berrey writeth thus for Aymergot/ is that the engylsshe squier and the harauide hath thus desyred him to write. we thinke also they haue brought letters to hym fro the kynge of Englande/ and fro the duke of Lancastre/ as they brought to you this other day. ye say well quod the bicounte/ and I shall knowe it if I canne. Than the duke of Berreys squier was sent for to haue his answere/ and the bycount sayd to him. Syre/ I wyll well that ye knowe that I owe obeysaunce to the duke of Berrey/ for he is so nere a kynne to the kynge that I dare nat displease hym/ but I and my companyons who haue ben here these fyue weekes at this siege to wyn this fortresse/ and to take the theues that be within it/ by the strayte commaundement of the kynge and his counsayle/ and we haue great maruayle (and good cause why) howe my lorde of Berrey dothe comaunde vs and maketh requeste for his enemyes/ that we shulde reyse our siege/ by reason of that we say generally that we shal gyue ensample to all theues and robbers/ suche as wyll ouer ron the realme to do the worst they canne. Wherfore syre ye shall say to the duke of Berrey fro vs all/ that we are and shall be redy inclyned to do any thyng that he comaundeth vs to do/ but as in this case I am so straytly enioyned and comaunded by the kyng and his cousayle to kepe this siege/ and to contynewe it tyll I haue the fortresse and them within at my pleasure/ whiche comaundements I dare nat breke. and say that surely I wyll obey to no comaundement/ but alonely to the kynges whole subget I ame/ and by whome I am sente hyther. But sir I requyre you shewe me one thynge if ye can/ who hath made this requeste for Aymergotte Marcell/ who hath done so moche pull and anoyaunce to the countrey of Auuergne and Lymosyn/ and nowe he is strapped lyke as a traytour shulde be/ and is nere come to an euell ende/ whiche he hathe well deserued/ for he hath erred and done contrary to his othe. Syr quod the squyer/ there came to my lorde the duke of Berrey two men of Englande/ an harauide and a nother/ who brought letters to my lorde fro the kynge of Englande and fro the duke of Lancastre/ and they made greate requeste for Aymergotte. I beleue you well quod the

bycoun-

vycounte / it was verely the hardiude and a squyer called Herbery / they brought me this other wrye lyke letters / wherfore I suppose that the kynge of Englande and the duke of Lancastre wryte to the duke of Berrey in this matter. wherfore I rede to my lorde of Berrey that I desyre hym to consyder all thinges well / for all these requestes that are come fro the other syde of the see are but desyres purchased by our enemyes / to the whyche no lorde on this syde the see (if he loue the honoure and profyte of the realme of Fraunce) shulde enclyne nor condescende. Syr quod the squyer I shall forget no thynge of that ye haue shewed me / for I loue nat Espmergot / I had rather se his punyshment than his delyuerannce. So the squyer departed and rode to Nonette where he founde the duke of Berrey / and dyd his message ryght sagely / the conclusyon was that the vycounte of Meaux sayde / surely he wolde nat departe fro the syege before ye Roche of Vandoys / without the kynge sente hym strayte commaundemente so to do. With this answere was the duke of Berrey wonder well contente / he had thought that as well his commaundement shulde haue ben obeyed / specially in Auuergne.

Than the englysshe squyer and Verby the hardiude herde of the answere that was made to the duke of Berrey / and how that the syege was nat raysed / they were sory / and sawe well they trauayled in vayne / than they sayde to the duke. Syr what wyll ye counsayle vs to do shall we thus departe fro me you / without spedynge of any thynge to purpose. The kynge of Englande and the duke of Lancastre haue great trust and affyaunce in you / that ye shulde cause this syege to be raysed / or els the Roche of Vandoys to brenne our seignoury. Syrs quod the duke suffre a season / Espmergot Marcell is in a stronge place / he wyll nat in feare takyng / without a great bataylle / and shortely I purpose to goo into Fraunce to the kynge / and than I wyll speke with the kynge and his counsayle / and for the loue of my cosyns of Englande / I shall do the best I canne to bringe the matter to passe / and ye shall go with me and se how I shall spede. With these wordes the squyer and the hardiude were contente. Than the fourth day after the duke departed fro Nonette / and lefte there the duchesse his wyfe with a great parte of his householde / and so the duke rode to Ryon in Auuergne / and there he taryed more than eyght dayes / for the erle of Sancerre and the lorde Rule / who were gone to Avignon about the dukes busynesse. and whan they were come they depaurted fro Ryon all togyther / and toke the waye throughe Burbonoys / and at laste came to Bourges in Berrey / and there the duke taryed two dayes. Than he rode to Mehun on the ryuer of yeure to a castell / one of ye fayrest houses of the worlde / as than the duke had newly bylte it / and it had coste hym three hundred thousande frankes. There the duke taryed seuen dayes / wherwith the Englysshe messangers were sore troubled howbeit they coude fynde none other remedy. The duke as than made lytell force for the delyuerannce of Espmergot / I shall shewe you howe and by what meanes. So it was the erle of Sancerre and the lorde of Rule who were chefe of the dukes counsayle / with syr Peter Nesyn / they in sayre maner blamed the duke / and sayde howe he hadde nothynge to do to medell with the busynesse of Espmergot / sapenge that his lyfe hathe ben alwayes dyshonourable / and howe that he was but a false paryarte / and alwayes agaynste the crowne of Fraunce / and had doone many hyllayne deedes and roboryes in Auuergne and in Lymosyn / and how that he was no mete parsone to be entreated for / wherfore syr quod they / suffre the kynge and his counsayle to deale with hym as they lyste. These wordes and suche other retrayned the duke of Berrey to spede any further in the matter. Howe be it the two englysshe men dyd their best to remembre the duke. And the duke dyssymulynge aunswered them curtesly and sayde. Syrs suffre a season / we shall be shortely at Parys. but for all his wordes he taryed styll at Mehun more than thre weekes beyspynge with his mayster workeman: as kervers and paynters / for therin he had great fantasy. He had a mayster workeman called maister Andrewe / as than one of ye best workemen of the worlde / an Englysshe man borne / but he dwelte in Fraunce and in Haynalte a longe season.

Nowe shall I shewe you what fortuned of Espmergot Marcell and of the roche of Vandoys

poys. This Aymergot was a farre castynge man/ and whan he sawe that ꝑ syege was nat reysed/ he thought well that the kyng of Englandes messangers coude nat spede of theyr sute. than he thought on a nother turne as to departe thens and to ryde nyght and daye to spoke with the capitaynes of Pyergourt/ and Hyerguyse/ and with Gupot of saint Fayth/ and Ernalton of saynt Colombe/ Ernalton of Rostrem/ Johñ of Hozen/ Piet Barchin/ and Remonet of Cõpayne/ and with dyuers other gascoyns and bernoys in the engylsshe garysons/ and he thought that with his sayre wozdes he shulde cause them to assemble togy ther/ and to come in to Auuergne on truste to wynne great botyes/ and so on a mozyng oz in the nyght to come and reyse the siege before Mandoys/ and to take there the frenche men prysoners/ whiche shulde be worthe to them a hundred thousande frankes/ besyde other botyes. Thanne he shewed his uncle Gupot du Shall all his purpose/ who answered him and sayd. Sir I se in this nothynge but good/ for otherwyse we can nat be delyuered fro these frenche men. Well uncle qꝺ Aymergot I shall do this message my selfe/ yf ye counsayle me therto/ but I shall desyre you of one thynge oz I departe. what is that quod he. It is so quod Aymergot/ that what so euer skrymyshe that the frenche men do make/ issue you in no wyse out of the gates/ noz open nat your barryers/ for and ye do/ ye may rather lese than wynne. Sir quod Gupot I shalbe ware ynough ther of/ we shall kepe our selfes close here within tyll your retourne/ oz that we here tydynges fro you. Well sayre uncle I requyre you so to do/ for they cannt nat displease us none other wayes/ as for their assautes oz skrymyshes/ ye nede nat feare/ so ye kepe your selfes close within. Thus within thre dayes after Aymergot departed fro the Roche of Mandoys all onely accõpanyed with a page/ he passed forth without daunger of the frenche men. his entrepon was to dynge thyder companyons aduenturers to rayse the siege. many of them that were within the house knewe nothyng of his departure/ for he myght depart whan he lyst without knowlege. Euery day there was skrymyshynge and assautes at the barryers/ and within a fyue oz sixe dayes after ꝑ departure of Aymergot/ there was a great assaute made by the frenche men in thre partes. This Gupot du Shall was a good man of armes/ and longe tyme had vsed the exercisyng therof/ howe beit as on that day he fortuned yuell by reason of a lytell pyne/ for he brake the ordynaunce that his colyn Aymergot had set oz he departed/ for he had charged hym that for ony maner of assaute he shulde nat issue out of the barryers. At this assaute there were thre squyers of the french party/ two of Auuergne and one of Bretayne/ who were skrimyshyng valyauntly upon a pane of a wall nere to the fortresse. These thre squyers above all other that daye dyd moste valyauntly/ they of Auuergne were called Richarde de la Violette/ and Lubinet of Rochfort/ and the breton was named Wonadyke/ who was taken before in Lymosyn in the castell of Manchador/ & was partynpage to sir Wellyam Burlee. The assaute endured tyll nyght. These thre squyers atcheued there great laude and prayse/ but for all their trauayle & payne they wan nothyng. Than at a nother assaute the vicount of Beaulx made a busshment of twelue men of armes and their companyes/ and layde them in an olde house without the fortresse/ and commaũded a nother sorte to go and skrymyshe at the barryers/ sayenge I thynke surely we shall se them within issue out/ for they are couetouse to wyn. if they do so/ than withdrawe your selfe lytell and lytell tyll they be past out busshment/ than they shall breke out/ and all retourne you agayne/ thus they shall be enclosed and taken oz slayne. This is the best way that I can se for our aduauntage. thus as the vicount had deuysed & ordeyned it was done/ they were named that shulde lye in the busshment/ as Lops of Lesgyuell/ Robert of Bertencourte/ Guyllyam de Saulsoy/ Piyet du sayne Uydall/ Gayonet Uillaraque/ Piet of Colle/ and Johñ Malmayne/ with other to the nombre of twelue. They layde themselfe in an olde house without the fortresse/ and a nother sorte went and skrimyshed at ꝑ barryers as Belynot of Rochfort/ Richarde of Violette/ and the Wonadyke with other. They were freshly armed and apareyled/ to thentent that they within shulde haue the more corage to issue out to them/ they were also twelue alonly. Whan they came to the barryers they began to skrymyshe but sayntly/ and lyke such persones as coulde but lytell skyll of feates of armes. Wherfore Gupot du Shall made lytell

sayre

foyce of them/ but issued out and sayde to his
companyons, by sayne Marcell we wyll issue
out/for at the barryers be a foyce of ponge cõ
panyons/ for by that they shewe/ they knowe
but lytell of dedes of armes/ but we shall teche
them to knowe it/they shalbe all our prisoners
they can nat escape vs. Ther with they opened
the barryers and issued out/ syrsse Gupot du
Shall/ and remembred nothynge the charge
that Aymergot had gyuen hym at his depar-
tynge/for the great desyre that he had to do de
des of armes/ and to wynne somwhat/ made
him to begyn the skrymysshe. whan the frenche
men sawe that Gupot du Shall and his com-
pany were come out of their barryers/ they
were eyght joyfull/than they began to drawe
backe lytell and lytell/and they of the foyctresse
pursewed them/ and they wente so farre that
they passed the bushment/ & whan they sawe
their tyme they brake out of their bushment/
betwene them and the foyctres/cryeng Coucy
the vycount. Thus they of the foyctresse were
inclosed both before and behynde. Whan Gup
ot sawe that/ he knewe well he had doone a
mysse/ and sawe well it was harde for hym to
scape/than he trculed to get agayne to his ga
rysons/ but the frenche men were in his waye.
Wherunto shulde I make longe processe/they
were all taken/ nat one escaped. They were
brought to the vycountes lodgynge before the
knyghtes/ who hadde great joye of their ta-
kynge.

THus by the counsayle of the vycount
of Meaulx/ Gupot du Shall and his
company were atrapped & taken and brought
before the lordes of Fraunce and Auuergne.
Whan the vycount sawe Gupot du Shall/ he
demaunded where Aymergot Marcell was/
and charged hym to saye the trouthe/ for he
thought he had ben still in the foyctresse. Gupot
du Shall answered/ howe he couldc nat tell
where he was/ for he was departed a twelue
dayes paste. Than the lordes thought surely
that he was gone to purchace some ayde. than
the prisoners were comaunded a parte/ and
the vicount demaunded of the knyghtes of Au-
uergne what were beste to do with Gupot du
Shall and with his company/ sayenge howe
he wolde vse hymselfe accordyng to their coun
sayle. Than syr Willyam Bulier answered
and sayde. Syr quod he/ I suppose that Ay-
mergot is gone for socour and to rayse vp the
companyons in the garysons of Pyergourt
& Pierguysse/ for he shall synde some alwayes
there to come vpon vs early or late/ or we be
ware of theym/ wherby they maye doo vs do-
mage/ for any peace or trewce that is taken.
This Aymergot is a subtyle man. syr let vs
do one thyng. shewe vnto Gupot du Shall and
his company/ that without they cause the foy-
tresse to be rendred in to your handes/ that ye
wyll stryke of all their heedes incontynente/
and without they do thus let it nat be spared.
This counsayle is good quod the vycounte/
for in dede the chefe occasyon that we be come
hyder for is to haue this foytresse/and though
we can nat haue it this tyme Aymergot Mar
cell/ a nother season shall fortune eyght well.
Than the vycount and the lorde of the towre/
syr Roberte Dolphyn and other came before
the foytresse as nere as they myght approche/
and thyder was brought Gupot du Shall and
his company. Than the vycount spake and
sayd to Gupot du Shall. Gupot and all other
of your company/ knowe for trouthe that in-
contynent all your heedes shall be stryken of/
without ye yelde vp the foytresse of the Roche
of Vandoys/ and if ye wyll rendre it vp we
shall suffre you to go qupte. Nowe aduyse ye
well what way ye wyll take/other lyfe or deth.
Of those wordes Gupot & his company were
sore abashed/ at last they thought it was best
for them to saue their lyues. Than Gupot an-
swered and sayde. Syr I shall do the best I
canne that the foytresse may be yelden to you.
Than he came to the barryer and spake with
them that were within/ who rehersed themsel-
fes clene dysconfyted/ seynge they hadde lost
their two maysters/ and the best of their com-
pany. As soone as Gupot hadde spoken with
theym/ and declared what case they stode in/
they agreed to yelde vp the foytresse condycio-
nally/ so they myght departe with bagge and
baggage as moche as they couldc carye/ and to
haue respyte for a moneth to withdrawe them
whyther they lyste. All this was graunted to
them/ and a sure sauconducte made and sea-
led. Thus the frenche men had the Roche of
Vandoys delyuered/by reason of their good
fortune of their last skrymysshe/ wherfore it is
comenly sayde/ that all fortunes good and yll
fall eth often tymes in armes/to them that
doloweth warre.

Whan the Roche of Vandois was yelded vp to the lordes of Fraunce and Auuergne/ they of the countrey were tyght ioyous therof/ and the lordes helde well and truely the promesse that they had made to Guyot du Sall. whan they had caryed away as moche as they coulde do/ than they departed with good assurance for a moneth to go whyder it pleased them. Than the vycount of Meaulx abandonned the Roche of Vandoys to the men of the countrey/ who incontynente dyd rase it downe/ in suche wyse that they lefte no wall hole nor house/ nor stone vpon stone/ but all was reuersed to the erthe. The frenchemen that were they in the kinges seruice with the vycount/ toke their leues of the knyghtes and squyers of Auuergne/ so they departed/ and they of Auuergne and Lymosyn went to their owne houses. The vycount of Meaulx gaue leaue to parte of his company/ & he went to Rochell and lodged at saint Johans Vangle/ to kepe there the fronter/ for in the cõtrey there were some pyllers and robbers that ran sometyme in to Xantoigne/ whan they sawe their aduauntage. In the maner and fourme as I haue shewed you ỹ fortresse of the roche of Vandoys was cõquered/ and rased downe wherof all the countrey was ioyfull/ for than they were in better surete than they were before. For to say the trouth if it had cõtynued/ it wolde haue done them many displeasurs. Tydynges of this dede came to the knowledge of the duke of Berrey to Cantelon/ a place of his owne/ standynge betwene Charters and Mount le Herrey/ a nyne leages fro Parys/ he cared nothyng for it for he was as than but colde to are any grace of the kynge for Aymergot. Whan Betry the harauide was informed by some of the dukes knyghtes howe the Roche of Vandois was taken & beten downe/ than he sayde to the squyer that came thyder with hym. Syre ye haue lost a hundred frankes that Aymergot had promysed to you. Howe so quod the squier. Surely quod the harauide the Roche of Vandoys is gyuen vp and rendred/ the frenche men haue wonne it/ therfore lette vs take our leaue of the duke of Berrey/ and retourne vnto Englande/ we haue no thynge here to do. Well quod the squyer sythe it is so I accorde therto. Than they toke their leaue of the duke. Than the duke wrote to the kynge of Englande and to the duke of Lancastre/ and gaue to the harauide at his departynge .xl. frankes/ and to the squyer a horse. Thus they departed and toke the nerr waye to Calays/ and so in to Englande. Than tydynges came to Aymergot Marcell where he was purchasyng of frendes to haue reysed the siege before the fortresse of Vandoys/ that it was gyuen vp. Whan he herde therof/ he demaunded howe it fortuned. It was shewed hym howe it was by reason of a skrympsshe/ and by the flayng out of his vncle Guyot du Sall vnaduysedly. Ah that olde traytour q Aymergot/ by sayncte Marcell if I had hym here nowe/ I shulde sle hym myne owne handes/ he hath dyshonoured me and all my companyons. At my departynge I straytely enioyned hym that for no maner of assaute or skrympsshe made by the frenchmen/ he shulde in no wyse open ỹ barryers/ and he hath done the contrary. this domage is nat to be recouered/ nor I wote nat whether to go/ they of Caluset and they of Mousac wyll kepe the peace/ and my companyons be spredde abrode/ the men dyscomfyted/ they dare neuer assemble agayne togyther/ and though I had them togyther/ yet I wote nat whyder to bring them. Thus all thynge consydred I am in a harde parte/ for I haue gretly displeased the frenche kynge/ the duke of Berrey/ and the lordes of Auuergne/ & all the people of the countrey/ for I haue made them warre the peace durynge/ I had trusted to haue won/ but I am nowe in a great aduenture to lese/ nor I wotte nat to whom to resorte to are counsayle. I wolde nowe that I and my goodes/ with my wyfe were in Englande/ there I shulde be in surety. but howe shulde I get thyder and cary all my stuffe with me/ I shulde be robbed twenty tymes or I coulde gette to the see/ for all the passages in Poictou/ in Rochell/ in Fraunce/ in Normandy/ and in Picardy are straytely kept/ it wyll be harde to scape fro takyng/ and if I be taken I shall be sente to the frenche kynge/ and so I shall be lost and all myne. I thynke the surest waye for me were to drawe to Burdeaulx/ and lytell and lytell to get my good thyder/ and to abyde there tyll the warre renewe agayne/ for I haue good hoope that after this treuce/ warre shall be open agayne betwene Englande and Fraunce. Thus Aymergot Marcell debated the matter in hym selfe/ he was heuy and sorowfull/ and wyste

nat

nat what waye to take/ outher to recouer ſõe
fortreſſe in Auuergne/ or els to go to Burde
aux & to ſende for his wife thyder/ and for his
goodes ly tell and ly tell ſecretely. if he hadde
done ſo he had taken the ſureſt waye/ But he
dyde contrary/ and therby loſt all: lyfe & go-
des. Thus fortune payeth the people whan
ſhe hath ſette thé on the higheſt parte of her
whele/ for ſodainly ſhe reuerſeth them to the
loweſt parte/ enſample by this Aymergotte.
It was ſayd he was well worthe a hundred
thouſande frãkes/ and all was loſt on a daye
Wherfore I may well ſaye that fortune hath
played her pagiaunt with hym/ as ſhe hath
done with many mo/ and ſhall do. This Ay-
mergot in all his trybulaciõs remẽbred hym
ſelfe/ howe he had a colyn germayne in Au-
uergne/ a ſquyer named Tourne myne/ and
determyned to go to hym and to ſhewe hym
all his trouble/ and to take counſayle of him
as he deuyſed ſo he dyd. He and his page all
onely came to ỹ caſtell where Tourne myne
was/ thynkyng to haue ben there in ſurete/
bycauſe of lynage/ but it proued contrary/ for
this ſquyer was nat in the duke of Berrys
grace nor fauor. Whan he ſawe his colyn Ay
mergot in his houſe/ he aduyſed to take hym
priſoner & to aduertyſe the duke of Berey/ ỹ
if he wolde forgyue hym his diſpleaſure & y
uell wyll/ he wolde ſend hym Aymergot mer
cell/ to do with hym his pleaſure. And as he
had deuyſed ſo he dyde/ for whan Aymergot
was within his colyns Caſtell and brought
to a chãbre/ than he layde by his ſwerde and
chaunged his apatyll: than he demaũded of
the ſeruauntes and ſayd. Where is my colyn
Tourne myne/ as yet I haue nat ſeue hym.
Sir quod they he is in his chambre pleaſe it
you to come and ſe hym: with ryght a good
wyll quod Aymergotte/ and the ſeruauntes
knewe ryght well their mayſters pleaſure.
Whan Aymergot had chaunged his apatell
and doone of a Cote of defence/ that he was
wont vſually to weare/ and layde awaye his
ſwerde. Than he ſayd. Sirs/ lette vs go/ I
wolde ſe my colyn Tourne myne/ it is long
ſithe I ſawe hym. they brought him ſtreight
to Tourne myne/ and whan he came to hym
Aymergot dyde ſalute hym/ as he that tho-
ught none yuell. Than Tourne myne aun-
ſwered and ſaide. Howe is it Aymergotte?
Who ſente for you to come hyder? ye wolde
diſhonour me? wherfore I take & areſt you
as my priſoner: otherwyſe I ſhulde nat ac-
quyte my ſelfe truely to the crowne of Fraũ-
ce/ nor to my lorde the duke of Berrey/ for ye
are a falſe traytour. ye haue broken the truce
wherto ye muſt anſwere. And for your cauſe
my lorde of Berrey hateth me deedly/ But
nowe I ſhall make my peace by you/ for I
ſhall delyuer you to hym/ outher quycke or
deed: with the whiche wordes Aymergotte
was ſore abaſſhed/ and ſaide. Howe ſo ſir?
I am youre colyn. Is this for certaynte ye
ſhewe me/ or do you ſpeke it to aſſaye me. I
am come hyder on the great truſt that I ha-
ue in you/ to ſhewe you my buſineſſe/ & you
to make me ſuch cruell chere and to gyue me
ſo harde wordes/ I haue great maruayle ther
of. I can nat tell quod Tourne myne what
ye wyll ſay/ but this that I haue ſaid I ſhall
fulfyll/ and ſo layde hãdes on hym. And his
ſeruauntes knowynge their maiſters plea-
ſure/ toke Aymergot without any defence ma
kyng/ for he was without weapen or armure
and alſo enclоſed in the caſtell. For any wor-
des that he coulde ſaye/ there he was taken &
yrons putte vpon his legges and layde in a
towre/ and ſure kepers about hym.

When this was done he cauſed the ca
ſtell gate to be ſhytte/ and toke the
keyes hym ſelfe. And commaunded
all his ſeruauntes on payne of their lyues/
none of them to be ſo hardy to go to the gate
without he ſent them thyder. His comaun-
dement was vpholde. Than he wrote letters
at his pleaſure/ dyrected to the duke of Ber-
rey: Certifyeng hym howe he hadde Aymer
got Marcell in priſone/ and that if he wolde
yeoue hym his yuell wyll/ he wolde delyuer
Aymergot in to his handes. Whan this let-
ter was written and ſealed/ he commaunded
one of his ſeruauntes/ ſuche as he truſted/
to go in to Fraunce to the duke of Berrey/ &
to delyuer hym his letter/ and to recõmende
hym lowly to hym/ and nat to retourne with
out an anſwere. The varlet toke the letter/
and mouted on a good horſe and ſo depted/ &
rode ſo longe that he came to Parys/ where
the duke of Berey was/ and there delyuered
to hym his maiſters letter. The duke toke ỹ
letter and reed it and emyled there at/ & ſayd
to ſuche knyghtes as were about hym. Sirs/
wyll ye

wyll ye here newe tidynges. Aymergot marcell is taken prisoner/ his owne cosyn germayne (Tourne myne hath taken hym: ꝑ knyghtes answered and sayd. Sir/ it is good tidynges for the countrey of Auuergne ⁊ of Lymosyn/ for they haue had of hym a longe season an yuell neyghbour. He hath done so moche yuell/ that if it please you he were worthy to peyse the gybet: he ought to haue none other raunsome nor pardon. I can nat saye ꝙ the duke what the kyng and his counsayle wyll saye therto/ I wyll speke with them therin. It was nat longe after but that the duke of Berrey toke a barge on the ryuer of Seyne and so came to the castell of Lour where the kyng and his counsaile was: he shewed there these newes/ he caused the letter that Tourne myne had sent hym to be reed/ of the whiche tidynges euery man was ioyfull/ and the lordes saide. it is well sene that suche maner of robbers and pilers can neuer cõe to a good ende. Than the duke of Berey was delyred to sende for hym by the seneschall of Auuergne/ and to be brought to Paris/ ⁊ to be put in ꝑ castell of saynt Antonies. Furthermore it was ordayned/ that (Tourne myne/ for the good seruice he hadde done to the crowne of Fraũce/ that all displeasures shulde be clene for gyuen hym: and therupon letters patentes were made ⁊ sent to hym by his seruaunt wherof he was well content/ and trusted on those letters. Than with in a shorte space after/ the seneschall of Auergne by a cõmission fro the duke of Berrey came to the castell of Tourne myne/ ⁊ there Aymergot Marcell was delyuered to hym/ wherof Aymergotte was sore aball hed/ whan he sawe hym selfe in the cõpany of his enemies. Wherto shulde I make lõge processe/ the seneschall caried hym with men of armes a long through the countrey/ and passed the ryuers of Seyne and Marewe/ by the bridge of Charenton/ and so fro thens to the castell of saynt Antonies. There the Vicount Darchy was charged with hym/ who as than was capitayne of that castell. He kepte hym nat long but ꝑ he was delyuered to the prouost of the Chastelet of Paris. And trewe it was/ Aymergot offred for his raunsome thyrty thousande frankes/ but it wolde nat be taken/ ꝑ he was answered the kyng was riche ynough. After that he was sente to the Chatelette/ ꝑ was nat long kepte there but that he was iuged to dye shamefully lyke a traytour to the Crowne of Fraunce. And soo on a daye he was caryed in a chariot to a place called the Halles/ and there sette on the pyllary. Than all his trespasses were reed before hym/ and by hym was sir Wyllyam of Trune who spake moche to hym. It was thought/ ꝑ it was to knowe the state of certayne capitayns in Auuergne/ and whether they were consenting to his dedes or nat. The lordes knewe well/ but I coude neuer haue knowlege therof. Thus he was executed. His heed stryken of and his body quartred/ and the quarters sette at euery gate of Paris. To this ende came Aymergotte Marcell. As of his wyfe and of his goodes/ I knewe nat what became further of them.

¶ Howe the chrysten lordes and the genowayes beyng in the yle of Coyny bres at ancre/ departed thens to go and laye siege to the stronge cytie of Aufryke in Barbary/ and howe they mayntayned the siege. Cap. ¶.lxxi.

Where as I haue spoken at length of the lyfe of Aymergot Marcell/ it was to fulfyll he this hystorie. for the condycions bothe of yuell and good/ ought to be alwayes treated in a hystory/ and specially whan it toucheth any great frate/ for ensample of other/ and to gyue matter and occasyon to do well: For if Aymergotte had lefte his lyfe in good vertues/ he had ben a man of great valure/ and byecause he dyde the cõtrary he came to an yuell ende. ¶ Nowe let vs leaue speking of hym/ ⁊ let vs retourne to the hyghe enterprise that the Chrysten knyghtes of Fraunce and other nacyons dyd in that season in the realme of Aufryke/ ⁊ I wyll begyn there as I lefte. The sayd lordes assembled in the yle of Coynybres. after they had passed the tempestes and parels in the Goulfe of Lyon: there they rested eche

eyed eche for other/for there were in the cyte of Iustyke a. xxx. thousande. In this yle of Conymbres they were a nyne dayes a refresshed them: and there the patrons of the galees sayde to the lordes. Sirs/we be in the lande nere approchyng to the marchesse of Iustyke/whider by the grace of god ye are purposed to go and laye siege. Wherefore it is behouable to take counsayle eche of other/howe we maye entre in to the hauen/& to take lande To saue our selfe it is best we sende forthe our spiell shyppes/called Brigandyns/and let vs tary in the mouthe of the hauyn/yᵗ firste day that we approche and all the nyght after/and the nexte morowe ge to take lande/by the grace of god at our leysar/& than lodge our selfes as nere the cyte as we maye/without the shotte of their artyllary/and let vs sette our crosbowes genouois in order/who shal be redy to defende all scrimysshes. And we suppose well that whan we shall take lādyng/ye haue here i your cōpanyes many yong squyers/who to enhaūce their honours wyll requyre to haue the order of knyghthode. Instructe them wisely and sweetly/howe they shall mentayne them selfes. And my lordes/knowe for trouthe/that all we seemen shall acquyte vs vnto you well and truely/and alwayes shewe you by what maner of order/we shall moost greue our enemyes. And we shall take payne and study howe the cyte of Iustyke may be won/for ofte tymes they haue done vs great dōmage. For on that coste it is the chiefe key of Barbary/and of the realmes that followeth. First the realme of Iustike/of Mallorques/and of Bougy. And if god of his grace wyll consent that we maye wyn this cyte of Iustyke/all the Sarazyns wyll trymble to the realme of Libye & Surey/so that all the worlde shall speke therof. And by the ayde of other christen realmes & yles marchyng nere to Iustyke/we shall alwayes be refresshed with vitayls and newe men/for this is a cōmon voiage/For euery man wyll desyre dayly to do dedes of armes/and specially on goddes enemyes: and thus in the cōclusion of their processe the patrons said. lordes/we say nat this by no presūpcion/nor by maner as to teche you what ye shuld do. but this that we haue sayd is all onely for loue & by humilyte/for ye be all noble men sage and valyant/& can better order euery thyng than we can deuyse and speke. Than the lorde of Coucy said. Sirs/your good counsayle & aduyse ought gretly to content vs/for we se nothyng therin but good. And sirs/be ye sure that we shall do nothyng without your cōsayle/for ye haue brought vs hyder to do dedes of armes.

Thus in the presence of the duke of Burbone/the lordes and other cōsayled togyder in the yle of Conymbres/how they myght approche ye strong towne of Iustyke. Whan euery thyng was well coupled and sette in good order by the admyrall and patrons of the galees/& that wynde and wether serued them/euery lorde entred in to his galee amōg their owne men hauyng great desyre to encounter with their enemyes the sarazyns. Than the trupetes blewe vp at their departyng. It was great pleasure to beholde their ores/howe they rowed aboute in the see/whiche was peasable/calme and fayre/so that in maner the see shewed her selfe that she had great desyre ye the christen men shulde come before the strong towne of Iustyke. The christen nauy was goodly to regarde & well ordred/and it was great beautie to se the baners and penons of lordes/with the armes and badges of ye lordes and other wauyng with the wynde/and shynyng against the sonne. And within an houre of noone/the christen men perceyued ye hyghtowres of the towne of Iustike/& the farder they sayled the nerer it shewed to their syghtes/wherfore euery man reioysed and good cause why/seyng all they desyred to cōber. They thought than in a maner their paynes released & their voyage accomplysshed. Thus as they approched to the entre of the realme of Iustyke/they cōmuned & deuysed among them selfe. and in lyke maner the sarazyns that were within the towne of Iustyke spake and deuysed and were sore abasshed/whan they sawe their enemyes approche with suche a nombre of sayles & sayde/that surely they were lykely to be besieged/Howbeit they thought their towne so strōg with towres and walles/& with artyllary/that therwith they reconforted and toke corage. And to geue warnyng to the countrey (as soone as they sawe their enemyes on the see/on the hyghe towres) They sowned Tymbres and ta-

and ta-

and tabours/ accordynge to their vsage / in suche wyse/ that the men abyde in the countrey vtterly togyder. Suche men of Barbary as had ben sente thyder by the kynge of Iuftyke/ and by the kynge of Thunes and Bougy/ whan they knewe of the Christen mennes comynge/ by reason of the noyse of the Tymbres and tabours/ to thentent that they shulde not entre to farre in to their countrey. Euery man tooke hede to his charge & sente certayne of their capitayns to the See syde/ to se the approchyng of ỹ Christen men/ and to beholde their dealyng that nyght. Also they prouyded to defende the towres and gates about the hauyn of Iuftyke/ to the entent that by their negligẽce the towne of Iuftyke shulde take no domage/ whiche towne was so strong/ that it was not lyghtly to take great hurte without longe syege. And I Iohan froyssart auctour of this cronycle/ bycause I was neuer in Iuftyke/ and bycause I myght truely wryte the maner and faccion of this enterpryse. Alwayes I desyred suche knyghtes and squyers as had ben at ỹ same voyage/ to enfourme me of euery thyng. And bycause I had ben often tymes in my dayes at Calays/ I demaunded also of suche there as had ben at the sayde voyage. And it was shewed me of a surete/ that the sarasyns amonge them selfes sayde/ howe the Christen men that were there were expert and subtyle men of armes. Wherupon an auncyent sarasyn sayd to all his company. Sirs/ all thynges consydred/ it is best that the Christen men at the begynnyng se not our strength and puissaunce / nor also we haue not men sufficyent to fyght with them/ but dayly men will come to vs. Wherfore I thynke it best to suffre them to take lande: they haue no hostes to ouer ron the countrey: they will not fyerde abrode/ but kepe togyder for feare of vs. The towne is stronge ynoughe and well prouyded / we nede not feare any assaut. The ayre is hote and will be hotter. They are lodged in the sonne and we in the shadowe: and they shall dayly waste their vitayles and shalbe without hope to recouer any newe/ and they lye here any long season. And we shall haue plente for vs be in our owne countrey. and they shall ofte tymes be awaked and scrimysshed withall to their domage and to our aduauntage. Lette vs not fyght with them/ for other wyse they can not discomfyte vs: They haue not ben vsed with the ayre of this countrey/ whiche is contrary to their nature. I thynke this the best waye.

¶ Of the fayeng of this auncient knyght sarasyn all other agreed. Than it was comaunded on payne of deth that no man shulde go to the see syde to scrymysshe with the Christen men without they were commanded/ but to kepe them selfe close in their lodgynges/ & suffre the christen men to take lande. This determynacion was by holde none durst breke it. And they sent a certayne of their archers in to the towne of Iuftyke/ to ayde to defende it. The Sarasyns shewed them selfes nothyng/ as though there had been no men in the countrey. The Christen men lodged all that night in the mouthe of the hauyn of Iuftyke/ and the nexte morynge the wether was fayre and clere / and the ayre in good temper/ and the sonne rose/ that it was pleasure to beholde. Than the Christen men began to fyerce/ and made redy / hauynge great desyre to approche the towne of Iuftyke and to take lande. Than trumpettes and claryons began to sowne in the Galleys and besselles / and made great noise: and about nyne of the clocke whan the christen men had taken a lytell refresshyng with drynke: than were they retorned & lyghted. And accordyng as they had apoynted before/ they sent in fyrst their lyght besselles called Bygandyns/ well furnysshed with artyllary. They entred in to the hauyn/ and after them came the armed Galees/ and the other shyppes of the flete in good order. and tournyng towardes the lande by the see syde/ there was a strong castell with hyghe towres/ and specially one towre whiche defended the see syde / and the lande also. And in this towre was a bricoll or an engyn whiche was natyrell/ but syll dyde cast great stones amonge the Christen mens shyppes. In lyke wyse in euery towre of the towne agaynst the See syde/ there were engynes to caste stones. the sarasyns had well prouyded for their towne for they loked euer longe before whanne they shulde be besieged. Whan the Christen men entred in to the hauen of Iuftyke to take lande/ it was a pleasaunt syght to beholde them ouer/ and to here the clarions and trumpettes sounde

tes founde so hyghe and clere/ dyuers knyghtes and valyaunt men of the realme of Fraūce/ spreve abrode that day their baners/ with dyuers other newe made knyghtes. The lorde Johan of Lignye was there fyrste made knight. He was of the countrey of Chauny. He was made by the handes of a colyn of his named sir Henry Dantoygne/ and there he spreve abrode fyrst his baner: The felde golde/ a bende of goules. And in his companye was his colyn germayne the lorde of Haurett in Chauny. Thus the lordes knyghtes and squyers with great delyte auaunced them/ & toke lande and lodged on the lande of their enemyes in the sight of the false sarazyns. on a wednisdaye in the euenyng of Mary Magdaleyne/ in the yere of our lorde god a thousande thre hundred & fourescore. And as they toke lāde they were lodged by their marshalles. The sarazyns that were within ỹ towne prayed moche the christen mēnes ordre: and bycause that the great Galees couldē nat aproche nere to the lande/ the men pssued out in bottes/ and toke lande and folowed the baner of our lady.

THe Sarazins that were within the towne/ and suche as were abrode in the countrey/ suffered the Christen men peasably to take lande/ for they sawe well it shulde nat be for their auauntage to haue fought with them at their landyng. The duke of Burbone who was as chefe of the christen armye there/ was lodged in the myddes of his company ryght honorably/ his baner displayed poudred full of flourt da lyces/ with an ymage of our Lady in the myddes/ and a scochynne with the armes of Burbone vnder the fete of the ymage. ¶ Fyrste on the ryght hande of the duke/ there was lodged his brother sir Guyllam of Clermoyle with his penon/ and the lorde of Bordenay with his baner/ and sir Helyon of Lygnacke with his penon/ the lorde of Course with a penon And than the Henowers with the standerde of the lorde Wyllyam of Heynaulte/ as than erle of Ostrenaunt/ cosyn germayne to the duke Aubert of Bauyers/ erle of Heynaulte. Of Hollande and of zelande/ the deuyse in ỹ standerde was a Heras golde/ standyng on a bell goules. There was the lorde of Haustrich with his baner/ the lorde of Ligny with his baner and than sir Phylyppe Dartoys erle of Ewe with baner/ the lorde of Wateleton with baner/ the lorde of Calam with penon/ the Seneschall of Ewe with penon/ the lorde of Lynpers with baner/ the lorde of Thune with baner/ the lorde of Ameuall with baner/ sir Water of Champenon with penon/ sir Johā of the Castell Morant with baner/ the marshall of Sanxeres brother with penon/ the lorde of Coucy with baner/ beste appoynted nexte the duke of Burbone/ sir Stephyne of Sanxere with penon. Than the Frēche kynges penon with his deuyce/ and therby was sir Johan of Barrops/ with the penon of his armes. Than sir Guyllam Morles with baner/ and the lorde of Lōgueuall with penon/ sir Johan of Rope with baner/ the lorde of Bourse with penon/ the Vycount Dausney with baner/ the lorde admyrall with baner/ called Johan of Vyen. ¶ Nowe here after foloweth they on the dukes lyfte hande.

ON the lyfte hande of Lopes duke of Burbone were lodged as foloweth. Fyrst the lorde of Julemont of Baupere/ and sir Johan of Beaufordе bastarde sonne to the duke of Lancastre/ with his baner displayed/ sir Johan Butler Englysshe with a penon/ sir Johan of Crama with a baner/ the Soudyche of Lestrade with penon sir Johan Harcourt with baner/ and ỹ lorde Beraulte erle of Clermount/ and the Dolphin of Auuergne with baner/ and sir Hugh Dolphyn his brother with penon/ the lorde of Berrencourt with penon/ the lorde Pyer Bullyer with baner/ the lorde of sayne Semere with baner/ the lorde of Launart marshall of the hoost with baner/ the lorde Berrague of Beausse with penon/ the lorde of Lourup with baner/ sir Gerarde of Lymosyn his brother with penon/ the lorde of sayne Germayne with baner/ And than the penon and standerde with the deuyce of the duke of Burgoyn/ sir Philyppe of Barre with baner/ sir Gessray of Charney with baner/ sir Lopes of Poicters with penon/ sir Robert of Calabre with penon/ the vycount of Ses with baner/ the lorde Montague with baner/ the lorde of Vyle Neufe with penon/ sir Wyllyam of Wolyne with penon/ the lorde of Lōgny with penon/ sir Ingorget Bamboyse with penon/ sir Jleyne of Chapayne with penon:

all these

all these baners and penons were sette in the front before ỳ towne of Iustrike/ and beside that a great nombre of other knyghtes and squyers rycht valyaunt men and of highe co rage/ were lodged abrode in the felde/ I can nat name them all/ also it wolde be to long a writyng. There were a fourtene thousande all gentylmen. It was a companye to do a great feate/ and to sustayne a great batayle/ if the sarazyns had come forthe to haue gyuen them batayle/ whiche they dyd nat/ for as on ỳ day they shewed no maner of defence/ but castyng out of their towres great stones.

When the Christen men were lodged as well as they myght/ a refresshed them selfes with suche as they had brought with them/ for they myght nat syn abrode in the countrey to gather bowes of trees to make with all their lodgynges/ for it had ben to their domage if they had aduen tured them selfe abrode. The lordes had ten tes and paulions that they had brought with them fro Geane. Thus they lodged in good order. the crosbowes of the genouoys were lodged on the wynges/ and closed in the lor des. They occupyed a great space of grounde for they were a great nombre/ all their prou syons were in the galees/ and all the day the marryners conueyed their stuffe to lande by bottes. And whan the christen pslies adrop pyng/ as Naples/ Cicyll/ and also the mayne landes/ as Puylle and Calabre. Whan they knewe howe the Christen men had besieged the strong castell of Iustryke/ they dyd what they coude to vitaple the christen army. some to haue aduantage therby/ and some for loue and affection that they had to the genouoys/ fro the pslie of Candie came to them the good maluesyes in great plenty/ without whiche comforte they coude nat longe haue endured/ for they were a great nombre/ and good drun kers and good eaters/ Howe be it their pro uisyons came nat alwayes to the in lyke man ner/ for somtyme they hap plentie and some season they wanted. ¶ Nowe I shall some what speke of the sarazyns as well as I haue done of the christen men/ as it is reason to con clude all thynges.

Trewe it was that they of Iustrike and of Barbary knewe longe before howe the gene wayes hadde thretned them/ and they lokyd for none other thyng/ but ỳ same were to be besieged/ as they were in dede. They hadde made prouysyon to resyst agaynst it. & whan the tidynges were syene abrode in the coun trey howe that the christen men were comen to Iustryke they were in dout/ for he is nat bold that feareth nat his enemyes thoughe they be neuer so fewe. Howe be it the sarazyns re puted the christen men right valyaunt & good men of warre/ wherfore they greatly doubted them: and to the entent to resyst & to defende the frontiers of their countreys/ they assem bled togyther of dyuers parties/ as they of the lande and seignorie of Iustrike and of the realme of Marocke/ and all ỳ realme of Bou gye/ the best men of warre in all those coun treis/ and suche as lest feared dethe. Thus they came and lodged on the landes against the christen men/ and they had behynde them an highe rode/ to thentent that they shulde receyue on that syde no damage by meanes of their enemyes or scrymysshes. These sara zyns lodged them selfes right sagely & surely they were of men of warre a. xxx. thousande good archers/ and ten thousande horse men and mo. Howe be it the Christen men coude neuer knowe surely what nombre they were for they supposed they had a greater nombre lodged in the woodes/ whiche myght rygh well be. For they were in their owne countr and might go and come in to their host at all houres without parell or domage at their owne plesyr. They were often tymes re freshed with new vitayle brought to them on camels and dromedaries. And the secode day that the christen men had been a lande/ in the morning at the brake of the day/ and that the same nyght the lorde Henry Dantepene had kepte the watche with a hundred men of armes and a thousande crosbowes gen wayes. The sarazyns came to awake and to scrymysshe with them/ whiche endured the space of two houres. In ỳ same many per sones of armes archoyes/ but nothing wolde pas vpon ỳ right hande to lande/ but were scrymysshed with enemyes of parties and ỳ truce/ and wolhaue. Dyuerse asseuryng the tydynges/ but wordes and langely resolued. The christen hoost then apparelled them as ỳ to the scrymysshe/ and some of the gentylmen of Europe came right howe to the pauylions of the

of the sarazyns/thereby to know a nother tyme their maner in shrympshynge. Thus the sarazyns vse me to theyr lodgynge and the crysten men in theyrs. And durynge the syege the crysten men were neuer in quyetnes nor rest/for neither sommynge nor mornynge the sarazyns wolde let them and shrympsh them. Amonge the sarazyns there was a yong knyght called Agadingo/ he rode alwayes well mounted on a crop and a lyght horse/it semed whan the horse ranne/ that he dyd flye in the ayre. The knyght semed to be a good man of armes by his dedes/he bare alwayes of blage thre fetherd dartes/ and ryght well he couthe handle them/and accordynge to theyr custome he was clene armed with a long whyte towell about his heed. His apparell was blacke/and his owne colours brounel and a good horseman. The crysten men sapposed they thought he dyd suche armes for the loue of some ponge lady of his countrey. And trewe it was that he loued entyerly the ponge doughter/ nowmed the lady Isalne/ she was enheryter to the realme of Thunys/after ye decease of the kynge her father. This Agadingo was sente to the duke of Dyfenne. I cannot tell if they were maryed togyther after or nat/ but it was shewed me that this knyght for loue of the sayd lady Isayne/ the syege dyd many feates of armes. The knyghtes of Faunce wolde fayne haue taken hym/ but they couthe neuer attape nor enclose him/his horse was so swyft and so redy to his hande ye alwaies he shaped.

The crysten men wolde gladly haue taken some sarazyns to the entente to haue knowen the state of the towne and countrey/but for all that to shrympshynge they couthe neuer gette none. The sarazyns toke good hede to them selfe/ and dyd pauese themselfe against the crosebowes genouoys/ they were nat so well armed as the crysten men it was nat their vsage/ nor they had no armoures nor metall to forge harneste withall/ for most comenly they lache vpon and steale/ they be vnarmed in lether/and beare targettes about their neckes couered and made of Cuyr boley of Cabadoce/ no weapon can perce it and the leather be nat hote. So that whan they come nere to their enemyes they cast their dartes all at ones. And whan the genouoys do shote at them/ than they couche themselfe lowe and coure them with their targes/ and whan the shotte is passe/than they caste agayne their fethered dartes. Thus the space of nyne weken durynge the syege they often tymes shrympshed/so that dyuers were hurte on bothe parties/ and specially suche as lyghtly without armement aduentured them selfe. thus the crysten men toke good hede to them selfe/ and so dyd the sarazyns on their parte/ and the lordes of Fraunce and suche other as were come thyder to their ayde/ gladly regarded the dealynge of the sarazyns. To saye the trouthe to lordes of astate and to gret men/ all newelties are dyspectable. And if the crysten men hadde pleasure to beholde them/the sarazyns had as great pleasure to regarde the maner of the crysten men/ amonge them there were ponge lusty knyghtes/ who had great pleasure to beholde the armure/ baners/standardes/and penons/ with rychesse and noblenesse that was amonge the crysten men/ and at nyght whan they were at their lodgynges they spake and deuysed. But as it was shewed me there was one thynge amonge them to be marueyled at/ I shall shewe you what.

The sarazyns within the towne of Iustyche had great marueyle by what tytell or instaunce ye the crysten men came thyder so strongly to make them warre. It was shewed me how they toke aduyse amonge them how to knowe the trouth therof/ and determyned to sende to the crysten men to knowe their myndes and so toke a truchman that couthe speke Italyan/ and commaunded hym to go to the crysten host/and to demaūde of them in what tytle and instaunce they are come to make vs warre/and why they be come so strongly in to the empyre of Barbary/ and in to the lande of Iustyche/and saye howe we haue in nothynge trespased them. of a trouth afore this tyme there hath ben warre betwene vs and the genouoys/ but as for that warre by reason ought nat to touche the crysten men of farre countreys of. as for the genouoys are our neyghbours/ they take of vs and we of them/ we haue ben auncyente enemyes and shall be/ excepte whan treuce is betwene vs. with this message the truchman departed/ and rode to the crysten army/ and mette fyrst with a genoway/ and shewed hym howe he was a messanger sent fro ye sarazyns to speke

with some lorde of Fraunce. The genoway had to name Anthony Warthy/ he was a centurpon of the crosbowes/ he brought this messanger to the duke of Burbon and to the lorde of Coucy/ who gladly herde hym speke/ and the wordes that he spake in his owne langage the centurpon genoway expowned theym in frenche. Whan this messanger had declared his message/ he desyred to haue an answere. The lordes of Fraunce sayde he shulde haue/ but first they wolde take aduyse in the mater. Than a. xii. of the greatest lordes dyd we togyder to counsayle in the duke of Burbons tent/ and concluded/ and so sent for the messanger/ and the genouoy made him his answere in al their names. Saying howe the tytle and quarell that they made warre in was/ bycause the sonne of god called Jesu christ and trewe pyte/ by their lyne and generacyon was put to deth and crucyfyed/ and bycause they had iudged their god to deth without tytell or reason/ therfore they wolde haue amendes/ and punysshe that trespace and false iudgement that they of their lawe had made/ and also bycause they beleued nat in the holy baptyme/ and are euer contrary to their faythe & lawe. nor also bycause they beleued nat in the vyrgyn Mary mother to Jhesu Cryst. For these causes and other they sayd they toke the sarazyns and all their seurte for their enemyes/ and sayd howe they wolde reuenge the dispytes that they had doone and dayly do to their god and cryssten faythe. With this answere the treuchman returned without parell or domage/ and shewed to his maysters all as ye haue herde. At this answere the sarazyns dyd nothinge but laugh/ and sayd howe that answere was no thynge reasonable/ for it was the iewes that put Christ to dethe/ and nat they. Thus the syege stylle endured/ euery party making good watche.

None after the sarazyns toke counsayle togyder/ and determyned that a seuen or eight dayes togyther they shulde suffre the cryssten men in reste/ and nat to make any maner of skrymysshe with them/ and than sodaynly on a nyght about the hour of mydnyght to sette on the hoost/ trustynge therby to do a great feate. As they ordayned so they dyd/ and an eyght dayes togyther they made no skrymysshe/ and on the .ix. day about mydnight they hastely armed them with such armure as they were accustomed to/ and so came close togyder without any noyse nere to the lodgynges of the cryssten men/ and had en trenched to haue doues greate fearers to haue entred/ narow ther the that their watche was on/ but on the other parte of the felde/ where there was no watche kept. They had come to their entente/ sauf god properly had nat ben agaynst them/ as thelynge of apparaunte myracles/ I shall shewe you howe.

As the sarazyns approched they sawe sodenly before them a great company of ladyes and damoselis/ all in whyte colour/ and one in especyall who in beauty without comparison excelled all the other/ and there was beyng before her a baner all of whyte and redd within. With this syght the sarazyns were so abaysshed that they lacked spyryte and force to go any further and so stode stylle/ and the ladyes before them. Also it was forewed me that the Genouoys had a great dogge in their company that they brought with theym/ but they knewe nat fro whence he came/ there was none that chalenged the dogge to be his/ whiche dogge dyd theym great scrupre/ for the sarazyns coulde neuer come so pryuely to skrymysshe/ but the dogge wolde bay and make suche bruyte that he wolde nat rest tyll such as were a slepe were awaked/ euery man knewe whan they herde the dogge baye/ that the sarazyns were comyng to skrymysshe with them/ wherby euer they apareiled them selfe to resyst them. The genouoys called the dogge our ladies dogge. The same season that the sarazyns stode stylle in a traunce/ and the ladyes before them this dogge was nat ydell/ but he made gret bruyte and tanne baying fyrst to the stande watche/ the lorde of Coucy and sir Henry Bantoygne kept the watche that nyght. Whan euery man herde this dogge make suche bruyte they rose and armed them redy/ for they knew well that the sarazyns dyd aproche to awake them. And trewe it was that the vyrgyn Mary and her company was before them/ to defende the cryssten men fro all parelles/ so that they toke that nyght no maner of domage/ for the sarazyns durst nat aproche/ but returned to their lodgynges. And after that the cryssten men toke better herde to their watche.

The straūge knightes and squiers such as were in the towne of Aufryke, and specially suche as had sene theyr ladyes were so abashed that they wyste not what to thinke, and the christen knyghtes and squyers that lay at the siege, studyed dayes and nyght how they might wynne the towne, and they within stuyed agayne howe to defende theyr towne. The season was hote and dyre, for the sonne was in his moost strength, as in the moneth of August, and the marches of Aufryke are tyght hote, by reason of the sand, and also they be nerer to the sonne than we be. And the wines that the christē men had came fro Pulle and Calabre, and they be hote and dyre, farre fro the nature of the frenche wines, wherby many fell into hoote feuers. And to conspyre ouerpynge to reason. I can not tell howe the frenchemen and other of lowe countreys could endure the payne of the hote and grose ayre that they found there, without refreshynge of good sweete, and freshe water, wherof they lacked there, yet they made fountaynes and welles in the sande, whych dydde them greate pleasure, for there they founde freshe water, howebeit oftentimes the water was ouer chafed by reason of the heate. And also oftentimes, they had great default of vytayles, and some season they had ynoughe coming fro Cicyll, and fro other plyes adioynyng Suche as wer hole, comforted them that were dyseased, and suche as had vytayles departed wyth them that lacked, otherwyse they coulde not haue endured, they helpe eche wyth other lyke brethrene and frendes.

The lord of Coucy specially had the chefe resort of gentlemen, he coulde behaue him selfe so swetely among them, much better than the duke of Burbone, for the duke was somwhat of an hyghe courage, proude, and presumptuous, nor spake not so swetely nor so humbly to knyghtes and squyers, and straungers as the lord of Coucy dyd, Moost comenly the duke of Burbon would sytte all daye wythout hys tente with his legges a crosse, and who so euer would speke with him, it behoued him to haue a procurer, and to make great reuerence. He considered not the state of poore men so well as the lord Coucy dyd wherfore he was more in the grace and loue of the people thenne the duke of Burbone was. And as it was shewed me by diuers knyghtes and squyers straungers, that in theyr opinions if the lorde Coucy had bene sourrayne capitayne alone, they had sped otherwyse than they dyd, for by reason of the pride of the duke of Burbon, many fraies and enterpryses were left vndone. It was the opinion of many, that he kepte him selfe sure ynough fro takyng.

Thys syege enduring before the towne of Aufryke, whyche contynued a thier score dayes and one, there was many scrymishes made on both partyes, abrode, and at the barryers of the towne. It was nedeful for the within to make good defence for against them was the flowre of chyualry and squyry. The knyghtes aduenturers sayde one to an other If we may get this towne with assault or otherwyse, than we maye refreshe our selues in it all the wynter, and at somer some great army of christen men wyll come hither for there by we and they shall haue a goodly entre into the realmes of Barbary, Aufryke, and Thunes, than other dyd saye, would to god it were so, for thanne suche as shoulde be lodged here should lye honourably, for daylye they should be redy to do dedes of armes. They that were within the towne doubted greatly the matter, wherfore they toke great payne to defend the selues. The great heate and brennynge of the sonne dyd put the christen men to great payne and trauayle, for whan they were in harnesse, by reason of the heat it brent the within theyr armure, Marualle it was that any scaped the death by reason of the heate, for about the myddes of August the ayre was sore corrupted. Beside that, there fel another marueylous accident, which if it had longe endured, they had bene all dead wythout stroke. So it was that by reason of the great heat, and corruption of the ayre, there fel among them suche a sorte of great flyes, that they couered all the hoost, for no man wyst how to defend him selfe, and euery day a weke together they encreased, where of euery man was abashed, howe be it by the grace of god and the byrgyn Mary to whom euery man auowed them selfe on a day dyd fynd a remedy. There fell suche an hayle and lyghtnyng fro heauen that it slewe all the said flies And by reason of this hail, ayre was brought into a good temperatenesse, wherby knyghtes and squyers were in a better estate than

they were before.

Who so euer had bene in the case of these chrysten men were in at that tyme, it behoued them to take euery thinge in gree, they could not haue had euery thyng with wishing nor at their deuyse. When any fell sicke it behoued them to be well kept, or els they should haue dyed, but they were come thyther with so good truste and affection that the purposed honourably to accomplisshe their voyage, which myght greatly supported them to endure paine and trauayle. All thinges that was meete for their complections they wanted, for nothing came to them out of the realme of Fraunce, thinges nor other, nor in Fraūce they knewe no more of them, sometime there came to the army fro the citye of Barcelone in the realme of Aragon in a galey, prouysyon wherin was mo ozenges and pomegarnettes than any other thyng. These fruites yet refreshed greatly the appetites of the chrysten men but whan so euer any galey came to them, it returned not agayne, what for encountring of the sarazins on the sea, as for to abide to se the conclusyon of the syege. The yong king of Cicill oftentimes sent to the host victayles, for he was the next chrysten prynce adioyning. If the sarazins had bene of that strength to haue stopped the passage of the sea from them, and to haue kept fro them such victayles and prouisions as came to the armye fro Pule, Calabre, Naples and Cicyll, the chrysten men had bene dead without any stroke stryking, but they made no warre but by land, nor also they be not of such puissaunce on the sea, nother in galeys nor in other vessels, as the Genoueys and Venecians be. For if the sarazyns be on the sea it is but by stealth, for they dare not abide the chrysten men, without they haue farre the aduauntage. A galey with chrysten men well armed wil discomfite foure galeys of sarazynes. True it is the Turkes are of greater force, and better men of armes than any other sect of the miscreantes contrary to our beleue but they dwel farre fro the land of Aufryke the Affrikaners can not be ayded by them. The Turkes had certayne knowledge howe the tawne of Aufryke was besyeged by the chrysten men, they wyshed them oftentimes there.

C.D.

The chrysten men studyed howe to do damage to the Sarasynes, in like wyse so dyd the sarazins agaynst the chrystē men, studyed howe to delyuer their country of them, and on a day Agadingor Boliferne, Madefer de Thunes, Belyns Madages, and Bishaopn of Bougy, with myners other sarasyns deuysed among them selues and sayde. Behoulde here the chrysten men our enemyes, who lye here before our faces in our owne country, and yet we can not vtterly be theim, and they are but a handful of men as to the regard of vs, howe be it we thynke herein they haue some great comforte of some valyaunte men out of their owne countreies for at no manner of scrymysshe that we can make, and for all that euer we can do, we can take neuer a prysoner, for yf we myght take one or two of their valyaunt men, it should be greatly to our honour and by them to knowe their demeanoure and puissaūce, and what they purpose to do. Sire quod Agadingor, let se what counsayle is best in this case, as for me, I am one of the yongest yet I speake fyrst, we are contente therwyth quod all the other, say what ye wyll.

Syrs quod he, I desyre greatlye to be some dede of armes with some chrysten man, and I thynke verely if I were matched wyth one to discomfyte him in playne batayle. And syr, yf ye will do so that we myght fynd a twenty or thirty valyaunt men among vs, I shall cause and I can the chrysten men to set forth as many, our quarell is good, for they haue no maner of reason to make warre agaynste vs, and I thynke what by reason of our iust quarell, and the good courage that we be of shall gyue vs the victorye. Then Madefer of Thunes answered and sayd. Syr in your wordes is no thynge but honour, to morowe if ye will ryde and be in the formest front of the batayle with a truchman with you, and make some token that ye would speake with some chrysten man and than do you so much as to offer the batayle of .x. of yours agaynst ten of theirs thus shall ye heare and se what they will answere and yet how so euer they answere we may be aduysed what we wyl do, at least the chrysten men shall repute vs the more valyante. They all agreed to that appoyntment, and so passed that nyght, the next morninge they rode forth to skrimisshe with their enemyes, and Agadingor formest, mounted on his good horse

and hys truchemā wyth hym. The day was clere and bright, and a lytell before the sonne ryssyng, the sarazyns set them selfe in ordre of batayle. The same nyght syr Wyllyam of Tremoyle had kept the watch on the cryssten parte, and wyth hym syr Guy hys brother. Than the sarazins apered before the cryssten men within a thre crosbowe shot, and Agad ingoz had hys truchmān by hym he rode on before all hys cōpany, and made token to speke wyth some cryssten man, on the on wynge of the felde. And a gentle squyer called Affreenal, seyng the sarazyn and the sygnes that he made, rode fro hys company and sayd. Syrs stande styll here, and I wyll go and speke wyth yonder sarazyn, and tozne agayne to you, he hath a truchman with hym, he cometh to speke wyth some man, thys squier came to ỳ sarazyn, who tarryed for hym. Than the truchman sayd, ye cryssten man, are a noble man and a man of armes, and redy to gyue answere to our demaunde? I am suche a one quod Affreenall, say what it pleace you, ye shalbe hard and ceresyed, Than quod the truchman, syr beholde her a gentleman and a noble man of ours, who demaundeth the batayle to syght wyth you hande to hande, and yf ye wyll haue mo, we shall synde to the nombze of syxe of ours redy to syght wyth, vi. of yours, and the quarell of our men shalbe thys. They say and wyll instyfye that our saythe is better and moze of valure than yours, for our saythe and lawe hath ben wzitten syth the begynnyng of the wozlde, and as for your lawe was fownd out by one man, whome the Iewes hanged on a crosse, Abyz quod Affreenall, speke no further of that matter, it appertaygneth not to the to speke oz dysput our sayth and law, but say to thys sarazyn, that he swere by hys sayth and beleue to afferm the batayl. and let hym bzyng to the nombze of. v. all gentlemen of name and armes, and within this thze houres I shall bzynge as many to fzy the mater, The truchman cryed these wozdes to the sarazyn, who be semyng had gret ioy to accept and afferme the batayle. Thus they toke thys entrepzyse by twen them twayn and departed, and returned to their owne copanyes, sybyages hee of came to syr Guy of Tremoyle and to syr Wyllyam hys brother. And whan they met wyth Affreenall they demaunded fro whence he came, and what he had don wyth the sarazyn. Than Affreenall shewed hym all the hole mater, and how that he had taken the batayle, wherof the sayd two knightes were ioyfull and sayd. Affreenall spake to other, for we two shall be of the nombze of the ten syr quod Affreenall, as god wyll so be it, I trust I shal synde ynowe that wolde be glad to syght wyth the sarazyn. Anon after Affreenall mette wyth the lozde of Thune, and shewed hym the aduenture, and demaunded if he wolde be one of the company The lozd of Thune wolde not refuse but gladly graunted to be one of their company. For euery one that Affreenall dyd gette, he myght haue goten a. C. if he hadde wolde. Syr Bon syquaut the yonger, syr Helyons of Lygnac, syr Johan Russell englysshe, syr Johan Harpedon, Alays Bodet, and Bochet, all these accepted the battayle, What the nombze of ten were accomplished euery man drewe to their lodgynge to arme them incontynent to do batayl. Whan thys was knowen in the hoost, and the knyghtes named that had taken on them that enterpzise. Than all other knyghtes and squyers sayd, a these ten knightes were bozne in a good houre, that haue founde thys day so happy and aduenture, wolde to god quod dyuers that we were of the nombze, Euery knyght and squyer was ioyfull of thys enterpzise, and greatly pzayse the aduenture, sauynge the gentle lozde of Coucy, who was not content ther wyth

The lozde of Thune was of the company of the lozde of coucy, he shewed hym the covenant he made wyth Affreenall, to be on of the ten to syght wyth ten sarazyns, as many as herde ther of pzayse greatly that aduenture but the lozde of Coucy spake against it and sayd Abyz ye yong people that knowe but lytell of the wozlde, but rather exalte a folysshe dede than a wyse dede. In thys enterpzise I cause no reason for dyuers causes, one is that ten knyghtes and squyers of our men, al gentlemen of name and blode, must syght agaynste as many sarazyns. How shall our men know whether they be gentlemen oz no if they syst they may serue against our men ten rybaudes oz barletes, and if they hap to be discomfyted we shal wyn nothynge but ten barletes, and yet we shall never neter to wyn the towne of Tofres, but we shal thus put our good men in aduen[illegible] aduentur they wyl set a bushmen, whan our ten men

men be in the felde to day for theyr men, they wyll close them round about, wherby we shall lese them and be somuch the febler. Ther I say quod the lorde of Coucy that Affrenal hath not wrought wysely in thys mater, for at the fyrst whan the sarazyn dyd defye hym he shuld than haue made a nother maner of answer than he dyd, he shulde haue sayd howe he was not the chefe hed of that army, but rather on of the poorest, and wher as ye blame our sayeth and by leue, ye are not mete to haue an answer made to you ther of by me, but if ye lyst I shall bryng you to the great lordes of our army, and I shal take you vnder my sauecondute, that ye shall go and return in sauegard and surtie, and ther ye shall here the lordes speke Thus Affrenall shuld haue leyd the sarazyn to the duke of Burbone and to the counsayle, and ther he shulde haue ben herd at leyser, and answered by good aduyse, such defyaunce in armes for such quarel ought not to passe without great delyberacyon of good counsayle. And than if the batayle had ben agred vnto by be, yet it wold haue ben knowen of them what men by name and surname shuld acomplysh the batayle, Ther vppon we to haue chosen other of our men for our honour and profyte, and therupon to haue had of the sarazyns surety and hostag, and they of vs, Thys had ben a more meterly maner to haue vsed, wherfore if thys treatte myght be withdrawen wyth reason, it shuld be well doone, and I wyll go and speke wyth the duke of Burbon, and to take counsayle wyth the lordes of the army, and to knowe what they wyll say therto thus the lord of Coucy departed fro the lord of Thune, and went to the Duke of Burbons tent wher all the barons assembled together to take counsayle in that mater. For all that the lord of of Coucy had sayde thefe wordes to the lord of, Thune, by maner of good counsayle and aduise yet for all that he lefte not but armed hym selfe, and so came forth wyth other of hys company redy to fyght wyth the sarazyns, and syr Guy of Tremoyle the formell knyght. Thus the lordes of Fraunce wer in counsayle in the duke of Burbons tent. Som thought thys defiaunce to vnreasonabl, and sufferyned greatly the wordes a gyuen of the lord Coucy, sayeng how it wer better to make a nother maner of treatt a some other as specyal the lord Loys erle of Arthoys, and syr Philyp of Bare sayd; Syth the armes be taken and accepted on our parte, it shulde be great blame to let it, wherfore in the name of god and our lady let our knyghtes and squyers furnysshe their enterprise, Thys purpose was holden and counseyned, but than all thynges consydred, it was thought for the best that all the hole host shulde be armed, and be in ordre of batayle, to thentent that if the sarazyns wold do any falsnesse they should be redy to resyst them, Thys was accomplysshed and euery man well armed, and dreswe into the felde in good ordre of batayle redy to fyght, the genoays crosebowes on the one syd, and the knyghtes and squiers on the other syd, euery lord vnder hys baner or penon of their armes, it was a goodly syght to beholde them, The chrysten men shewed well howe they had great desyre that the sarazyns shuld haue come and fought wyth them. And the ten crysten knyghtes and squyers were redy in the felde alone of from their company, abyd ynge for the ten sarazyns that shuld haue fought wyth them, but it semed well they had no wyll therto, for whan they sawe howe the chrysten men ordred them self and wer redy in batayle, they douted them and durst not come forwarde, for all that they were thre tymes as many men as the crysten men were. The sarasyns wolde often tymes come well mounted, and skrymysshe before the crysten mennes batayle, and than returne agayn, and this they dyd of pure malice to put the crysten men to payne and trauayle. Thys day was so hote with the sonne, that before nor after ther hadde ben no suche sene, so that they that wer most lusty and freshe wer so sore chafed in their harneste that they were nere ouerrome for faut of ayre and wynde. And alwayes the .x. crysten men tarved a parte for the ten sarazyns, but they nother sawe nor herd tydynges of any.

Than they abuysed to aproche the towne of Antyche and to assayle it, seynge they were all redy armed and redy in batayle. And all dayes kepe their honour the ten knightes kept the felde tyll it was nyght, there went to the assaut knyghtes and squyers, desyryng to do dedes of armes they were hot and sore chafed, and yet they trauayled them selfe more. And if the sarasyns had wel knowen what case the crysten men wer in they myght haue don them great domage and a repeled the siege. and by likelyhode to haue

had

dethe bytoxy,for the cryften men were so wery and so sore trauciled that they had but lytell strenghe,how be it they conquerred by assaut the fyrst wall of the towne wher no man dwelt.

Than the sarazyns retrayed in to the seconde fortresse,skrymshing wout taking of any great domag,but the cristen men had domag ynough for in skrymyshynge and assautyng they were in the heate of the sonne and in the dust of the sandes tyl it was nyght,wherby dyuers knyghtes and squiers toke their dethe,wherche was great pytye and domage,By the sayd occasyon there dyed,fyrst syr Wyllyam of Gayll,and syr Guyllharde dela Garde,syr Lyon Scalet, syr Guy de la saluest , syr Wyllyam of Staple,syr Wyllyam Guiset Geffrey of the chapel,the lord of Pyerbuffyer, the lord of Bonet, syr Robert of Hanges.syr Stephyn Sauuere, syr Aubert de la mot,syr Rayne of Champayn,syr Geffrey Freslers,syr Raf of Coulan,the lord of Bourbarbyen, syr Johan of Crey bastard,syr Bertram de Sauache,syr Pyncharde of Mozlayn syr Trystram hys brother syr Iyme of Coulay, syr Iyme of Tournay , syr Foukes of Stanfourt, syr Johan of Chatenas , all these were knyghtes,And ther dyed of squiers, Foucans of Liege, Johan of Illes. Blondelet of Aretan Johan de la Mote, Bounderis Hozdas of Roque,the lord of Belles,brother to Wyllyam Fon dragap, Water of Caufours , Johan Mozillen Pyer of Waines, Gyllot Villaine , Johan of Lound Johan Perper, Johan menne Johan of Lauay, and Wyllyam of Parke.

There dyed mo than a.lx knyghtes and squyers , wherche wysely to consyder was a greate losse. And if the lord of Coucy had ben beleued thys had not fortuned, for and they had kepte their lodgynges as they dyd before , they had receyued no suche domage.

The we after thys aduenture and domage that fell to the cryften men by reason of thys assaute before the towne of Autryk and that so many knyghtes and squyers wer dead,they mayntayned them selfe more wysely after than they dyd before,and contynued their siege a long season after.

Cap. C.lxxii.

OF thys forsayde aduenture the knyghtes and squyers of the hoste, were sore displeased and abashed: euery man bewayled hys frendes:at nyght they drew to theyr lodgynges and made greter watche than they had made before,for dout of the sarazyns: they passed that nyght without any other dommag. Of this aduenture the sarazyns knew nothing for yf they had knowen what case the Chriſten mē had,they might haue don thē great dōmag but al ways they feared the Chriſte men: They durst neuer aduentur to auaunce them selfe, but by skrimyshing and casting of their dartes. They that were moost renomed in armes of their partie was Igadyngor of Olyferne, for he loued the doughter of the kyng of Thunes, wherby he was most resshest and joly in dedes of armes. Thus contynued the sieg before the towne of Alurike. In the realme of Fraunce and England, and in such countreys as these knightes came fro, they herde no maner of tydynges of them,wherof their frendes wer sore abashed, and wyst not what to say nor thynke In dyuers places,both in England, Heynalte, and in Fraunce ther wer processyons made,to pray to god for the prosperite of these chriſten mē. Thē tencion of the chriſten mē beyng at the siege,was to abyd ther tyll they had conquerred the town of Alfrike.outher by force,famyne,or treatie The kyng of Cicyll wold gladly it had ben so, and so wold al other cryften yeles abiding for this town of Alfrike was their bitter enemye:and specially the genouoys tok great payne to serue the lordes to their pleasure, to thentent they shulde not be anoyed by reason of their long siege. To speke properly, it was a marueylous enterpryce,and came of an highe corage of the chriſten knightes and squyers,and specially the Frenchmen,who for all the losse of their knightes and squiers, and poueryte that they endured, yet they contynued styll the siege at their great costes and charge without ayde or comforte, And the genouoys who were the first setters on that enterpryce, began than to feynt and dissymule, for as the byuer ran than they wold haue ben glad to haue made a treatie with the sarazyns, and to haue left the knightes of Fraunce,Englande and other Chriſten countreys styll in

ſtrll in that buſyneſſe.as I ſhall ſhewe you her after.as it was ordeyned me. Nowe at thys preſent tyme lette vs leaue to ſpeke of thys ſiege of Antyoche,and ſpeke of a feſt that the kynge of England made the ſame ſeaſon in London.

Of a feeſt and iuſtes made by the kynge of England in London, whyle the Chriſten knyghtes and ſquyers were at the ſege before the towne of Antyoche agaynſt the ſarazyns. And howe thys feeſt was publiſh in diuers countreys and landes.

Cap. C.lxxiii.

I Shaue herde before in thys hyſtorye, what a feeſt was holden at Paris whan quene Iſabell of Fraunce made there here eſpyall entre,of the whych feeſt tydynges ſpreade abrode in to euery countre. Whan kynge Richarde of England and hys thre vncles, herynge of thys goodly feſt at Parys,by the reportes of ſuche knyghtes and ſquyers of their owne as hadde ben at the ſame feſt. Ordayned a great feſt to be holden at the cyte of Londone where there ſhulde be iuſtes and. lx.knyghtes to abyde all commers, and with them.lx.ladyes freſſh bely appareiled to kepe them company, and theſe knyghtes to iuſt two dayes beſyde ſonday,and the chalenge to begyn thenext ſonday after the feſt of ſaynt Mychaell. As than in the yere of our lorde god.M.C.C.C. foure ſcore and ten why che ſonday the ſayd. lx. knyghtes and.lx. ladyes at two of the clocke at after noon ſhulde yſſue oute of the towne of London, and ſo to come along the cytie through Chepe,and ſo to Smythfelde, and that daye.xii.knyghtes to be there redy to abyde all knyghtes ſtraungers ſuche as welde iuſt. Thys ſonday was called the ſonday of the feſt of chaleng. And on the monday next after, the ſayd.lx knyghtes to be in the ſame place redy to iuſt. and to abyde all commers curteſly to ron with rohettes,and to the beſt doer of the out ſyde ſhulde be gyuen hym for a prye a ryche crowne of golde, and the beſt doer of the in ſyde duely eramyned by the ladyes in the quens chambar, ſhulde haue for a prize a ryche gyrdell of golde. And the tueſday folowynge the knyghtes ſhulde be ageyne in the ſame place,and to abyde all maner of iquyers ſtraungers and other,ſuch as wold iuſt with robettes, and the beſt iuſter on the out ſyde,ſhulde haue for hys prize a courſer ſadled:and the chiefe doer of the in ſyde ſhould haue a faucon.the maner of this feſt was thus ordayned and deuyſed, and herauldes were charged to cry and publiſſh this feſt in England in Scotlande. in Almayne, in Flaunders.in Brabant. in Heynalt and in Fraunce, the heraldes departed ſome hider and ſame thyder Theſe tydynges ſpreed abrode into dyuers countreys. The herauldes had day and tyme ſuffycient. Knyghtes and ſquyers in dyuers countreis appareiled them ſelfes to be at thys feeſt, ſome to ſe the maner of Englande and ſome to iuſte. Whan theſe tydynges came in to Heynalt ſyr Wyllyam of Heynault erle of Oſtrevaunt who was yeu ge and lyberall, and deſyrous to iuſt. Purpoſed in hym ſelfe to go to the feſt in England,to ſe and to honour his cosyns, kyng Richarde of England and hys vncles, whom he had neuer ſene before, For he hadde great deſyre to be aquaynted with them, and deſyred other knyghtes and ſquyers to kepe hym company, and ſpecially the lord of Comegynes becauſe he was well acquaynted with Engliſſhmen, for he had ben dyuers tymes a monge them. Whan ſyr Wyllyam of Haynaulte purpoſed whyle he made hys prouyſyon to go in to Holland to ſe hys father Iubert, erle of Heynault Holland,and zeland,to the entent to ſpede with hym,and to take leaue to go in to England. He departed fro Quelnoy Haynault,and rode tyll he came to Haye in Holland,wher the erle hys father was at that tyme, and there he ſhewed hys father hys purpoſe that he was in to go in to England to ſe the countrey and hys cosyns, whom he had neuer ſen. Whan therle hys father anſwered and ſayd, Wyllyam my fayre ſon ye haue nothyng to do in Englang for nowe ye be by couenaunt of matryage alyed to the realme of Fraunce,and your iuſter to be matryed to the dube of Burgoyne, wherfore ye ought not to ſeke none other alyaunce. Dere father quod he, I wyll not go

into England to make any alyaunce. I do it but to feaſt and make myrth with my coſynes there whom as yet I neuer ſawe, a bycauſe the feaſte whyche ſhalbe holden at London, is publyſhed abrode. Wherfore ſith I am ſygnyfied therof & ſhould not go thyther, it ſhoulde be ſayd I were proude & preſumptuous, wherfore in the ſauynge of myne honoure, I will go thyther, therfore dere father I requyre you agree therto. Sonne quod he, do as ye lyſte but I thynke ſurely it were better that ye taryed at home. Whan the erle of Oſtrenaunte ſawe that his wordes contented not hys father. He would ſpeake no more therof, but fell in other communycacion. But he thought well enough what he would do. And ſo dayly ſente his prouiſion towardes Calays. Somegyne the herauld was ſent into England from the erle of Oſtrenaunt, to gyue knowledge to kyng Richard, and to his vncles, how that he would come honourably to his feaſte at London. Of thoſe tydynges the kyng and hys vncles were right ioyous, and gaue to the herald great giftes, whych after ſtode him in greate ſtede. For after in the ende of his dayes he fell blynde. I can not tell if goddo were diſpleaſed with him or not, in his dayes he ſpued marueilouſly, wherfore in his olde dayes and that he had loſt his ſight there were but few that were ſory therof. Thus the erle of Oſtrenaunt departed from Haye in Holland, and toke leaue of his father, and ſo retourned to Quenoye in Heynault to the countes his wyfe.

THyſe noble feaſte wherof I make mencyon was publyſhed and cryed in dyuers places, wherby knightes and ſquiers and other aduaunſed them ſelues to go thyther. The erle Walleran of ſayncte Poule, who as than had to wyfe kyng Richard of Englandes ſiſter. He prepared greatly to go into England and ſo came to Calys. And alſo the erle Oſtrenaunt departed fro Heynaule, well accompanyed with knyghtes and ſquiers, and ſo paſſed through the countrey of Arthoys, & came alſo to Calys, and there he found the erle of ſayncte Poule, and the ſhippes paſſagers of Douer were there redye, and whan the ſhyppes were charged and the wynd good, theſe lordes toke the ſea, howe be it as it was ſhewed me, and I thynke it true, that there is of ſaint Poul paſſed fyrſt into Englande, before the erle of Oſtrenaunt. And when he came to London he founde there the kynge, and his brother in lawe ſyr Iohn Holland, and other lordes and knyghtes of England, who receyued hym with great ioy, and demaunded of tydynges of the realme of Feaunce. He anſwered well and wyſely. Than the erle of Oſtrenaunte paſſed ouer on a thurſdaye and ſo came to Caunterbury, and on the friday he viſited ſainct Thomas ſhryne and offred there in the morowyng, and lay there all that daye, and the nexte daye rode to Rocheſter. And bicauſe he had ſo great a compayny a caryages, he rode but ſmall iourneyes, to eaſe his horſe. And on the ſondaye he rode to Dertford, and after dyner to London to be at the feaſt, whych began the ſame Sonday.

ON the ſondaye next after the feaſt of ſaynct Michael, thys feaſt and tryumphe ſhould begin, and that daye is to be done in Smythfeld, iuſtes called the chalege. So the ſame Sonday, about thre of the cloche at after noone, there iſſued out of the towre of Londō fyue thre ſcore courſers apparelled for the iuſtes, and on euery one a ſquyer of honour ryding a ſoft pace. Thē iſſued out therafter ladyes of honoure mounted on fayre palfreyes, ridinge on the one ſyde ryche apparelled and euery ladye led a knight with a cheyne of ſyluer, which knyghtes were apparelled to iuſt. Thus they came rydynge along the ſtretes of London, with great number of trumpettes and other mynſtrelles. And ſo came to Smythfelde where the quene of Englande, and other ladyes and damoiſels were ready in chambers richely adorned to ſe the iuſtes, and the kynge was with the quene. And when the ladyes that ledde the knyghtes were come to the place, they were taken down fro theyr palfreys & they mounted vp into chābers redy apparelled for them.

Than the ſquyers of honour alyghted fro the courſers, & the knightes in good ordre mounted on theym, than their helmes were ſette on and made redy at al poyntes. Than thyther came the erle of ſaynct Poule nobly accompanyed with knyghtes and ſquyers all armed with harneſſe, for the iuſtes to begynne the feaſte, wherby iuſtynges begaune, and

ſtrll in that buſyneſſe as I ſhall ſhewe you her after as it was enioyned me. ¶ Nowe at thys preſent tyme lette vs leaue to ſpeke of thys ſiege of Auſtryke, and ſpeke of a feſt that the kynge of Englande made the ſame ſeaſon in London.

¶Of a feeſt and iuſtes made by the kynge of Englande in London, whyle the Chriſten knyghtes and ſquyers were at the ſege before the towne of Auſtryke agaynſt the ſarazyns. And how thys feeſt was publiſh in diuers countreys and landes.

Cap. C.lxxiii.

YE haue herde before in thys hyſtorye, what a feeſt was holden at Paris whan quene Iſabell of Fraunce made there here eſpouſaylles, of the whych feeſt herayndes ſpredde abrode in to euery countre. ¶ Than kyng Richarde of Englande and hys thre vncles, herynge of thys goodly feſt at Parys, by the reporres of ſuche knyghtes and ſquyers of their owne as hadde ben at the ſame feſt. Ordayned a great feſt to be holden at the cyte of Londone where there ſhulde be iuſtes and. lx. knyghtes to abyde all commers, and with them. lx. ladyes freſſh bely apparelled to kepe them compayne, and theſe knyghtes to iuſt two dayes beſyde ſonday, and the chalenge to begyn the next ſonday after the feſt of ſaynt Michaell. As than in the yere of our lorde god. M.C.C.C. foure ſcore and ten whyche ſonday the ſayd. lx. knyghtes and. lx. ladyes at two of the clocke at after non ſhulde yſſue oute of the towne of London, and ſo to come along the cytte through Cheepe, and ſo to Smythfeld, and that daye. vi. knyghtes to be there redy to abyde all knyghtes herayngers ſuche as welde iuſt. Thys ſonday was called the ſonday of the feſt of chaleng. And on the mondap nert after, the ſayd. lx. knyghtes to be in the ſame place redy to iuſt, and to abyde all commers rurteſly to ron with rokettes, and to the beſt doer of the out ſyde ſhulde be gruen hym for a prre a ryche crowne of golde, and the beſt doer of the in ſyde lykely eramyned by the ladyes in the quene chaundre ſhulde haue for a prre a ryche gyrdell of golde. And the tueſday folowynge the knyghtes ſhoulde be a gayne in the ſame place, and to abyde all maner of ſquyers ſtraungers and other, ſuch as wold iuſt wyth rokettes, and the beſt iuſter on the out ſyde, ſhulde haue for hys prre a courſer ſadled: and the chiefe doer of the in syde ſhould haue a faucon, the maner of this feſt was thus ordayned and deuyſed, and herauldes were charged to cry and publiſh this feſt in England in Scotlande, in Almanye, in Flaunders, in Brabant, in Heynalt and in Fraunce, the herauldes departed ſome hider and ſame thyder Theſe tydynges ſpred abrode into dyuers coun treys. The herandes had day and tyme ſuffycient. Knyghtes and ſquyers in dyuers countreys apparelled them ſelfes to be at thys feeſt, ſome to ſe the maner of Englande and ſome to iuſt. Whan theſe tydynges came into Heynalt ſyr Wyllyam of Heynault erle of Oſtrevaunt who was yong gentyll and lyberall, and deſyrous to iuſt, purpoſed in hym ſelfe to go to the feſt in Englande, to ſe and to honour his coſyns, kyng Richarde of England and hys vncles, whom he had neuer ſene before, he hadde great deſyre to be aquaynted with them, and deſyred other knyghtes and ſquyers to kepe hym company, and ſpecially the lord of Comegynes becauſe he was well acquaynted with Engliſhmen, for he had ben dyuers tymes amonge them. Than ſyr Wyllyam of Haynaulte purpoſed whyle he made hys prouyſyon to go in to Holland to ſe hys father Iubert, erle of Heynault Holland, and Zeland, to the entent to ſpeke with hym, and to take leaue to go in to England. He departed fro Quelnoy Haynault, and rode tyll he came to Gaye in Holland, wher the erle hys father was at that tyme, and there he ſhewed hys father hys purpoſe that he was in to go in to England to ſe the countrey and hys coſyns, whom he had neuer ſen. Than therle hys father anſwered and ſayd, Wyllyam my ſayde ſon ye haue nothyng to do in England for now ye be by couenaunt of mariage alyed to the realme of Fraunce, and your ſuſter to be married to the duke of Burgoyne, wherfore ye ned not to ſeke none other alyaunce. Dere fathere quod he, I wyll not go

into England to make any alyaunce. I do it but to feaſt and make myrth with my coſynes there whom as yet I neuer ſawe, bycauſe the feaſte whyche ſhalbe holden at London is publyſhed abrode. Wherfore ſith I am ſygnyfied therof I ſhould not go thyther, it ſhoulde be ſayd I were proude & preſumptuous, wherfore in the ſauynge of myne honoure, I will go thyther, therfore dere father I requyre you agree therto. Sonne quod he, do as ye lyſte but I thynke ſurely it were better that ye taryed at home. When the erle of Oſtrenaunte ſawe that his wordes contented not hys father. He would ſpeake no more therof, but fell in other communycacion. But he thought well ynough what he would do. And ſo daily ſente his preuiſion towardes Calays. Somegyne the herauld was ſent into England from the erle of Oſtrenaunt, to gyue knowledge to kyng Richard, and to his vncles, how that he would come honourably to his feaſte at London. Of thoſe tydynges the kyng and hys vncles were right ioyous, and gaue to the herauld great giftes, whych after ſtoode him in greate ſtede. For after in the ende of his dayes he fell blynde. I can not tell if godde were diſpleaſed with him or not, in his dayes he lyued marueilouſly, wherfore in his olde dayes and that he had loſt his ſight there wer but few that were ſory therof. Thus the erle of Oſtrenaunt departed from Haye in Holland, and toke leaue of his father, and ſo retourned to Quenoye in Heynault to the counteſſe his wyfe.

THys noble feaſte whereof I make mencyon was publyſhed and eryed in dyuers places, whereby knightes and ſquiers and other aduaunſed them ſelues to go thyther. The erle Walleran of ſayncte Poule, who as than had to wyfe kyng Richard of Englandes ſiſter. He prepared greatly to go into England and ſo came to Calys. And alſo the erle Oſtrenaunt departed fro Heynault, well accompanyed with knyghtes and ſquiers, and ſo paſſed through the countrey of Arthoys, & came alſo to Calys, and there he found the erle of ſaynt Poule, and the ſhippes paſſagers of Douer were there redye, and when the ſhippes were charged and the wynd good, thaſe lordes take the ſea, howbe it as it was ſhewed me, and I thynke it true, that therle of ſaint Poul paſſed fyrſt into Englande, before the erle of Oſtrenaunt. And when he came to London he founde there the kynge, and his brother in lawe ſyr Iohn Holland, and other lordes and knyghtes of England, who receyued hym with great ioy, and demaunded of him tydynges of the realme of Fraunce. He anſwered well and wyſely. Than the erle of Oſtrenaunte paſſed ouer on a thurſdaye and ſo came to Caunterbury, and on the friday he viſited ſainct Thomas ſhryne and offred there in the morning, and lay there all that daye, and the nexte daye rode to Rocheſter. And bycauſe he had ſo great a compayny a caryages, he rode but ſmall iourneyes, to eaſe his hoſe. And on the ſondaye he rode to Dertford, and after dyner to London to be at the feaſt, whych began the ſame Sondaye.

ON the ſondaye next after the feaſt of ſaynct Michael, thys feaſt and tryumphe ſhould begin, and that daye is be done in Smythfield, iuſtes called the chalege. On the ſame Sondaye, about thre of the clocke at after noone, there iſſued out of the towre of Londō fyue fayre courſers apparelled for the iuſtes, and on euerye one a ſquyer of honour ryding a ſoft pace. Thē iſſued out therafter ladyes of honoure mounted on fayre palfreyes, ridinge on the one ſyde ryche apparcled, and euery lady led a knight with a cheyne of ſyluer, which knyghtes were apparelled to iuſt. Thus they came rydynge along the ſtretes of London, with great number of trumpettes and other mynſtrelles. And ſo came to Smythfielde where the quene of Englande, and other ladyes and damoiſels were redy in chambers richely adorned to ſe the iuſtes, and the kynge was with the quene. And when the ladyes that ledde the knyghtes were come to the place, they were taken down fro theyr palfreys & they mounted vp into thē bers redy apparelled for them. Than the ſquyers of honour alyghted fro the courſers, & the knightes in good order mounted on theym, than their helmes were ſette on and made redy at al poyntes. Than thyther came the erle of ſaynct Poule nobly accompanyed with knyghtes and ſquyers all armed with harneſſe, for the iuſtes to begynne the feaſte, whyche incontynente began, and

ſtyll in that buſyneſſe as I ſhall ſhewe you her
after as it was enioyned me. ¶ Nowe at thys
preſent tyme lette vs leaue to ſpeke of thys kyng
of Aufryke, and ſpeke of a feſt that the kynge
of Englande made the ſame ſeaſon in London.

¶ Of a feeſt and iuſtes made by the kynge of Englande in London, whyle the Chriſten knyghtes and ſquyers were at the ſege before the towne of Aufryke agaynſt the ſarazyns. And how thys feeſt was publiſh in diuers countreys and landes.

Cap. C.lxxiii.

YE haue herde before in thys hyſtoire, what a feeſt was holden at Paris whan quene Iſabell of Fraunce made there here eſpouſaylles, of the whych feeſt tydynges ſpredde abrode in to euery countre. Than kyng Richarde of Englande and hys thre vncles, herynge of thys goodly feeſt at Parys, by the reportes of ſuche knyghtes and ſquyers of their owne as hadde ben at the ſame feeſt. Ordayned a great feeſt to be holden at the cyte of Londone where there ſhulde be iuſtes and. lx. knyghtes to abyde all commers, and with them. lx. ladyes freſſh bely apparelled to kepe them compayne, and theſe knyghtes to iuſt two dayes beſyde ſondap, and the chalenge to begyn the next ſondap after the feeſt of ſaynt Michaell. As than in the yere of our lorde god. M. C. C. C. four ſcore and ten whyche ſondap the ſayd. lx. knyghtes and. lx. ladyes at two of the clocke after noon ſhuld yſſue oute of the towre of London, and ſo to come along the cytie through Cheepe, and ſo to Smythfeld, and that daye. xii. knyghtes to be there redy to abyde all knyghtes ſtraungers ſuche as wolde iuſt. Thys ſondap was called the ſondap of the feeſt of chaleng. And on the mondap next after, the ſayd. lx knyghtes to be in the ſame place redy to iuſt, and to abyde all commers curteſly to ron with roſettes, and to the beſt doer of the out ſyde ſhulde be gyuen hym for a pryce a ryche crowne of golde, and the beſt doer of the in ſyde ſhuld be crowned by the ladyes in the quene chambre, ſhulde haue for a price a ryche gyrdell of golde. And the tueſdap folowynge the knyghtes ſhoulde be a gayne in the ſame place, and to abyde all maner of ſquyers ſtraungers and other, ſuch as wold iuſt with robattes, and the beſt iuſter on the out ſyde, ſhulde haue for hys price a courſer ſadled: and the chiefe doer of the in ſyde ſhould haue a faucon, the maner of this feeſt was thus ordayned and deuyſed, and herauldes were charged to cryand publiſh this feeſt in England in Scotlande, in Almanye, in Flaunders, in Brabant, in Heynalt and in Fraunce, the heraldes departed ſome hyder and ſome thyder Theſe tydynges ſpredd abrode into dyuers countreys. The heraudes had day and tyme ſuffycient. Knyghtes and ſquyers in dyuers countreis apparelled them ſelfes to be at thys feeſt, ſome to ſe the maner of Englande and ſome to iuſte. Whan theſe tydynges came in to Heynalt ſyr Wyllyam of Heynault erle of Ottrenaunt who was yong and lyberall, and deſyrous to iuſt, purpoſed in hym ſelfe to go to the feeſt in Englande, to ſe and to honour his coſyns, kyng Richarde of Englande and hys vncles, whom he had neuer ſene before, he hadde great deſyre to be acquaynted with them, and deſyred other knyghtes and ſquyers to kepe hym company, and ſpecially the lord of Comegynes becauſe he was well acquaynted with Engliſhmen, for he had ben dyuers tymes a mongſt them. Than ſyr Wyllyam of Haynaulte purpoſed whyle he made hys prouyſyon to go in to Holland to ſe hys father Iuberte, erle of Heynault Holland, and zeland, to the entent to ſpeke with hym, and to take leaue to go in to England. He departed fro Quelnoy Haynault, and rode tyll he came to Haye in Holland, whet the erle hys father was at thatt̃ me, and there he ſhewed hys father hys purpoſe that he was in to go in to England to ſe the countrey and hys coſyns, whom he had neuer ſen. Than therle hys father anſwerd and ſayd. Wyllyam my ſayde ſon ye haue nothyng to do in England forwe we ye be by couenaunt of marryag alyed to the realme of Fraunce, and your iuſter to be marryed to the duke of Burgoyne, wherfore ye ned not to take ayme other ayraunce. Dere fathere quod he, I wyll not go

into England to make any alyaunce. I do it but to feaste and make myrth with my cosynes there whom as yet I never sawe, a bycause the feaste whyche shalbe holden at London is publyshed abrode. Wherfore sith I am sygnyfied therof: I thould not go thyther, it thoulde be sayd I were proude presumptuous, wherfore to thy sauynge of myne honoure, I will go thyther, therfore dere father I requyre you agree thereto. Sonne quod he, do as ye lyste but I thynke surely it were better that ye taryed at home. When the erle of Ostrenaunte sawe that his wordes contented not hys father, he would speake no more therof, but fell in other communycacion. But he thought well enough what he would do, and so dayly sente his prouysion towarden Calays. Somegynes the herauld was sent into England from the erle of Ostrenaunt, to gyue knowledge to kyng Richard, and to his uncles, how that he would come honourably to his feaste at London. Of those tydynges the kyng and hys uncles were right joyous, and gaue to the herald great giftes, whych after made him in greate stede. For after in the ende of his dayes he fell blynde. I can not tell if godde were displeased with him or not, in his dayes he lyued marueylously, wherfore in his olde dayes and that he had lost his sight there wer but few that were sory therof. Thus the erle of Ostrenaunt departed from Haye in Holland, and tobe leaue of his father, and so returned to Mastricht in Heynault to the countesse his wyfe.

THys noble feaste wherof I make mencyon was publyshed and cryed in dyuers places, whereby knightes and squiers and other abuaunsed them selues to go thyther. The erle Walleran of sayncte Poule, who as than had to wyfe kyng Richard of Englandes sister, he prepared greatlito go into England and so came to Calis. And also the erle Ostrenaunt departed fro Heynault, well accompanyed with knyghtes and squiers, and so passed through the countrey of Arthoys, & came also to Calys, and there he found the erle of sayncte Poule, and the shippes passagers of Douer were there readye, and when the shyppes were charged and the wynd good, these lordes take the sea, howe be it as it was shewed me, and I thynke it true, that therle of saint Poul passed fyrst into England, before the erle of Ostrenaunt. And when he came to London he founde there the kynge, and his brother in lawe sir John Holland, and other lordes and knyghtes of England, who receyued hym with great ioy, and demaunded of him tydynges of the realme of Fraunce. He answered wel and wysely. Than the erle of Ostrenaunte passed ouer on a thursdaye and so came to Caunterbury, and on the fryday he visited saint Thomas shryne and offered there in the mornyng, and lay there all that daye, and the nexte daye rode to Rochester. And because he had so great a compayny & carryages, he rode but smal iourneyes, to ease his horse. And on the sondaye he rode to Hertford, and after dyner to London to be at the feaste, whych began the same Sonday.

AS the sondaye next after the feast of sayncte Mychael, thys feaste and tryumphe thould begin, and that daye to be done at Smythfeld, iustes called the chalenge. So the same Sonday, about thre of the clocke at after noone, there issued out of the towre of London fyrst thre fayre courssers apparelled for the iustes, and on euerye one a squyer of honour riding a soft pase. Thē issued out three fayre ladyes of honoure mounted on fayre palfreyes, ridinge on the one syde ryche apparcled, and euery lady led a knight with a chayne of syluer, which knyghtes were apparelled to iust. Thus they came rydynge along the stretes of London, with great number of trumpettes and other mynstrelles. And so came to Smythfelde where the quene of Englande, and other ladyes and damoselz were ready in chambers richely adorned to se the iustes, and the kynge was with the quene. And when the ladyes that ledde the knyghtes were come to the place, they were taken down fro theyr palfreys & they mounted vp into chambers redy apparelled for them.

Than the squyers of honour alyghted fro the courssers, & the knightes in good order mounted on theyr, than their helmes were sette on and made redy at al poyntes. Than thyther came the erle of sayncte Poule nobly accompanyed with knyghtes and squyers all armed with harneis, for the iustes to begynne the feaste, whyche incontynente began, and

there iuſted all kynghtes ſtraungers ſuche as
wouldē and hadde leyſar, for the nyght came
on. Thus theſe iuſtes of chalenge began, and
contynued tyll it was nyght. Than kynghtes
and ladyes withdrew them ſelues, and the
Quene was ladyes before Poules in the by-
ſhoppes palace, and there was the ſupper pre-
pared, The ſame euenynge came the Erle of
Oſtrenaunt to the kynge, who was noblye re-
ceyued. Newes for theſe iuſtes on the ſondaye.
For the aunſwerer wythout. The erle Walle-
ran of ſaynct Poule had the pryce. and of the
chalengers the erle of Huntington. There
was goodly daunſyng in the queenes lodgyng
in the preſence of the kyng and his vncles, and
other barons of England and ladyes and da-
moſelles tyll it was daye, why che was cryed
for euery perſon to drawe to theyr lodgynges
except the kynge and the quene, who lay there
in the byſhoppes palayce, for there they lay al
the feaſtes and iuſtes durynge.

On the next day, whyche was Mon-
daye, ye myght haue ſene in dyuers
places of the cyte of London, ſquy-
ers and vadlettes going about with
harneſſe and dyuers of other buſineſſe of theyr
maſters. After noone kynge Richard came
to the place all armed ryche lye apparelled ac-
companyed with dukes, erles, lordes and
kynghtes. He was one of the inner party.
Than the quene well accompanyed with la-
dyes and damoſels came to the place where
the iuſtes ſhould be, and mounted into cham-
bers and ſcafolding ordayned for theim. Than
came into the felde the erle of Oſtrenaun's,
wel accompanied with knyghtes of his coun-
trey, and all were redy to iuſt. Than came
the erle of ſaynct Poule and other knyghtes
of Fraunce ſuch as would iuſt. Than began
the iuſtes, euery man payned hym ſelfe to get
honour. Some were ſtriken downe fro theyr
horſes. Theſe iuſtes contynued tyll it was
nere nyght. Than euery perſon drewe to their
lodgynges knyghtes and ladyes, and at the
houre of ſupper, euery man drewe to the court
There was a good ſupper and wel ordayned.
And as that daye the pryce was gruen to the
erle of Oſtrenaunte, for the beſte iuſter on the
beſt party, and well he deſerued it. The pryce
was gyuen him by the ladyes, lordes, and
rauldes, who were ordayned to be iudges.
And of the toner partye, a knyghte called
Hugh Spencer had the pryce.

The next day Tueſday, there was iuſtes
againe in the ſame place of all maner
of ſquyers, whyche endured tyll it was
nyght, in the preſence of the kynge, quene, lor-
des, and ladyes. Than euery man dyſcha-
theyr lodgynges as they hadde done the daye
before, and at ſupper they retourned to the bi-
ſhoppes palayce, where the kyng the Quene,
and the ladies were. Ther was a goodly and
a coſtly ſupper, and after great daunſyng, con-
tinuing all nyght. The Wenſday after theſe
they iuſted in ye ſame place. al maner of knyght
res and ſquyers ſuch as would iuſt, that was
a fore iuſtes, endurynge till nyght, and then
withdrue, and at the houre of ſupper they re-
forted where they ſupped before, The Thurſ-
day the kyng made a ſupper to all kynghtes
gentylmen ſtraungers and the quene to al la-
dyes and damoſelles. Than on the frydaye the
duke of Lancaſter made a dyner for al knyght
teg ſquyers ſtraungers, whych was a good
ly dyner, And on the Saturday the kyng and
all the lordes departed fro London, to Wind-
ſore, and the erle of Oſtrenaunt and the erle
of ſaynct Poule, with all other kynghtes and
ſquyers ſtraungers were deſyred to accompa-
ny the kyng, to Windſore, euery man rode, as
it was reaſon, to the caſtell of Windſore.
Than there began againe great feaſtes, with
dyners and ſuppers gyuen by the kynge, and
ſpecially the kyng dyd great honour to the erle
of Oſtrenaunt his coſyn, whych erle was de-
ſyred by the king and his vncles that he wold
be content to take on hym the order of the gar-
ter. The erle aunſwered how he would take
counſayle in that mater. Than he counſayled
with the lord of Comegines, and with Sire
Ihan of Vertan baſtard, who in no wyſe wold
diſcourage nor counſayle hym to refuſe the
order of the Garter. So he tooke it on hym.
whereof the Knyghtes and Squyers of
Fraunce, ſuch as were there had great mar-
ueyle, and murmured for therat amonge them
ſelfe, ſaying the erle of Oſtrenaunte therwith
well that his courage enclineth rather to be
Engliſhe than Frenche, when he taketh an

hym the ordre of the garter/ and weareth the kynges of Englandes deuyſe. He ſhewerly well purpoſeth nat the houſe of Fraunce/ nat the houſe of Burgoyne. The tyme wyll come he ſhall repent hym ſelfe. All thynges conſydred/ he knoweth nat what he hath done for he was welbeloued with the frenche kynge/ and with the duke of Thourayne his brothers/ and with all the blode royall/ in ſuche wyſe/ that whan he came to Parys or in to any other place to any of them/ they euer made hym more honour than any other of their coſyns. Thus theſe frenche men cuyll accuſed hym without cauſe/ for that he had done/ was nothyng contrary nor hurtfull to the realme of Fraunce/ nor to his coſyns nor frendes in Fraunce. For he thought none otherwyſe but honour and loue/ and to pleace his coſyns in Englande/ and to be thereby the rather a good meane betwene Fraūce and Englande/ if nede were. Nat the daye that he toke on hym the ordre of the garter/ and his othe/ euery man maye well vnderſtande that he made none alyaunce/ to do any preiudyce to the realme of Fraunce. For that he vyde/ was but for loue and good company/ howe be it/ no man canne let the enuyous to ſpeke yuell.

Whan they had daūced and ſported them a certayne ſpace in the caſtell of Wynſore/ and that the kyng hadde gyuen many fayre gyftes to ỹ knightes and ſquyers of honour/ of the realme of Fraunce and Heynaulte/ and ſpecially to the ponge erle of Oſtrenaunt. Than euery man toke leaue of the kynge and of the quene/ and of other ladyes and damoſelles/ and of the kynges vncles. Thaſſe the erle of ſaynt Poule and the frenche men/ and the Henowayes and almaygnes departed. Thus ended this great feeſt in the cyte of London/ and euery man went to their owne. Than it fortuned/ as a none brute renneth farre of. The frenche kynge/ his brother/ and his vncles/ were enfourmed by ſuche as hadde ben in Englande of the ſayde feeſt/ of euery thyng that hadde been done and ſayd/ nothynge was forgotten/ but rather more putte to/ in the exaltyng of yuell dedes/ than fortheryng of good dedes. It was ſhewed the kyng playnly/ howe the erle of Oſtrenaunt had ben in Englande and taken great payne to exalte and to do honoure to the Engliſhe men/ and in helpynge forwarde the feeſt holden at London. and howe he hadde the chiefe praiſe and honoure of the ruſtes aboue all other ſtraungers. and howe he had ſpoken ſo fayre to the Engliſh men/ that he was become the kynge or Englandes man/ and had made ſeruyce and alyaunce with hym. And taken on hym the ordre of the Garter/ in the chapell of ſaynt George in Wyndſore/ whiche ordre was fyrſte ſtabliſſhed by kynge Edwarde the thirde/ and his ſonne prince of Wales. And howe that no man myght entre in to that confrary or company/ without he make ſeruyaunt or othe/ neuer to beare armoure agaynſte the crowne of Englande. Whiche prompte they ſayd/ the erle of Oſtrenaunt had made without any reſeruacyon. With theſe tidynges/ the frenche kynge/ his brother/ and his vncles were ſore troubled/ and greuouſly diſpleaſed with the erle of Oſtrenaunt. Than the frenche kyng ſayde. Lo ſirs/ ye maye ſe what it is to do for hym. It is nat yet a yere paſte/ ſythe he deſyred me that his brother myght be biſſhoppe of Cambrey. And by theſe tidynges that gyfte were rather preiudyciall to the realme of Fraunce/ than auauncement. It hadde been better we had gyuen it to oure coſyn of ſaynt Poule. The Henowayes dyd neuer good to vs/ nor neuer wyll: for they be proude/ preſumptuous/ and to fierce. Alwayes they haue owed better good wyll to the Engliſh men than to vs/ but a daye ſhall come they ſhall repent them. We wyll ſende to the erle of Oſtrenaunt/ cōmaūdynge hym to come to vs/ to do vs homage for the coūtie of Oſtrenaunt/ or els we ſhall put hym fro it/ and annexe it to oure realme. They of his counſayle anſwered and ſayde. Sir/ ye haue well deuyſed/ lette it be done as ye haue ſayde. It maye well be thought that the duke of Burgoyne/ whoſe doughter the erle of Oſtrenaunt had to his wyfe/ was nothynge content with theſe tidynges/ for alwayes he had auaunſed his ſonne of Oſtrenaunt/ towardes the kyng and his coūſaile. This mater was nat forgotten/ but incontinent the frenche kyng wrote ſharpe letters to the erle of Oſtrenaunt/ who was at queſnoy

in Heynaulte/ cõmaundyng hym to come to Parys to do his homage / before the kynge and the other peeres of Fraunce/ for the counte of Ostrenaut/ or els the kyng wolde take it fro hym/ and make hym warre. Whan the erle had well ouerlene these letters/ and parceyued howe that the Frenche kyng and his counsayle were displeased with hym/ to make his answere he assembled his counsayle. as the lorde of Fountayns/ the lorde of Gomegynes/ sir Wyllyam of Hermts/ the lorde of Trasslegnies/ the bayly of Heynaulte/ the lorde of Sancelles/ sir Rase of Wontegny/ the abbot of Crispyne/ Johan Suibart/ Jaquemart Barrier of Valencennes. Thise wyssemen counsayled togyder/ what answere might be made to the kynges letters. There were many reasons alleged/ at last all thynges consydred/ they thought it for the best to wryte to the Frenche kynge and to his counsayle/ to take a daye to answere clerely to all maner of demaundes/ by the mouthe of certayne credyble psons/ and none by writyng. And in the meane season they sente certayne notable personages to the erle of Heynaulte and duke Aubert of Holãde to haue their cõsayles what answere to make. Thus they dyde. They wrote swetely and courteysly to the kynge and to his counsayle/ so that with those fyrst letters the kyng and his cõsayle was well content. Than therle and his cõsayle sent in to Hollande the lorde of Trasslegnies and the lorde of Sancelles/ Johan Semart and Jaques Barrier. They rode to the erle of Heynault/ and shewed hym the state of the countie of Heynault/ and the letters that the Frenche kyng hadde sent to his sonne the erle of Ostrenaunt. the erle of Heynaulte had marueyle of that mater and said. Sirs/ I thought neuer otherwyse/ but that it shulde come thus to passe. Wyllyam my sone had nothyng to do to go in to Englãde. I haue delyuered hym the rule and gouernaunce of the cõtie of Heynaulte. he might haue done & bled hym selfe/ accordyng to the counsayle of the countrey. Sirs/ I shall tell you what ye shall do. Go to my fayre cosyn the duke of Burgoyn/ for it lyeth well in his power to regarde and to sette an order in all thynges demaunded by the Frenche kynge/ I canne gyue you no better counsayle. With this answere they departed out of Hollande and came in to Heynaulte/ and there shewed what answere they had/ wherwith the erle & his counsayle were content. There was assigned to go in to Fraũce to the duke of Burgoyne/ the lorde of Trasslegnies/ sir Wyllyam of Hermpes/ sir Rase of Wontigny/ Johan Semart/ and Jaques Barrier. To shewe and declare all the procesle and sute that they made at the Frenche courte/ shulde be more longe to relate. But finally all thynges concluded/ for all the duke of Burgoyne could do/ there was non other remedy/ but that the erle of Ostrenaunt must come personally to Parys/ and to knowe his homage due to the Frenche kyng for the countie of Ostrenaunt or els surely to haue warre. The lorde of Coucy & sir Oliuer of Clysson toke great payne for the erles sake/ but sir Johan Hercler and the lorde de la Ryuer labored on the contrarye syde/ as moche as they might. Nowe let vs leaue to speke any more of this mater/ and retourne to speke of the lordes & knyghtes of Fraunce/ who were at the siege before the strong towne of Iuffyne agaynst the sarasyns.

Howe and by what incydent the siege was reysed before the towne of Iuffyne/ and by what occasyon and howe euery man retourned to their owne countreis. Cap. cclxxiii.

We haue herde here before/ howe the christen men had besieged the stronge towne of Iuffyne/ by lande & by see: Settyng all their ententes/ howe to conquere it/ for they thought if they might wynne it/ the bruyt therof shulde sounde/ to their great honours and prayse. and howe they myght there kepe them selfe togyder/ and to resyst agaynst their enemyes: sayenge howe they shulde alwayes haue comforte of the Christen men/ and specially of the Frenche kyng/ who was yong and desyrous of deedes of armes/ consydryng howe he had truce with the Englysshmen for two yeres to cy-

The fara

the Saracyns feared the ſame/ wherfore dayly they made prouyſyon for the towne / and re-freſhed alwaies their towne with newe freſhe men/hardy aduenturers/accordyng to their vſage. Thus the ſeaſon paſſed on / and after the chriſten men hadde ſuffred the great loſſe of their companyons with lyttell wynnynge or auauntage on their partye/ all their hole hooſt were in a mance diſcomforted/for they coulde nat ſe how we to be reuenged. Than many of them began to murmure / ſayenge we lye here all in vayne / as for the ſkrymyſhes that we make/therby ſhall we neuer wyn the Towne of Auſtrycke / for if we ſlee any of them/ for eche of them they wyll gette agayne ten other. They be in their owne countrey/ they haue vytayles and prouyſyons at their pleaſure/ and that we haue is with great daunger and parell. What ſhall we thynke to do/ if we lye here all this wynter / longe and colde nyghtes/ we ſhalbe moſt ſounded and feeblen to bedde. Thus we ſhall be in a herde caſe by dyuers wayes. firſt in wynter no man dare take the ſee for the cruell and tyrryble wyndes and tempeſtes of the ſee/for the ſees and tempeſtes are more fierſer in wynter than in ſomer/ and if we ſhulde lacke vytayles but eight dayes to gyther / and that the ſee wolde ſuffre none to come to vs/we were all deed and loſt without remedy. Secondly though it were ſo that we had vytayles and all thynges neceſſary without daunger/yet how we coulde our watche endure the payne and trauayle contynually to watche euery night.the parell and aduentures is ouer herde for vs to beare/for our enemyes whan be in their owne countrey/and knowe the countrey/ may come by nyght and aſſayle vs to their great auauntage / and do vs great domage/as they haue done all redy. Thyrdly if for faute of good ayre of theſe freſhe meates / wherwith we haue been noryſſhed / that moralyte hap to fall in our hooſt/ we ſhall dye euery man fro other/ for we haue no remedy to reſiſt agaynſt it. Furthermore if the genoays turne agaynſt vs/ which are rude people and traytours/ they may be ayded fro me entre in to their ſhyppes/ alſo leue vs here to pay for the ſcotte. All theſe doutes are to be conſydred by our capytaynes who lye at their eaſe / and regarde nat the caſe we be in. and alſo ſome of the genoays dared nat to ſpeke/and ſayd in ſayenge to the crytben men. What men of armes be ye frenchemen/whan we departed fro Genoe we thought that within fyftene dayes that ye had layen at ſiege before the towne of Auſtrycke/ ye ſhulde haue conquered it/ and now we haue ben here more thanne two monthes/ and as yet we haue done nothyng/ as for ſuche aſſautes and ſkrymyſhes as ye make/the towne neuertheleſſe to feare this yere/nor yet the nexte by this maner of meanes ye ſhall neuer conquere this realme of Auſtrycke nor yet of Hungry. This communyng ſpred ſo abrode in the hooſt/that it came to the knowlege of the great lordes and capytaynes of the armye/ and ſpecyally the lorde of Coucy/ who was ſage and diſcrete/ and to whoſe counſayle the chefe parte of the hooſt enclyned euer vnto. He layd to hym ſelfe and conſydred how we all theſe doutes were greatly to be feared / and to the entente to ordayne haſtely remedy/he aſſembled ſecretly all the great lordes of the hooſt togyder in counſayle/ bycauſe wynter approched. This counſayle was kept in the duke of Burbons tente/ and the concluſyon was to dyſlodge for that ſeaſone/ and euery man to retourne the ſame way as they came/the lordes prepared ſecretly for this . than the patrons of the galees were ſente for/ and their purpoſe was ſhewed vnto them/and they wyſt nat what to ſay to the contrary/ at laſte they ſayde. Wyl lordes take no doute nor ſuſpecte in vs/ we haue made you promeſſe/wherfore we wyll acquyte vs truely to you/ for if we wolde haue enclyned to the treaties of the aſſyrians/they wolde gaue deſyred to haue had peace with vs/ but we wolde neuer gyue herynge to them. we wyll kepe our layethe to you/ſyth we haue promyſed ſo to do. Sirs quod the lorde of Coucy/we repute you for good and true/ and valyaunt men/ but we haue conſydred yours thynges/ wynter approcheth/ and we are deſtytute of vytayles & other prouyſyons. By the grace of god we ones retourned in to the realme of Fraunce/ we ſhall ſo enfourme the kynge/ who is yonge and luſty and deſyrous to knowe the maner of theſe matches/ and ſeynge that he hath treuce with the engliſſhe men/ we thynke ſmall counſaylynge wyll cauſe hym to come hyther with a puyſſaunce royall/as well to ayde the king of Cicyll/ as to make ſome conqueſt vpon the ſarayns/ wherfore ſyrs/ we requyre you make redy your galees and all other veſſels/ for we wyll departe within ſhorte dayes. The genoays

we shall gladly make a voyage with an army vpon all tho se parties) to exalte the crysten fayth/and to confounde the infydels/and to acquyte the dedes of our predecessours/as kyng Philyp and kinge Johan/for they bothe eche after other tooke on them the crosse/to haue gone to the holy lande/and they had gone thyder if ỳ warres had nat fallen in their realme. In lyke wyse we wolde gladly make suche a voyage. Thus the Frenche kynge comuned with these lordes/ and so the day passed/ and lytell and lytell men came home fro their voyage/and the kynge hilde hym selfe that season most comenly at Parys/ somtyme at ỳ castell of Lowre/ and a nother tyme in the howse of sayut Powle/ where the quene most comenly laye. So it fell in the same season aboute the feest of sayut Andrewe/ and that all knyghtes and squyers were retourned fro their voyage into Barbary/wherof all ỳ worlde spake.than in the frenche kynges court there was a moyan moued for a newe tourney to be made thyder. And bycause that the frenche kynge had great affection to dedes of armes/he was counsayled and exorted therto/and it was sayde to hym. Syr ye haue deuocyon and great ymaginacion to go ouer the see/ to fyght agaynst the infydels/ and to conquerre the holy lande. That is trewe quod the kynge/ my thought nyght and day is on none other thyng.and as I was enformed/it was ỳ lorde of Tremoyle and sir Johan Mercier that had these wordes to the king/for they owed their fauour to pope Clement beynge at Auignon. and loke what they two sayd ỳ kyng wolde agree to them/for they were most specially in fauour. Than they sayd to the kynge. Syr ye can nat with good conscience take on you this voyage/ without first the church be all one. syr begyn first at the heed/than your enterprise shall take good conclusyon. Why quod the kynge where wolde ye haue me to begyn. Syr quod they at this present tyme ye be nat charged with any great busynesse/ye haue treuce with the englysshmen for a longe space. wherfore syr if it please you this peace duryng/ ye myght make a goodly voyage. and syr we can se no better nor more honourable a voyage for you/thanne to go to Rome with a great puyssaunce of men of armes/ and pull downe and dystroy that antepape/whome the romayns by force hath created and set in the seate cathedrall of sayut Peter/if ye will ye maye well accomplysshe this voyage/and we suppose ye coud nat passe your tyme more honorably. And syr/ ye maye well know that if this antepape and his cardynals knowe ones ỳ ye be mynded to come on them with an army/they will yelde them selfe at the mercy. The kynge remembred hym selfe a lytell and sayd/ howbe he wolde do as they had deuysed/for surely he sayd he was moche bounde to pope Clement/ for the yere past he had ben at Auignon/ where as the pope and his cardynals made hym ryght honourable chere/ and had gyuen more than was demaunded/both to hym selfe/to his brother/ and to his vncles/ wherfore the kynge sayd it hadde deserued to haue some recompence.and also at his departure fro Auignon / he had promysed the pope to helpe ỳ to assyst hym in his quarell. At that season there was at Parys with the kyng/the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne.than it was agreed and concluded that the nexte Marche after the kynge shulde departe fro Parys/and take the way to wardes Sauoy and Lombardy/ and the erle of Sauoy to sende his cosyn Germayne with hym/ and the kynge to haue vnder his charge the duke of Tourayne his brother with four thousande speares/ and the duke of Burgoyne with two thousande speares/ and the duke of Berrey two thousãde/the constable of Fraunce two thousande speares/ with the bretons / raintoners and lowe marches/the duke of Burbon a thousãde speares/ the lorde of sayut Poll and the lorde of Coucy a thousande speares/ ỳ all these men of armes to be payed in hande for thre monethes / and so fro terme to terme. And whan these ordynances were knowen in Auignon/pope Clement and his cardynals were greatly retorsed/and thought in a maner their enterprise atcheued. Also the kinge was counsayled nat to leaue the duke of Bretayne behynde hym/ but to sende and to desyre hym to prepare hym selfe to go with him in this voyage. The kyng wrote notably to hym/ and sent his letters by a man of honour an officer of armes/ signyfyenge the duke in his letters the state of this voyage. Whan the duke had red these letters he turned hym selfe asmyled/and called to hym the lorde of Mountboucher and sayd. Syr harke and regarde well what the frenche kyng hath written to me/ he hath enterprised to departe this nexte Marche with a great puissaunce to go to

Rome

wycke and to distroy suche as take parte with your Froyssart. As god helpe me his tourney shall not be to nothynge/ for in more parte he that dissendeth it arte to his myschiefe than it can well spryng. I thynke he will leue some his lyfe behynde. And also he dyd sende me to go with hym with two thousande speares/ but by my feyth I will none of hym/ I owe hym to do and I will write to hym to pay/ by cause he shall be founden and thewe hym howe it he go in this voyage he shall not go without me/ trying my selfe with hym to haue my company/ howe be it I wyll not accuse hym of any vice for all the kyng hath put to me and my brother/ we shall there be done it that behalfe. The duke of Bere sente diuers goodly letters and sobre wordes to the kynge and the officers of armes returned with them to Parys/ and delyuered them to the kynge/ who redde them and was well content with the answeres.

Of the Englysshe knyghtes that were sente to Parys to the frenche kynge/ fro the kynge of Englande and his vncles to treate for a peace. Cap. C.xxv.

The wyll and purpose of the frenche kynge none wolde breke/ for it pleased greatly all the knyghtes & squyers of Fraunce/ by cause they wyll nat where better to employ their seruyce/ and euery man prepared towardes that voyage/ and namely the clergy of all the prouynces of the realme/ ordayned and graunted a tayle/ to sende at their costes and chargis men of warre with the kynge. Howe be it this voyage tourned to nothynge/ as the duke of Bretayne had sayd before/ and I shall shewe you by what incidence. About ye feest of Candelmas came other tydynges to the frenche kyng and to his counsayle/ whiche they loked nothynge for. Certayne of the kynge of Englandes counsayle/ and suche as were of his priuy chambre/ were sent nobly to Parys to the frenche kyng/ and they that were chefe of this legacyon were syr Thomas Percy/ syr Lorys Thyfforde/ and sir Robert Bryquet/ with dyuers other knyghtes in their company/ but I here as than no mo named. Whan these two knyghtes were come to Parys to hym/ than the frenche kyng was desyrous to knowe what they meane/ that the kynge of Englande hys sente to hastle vp of his counsayle to hym. These knyghtes of Englande/ syr Thomas Percy and other/ alyghted at Parys in the streate called the Cruelle/ at the sygne of the crane. The frenche kynge as than lay in the castell of Louure/ his brother the duke of Tourayne with hym/ and his other two vncles in their lodgynges in the cyte/ and the constable syr Oliuer Clysson. It was were hyde noone whan the englysshe men came to Parys/ and they kept their lodgynge all that day & nyght after/ and the next day about nyne of ye clocke they lept on their horses ryght honorably and rode to the castell of Louure to the kyng/ where he with his brother and vncles/ the erle of saint Pol/ the lorde of Coucy/ the constable of Fraunce/ sir Johan of Vyen/ sir Guy de la Tremoyle with dyuers other barons of Fraunce were redy to receyue the englysshe ambassadours/ who alyghted at ye gate and entred in/ and there receyued them the lorde de la Riuere/ syr Johan Mercepe/ sir Lyon of Lignach/ sir Peter Villers/ sir William of Tremoyle/ and syr Marcell. there they receyued them honourably/ and brought them in to the chambre/ where the kynge tarryed for them. Than they dyd of their bonettes and kneled downe. Syr Thomas Percy hadde the letters of credence that the kynge of Englande had sente to the frenche kynge/ he delyuered them to the kyng who tooke them/ and caused the knyghtes to stande vp/ than they stepte some what backe. The kynge opened the letters and red them/ and sawe well that they had credence/ than he called to hym his brother and his vncles and shewed them the letters/ than his vncles sayd. Syr call for the the knyghtes/ and here what they wyll say. Than they approched and were commaunded to declare their credence. than sir Thomas Percy spake and sayd. Dere sir/ the entencyon of our soueraygne lorde the kynge of Englande is/ that he wolde gladly that suche of his privy all counsayle/ as his vncles dukes of Lancastre/ yorke/ and Glocestre/ and other

prelates of Englande / suche as his speyall trust is in / might come in to youre presence and to your counsayle / as shortely as myght be / to treate for a maner of peace / so that if he and you togyther myght conenably and reasonably be conioyned / any meanes founde to haue a conclusyon of peace / he wold be therof right ioyfull / and for that entente he wolde nouther spare his owne payne and labour / nor yet none of his men / nother to come hym selfe or to sende sufficyente persones ouer the see to the cytte of Ampence / or to any other place assigned. And syr / we be come hyder for this entente to knowe your pleasure in this behalfe. Than the kynge answered and sayde. Syr Thomas Percy / you and all your company are ryght hertely welcome / and of youre comynge and wordes we are ryght ioyfull / ye shall tary here in Paris a season / and we will speke with our counsayle and make you suche a conenable answere or ye departe / that it shall suffyce you. With this answere the englysshemen were well content. Than it was nere dyner tyme / and the englysshe men were desyred to tary to dyne. And so the lorde of Coucy brought them in to a chambre and the lorde de la Ryuer. There they dyned at their leyser / and after dyner they retourned in to the kynges chambre / and there had wyne and spyces / and thanne toke their leaue of the kynge and wente to their lodgynge.

The comynge of syr Thomas Percy and his company in to Fraūce and the tydynges that they brought / pleased greatly the frenche kynge and the duke of Burgoyne / and dyuers of his counsayle / but nat all / and specially suche as ayded to sustayne pope Clementes quarell / for they sawe well by these tydynges / that if the frenche kynge enclyned to this treatte / that it shulde greatly let & hynder the voyage that was mynded to go to Rome / to distroy pope Bonyface and his cardynals / or els to bringe them to the beleue of pope Clemente. But the mater of treatte of peace was so hygh / and touched so moche the welthe and profyte of all cristendome / so that no persone durst speke against it. The duke of Burgoyn and his counsayle / with the kynge and his brother / and the duke of Burbone / were all of one accorde. The kyng made good chere to & Thomas Percy & to the englysshmen / but amonge them there was one knyght / called syr Robert Bryquet / whome the frenche kynge loued maruayle / he was a frenche man borne / but alwayes he helde hym selfe outher nauerre or englysshe / and as than he was one of the kyng of Englandes priuy chambre. The frenche kynge priuely mused with hym sagely / for whanne he spake to them / alwayes the kynge wolde tourne his selfe to syr Thomas Percy or els to syr Lorys Clyfforde / and sayd. Syrs / we wolde gladly se this peare to be had but were hit and out aduenture the kynge of Englande / for the quarell and warre hath to long endured betwene vs. and one thinge I wyll ye knowe / & it shall nat be hynded on our parte / though it be greatly to our cost. Syr quod they the kyng our soueraygne lorde / who hath sent vs hyther hath a great affection to haue peace / and sayth that it shall nat be let on his parte / and hath made vewple that the warre and dyscencion betwene your landes hath endured so longe / and that no good amyable meanes hathe been had or this tyme. Than the frenche kynge answered and sayd / we shall se the good affection that he hath therunto.

These englysshemen taryed at Parys xi. dayes / and euery day dyned with one of the dukes of Fraunce / and in the meane season it was determyned / that the frenche kynge / his vncles and his prynce counsayle shulde be at Ampence / by the myddes of Marche next after / there to abyde the comyng of the kynge of Englande / his vncles / and his counsayle / if they wolde come thyder. And the englysshe knyghtes sayd / they made no doute but at the lest the kynge of Englandes vncles shulde be at the day assigned at Ampence. this was the conclusyon of this treatie. The dayes before that they shulde departe out of Paris / the kynge came to & palays where his vncles were / and there he made a dyner to the Englysshe knyghtes / and called syr Thomas Percy to sytte at his borde and called hym cosyn / by reason of the Northumberlandes blode / at which dyner there was gyuen to syr Thomas Percy and to the englysshe knyghtes and squyers great gyftes and fayre iewels / but in the gyuynge of them / they ouer sypte syr Robert Bryquet. and syr Peter Villers chefe steward with the frenche kynge / delyuered the gyftes / and he sayd to syr Robert Bryquet. Syr whan ye haue

ye haue done ſuche ſeruyce to the kynge my maiſter/ as ſhall pleaſe hym/ he is ryche and puiſſaunt enough to rewarde you. Wich whē the worſhyfull ſir Robert Briquet was ſore abaſhed/ and parceyued well thereby that ỳ kyng loued hym nat/ but he was fayne to ſuffre it. After dyner mynſtrels began to play/ that ỳ ſyre ones paſt ſir Thomas Percy cāe to the kyng & ſayd. Sire/ I and my company haue great maruayle of one thyng/ ỳ ye haue made vs ſo good chere and gyuen vs ſo great gyftes that ſir Robert Briquet hath nothynge/ who is a knyght of our maiſters pryuy chamber. Sir we deſyre to knowe the cauſe why: thereto anſwered the frenche kyng and ſayd. Sir Thomas/ the knyght that ye ſpeke of/ ſyth ye wyll knowe ỳ mater. he hath no nede to be in bataple agaynſt me/ for if he were taken pryſoner his raunſome ſhulde ſoone be payde/ and therwith the kyng entred in to other cōmunycacion. Than wyne and ſpyces were brought forthe/ and ſo tooke leaue & returned to their lodgynge/ and made a recoumpt and payde for euery thyng. The nexte daye they departed & ſpedde ſo in their iourneys that they arryued in Englāde/ and ſhewed the kyng and his vncles howe they had ſpedde/ and greatly prayſed the frēche kyng/ and the chere that he had made them/ & ſhewed of the gyftes and iewels that he had gyuen them. ¶ Nowe lette vs leaue a lytell to ſpeke of the Engliſhemen/ and ſomewhat ſhewe of kyng Johan of Caſtyle.

¶ Of the dethe of kyng John of Caſtyle/ and of the crowmyng of kynge Henry his ſonne. Cap. C.lxxvi.

WE haue herde here before in this hyſtorie/ how peace was made bytwene the kynge of Caſtyle and the duke of Lancaſtre/ who chalenged to haue ryght to the realme of Caſtyle/ by reaſon of the lady Conſtaunce his wyfe/ doughter to kyng Dompeter. And by meanes of a fayre doughter ỳ the duke of Lancaſtre had by the ſayde lady Conſtaunce/ the peace was made and confyrmed. For the ſayde kynge Johan of Caſtyle had a ſonne to his heyre/ called Henry/ who was prince of Galyce. This Henry was maryed to the duke of Lancaſters Doughter/ whereby good peace was made bytwene Englande and Caſtyle: and within two yeres after this mariage kynge Johan of Caſtyle dyed/ and was buryed in Burgus in Spaygne. Anone after his dethe/ the prelates and lordes of Spaygne drewe togyder/ and determyned to crowne the ponge herytour the prince of Galyce. This prince Henry was crowned the nynth yere of his age/ and his wyfe doughter to the duke of Lancaſtre was a fyfteene yere of age. Thus the dukes doughter by the lady Conſtaunce was quene of Caſtyle/ and lady and herytour to all the landes and ſeignoryes/ that kyng Dompeter/ kyng Henry/ and kyng Johan helde/ except that the duke of Lancaſtre her father and his wyfe her mother had durynge their lyues/ whiche was a penſyon of a hundred thouſande florens by yere: And foure of the beſt erles of Spayne were pledges and dettours for the ſame. Thus the duke of Lancaſtre ſawe his two doughters (one quene of Spaygne/ the other quene of Portugale) beſtowed.

¶ Nowe lette vs ſpeke of the ponge erle of Armynake/ and of the voyage he made in to Lombardy/ for the matter requyreth it: and we ſhall leaue to ſpeke of the kynge of Caſtyle.

¶ Of the army of the ponge erle Johan of Armynake/ and of the vyage that he made in to Lombardy: And howe he dyed at the ſiege before the towne of Alexandre. Ca. C.lxxvii.

IT hath been ſhewed here before/ what great affectyon the ponge Erle of Armynake had to go in to Lombardy with menne of warre/ to ayde and aſſiſte his ſuſter germayne/ and his brother in lawe her huſbande the lorde Barnabo/ eldeſt ſonne to the lorde Barnabo whome the duke of Myllayne had cauſed to be ſlayne

de Armynake the yongest syr. And this duke of Myllayne was erle of Vertues/ and named Galeas/ whyche doughter the duke of Orlyaunce hadde to wyfe. This lady Ysoyr/ whyche was doughter to the olde erle of Armynake and suster to the yonge erle/ was greatly abasshed whan she herde tell/ and had no trust but on her brother. She signified to hym all the case how they pourette and necessyte/ and all maner that she suffered. And humbly requyred hym that he wolde helpe to kepe and defende her ayenst the tyrauny that the erle of Vertues/ whyche wolde forthe per her wrongfully and without reason. And to the requeste of his suster the erle of Armynake condescended/ and sayde/ That what soeuer it shulde coste hym he wolde do his deuoyre to ayde his suster. Whan all thyse thynges were accomplysshed/ for he had by the ayde of the erle Wolphyne of Auuergne/ made dyuers retenues in Auuergne/ Rouergue/ Quercy/ Lymosyn/ Perygourt/ Engoulmoys/ and Agenoys/ whyche had bought certayne fayettes whyche had been kepte by the Englysshmen/ gascoyns/ and bretons/ suche as hadde made warre ayenst the realme of Fraunce/ vnder colour of the kyng of Englande/ and all suche as he hadde agreed withall/ hadde their pauoons of the Frenche kyng: and dyde that the kyng gaue golde and syluer to go ouer amonge them. But they were all bounde to the erle of Armynake/ to go with hym in to Lombardy to ayde hym in his warres there. And euery man shewed hym selfe therto well wyllynge/ & euery man prayed to the tyrer of Rodme and to ye tyrer of Solme. The duke of Berrey and the duke of Burgoyne suffred them in their countreys to lye at pitayles at their pleasure/ for they wolde gladly haue had them clene delyuered out of the countre. And in ye season vnder the kyng there ruled in the Dolphyney/ the lorde Enguerant Dourdyn. And the kynge had written to hym/ commaundyng that these men of warre partenyng to the erle of Armynake/ shulde peasably passe throughe the countrey/ and to haue that they neded for their money.

Than the erle of Foix beynge in Byerne in his castell of Ortays/ vnderstode howe the erle of Armynake assembled men of warre togyder/ he began to muse/ for he was a mygthy prynce/ & well he had herde howe the kynge was that the erle of Armynake made them assemble to go in to Lombardy ayenst the lorde of Coucy Laygne. But because they ne past the erle of Armynake with his people/ & his ost before hym and his banner/ & armes of Armynake had made hym warre/ therfore he doubted lest the sayde assemble shulde turne ayenst hym. Wherfore he thought how to abide/ & he purueyed/ dyuersyed/ & his fortresses with men of warre/ and made suche prouysyon/ that if he were assayled/ to resyst it with all his puyssaunce. But the erle of Armynake & his brother were nothynge of theyr purpose/ but thought surely to vphold & trete that was betwene them/ and to achieue his enterprise in to Lombardy. There were many knyghtes and squyers Englysshe/ gascoyns/ bretons and other that were bounden & sworne to the erle of Armynake in his warres. But if he shulde haue made warre ayenst the erle of Foix/ they wolde haue taken the erle of Foix parte/ and haue forsaken the erle of Armynake/ for the erle of Foix was so welbeloued with all men of warre/ for the wyfe vertuous largesse and prowesse that was in hym. And whanne the duchesse of Thourayne was enformed howe the erle of Armynake was redy to passe ouer the mountayns/ to entre in to Lombardy with puyssaunce of men of warre/ to make warre ayenst the duke of Myllayne her father. And howe that the Frenche kyng and his vncles/ the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne consented therto/ bycause they wolde haue their countreis clene auoyded of the compaynons and routes of pyllars/ suche as had often tymes greued sore their countreys. this lady thought nat to forgette the matter/ but wrote to her father the duke of Myllayne/ all that she knewe/ to the entente that he shulde take hede to hym selfe/ and to his countrey. The lorde of Myllayne was well enformed of the busynesse/ and prouyded for meane of warre where he might gete them/ and retey thed his townes/ tyrers/ and castelles with pitayle/ and other munycions of warre. and lobed surely to haue warre with the erle of Armynake/ as they hadde in

dede.

About

Bout the myddes of the moneth of Marche/ the moost parte of theſe cõpanyons were aſſembled togyder in the marcheſſe of Auignon/ all a longe the ryuer of Roſne/ to the nombre of fyftene thouſande hozſes/ and paſſed the ryuer: and ſo entred in to the Dolphynny of Vyen/ and lodged abzode in the vyllages/ and ſome paſſed forwarde to haue the moze eaſy paſſage thoroughe the mountayns/ whiche were perylous to paſſe/ bothe for man and hozſe. The erle of Armynake and his brother/ with certayne other knyghtes wente to Auygnon/ to ſe hym that was called pope Clemente/ and the cardynalles there. And offred their ſeruyce to the pope/ to ayde hym agaynſt the tyrantes the lombardes/ for whiche offre they were thanked. And whan they had ben there an eight dayes/ and that great parte of their company were paſſe forwarde/ They tooke their leaue of the pope and of the cardynalles/ and prepared to folowe their men. there the two bretherne departed aſondre/ the erle Johan of Armynake and ſir Bernarde his brother. Than the Erle ſayde. Brother/ ye ſhall retourne backe to Armynake and kepe our herytage/ of Compynges and Armynake For as yet all the forteſſes be nat delyuered fro the companyons. There is as yet the garyſon of Lourde/ where as Peter Arnaulte kepeth vnder the kynge of Englande: And alſo the garyſon of Bounteuyll/ whiche is kepte by ſir Johan of Granley/ ſonne to the Captall of Buſe. And thoughe it be ſo/ that as nowe we haue peace with the erle of Foiz yet it is good to doubte hym/ for he is cruell and haſtye: his thought is vnknowen/ therfore it is good that our landes be nat dyſpurueyed. Wherfore Brother/ for theſe cauſes & other ye ſhall retourne home/ and ye ſhalle here often fro me and I fro you. Sir Bernarde lyghtly agreed to this purpoſe. The deuyſe ſemed good to hym. Nor alſo he had no great affectyon to go forthe in that iourney. Than at his departynge/ the erle his brother ſayde to hym. Brother/ in youre retourneyng ye ſhall go to our coſyn Raymonde of Thourayne/ who holdeth lande of the pope in the countre of Venus/ and maketh warre agaynſt hym/ and my coſyn hath maryed his doughter to the prince of Orenge/ and ſhewe hym howe I am deſyred of the pope/ to requyre hym to go with me in this voyage/ and I ſhall make hym my compaynon in euery thynge/ and I ſhall tary for hym at the cytie of Sappe betwene the mountayns. Sir quod Bernarde I ſhall do your meſſage. Thus the two bretherne departed aſondre in the felde/ and neuer mette togyder agayne after. The erle of Armynake tooke the waye to the cytie of Sappe in the lande of Sauoy. And Bernarde his brother went to the caſtell of Bolongne/ where ſir Raymonde of Thourayne was/ who receyued his coſyn ioyouſly. Than ſir Bernarde ſhewed hym the meſſage that he had to ſaye/ fro his brother the erle of Armynacke/ with aſayre wordes as he couldo deuyſe/ the rather thereby to enclyne hym therto. Than ſir Raymonde anſwered and ſayd. Fayre coſyn/ or your brother the erle of Armynake be entred farre in to Lombardy/ and hath beſieged any towne/ I ſhall folowe hym/ but as yet it is to ſoone for me and my men to go forwarde. Write vnto your brother my coſyn/ that aboute the moneth of Maye I ſhall folowe hym. For by that tyme I truſt to haue an ende of the warre betwene myne vncle pope Clement/ and the cardinals at Auignon & me/ who as yet wyll doone me no ryght/ and kepeth a waye fro me perforce/ that myne vncle pope Gregorie gaue me. they wene to werry me/ but they ſhall nat. They deſyre knyghtes and ſquyers/ and gyueth theym pardons to make warre agaynſt me/ but they haue no tyſt therto. For I canne haue no men of warre for a thouſande Floreyns in one daye/ than they can haue for all their abſolucions in ſeuyn yere. Fayre coſyn quod ſir Bernarde that is trewe. Kepe on your purpoſe/ I wolde nat counſayle you otherwyſe. And as ye haue anſwered me/ ſo ſhall I write to my brother therle of Armynake. So be it quod ſir Raymonde. Thus they were togyder all a hole daye. Than ſir Bernarde departed and paſſed the ryuer of Roſne at the bridge Saynt Eſpyrite/ and ſo retourned in to Auuergne and in to Rouergue by the mountayns/ and ſo came thyder as he wolde be/ and lefte the erle of Armynake his brother alone with his warre/ againſt the duke of Myllayne erle of Vertues. Or he departed fro Bolonge he wrote to his brother all the newes that he knewe/ and the anſwere of ſir Raymonde of Thourayne. The

erle of

erle of Armynake receyued the letters in the waye goyng to the cytte of Gappe. He redde the letters/ and so passed forthe and made no great force of the matter.

WE wyll contynue to speke of the yonge erle of Armynacke and shewe his feate/ or I speke of any other mater. And thus I say The good loue and great affection that he had to comforte his suster & brother in lawe her husbande/ whom the erle of Vertues/ who called hymselfe lorde of Mylayne falsely disherited without cause or tytell: caused the erle ioyously to passe in his iourney as farre as Pyemount in Lombardy. There was two great reasons that caused the erle of Armynake to assemble/ and to make that iourney at that tyme. The fyrste was/ that the realme of Fraunce therby was clene rydde of the routes of these companyons/ that hadde done moche hurte in the realme/ and therby the countreys better assured than they were before. The seconde reason was to ayde his suster/ for he had great pytie that she and her husbande shalde lese their heritage/ wherby they shulde lyue and mayntayne their estate/ and for these consyderacions he toke on hym this enterprise. The capitayns of the companyons sayde one to a nother. Lette vs ryde forthe merily agaynst these lombardy/ we haue a good quarell and a iuste tytell/ and we haue a good capitayne/ wherby our warre shalbe moche the better. And also we shall go in to the best countrey of all the worlde/ for Lombardy receyueth fro all costes the fatnesse of the worlde: and these lombardes be naturally euer riche and cowardes: We shall attayne agaynst theym moche profyte: There is none of vs that be capitayns/ but that shall retourne so ryche/ that we shal neuer nede to make warre more agaynst any man. Thus the companyons deuised one with another/ and whan they came in to a plentuous countrey/ there they wolde tary a season to refresshe them and their horses.

In the same season the good aduenturous knight of Englande sir Iohan Hacton was in the marchesse of Florence/ and made warre agaynst the florentyns/ in the quarell of pope Bonyface of Rome/ for they were rebell agaynst the popes commaundement/ and so were also the Perusyns. The erle of Armynake thought that if he might get this Englysh knyght to take parte with hym/ he shulde haue a great treasure of hym/ bycause of his wysedome & hardynesse. The erle wrote to hym/ signifyeng hym all the hole mater of his enterprise/ desyrynge hym of his ayde. Whiche letter was sente by a discrete person to sir Iohan Hacton beyng in the marchesse of Florence/ and had a two thousande Englysshe men. He receyued the letter and redde it. And whan he hadde well vnderstande all the substaunce therof he was ryght ioyfull/ and answered and sayde. That his owne warre ones atchyued/ he wolde do nothyng after/ tyll he were in the company of the erle of Armynake. The messangere sayde. Sire saye well/ I requyre you write your mynde to my lorde the erle of Armynake/ he wyll the better beleue it. With ryght a good wyll sir quod the knight/ it is reason that I so do. Than the Englysh knyght wrote/ and deliuered the letter to the messangere/ who returned and came agayne to his lorde/ and founde hym as than in the marchesse of Pyneroll/ where was gret treatie bitwene hym and the Marques of Saluces/ who shulde be alyed with hym/ to ayde him in his warre agaynst the duke of Mylayne erle of Vertues.

THe tidynges that the erle of Armynackes Squyer brought to hym fro sir Iohan Hacton/ and of the Wordes that were written within the letter/ The Erle was greatly reioysed and sayde. that he trusted to make suche warre to the duke of Mylayne/ that he wolde bring hym to reason/ or elles to dye in the payne. Whan all his company were passed the straytes of the mountayns/ and were in the good countrey of Pyemounte nere Thourayne. Than they rode abrode/ and dyde moche hurte in the villages/ suche as coude nat holde agaynst them. Than the erle layde syge before Aste in Pyemount/ & entended to tary there for sir Iohn Hacton. Prouysyon came to them fro all partes/ and also the companyons wan certayne small

small holdes/ and toke the victayls that was within them. The countre of Pyneroll/ and the landes of the Marques Mount ferraunt were oppyned and apparelled to delyuer victayles/ & other thynges necessary for ỹ hoost bothe for men and horse. And also great provysyon came to them out of ỹ Dolphyne and out of the countie of Sauoy. Many folkes greatly enclyned to the erle of Armynake/ by cause they sawe his quarell was good & iust/ and also bycause the erle of Vertues had caused to be slayne his owne vncle sir Bernabo forenuy/ to serre agayne the lordes of Lombardy in to there herytages/ and disheryted his cosyn germayns/ wherof many great lordes/ thoughe they spake but lytell therof/ yet they hadde great pytie of the case. Whyle the erle laye thus at siege before Aste/ he herde tidynges of sir Johñ Hacton/ wherof he was greatlye reioyced. The tidynges was/ that the Florentynes were come to the popes mercye/ and also the Venisyens. And howe that the sayd sir Johñ shulde haue therefore thousande Floreyns/ for hym and his company. And that money ones payde/ receyued/ and delyuered/ where as it shulde be departed/ than he promysed with a fyue hundred speares and a thousande brigans a foote/ to come in to the frontes of Gênes/ and to passe ouer the ryuer/ whether their ennemeys wolde or natte/ and so to come to the erle of Armynake where soeuer he shulde be. These tidynges greatlye reioyced the erle of Armynake and all his company/ for the ayde of this sir Johñ Hacton was right pleasaunt. Than the erle of Armynake was counsailed to depte thens and to go and laye siege before a great cytie called Alexandre/ at the entryng of Lõbardy and whanne they had won that/ than to go to Verselli/ whyche was also a good cytie and a fayre.

Thus the erle of Armynake and his company layde siege before the cyte of Alexandre/ standyng in a fayre countrey and a playne. at the departyng out of Pyemount and at the entrynge of Lombardy/ and the way to go to the ryuer of Gênes. These men of warre passed the ryuer of Athelyn and lodge at their ease at large/ for the countrey was good and pleasaunt there a boute. The Lorde Galeas lorde of Mylayne and erle of Vertues/ was as than in a towne called the cytie of Pauy/ and dayly herde tidynges what his ennemyes dyde/ but he had marueyle of one thynge/ howe the erle of Armynake coude gette the eyghelle to pay wages to so many men of warre as he hadde brought with hym/ but his counsayle answered hym and sayde. Sir/ haue no marueyle therof/ for the men that he hath be suche companyons/ that beseyeth to wynne and to lyde at aduenture. They haue vsed longe to ouerron the realme of Fraũce/ and to take holdes and garysons in the countrey/ so that ỹ countrey coude neuer be delyuered of them. And so it is/ that nowe of late the duke of Berrey and the Dolphyn of Auuergne/ to whose countreys these rutters dyde mothe dõmage/ for they kepte them there agaynst the lordes wylles/ and ouer came the best parte of their herytages/ and made theym warre. And they caused the Erle of Armynake to treate with these companyons/ so that the Frenche kyng shulde suffre thẽ to come in to this your countrey to make warre. And therby/ and by meanes of certayne money gyuen to them/ they are auoyded oute of all the forteresses in the countrey. And also beside that/ the Frenche kynge hath ỹoned all suche as made warre agaynst hym/ on ỹ condycion that they shulde serue the erle of Armynake in his warres/ & all that they coude get shulde be their owne. They demaunde none other wages. And suche be named men of armes amonge theym/ with a fyue or sixe horses/ that if they were in their owne countreys they wolde go a foote/ and be but as poore men. It is great parell and ieopardy to fyght agaynst suche men/ & also lightly they be all good men of warre. Wherfore sir/ the best counsayle that we can gyue you/ is to kepe your townes and fortresses/ they be stronge and well prouyded for/ and your ennemyes haue none artyllary nor engyns/ for the saute to be regarded. They maye well come to the barreres of your townes and scrymysshe/ other dõmage they can do none. And this appereth well/ for they haue ben in your countrey this two monethes/ & as yet haue taken no fortresse lytell nor great. Sir let them alone/ and they shall werry thẽselfe/ and be distroyed at the ende/ so ye fyght nat with them. And whan they haue distroyed the playne countre/ and haue no more to lyue by:

haue by: They shall than be fayne to returne
for hampne/ without any other yuell fortune
fall on them in the meane tyme. And it shall
be well done that your men of warre in your
fortresses kepe togyder to ayde eche other/
in tyme of neede. And sir/ sende to suche pla-
ces as ye thynke your enemyes wyll besiege
to relyst the/ for towne men haue but small
defence/ for they be nat so vsed nor accustomed
to warre/ nouther to assaut nor to defende as
men of armes knightes and squyers be/ who
are nozull hed & brought vp therin. sir/ sende
your men of warre to the cytie of Alexandre/
Therby ye shall haue double profyte. your
cytie shalbe defended and your people shall
loue you the better/ whan they se ye do ayde
and confort them. And sir therto ye be boude
sithe ye haue gouernaunce ouer them/ & that
they paye to you their rentes/ subsydies/ & ay-
des that ye haue demaunded of them dyuers
tymes. your enemyes can nat be so strong in
the felde before Alexandre/ that the towne
shulde be closed in rounde about: they haue
no suche nombre to do it/ wherfore your men
shall entre in to the towne at their ease. And
whan they of the towne shall se them selfe re
freshed with your men of warre/ they shall
haue more corage/ and loue you moche the
better/ and shall putte out of their hertes all
maner of treatie with your ennemyes. To
this counsaile the lorde of Mayllayne greed
and incontynent he assembled togyder his
men of warre a fyue hundred speares. And
he made capitayne of the an auncient knight
called sir Jaques of Byerne/ an expert man
of armes/ and they rode through the countrey
prively/ and so on a nyght they entred in to
the towne of Alexandre. They of the towne
were greatly reioysed of their comyng/ and
good cause why. Bycause the erle of Army-
nake sawe no menne styrynge in the towne.
Therfore thre dayes togyder they sauted &
scrimysshed at the barriers/ and yet with the
small nombre that were there/ the armynaks
were so well relyeued that they wan nothyng
Whan sir Jaques de la Byerne and his com
pany were entred in to the strong cyte of Ale
xandre and were lodged and refreshed/ the
gouernour of the cytie and other came to vy-
site the in their lodgynge. Than sir Jaques
demaunded of them the state of the cyte/ and
the demeanour of their enemyes/ to take cou
saple therupon. The auncient men and most
sagest answered and sayd. Sir/ sithe the erle
of Armynake hath layde siege before vs/ eue
ry daye we haue had assautes & scrimysshes
before our barryers. Well sirs quod the knyght
to morowe we shall se what they wyll do.
They knowe nat of my comyng/ I wyll ma-
ke a secrete issue/ and lye in an embusshe for
them. Ah sir quod they/ ye haue nede to be
ware what ye do/ for they are a fyftene thou-
sande horses/ and if they discouer you in the
felde without any bataile/ they shall reyse in
the a dust with their horses agaynst you and
your company/ that ye shalbe sone discom-
fyt among your selfe. Well quod the knyghtes/
to morowe we shall se howe the mater shall
go. We must do some feate of armes sithe we
become hyder. Than euery man retourned
to their lodging/ and the knight gaue know
ledge to his company/ howe that the next mor-
nyng secretely he wolde issue out of the cyte
and lye in a buysshment in the feldes/ and co-
maunded euery man to be redy.

The nexte morynge sir Jaques de la
Byerne armed hym and all his com
pany/ and issued out secretely/ and
with hym a foure hundred/ halfe a myle out
of the towne/ and assembled in a valey/ and
caused other two hundred to abyde at the bar-
riers. And comaunded them/ that if their ene
myes came to assayle them/ that they shulde
make but fayne defence/ and recule backe thy
derwarde/ where as they wolde lye in the buy-
shement. The daye was fayre and clere and
the erle of Armynake who was yong and lu
sty/ after he had herde masse in his pauylyon/
armed hym and displayed his penon/ & toke
with hym but a hundred men/ thynking that
no man shulde encounter hym. And so came
with his company before the barryers lytell
and lytell/ some folowed hym and some tarie
styll & sayd. What nede we to arme vs/ whan
we come to the barryers we shall se no man
there/ and so tarie styll eatyng and drinkyng
and therle of Armynake went to scrimysshe
before the barryers/ and there began to scry
mysshe one with another. & within a shorte
season the defenders begamne to recule lytell
and lytell/ tyll they came to their embusshe.
Whan sir Jaques de la Byerne sawe his ene
myes coe before hym/ he discouered hym selfe

and

and ſet on the archyphagoys/ who valyauntly defoed themſelfe/ for alwayes ſpedy and ſpedy ſocour came to them / there was many a feate of armes done. It was on ſaynte Chriſtofers daye/ and the daye was ſo hoote that ſuche as were in their harnes/ thought verily they had ben in a furnes/ the wether was ſo ſayne with out wynde/ ſo that the luſtyeſt they had moche a do to do any feate of armes. The partye of Myllayne were thre agaynſt one. The duſte and the powder was ſo great that they coulde ſcante ſe one a nother/ and ſpecially they of the erle of Armynakes parte. There fell to the erle a great aduenture / he was ſo oppreſſed with heate/ that he was ſo feble that he coulde ſcant helpe hym ſelfe/ ſo that he drewe apart out on the one ſyde of the feide and no man with him/ and there founde a ſpedy ryuer/ whan he felte the ayre of the water he thought he was in paradyſe/ and ſate downe alone beſyde the water/ and with moche payne dyd of his baſenet and ſate bareheded/ and waſhed his face and dranke of ſ water/ wherby he was wozſe than he was befoze/ for the coldneſſe of the water colcy ſo his blode that he was ſayntер thanne he was befoze/ and fell in a paluesy ſo that he loſt the ſtrength of his body and ſpeche / and his men had loſte hym. there were many taken. After a knight of the duke of Myllayns foſide the erle of Armynake. Whan he ſawe hym he had meruayle what he was/ he parceyued wel he was a knyght / a man of honour. Than the knight ſaid. Sir who be you/ yelde you ye are my pryſoner. The erle vnderſtode hym nat/ noz he coulde nat ſpeke / but he helde vp his hande / and made token to yelde hym. The knyght wolde haue ledde hym to tyle/ but he coulde nat. The knyght taryed ſtyll with him whyle other dyd fyght / in the whiche batayle many a feate of armes was done.

Than ſyr Jaques de la Bierne who was a ſage knyght / ſawe howe the tourney was good for his party/ and howe that a gret nombre of his enemyes were taken and ſlayne/ and alſo ſawe well that his owne men waxed wery/ and that his enemyes began to multyply with freſſhe men / than he reculed towarde the cytie ſkrympſhynge and defendynge. The knyght that had taken the erle of Armynake / thought nat to leaue hym behynde / for he thought ſurely he was ſome man of honoure/ and deſyred his company to ayde hym/ to beare his pryſoner in to ſ towne prompſynge them to haue parte of his raunſome. They dyd ſo / and with moche payne brought him in to the cyte/ and was vnarmed and layde in a bedde. Than ſyr Jaques de la Bierne entred in to the cytie and toke his lodgynge and vnarmed hym/ and refreſſhed him and his company. And whan the erle of Armynacke was myſſed in the hooſt without/ they were ſore dyſmayed/ and wyſt nat what to ſay noz do / and ſome came to the place where the batayle had ben to ſeke for hym/ and returned agayne clene dyſcomfyted. The knyght that had taken the erle of Armynake had great deſyre to know what man his pryſoner was/ and came to a nother ſquyer that was in lyke wyſe taken pryſoner a gaſcon / deſyrynge his mayſter to ſuffre hym to go with hym to his lodgynge. ſo they went to gyder. The lombarde knyght led the ſquyer of Fraunce into a chambre/ and brought hym to the bedde where the erle of Armynake lay ſore complaynyng/ and cauſed torches to be lyghted vp/ and than ſaid to the french ſquyer. Sir/ know ye nat this man. The ſquyer regarded hym well & ſayd/ I know hym well/ for I ought ſo to do/ it is our capitayne the erle of Armynake. With the whiche wordes the lombarde was ioyfull/ but the Erle was ſo ſycke that he vnderſtode nothynge that was ſayd to hym. Than his mayſter ſayd/ go we hence let hym reſt. Thus they left him/ and the ſame nyght he dyed/ and paſſed this tranſitory lyfe. The next day whan it was known that the erle of Armynake was deed in Alexaunder in his bedde/ ſyr Jaques of Bierne wolde nat that his dethe ſhulde be vnknowen / but cauſed it to be publyſhed in the hooſt / by ſuche pryſoners as he had / to ſe what his enemyes wolde do. They of the hooſt were ſore dyſcomfyted as they well ſhewed/ for as than they had no capitayne to draw vnto / for they were but companyons gadred of all partes. Than they ſayd/ let vs returne and ſaue our ſelfe/ for we haue loſt our tyme. Anon it was known in the Cytie / howe the armynacs were diſcõfyted/ and had no capytayne. than they armed them/ and iſſued out a horſeback and a foote/ and ſet on the hooſt cryenge Pauy for the lorde of Myllayne. There they were taken and ſlayne without defence. The conqueſt and boyte was great with the com-

panyons that were come thyder with syr Jaques of Bterne. the Armynacois yelded them selfe without defence and caste away armure and fledde/ and were chased lyke beastes. Lo what a harde aduenture therle of Armynake and his company had / and where as his entente was to do well/ it tourned hym to great yuell. If he had lyued fyue dayes lenger/ syr Johan Ieron had come to hym with fyue hundred speares/ and a thousande brigandyns a foote/ wherby he myght haue done many feates of armes/ and all lost by harde aduenture.

When the duke of Myllayn knewe the trouth that his enemyes were slayne and taken / and specyally the erle of Armynake slayne/ he was ioyfull therof/ and loued syr Jaques de Bterne the better in his herte/ and made hym soueraygne ouer all his chyualry/ and made him cheef of his cõsayle. The duke of Myllayne to auoyde his countrey of his enemyes / gaue to euery prysoner that was a gentylman a horse/ and to euery other man a florayne and quyted them clene of their raunsomes / but at their departynge he caused them to swere that they shulde neuer after arme them agaynst hym. Thus these companions departed out of Lombardy and Piemount/ and entred in to Sauoy and in to the dolpheny/ and had suche pouertie that it was marueyle/ for as they passed euery towne was closed agaynst theym. Anone euery man had spent his florayn/ some had pytie of them and dyd gyue them almes for charite/ and some rebuked and mocked them / sayenge. Go your wayes seke out your erle of Armynake/ who is drinkynge at a well before Pieraundre. yet they were in more myschefe whan they came to the ryuer of Rone/ they had thought lightly to haue passed ouer in to the realme of Fraũce but they dyd nat/ for the frenche kynge hadde cõmaunded all the passages to be closed and kept agaynst them/ wherby they fell in great daunger and pouertie. After that they coulde neuer assemble togyther agayne. Thus the ponge erle of Armynakes army brake asonder/ & his suster abode styll in as yuell case as she was in before. Than ỹ duke of Myllayne sent for a bysshop of his countrey/ and for suche as were most nere to the erle of Armynake/ as had ben there with hym at that iourney/ and the duke cõmaunded that therles body shulde be baumed/ and sente to his brother syr Barnarde/ who was ryght sorowfull of those tydynges/ and good cause why/ but there was no remedy. Than the erle of Armynake was buryed in the cathedrall churche of Rodayn/ and there he lyeth.

It ought to be knowen as it hath ben contayned here before in this hystory/ how syr Thomas Percy was sent by kyng Richarde of Englande in to the realme of Fraũce/ and shewed well howe he had gret affectyon to haue a ferme peace bytwene Englande and Fraunce/ and specyally two of the kynge of Englandes vncles / as the duke of Lancastre and the duke Edmonde of yorke/ but the kynges other vncle the duke of Glocestre and constable of Englande/ wolde in no wyse accorde to haue any peace with the frenchmen/ without it were to the kynges honoure and theirs/ and that there myght be rendred agayne all suche cyttes/ townes/ castels/ landes and seygnories/ whiche had been gyuen to the kynge of Englande and to his heyres/ whiche falsely had ben taken away by the frenchmen/ without tytell or reasone/ and besyde that the sõme of four thousande frankes/ whiche was owyng whan the frenchmen began the warre agayne. And of this oppynyon was dyuers lordes of Englande/ sayenge that to ỹ dethe they wolde iustifye the same. Many sayd that the duke of Glocestre had good ryght and reason to sustayne that opinyon/ but they dissymuled the mater couertely/ bycause they sawe ỹ kynges mynde and affection enclyned greatly to haue peace. But the poore knyghtes and squyers/ and archers of Englande/ rather enclyned to haue warre / suche as had lusteyned their estates by reason of the warre. Consyder well than/ howe peace/ loue/ or accorde might be had bytwene these parties/ for the frenche men in their treatie demaunded to haue Calays beaten downe/ & to haue the seygnorie of Guysnes/ Hammes/ Marke/ and Oye/ & all the landes of Fropton/ and the dependantes of Guysnes vnto the lymyttes of the water of Grauelyng. and the frenche kynge offred to delyuer to the crowne of Englãde as moch landes in valure in Acquytayn/ agaynst whiche artycle ỹ duke of Glocestre helde and said. The frenchmen wyll paye vs with our owne/ for they knowe well ynough howe we haue charters sealed by kynge

kynge Johan/ & all his chyldren/ that all hole Aquytayne shulde haue been delyuered to hs/ without any refoyte or souerayntie to any man and all that euer they haue doone sythe/ hath ben by fraude and false engyn/ and nyght and day entende to no othre thyng but to dyscryue hs/ for if Calays and suche landes as they demaunde/ were delyuered in to their handes/ they shulde be lordes of all the see coste/ and than all our conquestes were as nothynge/ I shall rather neuer agree to peace as long as I lyue.

How syr Peter of Craon fell in the french kynges displeasure and in the duke of Thourayns/ & after he was receyued by the duke of Bretayne. Cap. C.xxviii.

In this said seaso there was a knyght of Fraunce of the countrey of Anjou/ a gentle knight and of noble extraction/ called syr Pyer of Craon/ marueyously well beloued/ and specially with the duke of Thourayne/ for aboute the duke no thynge was doone but by hym. Also this knyght helde a great astate about the duke of Anjou/ who was called kynge of Naples/ Cicyll/ & Jherusalem/ and also he was ryche. Slaunder was brought vp on hym through the realme of Fraūce/ howe he had robbed the yonge kynge of Cycyll duke of Anjou/ for the whiche bruyte the sayd syr Peter absented hym selfe fro the yonge kynge and fro his mother/ who had ben wyfe to the olde duke of Anjou/ howe it be he dyde so that he was welbeloued with the frenche kynge/ and with his brother the duke of Thourayne. Also the same season syr Olyuer of Clysson/ as thanne constable of Fraūce/ was greatly in fauour with the kyng and with the duke of Thourayne/ whiche fauour he had get by reason of the good seruyce that he had done in armes/ as well in Fraūce as els where/ in the kynges dayes and in his fathers dayes kinge Charles/ and syr Olyuer of Clyssons doughter had wedded Johan of Bretayne/ brother germayne to the quene of Jherusalem/ and this syr Olyuer Clysson by reason of the alyaunce that he had by the mariage of Johan of Bretayne/ was greatly in the duke of Bretayns indignacion/ insomoch that the duke helde hym for his mortall enemy/ and Johan of Bretayne in lykewyse/ and the duke of Bretayne repented hym that he had nat slayne syr Olyuer of Clysson whan he had hym in prysone in his castell of Ermyn. This syr Peter of Craon was in suche fauour with the duke of Bretaygne that he myght do with hym what he lyst/ he was his cosyn. and whyle he was in fauour with the frenche kynge and with the duke of Thourayne he wolde gladly haue brought out of the kynges fauour syr Olyuer of Clysson the constable/ if he coulde haue brought it aboute.

Thus the enuyous whiche courtely always hath reygned in Fraunce/ dissymuling their maters tyll they come to an euell conclusion. The constable of Fraunce had alwayes ben so true in all his dedes to ꝑ crowne of Fraunce/ that euery manne loued hym/ except the duke of Burgoyn/ who loued him nothyng. the hatred came by the duches of Burgoyne/ who was a lady of hygh corage/ for she coulde nat loue the Constable/ for the duke of Bretayne was nere of blod to her/ and all that her father the erle of Flaunders loued she loued/ and suche as he hated she hyd the same/ she was of that condycion. This syr Peter of Craon whyle he was in the frenche court/ and great with the duke of Thourayne/ he wrote often tymes to the duke of Bretayne secretly euery thynge that he knewe/ & the duke wrote agayne to hym. The effecte of their wrytynges I coude nat knowe/ howbe it I Johan Froyssart auctor of this hystory/ on a tyme whan I was at Parys/ on a night whan a great myschefe was lykely to haue fallen vpon syr Olyuer Clysson constable of Fraunce/ by a marueylous enterprise of syr Peter of Craon/ as I shall hereafter more playnly declare/ whan tyme shall requyre. And bycause I sawe the mater darke and obscure/ & lykely to be great trouble and daunger/ I dyd all the payne I coulde to knowe the grounde and occasyon of the mater/ why syr Peter of Craon was so sodaynly banysshed fro the frenche kynges loue and the duke of Thourayns. Suche serche I

made and ſuche enquery of them that knewe the mater/ that ſome of them enfourmed me of the trouth as the fame & renome ran. Fyrſt the duke of Thouraȳ was dyſpleaſed with this ſyr Peter of Craon through his owne faute/ for he dyſcloſed the ſecretneſſe that was bytwene the duke of Thouraȳe and a nother lady. If he dyd ſo he dyd yuell.

THe duke of Thouraȳe as than had ſuche fauour to ſyr Peter of Craon/ that he toke hym as his companyon/ and ware euer lyke apparell/ and had hym alwayes with hym where ſo euer he wente/ and ſhewed hym all his ſecretes. This Duke of Thouraȳ as than was ȳonge and amorous/ and gladly wolde company with ladyes and damoſels/ and ſpoȝte hym amonge them/ and ſpecially as it was ſhewed me/ he loued entierly a fayȝe lady of Paris ȳonge and freſſh. Hys loue and ſecretes were knowen in ſuche wyſe that it turned to great dyſpleſure to the duke/ and he wyſte nat whome to blame but ſyr Peter of Craon/ for the duke had ſhewed hym all his ſecretes in that mater/ and had taken hym in his company/ whan he wolde ſecretly ſpeke with the ſaid ȳonge lady. The duke on a tyme promyſed the ſayd lady a thouſande crownes of golde/ ſo that he myght haue his pleaſure of her. But the lady as than refuſed it and ſayd/ howe ſhe loued hym nat for his golde nor ſyluer/ but pure loue enclyned her to beare hym her good wyll/ but as for golde or ſyluer ſhe wolde nat ſell her honoure. All theſe wordes and promeſſes were knowen by the duches of Thouraȳe/ who incontynent ſent for the ſaid ȳonge lady in to her chambre. Than ſhe called her by her name/ and in grete diſpleaſure ſayd. Wylte thou do me wronge with my lorde my husbande? The ȳonge lady was abaſſhed/ and all weppynge ſayd. Nay madame by the grace of god/ I neuer dyd thynke it nor neuer wyll. than the ducheſſe ſayd. Thus it is/ I ame enfourmed that my lorde my husbande loueth you/ and you hym/ and the mater ſo farre gone bytwene you/ that in ſuche a place and at ſuche a tyme/ he promyſed you a thouſande crownes of golde to haue his pleaſer of you/ howe be it ye dyd refuſe it as than/ wherin ye dyd wyſely and therfore as at this tyme I pdon you/ but I charge you as derely as ye loue your lyfe/ ye commune nor talke no more with hym/ but ſuffre hym to paſſe/ & herkyn nat to his commynge. Than whan the ȳonge lady ſawe her ſelfe accuſed of trouth ſhe anſwered and ſayd. Madame/ I ſhall delyuer me fro hym as ſone as I can/ and ſhall ſo deale that ye ſhall haue no cauſe of dyſpleaſure in this mater. Therwith the ducheſſe gaue her leaue to departe/ and ſo ſhe returned to her lodgyng. The duke of Thouraȳe who knewe nothynge of this mater/ and as he ȳ entierly loued this ȳonge lady/ fortuned on a day to come where as ſhe was. Whanne ſhe ſawe hym ſhe eſchewed his company/ and made hym no maner of ſemblant of loue/ but dyd clene cõtrary to that ſhe had vſed before/ for ſhe durſt nat/ and alſo ſhe had ſworne & promyſed to the duches. Whan the duke ſawe her countenaunce he was penſyue/ and thought he wolde knowe why ſhe helde ſo ſtraungely/ and demaunded of her the cauſe of her ſtraungnes. The ȳonge lady all weppynge ſayd. Syr ye haue bewrayed your loue/ and the ſecrete promeſſe and offre that ye made me/ to my lady your wyfe/ or els ſome other/ remembre you wel to whom ye haue ſhewed your ſecretneſſe/ for ſyr I was in great daunger by my lady your wyfe/ and by none other/ and I haue ſworne and promyſed her that after this tyme I wyll neuer cõpany nor talke with you/ wherby ſhe ſhulde haue any ielouſy. whan the duke harde ȳ they were ſore wordes to him/ and greatly to his diſpleaſure and ſaid. Ah my fayȝe lady/ I ſwere to you by my fayth/ that rather than this mater ſhulde haue ben ſhewed to my wyfe/ that I had loſte a hundred thouſande frankes/ ſythe ye haue ſworne/ kepe your promeſſe/ for what ſo euer it coſte me I wyll knowe the trouth who hath bewrayed our ſecretes.

THus the Duke departed fro the ȳonge lady/ and made no ſemblant as than/ but pacyently ſuffred/ howe be it he thought the more. And at myght came to his wyfe to ſupper/ & ſhewed her more token of loue than euer he dyd before/ and he dyd ſemoche with fayȝe wordes that the ducheſſe ſhewed him all the mater/ and howe that ſhe knewe it by ſyr Peter of Craon. than the duke ſpake no more at that tyme. that nyght paſſed/ and the nexte day

day by aut myne of the clocke/ he toke his horſe and rode fro the howſe of ſayne Poll to the caſtell of Lowze/ where he founde the kynge his brother herynge of maſſe. The kyng ſwete ſyr receyued hym/ for he loued hym entierly/ and the kynge ſawe well by the dukes maner that he had ſome diſpleaſure in his mynde/ and ſayd. By fayre brother. what is the mater? it ſemeth ye be troubled. Syr quod he good cauſe why. Wherfore quod the kynge I praye you ſhewe me. The duke who wolde beare no thynge fro the kynge/ ſhewed hym all the hole mater/ and complayned greatly agaynſt ſyr Peter of Craon/ and ſayd. Syr by the fayth that I owe to god and to you/ if it were nat for your honoure I wolde ſlee hym. We ſhall do well ynough quod the kynge/ he ſhall be warned by our counſayle to auoyde our houſe and ſeruyce/ and in lyke wyſe cauſe him to auoyde your houſe and company. I am well content with this q the duke. The ſame day the lorde de la Ryuer and ſir Johan Mercyer ſayd but to ſyr Peter of Craon on the kynges behalfe/ that he ſholde auoyde the kynges courte and ſeruyce/ and go where he lyſt. Inlyke wyſe ſyr Johan of Vuell and the lorde of Dermault ſeneſchall of Thourayne/ gaue hym lyke commaundement/ on the duke of Thourayns behalfe. Whan ſyr Peter of Craon ſawe this he was abaſſhed and tooke it in great diſpyte/ and conde nat ymagyn why it ſholde be. And tre we it was/ he deſyred to come in to the kinges preſence and the dukes/ to know the cauſe of their diſpleaſure. But he was anſwered that nother the kynge nor the duke wolde nat here hym ſpeke. Whan he ſawe none other remedy he apparelled hym ſelfe/ and departed out of Parys in great diſpleaſure in his hert/ and ſo rode into Anjou to a caſtell of his owne called Sable/ and taryed there a ſeaſon ſore troubled in his mynde. He ſawe well he was chaſed out of the frenche courte/ and out of the houſe of Thourayn/ and alſo out of the houſe of the quene of Napies and Ieruſalem. than whan he parceyued theſe tyre howſes cloſed fro hym/ he thought to go to the duke of Bretayne his coſyn/ and to ſhewe hym all his aduentures. ſo he ryd/ and rode in to Bretayne/ and founde the duke at Wannes/ who made hym good chere/ and knewe ſomwhat before of his trouble. And than this ſyr Peter ſhewed hym all the caſe. Whan the duke of Bretayne had well herde all the matter he ſayde. Fayre coſyn take ſomfortе your ſelfe/ all this is ſurely brought about by ſyr Oliuer of Clyſſon.

THis rote and foundacyon of hatred multyplyed greatly after/ as ye ſhall here in this hyſtory. Syr Peter of Craon taryed ſo longe with the duke of Bretayne/ that he forgate Fraunce/ for the conſtable ſyr Oliuer of Clyſſon and the kynges counſayle were agaynſte hym/ and alſo they were nat contente with the duke of Bretayne in that he kepte ſir Peter Craon in his houſe. As for the duke of Bretayne cared nat greatly/ neyther for the good wyll nor yuell wyll of the Frenche kynge/ he prouyded ſuffycyently for his cytes/ townes/ and caſtelles/ in ſuche wyſe/ that he loued as well warre as peace. And all that euer he ryd was well knowen in Fraunce/ and with the kinges counſayle. and ſuche as were nerre about the kynge reputed the duke of Bretayne prowde and preſumptuous/ and thretened him greatly/ but the duke byde lette lytell therby/ and ſayde/ that he wolde make warre agaynſt the erle of Pointhieur in a iuſte quarell/ for the erle of Pointhyeur our coſyn/ wrpteth and nameth hym ſelfe Johan of Bretayne/ as thoughe he were heyre of this countrey. I wyll he be called Johan for that is his name and erle of Pointhieur/ and I wyll be put out of his armes the Ermyns/ and write himſelfe Johan of Blois of Chatellon/ and none other. and if he wyll nat do thus I ſhall cauſe him to do it/ and take fro hym his landes/ for he holdeth it by fayth and homage of vs/ as for the heryage of Bretayne he hathe nothynge to do therwith/ ſo that it ſholde returne to him/ for I haue bothe ſonnes and doughters that ſhall be myne heyres. Let hym purchaſe hym landes in ſome other place/ for as of this he hath fayled. Thus often tymes the duke of Bretayne wolde deuyſe with ſir Peter of Craon/ who wolde nat ſtryue agaynſt his pleaſure/ but rather ryd further in and all for the yuell wyll that he bare to the conſtable ſyr Oliuer of Clyſſon/ and to the counſayle of Fraunce.

Nowe let be leaue spekynge of this mater and treate a lytell of a nother pytuous matre concernynge the erle Guy of Bloys/of whom mencyon is made here before in this hystory.

Of the dethe of the ponge erle Loyes of Chastelone/sonne to the erle Guy of Bloys. Cap. C.lxxix.

It hath been shewed here before in this hystory/ whan I spake of the alyaūce and marryage of Loys of Chastellon/sonne to the erle of Bloys/maryed to ye lady Marye/doughter to duke Johan of Berrey/and at the confyrmacyon of this maryage the duke of Berrey prouyded greatly for his doughter/for she was assigned for her dowry in the cōtte of Bloys/ the somme of syxe thousande pounde money/ corante in Fraunce/to be payed in florayns/ if the forsayd Loys of Bloys dyed before his wyfe/than all the countie of Bloys to be bounde to pay these forsayd syxe thousande frankes. And so it fortuned that about the feest of saint Johan the Baptyste/in the yere of our lorde god a thousande thre hundred fourscore and seuen/this ponge Loys of Bloys sonne to the erle Guy/departed fro his father fro the castell of Wolcy in Bloys to go in to Hapnalt/ to se his mother and wyfe/and whan he came to Beaumonte in Hapnault he fell sycke of a feuer/by reason that he had vyolent fourneys/and the season was hoote/and he was but yuell kepte/and but tendre of age/as of xviii.yeres/by whiche sykenes he dyed without helpe/for the physicions couldē nat put away his hote feuer. Ye maye well knowe that the father and mother were ryght sorouefull/ whan they hueme of the dethe of their sonne and heyre. In lykewyse so was his wyfe the ponge lady of Berrey/who loued hym entierly/and thought her selfe hyghly maryed/specially the trouble of the father was right great/ for he ymagyned that the duke of Berrey was ryght couetouse/and feared lest he wolde entre in to the countie of Bloys/and put him out for the dowry of his doughter. Thus the dukes of Berreys two doughters were bothe wydowes in one yere/the eldest called Boone was countesse of Sauoy/and her husbande the ponge erle of Sauoy called Amē dyed the same yere ryght marueylously/of whose dethe there came great busynesse/and it was layde to sir Othe of Graūtsome/in suche wyse that he was fayne to flye out of Sauoy/and out of Fraunce and Almeyne/and so wente & dwelte in the realme of Englande.

Of the sodayne dethe of the Erle Gaston of Foix/and howe the erle of Chastellon came to thenherytaūce. Cap. C.lxxx.

The same seasone also dyed the noble and gentle erle of Foix ryght marueylously/I shall shewe you by what inuēcyon. Truely of all sportes this Erle loued huntynge with houndes and greyhoundes/and of them he was well prouyded for alwayes he had at his comaundement mo than.xvi.hundred. The erle as than was at Barrey/in the marches of Ostbays/and wente dayly a huntynge in to the woodes of Saluaterra/the way to Pampplona in Nauerre/and the same daye that he dyed he had hunted and kylled a beare/and by that tyme it was high noone. Than the erle demaunded of them that were aboute hym where his dyner was prouyded. It was shewed hym at the hospytall of Ryon/a two lytell myles fro Ostays/and so thyder he rode to dyner/and so alyghted there and went in to his chambre/the whiche was strawed with grene herbes/& the walles sette full of grene bowes/to make the chambre more freshe/for the ayre without was marueylously hote as in the mouth of May. Whan he sette that fre the ayre he sayd. I this freshe aire dothe me meche good/for the daye hath been very hoote/and so sate downe in a chayre. Than he talked and dyuysed with syr Espayne du lyon of his bounden/whiche had rōne best/and as he thus dyuysed/there cā in to

in to the chambre sir Jenbayne his bastarde sonne and sir Peter of Cabestan/ and the tables were redy couered in the same chambre. Than water was brought forthe to wasshe/ and Corandon of Spayne toke a syluer bason and sir Tybaulte toke the towell. Than the erle rose a put out his handes to wasshe/ and as sone as the colde water fell on his hyngars/ he wared pale in the face/ and sodainly his herte fayled hym/ and so fell downe/ and in the fallynge sayd. Ah I am but deed. God haue mercy on me: He neuer spake worde after/ howe be it he dyed nat so soone/ but laye in great payne. The knyghtes that were about hym were sore abasshed and so was his sonne: They tooke hym in their armes and layde hym on a bedde and couered hym/ trusstynge that he was but in a traunce. The .ii. knyghtes that had gyuen hym water/ to the entent that it shulde nat be sayde that they had empoysoned hym/ toke the bason and the ewer and sayde/ Sirs/ here in your presence beholde here this water/ the wherthe we toke assaye of and yet wyll do. And there they dranke therof/ so that euery man was content with them. They put in to the erles mouthe drynke and spyces/ and other thynges comfortable/ but all that auayled nothyng. For in lesse than halfe an houre he was deed/ and yelded vp his brethe swetely. God of his pyte haue mercy on him. all such as were there were greatly troubled and abasshed. Than they closed the Chambre dooze/ to the entent that his brethe shulde nat be so sodaynly knowen abrode. The knightes beholde sir Jenbayne his sonne/ who wepte pitiously and wrang his handes. And the knightes that were with hym sayde. Sir Jenbayne/ ye haue nowe lost youre father: We knowe well he loued you entierly. Leaue your sorowe/ and leape on your horse and ryde to Orthayes. Take you possessyon of the castell and of your fathers treasoure that is within it/ or euer the brethe of your father be knowen abrode. Sir Jenbayne enclyned to those wordes a sayd. Sirs I thanke you of your good counsaile the whiche I shall deserue. But thanke lette me haue some token that is on my father/ or elles I shall nat be suffred to entre in to the castell. That is trewe sir quod they/ take the token for your father. Than he toke a ryngc to his fathers fynger/ and a knyfe that he bare alwayes about hym. Thise tokens the porter of the castell knewe well: If he hadde nat brought them/ he shulde nat haue entred in there.

Thus sir Jenbayne of Foix departed from the hospytall of Lyons and thre with hym/ and rode in haste to the castell of Orthayes. He rode throughe the towne/ no man mystrusted hym and so came to the Castell and called the Porter/ who answered and sayd. sir/ what wolde you haue? Where is my lorde your father? He is at the hospytall of Lyon quod the knyght/ and hath sente me for certayne thynges that is in his chambre and than I must returne agayne to him. And to the entent that thou shuldest beleue me/ Beholde here his ryngc and knyfe. The porter oppened a wyndowe and sawe the tokens: whiche he knewe well. Than the porter oppened the wicket and he entred in/ and his varlettes dyd set vp his hoises. As soone as he was entred he sayde to the porter. Close a gayne the gate. Than he toke the porter and sayd. Delyuer me the kayes/ or els thou arte but deed. The porter was abasshed and sayde. Sir/ why say ye thus? Because quod he my father is deed/ and I wyll haue possessyon of his treasour/ or any other come here. The porter obeyed for he durst do none other wise and he loued sir Jenbayne as well as a nother. The knyght knewe syght well where the treasour laye/ whiche was in a stronge towre/ wherto belonged thre stronge doores/ surely bolted and barred/ and dyuers kayes. partenyng to them. Whiche kayes he coude nat fynde redely/ for they were in a coffer of stele/ and locked with a lytell kaye of Stele. whiche kaye the erle euer bare on hym/ where soeuer he wente/ in a lytell purse aboute his necke. Whiche (after sir Jenbayne was departed fro the hospytall) was founde by the knightes that were about the deed corse. that they maruepled what kaye it shulde be that the erle bare so precyse about hym selfe. than therles chapelayne called sir Nicholas of Scail/ who knewe all the erles secretes (for the erle loued hym well/ & euer whan he went in to his treasoure house/ he had his chapelayne with hym) sayde/ As soone as he sawe the kaye. Ah sir Jenbayne hath nowe lost his payne/ for

ne/ for this is the haye of a lytell cofer wher-
in are all the hayes of the Towre and coffr/
wher all the Erles treasour lyeth. Than the
knyghtes sayde. Sir Nicholas. Go ryde
you to Orthayes and beare hym the haye.
Sirs quod he/ sythe ye gyue me the coun-
sayle I shall do it/ for it were better he had
his fathers treasoure than another: and al-
so I knowe well his father loued hym entirely
Than he tooke his horse and tooke the haye
and rode to the castell of Orthayes. And all
that season sir Jenbayne was settchyng/ all
aboute for they hayes/ and couldе nat fynde
the/ nor wyst nat howe to get the towre do-
wn/ it was so stronge: nor also he hadde no
instrumentes to breke it downe with all. And
in this meane season the men of the towne
hadde soone knowledge/ by varlettes or wo-
men that came fro the hospytall/ howe therle
shulde be dede. There were harde tydynges
to them/ for the erle was welbeloued with all
his people. They of the towne assembled to
gyders in the marchette place/ and sayde one
to another/ suche as hadde sene sir Jenbayn
passe through the towne alone. We haue sene
sir Jenbayne passe through the towne alone
towardes the castell/ & it semed by his coun-
tynaunce he was nat content. Surely there
is some thyng amysse/ for he was nat wonte
to come home before his fader. Thus as they
were communynge togyder/ there came in to
the towne the Erles chapelayne. Thane the
men of the towne came about hym and de-
maunded newes of therle their lorde. Is it
shewed vs that he is dede. Is it so or
nat/ Nay quod the preest he is not dede/ but
he is sore sicke/ and I am come home before
to cause tydynges to be dressed for hym/ and
than I muste retourne agayne to hym. And
so therwith he passed forth to the castell/ and
rode so moche that he entred/ of whose com-
mynge sir ryuan had great ioye/ For without
the haye that he brought/ he couldе nat haue
entred in to the Towre where as the trea-
sour was. Than the men of the towne hadde
great suspecte of the Erles dethe and sayde.
It is nere hande nyght/ and as yet we here
no tydynge of our lorde/ nor of none of his of-
fycers/ and sir ryuan and his chapelayne are
entred in to the castell suspecyously. Let vs
watche the castell this night/ and to morowe
we shall here other tydynges. Lete vs sende
secretely to ye hospytall/ than shall we knowe
howe the matter gothe. Also we knowe well/
the moost parte of the erles treasour is with-
in the Castell/ and if it be stolen away by
crafte/ we shalbe blamed for it. Ignorance
shall nat excuse vs. They all thought it was
best for them so to do. Thane the men of the
towne drewe about the castell and kepte the
gates of the towne surely/ that none shulde
entre nor issue without lycence. Thus they
watched all nyght/ and in the morowyng they
had parfyte knowledge of the dethe of their
lorde. Than every man/ woman/ and chylde
cryed out and wepte pytuously/ for the Erle
was welbeloued. Than the watchmen dou-
bled and encreased in harneste aboute the ca-
stell.

WHan sir ryuan of Foyse sawe the
maner of the men of the towne/
and sawe well howe he was pe-
rceyued/ and that they knewe the
certaynte of the dethe of his ma-
ster. Than he sayde to sir Nycholas. Sir/
I haue sayed of myne entre/ I se well I can
nat departe hens without lycence. The men
of the towne haue knowledge of my fathers
dethe/ and they assemble in great nombre be-
fore ye castell. It behoueth me to humble my
selfe to them/ for force can nat auayle me. Sir
ye saye trouthe quod the preest: pe shall wyn
more by swete and fayre wordes/ than by rude
and frowarde dealynge. Go your waye and
speke with them. Than sir ryuan went in to a
towre nere to the gate/ & oppened a wyndowe
ouer the bridge/ in the whiche towre he was
brought vp in/ tyll he maryed the lady Jane
of Boloyne/ who afterwarde was duchesse
of Berrey: as ye shall here after in this hy-
storye. Than ryuan oppened the wyndowe and
spake to them that were the principals of the
towne/ who che on the bridge were to the wyn-
dowe/ to here what he wolde saye. Than he
spake a loude and sayde: O ye good people
of Orthays/ I knowe well the cause of your
assembly: it is nat wout a great occasion: how-
be it I requyre you as derely as ye loued my
lorde my father/ that ye be nat displeased with
me/ thoughe I haue abaunsed my selfe to
entre in to this castell rather by any other/ for
be entre/ and to take possession therof and of
suche

suche goodes as be within it / for I wyll do nothyng but good. ye knowe well my lorde my father loued me as well and entierly / as his owne sonne / and wolde fayne haue founde the wayes to haue made me his enheryteur. And nowe it hath pleased god to call hym to his mercy / without accomplyll hyng of any thynge of myne aduauncement: And nowe he hath lefte me amonge you / where I haue been brought vp / and lefte nowe as a poore knyght / bastarde sonne to the erle of Foise / without I haue your ayde and helpe. Wherefore sirs / I requyre you in goddes behalfe to haue pytie on me / wherin ye shall do great almesse. And I shall open the castell and suffre you to entre / I wyll nat kepe it agaynst you. Than they answered and sayde. Sir ruan / ye haue spoken so nobly / that it ought to suffyce. And sir / we saye that we wyll abide with you / and our entent is to kepe this castell and goodes with you. And if the Viscount of Chastellon your cosyn / who is next enheryteure to this countrey of Byerne / as nexte parente to your father come hyder / to challenge his herytage and mouables / or he haue it / he shall knowe well howe we shall defende you and your right / fro hym and fro your brother sir Gracyen. But we suppose / that whane the Frenche kynge was laste at Tholous / and my lorde youre Father with hym / that some order was takenne / as touchyng your fathers enheryteaunce: And this can sir Roger of Spaygne your cosyn tell / no man better than he. We shall wryte to him and shewe hym of the dethe of the erle your father / and desyre hym to come hyder to helpe and counsayle vs in all thynges / concernynge the landes of Byerne and of Foix / and also for the mouables: and for thenterement of my lorde youre father. And this we promyse you faythfully to vpholde. With this answere sir ruan was well contente: And thanne opened the gate of the Castell of Orthayes / and suche entred as wolde: And the same daye the Erles body was brought thyder. At the metyng of the castle / men and women wepte pitiously / in the remembraunce of his noblenesse and puyssaunt estate: His wyte and prudence / his prowesse and largesse / and the great prosperyte that he lyued in: For there was nouther Frenche nor Englyll he that durste displease hym. Moost parte of the people sayd. Nowe our neyghbours wyll make vs warr / where as we were wonte to lyue in peace and fredome. Nowe shall we be in bondage / in myserye / and subiectyon. Nowe there is none to ayde vs.

Ah Gastone Gastone sayde sothe, why dyde ye euer so displease your father / that it coste you your lyfe. If ye had ben lefte with vs it shulde nowe haue ben to vs a great cõforte but we lost you to yong / & your father hath tarryed to shorte a season with vs. He was but thyrtie and thre yeres of age. He myght haue lyued for any age / many a yere lengar. It was no great age for suche a prince / hauynge euery thyng at his ease and wyll he. Ah thou lande of Bierne / desolate and without confort of any noble heryteur. What shall become of the? Thou shalte neuer haue agayne suche another / as was this gentyll erle of Foix. With suche lamentacions and weppynges / the body of this Noble Erle was borne throughe the towne of Orthayes / by eight noble knyghtes. The first the Vycounte of Brunyquell / and agaynst hym the lorde of Compayne. The thirde sir Roger of Spaygne / and agaynst hym sir Raymonde of Layne. The fyfthe sir Raymonde de la Mote / agaynst hym the lorde of Besache. The seuenthe sir Menault of Nouailles / and agaynst hym Richarde of Saynt George. And behynde was sir ruan his bastarde sonne. The lorde of Corasse. The lorde of Barantyne. The lorde of Barugc. the lorde of Quere / and mo than thyrtie other knyghtes of Byerne / who were soone come to the holyptall of Ryone / whan they knewe of the Erles dethe. Thus he was carryed with open vysage to the freers in Orthayes / and there he was enbaumed and layde in leed / & so lefte vnder good keppynge / vnto the day of enterrement. And nyght and daye without ceasse / there was brennynge about his body / foure and twentie torches borne by eight and fourtie pomen. Foure and twentie in the nyght / and foure and twentie in the daye.

The

The dethe of this noble erle of Foix/ was anone knowen in dyuers countreis/ and were rather sorye of his dethe than gladde/ for he had in his dayes guen suche gyftes/ so liberally/ that it coulde nat be eschewed: wherfore he was be loued of euery man that knewe hym. Pope Clemente whan he knewe of his dethe was right soroufull for hym/ bicause he had taken great payne in forthergynge of the mariage/ of his cosyn Jane of Bologne/ who was ducheſſe of Berrey. The same season there was at Auignon the byſſhop of Palmes/ who durſt nat com at his benifyce for a displeasure that the erle of Foixe had to hym/ and yet he was of his lynage. The cause was/ the byſſhop wolde haue exalted his iurisdiction and abated therles/ for all that therle made hym byſſhop. Than the pope sente for the byſſhoppe to come to his palais/ and whan he was cõe the pope sayde. Sir byſſhoppe of Palmes/ your peace is made/ the erle of Foix is deed. Of those tidynges the byſſhoppe was glad/ and within a short season after he departed fro Auignon/ and wente to his byſſhoprike in to the countrey of Foixe. Tidynges of the dethe of this erle was anone come into Fraũce to the kynge/ and to his counsayle. The Frenche kyng and his brother/ and the duke of Burbone were sorye of his dethe/ bycause of his nobleneſſe. Than the counsayle saide to the kyng. Sir/ the cõtie of Foix is yours by right succession/ seyng the erle of Foix is deed without heyre of his body laufully begotten/ no man canne debate with you therin. Also they of the countie thynke the same. And sir/ there is one thyng that helpeth greatly your tytell/ ye haue lende there on fyftie thousande frankes. Sir/ lende and take poſſeſſyon of your guage/ and kepe it as youre owne enheritaunce. For they of the same countrey desyre to be vnder youre hande. It is a fayre countre and shall come to you to good purpoſe/ for it marcheth nere to the Realme of Arragone/ and also to Chattelone. And paraduenture here after ye may happe to haue warre with the kyng of Arragon. Than the countie of Foix shalbe a good fronter/ for therin be many fayre and stronge castelles to kepe in men of warre/ and to make good garysons. The kyng herde well those wordes/ and anone enclyned to their counsayle/ and sayde. Sirs/ lette se/ whome shall we sende on this message. Thaſe it was determyned to sende the lorde de la Ryuer/ bycause he was knowen in that countrey/ and with hym the byſſhoppe of Noyon. These two lordes prepared them selfe to go on this legacyon. and whaſe they departed they rode at leyſar by small iourneys/ and toke their waye by Auygnon.

In this meane season worde was sente to the Vicount of Chaſtellon/ beyng in the realme of Arragon/ of the dethe of his cosyn the erle of Foix. Than he rode tyll he came in to Bierne/ streyght to Orthays. They of the towne made hym good chere/ howe be it they toke him nat as than for their lorde/ and saide/ howe all the countrey was nat assembled/ and that first they muſt assemble togyder the prelates/ lordes/ and men of the good Townes/ and to counsayle togyder what they shulde do. Sayeng: that is a good cõtrey that holdeth of hym selfe/ and the lordes that dwelleth therin/ and hath heryptages to be free. Thaſe it was aduysed for the beſt. First to make the enterrement of the erle Gaſton of Foix at Orthays/ and to sende for all the nobles of Bierne and of Foixe/ suche as wolde come/ and than to take counsayle who they shulde accepte for their lorde. Than all baronnes and prelates/ and heedes of good townes of Bierne and of Foix were sente for. They of Bierne cãe thyder/ but they of Foix refuſed to come there and sayde/ they wolde kepe their countrey. For they herde saye the Frenche kyng wolde sende thyder to chalenge the countre of Foix. Howe be it the byſſhop of Palmes was desyred to come to Orthais/ bycause of lynage/ and so he came thyder in good arrap/ as to hym appartayned.

The day of the obſequy of the gentyll erle Gaston of foix/ laſt erle of that name/ done in the freres in the towne of Orthays/ the yere of our lorde god/ a thousande thre hundred fourteze and .xi. on a monday. There was moche people of the countrey of Bierne and of other places/ bothe lordes/ knightes/ and other prelates. There were four byſſhoppes the byſſhop of Palmes who sayd the maſſe/ and the byſſhoppes/ of Ayre/ of Aaron/ and of Tarues in Bierne. There was a goodly herſe

herle and well ordred. And duryng the masse tyme/ there was holden before the aulter by four knightes foure baners/ with the armes of Foix & of Bierne. The first helde sir Raymon of Newcastell. The seconde sir Espaygne du Lyon. The thirde sir Peter deguier. The fourthe sir Menaulte of Noualles. sir Roger of Spaygne offred the sworde/ betwene the Bourge of Campaigne and Pier of Arnaulte of Bierne/ capitayne of Lourde. The helme bare the Vicount of Bzuniquell betwene sir Johan of Newcastell and Johñ of Chanteron. The helme offred the lorde of Valetyne and of Bierne/ betwene Arnalton of Rostem and Arnalton of Saynt Colombe. The horse was offred by the lorde of Cozase/ betwene Arnalton of Spayne and Raymonet of Campaygne. This enterment was honorably done/ accordyng to the vsage of ꝑ countre: and there were the two bastarde sõnes of the erle of Foix/ sir Yuan and sir Gracien/ and the Vicount of Chastellon/ and all the barons of Bierne and some of Foix. But assone as the seruyce was done/ they of Foix departed and rode the same daye to dyner to Herpteil/ two myles fro Orthais. and ꝑ next day be tymes the hyll hoppe of Palmes departed/ he wolde nat be at the generall plyament whiche was the same daye amonge them of Bierne. Thus the erle was buryed in ꝑ freers before the hyghe aulter. So there is no more mencion made of hym/ god haue mercy vpon his soule. ¶ Nowe let vs speke of the order that was taken at Orthais.

AS it was enformed me/ it was said to the Vycount of Chatellon. Sir/ we knowe well that as next of blode ye ought to succede in the heryttage/ as well of Bierne as of Foix: But as nowe we can nat receyue you as oure lorde/ for therby we myght bring the lande of Bierne in to great trouble/ warre/ and daunger. For as we do vnderstande/ the Frenche kynge who is our good neighbour bothe lede hyder of his conseyle/ we knowe nat for what entent/ tyll we here them speke. We knowe well & so do you that our lorde the erle/ whome god pardone/ was this last yere at Tholous with the frenche kyng/ and had secrete cõmunycacion togyder/ the whiche yssue hath nede to be declared/ for if he haue gyuen and released to the Frenche kyng Foix and Bierne/ the kyng than with puissaunce wyll haue & optayne it. Wherfore or we do any thing we wyll know the artycles/ for we of Bierne be in other case & of other cõdycion than they of Foix. We be all fee without homage or seruytude/ and the countie of Foix is holden of the Frenche kynge: and also the people of Foix their hertes be so Frenche/ that lightly they wyll receyue the frenche kyng to their lorde and souerayne: For they haue sayde sithe the erle was deed/ he hath none heritour of his body lawfully gotten. Wherfore the countie of Foix they saye/ shulde parteyne to the ordynaunce of the Frenche kyng. But sir we shall kepe oure holde/ and we wyll serue no lorde but in suche as we ought to do/ whether it be the frenche kyng or you. But sir/ we wyll counsaile you to worke wysely in this busynesse/ by treatie or otherwyse. Than the Vycount said. Sirs/ by what meanes wyll ye counsayle me to worke/ for I haue promised to worke by your aduyse in euery thyng/ accordyng to reason. sir quod they/ we wyll aduyse you to desyre sir Roger of Spaygne your cosyn to kepe you company/ at your cost and charge. And go in to the countie of Foix and treate with the prelates and noble men/ and with theym of the good townes/ that they wolde receyue you to their lorde/ or elles to sytte styll and dissymule the mater tyll ye haue apeased ꝑ frenche kyng/ and taken with hym some cõposicion/ by meanes of golde and syluer/ that ye might haue the enheritaunce in rest and peace. if ye do thus than do ye wisely/ and if ye maye be herde with them that be sente fro the Frenche kynge in to the countie of Foix/ thoughe it cost you a hundred thousande or two hundred thousande frankes/ ye shall fynde ynoughe to paye it with all/ For the erle that is deed hath lefte ynoughe behynde hym. Howe beit sir/ in any wyse we wyll that his two bastarde sonnes haue parte largely of his goodes. Than the lorde answered and sayde. Sirs/ I am content as ye wyll. And here is my cosyn sir Roger of Spaygne/ and in all youre presences/ I desyre hym to ryde with me in this iourney. Than sir Roger answered and said. Sir/ I am content to ryde with you to be as meane betwene bothe ptyes. But if the Frenche kyng my souerayne lorde or his ambassadours desyre me to be of their counsayle/

or els

dyels cõmaũde me nat to medell/than I must nedes leaue you. The Vycount was content and sayde. Colyn/ I trust they wyll nat agaynst youre will take you fro me. and if I may haue you nere me/ I thynke to make a good ende of all my busynesse.

Than (as I was enformed) the Vycount of Chastellon made a requeste before the all/ to horowe fyue or vi. thousande frankes to perfourme his iourney. Also the two bastardes made their requeste/ that they might haue parte of their fathers richesse. Than the cõsayle toke aduyse togyder/ & at last accorded that the Vicoũt shulde haue fyue thousande frankes: And the two bastardes of Foix eche of them two thousande frankes/ and incontynent the tresourers were cõmaunded to delyuer the money. All officers that were in the Erles dayes/ were suffred to occupy styll without any chaungyng and than keperes were sette to kepe the castell of Orthais/ and the richesse that was within it. The Vicount at his first cõynge to Orthais/ gaue pardon to all the prysoners within the castell/ whereof there were a great nombre. For the erle of Foix was a cruell man & wolde spare no man/ but to punysh he at his pleasure/ though he were neuer so great a personage. He had ones in prysone the said Vycount of Chastellon in the botome of a dongion/ eyght monethes/ for all that he was his cosyn germayne. And whane he delyuered hym/ he sette hym to raũsome at. xl. thousande frankes/ whiche was truly payde. And also as longe as he lyued he loued hym neuer after/ so that the Vicount durst neuer come in his sight/ for yf the erle had lyued two yeres lengar/ the Vicount shulde neuer haue had any parte of ỹ heritage of Foix or of Bierne.

Thus this counsayle at Orthays brake vp/ and euery man departed and lefte the Vycount to prepare for his iourney/ who made hym redy as soone as he might/ and desyred certayne knightes & squiers to go with hym. Thus he departed fro Orthais with a two hundred horse/ and rode to Morlens a good towne on the frontier/ bytwene Byerne and Bygorre/ a four myles fro Pauy and a fyue myle fro Tarbe. And the seconde day he rode to saynt Gaulens/ another good towne at the entre of the countie of Foix on the ryuer of Garone. and there tydynges came to hym how we the byssh hoppe of Noyon/ and sir Buryaulx de la Ryuer and other of ỹ frenche kynges counsayle were cõe to Tholous. Than the Vycount toke counsayle of sir Roger of Spayne what was best for hym to do: sir Roger answered and sayd. Sythe we haue herde tydynges of them/ let vs tary here and se what they wyll do. I thynke they wyll sende shortely to vs: and so there they taryed/ for in dede they coulde go no further in to the countie of Foix/ for all the good townes/ castelles and passages were closed agaynst them: As Calumuche/ Casteres/ Mouleson/ Carthas/ Ortyngas/ Fossat/ the cytie of Palmes & the castell/ Montaunt/ and all the castels on the frontier of Aragon. they of the countie of Foix sayd/ that no straũger with any puissaunce shulde entre in to no castell nor towne of their countrey/ tyll the matter were determyned. and as they of the countrey shewed them selfe they were better mynded to be frenche/ & to be gouerned by a seneschall (as the countie and cytie of Tholous was/ and Carcassone and Beaumoyse) rather than to be vnder any other ruler. Howbeit the mater went otherwyse/ as ye shall here. For whan the frenche kynges cõmyssaries were come to Tholous they demaunded newes of the archebyssh hoppe/ and of the seneschall of Foix and of Bierne/ and of other such as had ben at Orthays at the buryeng of the erle of Foix. There they were enformed in what case the countie stode in. Than they toke aduyse togyder/ & determyned to sende for sir Roger of Spayne/ because he was the frenche kynges man by fayethe and homage/ and his officer/ as seneschall of Carcassone. They sent a credable persone with a letter to hym. The messanger rode to saynt Gaulens/ a. xii. myle fro thens. Than he delyuered to sir Roger of Spayne his letter/ sir Roger toke & reed it/ and sayd to ỹ squyer Syr/ ye shall tary here all this day & to morowe ye shall departe/ I thynke ye shall nat go without company. Than sir Roger and the Vycount counsayled togyder. Than it was thought for the beste that sir Roger of Spayne shulde ryde to Tholous and speke there with the byssh hoppe of Noyon and with the Lorde de la Ryuer/ to knowe what they wolde

wedesky. The next day ſ̄ Roger of Spayne and the meſſanger rode forthe together / and came ſ̄ ſame nyght to Tholouſe. Syr Roger toke vp his lodgyng / and the meſſanger went to his maſters. Than the cōmyſſioners ſaid to moyſe we ſhall here tydynges / ſeynge ſir Roger is come. The next day after maſſe ſyr Roger dyde we to the byſſhop and to the lorde de la Ryuer / and made good cheer eche to other / becauſe they were all of aquayntaunce / and there communed the cauſe of their cōmynge. Than the kynges cōmyſſioners ſhewed forthe the kynges predecaſſions / and howe they were ſet and eſtabliſſhed to take poſſeſſyon and ſeaſon of the counte of Foyz. and whan ſyr Roger had well herde them at length / he replyed with ſwete wordes and ſayde. Lordes I am nat ſo nere of ſ̄ kynges couſayle as ye be / and if I were ſaynge your correction / I wolde counſayle the kyng that he ſhulde take agayn his money / and ſomwhat more (tre we it is he hath lente money on the herytage of Foyz / to be reyſed after the dethe of the erle) yet let the kynge leaue the ryght of the enheryteunce to the nexte enheryteure of the blode / this ſhall be for the kynges profyte / honour / and ſaluacyon / and in this that I ſaye / I ſhall ſaye dyuers reaſons / if ye wyll here it. There is one thynge whiche is clere / the erle of Foyz layde his lande to pledge by fraude / for as for golde and ſyluer he had ynough / for that he dyd was for nothynge but to dyſheryte the Vicount of Chaſtellon wrōgfully / becauſe he hated hym without cauſe. Alſo as touchyng the kynges profyte / I enſure you the kepyng of the lande of Foyz ſhulde coſte the kynge more than the rentes or reuenues cometh vnto. And thyrdly the kyng ſhall leſe therby the homage and ſeruyce of ſuche a man as is able to do him good ſeruyce / this ought to be well regarded. alſo it ſhulde be a great charge to the kynges conſcyence to dyſheryte any perſone / without a reaſonable cauſe / for if the herytage of Foyz ſhulde haue ben bought and ſolde / ſyrſte all ſuche as claymeth any ryght therin ſhulde haue ben agreed with all and ſatyſfyed / whiche was nat ſo. wherfore my lordes theſe reaſons well conſydred / ſeynge ye be great wyſe men and counſaylours to the kynge / take good hede what ye do / or ye pronounce any thynge that ſhulde tourne to the kinges ſclaunder / or hurte to his conſcyence / for ye do otherwyſe it were great ſynne / and as yet there is tyme ſuffycyente to fynde remedy. Syr ſoſyn the Vicount of Chaſtellon / hathe ſente me hyther to you / to ſhewe you this mater / and ryght effectuouſly deſyreth you / and ſo do I in his name / to take regarde in this behalfe. It is nat good nor conuenyent a man to take euery thynge byforce / that he maye take. Whan he had ſayde / than the byſſhoppe and the lorde de la Ryuer loked on eche other / at laſte the byſſhop ſayde. Syr Rodger / we ſe and knowe well that all that ye haue ſayd is for good entente / but our cōmyſſyon ſtretcheth nat ſo farre to quyte the bargayne that was bytwene the kyng and therle of Foyze / howe be it for the loue of you / and to bringe the matter ſomwhat to good purpoſe / and that all partyes myght be cōtent / we ſhall put this mater in ſuffraunce / and ye ſhall take the payne to ryde with vs into Fraunce to the kynge and to his counſayle / and than ſhewe there your reaſons as ye ſhall thinke beſt / and if by your meanes ye can cauſe the vycount of Chaſtellon to enioy the herytage of Foyz / who is enheryteure therto / as ye ſaye / we ſhall be ryght gladde therof / for we wyll dyſheryte no perſon. Syrs quod ſyr Roger I am well contente with your ſapenge / if it pleaſe you to abyde here a ſeaſon / your coſtes ſhall be borne of the good that is in the caſtell of Orthays.

The thyrde day ſir Roger of Spayne tooke leaue of the kynges cōmyſſyoners and ſayde. Syrs / I thynke to bringe this mater to a good purpoſe / I muſt be payne to make a tourney into Fraunce / if I tary longe I pray you be nat myſcontent / for it ſhall nat be in my faulte / and I ſhall ſende you daily meſſangers and letters. Thus they departed / they tarryed at Tholous / and ſir Roger rode to ſayne Gaudens to the Vycount of Chaſtellon / and ſhewed him all the mater. the Vycount was joyfull of thoſe tydynges and ſayd. Fayre coſyn ſyr Roger / all my truſt is in you / the mater to vnderſtonde me nerelt is for the enheryteunce wherof I beare the armes / I can nat tell whome to ſende in to Fraunce / but all onely you / to ſhewe my tytle to the kynge and to his counſayle / wherfore for the loue of me / and for that I may deſerue to you in tyme to come / take on you the charge of this voyage: ſyr Rodger ſayd. Syr for the loue of you and of your lynage I ſhall do it. Thanke Roger

¶ ¶ prepa-

prepared for his iourney to ryde in to Fraūce and so toke the way to Ropes/ and the shorter way/for as than truce was betwene Fraunce and Englande/or els the way that he toke had nat been sure for hym / for on the fronters of Rouuergne/Quercy/& Lymosyn/there were many forteresses that made warre for the Englysshe men. Nowe I wyll leaue for a season spekynge of syr Roger of Spayne/ and speke of the frenche kynge/ and of the duke of Bretayne.

Chow the treatie of peace renewed at Towers in Thourayn/ betwene the frenche kynge and the duke of Bretayne/and of the mariage of the doughter of Fraunce to the sonne of Bretayne/and of Johñ of Bretayne erle of Pointhieur and the doughter of the duke of Bretaygne.

Cap. C.xxxi.

We haue herde here before in dyuers places in this hystory/ howe the duke of Bretayne and syr Olyuer of Clysson/ as than constable of Fraunce/hated mortally eche other/and bycause of the hatred that the duke had to syr Olyuer he had grete enuy that he was so great with the kynge/ and so secrete of his counsayle/ and gladly he wolde haue troubled hym/but he doughted ye kynges displeasure/ and often tymes the duke repented hym that he had nat slayne hym whan he had hym in prysone in the castell of Ermyn/ for he thought if he had slayne hym/ than he shulde neuer haue had more trouble by hym. The pruell wyll that he had to hym caused hym to be harde mynded to be obeysaunt to the crowne of Fraunce/ howe be it he knewe well he dyd euell/therfore he suffred all thynge to passe at aduenture/and helde in his loue the englysshe men/ and prouyded suffysyently his townes and fortresses with artyllery & victayles/ and sent priuely in to Englande for men of armes and archers/ & dyd set them in his garysons/ and made to be beleued that he loked to haue warre but his men knewe nat with whome/ howe beit all that euer he dyd was knowen in Fraūce/and many spake largely against him. He knew well that certayne lordes of Fraunce were nat content with hym/but he dyd set lytell therby/ but so passed on his tyme. He had great allyaunce in his cosyns the duchesse of Burgoyne/as it was reason/for he had of her a speciall supporte and ayde / for the lady bycause of lygnage loued hym/and bycause that the erle of Flaunders her father/who was cosyn germayne to the duke had alwayes loued and comforted hym in all his tribulacyons. This lady of Burgoyne was a good lady/ so that the duke her husbande wolde nat gladly displease her/and good cause why/ for ye duke by her helde great herytages/ and had by her fayre children. all the realme of Fraunce was bounde to loue her/and yf he had nat ben/great dyscensions had moued betwene the parties/ for natwithstandynge that the duke of Bretayne had ben at Paris with the frenche kynge/ and made to hym homage/yet I can nat well say if it was with good herte or no/for assone as the duke was retourned in to Bretaygne/ there apered in hym but small amendement/ he had more obeysaunce and to be obeyed/ to the pope at Auignon/ but he was nat/for rather he dispysed hym in his wordes. Also he wolde suffre no man to be promoted in his countrey by that popes bulles/ but helde hym selfe rewter in dyuers thynges/ & wolde gyue the benefyces hym selfe. No clerke coulde attayne to any promocyon of any benefyce in his countrey/ without he had ben well pleased therwith. Also any cõmaũdementes that came out of the parlyament chambre of Paris/ he sette nothynge therby. The prelates and byshoppes of Bretayne lost great parte of their iurisdictions by this duke/so that great complayntes therof was made in the parlyament of Paris/but they hadde small remedy. And whan he was sent for to come to Paris/or els to sende thyder some able personages to make answere to suche matters as shulde be alledged against hym/ and whan any of the kynges officers came in to Bretaygne to somon hym to apere/ thanne he wolde nat be spoken withall / but euer made sondry excuses. And whan the kinges officers dyd departe again thens/ than he wolde say. I wyll go to Paris to se what ryght I shall haue there. It ap-

pe

put thre yeres fence I was there / to ſe what ryght I ſhulde haue / that I coulde ſe noȝ here of no ryght there myght ſtond / the lorde of the parlyament tourne euery thynge as they lyſt. They ſeyen me bery yonge and ignorante / to be lerde as they lyſt / but I wolde they knewe that if all my men of the duchy of Bretaygne / were all of one accorde / and obedyent to my pleaſure / as they ought to be / I wolde gyue the realme of Fraunce ſo moche to do / that I wolde bringe theym that be vntreaſonable to reaſon / and ſuche as hath done trewly ſhulde be rewarded acordyngly / and ſuche as haue deſerued to haue tuſtyce / ſhulde haue as they haue deſerued / and ſuche as wolde haue right ſhulde haue it. Thus many complaynte were made often tymes to the kynge / and ſuche as were of his ſecrete counſayle ſaid. This duke is ryght preſumptuous and proude / ſythe he wyll be brought to no reaſon / and if he ſhulde be thus ſuffred in his lewde opinyon / it ſhulde greatly enfeble the nobleneſſe of this realme / for by hym other lordes ſhall take enſample to do euell / and therby the iuryſdyctyon of the realme lytell and lytell ſhall be loſte. Than it was deuyſed to withſtande / and to fynde remedy for ſuche inconuenyentes / and to ſende ſwerely to hym to come to Towrs in Thouraine / and there to mete with the frenche kyng and with the duke of Berrey / and the duke of Burgoyne / the byſſhop of Charters / the byſſhoppe of Bothune. Theſe four were ſpecyally named / bycauſe the duke loued them beſt aboue all other lordes of Fraunce / excepte the erle of Eſtampes / and the lorde Coucy.

¶ Hue there was ſente in to Bretayne to the duke the erle of Eſtampes and mayſter Iue of Noyent. They toke great payne and trauayle to moue the duke to mete with the frenche kyng at Towrs. they ſpake ſo fayre with freſſhe coloured wordes / armed with reaſon / that the duke agreed to go to Towrs / but further he ſayd in no wyſe he wolde go / and alſo that he ſhulde nat ſe his enemy ſyr Oliuer of Clyſſon in no wyſe. All this was acorded & agreed / or he wolde come to Towrs. Theſe ambaſſadours retourned in to Fraunce and ſhewed the kynge and his counſayle howe they had ſpedde. They were contente therwith / ſythe they coulde brynge hym to none other purpoſe. The kynge and his counſayle made them redy to go to Towrs and to tary there a two or thre monethes / for they thought their treatie with ỳ duke of Bretayne ſhulde nat ſone be accompliſhed. Thus the frenche kinge / the duke of Thouratyne his brother / the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne / and Johan of Burgoyne his ſonne / the duke of Burbon / the lorde Coucy / the erle of Warche / the Erle of ſayntt Poll / and other of the counſaile of Fraſice came to Towrs in Thouraine. Alſo thyder came the conſtable of Fraunce and Johan of Bretayne his ſonne in lawe / and their counſayles / for they hadde maters there to do. And a fyftene dayes after / thyder came the duke of Bretayne. or he came it was ſayd he wolde nat come / for he had thre tymes ſent to excuſe hym ſelfe / ſayenge he was ſycke and coude nat ryde / how be it finally he came / and was lodged at his eaſe. There was ſyr Roger of Spayne to haue ben aunſwered / but the kynge and the counſayle had ſomoche to do with the duke of Bretayns maters / that they coulde entende to nothyng els. This ſyr Roger was there more than two monethes or he coulde be aunſwered / but daily he was aunſwered ỳ he ſhulde be herde / but it was longe fyrſte. Alſo the ſame tyme there fell a nother let / for thyder came fro kyng Richarde of Englande ſyr Johan Clapam / one of the kynges counſayle and of his chaumbre / and Richarde Choall clerke and doctour of lawe / to ſpeke with the frenche kynge and his counſayle / for the ſame matter that ſyr Thomas Percy and the lorde Clyfford had ben at Parys for with the kynge. Whan the englyſſhe men were come to Towrs / all other treaties were cloſed vp and entended to their delyuerance. It was ſhewed me that they brought letters of credence to the kynge and to the dukes of Berrey & Burgoyne. they were herde. Their credence was / that the kynge of Englande and his Uncles wolde knowe if the frenche kynge and his counſayle were in wyll and mynde to kepe their metyng at Ampence to treate for a peace to be had betwene the two kynges / their ayes and confederates. The frenche kynge (who as he ſhewed / deſyred nothynge ſo moche as peace / and anſwered and ſaid / that he was redy to accompliſſhe all promeſſes / ſayenge that as ſoone as he had deliuered the duke of Bretayne and were departed fro Towrs / he wolde entende to nothynge

clesiyll he were come to Ampence/ and there to abyde for the englysshe ambassadours/ and there to make them as good chere as he coude. Here with the englysshe ambassadours were well cõtent/ and were a fyue dayes at Towrs with the kynge/ and than tooke their leaue of the kynge and of the other lordes. The kynge gaue them great gyftes and their costes there payed for/ and so departed. and all that season they sawe nat the duke of Bretayne nor spake nat with hym/ for the duke wolde nat/ leste the frenche men shulde haue any suspecte in hym. Thus the englysshmen retourned to Calays and so to Douer/ and to London/ and founde the kynge and his counsayle at Westmynster/ and there shewed what they had done/ herde/ and sene. The answere that they brought pleased well the kynge and his counsayle/ and ordeyned for their tourney to go to Ampence.

Nowe let vs somwhat speke of the messangers that were sente to the frenche kynge/ fro the Vycount of Chastellon/ out of Foyse and Bierne.

Sir Roger of Spayne & sir Espaygne du Lyon/ who were sent in to Fraunce fro the Vicounte of Chastellon/ they toke on theym great payne and trauayle to purswe their cause/ for certayne clerkes and knightes of the kinges counsayle/ aduysed the kynge to take the countie of Foys/ and to attrybute it to the crowne of Fraunce/ sythe they of the countrey wolde agree therto. The kynge enclyned well therto/ but the duke of Burgoyne who was sage and ymagynatyue wolde nat agree therto/ but sayd alwayes. Let the kynge take agayn his money/ and somwhat more. Howe be it as it was shewed me the duke of Burgoyne coulde nat be herde. But the duke of Berrey toke the busynesse on him/ by meanes as I shall shewe you. ye haue herde here before what fell bytwene hym and the olde Gascon erle of Foyse/ whan the duke sente in to Bierne to the erle suche notable personages/ as was the erle of Sancerre/ the vicount Walley the lorde de la Ryuer/ and syr Wyllm of Tremoyle/ to treate for the maryage of the lady Jehan of Boloyne/ whome the erle of Foyse had in kepinge/ and at that tyme the erle was well content with the maryage that ỳ duke of Berrey shulde haue her/ so that he wolde pay thyrty thousande frankes for the kepyng and bryngynge vp of the lady/ and the duke payed the said some/ and so had the lady to his wyfe. The duke of Berrey remembred the mater than/ and sente for syr Roger of Spayne and for syr Espayne du Lyon/ to come speke with hym in his chambre/ and so secretly he sayde to them. Syrs if ye wyll come to a good conclusyon in your sute/ ye shall attayne therto by my meanes/ but fyrst I wyll haue agayne the thyrty thousande frankes/ whiche I payed to the olde erle of Foys whan I had my wyfe. I haue alwayes ymagyned that if I myght ouerlyue the erle of Foys to haue the money agayne. Whan these two knyghtes herde the duke say so/ they regarded eche other & spake neuer a worde. Than the duke sayd agayne. Syrs to say trouthe I haue taken your wordes fro you/ speke togyther and aduyse you well/ without this treatie ye shall nat attayne to your purpose/ for my brother of Burgoyne wyll do as I wyll haue hym/ he hath the gouernaunce of the countrey of Picardy/ and I of Languedocke/ agaynste my wyll no man wyll speke. The Vycount of Chastellon shall fynde good enough/ for the erle that is dede had more rychesse than the kynge hath in his treasour. Than syr Roger of Spayne sayde. sir though we wolde agree to your demaunde/ yet we haue nat here with vs the treasure to contente you withall. Ah syr Roger quod the duke/ that shall nat let nor hynder the matter/ and ye promyse the dette on your fayth and worshyp I wyll beleue you/ and if it were in a greater mater than that is. Syr quod the knyght I thanke you/ we shall speke togyther and to morow we gyue you an answere. It pleaseth me well quod the duke. They departed fro the duke and went to their lodgynge/ and toke counsayle to gyther whether they shulde retourne agayne home without agrement or els accorde to the dukes demaunde/ so that the heritage might clerely remayne & abyde with the Vycount of Chastellon. The nexte day they retourned to the duke and offered hym all his demaunde/ and so there syr Roger of Spayne and syr Espaygne du Lyon became dettours to the duke of Berrey for xxx. thousande frankes/ on the condicion that he shulde be meane that the kynge shulde take agayne the some of money that he had lente to the erle of Foyse/ and that the Vicount of Chastellon might peasably enioy the herytage. wel quod the

the duke lette me alone/ I ſhall do it I truſte. After that day the duke of Berrey (who deſyred to haue theſe .xxx. thouſande frankes) was ſo good an aduocate for the vycount of Chaſtellon/ that he concluded his buſynelle at his owne wyll. The kynge and his counſayle put all the matter to his pleaſure. and ſo theſe two knyghtes had letters ſeated of the confyrmacyon of the countie of Foix/ to be the trewe enherytaūce of the Vicount of Chaſtellon/ with letters therof adreſſed to ỹ byſſhop of Nayon and to the lorde de la Ryuer/ beynge at Tholouſe. The tenour of the letters as I was enformed by ſuche credyble perſones as went on the ſame legacyon/ was as folowyth.

Charles by the grace of god kynge of Fraunce/ we ſende and cõmende vs to the ryght reuerende byſſhoppe of Nayon/ and to our knyght and chamberlayne the lorde de la Ryuer. We wyll that ye ſuffre the vycount of Chaſtellon enherytour of Foix and of Byerne/ to entoy ỹ poſſede his heritage of the countie of Foix/ with the puttenaūces/ ſo that ye take in to your poſſeſſyon the ſome of .xx. thouſande frankes at one payment/ and the money payed/ than our ſeneſchall of Tholouſe to make a ſure quytaunce of the receypte therof. Alſo at a nother paymente I wyll ye re ceyue twenty thouſande frankes for your coſtes and charges in goynge and retournyng/ and that money payed than make quytaunce therof vnder the ſeale of offyce of Tholouſe. Alſo we wyll that ſyr Yuan and ſyr Gracyen of Foix/ baſtarde ſonnes to the erle Gaſton of Foix/ haue parte and reaſonable aſſignement bothe in landes and goodes of that was their fathers/ by the aduyſe and dyſcretyon of ſyr Roger of Spayne and of the vicount of Byanyquell/ ſyr Raynolde of Newcaſtell/ and the lorde of Cozaſe/ to whome we ſhall wryte that they maye ſo aquyte them to diſcharge our conſcyence/ for we made ſuche promyſe to the erle their father. And if there be any faute in theſe four lordes or any rebellyon in the Vycount/ than we diſanull all this ſayde treatie/ and wyll that it ſtande as voyde. In wytneſſe herof to theſe letters we haue ſette to our ſeale in our cyte of Towrs/ the .xxii. yere of our reygne/ the twenty day of the moneth of Deſembre.

Theſe letters made and ſealed/ and deliuered/ the knyghtes of Foix retourned fro Towrs/ their leaue taken. This ſeaſon ſyr Lops of Dantere marſhall of Fraunce/ lay in the marches of Carcaſſone as ſouerayne gouernour there inſtytuted by the kynge. The byſſhoppe of Noyon and the Lorde de la Ryuer ſent for hym to Tholouſe/ and whan he was come thyder they ſayde to hym. Syr marſhall/ the vycount of Chaſtellon (reputeth hym ſelfe to be enherytour of the county of Foix) and we haue ſent in to Fraūce to the kynge to knowe what he and his counſayle wyll ſaye in that mater/ wherfore be ye redy with mayne of armes on the frontiers of Foix/ and as ſoone as ſyr Roger of Spayne and ſyr Eſpayne be returned/ or that we haue other meſſage fro the kynge that they agree nat on any peace/ and that the kyng wyll haue the lande of Foix/ than entre you incontynent and take poſſeſſyon accordynge to ỹ right and puyſſaunce that the kynge hathe gyuen vs in that quarell. Thus the marſhall was redy prouyded/ and euery day loked for aunſwere fro the kynge. Nowe we wyll leaue ſpeakyng of this matter/ and ſhewe ſom what of the duke of Bretayne.

I haue herde here before what treatie was at Towrs in Thouraine/ by twene the frenche kyng and the duke of Bretaygne/ the whiche duke dyde put the kynge and his counſayle to moche payne/ for he wolde fall to no reaſon. It was ſayde the kynge demaunded of hym and he refuſed. Ayde he wyſe he demaunded/ and the kynge refuſed. Moche treatie there was/ but no concluſion taken. The duke he was redy to ſerue the kynge and to do hym homage/ as farre forthe as he was bounde to do. Thanne the kynges counſayle ſayde to hym. Sythe ye knowlege your ſelfe to be the kynges liegeman/ why wyll ye nat than obey to reaſon. Why ſyrs quod he wherin am I rebell. Than they layde to hym dyuers poyntes. Fyrſte in the beleuynge on the pope at Auygnon/ whome they ſayde the kynge toke for the trewe pope/ ye dyſſes therfro and dyſſymule the mater/ for ye wyll obey none of his comaundementes/ but gyue all the benefyces your ſelfe in Bretaygne/ and ſuche as bynge any bulles fro the pope ye wyll nat knowe them/ this is againſte the mageſty

royall/and great synne to your conscyence and
soule. Than the duke answered and sayde.
As for my conscyence there is no man ought
to speke therof nor iudge it but all onely god/
who is soueraygne iudge in all suche causes/
and sythe ye argue and appose me in that ma-
ter/ I shall answere you. As for those popes
who are indyfferent/ there is no sure declara-
tion made of them/and the reason that the first
tyhynges came of the chosynge of pope Ur-
bayne/ I was in the towne of Gaunt/with my
cosyn the erle of Flaunders/ and there here-
cepued letters sealed with the popes seale/ as
than called Robert of Quesne cardynall/ and
in his letter he certifyed to the erle my cosyn/
that by the grace of god and by the deuyne in
spyracyon he was chosen pope/ and hadde to
name Urbayne. Howe than canne this be vn-
done agayne/ me thynke it were harde to do/
I wyll nat argue agaynst the kinges maieste/
for I am his cosyn and hys ege man / and shall
well and trewly serue hym whan so euer I be
requyred/ as farre forthe as I am bounde to
do/but I wyll speke agaynst them that coun-
sayle nat the kynge well. Why syr quod they/
shewe vs who they be that do nat counsayle
the kynge as they ought to do / and we shall
synde remedy for them. Syr q he ye knowe
them better than I do / for ye company with
them oftener than I do/ but as touchynge the
benefyces of my countrey/ I am nat so haute
nor so cruell agaynst suche as deserue them/but
that I suffre the clerkes of my countrey to en-
ioy them/ by the bulles of pope Clement/ but
suche clerkes as be nat of the same countrey I
refuse them/ and the cause why I shall shewe
you. They wolde beare away the rychesse of
my countrey out therof / and deserue it nat/
whiche is agaynst ryght and conscyence/ wher
fore I can nat agree therto. And where as ye
saye that I am rebell and haue to agaynst the
kynges officers/ whanne they come in to my
countrey that is nat so/nor wyll nat be.ye ought
to knowe/and if ye do nat lerne it/the fee of the
duchy of Bretayne is of so noble a condycion/
that soueraygnely there ought none to enter-
prise any mater there/ but alonely their owne
naturall iudge/that is to say/the duke of Bre-
tayne holdeth his court open to here all ryght-
fes/ and his officers to execute all ryghtes in
the lande of Bretaygne/ and to do acordynge
to their office. And if I haue any officer that
dothe contrary to ryght/ that outher straun-
ger or other haue cause to complayne/ I pu-
nysshe them and shall do/that other shall take
ensample by them. more ouer I say that some
of the kynges counsayle do so that they ought
to be reproued / for they do as moche as they
maye do / to norysshe warre and hatred by-
twene the kyng and me/the cause why is clere
ynough. they suffre my cosyn Johan of Blois
to do two thynges agaynst me vnreasonable.
The fyrste is/ he writeth hym selfe Johan of
Bretayne/by reason of that name it semeth he
entendeth to attayne to the heryrage of Bre-
tayne/ of the whiche he is without and shall
be/ for I haue chyldren/ sonne and doughter
that shall succede after me. Secondely he bea-
reth the armyns whiche are the armes of Bre-
tayne / but of trouthe to do me dyspleasure
withall/sir Oliuer clysson maynteyneth him
in that opinyon/ and as longe as he is in that
case I wyll agree to no treatie with the kynge.
As for warre I wyll make none to the kyng/
because he is my naturall lorde/but if by yuell
informacyon ye kyng make me warre/ I shall
defende me/ & he shall synde me in myne owne
countre. all this I wyll that the kyng knowe.

Thus the treatie betwene the kynge
and the duke of Bretayne contynued
sorgorously / for the duke was lorde
and mayster of his counsayle/ but the frenche
kynge was nat so of his/but was ruled by syr
Oliuer Clisson/and the Begue of Vyllaines/
syr Johan Mercyer/ and by syr Wyllyam of
Montague.the duke of Burgoyne/ who had
clere vnderstandyng of euery thynge/ suffred
the duke of Bretaygnes reasons and defen-
ces to be layde in place/ and couertly he susteyp
ned them/ and had the duke of Berrey of his
opynyon / for he hated inwardly them of the
kynges priuy chambre/ because they had by-
troped his treasourer Betysache shamfully/
by iustyce at Beyseres (as ye haue herde here
before) but he suffred it/for he sawe no tyme to
be reuenged. In this dyfference the duke of
Bretaygne taryed at Towrs thre monethes/
that their treatie coulde come to no good con-
clusyon/and were at the poynte to haue depar-
ted/ and the kynge was in wyll that as soone
as he was retourned in to Fraunce to make a
great assemble to make warre the next somer
after in to Bretayne agaynst the duke/ & for
che of his acorde/ & to leaue all other busines
but the

but the dukes of Berrey & of Burgoyne/the lorde Coucy/therle of ſaint Poll/ſir Guy of Tremoile/the chancellor of Fraūce/ and dyuers other prelates & high barons of Fraūce ſuche as were there/ ymagined to withſtande this rigorous rebellios/& ſpake togyder and ſaid to the kyng. ſir/ we that be the louerayn lordes & piers of your realme/and be nere of your lygnage/ we ſhulde haue a treatie this next lent for a peace to be had at Amiēs with thenglyſh men. Wherfore ſir ye had neyd to make haſte/ & leaue this ruell wyll bytwene you and the duke of Bꝛetayne/for if the duke depte hens without any agrement made bytwene you/ thenglyſh men wyll be ꝑ harder in all their treaties/ for they wyll thynke thē to be ayded and cōforted by the duke of Bꝛetayne and by his countrey/ (for the duke hath thenglyſh men at his hande whan he wyll/ & if we haue warre at ones/ bothe with the Englyſh men & bꝛetons/as we haue had of this they wyll put vs to great payne. Theſe lordes dyde ſo moche with the kyng & his coūſayle/ that at laſt they founde a meane bytwene the kyng & the duke/ I ſhall ſhewe you what it was/ & lykely without the ſame meanes had ben founde/ they ſhulde haue come to no concluſion of good acorde. So it was ꝑ frenche kyng had a doughter & the duke of Bꝛetaine had a ſonne. there was a marryage made bytwene this ſone & this doughē. In lykewiſe Johñ of Bꝛetayne had a ſone by the doughē of ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon & the duke of Bꝛetayne had a doughter. and it was thought to make ſure peace/ ꝑ the mariage bytwene thē two were neceſſary. Theſe marryages were agreed & concluded/ howbeit for all theſe alyances/ yet Johñ of Bꝛetayne ſhulde leaue the armes of Bꝛetayne & beare them of Chaſtellon/ & bycauſe he was extracte by his mother ſyde of a duke of Bꝛetayne (for his mother was doughter to a duke of Bꝛetaygne) therfore he was alowed to bere in his armes a bordet of ermyne with thre labels goules/ on the hede of a lyon of ermyns. Thus he bare theſe deuiſes/ & euery thynge was apꝛoued. So the duke of Bꝛetayne gate the loue of the kyng & of his vncles/ and dyned with the kyng/ and ſo Johñ of Bꝛetayne was erle of Pouhieurs. And thus ſhewed great loue togyder by meanes of theſe marryages/ howbe it the duke in no wyſe wolde ſe nor ſpeke with ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon/ he had ſuche diſpleaſure to hym/ howe beit ſir Olyuer made lyght therof/ for he hated the duke alſo with all his puiſſaūce. Theſe maryages thus acorded & the lordes ſworne and bounde to fulfyll thē/ whan the chyldren ſhulde be of more age. Than theſe lordes determyned to departe fro Tourſe & to dꝛawe to Parys/ for the tyme apꝛoched that they ſhulde be at Impence perſonally. The frenche kyng/ his bꝛother/ his vncles and his coūſayle/ to mete there with the kyng of Englande/ his vncles and counſayle/ who ſhulde be there. So the duke of Bꝛetayne toke leaue of the frenche kyng and of his bꝛother & vncles/ and of ſuche other as he loued beſt/ and ſo departed fro Tourſe & went in to his owne coūtre: and in lyke wiſe ſo dyd all other lordes. The duke of Berrey/ the duke of Burgoyne/ & the lorde Coucy tarryed there ſtyll/ I ſhall ſhewe you why.

Tho we therle of Bloys and Mary of Namure his wyfe/ ſolde the counte of Bloys & all their landes to the duke of Thourayne/ the frenche kynges bꝛother. Cap. C. lxxxii.

WE haue herde here before in this hyſtoꝛye/ howe Lops of Bloys/ ſone to therle Guy of bloys died whan he was ponge/ in ꝑ towne of Beaumont in Heynalt/ wher by the lady Mary doughter to the duke of Berrey was a widowe/ & therby ſhe loſt her welthe of this worlde/ for the chylde was a great enheritour/ & if he had lyued he had ben a great lorde. I ſpeke of it bycauſe it ſhulde be knowen in tyme to come thenheritaūce/ to whome it went out of the right lyne/ and by what maner. therle of Bloys & Mary of Namure his wyfe/ were nat in ꝑ caſe to engendre childꝛen togyder/ for by great dꝛynkyng & moche eatynge of ſwete & delycate meates/ they were overgrowen with fatneſſe/ ſo that therle coude nat ryde/ but was alwayes caꝛied in a lytter fro one place to another/ or whan he wolde go a huntyng or haukyng/ whiche ſporte was gretly vſed with the lordes of Fraūce/ The ſame ſeaſon whyle the frenche kynge was at Tourſe/ the duke of Thourayne had

all pmiſ-

an ymagynacion whiche he brought to effect as I shall shewe you. The duke of Thourayne knewe well/ he had moche tychelle lyeng by hym/ paraduenture a myllion of Florens/ whiche he had by reason of his marriage with the lady Valentyne of Mylayne/ doughter to the erle of Vertus. He wyst nat howe to employ these florens. Than he remembred howe the erle Guy of Bloys had great heritage/ and that after his dethe they were likely to go to dyuers persones. The erldome of Bloys shulde retourne to Johan of Bretayne/ for he was the eries cosyn germayne/ and the landes of Heynault shulde go to the duke Juipers and to the duke of Lancastre/ except Chinay whiche shulde go to them of Coucians by homage/ and the countie of Soussons/ whiche parteyned to therle of Bloys and was auncyently alyed to hym. The lorde of Coucy was enheritour therof/ by reason of his delyueraūce out of prysone in Englād Also the landes of Brages & Monny shulde retourne to other heyres: And the landes of Holande and zelande/ shulde retourne to the erle of Heynaulte. Thus these fayre heritages shulde be sparcled abrode: & this knewe well the lordes of Fraūce. Wherfore the duke of Thourayn who had money lyeng by hym thought to bye these lādes/ if he might haue any resonable bargayne. Thā he thought to entreate the kyng to moue therle of Blois in this matter/ and specially at the lest to bye the countie of Bloys/ whiche was a fayre and a noble countrey/ and well syttinge for hym/ for the countie of Bloyes marched on the duchy of Thourayne: and to the Countie of Bloys parteyned many goodly fees. This duke of Thourayne rested sylt on his purpose/ & ceased nat tyll he spake with ꝑ kynge his brother & ꝑ duke of Burbone/ & with the lorde of Coucy: bycause he was great with ꝑ erle of Blois/ and had to wyfe the doughter of his cosyn germayne the duke of Lazeyne. The duke of Thourayne and the other lordes of his affynite kept this mater secretely fro ꝑ duke of Berry/ I shall shewe you why The lady Mary his doughter was endowed in all the countie of Bloys to the some of.vi. M. frankes by yere: and the duke of Berrey trusted by reason of his doughters dowrie ꝑ the countie of Bloys shulde be his after the eries dethe. this duke of Berrey was a mat-

neyous couytous prince. the duke of Burgoyne in lyke wise trusted the landes of Holande/ zelande/ & Heynaltе to be his/ bycause that Margarete his eldest doughter was maried to Wyllyam/ sone to therle of Heynalte: wherby he thought euther by dieng or by soe other incident ꝑ those landes shulde retourne to his sone erle of Ostrenant/ other wyse called Johñ of Burgoyne/ who as than had maried Margarete eldest doughter to therle of Heynaltе. Thus the kyng and these said lordes purposed ꝑ at their departyng fro Tourse in Thourayn to ryde by Blois to se their cosyn therle Guy of Bloys/ who was an ryght myghty prince fro Tourse/ in a castell of his owne called ꝑ Castell mozant. & there to treate of this marchādise with hym & with his wyfe the lady Mary of Namure/ who was a couytous lady. So it was there was a valiant knight and of great prudence bayly of Blois/ called sir Raynolde of Sens/ who had pryte informacion of all this bulynes/ by what meanes I knowe nat. Whan he knewe it he had great pyte therof/ for loue of therle his lorde/ for he thought by reason of his sale of his lādes/ he shuld be dishonored for euer/ & disherite the true rightfull heyres/ whiche shulde be damnacion to his soule. He thought to lette this mater if he coude/ & so rode fro Blois & spake with therle & said. sir/ the frenche kynges the duke of Thourayn/ the duke of Burbon and the lorde Coucy cometh hyder to you. ꝑ is true q therle/ why speke you that. Sir q he I say it bycause ye shalbe requyred to sell your enheritāce/ wherfore ye haue nede to take good aduise therin. of those wordes therle had great maruayle & said/ I can nat let men to speke & make requestes/ but or I make any suche bargayne to sell myne enheritaūce/ or to dishirite myne heyres to my shame & rebuke/ I shall rather sell or ley to pledge all ꝑ plate I haue. Well sir q the knight/ remembre well the mater whan tyme is/ for this that I haue shewed you is without dout. Bayly q the erle/ I am nat so yong nor so fol yll he to enclyne to any suche treaties. thus the bayly departed fro therle & rode againe to Blois/ for he wolde nat be sene there at the kynges comyng. Whan the kyng and these said lordes came to the castell/ the erle made them good cheer/ as it was reason. The erle and the countesse were right ioyfull/ that ꝑ kyng wolde visyte them in

than in theire owne caſtell. Than the kynge to drawe the erle to his loue/ & to bring hym to his entent ſayd. Fayre coſyn/ I ſe well ye be a lorde of our realme garnyſſhed with honour and largeſſe: and haue ben at great coſt/ and to ayde you/ and ſomwhat to recōpence you/ We wyll you gyue and ayde/ that ſhall be well worthe to you twentie thouſande frankes in the countie of Blois. Therle thanked the kyng of his gyfte/ but he had neuer profite therof/ for he had neuer nothyng. Than the kynge began to treate the Erle to ſell the countie of Blopes to the duke of Thourayn The kynge and the duke of Burbone ſpake fyrſt/ and founde therle very colde and ſtarke of in that mater. Than the lordes drewe to the counteſſe of Blopes/ and ſhewed her ſo many colored reaſons/ and ſhe hers/ that after her huſbandes dethe/ ſhe was lyke to be but a poore lady. Wherfore they ſaid it were moche better for her to be a ryche lady and a puiſſaunt of golde and ſyluer/ and tewelles/ than to be poore. Sayeng howe ſhe was lykely to ouerlyue her huſbande. Therfore they deſyred her to counſayle her huſbande to make this marchaundyſe. The counteſſe/ who was a couytous lady: And for loue to haue the floreyns/ ſhe enclyned to their deſyres/ and ſhe dyd ſo moche with the helpe of other as the ayde of a varlet of the Erles chambre called Sohier borne at Valpgnes/ ſonne to a weyuer of clothes/ but he was ſo great w̄ the erle of Blopes/ that all thynge was done by hym/ & without hym nothyng done. And the erle had gyuen hym in fees and herytage more than fyue hundred frankes by yere. Beholde and conſydre what myſcheſe great lordes be brought vnto/ by meane of ſeruantes. This Sohier had nother wytte nor reaſon/ to be greatly alowed/ but it was alonely the folyſſh he loue that his maiſter hadde to hym. In lykewiſe the duke of Berrey the ſame ſeaſon had one with hym called Jaques Thybaulte/ who was of no reputacion/ yet the duke at dyuers tymes had gyuen hym the ſome of two hundred thouſande frankes/ and yet all was but loſte. This Sohier couldenot can nat excuſe hym ſelfe/ but that if he had lyſted he myght well haue broken that marchāndiſe/ ye therle his maiſter made. but to pleaſe the kynge/ the duke of Thourayne/ the duke of Burbone/ the lorde of Coucy and the counteſſe/ who was agreed therto by courtouſnes of the florens. He rowned ſo in his maiſters eare/ that the Erle wente from his promyſe that he had made to his bayly. And ſo there the reuerſion of the countie of Blopes after his diſcreſqwas ſolde/ for the ſomme of two hundred thouſande frankes/ and the duke of Thourayne to deliuer to the lady of Dunoyes for her dowrie/ whiche was aſſygned to her/ fyue thouſande frankes. And furthermore he ſholde haue made another ſale of all his landes in Heynaulte: And the Duke of Thourayne to haue payde for that two hundred thouſande frankes. Howbe it therin the erle of Blops reſerued to knowe the erle of Heynaltes pleaſure therin/ who was his naturall lorde/ to whom he owed faythe and homage for thoſe landes. Howbe it ꝑ kyng and the duke of Thourayn toke that charge on them/ and to diſcharge the erle/ what ſoeuer ſhulde fall after. Thus or they departed they bounde the erle by promyſe and by wrytynges ſealed/ as they might well and eaſely do/ for he had there none of his counſayle ſaue Sohier/ who neuer was at ſcole/ nor knewe no letter on the boke: Moche after this maner went this marchandiſe. and I haue wrytten this mater as iuſtely as I coude/ to thentent that hereafter in tyme to come/ by reaſon of wrytyng/ the trouthe ſhulde be knowen. For the erle Gupe of Blops my lorde a mayſter/ as he that was ignorant and vnell counſayled/ more by his wyfe and varlet Sohier tha by any other/ made this vnell bargayne. And whan theſe maters were concluded and ſurely made by the kyng/ the duke of Thourayne/ and their counſayle/ than the lordes toke their leaue and retourned in to Fraūce. Great bruit was made of theſe ſales in dyuers countres.

Cho we ſir Roger of Spaygne and ſir Elpaygne du Lyon ſpedde with the frenche kyng and his counſayle/ for the Vicount of Chaſtelons buſyneſſe: and howe he was ſette in poſſeſſion of the countie of Foix/ & of the money that he payde.

Cap. C. lxxxiii.

Howe

NOwe let vs ſo what ſpeke of ſir Roger of ſpaygne and of ye eſpaygne ou Lyon/ and ſhewe how they ſpedde/ after they were retourned fro Tourie to go to Tholous to the byſſhop of Noyon and to the lorde de la Ryuer/ So longe they tourneyd that they came thyder/ they were welcome/ for their cõpynge was ſore deſyred. There they ſhewed their letters/ and howe they had ſpedde. Wherfore the byſſhoppe and the lorde de la Ryuer were ioyouſe/ of that the herytaũce ſhulde abyde with the Vycount of Chaſtellon/ on ſuche condycions (as is before wryttten). Than ſir Roger and his cõpanyon thought to take ſome more payne/ as to ryde to ỳ Vycount of Chaſtellon/ and to the counſayls of Foyze and of Byerne/ to ſe that euery thyng be ſette in good order. Than they departed fro Tholous and rode to ſhynt Gracyens. The Vycount was nat there/ but he was at the entre of Byerne/ in a fayre caſtell called Pau/ and there they founde hym/ who was ioyfull of their cõpynge. And whan he knewe that the Frenche kyng had gyuen vp his tytell of the kyeng of the coũte of Foix/ he was glader than he was before. As for the money ỳ he ſhulde paye/ he wyſt well ynoughe where to haue it/ and moche more.

¶ Of the great aſſemble that was made at Amyence/ of the frenche kynge and his counſayle/ and of the kynge of Englandes vncles: on the treatie of peace. Cap. C.lxxxiiii.

IThynke I haue ſufficiently treated of the buſy melle of Byerne and of Foix for/ if I ſhulde reherce all thynges/ it wolde requyre a long writyng: therfore I wyll leaue ſpekyng therof and treate of other matters. Thus all thyngs cõcluded/ the vicount of Chaſtellon was erle of Foix and lorde of Byerne/ in lyke maner as the olde erle helde it/ and all ſuche as ought to to do made homage to hym/ & he departed largely with ỳ ryuan and ſir Gracien/ tholde erles baſtarde ſones/ in ſuche wyſe that they were content/ and payde to the frẽche kyng all ſuche money as was ymtied to be payde. This mater was nat ſone done/ ſomer was firſt well onwarde/ and ỳ byſſhop of Noyon and ỳ lorde de la Ryuer taryed ſtyll at Tholous tyll euery thyng was ſet in good order/ accordyng as they were charged. Nowe let vs ſpeke of thaſſemble of the lordes of Fraũce and of Englande/ in the good eyte of Amyence on the treatie of a peace or of a truce/ as than beyng the pere of our lorde. M.CCC. lxxx.vi. in the myddes of lent great prouiſion was made ther for theſe lordes or they cãe thyder. Firſt for the frenche kyng & for his eſtate/ and for his thre vncles/ and alſo for other great lordes of Fraũce/ euery man after his degre/ for it was ſaid that kyng Richard of Englãde ſhulde be there/ wherfore many deſyred to ſe him/ ſuch as had neuer ſene him before/ how beit he came nat there/ yet he cãe to Douer/ to thentent to haue paſſed the ſee & his thre vncles with hym/ ỳ is to ſay ỳ dukes of Lancaſtre/ yorke/ & Gloceſter. & whan they came to Douer they tooke aduyſe whyder it were mete (for the kyng to paſſe the ſee or nat All thynges conſydred/ the counſayle of Englande was of opinyon that the kyng ſhuld byde at Douer & the duke of Glocester wyth hym and the duke of Lancaſtre/ the duke of yorke therle of Hũtyngton/ therle of Derby/ ſir thomas Percy/ the byſſhops of Durham & London/ and other of ỳ kynges cõſaile to paſſe ouer/ ſo they came to Calais. And whan the day approched ỳ they ſhulde mete at Amyẽce/ they departed fro Calys no than.xii.C. horſe. it was a goodly ſyght to ſe thẽ ryde in good order. The frenche kyng had ordayned/ that after thenglyſh men came out of Calis/ both goyng abydyng & returnyng/ all their coſtes and charges were borne of the frenche kyngs charge/ as mete/ dyke/ lodgyng & horſe mete With ỳ duke of Lancaſtre & the duke of yorke there cãe their coſyn/ doughe to their ſuſter & to ỳ lorde Coucy/ who was a faire yõg lady called ỳ lady of pyclãde/ for ſhe was wedded to the duke of pyclãde. this lady cãe to Amyens to ſe ỳ lorde her father ỳ lorde Coucy/ for ſhe had nat ſene hym moche before/ wherfore ſhe had

ſhe harde great deſyre to ſe hym. ¶ She came yͤe a noble widowe/hauyng but ſmall rope in her rorage.

THe frenche kyng had ordayned to make the Engliſſhe men as moche honour as coude be deuyſed/ and to the foure dukes/ that is to ſaye: The duke of Thourayn the frenche kynges brother/ and the dukes of Burbon/of Berrey/and of Burgoyne/ lepte on their horſes and rode out of the towne to mete with the engliſſh men/ accompanyed with many other great lordes. Fyrſt mette with the the duke Loys of Thourayn well accompanyed and honorably receyued his coſyns of Englande/ & there comuned a certayne ſpace with the. than he toke his leaue and departed agayne with all his company/ and ſo rode ſtreight to the cytie to the kynge his brother: And the other thre dukes ỽ kynges vncles/ Berrey/Burbone/ & Burgoyne mette with the Engliſſhe dukes in the felde and made great cheer and honorable eche to other/that ioye it was to ſe. Than the gẽtyll erle Dolphyn of Auuergne/ who had ben as an hoſtager in Englande/ and moche in the duke of Lancaſters company/ and loued hym verp well/ He came and humbly ſaluted the duke of Lancaſter. Whan the duke ſawe him he enbraced hym in great token of loue/ and ſpake togyder a lytell. Than the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne came to them/ & the duke of Burbon/the lorde Coucy/and therle of Sapnt Poule came to the duke of yorke/the erle of Huntyngton and to ſir Thomas Percye/and ſo rode talkyng togyder with amorous wordes/ tyll they aproched the cytie of Ampence. Than the duke of Lancaſtre rode betwene the duke of Berrey and the duke of Burgoyn. Thus they rode all thre in a front makyng honour eche to other/ tyll they came to the byll hoppes palays/ where the kynge & the duke of Thourayne was. There they alighted/and the two dukes leede the duke of Lancaſtre vp the ſteres/ and the other dukes and lordes folowed. Than the frenche lordes came in to the kynges preſence: & made their reuerence/ and lefte the Engliſſhe dukes ſtandyng alone. Than a lytell they encline vnto them eche to the kyng. than the kyng cam to them and toke them by the handes/ & lyfte them vp/ and ſpake ſwetely to them & they to hym/ and other lordes of Fraunce fell in talkynge with the other lordes of Englande. & whan they had comuned a ſeaſon/ they toke their leaue of the kyng/his brother/ & vncles and departed & were conueyed to their lodgynges by the conſtable of Fraunce/ the lorde Coucy/the erle of Sapnt Poule/ſir Johan of Vyenne/ and other Lordes of the realme of Fraunce. Than they toke their leaues & begged agayne to the kyng: and the lady of Irelande doughter to the lorde Coucy/was lodged in her fathers lodging & all her cõpany.

IT was ordayned by the frẽche kyng & his counſayle/ be ore thenglyſſh be lord came to the cytie of Ampence (whyche ordynaũce was publyſſhed and proclamed openlye/to thentent that no ꝑſone ſhulde be ignorant therof) but euery man to beware of ore kyng of any artycle in the proclamacion/on payne of leſyng of their heedes. Fyrſt that no maner of perſon make any riot/or gyue any riotous wordes to any Engliſſh man: & alſo that no knight nor ſquier ſpeke or make any chalenge of armes to any engliſſh man/ on payne of the kynges highe diſpleaſure/ & they to company with them ỽ ſwete wordes and goodly behauour/in ỽ towne/lodgynge or feloe: nor that the frenche pages make any debate nor riotte in any place on payne of dethe. And what ſoeuer any engliſſh man demaundeth to ſuſtre them peſably to haue it. & that no hoſt nor victayler demaunde any money outher for meate or drinke/ nor for other ſuche cõmen charges. Alſo it was ordayned that no knight nor ſquyer of Fraunce/ſhuld go by night tyme without torche or torches/ and that the engliſſh men ſhulde go at their pleaſure without any cõtrolement. & that if any frẽchman mete any Engliſſh man in the night in any ſtrete/ ỽ they ſhulde ſwetely & gently conuey hym or thẽ to their lodgyng or to their company. Alſo it was ordayned that in four places of the cyte/ foure watches to be ſet of a thouſande men in euery watche: and that if any fyre happe to fall in the nyght by any incydence/ the watche in no wyſe to remoue for no maner of cauſe: but at ỽ ſowne of a bell/all other people to drawe to quẽche the fyre. Alſo it was ordayned ỽ no frẽch knight nor ſquier for no maner of cauſe ſhulde preſume to ſpeke to the kyng wout ỽ kyng

fyrſt

fyrst dyde call hym. Nor also that the knyghtes nor squyers of Fraunce shulde take nor comune togyder/as long as any of the Englysshe men were present/But to lynde comunynge and passyng with theym. Also it was ordayned/that all hostes and their seruauntes/in anywyse/shulde nat conuey or lyde any Bowes or Arrowes/or any other thynge parteynynge to the Englysshe men/without makynge of large amendes/without it were gyuen them by the Englysshmen of their curtesy: than to take it or els nat. All these thynges were determyned by delyberacyon of good counsayle/to do the Englysshe men the more honoure/for they trusted of a good conclusyon of peace. Nighe euery day a fyftene dayes togyder/these lordes were in counsayle/and brought nothyng to conclusyon/for their demaundes were greatly different. The Frenche men demaunded to haue Calais raced and beaten downe/in suche wyse/that no persone shulde dwell there after. The Englysshe men wolde in no wyse agree to that treatie: for it ought to be beleued/that Calais was ye towne of the worlde that the comons of Englande loued best/for as longe as they be lordes of Calays/They sayde they bare the kayes of Fraunce vnder their gyrdell. Thoughe the lordes departed euery daye vnagreed/yet they departed alwayes right amiably/for euery daye they poynted to mete agayne the nexte day/bothe parties trustyng at last to conclude on some good poynt. The frenche kyng made thenglysshe men in ye space thre notable dyners at his palais. In lykewise so dyde the duke of Thourayne/the duke of Berrey/the duke of Burgoyne/the duke of Burbone/the lorde of Coucy/and the erle of Saynt Poule: Eche of these made the Englysshe men a great dyner. And for euery thyng that the Englysshmen toke in the towne was payd for/and clerkes apoynted by the kynge and his counsayle to wryte euery thyng/and euery man apoynted for their money to the chambre of accomptes. It ought to be knowen/that Johan duke of Lancastre and his brother the duke of yorke for all that they were come thyder on trust of peace/yet they had charge of the kyng of Englande and of his counsayle/that what forme treatie they made/in no wise they shulde nouther gyue nor take any maner of thynge.

Many were of the opynion/that the comynaltie of Englande rather enclyned to warre than to peace/for in the tyme of good kyng Edwarde the thirde/and of his sone the prince of Wales/they had so many fayre and highe victories on ye frenche men/and so great conquestes/with so moche money for raunsomes/sellyng and pateryage of townes & countreis/that they were become marueylous riche: for many suche as were no gentylmen of byrthe/by reason of their hardynesse and valyaunt aduentures/wan and conquered so moche golde and syluer that they became noble/and rose to great honour. And so such as folowed after wolde folowe the same lyfe/how bett after ye dayes of the sayd kyng Edwarde and ye prince his sonne/by the wysdome and highe enterprise of sir Bertram of Clesquy/and by the ayde of other good knyghtes of Fraūce. The Englysshmen were than agayne sore put backe. The duke of Glouceſtre sonne to the sayde kynge Edwarde/and vncle as than to kyng Richarde/than beyng at Amyens/& dyuers other lordes/knightes/and squyers were of the same opynion that the comons were of in Englande/and enclyned rather to the warre than to peace/to the entent therby to susteyne their estate. By the occasion therof the peace was the harder to dryue. yet the kynge & the duke of Lancastre wolde fayne haue hadde peace/for by their meanes that metynge at Ampēe was apoynted/howbeit they wolde nat displease the comens of Englande. The Englysshe men wolde gladlye haue hadde a peace/so they myght be restored agayne to al suche landes as was agreed on/at the treaty before Charters/and that the Frenche men shulde paye fourtene hundred thousande frāks/whiche was vnpayd whan the warre began to renewe.

In this season/thus great comunycacion there was at the cytte of Amyence/on treatie of peace: and the lordes that were there on bothe partes toke great payne in the cause. It myght well be marueyled why this peace toke none effecte/for specially the duke of Burgoyne dyd what he coude for the Frenche partie/and the duke of Lancastre for the Englysshe partie. Notwithstandyng the charge that he had/whiche he durst nat passe.

dairpalle. Whan theſe lordes ſawe that they coulde come to no good concluſyon / than the frenchemen ſom what to appeaſe and to pleaſe the engliſſhmen / and the rather therby to fall to ſome reaſon / it was offred to them to enioy ſyll peſtably / all that euer they were as than in poſſeſſyon of in Acquytayne / and tyme dyd ceaſe to be quite delyuered without any reſorte / ſo that Calays myght be beaten downe. And alſo they offred to paye in three yere after the ſomme of. xxiii. hundred thouſande frankes. Than the duke of Lancaſtre and the engliſſh counſayle anſwered and ſayd. Syrs we haue tarried here a longe ſeaſon and haue concluded nothyng / nor we cannot conclude tyll we be returned in to Englande / and than we ſhall ſhewe all your delyres and offers to the kyng our fouertayne lorde / and to the thre eſtates of the realme / and of one thinge be you ſure / that as moch dyligence as I and my brother of yorke can do / ſhall be doone to bringe your delyre to paſſe / except that beatyng downe of Calays / we dare nat ſpeke therof / for if we dyd we ſhulde ryn in the indygnacyon and hatred of the moſt parte of all the realme of Englande / and yet were we better to ſpeke no worde therof. theſe wordes ſomwhat contented the frenche kynge and his counſayle / and deſyred them that whan they were returned into Englande to do their dyligence in the matter / and they ſaid they wolde do what they coude for the frenche party / ſayeng how we the warre had endured ouer longe / and many euell inconuenientes hath enſued therby in the worlde. than it was conſidred by ſwene the parties / bycauſe the truce fayled the next myddſomer after / bytweene Englande and Fraunce / to contynue it lengar the ſpace of an hole yere / bothe by lande and by ſee bytweene them / their alyes / and adherentes / and therto the lordes of Englande were agreed. Than the frenche kynges counſayle deſyred to ſende two frenche knightes to go with them into Englande / and at their returne to bringe worde what caſe they ſhulde fynde the realme of Englande in. The duke of Lancaſtre and the duke of yorke were contente therwith. It was ſhewed me / and alſo the appearaunce was great / how we that the frenche kynge deſyred greatly to haue peace / for as than great haute ranne through Fraunce and other places / how we that Lamorabaquyn was entred with great puiſſaunce of turkes into the realme of Hungry. ſyr Bouicquant the yonger marſhall of Fraunce brought thoſe newes / and ſyr Johan of Charon / who were newely returned fro the partyes of Grece and Turkey / wherfore the frenche kynge in his youthe / had great affectyon to go in voyage / and to go and ſe the ſayd Lamorabaquyn / and to recouer the realme of Armony / whiche the turkes had wonne fro the kynge Lyon of Armony / who was the ſame tyme at Auygnon / and he ſhewed the cauſe of his comynge thyder / to the duke of Lancaſtre and to the duke of yorke. They knewe hym well for they had ſent him before in the realme of Englande. He was in Englande to treate for the peace whan the frenche kynge was at Seluſe. And conſyderynge the kynge of Armonyes buſyneſſe at the ende of their parlyamente / the frenche kynge ſayde to the duke of Lancaſtre. Fayre nephewe if peace maye be had bytwene vs and the kynge of Englande / we myght than make a voyage in to Turkey / comfortyng the kynge of Hungry / and the emperour of Conſtantynople / whome Lamorabaquyn bothe moche trouble / and lat vs recouer the realme of Armony / whiche the turkes kepe. We here ſaye that Lamorabaquyn is a valyaunt man / and of great enterpryſe / and agaynſt ſuche perſones as are contrary to our beleue / and daily dothe trouble and greue vs / we ought to enclyne our ſelfe to defende our cryſten fayth / wherfore fayre nephewe we helpe you to prouyde for this voyage in the realme of Englande. The duke of Lancaſtre prouyded to do his deuoyre in that behalfe. Thus they toke leaue eche of other.

This counſayle at Auygnon endured a fyftene dayes / than the engliſſhmen departed / and had with them in writyng the concluſion of their treatie / to ſhewe to the kynge of Englande and his counſayle. Than the ducheſſe of Irelande departed fro Auygnon and toke leaue of her father the lorde of Coucy / and returned with the engliſſhe lordes. And fro that tyme that they departed fro Calais tyll they came thyder agayne / they ſpent nothyng without they dyd / for the frenche kynge made euery thynge to be payed / bothe for them ſelfe and for their horſes. The duke of Burgoyne than returned into Arthoys to the cyte of Arras / and there he founde the ducheſſe his wyfe / who had byſyted the countrey

of Flaunders. The duke of Thourayne/ the duke of Berrey/ and the duke of Burbone/ ta
ryed with the kynge/ and the kynge purposed to go to Beamoys & to Gysors to sporte hym there in the waye to Parys. With the duke of Lancastre & the duke of yorke certayne knigh tes of Fraunce wente in to Englande/ as syr Johan of Castell Mozante/ & sir Tauppn of Cantmell/ to bringe answere agayne out of Englande/ and sir Raynolde du Roy/ the lorde of Woncaurell/ and ꝓ lorde of the olde to bue/ conueyed them to Calays/ and than toke their leaue/ and the englysshe men passed ouer the see to Douer/ and there founde the kynge and the duke of Glocestre tarying for them. Whan the kyng sawe them he had great comunynge with them of the state of the parlyamente of Ampence. The kynge was well content with that his vncles had done/ but than the duke of Glocestre/ who was alwayes harde agaynst the treatie of peace sayd/ howe there coulde no good conclusyon be taken in this treatye tyll the mater were brought to Westmynster to a Generall counsayle of all the thre astates of the realme/ and than to folowe their aduyses and none otherwyse. The duke of Glocestres wor des were well herde/ no manne wolde saye a gaynst hym/ for he was greatly in the loue of the realme. Than it was shewed to the knigh tes of Fraunce that they muste go with them to London/ other wyse they coulde haue none answere. The two knightes obeyed as it was reason. Than the kynge toke his way and the lordes with hym to London. Whan the kynge came to Hartforde/ he tooke his waye to El tham/ and refreshed hym there with the quene and than came to Shene/ and wente agaynst sayncte Georges feest to Wyndsore/ and there the knyghtes of Fraunce were answered. but or I shewe you their answere/ I wyll some what speke of the frenche kynge.

After that this assemble and counsayle had been at Ampence/ the frenche kynge for lacke of good gydyng fell sycke of the fruer/ wherfore he was counsay led to chaunge the ayre. So he was layde in a lytter and caryed to Beamoys/ and there ta ryed in the bysshops palays tyll he was hole and recouered/ his brother the duke of Thou rayne with him/ & his vncles the dukes of Ber ry and Burbone/ there he helde his Easter. And after whan the kynge was strenge and myght well ryde/ he rode to Gysors/ the en tryng in to Normady/ to haue there the sporte of huntynge/ for theraboute were many fayre wodes. The kyng beynge there sir Bernarde of Armynake/ who was brother to Johan of Armynake came to the kynge in good array/ and the Dolphyn of Auuergne in his compa ny/ whome he founde at Parys in his waye. There the erle of Armynake and the Erle of Rodays made their relefe and homage to the kynge/ accordynge to the custome as other lor des of Fraunce made their relefe/ for suche landes as they helde in fee of the kynge. And whan euery thyng was writen and registred/ they toke their leaue and retourned to Paris togyther/ and fro thence to their countreys/ to Auuergne and to Languedoc. And about the feest of Assenson tyde the frenche kynge re tourned to Parys in good helthe/ and lodged at his howse of sayncte Poll/ the whiche was ordeyned for hym/ and thyder was come the frenche quene and the duches of Thourayne.

Nowe let vs speke of syr Johan of Ca stell Mozante/ and of syr Tauppn of Cantmell/ who were in Englande tarynge for an answere of the kyng and his counsayle. They were at Wyndesore at sayncte Georges feest/ where was the kynge/ his vncles/ and o ther great lordes of Englande. There these lordes counsayled togyther on suche promyse as they had made to the frenche kyng and his counsayle at Ampence/ and determyned to de lyuer the two frenche knyghtes/ that dayly called on them for an answere. Than these knyghtes were sente for on a day/ and it was sayde to them thus. Syrs be contente/ for all thinges considred ye canne haue of vs no full answere at this tyme/ for it wolde be harde as nowe to assemble togyther the thre estates of the realme/ vntyll the feest of Mychelmas/ at whiche tyme they muste nedes be at the par lyamente at Westmynster/ and to excuse you we shall wryte letters for the same purpose/ at whiche season if you or any other for the par tie of Fraūce wyll trauayle so farre as to come thyder/ they shall haue a reasonable answere/ suche as generally the hole counsayle of the thre astates shall agre vnto. whan the frenche knyghtes sawe what answere they had/ and coulde haue none other/ they answered and sayd.

ſayd. Syr we are contente with that ye haue ſayd/lette vs haue our letters and we ſhall re-tourne. Than their letters were delyuered to them/and ſo toke their leaue of the kynge and of other lordes/and ſo came fro Wyndeſore to London and/ made the redy to departe. The kyng of Englande cauſed all their coſtes and charges to be payed for/and conueyed to Douer/ and there tarryed a fyue dayes for lacke of wynde/and on the fyrſte day they departed and arryued at Boloyne/ and whanne their horſes were vnſhypped they rode to Ampēce by ſmall iourneys/& ſo to Paris/and there they founde the kynge and his lordes. It was aboute the feeſt of Pentheroſt. Their letters were redde/ wherby they vnderſtode the ordynaūce of the englyſſhmen. As it was ſhewed me the kynge nor his counſayle toke lyteſſ regarde to the mater/ for within a ſeaſon after they had moche a do in other places.

Howe ſyr Peter of Craon through ruell wyll/ by ſubtyle crafte/ beate downe ſyr Olyuer of Clyſſon/ wherwith the kynge and his counſayle were ſore diſpleaſed. Ca. C.lxxxv.

We haue well herde here before how ꝑ Peter of Craon/ who was a knyght of great lygnage/ but he was farre out of the frenche kynges grace and the duke of Thouraynes. if he dyd ſomoche to cauſe them to be diſpleaſed with him he dyd ruell. ye haue herde alſo howe he was gone in to Bretayne to the duke / who ſhewed hym that the ruell wyll that the kynge bare hym was by the meanes of ſyr Olyuer of Clyſſon. It may well be that he was ſo enfourmed/ in that he hadde ſo great hate to the conſtable ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon/ for he ſtudyed euer after howe to vyſtroy hym. Thus whyle ſyr Peter of Craon was with the duke of Bretaygne/ they wolde often tymes comune togyder/ and deuiſe howe they myght bringe ſyr Olyuer of Clyſſon to dethe/ for they ſayd that and he were ones deed there was none ꝑ wolde greatly reuenge his dethe. The duke repeted hym that he had nat ſlayne hym whan he had hym in priſone/ and wolde as than that it had coſte hym a hundred thouſande frankes/ that he had hym agayne at his wyll. Whan ſyr Peter of Craon ſawe that the duke had ſuche hatred to ſyr Olyuer of Clyſſon/ he purpoſed a marueylous ymagination in himſelfe/ for by apparaūce men ſhulde gyue iudgement. This knyght thought howe ſo euer it were that he wolde ſlee the conſtable/ and thought to entende to nothynge elſ tyll he had ſlayne hym with his owne handes/ or cauſed hym to be ſlayne/ and afterwarde entreat for peace. He doubted nothyng Johñ of Blois/ nor the ſonne of the Vicounte of Rohan/ who had wedded two of the conſtables doughters/ he thought to do well ynough with theym as longe as ꝑ duke was on his parte/ for he ſawe well the ſtrengthe and puyſſaunce of Bloys was greatly febliſſhed/ for the Erle Guy of Bloys had ſolde the herytage of Bloys to the duke of Thourayn/ whiche ſhulde haue ronne by ſucceſſyon to therle of Potinthyeur Johan of Bloys/ wherby he thought that the duke of Thouraine ſhewed hym but ſmall loue nor aſſyaunce of lynage/ to bye away his enheritaunce/ wherfore this ſyr Peter thought if ſyr Olyuer of Clyſſon were deed/ done to apeaſe the kynges ruell wyll and the duke of Thouraynes/ and therby done to ouercome the lorde de la Ryuer and ſyr Johan Vercyer/ Montagu/ the Vegue of Villayns/ and ſyr Johan of Vaile/ and other of the kynges chambre/ ſuche as ſuſtepned the conſtable. for he knewe well that the duke of Berrey and the duke of Burgoyne loued them nothynge in wardely/ whatſoeuer they ſhewed outwardly. Thus ſir Peter of Craon percepuered ſtyll in his oppynyon/ and deuyſed in his imagynacion by the entyſyng of the dyuell/ who neuer ſlepeth/ but waketh and enbraſeth their hartes to do ruell that enclyneth to his exoytacion. Thus the dyuell daily layde the mater before this knyghtes eyen/ or he put the mater to execuſyon/ but if he had iuſtly ymagyned the doutes and parelles / and myſchieuouſneſſe that myght fall by his ruell dede/ reaſone and wyſe attemperaunce ſhulde haue cauſed hym to haue done otherwyſe. Buſhi is often tymes ſaid that the great deſyre that a man hath to haue the execuſyon of that thynge/ or it be fallen often tymes quencheth reaſon and wyſdome/ therfore often tymes dyers are mayſters and vertues

bylate and corrupted / and for bycause that
specially this syr Peter of Craon had so great
affection to the dystruccyon of the constable /
therfore he lyghtly enclyned to the temptacion
to do outrage and folly / and thought that if he
myght slee the constable and returne agayne
safely in to Bretayne / that no man wolde seke
hym there / if they dyd he trusted that the duke
wolde excuse hym / and that if the worste fell /
that the Frenche kynge came thyder with a
great puyssaunce / than in a nyght to entre in
to a shyppe and so to go to Burdeaux / to Bay
on / or in to Englande / and there he thought
well he shulde nat be pursewed / for he knewe
well that the englysshe men hated the consta-
ble bycause of the cruelties that he had doone
and consented to be done sythe he was tour-
ned frenche howe be it before that he had done
many notable seruyces to the englysshe men /
as it hath ben rehersed here before in this hy-
story.

SYr Peter of Craon for to accõplysh
his desyre / had longe studyed in his
mynde / howe to bryng his purpose
to passe / and kepte his purpose close and se-
crete. I knowe nat if he shewed it to the duke
of Bretayne or nat / some thoughtyes / bycause
after the deve done by hym and his company /
he toke the nerest way he coude in to Bretayne /
and tooke for his sauegarde the duke of Bre-
tayne. and also before the deve done he solde
his castelles and heritage that he had in An-
iou to the duke of Bretayne / and renyed his
homage to the frenche kynge / and sayd howe
he wolde go ouer the see. Of all these maters
I passe breuely / but I shall declare the deve /
for I syr Johan Froyssart auctour of this hy-
story / whan this unhappy deve was doone by
syr Peter of Craon / agaynste syr Olyuer of
Clysson / I was the same tyme at Paris / wher
fore I ought to be well enfourmed of the ma-
ter / accordyng to the enquery that I made ther
in to knowe the trouthe. The same tyme this
syr Peter had in the towne of Paris a fayre
house standynge in the churche parde of sayne
Johans / as dyuers other lordes had in the cy-
tie for their pleasure. In this house there was
a keper. syr Peter of Craon had sent of his ser
uauntes to Paris / and they prouyded large-
ly in the house with wyne / corne / flesshe / fyshe /
and other prouysyons. Also he had wryten to
the keper that he shulde bye certayne harneys
as cotes of stele / gauntletes / stoles and other
harnesse for .xl. men / and that doone to sende
hym worde therof to the entente that he wolde
sende for them / and secretly all this to be done.
The keper who thought none yuell and to o-
bey his mayster̃s cõmaundement / bought all
this marchaundyse. And all this season he was
in a castell of his owne in Anjou called Sa-
ble / and he sent one weke thre or four seruaun-
tes to his house in Paris / and so weekely tyll
he had there a .xl. and shewed them nothynge
for what cause he sent them thyder / but he char
ged them to kepe them selfe close in his howse
in any wyse / and what so euer they lacked the
keper of his house shulde prouyde for it. and
on a daye I shall shewe you the cause why I
sende you thyder before / ye shall haue good
wages. They dyd as he commaunded them /
and came priuely to Paris / and entred in to
the house by nyght and in the mornynges / for
as than the gates of Paris nyght and daye
stode open. There assembled in that house so
many togyther / that they were a .xl. compa-
nyons hardy men and outragyous. Howe be
it there were some that if they hadde known
wherfore they came thyder / they wolde nat
haue come there / yet they kepte themselfe se-
crete. Than at ỳ feest of Pentecost syr Peter
of Craon came to Paris secretly & entred into
his howse / dysguysed lyke a seruaunt. Than
he called for the porter that kepte the gate / and
sayd. I cõmaunde the on payne of thy lyfe let
no man / woman / nor thylde entre in to this
house / nor none to go out without my cõmaun
dement. The porter obeyed as it was reason /
and so dyd the keper / and he cõmaunded the
kepers wyfe & her chyldren to kepe her cham-
bre and nat to issue out therof / wherin he dyd
wysely / for if the woman and chyldren had
gone abrode in the streates / the compynge thy-
ther of syr Peter Craon had been knowe / for
chyldren and women naturally are harde to
kepe counsayle / of that thynge a man wolde
haue kepte secrete. Thus syr Peter and his
company were secretly in his howse tyll the
day of the holy sacramente / and euery day syr
Peter had a brode his spyes that brought him
worde of the state of syr Olyuer Clysson / and
tyll that daye he couldе fynde no tyme to exe-
cute his enterprise / wherwith he was sore dis-
pleased in hym selfe. The said day the frenche

kynge

kynge kepte a feeſt with open courte with all the lordes that were there. Alſo the quene and the duches of Thourayne were there in great ioy and ſolace. The ſame day after dyner the ponge luſty knyghtes were armed and luſted valyauntly in the preſence of the kynge and of the quene and other ladyes and damoſels and contynued tyll it was nere nyght and by the iudgement of the ladyes and harauldes the price was gyuen to ſyr Gillyam of Flaunders erle of Namure. And the kynge made all the lordes and ladyes a great ſupper and after ſupper daunced tyll it was one of the clock after mydnyght. than euery man departed to their lodgynges ſome to one place ſome to a nother without feare or doute of any thyng. Syr Oliuer of Cliſſon who as than was conſtable of Fraunce departed fro the kynges place laſt of all other and had taken his leaue of the kynge and than went through the duke of Thourayns chambre and ſayde to hym. Syr will ye tary here all nyght or els go to your lodgyng of Poullayne. This Poullayn was the dukes treaſourer and dwelte a lytell beſyde the ſygne of the Lyon of ſyluer. Than the duke ſayde conſtable I can not tell as yet whether I do tary here or els go thyder go ye your waye to your lodgynge for it is tyme. Than ſyr Oliuer toke his leaue of the duke and ſayd. ſyr god ſaue you good nyght and ſo departed and in the ſtreate he founde his ſeruauntes and his horſe and eyght perſones and two torches. Than he rode forthe to entre in to the hygh ſtreate of ſaynt Katheryns.

Sir Peter of Craon had the ſame nyght layde good eſpyall on ye Oliuer of Cliſſon and knewe well that he was bydden beyonde his company with the kynge and that his horſe ſtayed at the kynges gate for hym. Than he mounted on his horſe and all his company well armed couertly and there paſt not fyue of his company that knewe his entent. and whan he came in to ſaynte Katheryns ſtreate there he taryed and abode priuely for the conſtables cõming. And as ſone as the conſtable was yſſued out of the ſtreate of ſaynt Powle and came in to the hyghe ſtreate and his torches beſyde hym and came eyenge talkyng with a ſquyer of his ſayenge. To morowe I muſt haue at dyner with me ye duke of Thourayne the lorde Coucy ſyr Johan of Vyen ſyr Charles Dangers the barone of Virey and dyuers other wherfore ſpeke to my ſtewarde that they lacke nothynge. And ſayeng of thoſe wordes ſyr Peter Craon and his company came on hym and at the firſt they ſtrake out the torches. And whan the conſtable herde the ruſhynge of the horſes behynde hym he thought it had been the duke of Thourayne that had folowed and ſported with hym and ſayde. Ah ſyr it is yuell doone but I pardon you ye are ponge and full of play and ſporte. With thoſe wordes ſyr Peter of Craon drewe out his ſwerde and ſayd ſlee the conſtable ſlee hym for he ſhall dye. What arte thou quod Clyſſon that ſpekeſt thoſe wordes. I am Peter of Craon thyne enemye thou haſt ſo often tymes dyſpleaſed me that nowe thou ſhalte make amendes and therwith ſtrake at the conſtable and ſyr Peters men drewe oute theyr ſwordes and ſtroke at the conſtable who had no wepon but a ſhorte knyfe of two foote of length and defended hym ſelfe as well as he myght and his men were without armure and ſone put a rode fro their maſter. Than ſyr Peters men ſayd ſhall we ſlee them all. yea quod ſir Peter all ſuche as make any defence. Their defence was but ſmall for they were but eight perſones and without armure. Sir Peter demaunded nothynge but the dethe of the conſtable ſome that were there whan they knewe it was the conſtable they gaue hym but faynte ſtrokes for a thynge doone by treaſon is doone cowardly without any hardyneſſe. The conſtable defended hymſelfe valyauntly with that wepon that he had howbeit his defence hadde hayled hym but lytell and the great grace of god had not ben. Styll he ſate on his horſe tyll he had a full ſtroke on ye heed with whiche ſtroke he fell fro his horſe eyght againſt a bakers doore who was vp and buſy to bake breed and had left his doore halfe open whiche was happy for the conſtable for as he fell fro his horſe he fell againſte the doore and the doore opened and he fell in at the doore and they that were a horſebacke couldo nat entre after hym the doore was ſo lowe and ſo lytell. God ſhewed great grace to the conſtable for if he had fallen in the ſtreate as he dyde in at the doore or if the doore had been ſhytte he had ben ſlayn without remedy but they that were a horſebacke durſte nat alyght and alſo they thought and ſo dyd ſyr Peter ye on the ſtroke

that he had on the heed/ that at laste it shulde be his dethes wounde. Than syr Peter sayd/ go we hence/ we haue done ynough/ for if he be nat deed/ he wyll dye on the stroke that he hathe on the heed/ for it was a great stroke. Therwith they departed and rode a waye a good pace to the gate of sayntz Anthony/ and rode out therat/ for as than the gate was open and had ben ten yere/ sythe the frenche kynge retourned fro the bataple of Roseheque/ and that the sayd constable put downe the malice of Parys/ and punysshed them for their rebellyons.

Thus syr Olyuer of Clysson was lefte in this case/ as a man halfe deed and more/ in the bakers house/ who was sore abaysshed whan he knewe it was the constable/ as for his men had lytell hurte/ for syr Peter and his men loked for nothynge but to haue slayne the constable. Than syr Olyuers men assembled together/ and entred in to the bakers house/ and there founde their mayster sore hurte on the heed/ and the blode rennynge downe by his vysage/ wherwith they were sore abaysshed/ and good cause why. there they made great complaynte/ fyrste they feared he had ben deed. Anone tydynges hereof came to the kynges lodgynge/ and it was sayde to the kyng/ as he was goynge to his bedde. Ah syr we canne nat hyde fro you the great myschefe that is nowe sodenly fallen in Parys. What myschefe is that quod the kynge/ Syr quod they/ your constable syr Olyuer of Clysson is slayne. Slayne quod the kynge/ and howe so/ and who hath done that dede. Syr quod they we canne nat tell/ but this myschefe is fallen on hym here by in the streate of sayntz Kateryn. Well quod the kynge/ light by your torches/ I wyll go vse hym. Torches anone were lyghted by. The kynge put on a cloke and his slyppers on his fete. Than suche as kept watche the same nyght went forthe with the kynge/ and suche as were a bed/ herde of these tydynges rose vp in hast and folowed the kyng/ who was gone forthe with a small company/ for the kynge tarved for no manne/ but wente forthe with thyrty of his chambre with torches before hym and behynde him/ and had no mo chamberlayns with hym but sir Gaultier Martell and syr Johan of Lygnac/ Thus the kyng came to the bakers house and entred/ and certayne torches tarved without. Than the kynge founde his constable nere deed as it was shewed him/ but nat fully deed/ and his men had taken of all his geare to se his wounddes/ howe he was hurte. And the fyrst worde that the kynge sayd was. Constable howe is it with you/ Dere syr quod he ryght feble. Who hath brought you in this case quod the kyng. Syr quod he Peter of Craon and his company traytourslyy/ and without defence. Constable quod the kynge/ there was neuer deede so dereply bought as this shall be. Than physycions and surgeons were sent for on all partes/ and whan they came the kyng sayd to his owne surgyons. Syrs/ looke what case my constable is in/ and shewe me the trouthe/ for I am sory of his hurte. Than they serched his woundes in euery parte. Than the kynge demaunded of them and sayd. Syrs howe sape you/ is he in any parell of dethe. They all answered and sayd. Syr surely there is no feopertye of dethe in hym/ but that within these. xv. dayes he shall be able to ryde. With that answerre the kynge was ryght ioyous and sayd/ thanked be god these be good tydynges/ and than sayd. Constable be of good chere and care nothynge/ for there was neuer trespas sorer punysshed than this shall be/ vpon the traytours that haue done this deede/ for I take this mater as myne owne. The constable with a feble hoyce answered. Sire god rewarde your grace for your noble bysytacyon. Than the kyng toke his leaue and departed and retourned to his lodgynge/ and in contynent sente for the prouost of Paris/ and by that tyme that he came it was clere day lyght. than the kyng comaunded hym and sayd/ Prouost get you men togyther well horsed/ and purswe that traytour sir Peter of Craon/ who thus traytorously hath hurte myght to the dethe our constable/ ye can nat do to vs a more acceptable seruyce thanne to purswe and take hym and bring hym to vs. Than the prouost answered and sayd/ syr I shall do all my myght in my pouer to do. Syr canne your grace knowe whiche waye he is gone. Enquyre quod the kynge and do your dylygence.

Howe in great dylygence the prouost of Parys purswed syr Peter of Craon. Cap. Clxxvi.

And at that tyme the fourtene gates of the cyte were euer kepte opyn nyght and day whiche ordynaunce was made euer sythe the bataple of Roseb que/ where the Frenche kyng discomfited the flemynges/ and that the parisyēe wolde haue rebelled/ and that the malettes were laide downe/ to the entent to kepe vnder the parisyence. and by the counsayle of sir Oliuer of Clysson/ all the chaynes in the streates were layde downe/ and the gates taken of their hokes. In this case the cyte was in a ten yere/ so that euery man myght entre night or daye in to Parys who so lyst. Lo/ it maye be well consydred what fortune is. The cōstable gadred the robbe wherwith hym selfe was beaten/ for if the gates of Parys had ben closed and the chaynes lyfte vp/ sir Peter of Craon durst neuer haue done that he dyde/ for if he had/ he coude nat haue gone out of the towne as he dyde. But bycause he knewe well he might issue out at all houres/ that made him execute his yuell purpose. Whā he departed fro the Constable/ he thought surely he had ben slayne/ howe be it he was nat/ wherwith he was sore displeased. Whan he issue out of Parys/ it was about one of the clocke after mydnight/ and passed by the gate sayne Anthony. And some sayd he passed the ryuer of Seyne at the bridge of Charenton/ & than toke the waye to Charters/ and some sayde he issued out of Parys at the gate of sayne Honour/ vnder Mount martre: and passed the ryuer of Seyne at Ponthieut. Where so euer he passed/ he was by eight of the clocke at Charters/ and suche as were well horsed with hym/ all folowed hym nat/ but brake a sonder for lesse suspectousnesse/ and for feare of pursute. And whan this sir Peter of Craon came first to Parys/ he had lefte at Charters with one of the chanons there/ who had ben a seruaunt of his beforetyme/ a twentte fressh horses. It had ben better for the chanon he had neuer knowen hym/ howe be it of his purpose nor of the executynge therof/ he knewe nothyng therin. Whan sir Peter was retourned to Charters/ he dranke and chaūged his horses and dyde of his harnesse/ and toke the waye to Mayne/ and rode so fast/ that he came to a castell of his owne called Sable/ and there rested hym selfe/ and sayde he wolde gone further/ tyll he herde tydynges of sir Oliuer of Clysson/ and howe the matter went. ye maye be sure that the same fryday after the dede was done/ great bruite ran all about the cyte of that dede/ & many blamed greatly sir Peter of Craon. The lorde of Coucy assoone as he knewe therof in the morynge lepte on his horse with eyght persons with hym/ and rode to the Constables lodgyng to visyte hym/ for they loued eyther tother/ and called eche other brother in armes/ his visytacion dyd the Cōstable great good. In lyke maner other lordes accordyng to their tourne came and visyted hym/ & specially the duke of Thourayne who was sore displeased for that dede. And the kynge and he sayd bothe/ howe that sir Peter of Craon had done that dede in dispyte of theym/ and howe it was a thyng prepensed by false trayntours/ to put the realme to trouble. The duke of Berrey/ who as thāne was at Parys/ dissymuled the mater and made no great busynesse in the cause. And I sir Johan Froyssarte auctour of this cronycle/ as I was credably enformed of this aduenture/ there had ben nothyng done/ if the duke of Berrey had lyste. for if he had wolde/ he myght well haue broken that enterprise/ I shall shewe you the reason howe.

The same thurst day Corpus Christy day/ there came to the duke of Berrey a clerke/ secretorie to sir Peter of Craon/ and sayde to hym in secrete maner. sir/ I wyll shewe you a thyng in secretnesse/ whiche is lykely to come to a poore cōclusyon. And sir/ ye are more lykely to remedye it than any other. What mater is that qd the duke. Sir quod he I shall shewe you/ but I wolde nat be named the bringer oute therof. Spare nat quod the duke/ I shall beare out the mater well ynoughe. Well sir quod the Clerke/ I doubte me greatly that sir Peter of Craon wyll slee or cause to be murthered/ the constable sir Oliuer of Clysson/ for he hath assembled togyder in to his house/ within the Churche parde of sayne Johanes/ a great noumbre of menne/ and hath kepte them there couertly/ euersyth the feest of Whitsontyde. And sir/ if they shulde do that dede the kynge wyll be sore displeased

sed

The frenche kyng hadde great affection to be reuenged/ of the dispyte that was done to his cõstable/ wherfore he prepared hym selfe to go in to Bretayne/ and fyrst to go in to Anjou to distroye and beate downe sir Peter of Craons castelles/ for all that the duke of Bretayne sayd he had bought them. yet the kyng and his counsayle sayd it was no poynt of the dukes hertage/ but that the duke sayde so to excuse and to susteyne sir Peter of Craon/ wherfore peresonally he was in the kynges indignacyon. yet in the same season a treatie of marryage was had betwene the duke of Bretaygnes sone and the kynges doughter.

In the meane season whyle this voyage was thus ordred/ a great bruite therof spoken throughe all Fraunce. There retourned to Paris the byll hoppe of Noyon and the lorde de la Ryuer fro Joize and Bierne/ and there shewed the kyng and his counsayle howe they had spedde. They were well herde/ but the voyage in to Bretayne displeyed so the kyng and his counsayle/ that they had no leyser to entende to any other matter. And the kynge wolde gladly that the constable had ben hole/ that he might be able to ryde. and or the kyng went fro Paris/ he comaunded to be beaten downe sir Peter of Craõs house/ that stode in the churche parde of sayne Johans/ and than the kynge dyde gyue the groũde to make a churche parde of to burye in deed bodyes. The frenche kyng made his prouysyon in the waye to Anjou/ to Mayne/ to Bretayne/ and in to Thouraine on the ryuer of Loyre/ to the entent to go in to Bretayne/ none durst speke the contrary.

And his seconde doughter was or shulde be vicoũtes of Rohan by reason of her husbande The somme of the testament mounted to the some of seuyntene hundred thousande frankes besyde his heritage. Euery man yherde therof had great maruayle/ howe he shulde gather togyder suche richesse/ and specially the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne/ & there counsayls/ had great maruayle therof/ and spake largely & sayd. What the deuyll howe maye it be that the constable hath gadered to gyder so many floreyns/ and suche mouable goodes/ the kyng hym selfe hath nat so moche. It maye well be beleued and knowen/ that he hath nat won all this by no iust meanes. Thus the matter passed/ but suche as loued hym nat thought neuertheselfe. Thus all suche as the kynge had wryten vnto prepared them selfe to go with hym in to Bretaygne. This voiage pleased nothynge the duke of Burgoyn/ he sayd this was a warre without reason/ and that the conclusion therof coulde take no good ende/ nor the realme of Fraunce/ nor the duchy of Bretayne/ nor the lordes/ knightes and squyers/ in the had nothynge to do with the warre betwene sir Olyuer of Clysson and sir Peter of Craon. What nede they quod he to take payne or trauayle to make warre in their quarelles? We shulde rather suffre them and their owne me to greue and make warre eche vpon other. The duke of Berrey was of the same opynyon/ but they coude nat be herde nor beleued/ for the kyng was counsayled contrary to their opinyons/ by suche as the kyng loued better than them. These dukes coude nat tell howe to breke that enterprise/ and whan they sawe none other remedy/ they obeyed/ But that was slouthfully/ howe be it by the promocyon of the duke of Burgoyne/ the erle of Ostrenaunt was wryten vnto by the kynge to go with hym in this iourney with thre hũdred speares. The erle who loued deedes of armes prouyded hym to go with the kynge/ and whan he was redy/ and had assembled togyder his company to his great cost and charge. Than he was countermaunded agayne/ and that in no wyse he shulde flyte.

Enome was throughout all Paris and (it was well knowen) that sir Olyuer of Clisson cõstable of Fraũce/ whan he laye thus sicke of his hurt; made his testament/ to the entente that his heyres shulde knowe ꝑ trouthe of euery thyng that he had/ and where it was. His heyres were two doughters/ the one was maryed to Johan of Bretayne erle of Ponthieur. It was he that sir Olyuer had quytte out of prysone in Englãde/ and payde for hym (xxtie thousande frankes to the duke of Irelande/ as it hath ben shewed here before in this hystorie.

How the duke of Thourayn brother to the kyng resigned the duchy of Thourayne in to the kynges handes: and how by exchaūge the kynge gaue hym the duchy of Orlyaūce and so euer after he was called duke of Orlyaunce. Cap. C.lxxxvii.

IN the same season that the kyng was thus nighe redy to departe out of Parys/ to shewe that he toke that busynesse / as to hym selfe/ there was an exchaūge made of landes gretly to the profyte of the duke of Thourayne/ for he resygned in to the kynges handes the duchy of Thourayne/ and the kyng gaue hym the duchy of Orliaunce/ in lyke maner as aūciently duke Philipp of Orlyaunce helde it/ whiche was four tymes better in value than the other was. So thus fro hensforthe in this hystorie I shall name hym that was duke of Thourayne duke of Orlyaūce. ¶ Whan sir Olyuer of Clysson was all hole and that he might ryde/ the Frenche kyng was right ioyfull and said: howe he wolde tary no lengar and so on an euenyng he toke his leaue of the quene Isabell his wyfe/ and of the newe duchesse of Orlyaunce/ and of all other ladyes and damoselles/ and so ryde the duke of Orlyaūce in lykewise. Than they departed and rode to supper to Mōtague/ and the duke of Burbone/ the erle of Namure/ and the lorde of Coucy with hym. There the kyng laye & dyned there/ & after dyner they departed and laye all night at sayne Germayns/ and there laye a seuyn dayes. and as than ỳ kyng was somwhat diseased/ and his phisicions wolde haue had hym to haue rested hym selfe/ but ỳ kyng was so wyllyng in his iourney/ that he sayde howe he was moche better at his ease/ than he was in bede/ whiche he ryde to gyue courage to his men to set forwarde/ for as thā his two vncles/ the dukes of Berrey & Burgoyne were behynde/ & shewed well by their maner / that the same iourney greued them/ for they wolde nat haue gone by their good wylles/ howe be it they hadde made their assemble and to saue their honour they obeyed and followed.

Than the Frenche kyng hadde rested hym a fyftene dayes at sayne Germayns/ and that his armye was assembled/ than he departed and passed the ryuer of Seyne/ and toke the waye to Chartres/ and so to Innens/ a good towne and a castell/ partenyng to the lorde de la Ryuer/ as heritage of his wyues. With the kynge was his brother the duke of Orlyaunce and the duke of Burbone. The lorde de la Ryuer receyued the kynge honorably/ and there tayed thre dayes/ and than rode to Chartres where as Montague was byll hoppe. The kynge was lodged in the byll hoppes palais and the two dukes. And the seconde daye after thyder came the duke of Berrey and the erle of Marche in his cōpany. And the fourth daye thider cāe the duke of Burgoyne/ whyche of the kynge was tyght ioyfull/ and people came daily/ and the kyng sayd he wolde nat retourne to Parys tyll he hadde brought the duke of Bretayne to reason/ who so often tymes had put hym to payne and trouble. The kynges counsayle hadde so lette hym on that warre/ that the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne wolde gladly haue modered ỳ mater/ but they couldo nat be herde/ wherwith they were sore displeased/ & so were suche as were of their cōsayls: and they said eche to other that surely the mater coude nat long endure in that state/ for it is full lykely that the kynge and the realme shall haue some busynesse to do/ sithe the kyng refuseth the counsaile of his vncles/ and leaneth to other at his pleasure/ who be nothyng lyke to thē. Whan the kyng had taried at Chartres a seuyn dayes/ than he departed and toke ỳ waye to Reyms and his men folowed/ some fro farre partes/ as out of Arthois/ Beamoys/ Vermandois/ and Picardy: and some said one to another. Ah/ this duke of Bretayne maketh vs to haue moche to do/ & putteth vs to great payne and trauayle. He hath been alwayes harde & highe herted agaynst the crowne of Fraūce/ nor he neuer loued nor honored it. And his cosyn the erle of Flaunders and the duchesse of Burgone (who haue alwayes borne hym and as yet do) had nat ben/ he had ben distroyed long ago/ for certayn the lorde Clysson

tourned

fourned frenche he neuer loued hym. Sure lye by all likelyhode he is culpable of this dede/ for he hath alwayes sustened sir Peter of Craon agaynst the kyng and agaynst the Constable. Than other sayde. Lette the kyng alone/ for as at this tyme he hath ꝑ matter to at his hert/ that he wyll bring for duke to reason or he retourne. That is trewe ꝑ ouer if there be no trayson. But we feare that all suche as go with the kyng be nat frendes to ꝑ duke/ as it may be well sene (if we durst speke it) by some tokens. For there be some that nyght and daye do what they can to counsayle the kynge to breke his voyage/ whiche so troubleth the kyng that he can leant gette hym selfe any helthe or recouery of his late sickenesse. Thus knightes and squiers dencessed among theselfe as they rode in their countreys. Styll the kyng approched to the cytie of Mans/ and there the kynge lodged in the castell and his lordes in ꝑ cytie/ and his men of warre abyde in the countrey. There the kyng taried a three wekes/ for he was sore vexed with the feuer: and his phisitions sayde to his brother and to his vncles. My lordes we ensure you ye do yuell to trauayle ꝑ kyng for he is in no good state to ryde/ yell were farre better for hym/ for syth he came fro the cytie of Amyens/ he hath nat ben in so good helthe/ as he was before. They shewed this to the kynge but he had so great affection to go in this iourney/ that he wolde nother beleue them nor yet his phisycions/ but sayde. howe he founde more ease in trauelyng than in restyng. Therfore who so euer counsayle me the contrary I shall nat please me/ nor he louyth me nat. Other answere they couldne nat haue of the kyng. Euery day the kyng wolde sytte in the mydes of his counsayle/ tyll it was noon/ to thentent that none shulde laye any lette of his iourney. Thus the kyng being at Mans/ and somwhat to accomplysshe the desyres of his vncles. He sent four notable knightes to the duke of Bretayne/ as sir Raynolde du Roy/ the lorde of Varensters/ the lorde of Castell morant/ and sir Tappye of Caurencil chatelayne of Eyfors/ and they were charged to shewe the duke/ howe the kyng and his counsaile reputed that he dyde great offence/ to susteyne the kynges enemy and the realmes/ and to make amendes/ that he shulde side sir Peter of Craon to Mans to the kyng/ whereby meanes shulde be founde that he shulde take no domage/ nor his countrey/ for all the kynges voyage. Thus they departed fro Mans with a.xl. speres/ & passed thrugh the cyte of Angiers and at last came before the cytie of Maunes/ and entred/ and there founde the duke who made them good chere/ and on a daye made them a dyner/ and than they dyde their message and declared ꝑ kynges entent and his counsayls/ wherunto the duke answered wisely and sagely/ & sayd Howe it shulde be harde for hym to delyuer sir Peter of Craon/ and sayd as god myght helpe hym in all his busynesse/ he knewe nat where he was. wherfore he defyed them in that case to holde hym excused/ But he sayde he had well herde of hym a yere past/ that he loued nat sir Oliuer of Clysson/ but wolde make him mortall warre to his power/ what fortune ende came therof. And at that tyme I demaunded of hym if he had gyuen sir Oliuer knowledge therof/ and he sayd he had vtterly defyed and wolde slee hym if he coude/ outher by daye or by nyght/ where soeuer he coude fynde hym. Of his dedes I knowe no further/ wherfore I haue marueyle that the kynge wyll make warre agaynst me for his cause. for as to the conynaunces of mariage betwene our chyldren by the grace of God/ shall nat be broken on my parte/ wherfore I haue done nothynge to hym nor to his counsaile/ that he shulde make warre agaynst me This was the aunswere that the duke made to the frenche kynges messangers/ and so whan they hadde tarryed a daye at Maunes/ than they toke their leaue and departed and retourned to Mans to ꝑ kyng/ who thought longe tyll he herde their aunswere/ and as ye haue herde before: they declared it to ꝑ kyng and his counsayle. The dukes of Berrey & of Burgoyne were well contented with ꝑ answere and sayd it was reasonable/ but the kyng by reason of suche enformacion as he had sayde the contrary: and sayd suche he was so forewarde in his iourney/ he wolde nat retturne agayne in to fraunce nor to Paris/ tyll he had brought the duke of Bretayne to reason Gladly the two dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne wolde haue mydered that voyage/ but they might nat be herde/ for the kyng had taken suche displeasure with the duke of Bretayn/ bycause he susteyned sir Peter of Craon

that

that no translacion coulde be taken. The same tyme a bute came in Fraunce/that the quene of Aragon my lady yolant of Bare/coseyn germayne to the frenche kynge/ had in prison in the cytie of Barcelona/a knyght that noman knewe his name/men supposed it had ben syr Peter of Craon. this quene had written right amyably to the kynge/sygnifyenge hym that the fyfte day of the moneth of July/ a knyght in good estate and aray came to Barcelona/ to haue past the see/ and had hyred for his money a shyppe (as he sayd) to haue sayled in to Napoles/ and bycause we kepe our passages that no straunger shall passe without he be knowen what he is/ and this knyght wyll nat shewe his name/ therfore we kepe hym in prisone/s by the abashment that we se in hym/we thynke surely it be the same person ye wolde so fayne haue. Therfore we write to you therof/ that ye shulde sende some person hyther/ suche as knoweth sir Peter of Craon/to se if it be he or nat/for what so euer he be he shall nat be delyuered tyll we haue aunswere fro you/and I wolde that these tydynges might be agreable to you and to your counsayle/ as knoweth the holy goost/ who preserue you. Writen at Barpygnan the nynth day of July/ by yolante of Bare/quene of Aragon and of Maioles/and lady Sardyne & Sardane. And on the superscription/to the redouted kynge of Fraunce.

These tydynges somewhat modered dyuers mennes harres/ so that they were nere at the poynte to haue broken their voyage/howbe it suche as were sir Oliuer of Clysons frendes sayde that those tydynges were but fayned tales/made and deuysed to breke the kynges voyage/sayenge that sir Peter of Craon was in none other prisone/but with the duke of Bretayne/who hath susteyned hym and dothe. Of the quene of Aragons letre the kynge made but lyght/sayenge it was but trayson and fables. Than the duke of Burgoyne sayd. Syr yet at leste to praise my nece the quene of Aragon/ and for the delyuerance of the knight that is there in prisone/who peraduenture is nothynge gylty of this trespas/ sende vnto her that she may be content with you and with vs. I am content therwith quod the kynge to please you/but I beleue surely the traytour syr Peter of Craon is in none other Barcelona nor prisone/but a boute the duke of Bretayne/and by my fayth that I owe to saint Denyse/he shall coste me make acompt therof. There coulde no man turne the kynge fro the opinyon/ but that syr Peter of Craon was with the duke of Bretayne. The duke of Bretayne who was well enformed of all this busynesse/ thought hymselfe nat well assured/ for he sawe well the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne coulde nat bring there purpose aboute/ for syr Oliuer of Clysons frendes led the kynge as they lyste. Than the duke prouyded for to kepe his townes and garysons/ howbe it the duke kept no towne except Wames/Campell/Doll/Camper/Lermyn/Cozatyne/and Sulemeut/and he wrote to suche knyghtes and squyers as he thought shulde ayde hym/ but they all dissymuled with hym/bycause they knewe that the french kyng was so sore displeased with hym/and also they thought it was nat a thynge conuenable for the duke to susteyne syr Peter of Craon agaynst the constable of Fraunce/as he dyd. The duke in a maner repented hym that he had done so moche/howbe it his corage and herte was so hygh that he dyssayned to speke it/ but sayde if the kynge came in to Bretayne/ as it semed he wolde do/ at the begynnynge he wolde let hym alone/ and thanne shall I se who be my frendes or foos/ I wyll nat be to hasty to make hym warre/ and whan he wenethe to be at most rest/than wyll I awake hym if I can nat be agreed with hym by loue. Thus the duke deuysed sometyme with his counsayle/and thought surely he shulde haue warre/howbe it he had nat/ for the matters tourned otherwyse to his great auauntage. therfore it is an olde prouerbe/ he is nat poore y^t is happy. This duke was fortunate/ by reason of a prudent prouydence that fell sodaynly on the frenche kynge/ for other wyse the duke was nat lyghtly to haue scaped all daungers/and to haue lyued in peace as he dyd.

Than the frenche kynge had taryed the space of thre weches in the cytie of Mans/and the knyghtes retourned that he had sent in to Bretayne. Than he sayd sythe he had herde the dukes and were he wolde no lenger tary there/ for he sayd the taryenge there greatly displeased him/and wolde passe forthe in to Bretaygne to se his enemys/ that was the duke of Bretaygne/ who susteyned the

traytourly: Peter of Craon. The entercpon of the kynge was / that if any knyghtes and squyers came agaynst hym / or that he founde any townes closed he wolde put downe ye duke forewert / and set a gouernour in the countrey tyll the dukes chyldren were of lawfull age / and than rendre to them the heritage / and the duke neuer to haue any parte therof. This ordynaunce held still / and no man coude put hym therfro. and thus on a fayre daye aboute ten of the cloche the kynge departed fro the cyte of Mans / and had cõmaunded his marshalles the nyght before to cause all his armye bothe before and behynde to dyslodge and to drawe to Angers / and sayde that he wolde nat retourne tyll he had ben in Britayne and dystroyed the traytours that had put hym to so moche payne and trouble. The marshalles dyd the kinges cõmaundement. The day that the king departed was marueylous hoote / for the sonne as than naturally was in his chefe force / and to the entent to declare the trouth of euery thyng. The same season that the kynge lay at Mans / he was sore trauepled with dayly syckenesse in counsayle / and also he was nat perfytely hole nor had nat ben all that season / he was feble in his brayne and herd / and dyd eate or drinke but lytell / and nyght dayly was in a hoote feuer / so that he was greatly anoyed and payned / and also for the displeasure that he had for the constables parte / he was full of malencoly and his spyrytes sore troubled and trauepled / and that his physicions spyed well and so dyd his vncles / but they coulde nat remedy it / for no man durste counsayle hym to byde his bodye in to Britayne. And as it was enfourmed me / as he rode forwarde in the forest of Mans / a great sygnifycacyon fell to hym / by the whiche if he had doone well he shulde haue called his counsayle aboute hym and well auysed hym selfe or he had gone any further. Sodaynly there came to the kynge a poore man bare heded / bare legged / and bare footed / and on his body a poore whyte cote / he semed rather to be a foole than wyse / and boldely sodaynly he tcke the bridell of the kynges horse in his handes and stopped the horse and sayd. Syr kyng ryde no further forward for thou arte betrayed. Those wordes entred in to the kynges herd / wherby he was worse disposed in his helthe than he was before / so that his herte & his blode was moued. Than the kinges seruauntes strake fro the poore man that he lete the kynges horse go / and made no more of his wordes than of a fooles spekyng / whiche was foly as dyuers men sayde / for at the leste they shulde haue better examyned the man / and to haue sene if he had ben a naturall foole or no / and to haue knowen fro whence he came / but they dyde nat so / but lefte hym behynde / & he was neuer sene after to any mannes knowledge / but suche as were nere to the kynge herde hym speke these wordes. The kynge passed forthe / and aboute twelue of the cloche the kynge passed out of the forest / and came in to a great playne all sandy. the sonne also was in his heyght a stone bright / whose rayes were maruelously hott / wherby the horses were sore chafed / and all suche persons as were armed were sore oppressed with heat. The knyghtes rode togyther by companyes / some here and some there / and the kynge rode somwhat a parte bycause of the dust / and the duke of Berrey and the Duke of Burgoyne rode on his lefte hande talkynge togyther / an acre brede of lande of fro the kynge. Other lordes as the erle of Marthe / sir Jaques of Bourbone / syr Charles de la Breth / syr Philyppe Darthoys / sir Henry and sir Philyp of Bare syr Peter of Nauer and other knyghtes rode by companyes. the duke of Burbon / the lorde Coucy / syr Charles Dangers / the baron Dyuery & dyuers other rode on before the kynge / and nat in his company / and they deuised and talked togyther / and toke no hede of that fell sodaynly on the chefe personage of the company / whiche was on the kynges owne persone / therfore the workes of god are marueylous / and his scourges are cruell and are to be douted of all creatures. There hath ben sene in the olde testament and also in the newe / many figures and examples therof. We rede how Nabugedonosor kynge of Assyryens / who reygned a season in suche tryumphant glory / that there was none lyke hym / and sodaynly in his greatest force and glory / the souerayne kynge our lorde god kynge of Heuen and of erthe / fourmer and ordeyner of all thynges / apparelled this sayd kynge in suche wyse that he lost his wytte and reygne / and was seuen yere in that estate / and lyued by acornes and mast that fell fro the Okes / and other wylde appels and frutes / and hadde tast but as a bore or a swyne. and after he had endured this penaunce

god

god reſtored hym agayne to his memory and wytte. And than he ſayde to Danyell the prophet / that there was none other god / but the god of Iſraell. Nowe the father / the ſonne / and the holy gooſt / thre perſones in one god / hath ben / is / and euer ſhall be as puiſſaunt to ſhewe his warkes as euer he was / wherfore no man ſhulde marueyle of any thyng that he dothe. Nowe to the purpoſe why I ſpeke all theſe wordes. A great influence fro heuen fell the ſayd daye vpon the frenche kynge / and as dyuers ſayd / it was his owne faute / for aboue all thynge to the diſpoſicyon of his body / and the ſtate that he was in / and the warnyng that his phyſicyons dyd gyue hym / he ſhulde nat haue ryden in ſuche a hoote day / at that houre / but rather in the morynge and in the euenynge in the freſhe ayre / wherfore it was a ſhame to them that were nere aboute hym / to ſuffre or to conſayle hym to do as he dyd. Thus as the frenche kynge rode vpon a fayre playne in the heate of the Sonne / whiche was as than of a marueylous heyght / and the kynge had on a tacke couered with blacke velues / whiche ſore chafed hym / and on his heed a ſyngle bonet of ſcarlet / and a chapelet of great perles / whiche the quene had gyuen hym at his departure / and he had a page that rode behynde him / bearynge on his heed a chapewe of Montaban / bright and clere ſhynynge agaynſt the ſonne / and behynde that page rode a nother bearing the kynges ſpeare / paynted redde / and frynged with ſylke / with a ſharpe heed of ſteele / the lorde de la Ryuer had brought a doſyn of them with hym fro Thoulouſe / and that was one of them: he had gyuen the hole doſyn to the kynge / and the kynge had gyuen thre of theym to his brother the duke of Orleyaunce / and thre to the duke of Burbon. And as they rode thus forth the page that bare the ſpeare / whether it were by neclygence or that he fell a ſlepe / he lette the ſpeare fall on the other pages heed that rode before hym / and the heed of the ſpeare made a great claſſhe on the bright chapewe of ſteele. The kynge (who rode but a fore them) with the noyſe ſodaynly ſtarted / and his herte tremblied / and into his imagynacion came the inſtellyon of the wordes of the man that ſtopped his horſe in the foreſt of Mans / and it ran in to his thought / that his enemyes came after hym to ſlee and diſcomfyt him / and with that abuſyon he fell out of his wytte by febleneſſe of his heed / a daſſhed his ſpores to his horſe / and drewe out his ſworde / and tourned to his pages / haynge no knowledge of any man / wenynge in hym ſelfe to be in a bataple incloſed with his enemyes / and lyfte vp his ſworde to ſtryke he cared nat where / and cryed and ſayd. On on vpon theſe traytours. Whan the pages ſawe the kynge ſo inflamed with Ire / they tooke good hede to them ſelfe / as it was tyme. They thought the kynge had ben diſpleaſed becauſe the ſpeare fell downe / thanne they ſtepte away fro the kynge. The duke of Orleaunce was nat as thanne farre fro the kynge. The kynge came to hym with his naked ſworde in his hande. The kynge was as than in ſuche a frauſey / and his herte ſo feble / that he nother knewe brother nor vncle. Whan the duke of Orleaunce ſawe the kynge comynge on hym with his ſworde naked in his hande / he was abaſſhed and wolde nat abyde hym / he wyſte nat what he mente / he daſſhed his ſpurres to his horſe and rode awaye / and the kynge after hym. The duke of Burgoyne who rode a ſtell waye of fro the kynge whan he herde the ruſſhyng of the horſes / and herde the pages crye / he regarded that waye / and ſawe howe the kynge with his naked ſworde chaſed his brother the duke of Orleaunce / he was ſore abaſſhed a ſayd. Out harowe what myſchefe is this / the kynge is nat in his ryght mynde / god helpe hym. Flye away nephewe / flye away / for the kynge wolde ſlee you. The duke of Orleaunce was nat well aſſured of him ſelfe / and fledde awaye as faſte as his horſe myght beare hym / and knyghtes and ſquyers folowed after / euery man began to drawe thyder. Such as were farre of thought they had chaſed an hare or a wolfe / tyll at laſt they herd that the kynge was nat well in his mynde. The duke of Orleaunce ſaued hym ſelfe. Than men of armes came all aboute the kynge / and ſuffred hym to werye hym ſelfe / and the more that he trauayled the febler he was / and whan he ſtrake at any man / they wolde fall downe before the ſtroke. In this matter there was no hurte / but many ouerthrowen / for there was none that made any defence. Fynally whan the kyng was well weryed / and his horſe ſore chafed with ſwete and great heate / a knyght of Normandy one of the kynges chamberlaynes / whome the kynge loued very well / called Guillyam Maruell he came behynde the kyng

sodaynely and toche hym in his armes/ and
helde hym styll. Than all other aprochyd/ and
toke the swerde out of his handes/ and tooke
hym downe fro his horse and dyd of his tacke
to refresshe hym. Than came his brother and
his thre uncles/ but he had clene lost the know-
lodge of them/ and rolled his eyen in his hed
marueylously/ and spake to no man. The lor-
des of his blode were sore abasshed and wyste
nat what to say or do. Than the dukes of Ber
rey and of Burgoyne sayde/ it behoueth vs to
retourne to Mans/ this voyage is doone for
this tyme. They sayde nat as moche as they
thought/ but they shewed it ryght well after
whan they came to Parys/ to suche as they lo
ued nat/ as ye shall here after.

REasonably to conspyre all thin-
ges acordynge to the trouthe/ it
was great pytie that the frenche
kyng (who as at that tyme was
reputed for the moste noble and
puyssaunt kynge in all crystendome) fell so sodaynly out of his mynde with
out remedy/ but as god wolde, than the kynge
was layde in a horse lytoure/ and so brought
backe agayne to the Cytie of Mans. Than
the marshalles gaue knowledge to all the ar-
mye/ that they shulde retourne/ and howe that
the voyage was broken as at that tyme, some
had knowlege why/ and some nat. The nyght
that the kynge came to Mans/ the physicy-
ons had moche a do with hym/ and the lordes
of the blode royall had great trouble. Euery
man spake than in dyuers maners. Some sayd
that suche as hadde the rule aboute the kynge
had poysoned hym/ to bryngе the Realme of
Fraunce in to shame and trouble. These wor-
des multyplyed in suche wyse that the duke of
Orlyance and his uncles and other lordes of
the blode royall noted them/ and spake toge-
ther and sayde. Howe saye you syrs/ haue ye
nat herde these wordes/ and howe menne do
murmure in dyuers places vpon theym that
hath had the gouernaunce of the kynge, some
saythe he shulde be poysoned/ lette vs serche
howe this maye be knowen. Than some of
them sayde howe it shulde be best knowen by
the physycyons/ they ought to knowe it/ for
they are acquaynted with his complexyon.
The physycyons were sent for and examyned.
They answered howe the kyng of longe tyme
had engendred the same malady for we knewe
well the wekenes of his brayne wold sore trou
ble hym/ and at laste shewe it selfe/ we haue
sayde as moche before this tyme. Than the
duke of Burgoyne sayde. Syrs it is trewe
and therin ye dyd well acquyte your selfe/ but
he wolde neyther beleue you nor vs/ his affec-
tyon was so sore sette vpon this voyage/ it
was deuysed in an euell tyme. This voyage
hathe dyshonoured vs all. It had been better
that Clysson/ and all those of his affynyte had
ben deed many a daye agone/ rather than the
kynge to haue taken this malady. These ty-
dynges shall sprede abrode in many places/
and seyng yͤ he is but a yonge man/ the blame
shall be layde in vs that be his uncles/ and of
his blode/ men will saye that we shulde other-
wyse haue counsayled hym. Thus we shall be
laide in the faute without cause. but sirs quod
the duke/ yesterday whan he wente to dyner/
were ye with hym/ The physicyons answered
and sayd yes. Dyd he eate his meate well
quod the duke/ No certaynly quod they/ he
dyd eate and drinke but lytle/ but fate and mu
sed. And who gaue hym drinke last quod the
duke/ Syr quod they we canne nat tell you
that/ for as soone as the table was taken vp/
we departed and made vs redy to ryde/ but
his chamberlayns or butlers canne tell that
best. Than Robert de Tulles a squyer of Py
cardy was sent for/ and demaunded who gaue
the kynge drinke laste. Syrs quod he/ syr Ro
bert of Lygnac. Than he was sent for. Than
he was enquyred where he had the wyne that
the kynge dranke last of in his chambre whan
he wente to his horse. Syr quod he/ here is
Roberte of Tulles and I/ we toke the cupe in
the presence of the kinge. That is trewe we quod
Roberte of Tulles/ ye nede nat doute therin
nor haue no suspectiousnesse/ for as yet there is
of the same wyne in the flagons/ wherof we
will drinke and assaye before you. Than the
duke of Berrey sayd/ this nede nat/ for surely
the kynge is nat poysoned/ his malady proce-
deth of euell counsayle/ it is no tyme
to speke of this mater no wel
let all alone tyll a no
ther seas
son.

Thus

Thus after this maner thes lordes departed eche fro other that nyght, and went to their lodgynge. Than the kynges vncles had ordeyned four knyghtes about to wayte about the kynge, as syr Raynolde lord Cobham, syr Raynolde of Roy, the lorde Craufurt, & syr Guyllyam of Harle, and the kynges vncles sent commaundement to the lord de la Ryuer and to syr John Werper, to Montagu, to the Begue of Vyllayne, to syr Guillyam of Bordes, and to syr Heliot of Lygnac that they shuld in no wyse come about the kyng, tyll he were in better estate. The nexte day the kynges vncles came to gether kynge, and found hym nyght feble. Than they demaunded what rest he had taken that nyght They were answered, but smal rest, That is pooze newes quod the duke of Burgoyn, and than to them came the duke of Orleance, and so went all togyder to the kyng, and demaunded of hym howe he dyd, He gaue none answer, and loked straungely on them, and had lost clene the knowleg of them. These lordes were sore abasshed, and comuned togyder and sayde. We haue no more here to do, the kyng is in an hard case we be hym more troublous than ayde or good. Lette vs recommande hym to his chamberlayns and physycyons they canne best take hed to hym, lett vs go study how the realme may be governed, all thinges wyl go amysse, Than the duke of Burgoyne and to the duke of Berrey, Fayre brother it is best we drawe to Paris, and ordeyne to haue the kyng easely brought thyder, for better we shall take hed on hym there than her in these partyes, & whom we be there let beaufebe at the counsayl of Fraunce and ordeyn who shal haue the gouernaunce of the realme. the duke of Orleance or we. That is well sayd quod the duke of Berrey, it were good we studyed wher were best to haue the kyng to lye that he myght the sonar recouer hys helth, Than it was deuysed that he shuld be brought to the castell of Crayll, where is good ayre, and a fayre countrey on the ryuer of Oyse, whan this was ordeyned that al the men of warre had leaue to depart and were commaunded, by the marshalles euery man to retourne peasably in to his owne countrey, without doyng of any violence or domage to the countrey as they should passe through, and if any dyd, their lordes and capytaynes to make amendes. And the kynges two vncles and the chamberlayne of Fraunce sent anone foumey messangers to the good Cytees and townes of Fraunce, that they shuld take good hed to kepe well their townes, considerynge that the kynge was not well disposed in his persone, their commaundementes were fulfylled. The people of the realme of Fraunce wer sore troubled when they knew how the kyng was fallen seke and in a frensey, and men spake largely ageynst them that counsayled the kyng to go into Bretayne, and sayne openly, how the kyng was betrayed by them that bare the duke of Bretayne and his power Cleon ageynst the kyng. Men could not be lette, but that they wolde speke the matter was so hygh that wordes ranne therof hastely. Thus finally the kynge was brought to Crayell, and there lefte in the keppynge of hys phylypons, and of the sayde four knyghtes. Than euery man departed. And it was commaunded to kepe and to kepe secret the kynges malady fro the knowleg of the quene for a season, for as than she was great with childe, and al of her courte were commaunded to kepe it secrete on payne of great punysshement. Thus the kyng was at Crayell, in the marches of Henalt and of Compyen, on the ryuer of Oyse, and kept by the sayd knyghtes and physycions who gaue hym medycynes, but for all that he recouered but lytel helth.

¶ How the dukes of Burgoyn and Berrey vncles to the king had the gouernaunce of the realme, & howe they chased and toke surty as gouerned the kynge before.

Cap. C. xxxix

In this season there was in ꝑ realme of Fraūce a grete and a large playne cion, the byrdes was ꝑ ther was non lyke hym, an he was wel be loued with the lorde Coucy, be twen natyus of his countrey. As at that tyme

hys a kynge was in the cite of Parys, he was called mayster Guyllyam of Harcley, whom he knew for the kynges welthe, and by what sekynesse he fell into that thought hym selfe to knowe the kynges disease, how hys malady is fallen to the kyng through that hys counsellours beleued to muche of y mayster of the Parys knoyde but reported to the lady Coucy, who incontinent sent a page with y duke of Orleance with 2 straunge wordes, for as much as the counsell of y realme the noble men and prelates were at Parys to determyne who shuld have the gouernaunce of the realme, as long as the kyng shuld be in y malady, outher his brother the duke of Orleance, or hys 3 vncles, vpon of the whych communication they were at 4 dayes or they agreed. Finally it was concluded because the duke of Orleaunce was very yonge to take on hym so great a charge, that the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyn shuld have the gouernaunce of the realme, and specially the duke of Burgoyne, and that the dukes of Burgoyne shuld be about the yonge and to be as tutours per tay. This as I have sayde before the lord of Coucy shewed to the kynges vncles, the great wysdome and prayse of the sayd poynction, mayster Guyllyam Harcley. Than the dukes bere that they sente for hym, and so he came to Parys. And than the lord of Coucy presented hym to the kynges vncles, and sayd. Syr lordes behelde here is mayster, Guilyam Harcley, that I shewed you of. He is ryght welcome quod the dukes, they receyued hym and made him good chere, and ordeyned hym to go to Troyell to vysyte the kyng, and to abyde about hym vntil he hadde recouered his helthe, Than the sayd mayster at their commaundement went to Troyell to the kynge, and had the chefe ouersyght of inquirying any tydynges to the kyng, and he sawe well the kynges malady was incurable, and sithe howe he had taken it by reason of feblenesse of hys herte and hed, and through faute, therfore he dyd hys dylygence to recouer hys helth.

The tydynges of the kynges malady spred farre abrode, but vnto so muche was done, ye may well knowe the duke of Bretayne nor sir Peter of Craon purpose neuer a whit, nor yet any great lordes

of Italie the pope Boneface of Rome and his cardynalls knewe the trouthe they were ryght ioyfull, and made processyons continually and sayde he was their greatest enemy the French kynge had ben ouercome with a cruell rodde, seing god had taken fro hym his wytte, nowe sayde they that influence was sente to hym from aboue to chastyce him withal, bycause he had so muche suffered the pope at Auignon, that sent this cruell plage vnto him to cause the hole realme to be better aduysed, therfore they sayde their quarrell was the stronger, and truely for as we playnly vnderstode by every thing it was great token to haue caused the cardinalles of Auignon to haue ben aduysed, but they made but litel force therof, not bycause of the honour of god nor to the realme for the pope at Auignon and his cardinalles sayd, howe by reason that the kyng was yong, and wold haue his counsell, thereby he is fallen in to this malady, through faute, for suche as haue hadde the rule about hym, haue not done their duety, but haue suffred him to ryne on the bridell, and to ride rughe and daye recheslesly in prouayling of his body out of measure, therfore such as hath had the rule ought to be charged therwith, and none other, for it is through their fault, for if they had ordred him in his youth, and so continued by reasonable regemet, and haue folowed the counsayle of his vncles, this sickenesse had not fallen vnto him nowe. Also he hath broken his promise against reason, for he promised the pere vnder, and sware by the wordes of a kynge, that he would so ordayne to destroy the antepope of Rome and his cardinals, and to sub due the filthe of the churche, and to sette the matters that be in trouble in good estate, which is nothinge done, but hath done contrary to his promise, wherewith god is displeased, and to cause him better to aduise him selfe he hathe punished him with this cruell rodde. And if he retourne to health as he may well do, then it shal behoue vs to sende to him sufficient legates, to shewe him vpon the defaut and breakyng of his promesse, that he forgette it not by reason of our neglygence.

Thus

Thus the Pope and his cardinalles at Auignon spake and communed together, and layde the default of the kinges vncle by, on the condicyons of Fraunce, as ye haue herd afore about the kyng in his chambre. Of the same opinion were many other folkes in the realme of Fraunce. They that were about the kyng, sayd the kinges offryng to a place called Arliense, in the county of Hery, stode betwene Cauntery and Valenciennes. In the whyche towne there was a churche, parteynynge to an abbey of Sayncte Denis in Fraunce, wherein there lyeth a Sayncte called Sayncte Acquayre, of whom there is a shryne of syluer whyche pylgrimage is sought farre and neere, for the maladye of feuerys. Thyther was sente a mayne of waxe, wyth the kynges the fourth kyng, and was humbly offred to the Sayncte, that he myght be meane to god, to aswage the kynges maladye, and to sende hym helth. In lykewyse, the kynges offryng was sent to Sayncte Hermyer in Romayne, whyche Sayncte had merytte to heale the Frenche. And in lykewyse offrynges were sente into other places for the same entent. When the tydynges were come into England, the kynge and his counsayle were sore troubled therewyth, and specially the duke of Lancaster, and he sayde to suche knyghtes and squyres as were about hym. Syrs, surely it is great pyte of the Frenche kynge, for he semed to be a man of great enterprise, & of great dedyse to do wel. He sayd to me at Impeuse when I departed fro hym. Fayre coſyn of Lancastre, I desyre you hartely, to do your diligence that a firme peace may be made betwene our nephue the kyng of Englande and vs, and our realmes, to the entent that we might go together against Lamoralbaquin, who hath conquered the realme of Armonye, and hath that he ran to distroy Chrystendome. By our goyng thyther our fayth should be exalted, and we are all bounde thereto. And nowe by the Frenche kynges malady the matter is sore letted and hyndred for he shall neuer be of the credence he was of before. All that heard the Duke sayd. It was true, and that it was lyke to be great trouble in Fraunce.

Thus all maner of people both farre and neere spake and deuysed of the kynges malady, and the kyng laye styll at Crayle, in the kepynge of the foresayd knyghtes. Of mayster Guyllyam of Harlaye. And a man spake wyth the kyng, doyenized into the castell but fewe as were vsed to sette a Soupyne the duke of Ostrenne and the duke of Burbone, came thyther to dyner the kynge, and the dukes of Berery and of Burgoyne laye styll at Paryse, and had many lytle pryde of newe, but they were in purpose shortly to do semmonse; syghte such as they loued not, because they had been all wayes harde to them before, and the duke of Berry sayd to the duke of Burgoyne, Brother, le Ryuer, Clysson le Mercyer, and the Seyne of Malayns, whan they were wyth the kynge in Brytayne dyde cruelly they punysshed to dethe, my treasourer and good seruaunt Bertyche by enuy. And for all that I taude do or saye, I coude neuer gette hym out of theyr handes no more than ye. Therfore now let them beware of me, for I shall paye them agayn wyth the same money, forged in the same forge. In lykewyse the duke of Burgoyne made noyse them that gouerned the kyng for euer whan he had any busynesse to do in the courte, they were euer agaynst hym. Also the same tyme the ducheſſe of Burgoyne, who was acrueſt lady, was about the quene as chefe ruler, and none spake with the quene but by her meanes.

¶ This lady hated mortally sir Oliuer of Clysson for loue of the duke of Brytayne, for he was nere of blode to her, and often tymes she spake to the duke her husbande, sayeng howe he was greatly to blame to beare so moche sir Oliuer of Clysson against so myghtie a prince, as the duke of Brytayne. And the duke of Burgoyne, who was a coldy sage, and an ymaginatyue prynce, and by his busynesse alwayes at length, and wold not wylling bryng the realme of Fraūce in to trouble but alwayes wylling to kepe all peyes in loue and peace, as ner as he myght. And also as he was neuer wylling to displease any of the great lordes, answered eyther sagely or mekely to his wyfe, saying to her, it is good in all tymes from what to eschuwe a mannes displeasure. Thereto is our coſyn of Brytayne is a great lorde, and hath seruyce and puyssaunce enoughe, wyth

by Oliuer

fyr Olyuer of Clysson, if I hadde taken hys parte agaynst Clysson, it shulde greatly haue weaked the Realme of Fraunce. For fyr Olyuer of Clysson saith and sustayneth, that the hate that he hath to the Duke of Bretaygne, is to sustayne by the realme of Fraunce, wherin we haue great parte. And also thys is the comon cousome in Fraunce. Also (as yet) I haue sent no artycle, wherin I shuld take part with my cousyn of Bretaygne against fyr Olyuer of Clysson, therfore it hath behoued me to dissymule, or elles I coude not haue had the good wyll of ye kyng nor of the realme, wherto I am more bound by fayth and seruyce, than to the duke of Bretaygne. Nowe it is so that the kyng is not in good case (as ye knowe well) and all thys is agaynst the lord Clysson and shalbe, and to such as haue gyuen counsayle agaynst hys my brother of Berrey and me, that the kyng shulde procede in hys iourney to Bretaygne. The robbe is gadered wherwith they shall be sorely beaten and corrected: as ye shall herely here, if yet wyll take a lytell patience. Mary mary, ther is no season, but at last it payde: Nor no fortune, but that sometyme tourneth: Nor herte troubled, but sometyme agayne reioyseth? Nor none that is ioyfull, but sometyme is sory and troubled. Clysson le Viure, Montague, le Mercyer, & la Riuelayns: they haue done yuell, and that shalbe shewed them brefely. Wyth suche wordes the duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse hys wyfe spoyled them togyder.

A day it happed that the duke of Burgoyne and the duke of Berrey comuned secretely to gyder and sayd, It were tyme that we began to destroye them that haue dishonoured our enemye the kyng, and haue leded hym at their wylles. And fyrst let vs begin at the constable, he is ye gretest and hath most to lese, for thys other day he made his testament of fyue score hoded thousand frankes. Wher the deuyll hath he gadered togyder all that ryches? And yet the mary age of hys doughter to Johan of Bretayne, whome he beheaded out of prison in England and put to hys raunsome two hoded thousand Liures sterlynge of Englande. Let vs se what poynte we can lay to hym by reason, for mesnes nephue the duke of Orleannce beareth hym greatly, and so do dyuers other barones of Fraunce. Howe be it and we fynde there, we shall fynde mater enough to hym by lawe and parlyament. That is trewe quod the duke of Burgoyne. And the fyrst tyme that he cometh to speke with me (and that I thinke wyll be or to morowe at noone) I shall warne hym, that he shall well knowe that I lame hym not, and if he come to you good wyll ther of Berrey be your wyse. That shall be done quod he, and so departed at that tyme.

It fortuned that the lorde of Clysson, who knewe nothynge but that he had ben in good grace with the sayd dukes. And certayne knightes & squyers (such as habde ben in the sayd voyage with the kyng) came to the constable, & were sente by the chaunceller and treasourer to hym, to pursue for money for theyr wages. Wherupon in a mornyng he came to ye houle of Arthois in Parys, to shewe the state of ye bulynesse to the duke of Burgoyne, and to none other, bycause he habde the hole gouernaunce of the realme of Fraunce. When he came thyder he entred in the court, for the porter had lette hym in. Than he alyghted and mounted the stayres in to the hall, alone for he accompanyed with no squyer, and in the hall he fonde .ii. squyers of the dukes. Than he demaunded if he might speke with the duke or not. Syr (quod they) we can not tell you, tary here and we shall go and knowe his pleasure. The squyers entred in to the dukes chambre and fonde hym at good leyser, talkyng with an herraude, who was come fro a great fest that had ben holden in Almaigne. Than the squyers sayd. Syr, the Constable is in your hall, and sayth he is come to speke with you if it be your pleasure. A gobbesname quod the duke lette hym come in, we be at good leyser to here what he wyll say. One of the squyers went in to the hall and sayd to the constable, sir ethe on, my lord wyll haue you to come in. The constable entred, and when the duke sawe hym he chaunged colour, and repented in that he had caused hym to come in to hys chambre, and yet he had gret delyre to speke with hym. The Constable bydde of hys haute and made hys reuerence to the duke and sayd

Syr, I

Sir I am come to you/to knowe of the ſtate and gouernaunce of the realme/ and howe euery thynge ſhalbe ordred/ for by reaſon of myne office I am dayly called vpon/and as nowe/ you and my lorde of Berrey haue the rule/ therfore it may pleaſe you to ſhewe me what I ſhall do. The duke lightly anſwered and ſayde. Clyſſon Clyſſon/ ye haue no thyng to do to helpe you with the gouernyng of the realme/ ye haue medled therwith to long/and in an yuell tyme. Howe the deuyll haue ye gadered ſuche ryches/ as ye made your teſtament of but late? The kynge nor any brother of Berrey nor I/haue nat to moche. Go youre waye departe out of my preſence/ and lette me no more ſe you/ for and it were nat for my ſhame/ I ſhulde putte out your better eye. And therwith the duke departed and lefte the lorde Clyſſon alone/who iſſued out of the chambre and hanged downe his heed/and ſo paſſed throughe the hall/ and in the courte toke his horſe with his compayny/ and retourned priuely in to his lodgyng without ſpekyng of any worde.

Howe ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon Conſtable of Fraūce departed out of Parys/ after the anſwere that the duke of Burgoyne had made hym/ and wente to Mount le heury/ and fro thens in to Bretayne.

Cap. C.xc.

When the lorde of Clyſſon was retourned to his lodgynge/he was in many ymaginacyons/to remembre what was beſt for hym to do.for he parceyued wel the maters went but yuell for hym/ nor he wyſte nat to whome to make his complaynt/ nor to declare his buſyneſſe/ for the duke of Delpaunce was at Crapell. and thoughe he hadde been at Parys/ yet it laye nat in his power to defende hym/ and he feared leſt the duke of Burgoyne wolde haue cauſed hym to be arreſted/ and to ſpoyle his houſe. Wherfore he durſt nat abyde that aduenture/ but ſhortely made hym redy/ and ſhewed to certayne of his ſeruauntes what he wolde do. And agaynſt nyght he wente out of his lodgyng priuely on the backeſyde and but thre perſones with hym/ and iſſued out of Parys at the gate of ſaynt Anthony/ and paſſed the ryuer of Seyne at the bridge of Charenton. And roode ſo longe that he came to a Caſtell of his owne/ a leuyn leages fro Parys/called Mount le Heury/and there taryed tyll he herde other tydynges.

The ſame daye that the duke of Burgoyne had ſpoken with the Conſtable. The duke of Berrey and he mette togyder/ for they aſſembled at the palays to communē togyder of certayne matters/ touchynge the Realme. Than the duke of Burgoyne ſhewed his brother what he had ſayde to ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon. The duke of Berrey anſwered and ſayd. ye haue done well/ for we muſt haue a begynnynge to entre vpon theym. For ſurely Clyſſon le Ryuer/ Mercier and Montague/ haue robbed the realme of Fraunce/ but the tyme is come that they ſhall leaue all yea/ and leſe their lyues/ and I maye be beleued.

The ſame proper daye that the Conſtable departed/ Montague in like wiſe departed ſecretely/ by the gate ſaynt Anthony/ and toke the waye to Troys in Champayne and in to Burgoyne/ and ſayd he wolde nat reſt tyll he came to Iuygnon/ for thyder he had ſent before the chiefe of his ryches/ and lefte a certayne with his wyfe to kepe her eſtate curteſly. For he ſawe well ſithe the kyng had loſt his wytte/that all maters ſhulde go but yuell for hym.for he ſawe howe the dukes of Burgoyne and Berrey wolde nat ſpeke to hym. Sir Iohan Mercier ſemblably wolde fayne haue ben gone and he myght/ But there was ſuche watche layde on hym/that he coude nat go out of his lodgynge/ without knowledge. And ſuche of his goodes as he hadde ſaued before/ ſhode hym in right good ſtede after ward. For as moche as coude be founde of his/was departed betwene the dukes of Burgoyn and Berrey/and he was compyted by them to pryſone/ in to the caſtell of Loure. And in lyke wyſe ſo

wyse so was cõmaunded the Begue of Vyl/
layns erle of Rehydewe in Spayne. There
were men sente to the house of Montague/
but he was nat founde/ no; no man knewe
where ꝑ he was become. In lykecase to the
Constables house to haue had hym to pryson
but he coude nat be founde/ for there was no
man there but the hepar/ who knewe nothyn
ge where he was become. And within two
dayes after/ it was knowen that he was at
his castell of Mount le Heury. Whan the du
kes that loued hym nat knewe that/ they or
dayned the Barrops of Barres/ sir Johñ of
Castell Morant/ the lorde of Coucy/ and sir
Wyllyam of Tremoyle/ with thre hundred
speares to go thyder/ and cõmaunded them
to beseige the Towne and castell/ and nat to
departe thens/ tyll they had brought sir Olyr
uer of Clysson to thé/ outher quicke or deed.
These knyghtes dyde as they were cõmaun
ded/ they durste do none otherwyse/ for the
two dukes had the admynistracion of the re
alme. So they departed fro Parys with a
thre hundred speares/ but nat all at one tyme
but in fyue partes/ to the entent to be the lesse
knowen. But god ayded so well the Consta
ble/ and had so good frendes of some in that
company/ that he had suche warnynge/ that
he toke no dõmage/ for he and his company
departed and rode by couert wayes through
woodes/ and lefte closed townes/ so that at
laste he came surely in to Bretaygne/ and en
tred in to a castell of his owne called the ca
stell Joselyn/ and there taryed to here other
newes. For all that the Barrois of Barres
and the other knightes in his company/ lefte
nat to do their enterprise as they were charg
ged/ but came to Mount le Heury/ and en
tred in to the towne/ and beseged the castell
and taryed there all a nyght/ wenynge that
the Constable hadde ben within/ but he was
gone/ as ye haue herde; and the nexte mor
nynge they thought to assaute the Castell.
The seruauntes within the castell sente out to
knowe what they wolde haue/ or what they
demaunded. They sayde they wolde haue
sir Olyuer of Clysson/ & therfore they were
come. They answered and sayd/ that he was
departed thens foure dayes passed/ and of
fred to open the gates to serche for hym. the
knightes went in to the castell with all their
company armed/ for feare of enbussheement
within the castell. They serched highe and
lowe and founde for trouthe that he was nat
there. Thane they departed and retourned
to Parys/ and shewed howe they had sped.

When the dukes of Burgoyne &
Berrey knewe that sir Olyuer
Clysson was scaped/ they were
sore displeased/ and the dukes
of Orlyaunce and of Burbone
ryght ioyfull. Than the duke of Burgoyne
sayde. It semeth well that he douteth hym
selfe/ seynge he is fledde awaye. yet for all ꝑ
he is so quytte/ we shall cause hym to come a
gayne shortely/ or les he shall lese all that he
hath/ that we can sette our handes on. for we
haue to laye to his charge/ dyuers artycles
vnresonable/ whiche requyre iudgement of
punysyon. and if suche as be great be nat cor
rected/ the maters shall nat be equally pro
portioned/ for suche as be but small personna
ges shall grudge/ and saye they haue wrong
to be punysshed/ and the great to scape. ther
fore iustyce ought to be equall/ and to spare
nother grete nor small/ wherby any ensample
shulde growe. Thus the duke of Burgoyn
deuysed of sir Olyuer of Clysson/ who was
in Bretaygne/ in his castell called Joselyn/
whiche fortresse was well prouyded for of
all thynges necessary. Whan the Barrois of
Barres was retourned to Parys/ and had
shewed that sir Olyuer of Clysson was de
parted fro Mount le Heury/ and gone to the
castell of Joselyn in Bretayne. Thã he was
cõmaunded to go to Ampence & there to take
the lorde de la Ryuer. The next day he rode
with his companye to Ampence/ a fayre for
tresse beside Charters/ whiche the lorde de
la Ryuer helde by ryght of his wyfe/ the lady
of Mans. He had greatly amended that ca
stell/ and was welbeloued of the men of his
countrey/ for he loued alwayes nothyng but
trouth. Than the dukes comissyoners came
thyder and dyde as they had in charge/ and
founde the lorde de la Ryuer there/ and his
wyfe & his chyldren. the knight loked for no
thyng els/ for he might haue ben gone before
if he had ly ste/ for he had knowledge that sir
Johan Mereyer and the erle of Rohyde we
were in prysone/ and that the Constable was
fledde w to Bretaygne. And he was coun
sayled

ſayled before by one of his frendes/ who ſaid to hym. Sir/ſaue your ſelfe/for the enuyous do nowe reygne/ and fortune as nowe is on their ſydes. He aunſwered and ſayde. Here and els where/ I am at the pleaſure of god. If I ſhulde flye or hyde my ſelfe/ I ſhulde yelde my ſelfe gylty/where I knowe my ſelfe clere. God hath gyuen me that I haue/ and he maye take it fro me whan it is his pleaſure. The wyll of god be fulfylled. I haue ſerued kynge Charles/ and nowe his ſonne well and trewly. My ſeruyce hath ben well knowen with them/ and they haue greatlye rewarded me. And ſeyng that I haue ſo truely ſerued at their cõmaundementes/ and trauepled for the bulyneſſe of the realme of Frãce/ I dare well abyde the iudgement of the parlyament chambre in Parys. and if they can fynde any faute in my dedes or wordes/ lette me be punyſhed. Thus the lorde de la Ryuer ſayd to his wyfe and to his cõſayle. This he ſayd or the dukes cõmyſſioners cae to his caſtell. At laſte one ſhewed hym and ſayd. Sir/here cometh ſuche men and ſuche with a great armye. Howe ſaye you/ ſhall we oppn the gates or nay/ yea quod he what elles/ they are welcome. Therwith he went and mette them/and receyued them one after another right honorably. Thus they all entred in to the caſtell of Mans. Than the baronnes of Barres whan they were within the hall executed his commaundement/ and arreſted the lorde de la Ryuer/who obeyed mekelye. Thus he was priſoner in his owne caſtell of Mans. It may well be thought that the good lady his wyfe was ſore diſcoforted/ whan ſhe ſawe fortune tourne her whele/ agaynſt her lorde and huſbande/ and alſo ſhe douted the concluſyon.

THus the lorde de la Ryuer was priſoner in his owne Caſtell of Mans. And anone after he was ſente for by them that had the gouernaunce/ bothe of the temporaltie and of the ſpirytualtie. For pope Clement of Auignon had nothyng in the realme of Fraunce/but by their meanes. The lorde de la Ryuer was brought to Parys/ and ſet in priſon in the caſtell of Loure. Many men in the realme of Fraunce had great pytie on hym/ howe be it they durſt nat ſpeke but priuely. The people cared nat ſo moche for the trouble of ſir Johan Mercyer/as they dyde for the lorde de la Ryuer. For he was alway ſwete/ curteſſe/ meke/ pacyent/ and gentyll to poore men: and a good meane alwayes for them that myght nat be herde. It was ſayde daylye in Paris/that theſe priſoners ſhulde leſe their heedes. And a ſclaunder ran vpon them/howe they were traytours againſt the crowne of Fraunce/ and pylled the realme/ and therby kepte their great poſtes and eſtates: and made fayre houſes/caſtelles/ and buyldynges. And other poore knightes and ſquyers/ ſuche as had aduentured their bodyes and membres in dedes of armes/and ſerued truelye the realme of Fraunce/and had ſolde and layde to pledge their herytages/ and yet could nat be payde/ for that they had ſerued/ Nother by the cõſtable nor by none of them that were in priſone: nor by Mõtague that was fledde. The enuyous condempned and iudged them to dye. So by reaſon of this they were in great daunger/ and alſo it was ſayd that by their counſaile the kyng toke on hym the iourney in to Bretaygne/ wherby he fell in to that maladye of Frankeſy/ and had gyuen hym drynkes of poyſon at their pleaſure and howe that the kynges phyſycions coude nat be herde nor beleued/ by reaſon of them. Suche maters were layde to the lorde de la Ryuers charge and to ſir Johan Mercyer/ that they were delyuered out of the Caſtell of Loure/ in to the handes of the preuoſt of Paris/and putte in to the caſtell of Layne In thoup/in the keppyng of the Vicount of Acyy who as than was Chatelayne there. Whan it was knowen that they were there/than the cõmon bruyte ran/ that they ſhulde be executed to dethe. But to ſaye trouthe/ there was no cauſe why to trouble them. For ſuche as hated them/ coude fynde in their conſcyence/ no cauſe why they ought to dye. But euery daye they were borne in hande/ and it was ſayd to them. Sirs/ thynke on youre ſoules/ for as for your bodyes are but loſte/ for ye are iudged to dye/ and for to be beheeded. In this caſe they were in Priſone a greate ſpace. The Begue of Vyllayns a ryght valyaunt knyght in armes/ of the countrey of Brance/who was in priſone alſo for ye ſame cauſe. He had ſuche frendes and was ſo ayded that

den that he was delyuered out of prison/and was clene pardoned of all thynges. And suche as were of his lynage/ as sir Barrops & other/ counsayled hym to go in to Castyle/ where as he had fayre herytages/ by reason of his wyfe/ countesse of Kibydewe/ and as he was counsayled so he dyde. And as soone as he might departed out of Fraunce & went in to Castyle/ and the other two knightes remayned styll in prison/ in daunger of losyng of their lyues.

All the mouable and vnmouable goodes and possessions parteynynge to sir Johan Mercyer within Parys and without/ in the realme of Fraunce/ that myght be layde hande on/ was taken as goodes forfaite/and gyuen to other persons. his fayre house of the bridge of Aubumen in the pictes of Laon/ whiche had cost hym a great good/ was gyuen to the lorde Coucy/ with all the appurtenaūces. I knowe nat whether the lorde of Coucy desyred it or nat/ but sir Johan Mercier was dis heryted/ he and his heyres for euer. Also the lorde de la Ryuer was sore handled. Trewe it was/ all his moables was taken awaye/ and suche landes as he had bought/ retournynge to the lady of Mans his wyfe all her herytages/ whiche came by her by father & mother. Also he had a yonge damoysell to his doughter of.x. yere of age/ who was maryed to a yonge gentylman called Jaques of Chastellon/ sonne to sir Hugh of Chastellon/ who had ben before maister of the crosbowes of Fraunce. and he was heyre to his father/ and had fayre herytages/ and was lykely to enioye more/ howbe it agaynst the yonge mannes mynde/ he was dismaryed. And maryed agayne to another gentylwoman/ at the pleasure of the duke of Burgoyne and of the lorde de la Tremoyle/ who toke on them that quarell. more ouer/ the lorde de la Ryuer had a sonne to his heyre/ whiche sonne was maryed to ỹ doughter of the erle Dampmartyne. And the erle had no mo children nor was nat lyke to haue wythe doughters was his heyre. And the duke wolde haue broken that maryage/ & haue maryed her vnto an heyre of blode/ But the erle Dampmartyne lyke a valyaunt knight wolde nat/ but sayd. As long as the lorde de la Ryuers sonne habyte lyfe in his body/ his doughter shulde haue none other husbande and sayde/ he wolde putte her herytage in to suche mennes handes/ that he trusted suche as wolde wrongfully haue it/ shulde nat attayne therto. Whan the erles myndе was knowen they let hym alone. So that marryage stode styll/ but the fyrst maryage was broken/ and pope Clement made a dispensacyon whether he wolde or nat/ for as at that tyme the pope had no more puissaunce in Fraunce/ than suche as the gouernoues wolde consente to. The churche was so subiecte/ what by reason of the Schisme/ and by them that gouerned Fraunce. Many men specially in the realme of Fraūce/ reculed greatly the lorde de la Ryuer/ but all that wolde nat serue/ for none durst speke thoughe they sawe the matter neuer so clere. Except all onely the valyant lady Jane of Boloyne/ duchesse of Betrey. Oftentymes the good lady wolde fall on her knees before her husbande/ holdynge vp her handes and sayeng. Ah sir/ ye suffre to moche the enuyous to enforme you so wrongfully/ agaynst the valyaunt knight. The lorde de la Ryuer he hath clerely wronge/ there is none that dare speke for hym but I. And sir/ I wyll ye knowe that if he dye thus/ I shall neuer haue ioye in this worlde/ but I shall alwayes contynue styll in sorowe and heuynesse/ for he is a trewe and a valyant knight. Ah sir/ ye coūsyder but lytell the grete seruyce that he hath done to you or this tyme: ỹ paynes and trauayle that he hath hadde for you and for me/ to bring vs togyder in maryage. I saye it nat for any thyng of boostyng of myselfe/ for I am but lytell worthe in compaynyon to you. But whan ye wolde nedes haue me/ ye remembre howe harde the erle of Foix was to you/ with whom I was brought vp/ And if the swete wordes/ and wyle demeanour of the lorde de la Ryuer had nat been/ I had neuer come in to your company/ but I had ben rather as nowe in Englade. For the duke of Lācastre wolde haue had me for his sonne the erle of Derby/ and the erle of Foix enclyned rather that waye thā to you. Right dere sir/ ye ought to remembre this/ for all that I saye is true. Wherfore I requyre you right hubly/ that this gentyll knight who brought me to you/ haue no dōmage of his body nor of his membres. The duke of Berrey who sawe his wyfe sayre and gentyll/ and loued her with

hes with all his herte/ and alſo knewe well that all ſhe had ſayd was true/ it moſtyed greatly his herte towardes the lorde de la Ryuer/ and to apeate his wyfe/ bycauſe he ſawe ſhe ſpake with good herte/ ſayd vnto her. Dame as god helpe me I wolde it had coſt me. xx. thouſande frankes/ or the conuycyon the lorde de la Ryuere had neuer made forfette to the crowne of Fraunce/ for before this malady came to the kynge/ I loued hym entierly/ and tooke hym for a wyſe and a ſage knyght. but ſythe ye deſyre ſo effectuouſly for hym I wyll do no dyſpleaſure to hym/ he ſhall fare moche the better at your inſtaunce/ and for your ſake I ſhall do as moche for hym as my power may extende/ and rather at your deſyre than and all the realme had ſpoken for hym/ for ſurely I ſe well it is almes to helpe hym/ and I beleue he hath no aduocate but you. Thus the lady was well pleaſed with her lordes wordes/ for ſurely and ſhe had nat ben he had been dede/ but for her ſake the duke of Berrey diſſymuled the matter/ and that was happy for ſyr Johan Mercyer/ for he and the lorde de la Ryuer were accuſed for one cauſe/ wherfore the dukes had conſyderence to cauſe one to dye and nat the other/ howe be it for all the promeſſe that was made to them/ yet they thought them ſelfe nat well aſſured of their lyues/ as longe as they were in priſon/ for they ſawe well they had as than many enemyes/ who as thā reygned and were in their proſperyte/ and ſome were right angry that they were ſaued ſo longe/ and they coulde amended it. Syr Johan Mercyer beynge in priſone wepte ſo contynually/ that he had almoſt loſt his ſight it was pytie to ſe his lamentacyon.

While theſe two knyghtes were thus in priſone more than a yere/ and no man knewe what ende ſhulde come of them. Than the dukes and their counſayle dyd all that they coulde to haue taken fro Olyuer Clyſſon/ and to haue put hym fro his honoure and offyce. They had rather haue had hym than all the reſydewe/ but he kepte hym ſelfe out of their handes/ wherin he dyd wyſely/ for if he had ben taken they had ſo ordeyned for hym/ that he ſhulde haue had iudgement of deth without remedy/ and all for enuy to haue pleaſed therby his aduerſary the duke of Bretaygne/ who neuer dyd good in the realme of Fraūce. whan the lordes ſawe y he was ſcaped their handes/ they toke other aduyſe/ as ye ſhall here. They ſomoned hym to apere in the parlyamēt chamber at Parys/ to anſwere to ſuch articles as he was accuſed of/ on payne to leſe his honour and to be banyſſhed the realme of Fraunce/ certayne cōmyſſioners were ſent in to Bretaygne to ſomon hym to apere. They that were ſente rode in to Bretaygne/ and demaūded where as they came where ſyr Olyuer of Clyſſon was/ and ſayd howe they were ſente by the kynge to ſpeke with the conſtable/ wherfore they deſyred to knowe where he was. The men of ſuche townes and garyſons as helde of the conſtable were determyned before what anſwere to make/ and ſayd. Syrs ye be welcome/ and if ye wyll ſpeke with the conſtable ye muſte go in to ſuche a place/ there we thynke ye ſhall fynde hym without faute. So the cōmyſſyoners were ſente fro towne to towne/ but they coude nat fynde him. And ſo longe they ſought that they were wery/ and ſo returned to Parys/ and declared what they had ſene and founde. ſuche as had accuſed hym were gladde that he dalte ſo/ for than they ſayd his falſnede was playnely ſhewed/ and therby acordyng to reaſon they ſaid he ſhulde haue as he had deſerued. Than by the courſe of the parlyament they proceded to all his ſomonynges/ to thentent that ſuche as loued hym ſhulde nat ſay he had any wronge/ by enuy or hatred. And whan all his. xv. ſomonynges were accomplyſſhed/ and that they coulde here no tydynges of hym/ nor of his apparaunce/ and that he had been openly called at the parlyament chambre dore/ and on the ſtayres/ and in the courte/ with all other ceremonyes therto belongynge/ and no anſwere made for hym/ he had proceſſe made agaynſt hym cruelly in the parlyament. There he was openly banyſſhed the realme of Fraunce as a falſe traytour againſt the crowne of Fraunce/ and iudged to pay a hundred thouſande marke of ſyluer for the extorcyons he had doone/ and for that he had ſo craftely in tyme paſte occupyed the offyce of the conſtablery of Fraunce/ and therfore to leſe for euer without recouery the ſayd offyce. At the gyuyng of this ſentence the duke of Orleaunce was deſyred to be preſent/ but he wolde nat/ excuſed hym ſelfe/ but the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyn were there with many other great lordes of the Realme

of Fraunce. Thus a man may se the warkes of fortune/ howe ferme and stable they be/ seynge howe this good and valyaunt knyght/ who in his dayes had so moche trauerse for the realme of Fraunce/ and as than was put to so moche shame/ as to be dysgraded fro honoure and goodes. Howe be it he was happy he appered nat at their somonynge/ for if he had/ surely he had shamfully loste his lyfe. As than the duke of Orlyance durst nat speke for hym/ if he had/ it shulde haue doone hym no good. Jets nat to be douted but that the duke of Bretaygne and syr Peter of Craon were right joyfull of those tydinges howe be it they were sory that he was nat prisoner in Parys as well as sir Johan Mercier and the lorde de la Ryuer. Of this shamfull banysshyng great bruite ranne therof in the realme of Fraunce and elsewhere. some complayned secretly and sayd that he had wronge. And some other sayd he was worthy to be hanged/ and that he had well deserued it. and moreouer sayd/ howe the dyuell coulde he assemble togyder so moche ryches as a mylyon and an halfe of florayns/ he coulde neuer gette that by ryght wyse meanes/ but rather by pollynge and robbyng/ and retaynyng to hymselfe the wages of the poore knyghtes & squyers of the realme of Fraunce that had deserued it. as it may well appere in the chaunceryo or treasory/ where euery thyng is written and regestred/ in the voyage that the kynge made in to Flaunders. there and than he reysed great profyte to his owne vse/ and also in the voyage to Almayne/ for all maner of taples and subsydyes that were reysed in the Realme to paye men of warre/ passed through his handes. he payed where as it pleased hym/ and the rest he kept to hym selfe and none durste speke agaynst it. In this maner syr Oliuer of Clysson was accused in many mennes mouthes. It is sayde in an olde prouerbe/ he that hath myssortune/ euery man offereth hym wronge. If the frenche kynge/ the duke of Berrey/ and the duke of Burgoyne had nat ben/ the duke of Bretaygne had ben able to haue subdued syr Oliuer of Clysson/ seynge he was in the dukes countrey/ but he suffered hym for a season to se howe the maters shulde proceede. Also he sawe well that syr Oliuer of Clysson was set on the heyght of fortunes whele/ and as than agayne he sawe howe he was cast downe/ and lyke to lese his offyce.

Thus the duke of Bretaygne and syr Peter of Craon were set vpon theyr fete/ and all by the workes of fortune/ whiche is neuer permanent/ but nowe vp nowe downe. The constable syr Oliuer of Clysson/ the lorde de la Ryuer/ & syr Johan Mercyer/ were principally accused for the cheke causers of the kinges malady. And suche as loued them nat/ sayd howe they had poysoned the kynge. howe be it euery man maye consyder by reason that it was nat so/ for they were the persones that shulde lese moste by the kynges malady/ wherfore it is to be thought they sought moste for his helthe/ but they coulde nat be beleued. So the two knyghtes remayned styll in prison in daūger openly to haue loste their heedes/ and by all apparaunce so they had doone/ if the kynge had nat recouered his helth/ and by the meane of the duchesse of Berrey/ who made instante labour for the lorde de la Ryuer. And the lorde Clysson was styll in Bretayne/ and made sorre warre agaynst the duke there/ and the duke agaynst hym/ whiche warre cost many a mannes lyfe/ as ye shall here/ here after in this hystory.

¶ Howe it is this sykenesse that the kyng tooke in the voyage towardes Bretayne/ greatly abated the loye of the realme of Fraunce/ and good cause why/ for whan the heed is sicke the body canne haue no ioye. No man durste openly speke therof/ but kepte it preuy as moche as myght be/ and it was couertly kept fro the quene/ for tyll she was delyuered and churched she knewe nothynge therof/ whiche tyme she had a doughter. The physycion mayster Guylyam/ who had the chefe charge of healynge of the kynge/ was styll about hym/ and was ryght dyligent/ and well acquyted hym selfe/ wherby he gate bothe honour and profyte/ for lytell & lytell he brought the kynge in good estate/ and toke away the fyuer and the heate/ and made hym to haue taste and appetyte to eate and drinke/ slepe & rest/ and knowledge of euery thynge. howe be it he was very feble/ and lytell and lytell he made the kynge to ryde a huntynge and on hawkynge. And whanne tydynges was knowen through Fraunce howe the kynge was well mended/ and had his memory agayne/ euery man was ioyfull/ and thanked god. the kyng thus beyng at Crayell/ desyred to se the quene his

his wyfe and the wolphyn his sonne. So the quene came thyder to him/and the chylde was brought thyder. The kynge made them good chere/ and so lytell and lytell through the helpe of god/ the kynge recouered his helthe. And whan mayster Guyllyam sawe the kynge in so good case/he was right ioyfull/as reasone was/for he had done a fayre cure/and so delyuered hym to the dukes of Orlyance/ Berrey/ Burgoyne/and Burbone/and sayd. My lordes/thanked be god the kyng is nowe in good state and helth/so I delyuer hym/but beware lette no man displease hym/for as yet his spyrytes be nat fully ferme nor stable/ but lytell and lytell he shall waxe stronge. Reasonable dyspoyte/rest/ and myrthe shall be moste profytable for hym/ and trouble hym as lytell as may be with any counsayles/ for he hath been sharpely handeled with a hote malady. Than it was conspyred to retayne this mayster Guyllyam/and to gyue hym that he shulde be contente with all/ whiche is the ende that all physicions requyre/to haue gyftes and rewardes. He was delyred to abyde styll about the kynge/but he excused himself and sayd howe he was an olde impotent man/and coulde nat endure the maner of courte/ wherfore he desyred to returne in to his owne countrey. Whan the counsayle sawe he wolde none other wyse do/they gaue him leaue/and at his departing gaue him a thousande crownes/ and retayned hym in wages with foure horses whan so euer he wolde resorte to the courte. Howe be it I beleue he neuer came there after/for whan he returned to the cyte of Laon/ there he contynued and dyed a ryche man. He lefte behynde hym a.xxx. thousande frankes. All his dayes he was one of the greteste nygardes that euer was/ all his pleasure was to get good/ and to spende nothynge/ for in his howse he neuer spente past two soulers of Parys in a day/ but wolde eate and drinke in other mennes howses/ where as he myght get it. with this rodde lyghtly all physicyons are beaten.

How the truse whiche was accorded bytwene Englande and Fraūce for thre yeres/ was renewed. Cap. C.xci.

AS yet haue herde here before in the bokes of this hygh and excellent hystory/ at the requeste of the ryght hygh and myghty prynce/ my here lorde and mayster Guy of Chastellone/ erle of Blois/lorde of Iuelnes/of Chymay/of Beaumont/ of Strenumehont/& of the Goode. I Johan Froyssart preest and chapelayn to my sayd lorde/and at that tyme treasourer and chanon of Chymay/ and of Lysle in Flaunders/ haue enterprysed this noble matter/ treatynge of the aduentures and warres of Fraunce and Englande/ and other countreys conioyned and a lyed to them/ as it maye apere clerely/ by the treaties therof made vnto the date of this presente day/the whiche excellent mater/as longe as I lyue by the helpe of god I shall contynue/ for the more I folowe and labour it/ the more it pleaseth me. As the noble knyght or squyer louynge the feates of armes/ do perceyuer in the same/ and be therby experte and made parfyte/so in labourynge of this noble mater/ I delyte and take pleasure. ¶ It hath ben here before contepned in our hystory howe truse was made at Balyngham/ to endure thre yere bytwene Englande and Fraunce/ and for that purpose the erle of Saynt Poll/the lorde of Castell Morant/ and syr Tawpyn of Cauteuell/ ambassadours of Fraūce had ben in Englande with the duke of Lancastre and the duke of yorke/for to vnderstande the kinges pleasure/ and the oppnion of the cōmons of Englande/ for at the communycacyon and parlyamente at Ampence/ they were at a poynte of agrement of peace/ vpon certayne artycles specifyed/ reseruynge the agrement therto of the cōmons of Englande. thus these ambassadours were retourned in to Fraunce/ and were answered howe that at the feest of saynt Mychell nexte ensuynge/ there shulde be a Parlyament at Westmynster of the thre estates of Englande/ at whiche tyme the mater shulde be declared/ and a full answere made. Whan tydynges was come in to Englande of the frenche kynges sycknesse/ that matter was greatly hyndred/howe be it kynge Richarde of Englande/ and the duke of Lancastre/ had great affection to haue had peace/so that if they might haue had their entente/ peace had ben made bytwene Englande and Fraunce. But the cō-

mynaste of Englande desyred warre/sayenge howe warre with Fraunce was more cõuenyent for them than peace. And of that opynyon was one of the kynges vncles/Thomas duke of Glocestre/erle of Perres/and constable of Englande/who was well beloued of the realme/he enclyned rather to the warre than to peace. And of his opynyon were the moste gentylmen of the realme/suche as desyred feates of armes. But his brother the duke of Lancastre/bycause he was eldest and of most puissaunce in Englande/he thought and sayd that the warre betwene Englande and Fraunce had endured longe ynoughe/and that peace were more mete/for by the warre cristendome was sore febled/for the great turke Lamorabaquyn was with great puyssaunce on the frontiers of Hungery wherefore he sayd it shulde be honorable to all ponge lusty knyghtes and squyers to take their waye thyder/and there to exercyse dedes of armes.

Lette be wysely consydre the duke of Lancasters wordes/who spake them of good entent/for he had greatly travayled in the warres of Fraunce/and conquered but lytell/and sore travayled his bodye/brent and dystroyed the playne countreys in his waye/and after his retourne sone recouered agayn/he sawe this warre brewe neuer to none ende/but rather encreased. Also he sawe that if fortune shulde turne agaynst ye englysh party/that great dõmage therof shulde ensue/and parceyued well that the kyng his nephue was enclyned moche rather to the peace than to the warre. ¶ Johan Froyssart auctoure of this hystory/cannot well saye/whether this dukes opynyon was good or nat/but it was shewed me that bycause the duke of Lancastre sawe his two doughters maryed in higher degree than hym selfe/and out of the realme of Englande/the one was quene of Spaygne/the other Quene of Portugale. This caused him gretly to enclyne to the peace/for he knewe well that the kynge of Spaygnes sonne/who had maryed his doughter/was as than but ponge/and in daunger of his owne subgiettes/and knewe well that if he shulde peasably enioye the heryptage of Spaygne/it was conuenyent that the englysshemen shulde kepe the peace with Fraunce/for if the peace shulde be broken by any incydent/than the frenche men myght shortly be reuenged of the realme of Spayne/for they had open entrees as well through Aragon and Chathalone/as Byerne and Bylkay/for the lady Yolant of Bare was quene of Aragone/and she was good frenche and gouerned Aragon/Chathalone/Byerne/and Bylkay/for the vycecount of Chatellon/who was heyre to therle of Foix had so wone and prompted the frenche quene/wherby the frenche men hadde many fayre entrees in to Spaygne without daunger of the kynge of Nauer/who wolde nat wyllyngly displeasse the frenche kynge his cosyn germayne/for as than syr Peter of Nauerre his brother/was with the frenche kynge/who alwayes apeased the frenche kynges ire and displeasure/whan he had any to his brother the kynge of Nauer/for he was a true frenche man/and neuer founde the contrary. All these imagynacions the duke of Lancastre had in hym selfe/and shewed his mynde to his sonne the erle of Derby/though he were but ponge/yet he was of great wysdome/and lykely to come to great honour/whiche erle had thre sonnes/Johan/Humfrey/and Thomas/and two doughters by the lady his wyfe/doughter and heyre to the erle constable of Englande/erle of Herforde and Northampton/by whiche lady he helde great heryptage.

The conclusyon of the parlyament holden at Westmynster by the thre estates of the realme. A treuce was taken by see and by lande/betwene Fraunce and Englande/their frendes and alyes/to endure fro the feest of saynt Mychell/to the feest of saynt Johan Baptyst nexte after/and suche cõmyssioners as the frenche kynge had sent to this parlyament were dyspatched/and the charter of the truce sent by them sealed/whiche treuce was well kyholden on all partyes. The frenche kynge was sore febled by reason of his sycknesse/and the physicyon mayster Guylyam Harselay was as than dede/but whan he departed fro Crayell fro the kynge/he ordeyned many receytes for the kynge to vse/wherby in the wynter season he recouerd his helth/wherof all his louers and frendes reioysed/with the hole cõmynalte of Fraūce/for he was well be loued/and so he and the quene came to Paris/and helde their housholde moste parte at saynt Denys/and sayntyme at Loure/and the

longe

lenge wyntre wyghtes they paſſed the ſeaſon with daunſynge and carolynge/ and other ga mes and paſtymes. The quene was accompa nied with the ducheſſe of Berrey/ the ducheſſe of Orleance/ and other ladyes. The ſame ſea ſon the vycount of Chaſtelon was come to Parys/ who was newly entred in to the here tage of the erldome of Foix and of Bearne as ryght heyre/ and he releued the ſuperſcrip tion of Foix/ and dyd his homage to the kyng but nat for Bearne/ for that countrey helde them ſelfe of ſo noble condycion/ that they wolde ſer uyce to no man lyuynge. For to be of the prince of Wales ſacte to the erle of Foix that laſt dyed/ that he ought to releue of him/ and to haue his reſorte to the Duchy of Aquitayne. But al wayes the ſayd erle denyed and defended it. And it is to be thought that the chalenge that the prince of Wales made therunto/ was by the ſtirynge on and meuyng of Johan erle of Armynake/ as it hath ben ſhewed here before in this hiſtory/ wherfore as nowe I wyll ouer paſſe it. Whan this vicount of Chaſtelion (cal led frohenſefor the erle of Foix) was at Parys with the frenche kyng/ he had there in his com pany with hym his coſyn ſyr Ruan of Foix/ baſtarde ſonne to the laſte Erle of Foix/ who was a goodly knyght. The erle of Foix or he dyed wolde haue made hym his heyre/ with a nother of his baſtarde ſonnes called Gracian/ who dwelte as than with the kyng of Nauer/ but the knyghtes of Bearne wolde neuer con ſent therto/ therfore the matter reſted as it dyd/ and the erle dyed ſodaynly (as ye haue herde before) Whan the Frenche kyng ſawe this ponge knyght ſyr Ruan of Foix/ he lyked hym maruelous well/ alſo the kyng and he were moche of one age/ and by reaſon of the fauoure that the kyng bare to this ponge knyght/ the erle of Foix had the ſhorter ſpede/ and was deliuered of all his buſineſſe/ and than departed in to his owne countrey/ and ſyr Ruan abode ſtyll with the kyng/ and retay ned as one of his knyghtes of his cham bre/ with.xii. huſſes/ & all other thynges therto be longynge.

¶ Of the aduentures of a daunce that was made at Parys in lykeneſſe of wodehowſes/ wherin the frenche kyng was in parell of dethe. Cap. C.xlii.

IT fortuned/ that ſome after the retayninge of this forſayd knyght/ a mary age was made in the kyn ges houſe/ betwen a ponge knyght of Almaynes/ and one of the quenes gen tyl women/ and becauſe they were bothe of the kynges houſe/ the kinges vncles and other lor des/ ladyes/ and damoſelles made great trey amphe. There was the dukes of Orleance/ Berrey/ and Burgoyne/ their wyues/ daun ſynge and makynge great ioye. The kynge made a great ſupper to the lordes and ladyes and the quene kepte her eſtate/ delitynge eue ry man to be mery. And there was a ſquyer of Normandy called Hogreymen of Genlay/ he adupſed to make ſome paſtyme. The daye of the marryage whiche was on a tuſſday before Candelmas/ he prouyded for a mummery & gaynil ryght. He deuyſed fyre cotes made of lynen clothe/ couered with pytche and therin ſtare lyke heare/ and had them redy in a cham bre. The kynge put on one of them/ and the erle of Foix/ a ponge luſty knyght a nother/ and ſyr Charles of Poictiers the thyrde/ who was ſonne to the erle of Valentenoys/ and to ſyr Ru an of Foix a nother/ and the ſonne of the lorde Manthyrillet had on the fyfte/ and the ſquy er hym ſelfe had on the ſyxte. And whan they where thus arayed in theſe ſayd cotes and ſa wed faſt in them/ they ſtroke lyke wylde wode houſes full of ſtare fro the toppe of the hed to the ſolys of ye foote. This deuyſe pleaſed well the frenche kynge/ and was well content with the ſquyer for it. They were apareiled in theſe cotes ſecretly in a chambre that no man knewe therof/ but ſuch as holpe them. Whan ſyr Ruan of Foix had well adupſed theſe cotes/ he ſayd to the kynge. Syr/ commaunde ſtraytly that no man approche here by with any torches or fyre/ for if the fyre laſten in any of theſe cotes/ we ſhall all be brent without remedy. the kyng anſwered and ſayd/ Ruan ye ſpeke well and

wyssip / it shall be doone as ye haue deuysed
and incontynent sent for an officer of his cham
bre / cõmaundyng him to go in to the chambre
where the ladyes daunced / and to remaunde all
the barlettes holdynge torches to stande vp by
the walles / and none of them to approche nere
to the wodehouses that shulde come thyder to
daunce. The officer by the kynges cõmaun
dement / whiche was suffyse. Incontynent after the
duke of Orleance entred in to the hall / accom
panyed with four knyghtes and fyue torches
and knewe nothynge of the kynges cõmaun
dement for the torches / nor of the mummery
that was cõmynge thyder / but thought to be
holde the daunsynge / and began hym selfe to
daunce. Therwith the kynge with the fyue o
thers came in / they were so disguysed in flare
that no man knewe them. Fyue of them were
fastened one to a nother. The kynge was lose
and kept before and led the daunce.

When they entred in to the hall euery
man tobe so great bede to them / that
they forgate the torches. The kynge
departed fro his company and went to the la
dyes to sporte with them / as youth requyred /
and so passed by the quene and came to the du
chesse of Berrey / who toke and helde hym by
the arme to knowe what he was / but the kyng
wolde nat shewe his name. Than the duches
sayd / ye shall nat escape me tyll I knowe your
name. In this meane seson great myschefe
fell on the other / and by reason of the duke of
Orleance / howe be it / it was by ignorance /
and agaynst his wyll / for if he had consydred
before the mischefe that fell / he wolde nat haue
done as he dyd for all the good in the worlde /
but he was so desyrous to knowe what perso
nages the fyue were that daunced / he put one
of the torches that his seruauntes helde so nere /
that the heate of the fyre entred in to the flare
(wherin if fyre take / there is no remedy) and
sodaynly was on a bright flame / and so eche
of them set fyre on other / the pytche was so fa
stened to the lynen clothe and their shyrtes so
dyse and fyne / and so cleuynge to their flesh /
that they began to brenne and to cry for helpe.
None durste come nere them / they that dyd
brenne their handes / by reason of the heate of
the pytche. One of them called Nantouillet /
aduysed hym howe the botry was therby / he
fled thyder / and cast hymselfe in to a basell full
of water / whiche they vsyd to putte / in to the
same hym / or els he had ben dead as the other
were / yet he was sore hurt with the fyre. When
the quene herde therof she made / the
doutid her of the kynge / for she knewe well
that he shulde be out of the fyre / wherwith she
fell in a swone / and knyghtes and ladyes came
and comforted her. A precious noyse there was
in the hall. The duchesse of Berrey delyuered
the kynge fro that parell / for she dyd caste ouer
him the traine of her gowne / and couered him
fro the fyre. The kynge wolde haue gone fro
her. Whyder wyll ye go quod she / ye se well
howe your company brenneth. What are ye / I
am the kyng quod he. Haste you quod she and
gete you in to other apparell / that the quene
maye se you / for she is in great feare of you.
Therwith the kynge departed out of the hall /
and in all haste chaunged his apparell / and
came to the quene. And the duchesse of Ber
rey had somwhat comforted her / and had shew
ed her howe the case stode / the kynge shorter
by. Therwith the kynge came to the quene / and
as soone as she sawe hym / for ioy she enbraced
hym and fell in a swone. Than she was borne
in to her chambre / and the kynge went with
her. And the bastarde of Foix who was all on
a fyre / cryed euer with a loude voyce. Saue the
kynge / saue the kynge. Thus was the kynge
saued. It was happy for hym that he went fro
his company / for elles had ben dede without
remedy. This great myschefe fell thus about
myd nyght in the hall of saynt Powle in Pa
rys / where there was two hernes to dethe in
the place / and other two / the bastarde of Foix
and the eric of Foix borne to their lodgynges
and dyed within two dayes after in great my
sery and payne. Thus the feest of this mary
age brake vp in trouble / howe be it there
was no remedy. The faulte was onely in the
duke of Orleance / and yet he thought none
euell wherfore he put downe the torche. Than
the duke sayde. Syrs lette euery man knowe
there is no man to blame for this cause but all
onely my selfe / I ame sory therof. If I had
thought as moche before / it shulde nat haue
happened. Than the duke of Orleance went
to the kynge to excuse hym / and the kyng toke
his excuse. This case fell in the yere of oure
lorde god a thousande thre hundred fourscore
and twelue / the tuesday before the feest of Can
delmas / of whiche fortune great bruyt spredde
abrode

brode in the realme of Fraūce/ and in other countreys. The dukes of Burgoyne and of Berrey were nat there present at that season / They hadde taken their leaue before of the kyng/ and were gone to their lodgynges.

The next daye these newes spredde abrode in the cyte/ and euery manne had meruayle therof. and some sayd howe God had sente that token for an ensample/ and that it was wysedome for the kynge to regarde it / and to withdrawe hym fro suche yonge yoell wantonnesse / whiche he had vsed ouermoche beynge a kyng. The comons of the cyte of Parys murmured & sayd. Beholde the great myschappe and myschiefe that was lykely to haue fallen on the kynge/ he myght as well haue been brent as other were. What shulde haue fallen than of the kynges vncles and of his brother. They myght haue ben sure none of them shulde haue escaped the dethe: yea/ and all the knyghtes that myght haue been founde in Parys. As soone as the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne herde of that auenture/ they were aball hed and maruepled greatly. They lepte on their hoxes and rode to the kyng/ and cōforted and counsayled hym/ whiche was necessary/ for he was sore troubled/ and the payll that he was in / was styll in his ymagynacion/ he shewed his vncles howe his aunt of Berrey had saued hym. But he sayde he was very sore for the dethe of the erle of Joyne/ of sir ywan of Foix/ and of sir Charles of Poicters. His vncles reconforted hym & sayde. Sir/ that is sorte canne nat be recouered: ye muste forgette the dethe of them/ and thanke god of the fayre auenture that is fallen to your owne persone. For all the realme of Fraunce by this incydent myght haue ben in great daunger of lesynge. For ye maye thynke well that these people of Parys wyll neuer be styll/ for God knoweth/ if the myschaunce had fallen on you / they wolde haue slayne vs all. Therfore sir/ aparell you in sclare ropall and lepe on your hoxse and ryde to our lady in pylgrymage/ and we shall accompany you / and shewe youre selfe to the people/ for they desyre sore to se you. The kynge sayde he wolde so do. Than the kynges vncles toke aparte the duke of Orliance and in curteise maner somwhat blamed hym of his yonge dede that he had done. He answered and sayde/ howe he thought to haue done none yuell. Than anone after the kynge and his company lepte on their hoxses / and rode throughe the cyte to apease the people/ and came to our lady Churche/ there herde masse and offred / and thanne retourned agayne to the house of Sayne Poule/ and lyeth and lyeth this mater was forgotten/ and the obsequyes done for the dede bodyes.

Thyerle Gascoyne of Foix/ if this had fortuned in thy lyfe dayes/ thou shuldest haue had great displeasure/ and it had been harde to haue peased the/ for thou louedest hym entierly. All lordes and ladyes through the realme of Fraūce/ and elsewhere/ that herde of this chaunce had great maruayle therof.

Howe pope Bonyface and the cardynals of Rome/ sent a frere a wyse clerke to the frenche kyng. Cap. C. xc. iii.

Pope Bonyface beyng at Rome with his cardinalles retoyled of this said auenture/ bycause the Frenche kyng was agaynst the The pope sayde it was a token sente fro God to the realme of Fraunce / bycause they supported the pope at Auygnon/ who was proude and presumptuous/ and neuer had done good in all his lyfe/ but destroyed the worlde. The pope at Rhome and his cardynalles were in counsayle/ and concluded to sende to the frenche kyng secretely a man of prudence/ a frere myno; a great clerke/ and he wisely to preche and to counsayle the kyng to folowe the waye of reason/ for they said the kyng toke a wrong waye/ seynge he was named to be the chiefe kyng of Christendome/ by whom holy churche ought to be illumyned and ayded. Wherfore they charged this frere to go into Fraūce/ and deliuered hym instructions of the effecte that he shulde saye and do. This was done but it was by leyser/ for the frere had fayre to go/ and also knewe nat whether he shulde haue audyence whanne that he came thyder or nat. Nowe lette hym go on his

iourney

tourney/and we shall somwhat speke of the busynesse of Fraunce.

Notwithstandyng/for all these aduentures/ the dukes of Berrey & Burgoyne and their counsayls/lefte nat to pursue to haue destroyed ꝓ lorde de la Ryuer and sir Johan le Mercier/ who were in prisone in the castell of sayne Anthony/in the kepyng of the vycount of Archy. And it was said/ that they shulde be put to dethe/and de lyuered to the prouost of the Chastelet. And it was ordayned/that as sone as they shulde come in to his handes/that they shulde be be heded openly as traytoures agaynst ꝯ crowne of Fraunce: and so they had been/ if God had nat prouyded for them. And at the spetiall instaunce and requeste of the duchesse of Berrey: for and she had nat ben/ their dethe had been hasted. specially she prayed for the lorde de la Riuer/ for by his meanes she was brought in to Fraunce/ & the mariage made bytwene the duke of Berrey and her. She sayde on a tyme to the duke her husbande all wepyng. Sir/ that is sayd to the lorde de la Ryuer is but a false slaundre/ and done for enuy. And sir/ remembre what payne and trauayle he toke to bring vs togyder/ pe rewarde hym but smally to cõsyder to his dethe Thoughe all his landes and goodes be taken fro hym/ yet lette hym haue his lyfe. For and he dye in this oppn shame/ I shall neuer haue ioye in my herte. Sir/ I saye nat this of fayned corage/but that I say is with all my hole herte/ wherfore sir/ I requyre you prouyde for his delyueraunce. Whan the duke herde his wyfe speke so effectuously/ and also knewe well that she sayde but trouthe. Than he had pyte and swaged his displeasure/ and the lorde de la Ryuer had been the soner delyuered and sir Johan Mercier had nat been/ for they sought all the wayes that myght be/ to haue putte hym to dethe/ whyche they coude nat do/ without dethe shulde haue dyed.

This sir Johan Mercyer hadde wept so moche in prison/that his sight was therby sore febled. If they had folowed the duchesse of Burgoynes counsayle/ they had ben putte to execucyon longe before shamefully/ without fauour. For she hated them/ bycause they and sir Olyuer of Clysson had counsayled the kynge to go in to Bretaygne to warre agaynst her cosyn the duke. Also she sayde that Clysson le Ryuer/and Mercyer/ were causers of the kynges malady/ howe be it the kyng was well recouered and in good state. The dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne kepte styll the gouernaunce of the realme of Fraunce/ for they had great profyte therby. They had apoynted suche persones as them pleased to be about the kyng.

In those dayes the kynge bare the name of a kynge/ but as touchyng the busynesse partenynge to the crowne of Fraunce/ he was but lytell obeyed/ for the dukes wolde le and knowe howe euery thynge passe. The duchesse of Burgoyne was nerre persone to the Quene/ where with the Duchesse of Orlyaunce was nothynge pleased/ for she wolde haue hadde the honoure and preemynence. And she sayde to suche as were secrete with her. What/ the duchesse of Burgoyne ought in no condycion to go before me/ nor is nat so nyghe to the crowne (as I am). My lorde my husbande is brother to the kynge/ and it myght so fall/ that he shulde be kynge and I quene: I wotte nat why she shulde take on her this honour/ and put me behynde. Thus louue enuy was amonge these ladyes.

Nowe lette vs leaue speakynge of them/ and retourne to sir Olyuer of Clysson.

We haue herde howe he was somoned syxtene dayes to apere in the parlyament chambre/ a how certayne knyghtes were sente in to Bretaygne to seke for him/ as sir Philyppe of Sauoyse and other/ who wente in to Bretaygne and serched for hym in all places/ but they founde hym nat/ for he hydde hym selfe so couertly/ that they coulde neuer speke with hym/ for if they hadde/ they wolde haue rested hym. At their retourne in to Fraunce/ they made relacyon of their voyage. Than it was iuged by the lordes of the parlyament/ that sir Olyuer of Clysson Constable of Fraunce/ hadde forfayted landes/ lyfe/ and goodes: And so iuged hym to be banysshed for euer out of the realme of Fraunce/ and to lese all his offyces and benefyces within the realme. And bicause he had nat sente the Wartell/ whyche is the token of the ollyte

the office of the Constablery/ as he was cõmoned to do: therfore the office was vacant and voyde. Than the dukes and their counsayls/ suche as were agaynst sir Olyuer of Clysson/ thought it necessary to prouyde soe person to occupy the said office/ whiche was so noble and of so great renome/ that it might nat long be without a gouernour/ for the incidentes that myght happe to fall. They aduysed that the lorde Coucy was a mete man for it/ and layde it to hym/ but he excused hym selfe and sayd/ that in no wyse he wolde medyll therwith/ he wolde rather forsake the realme of Fraunce. Whan they sawe he wolde nat medyll therwith/ than the dukes toke other aduyse.

Howe the maryage was treated/ of the lorde Philyp of Arthoys Erle of Ewe/ and the lady Mary of Berrey wydowe/ doughter to the duke of Berrey/ and howe he was admyted Constable of Fraunce.

Cap. C. xc. iiii.

IN this same season there was a treatie of maryage to be had bytwene the lorde Philyppe of Arthoys & the yong wydowe lady of Berrey/ sometyme called countesse of Dunoys and wyfe to Loyes of Bloys. The frenche kynge wolde gladly haue had this maryage auaunced/ but the duke of Berrey was natte wyllynge therto/ for he thought the erldome of Ewe but a small thyng/ as to the regarde of her fyrste husbande/ wherfore he thought to mary her more highlyer. In dede the lady was beautifull & endued with all vertues/ & shulde apertayne to a noble lady. Howe be it finally/ the duke of Berrey was lothe to displease the kynge/ yet he had many offers made hym for his doughter/ as by the ponge duke of Lorrayne/ by the erle of Armynake/ & by the sonne and heyre of the Erle of Foix. The kynge hadde of all these maryages/ and sayd to his vncle. Fayre vncle of Berrey/ we wyll nat that ye shall putte our cosyn youre doughter come of the Floure de lyce/ in to so farre countreys/ we shall prouyde for her a mariage mete/ for we wolde gladly haue her nere vs/ it is right mete that she be with our aunt youre wyfe/ for they be nyghe of one age Whan the duke sawe the kynges entente/ he refrayned hym selfe of makynge of any promyse/ to any persone for his doughter. Also he sawe well that the kynge enclyned his fauour to his cosyn the lorde Philyppe of Arthois/ who was a ponge lusty knyght and of hyghe corage/ and hadde endured many trauayls in armes/ beyond the see and other places/ and had atchyued many voyages to his great laude and honour. Than the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne agreed bytwene thé/ that if the kynge wolde gyue to their cosyn Philyppe of Arthois/ the office of Constablery of Fraunce/ whiche as than they reputed voyde/ by reason of the forfayture of sir Olyuer of Clysson/ than they to agree at the kynges pleasure in this sayd maryage. For the duke of Berrey thought/ that if he were constable of Fraũce/ he shulde than haue sufficient to mentayne his estate. On this the two dukes determyned to speke to the kynge and so they dyde/ and sayd to hym. Sir/ your counsayle generally are all agreed/ that the lorde Philyp of Arthoys be preferred to the office of constable/ bycause of the office of constable/ whiche is nowe voyde. For by iugement of your parlyament/ Olyuer of Clysson hath forfayted the office/ whiche maye nat be long vacant/ but it shulde be preiudyce to the realme. And sir/ bothe you and we also are bounde to auaunce and promote our cosyn of Arthoys/ for he is nere of blode and of lynage to vs. And sir/ seeing the office is voyde/ we can nat tell where ye shulde better employ it/ than on hym. He shall right well exercise it: he is welbeloued with knyghtes and squiers: and he is a man without enuy or couetousnesse. These wordes pleased well the kyng/ who answered & sayd. Vncle (if it be voyde) we had rather he had it than another. The kyng/ vncles sayd still for the lorde Philyppe of Arthoys/ for the duke of Berrey hated sir Olyuer of Clysson/ bycause he consented to dishrose Berysache his seruaunte. And the duke of Burgoyne hated hym/ bycause he made warre

agaynst

agaynſt the duke of Bꝛetaygne/ and yet the ducheſſe hated hym woꝛſe. Finally the kyng aſſented/ ſo that the duke of Berrey wolde agꝛe to the mariage/ bytwene his doughter & the ſaid lorde Philyppe of Arthoys. And yet to fatisfye the kyng and the duke of Orlyaunce/ who bare ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon in that ſyde. They ſente ſir Guyllyam of Bourdes and ſir Guyllyam Martell/ bothe knyghtes of the kynges chambꝛe. And ſir Philyppe of Sauoiſes a knyght of the duke of Berreys in to Bꝛetaygne/ to ſpeke with ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon. Theſe knyghtes tooke theꝛe iourney and cobe to Angeꝛs/ and theꝛe they fouud the quene of Hieruſalem and Johan of Bꝛetaygne/ who receyued them right honoꝛably foꝛ the honour of the Frenche kyng. There they taryed two dayes/ and demaunded tidyngs of ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon. Sayeng they had certaine letteꝛs and meſſage fꝛo the Frenche kyng to hym/ and fꝛo none other perſone And they were aunſwerꝛed no man coude tell where he was/ but that he was ſurely in Bꝛetayne/ in one of his foꝛtreſſes. But they ſaid he was ſo flyttyng fꝛo one place to another/ that it was harde to fynde hym. Than theſe knyghtes departed and tooke leaue of ꝑ quene and of her ſonne Charles the pꝛince of Tharent/ and of Johan of Bꝛetaygne erle of Pōthieu/ and cobe to Rennes. And the duke of Bꝛetayne and the ducheſſe were at Wannes and cobe nat lightly foꝛthe out of the towne/ foꝛ he euer doubted the bull hmentes of his enemye ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon. Theꝛe was ſo harde warre made bytwene them/ that theꝛe was no mercy but bethe. And thoughe the duke was lorde and ſouerayne of the countrey/ yet there was neyther baroune/ knyght/ noꝛ ſquyer in Bꝛetaygne/ that wolde atme them agaynſt ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon/ but diſſymuled and ſayde/ that their warre touched them nothyng/ wherfoꝛe they ſatte ſtyll. The duke coude haue none other conſoꝛte.

Whan theſe Frenche knyghtes were at Rennes: they enquered where to fynde ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon/ but they coude here no certentie of hym. Thanne they were counſayled to dꝛawe to the caſtell of Joſſelyn/ where ſir Olyuer of Clyſſons men receyued them well/ foꝛ the loue of the Frenche kynge. Than they demaunded where they myght here of ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon/ ſayeng they had to ſpeke with hym/ fꝛo the Frenche kynge and fꝛom the duke of Orlyaunce/ and fꝛom none other perſones. But his men coude tell nothyng of hym/ noꝛ els they wolde nat tell. But they ſayd. ſiꝛs/ ſurely it wyll be harde to fynde hym/ foꝛ this daye he is in one place/ and to moꝛo we in another. But if it pleaſe you/ ye maye ryde ouer all the duchy of Bꝛetaygne/ and ſeꝛche ouer all his foꝛtreſſes and houſes/ none ſhall be cloſed agaynſt you. Whan they ſawe they coulde haue none other aunſwere they departed thens/ & cobe and beſyged all the foꝛtreſſes great and ſmall/ parteynynge to the lorde Olyuer of Clyſſon. Thaſe they came to Wannes/ and there founde the duke of Bꝛetaygne and the ducheſſe/ who receyued them/ and there they taryed but halfe a daye/ and diſcouered nat to the duke/ the ſeꝛrete matter that they came thyder foꝛ/ noꝛ alſo the duke demyned them nothynge of the mater. Alſo they coulde nat le there ſir Peter of Craon.

Thus they toke leaue of the duke and of the ducheſſe and retourned to Parys/ where they foũde the kyng and the lorꝛdes/ and there repoꝛted to the kynge & to the duke of Orlyaunce/ how we they hadde ſought all the places and townes parteynynge to ſir Olyuer of Clyſſon/ but in no wyſe they coulde fynde hym. The dukes of Burgoyn and Berrey were right gladde of theſe tidyngs/ and wolde nat it had ben other wiſe. Than anone after proceded the mariage bytwene the lorde Philippe of Arthois and the lady Mary of Berrey. and ſo this lorde Philyppe was Conſtable of Fraunce/ and vſed the office/ with all profytes and aduauntages therto belongyng/ of auncyent oꝛdynaunces. yet the lorde Olyuer of Clyſſon had nat renounced the office/ noꝛ deliuered vp the Martell/ whiche is the token of the Conſtable of Fraunce. Foꝛ he contynued/ and ſayd he wolde abyde ſtyll Conſtable/ and had done no cauſe why to leſe it/ neuther to the kynge noꝛ to the realme. He knewe well the erle of Ewe was profered to haue the office of the Conſtable/ and to enioye the profytes therof/ by conſente of the kynge/ and howe he hadde maryed the doughter of the duke of

Berrey

Berrey the lady Mary. He toke but lytell re garde to all this/ for he knewe hym selfe true to the kynge/ and to the crowne of Fraunce. And knewe well/ all that was done agaynst hym was through envy and hatered/ that the dukes of Burgoyne and Berey had against hym. Thus the lorde of Clysson lette the mat ter passe/ and contynued styll his warre aga ynst ỹ duke of Bretayne/ whiche warre was right fierse and cruell/ without mercy or pyte. The lorde of Clysson rode ofter abrode and layde bushmentes/ than the duke dyde. And all other lordes of Bretayne satte styll & wolde nat medyll. The duke dyde sende for the lordes of his countrey/ and they came to speke with hym/ & to knowe his entent. than the duke requyred them of their ayde & helpe agaynst his ennemy sir Olyuer of Clysson. Than the lordes of Bretayne/ as the vicoũt of Rohan/ the lorde Dignan/ the lorde Hermen of Lyon/ and dyuers other excused them and sayd. they knewe no cause why/ nor they wolde nat make no warre agaynst the lorde Clysson/ but they said they wolde right glad ly endenour them selfes to bringe them to a peace/ if they coude. Whan the duke sawe he coude haue none other confort of them/ and parceyued well howe he lost and was lykely to lese mo men in that warre than sir Olyuer of Clysson/ than he consented that the sayde lordes shulde go to sir Olyuer of Clysson & treate for a peace/ and to bringe hym vnder saueconducte to Vannes to speke with hym/ at whiche tyme he sayd he shulde be founde tretable/ and to agre to all reason. And if sir Olyuer had done hym any displeasure/ that he myght haue amendes accordynge to their adwyse. These lordes were well agreed thus to do/ and so they all thre wente to the lorde Olyuer of Clysson/ and dyde so moche that they spake with hym (as I was enformed) in the castell of Joselyn/ and shewed hym the dukes entent. And mocquout to bringe them to a peace (for they sawe well warr was nat sytting bytwene them/ but greatly noyed the noble men/ marchaũtes/ and cõmons of Bretaygne) they sayd to the lorde Olyuer. Sir/ if it wyll please you to go to ỹ duke/ we shall hynde vs to abide here i this castell tyll your retourne. And we doute nat/ ye beynge ones in his presence/ yet shall fynde him so resonable/ that peace and good accorde shalbe had bitwene you. Sir Olyuer sayd. Sirs what shall it profyte you if I were dede/ Thynke you that I knowe nat the duke of Bretayne/ He is so cruell and so haute/ that for all his saueconducte/ or what soeuer he sayethe/ if he sawe me in his presẽce/ he wolde neuer cease tyll I were dede: and thanne shulde you bye lyke wise/ for my men here wolde soone slee you without mercy. Wherfore it is best that bothe you and I saue our lyues/ rather than to putte vs in that daunger. I shall kepe me fro hym and I can/ and lette hym kepe hym as well fro me. Thanne the lorde Charles of Dignan sayde. Fayre cosyn/ ye may saye as it please you/ but we thynke surely thoughe he sawe you/ he wolde do you no displeasure/ This that we offre you is of good affection/ and to bringe you to accorde/ and we praye you that ye wyll this do. Than ỹ lorde Clysson sayde. Sirs/ I beleue surely ye meane well/ but I ensure you vpon this assurance I shall neuer go to hym. But sithe ye medell in the mater bytwene vs/ ye shall nat thynke that I shalbe vnresonable. I shall tell you what I wyll do. Retourne you agayn to the duke/ and saye that I wyll nat take you for no pledge nor hostage. Lette hym sende me his sonne and heyre/ who is marryed to the doughter of Fraũce/ and he shall abyde here in this castell with my men/ tyll I retourne agayne. This way I thynke more surer thã the other/ for if ye shulde abyde here (as ye offre) Who shulde thanne entremedell in the busynesse bytwene ỹ duke and me? For with out a meane we shall neuer come to accorde.

When these lordes of Bretayne sawe they coude haue non other answere they tooke their leaues and retourned to Vannes to the duke/ and shewed hym what they had done/ but in no wyse the duke wolde consente to sende his sonne to the castell of Joselyn. So their warre contynued styll/ wherby no persone durst ryde abrode/ and marchaundyse was layde downe/ thorought whiche the people of good townes & cyties were sore hyndred/ and poore labourers lette labourynge of the erthe. The ducheesse of Burgoyn couertly ayded her cosyn the duke of Bretayne with men of armes/ al well of Burgoyne as of other places. for the duke coude get none of his countrey to take his parte in

that qua-

that quarell agaynst sir Oliuer of Clysson. They alwayes dissymuled the matter/ except suche as were of his owne house. The duke of Orleaunce on the other parte/ loued well the lorde Oliuer of Clysson/ and secretely so coueted hym with men/ and sente hym horses. Sir Oliuer of Clysson roode ofter abrode than the duke dyde. And it fortuned on a day he encountred two squyers of the dukes/ the one called Bernard & the other Yuonet. they were taken and brought to sir Oliuer/ who was gladde of them: he knewe them well/ one of them hadde done hym seruyce in tyme past/ and the other nat/ but he had done hym displeasure. Than sir Oliuer said to Yuonet Remembrest thou nat howe in the Castell of Ermyne thou shewedest me but small curtesy: and thou Bernarde haddest pyte on me and dyddest putte of thy gowne and putte it on me/ whā I stode in my doublet on ꝑ pauement/ the whiche kepte me fro colde. I wyll nowe yelde thy curtesy to the/ thy lyfe shalbe saued. but thou false knaue and traitour Yuonet/ thou myghtest haue done otherwyse thā thou dyddest/ therfore thou shalte repent it/ and therwith drewe his dagger and strake hym to the herte. Another tyme ꝑ lorde Clysson rode with thre hundred speares in his cōpany/ towarde the castell of Auroy/ where the duke and duchesse of Bretayne were. This was aboute Mydsomer/ and by fortune he encountred a fourtie of the Dukes seruauntes/ who hadde tyed their horses to the trees/ and had sickels in their hādes/ and were cutyng downe the corne/ and makynge trusses to cary to their lodgynges lyke forragers. Whan the lorde Oliuer came on them/ they were fore afrayde/ and the lorde Oliuer said Sirs/ howe dare ye come in to the feldes/ to steale and to take away poore mēnes corne ye neuer sowed them/ and per ye cutte them downe or they be rype: ye begyn harueste to soone. Leape on your horses and take youre sickels/ for this tyme I wyll do you no hurt/ and saye to the duke of Bretaygne who is in Auroy/ that if he wyll come or sende his men to brynge me away/ here he shall fynde me tyll the sonne gothe downe. These poore men were gladde they were so delyuered/ they fered to haue ben slayne. And they returned to the castell of Auroy to ꝑ duke/ and shewed hym what they hadde herde and sene/ but the duke nor none of his men yssued out of ꝑ castell. Many scrympll hes were made in Bretaygne/ bytwene the duke and sir Oliuer of Clysson/ and they of the countre medled nat bytwene them. ¶ Nowe we wyll leaue to speke of the duke of Bretayne and of sir Oliuer of Clysson/ and of their warres/ and speke of the busynesse bytwene Englande & Fraūce.

¶Of the forme of the peace made bitwene the Frenche kyng & the kyng of Englande/ by meanes of the foure dukes vncles to bothe kynges. Cap. C.xcv.

We haue herde here before/ howe the ptiamēt was holden in the cytie of Impence/ and howe the Englysshe lordes departed/ and vpon what articles. & howe the Frenche kynge sent after tn to Englande to the duke of Lācastre/ and the answere that they hadde of the Englysshmen/ who were harde to be brought to any peace. For it laye nat all onely in the kyng nor in the dukes of Lancastre and yorke/ for grete parte laye in the commens of Englande and archers/ and other seruyng men. they sayd howe they had rather haue warre than peace/ & many yong knightes & squiers were of ꝑ same opynion/ for by reason of the warre they had mayntened their estates/ howbe it ferre they were fayne to obey as the kyng & his vncles wolde. The duke of Lācastre bycause his .ii. doughters were quenes/ the one of Spaygne/ the other of Portugale. And also bycause he sawe the kynge his nephue enclyned to haue peace/ he sayd the warre had endured longe ynoughe/ and sayde he wolde take payne therin/ so it myghte be for the honour of the kyng and the realme. On the other partie the duke of Burgoyne dyde all ꝑ he myght do to haue peace/ considering howe he was greatly charged with the busynesse of Fraunce. And that his two neptues/ the Frenche kynge and the duke of Orleaunce were yonge of age and of discretion. Also he considered howe he was myghtyer

tour to

ande to the duchy of Brabant, and thought that if euer Flaunders and Brabant, shuld ioyne agaynst the crowne of Fraūce with the ayde of Englande, as they had other tymes dyuers before, that the realme of Fraūce shuld haue ouer much to do. the duke of Burgoyne was a wyse and a farre castyng prince, and dyuersely garded his businesse. This duke of Burgoyne and the duke of Lācaster, toke great payne to haue a Parliament agayn to be holde at Balyngham, which was agreed, and bothe the partyes sufficiently prouyded with full auctorytes to conclude a full peace. And this assemble to be holden at Balyngham, in the moneth of May than next after, in the yere of our lorde god a thousande thre hundred fourtcore and .xvii. and all such as shulde be at this assēble were named and apoynted.

Furthe on the partye of kynge Richarde kynge of Englande were apoynted hys two vncles, the duke of Lācaster & the duke of Glouceſter, who were greatly in fauoure with all the comons of England, and with all such people better to haue war than peace. and vnder them shulde be the archebyshop of Yorke, the byshop of London, and other clerkes of the realme. It was apoynted that these lordes shuld come to Calays (as they dyd) & there the xxvi. day of April anone after the feest of Easter, holden at the castell of Leedes, by the kinge and other knightes of the order of the garter. And on the frenche party there was assygned the dukes of Berry and Burgoyne to be there, and other counsellours of Fraunce, & it was ordeyned that they shulde come to the towne of Boloyn, & the frenche kyng, who (as he shewed had great affection to haue peace betwene England & him) shulde to his vncles, that he wolde come as nere to the parlyament as he might. whereupon it was accorded where the frenche kyng shuld lye. The parlyament durynge at Balyngham, the lordes lyed at their owne, and some in Calays. But all thynges considered, it was thought that the kynges shuld lye at Abuile, for the towne was strong and well inhabyted, and there euery man shulde be lodged. After this was determined vpon & sworne, made there for the kyng, and he to be lodged in the abbay of saint Peters, an abbey of blacke monkes, & thether came the kinge and the duke of Ozeanuce, and their counsayle, and the lorde Reynold of Corby, chaunsellour of Fraunce. The duke of Berrey & of Burgoyne, and such other as were in their compaignie, were at Boloyne. And the dukes of Lancaster and Glouceſter & other were at Calays. It was goodly to behold to se the ozder of this parlyament that was holden at Balyngham, betwen the frenche men and englishmen. There were tentes and pauylions pyght up, to refreshe bothe parties, and twyse oz thryse a weke the commissioners mette ther in a large tent, ordayned for that purpose, about nyne of the clocke in the forenoone, and there commoned vpon many artycles. At whiche time I Iohan Froyssart (author of this boke) was at Ayre, and desyrous to knowe the effect of this treaty. I enquyred the trouth of such lordes and other as I thought shulde know the certaynty. As it was shewed me, whan they entred into communycation, & had seene eche others auctorytie, and perceyued that they had full power to conclude a peace, both by land and see, betwene Fraunce and Englande, and all their alyes. Than one of the fyrst demaundes of the frenche men desyred, was to haue Calays raced downe, in such maner that there shulde be neuer after and habitacion ther. Therto the dukes of Lācaster and Glouceſter answered & said how they had no such auctorite to cause Calays to be beaten downe, but that England shulde holde it in his demayne and frewe heritage. And sayd, that if the purposed to entre any further in treaty of peace, to leace of that demaunde, and to speke no more therof. whan the Dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne herde their two cosyns of England answere so quycke in that case, they ceased to speke any more of that matter for they saw well there trauayle shulde be but in vayne, and so than spake of other matters. Than the englyshe men demaunded to haue restytucyon of all such landes as had been delyuered to kyng Richarde their souerayne lord, oz to kynge Edwarde the fyrste, oz to any of their deputies oz commyssioners &, also to haue fully payed the some of .lxxxvi. thousayns that was left vnpayed at the tyme whan the warre rene betwene England and Fraūce and that the

englyth clerkes and lawyers proued reasonable and lawfull to be had. The lordes and chaunceller of Fraunce argued to the contrary, and said, as to retourne all the landes agayne to the gouernyng of the king of Englande and hys successours was impossyble to be done, sayenge how suche landes, cyties townes, castels, lordshyppes, and homages as the Englysshemen demaunded, were gyuen away whan the peace was concluded at Bretygny, and after confermed and sealed at Calays, wherby they were clene put away fro ꝑ king of England, which peace & graunt es was made in the yere of our lorde god a thousand thre hundred threscore and one, and therupon the frenche king graunted to such landes great liberties, by hys othe, writing, and promyse whiche in no wise can be broken agayne nor reuoked, wherfore they said that if the Englysshemen purposed to haue peace, they shuld drawe to some newer point. Then by deliberacion of the foure dukes, it was deuysed that the frenchmen as well as the englysshmen shulde put all their demaundes in writing, & the same to be deliuered to eyther party, that they might be regarded at length on bothe partes. And such as were vnreasonable to be raised and cancelled, and such as were good to be holden, this ordynaunce semed to all partyes good & reasonable. Before this order was taken ꝑ foure dukes had to moche busynesse to do, specially the englysh men had moche paine to here and to vnderstand the french men, who were full of subtyle wordes, and closed perswacions & double of vnderstandinge, the which the frenchmen wold taurne as they list, to their profite and aduauntage, whyche englyshe men vse not in their language, for their speche and entent is playne. And also the englysshmē were enfourmed that the frenche men had not alwayes vpholden the articles, promises and condicions, ratyfied in the articles of peace yet the frenchmen wold euer finde one point or other in their writinges, by some subtyle clokes vnder, affirmynge that the englyshe men had broken the peace, & not they, wherfore whan the englysshemen sawe or herde in the french mens writynges any darke or cloked worde, they made it to be examyned by suche as were profounde lerned in the lawe, and if they found it a myste, they caused it to be cancelled and amended, to the entent they wolde leaue nothing in trouble. And the englysshmen to excuse them selfe, wold say that frenche men lernynge suche subtyltees in their youth, must nedes be more subtyl than they. Sometyme suche frowarde wordes betweene the parties greatly drawe of the time of treatie. The frenchmen belde them selfe fre, and thought they shulde not be charged with no such demaundes, as to make reuyntyon of all the landes with the apurtenaunces perteynyng to the duchy of Aequytaine, with the appendages of that hath ben longe syth the warre renewed, to ꝑ which they wold neuer accord. The french men offred to rendre the countie of Perde and of Bygore. and the countie of Piergourt and Perygeux, and the cōtie of Agen & Agenoys, but Kaours, Roergne, Querry, and Lymosin they wold in no wise deliuer nor the countri of Ponthyeu, nor of the cōtie of Guisnes, more than the englysh men hadde in their handes at the same time. Thus these lordes cōtynued a syxteue dayes and made no conclusion, but these dukes determined to sende worde to the two kinges, to gyue the knowledge what they had done. The french duke rode to Abbeuyle and shewed the kinge all the matre, and howe they had deuysed their rolles of England to write the hole treatie to the king of Englande, and so the said they had promysed to do. And as I was enformed, on the englyshe party ꝑ duke of Glocestre was harder to entreat than the duke of Lancastre. and by cause the commons of England knew somwhat of his entent therfore they agreed that he shuld be sēt to this treatye, for they knewe well that nothynge shulde passe him without it were for ꝑ honour of the realme. Thus these foure dukes amyably departed eche fro other, and concluded to mete that same tyme twyuth day after. Thus these englysh lordes returned to Calays and the frenche lordes to Bolayne, and so to Arundel. That tyme in Abuyle there was a fayre garden, closed with the riuer of Somme, where as often tymes the frenche king pasted the tyme. He sayd to hys brother of Orleaunce and to his counsayle, that the beynge at Abbeuyle had ben merye good in his beliefe. There was there the same season with the kinge, the kynge Lyon of Armony, newly come thyther out of Grece, and out of thole

thole marches.to his owne coſtrey he durſt not entre,for the turkes had cõquered.xx. cite the ſtrong towne of Conych,ſtandyng on the ſee ſyde,which the genowayes helde and kept for dout of the turkes,for if the turkes had gotten that porte,they ſhulde haue loone muche euyll by the ſee to the eppuans and to the Rodes,and other boundes of crystendome.The kyng of Armony wolde glad to haue hadde peace bytwene England and Fraunce,in truſt that al pong knightes and squyers ſhulde go into Grece to helpe to conquere againe his realme of Armony.Whan the frenche kinges vncles were come to Abbeuyle,the kinge was gladde and made them good chere and demaunded howe they had spedde,and they ſhewed him all the hole proceſſe and vpon what poynte they departed, wherof the kynge was gladde,for he ſhewed to be glad to haue peace.In like maner ỳ engliſh dukes whan they came to calays then wrote to the kinge of Englande all the pointes and articles of that treatye.And ſhortly they had agayne a good anſwere,cõmaundyng them to procede for a peace,ſayeng the warre had contynued longe ynoughe,and that chriſtendome therby was ſore domaged. Thus at the day prefixed,theſe dukes mette againe at Walpngham,and with the frenche lordes came the kyng of Armony to ſhewe to the lordes of Englande his buſineſſe and ne ceſſyte,he was well knowē with the duke of Gloceſtre,for he had ben in England whan the french armye was ordeyned at Sluſe,to haue gone into Englande.The duke of Glocestre the ſame tyme receiued the kyng of Armony and made him good chere,at a fayre place of his in Eſſex,called Plaſhey.At Walpngham alſo the Dukes of Englande made the kynge of Armony good chere,and was glad to here him ſpeke.And they anſwered him that gladly they wolde ayde him,wherof the kinge was right ioyfull.Many thynges were treated in this parliament.And al this ſaſon the cardinall of Line lay at Abbeuyle,who was ſente thether in legacyon,by him that called him ſelfe pope Clemente,for maters concernyng the churche.The frenche kinges at this aſſemble at Walpngham,wold haue had certayne artycles cõpiled in their treatie,concernynge the church,and ſuſteynynge the opinyons of thys pope Clemente Robert of Geneue.But whan the Engliſh dukes herd that,they ſayd to their coſens of Fraunce.Coſyns,and ye wyll that we ſhall fall to any poynt of cõcluſion,ſpeke no more of that cardenal,we haue nothig to do wyth him his mater is a buſines without profyte or effect,we are determyned vpon a pope to whõ we wyll obey,we wyll here no ſpekynge againſte him,if the other medle any thynge with vs we ſhall departe and goo hense,and leaue all together.After that tyme ther was nomo wordes of that cardinal,he tarried ſtil at Abbeuyle.Than theſe lordes proceded in their treaties,ỳ duke of Lancaſter was well enclined to haue peace.The Frenche kinges the pere before had ſore deſpred him to be a good meane to entreat for a peace,and ſo he promiſed to do,howbeit his brother the duke of Glouceſtre was hard to agree,for he layd for the the frenchmens diſceptes and colored wordes that they vſed alwayes in their wrytynges;ſayenge howe the frenchmen wolde alwayes wreſtell with their armes diſcouered,whiche was euer perceyued.On a day there came a squyer of honour a frenchman, called Robert the heremyte to ỳ duke of Glocestre he was one of the frech kynges priuy chambre.whether he was ſente to ỳ duke of Glocestre or came on his owne hed,I can not tell,but as the duke ſhewed me in England at Plather,this squier ſayd to hym.Syr,for the loue of god be not againſt this treatie of peace,for ye ſe how the lordes of Fraūce do their dyligence to bringe it about,ye ſhal do an almeſſe,dede for the warre hath ſo longe endured,and ſithe that both kinges are content to haue peace,all their ſubiectes ought to obey thereto.Thā the duke anſwered him as he ſayd.Robert I am not agaynſt it,nor will not be,but ye french men amonge you, ye haue ſo many coloured wordes,ſo darke and obſcure to our vnderſtandynge,ſo that whan ye wyll it is warre,and whan ye lift it is peace.thus haue ye ledde vs vnto this preſente daye.But if the kynge my ſouerayne lorde had beleued me,and ſuche other of his realme as are bouūde to ſerue him,peace ſhuld be neuer haue been bytweue Englande and Fraunce,ſyr reſtytuciō had ben made to vs of all that is taken fro vs without cauſe,by ſubtylte and craft,as god and all the worlde knoweth.But ſithe the kinge my ſouerayne

fozde emelin: fy to the peace, it is reason that we agree to þ same, and therfoze if we make a peace accozdinge to the desyres of both kinges, fythe we be here assembled, let it be well holden on oure syde for it shall be well kept on our partie. And thus the duke therwod sed that thus Roberte the Vermyte departed fro him, and went to his company. And so these lozdes contynewed tyll their treatie.

I Will make no further processe, but come to concluſyon. These foure dukes that were at thys assemble, and had full power and auctozitye of their kynges to take a trewce, and to make a peace. They dyd so in suche wyse, that a generall boyce and renome ran throughe the towne of Abbuyle that a peace was taken bpon certayne artycles bytwene the two kynges, their alyes and confyderates. But I sir Johan Froyſſart auctour of this hyſtozye, beynge the same time in Abbuyle, coulde not leaue the certaintie of the artycles compyled in that peace. Howe be it I knew that a peace was take to endure foure yeres, to be veryte freme and stable, bothe by lee and by lande. And it was concluded and agreed that within the sayde space of the foure yere, shulde be delyuered to the kyng of Englaude for ever, & perpetually to all kynges of England and to his cõmyſſioners, all the lande and seignozies in the countrey of Langueboc, and to be as of the demayne and heritage of the crowne of England. And thys doone and accomplyſhed, it was agreed by the same ozdenaūce that certayne capitaines and fortmen that helde some holdes & fozterelles in the Realme of Fraunce, shulde auoyde and depart, all suche as made warre, and do make aor warre, vnder the shadow and colours of the king of England and the Englyſhe men, of what nacyon so euer they were. To all these artycles these lozdes that were as than at Balyngham were bound in lozdynges signed and sealed, and the copies therof sent to bothe kinges. Than the dukes of Lancaſtre and Glouceſtre, sent an harauld called Guyenne, with letters to the kynges of Englande, the kynge and brethernge all the thre princes & embassadours cõcluded in their treaty, bpon the fozms of peace. Thus this harauld departed with his letters, and rode to Calays and paſſed ouer to Douer, & rode forth til he came to the kinge, who was at a manoir of his owne beside London, when he came in the kinges presence he delyuered his letters. And when the king hadde rede therin he was right ioyous, and gaue to the haraulde for his good tydinges bzyngynge great gyftes, as þ same harauld shewed me after at leyſure, as I rode with him into the Realme of Englande. These foure dukes of Fraunce and of Englaude, were styll at Balyngham, and so soiurned there in fayre tētes and pauylions, and well and diligently perused and examined the artycles of their treatie, and twolde paſſe noz scale to none tyll all darke & obscure wozdes were clerely declared and made perfyte. Nowe in the same season there happed to fall a great let and trouble in this matter, wherby al was nighe at a poynte to haue bene broken and made voyd and it is reason I tel you the cause, to the entent that the hyſtozy be plaine and trewe.

YE haue herde here before howe þ frenche kyng had great pleaſure to lye at Abbeuyle, and also to be nere to here dayly howe þ treaty went forwarde at Balyngham And whē the four dukes were at a point (as ye haue herd) at the concluſion of the mater, the dukes of Lancaſter and Glouceſtre ſaid howe that it was the entenſion of kinge Richarde, kyng of Englande and his counſaile that pope Bonyface beyng at Rome (whom the Romayns, almayns, hungarions, lombardes, benoyans, and all the nacyons of þ worlde christened) helde to one pope, and he that named him ſelfe Clemēt degraded and condēpned, that they shulde defyye the ſeyd kinge to take the same way whan the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne vnderſtode thoſe wozdes, the duke of Burgoine) to the entent somewhat to please his cosyns of Englande and to the entente that their treatie of peace shulde not be broken therby) ſayd. Fayre sirs, we beſeche you to haue some reſpyte to take counſayle vpon that mater, which was graunted them. And therupon they toke reſayle, and than answered, and the Duke of Burgoine spake and ſayd. Fayre sirs, the mater

matter and queſtion of the two popes is not conuenable to be moued nor ſpoken of here a monge vs and we marueile why ye put this matter in cõmunycacõ, for at the fyrſt begynning of our treaty, ye refuſed to ſe or to ſpeke with the Legate de la Lune, who is as yet in Abbeuyle, wherfore we reſt vs on that, whã the cardinalles at Rome vpõ chofe pope Vrbaine and after his diceaſe pope Bonyface nõ of our party nor yet of yours were called to that electyon, and in lykewyſe we ſaye of Clement, who is at Auygnon. We ſay not agaynſt, but yt were great almes to a peale theym, and to vny the churche, who ſo myght entende to do it, but let vs leaue that matter and let the vnyuerſytyes and clarkes determyne it, and whan all our buſynes is concluded, and a forme peace ratified, than by the counſayle of our ſoyn the king of Almayne we ſhall entende therto gladly on our party and in lykewiſe do you on your partie. Wyth thys anſwere the duke of Englande were well contet, for it ſemed to them reaſonable Than they anſwered and ſayde. Fayre coſyns ye haue ſayd very well, we are content with yͤ ſame. Thus that mater reſted. Than there fell a nother great lette and trouble, for the french king who had layne at the towne of Abuyle a great ſeaſon, bycauſe of the great diſpoztes, pleaſure, and paſtime that he found there, ſodaynly he fell agayne into his maladuye of frauſy in lyke maner as he had ben yͤ yere before. He that firſt perceyued it was ſir Wyllyam Martell, a knight of Normandy, who was alwayes nere to the kinges perſon in his pryuy chamber. The ſame ſeaſon the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne were at Boloyne, or at Dalyngham, vpon thende of their parlyament, and they had in a maner all concluded for that ſeaſon. And as ſoone as the duke of Oꝛlyaunce brother to the king, knew of this chaunce of the kynges ſyckneſſe, and that he had ſene hym, he ſent a frere to Amyens of his named Bonface to hys vncles of Boloyne aduertyſinge them ſecretly of the kynges diſeaſe, whanne the dukes knewe that, they were right ſoꝛye and departed, for they had all redy taken their leaue of their cõſyns of Englãde, who went alſo departed, to Calays, and tarryed there to here tydynges fro the king of Nauerre and fro the duke of Britayne, for they hadde meaned in their treaty that the caſtell of Cheruebourge, ſtanding on the ſee ſyde, vpon the cloſe of Conſtantine in Normandy, whiche the kynge of Englande had in gaage and in kepinge, as I was enformed, for the ſomme of threſcoꝛe thouſande nobles of Englande, that the frenche kynge ſhulde paye the ſayd ſomme, and the caſtell to retourne to the kinge of Nauerre, and alſo the ſtronge caſtell of Bzeſt that the engliſhmen helde, ſhulde retourne to yͤ duke of Bꝛetaigne. The dukes of Berry and Burgoyne abode not the concluſion of that matter, but came to Abbeuyle, and founde the kynge in right euyll eſtate of his helthe, wherof they were ſoꝛy. The kynges ſyckneſſe was kepte ſecret as long as it myght be, but it was not very longe, for ſurthe aduentures are ſoone ſpꝛede abꝛode. Thus all the lozdes that had ben in Abbeuile departed one after a nother euery man home to his owne houſe. That it was determined that the kinge ſhulde be caꝛied in an hoꝛſe lytter, to the caſtell of Crayll vpon Oyſe, where he had ben beꝛoꝛe. Thyther he was conueied by night time, and the day time he reſted, for the heate of the ſonne. The duke of Berrey and the duke of Oꝛlyaunce rode to Crayel with the king, and the duke of Burgoyne rode into Arthois, and in to Flaunders, vyſytyng hys countreys, and founde the ducheſſe hys wife at the caſtell of Arden. As than ther was no mo wozdes ſpoken of the lozd de la Ryuer nor of ſir Johan Wercper, they were as than al forgoten no man ſpake of their greuaũces nor of their dyſpleaſure. This ſeconde malady that Charles the frenche kinge was fallen in, vpõ put away greatly the ſpeking of the people. The wiſe and ſage men of Fraunce feared before greatly this chaunce, for they ſawe the kinge was lykely to fall into that malady, by cauſe of the great exerciſe that he had vſed in tymes paſte, and thoughe the feblenes of his heed maiſter Wyllyam of Harleyhouſe as thenne lyued, and ſuch as were nere about him vpõ yͤ beꝛd the tonde ſcrypte

¶ Of yͤ dethe of pope Clement at Auygnon, & of the lection of pope Benedict. Cap. C.xliij.

In the tyme in the mone the of September, passed out of thys worlde at Auignone Roberte of Geneue, named pope Clement, and it came by hym as he hadde alwayes sayd before, whan any man spake of the peace and vnion of the church he wolde say alwayes, how be wolde dye pope, and so he dyd, in maner as ye haue herd here before. wrongfully or rightfully I will not determyne. Than the Cardinalles there were sore abashed, and studyed whom they myght chose to be pope. The same time the French kinge retourned agayne to hys helth, wherof all such as loued him had great ioye. and specyall the good quene, who had gyuen much counsell and done many prigey mages for the king, and caused generall pry erthyng to be made in Paris. As I was enformed ꝑ cardynals at Auygnon dyd elect and chose to be pope the cardynal de la Lune, To speke truely this cardynall was an holy manne and of good lyfe. This electyon was made condycionally, that if the french kinge and his counsayle were content therwith, or els not. Now regard and conspyre the great subiectyon that the churche was in, In that tyme where the church shuld be free, they subiect ted them to be vnder such as shuld haue ben ordred by them. Thus this cardynall dela Lune was chose pope, and named Benedic. He gaue generall graces to all clerkes that wold come to Auignon. And by the counsayle of his brethern the cardynalles, he wrote of the exaltacyon of his papalyte to the Frenche kinge. But or I was enformed the kynge toke litell regard therto, for as than he was not determined whether he shulde take him for very pope or nat, and therupon the kinge sent for the grettest clerkes of the vnyuersitie of Paris, to haue there aduyse and counsaile. Than maystre Iohan of Gygnecourte and maystre Pyer Playsans, who were in grete fauour and kepyng ꝑ greatest clerkes in the worlde spake to the kyng in the name of all the hole vnyuersitie, howe that the estate of the church corrupted the christen faith and how that it myght not long endure in that estate without al crysthendome shulde repent it, and fynde it good budget, and hertyly the pre lates and prelates of the church. They of the vnyuersitie were determined to sende no rolles to Auignon for any clerkes to haue any graces of this Pope Benedyct. The frenche kinge sawe well their opynyons were reasonable, and wold haue none of his clerkes en rolled to seke for ꝑ popes graces, tyll the mat ter were better determyned. Thus ꝑ mater abode styll in that estate. Now be it the duke of Berrey exalted greatly his pope Benedic and sent hys roll, wherby much people were purueyed of graces of this Benedic. The du ke of Burgoine and the duchesse dyssemuled the mater with the king, and so did the duke of Orleance with many other great lordes of Fraunce, and some for fauour held them to hys pope Benedyct, who denyed no man his graces, to the entent that his court at Auygnon shulde be full, and to haue the more reputation. The duke of Bretaigne folowed the french kinges opinion, for he was before tyme so abused by the enformacyon of his co syn the erle of Flaunders, that his hert wold neuer enclyne to beleue on Pope Clemente, though the clerke of Bretaygne beleued and held him for pope. So whan any promocyon was voyde in Fraunce, the king promo ted his clerkes, without gruyuge any know lydge therof to this pope Benedic wherwith he and his cardinalles at Auygnō were sore abashed, and doubted lest the frenche kynge wold restrayne suche rentes and profites as they were wont to haue of the benefices gy uen in the realme of Fraunce. Than they de termyned to sende a legate into Fraunce to speke with the kynge and hys counsayle, to knowe how he wolde order him against the churche, and to shewe him howe that he that is chosen pope is vnder this condycyon, that if he be pleased, that he to abide styll as pope, or els they to put hym out of his papalyte, & the cardynals to entre againe into conclaue and chose one after the kynges pleasure. At this tyme was come to Paris a was about the kinge, ꝑ freer mynour a meke man, who was sent into Fraunce by pope Boniface of Rome. The frenche kinge herde gladly this freers preachynge. Than came into Fraunce the legate fro Auygnon, who was a great & a subtyll clerke and wel langaged. Than the hole vnyuersitie counsailed the kynge, and sayd howe it were well done that eyther Be nydict or els he, were put out of their papalyte

Babylone, and all hys cardynalles be putte out of theyr cardynalſhyppes. And in theyr ſtede of them to be choſyn good clerkes, wyſemen, and of good conſcyence as well of Almayne and Fraunce, as of other nacions. And they to be ſete togyther by goon deliberatyon and counſayle, wythout fauour or euyll wyll to ſette the churche therby at one poynte wyth out pope. They ſayde, they ſawe well there was none other waye to bringe it to a good concluſyon, breauſe of pryde and enuy ſo reygned in the worlde that the prynce and lordes eche helde theyr owne partie. Thys propoſycion that the vniuerſite hadde made before the kinge, pleaſed right well the kynge, and the duke of Orleaunce & of Burgoyne. And the kyng ſayd he wolde wryte and ſende meſſangers to the kynge of Almaygne and of Boeme, and of Hungery, and to the kyng of Englande. And he thought hym ſelfe ſure enough of the kinges of Caſtyle, of Nauer, of Aragon, of Cicyle, of Naples, & of Scotlande, that they wold obey to ſuche a pope as he and his Realme obeyed vnto. And vpon this, the frenche kynge ſent his letters & meſſangers to theſe ſayde kynges. There was good leyſar in domage of this, both in going and comyng agayne with anſwere, and in the meane tyme there paſſed out of thys worlde at Parys, in noble clerke maiſter Johan of Gyrencourt, of whoſe dethe the kynge and the lordes, and the vniuerſyte were right ſory, for he lefte not his felowe behinde him and he had in hys dayes taken great payne to reforme the churche, and to haue brought it into a perfyte vnyte.

Of a clerke named maiſter Johā of Warennes. Capi. C.xcbii.

THe ſame ſeaſon there was a great clerke at Auignone, bothe of Scyence and of prudence, doctour in the lawes & auditour of the palays of the cuſtom of Auignon, called maiſter Johan of Warennes. And by reaſon of ſuche ſeruyce as he had done to pope Clement a to other, he was greatly auaūced and promoted with benefices, and he was at the poynt to be a biſſhop or a cardynall, he had been chapelayne wyth one at Auygnone, called ſayntt Peter of Luſtebourge. The ſame maiſter Johan warēnes for all his promocions he reſigned thē all, and retayned to him ſelfe but a ſmall leueng, and that was the ſertenry of our lady churche in Renes, wherthe by pere if he be reſydent. a. C. frākes, & in abſence but. rrr. And ſo dyed fro Auignon, & came to dwell nere to Renes i a byllage called ſaint Ley, & there he ledde an holy lyfe & preched ꝓ word of god, and exalted muche the pope at Auignon and condēned in his wordes the pope at Rome. He was viſited of muche people of all countreis that came to ſe him, and to ſe ꝓ holy lyfe that he ledde. He faſted euery day. Some people ſayd that ꝓ cardynals at Auignon, by craſte and ſubtyltie hadde ſent him thether, to exalt and to colour their opinyon or cis he was come thether to ſhew his holy lyfe. He wolde in no wyſe be called the holy man of ſaynt Ley, but the audytor. He had alwayes in his cōpany his mother. He ſayd maſſe euery daye deuoutly, and al that was gyuen him, he wolde gyue it agayne for god deſſake: He wolde aſke nothyng of no man. ¶ Nowe lette vs leaue ſpeking of hym, and ſpeke of other buſineſſe, as the mater requyreth.

¶ How the king of Englād gaue to the duke of Lancaſter & to hys heyres for euer ꝓ duchy of Acquytayne, and how the king prepared to go into Irelande, & the duke in to Acquitayne. Cap. C.xcbiii.

WE haue here before in thys hyſtorye, howe Trewes was taken bytweene Englande and Fraunce, and their adherentes and alyes, bothe by ſee and by lande. For all that yet there were robbers and pyllers in Languedocke, whyche were ſtraungers and of ſuche countreys: As of Gaſcoyne, of Berne, and of Almaygne.

And as

Had amonge other, Sr Johan of Grayle ba-
ron (sonne sometyme of the Captall of Beu
fes. a ponge and an expert knyght was ca-
pitayne of the stronge castell of Bouteruyll.
These capytaynes of the garysons in Bigoze
and marchynge on the realme of Arragone,
and on the frontiers of Tayuton, and in the
marchis of Rochell, and of the garyson of
Mortaygne, were sore displeased that they
myght not ouer ronne the countrey, as they
were accustomed to do. For they were strait
lye commaunded on payne of grenous pu-
nysshment, to do nothyng that shulde sounde
to the enpoche of the peace.

IN this seasō it was agreed in En
glande, consyderinge that the kyn
ge was ponge, and that he hadde
peace wt all hys ennemyes, far a
nere, except with Ireland. For he claymed y
lande of enheryptaūce, and hys predecessours
before him, and was wrytten kinge and lord
of Irelande. And kynge Edwarde, graun-
father to kynge Rychard, made all wayes
warre with the Irysshemen. And to the en-
tente that the ponge knyghtes and squyers
of Englande shulde employe them selfe in de
des of armes, and therby to augmēt and en
crease the honour of the realme. It was con
cluded, that kynge Rychard of Englande
shulde make thether a voyage with puyssā
ce of menne of warre. And so to enter into
Irelande, and not to retourne agayne wyth
out they hadde an honourable composycion
or conclusyon. The same season it was con-
cluded that the duke of Lancaster who was
greatly seuered bothe by See and by lan-
de, for the augmentacion and honour of the
realme of Englande, shulde make another
voyage with fyue hundred menne of armes
and a thousande archers, and to take shyp-
pynge at Hampton or at Plommouth, and
so to sayle to Guyane and to Acquitaygne.
And it was the entencyon of kynge Rychar
de, and by consent of all hys counsayle, that
the duke of Lancaster shulde haue for euer
le humanō in his heyres, all the countrey of
Acquitayne with the purtenaunces, as kyng
Edwarde his father had, or any other kinge
or dukes of Acquitayne, before time had bē
yen, ordayned. And as kynge Rychard at y
same had, reserued alwayes the homage that
he shulde do to the kynge of Englande, & to
any kynges to come after. But as for all the
obeysaūces, rentes, lordshippes, and reue-
newes shulde partepne to the duke of La-
caster and to his heyres for euer. Of this the
kynge made to him a clere graunt, & confir
med it vnder his wrytynge & seale. Wherby
gyft the duke of Lancaster was well cōtent a
good cause why. For in that duchy are lan-
des and countreis for a great lorde to main
taigne hys estate with all. The Charter of
the gyfte was engrosed and drwly stampe-
ned, and paste by great deliberacyon, and
good aduyse of counsayle. Wherynge present
the kynge and his two vncles, the dukes of
yorke and the duke of Gloucestre. The erle
of Salysbury, the erle of Arundall, the erle
of Derby, sonne to the duke of Lancaster,
And also therle Marshall erle of Rutlande
the erle of Northūberlande, the erle of Not
tyngham, the lorde Thomas Percy, the lor-
de Spenser, the lorde Beamounde, the lorde
Wyllyam of Arundell. The archebyshoppe
of Caunterburye and the archebyshoppe of
yorke, and the byshoppe of London, and o-
ther, all these were present. and dyuers o-
ther Prelates and barownes of Englande.
Thanne the duke of Lancaster purposed to
make hys prouysyon to passe the See to go
into Acquitayne, to employe the gyfte that the
kyng hadde gyuen hym. In lykewyse great
prouysion was made for the kinges voyage
into Irelande, and lordes and other were a
poynted, suche as shulde passe the See with
the kyng, & had warnyng to make theyr
redy.

¶ Of the deth of Quene Anne of Englāde wyfe to kyng Rychard doughter to the kynge of Boeme and Emperour of Almaygne. C.xcix.

THus (as I haue sayd) was
great preparacions made,
at the hoztes and hauyns, wher
as the kynge shulde take shyp
pynge for to go into Irelande.
And in lykewyse there as the duke of Lan-

caſtre ſhulde paſſe ſo go into Aquytayne, Their voyage was lette, and tarryed ꝑ ſpace of two monethes lenger than it ſhulde haue ben, and I ſhall tell youwhyy.

The ſame ſeaſon that all theſe ꝓparacions was made, the Quene named Anne tooke a ſyckeneſſe, whereby the kynge and all hys lordes were ryghte ſore troubled, for ſhe was ſo ſore ſycke, that ſhe, paſſed out of thys worlde at the feeſt of Pen theceſt, the yere of our lorde god a thouſand thre hundred fourſcore & fourtene, of whoſe deat he the kynge, and all that loued her, ladyes and damoſelles were ſore troubled, and in great heuyneſſe. She was buryed at at Poules in London, and her obſeques done after at good leyſar, for the kynge wolde haue it done ſumptuouſly, with great habundance of ware, tapers, and torches, ſo that the like habde not ben ſene before. The kynge wolde haue it ſo, bycauſe ſhe was the Emperours doughter of Rome and kyng of Almayne. The kynge loued her ſo entyerly, They were maryed yonge, howe be it ſhe dyed wythout iſſue. Thus in one ſeaſon, the kynge, the duke of Lancaſter, and the erle of Derby were wydowers. And there was no ſpekinge of remaryeng, nor the kinge wolde here no ſpekinge therof. Thus the kynges voyage into Irelande was ſomwhat retarded & let, howe be it the ꝓrouiſion and other lordes, ſuche as ſhulde go wyth the kynge, paſſed ouer the ſee and landed at Duuelyn, whyche was alwayes Engliſhe, and there is an archbyſhoppe who was wyth the kynge. And anone after Mydſomer the kynge departed fro the marcheſſe of London, and toke the ways thrꝛough wales hunting and ſportynge hym, to forgette the dethe of hys quene, and ſuche as ſhulde go with the kynge ſette forwarde. Two of the kynges vncles, Edmonde duke of yorke and Thomas duke of Glocetire conſtable of England, ſette forwarde in great araye, ſo dyd other lordes, as the erle of Rutlande ſonne to the duke of yorke, the erle marſhall erle of Saliſbury the erle of Arundell, the lorde Wyllyam of Arundell, the erle of Northumberlande lorde Perey, lord Thomas Perey his brother great Meneſchall of Englande, the erles of Duonſhyre and Notyngham, and gret nombet of other knightes and ſquiers Suche reſerued, as abode behynde to kepe the marcheſſe againſt the ſcottes, who were ſuche people as neuer kept no truce nor ꝓmyſe. The lorde Johan of Hollande erle of Huntington was as than on his way to Ieruſalem and to ſaynt Katherins mount, and purpoſed to retourne by the realme of Hungry, for as he paſſed thrꝛough Fraūce (where he habde great chere of the kinge, and of his brother and vncles) he herde howe the king of Hungry and the great Turke ſhulde haue batalle together, therfore he thought ſure lye to be at that iourney. On the otherſyde the duke of Lancaſter came to Plomouthe, where his ſhippes laye redy. And whan his men were come and his veſſelles all charged and had wynde at wyll, they toke theyr leue and diſancred and ſayled towardes Burdeaux on the ryuer of Gyron.

Nowe lette vs ſpeke of the kynge of Englande, who had in his cōpany four thouſande men of armes and thyrtye thouſande archers. They ſhipped at thre places. At Buſſtowe, at Holyheed, and at Herforde, they paſſed ouer dayly. And in Irelande all redy there was a valyaunt knight of Englande, called erle of Ormonde. He helde landes in Irelande, and ſo dyd hys predeceſſours, but it was as than in debate The erle Marſhall of Englande habde the howarde with fyftene hundred ſpeares and two thouſande archers. The kynge of Englande and hys two vncles toke ſhyppynge at Herforde in wales. Thus the army paſſed ouer without dōmage, & than they were lodged in Irelande, by the apoyntement of the duke of Glocetire cōſtable of England and by the marſhals all abrode in the countrey, beyond ꝓ cyte of Duuelyn a.xxx. myle, for the countrey was as than inhabytable: howe be it they laye wyſely and ſurely for feare of the yriſhemen, as nede was, or elſe they myght haue taken great dōmage. And the kynge and his vncles were lodged in the cyte of Duuelyn, and as it was thought me all the while they were there, they were largely prouyded of vytayls. For the Engliſhe men are, ſuche men of warre as can well

forage

voyage and take auauntage, and make good pryuyson for the selfe and their boyes And what fell of thys voyage I shall shewe you here after, as I was enformed.

How sir Johan Froissart arryued in England, and of the gyfte of a boke that he gaue to the kinge. Capitu. CC

THewe it was, that I sir Johan Froissart (as at that tyme treasourer and chanon of Chymay, in the erldome of Heynaulte in the diocese of Lyege) hadde great affection to go and se the realme of England, whan I had ben in Abbeuyle, and sawe that scrwce was taken betwene the realmes of Englande and Fraunce, and other countreys to them confoyned and other adherentes to endure four yeres by See and by lande. Many reasons moued me to make that voyage. One was, bycause in my youth I hadde been brought vp in the court of the noble kynge Edwarde the thyrde and of quene Phylyppe his wyfe, and amonge their chyldren, and other barones of Englande, that as than were a lyue, In whom I founde all noblenesse, honour, largesse, and courtesy. Therfor I desyred to se the countrey, thinkinge thereby I shulde lyue muche the lenger, for I hadde not been there .xx. yere before. And I thought though I sawe not those lordes that I left a lyue there, yet at the lest I shulde se their heyres the whyche shulde do me muche good to se, and also to auaunce the hystories and maters that I hadde written of them. And or I tobe my tourney, I spake with duke Aubert of Bauyere, and with the Erle of Heynaulte, Holande, Zelande, and lorde of Freese, and with my lorde William erle of Ostrenaut, and with my right honourable lady Johan duchesse of Brabant and of Luxeyborgue, and with the lorde Eugerant, lorde Coucy, and with the gentyll knyght the lorde of Gomegynes, who in his youthe and myne, had been together in Englande in the kynges courte. In lykewyse I had I sene there the lorde of Coucy, and dyuers other nobles of Fraunce, holden great housholdes in London, whan they laye there in hostage for the redemption of kinge Johan, as than French kynge, As it hath bene shewed here before in this hystorye.

THese sayde lordes and the Duchesse of Brabant, counsayled me to take thys iourney, and gaue me letters of recommendacyon to the kynge of Englande and to hys vncles, sayenge the lorde of Coucy, he wolde not wrote to the kynge bycause he was a Frenche man, therfore he durste not, but to his doughter, who as tha was called duchesse of Irelande. And I had engroced in a fayre boke well enlumyned, all the matters of Amours and mozalytes, that in foure and twentye yeres before I had made and compyled, whiche greatly quickened my desyre to go into England to se kinge Richarde, who was sonne to the noble prince of Walles and of Aequitayne, for I hadde not seen this kinge Richarde, sythe he was Chrystened in the Cathedrall church of Burdeaux, at whiche tyme I was ther, and thought to haue goone with the prince the iourney into Galycia in Spayne. And whan we were in the cyte of Aste, the prince sente me backe into Englande to the Quene his mother.

For these causes and other, I hadde great desyre to go into Englande to se the kynge and his vncles. Also I hadde this said fayre boke well couered with velvet, garnysshed with claspes of syluer and gylte, therof to make a present to the kinge, at my first commynge to his presence. I hadde suche desyre to goo thys voyage, that the payne and trauayle greued me nothynge. Thus prouyded of hozses and other necessaries I passed the See at Calais and came to Douer, the .xii. daye of the moneth of July. Whan I came there I founde no man of my knowledge, it was so longe sythe I had been in Englande and the houses were all newly chaunged, and yonge chyldren were become men, and yong men knewe me nott no I them. So I bode halfe a daye and all a night at Douer, It was on a Tuesdaye. And the next daye by vpne

by nine of the clocke I come to Cauterbury to ſaynte Thomas ſhrine, and to the tombe of the noble prince of Walas, who is ther enterred right rychely. There I herde maſſe & made myne offeryng to the holy ſaynte, and thanne dyned at my lodgynge. And there I was enformed, howe king Richarde ſhulde be there the nexte day on pylgramage, whiche was after his retourne out of Irelande, wher he had ben the ſpace of nine monethes or there about. The kyng hadde a deuocyon in vyſite ſaynt Thomas ſhrine, and alſo bycauſe the prince his father was there buried. Than I thought to abyde the kynge there, and ſo I dyd. And the nexte daye the kynge came thether with a noble cõpany of lordes ladies, and damoſelles. And whan I was among them they ſemed to me all new folkes I knewe no ſkyll. The tyme was ſore chaũged in. xxviii. yere. And wyth the kynge as ther was non of his vncles the dukes of Lancaſter was in Acquitayne, and the dukes of Yorke and Glocester wher in other buſyneſſes, ſo that I was at the firſte all abaſhed, for if I had ſene any auncyent knyght that had bene with king Edward or with the prince, I had ben well reconforted and wolde haue gone to hym, but I coulde ſe none ſuche, than I demaunded for a knyght called ſir Richarde Seury, whether he were a lyue or not, and it was ſhewed me yes, but he was at London. Than I thought to go to ſ lord Thomas Percy, great ſeneſchal of Englãd who was there with the kyng, ſo I acquayn ted me with hym and I founde him right honorable and gracyous. And he offred to preſent me and my letters to the kynge, wherof I was right ioyfull, for it behoued me to haue ſome meanes to bringe me to the preſence of ſuche a prince as the kynge of Englande was. He wente to the kynges Chamber, at whiche tyme the kynge was gonne to ſlepe, and ſo he ſhewed me, and badde me retourne to my lodginge and come agayne, and ſo I dyd. And whan I came to the byſhoppes halle, I founde the lorde Thomas Percy redy to ryde to Oſpring. And he counſayled me to make as than no knowledge of my beynge there, but to ſuyue the court, and ſayd he wolde cauſe me euer to be well lodged, tyll the kynge ſhulde be at the ſayte called of Leedes in Kent. I ordered me after his counſaile and rode before to Oſpring, & by aduenture I was lodged in an houſe, where was lodged a gentyll knight of Englande called ſir Wyllyam Lyſle. He was tarryed there beyonde the kynge, bycauſe he had payne in his heed all the night before. He was one of the kynges preuy chamber. And whan he ſawe that I was a ſtraunger, and as he thought of the marcheſſe of Fraũce bycauſe of my langage we fell in acquayntaunce together, for gentylmen of Englande are curteſe, treatable, and gladde of acquayntaunce. Than he demaunded what I was, and what buſyneſſe I had to do in thoſe partyes. I ſhewed hym a great parte of my cõmyng thether, and all that the lorde Thomas Percy hadde ſaid to me, and ordred me to do. He than anſwered and ſayde, howe I coulde not haue a better meane, and that on ſ Friday ſ kyng ſhulde be at the caſtel of Leedes. And he ſhewed me that whan I came there I ſhuld fynde ther the duke of yorke the kynges vncle, wherof I was right gladde, bycauſe I had letters dyrected to hym, and alſo that in his youthe he hadde ſene me, in the courte of the noble king Edwarde his father and with ſ quene his mother. Than on the Friday in the morynge ſir Wyllyam Lyſle and I rode together, and on the waye I demaunded of hym, if he had been with the kynge in the voyage into Irelande. He anſwered me yes. Than I demaunded of hym the maner of the hole that is in Irelande, called ſaynte Patryckes purgatorye, if it were ſo we that was ſayde of it or not. Than he ſayde that of a ſurety ſuche a hole there was, and that he him ſelfe and another knight of Englande hadde ben there whyle the kynge laye at Douelyn, and ſayde howe they entred into ſ hole & were cloſed in at the ſame goynge downe, and abode there all night, and the nexte morowe yſſued out agayne at the ſon ryſyng. Than I demaunded if he had any ſuche fyre fyghtes or viſions as was ſpoken of. Than he ſayd, howe that whan he & his felow were entred and paſt the gate ſ was called ſ purgatoyre of ſaynt Patrike, and that they were diſcended and gone downe thre or foure paues dyſcendynge downe as into a celer, a certayne houſe wayre roſe agayne them and ſtrake ſo into their heedes, that they were fayne to ſyt downe on the ſtayres, whiche are of Stone.

I ded aſ-

And after they had sette there a season, they had great desyre to slepe, and so fell a slepe and slepte there all nyght. Than I demaunded that of us theyr slepe they knewe where the kynge, or what busynes they had: he answered me, that in slepyng they entred into great imaginacyons and unnaturelous dremes, otherwise, than they were wonte to have in theyr Chambers, and in the morenynge they issued out, and within a shorte season, clene forgate theyr dremes & busyns, wherefore he sayde, he thought all that matter was but a fantasy. Than I left speakyng any further of that matter, because I wolde fayne have knowen of hym what was done in the voyage in Ireland. And I thought as that to have remembred what the kyng had done in that voyage, but than company of other knyghtes came and felt in communycacyon with hym, for that I left my purpose for that tyme. Than we rode to Ledes, and there came the kyng and all his copany, and there I founde the lord Cowrde duke of pozke. Than I went to hym and delyuered my letters from the erle of Hepnaulte his cosyn, and fro therche of Otherwaunt. The duke lowted me well and made me good chere and sayde, Sire Jehan, bolde you alwayes were to dy, and he shall. Gyue you lone and courtesy, because ye hadde there to for the lone of tyme past and for lone of my lady the olde Quene my mother, in whose courte ye were: we have good remembraunce therof. Than I thanked hym as me semed requyred. And I was answered in the castell of Ipswich by Thomas Percy and sir William Lyle. By them was I brought into the kynges chambre, and into his presence by means of his uncle the duke of pozke. Than I delyuered my letters to the kynge and he take and redde them good leysar. Than he toyde to me right I were welcome, as he that had ben and is of the Englysshe courte. And on that daye I durste not speke the more that I hadde knowledge that he was ful occupyed with great affayres, that I had at that season to speke with hym. The kynge was for the most parte in accomplysshe for that great voyage prepared, and was, in dyuerse wynges to gret fleetes of shippes, as herde of hym after whan we were more homme and the erle of Derby the one wynge of shippes, the lyke

Hoppe of Ely, the lord Lyle Cheyney, the lorde Henry Beaumonde, the lorde Wyngfelde Spenlae, and many other, ouer the See to Charles the Frenche kynge, to treate with hym for a marrage to be hadde, betwene the kyng of Englande and the Frenche kinges eldest doughter, named Isabel, of the age of eyght yeres. The lorde Caule was the lorde de la Barde, the lorde of Tarybe, the lorde of Pynthenne, the lorde of Mirbeasell, the lorde of Mesque, the lorde of Copane, and the counsaylours of Burdeux, Bayon, and of Byce were come into England, and had quytely putte their matter, for the kynges retourne out of Ireland, to have an answere of the requestes and procesle that they had put for the to the king, on the gyfte that the kinge had gyuen to his uncle the duke of Lacester, of the landes, seignouries, lordshypes, and baronnyes in Acquytayne, whiche they verifyed to pertayngne to the kynge and realme of England. They hadde alleged to the kinge and his counsayle, that his gyfte might not passe so, because it was voyde, table and mutyle. For they sayde, all those landes helde of right and of the demaine of the crowne of Englande, wherefore they sayde they wolde not holde nor obeyeuer the from the crowne. They alleged furthermore, many other reasonable causes, as ye shall here after in this procelle. But thus to have codesayde of those two great matters, the kynge had sente for the moost parte of the prelates and lordes of Englande, to be at the feest of Shaudelyshyde, at a manner of the kynges called Eltham a seuyn Englysshe myles from London. And whan they had tarryed at Ledes a foure dayes, the kyng retourned to Rochester and so to Eltham, & so I rode for in the kynges company.

¶ Of the reuoce of the of Acquytaine made for duke of Lacaster and how they sent into England to the kinge and his counsayle, the homage him the wyl of the hole cou trey of Acquytayne. Cap. CC.

In ridynge the waye betwene Leades and Eltham I demaunded of ſyr Wyllyam Lyſle and of ſyr Johan of Grayly rayptayne of Bonteuyll, the cauſe why the kinge dzewe to London warde, and why that great counſayle ſhulde aſſemble at Eltham. They tolde me, and ſpecyally ſyr Tehū Grayly reherſed to me plainly why ꝑ lozdes of Gaſcō were come thether and the counſaylours of good townes and cytys, thus I was enfourmed by this knight who knewe the trouth for he was oftē tymes among theym, they and he were in a maner all of one countrey & fronter he ſayde thus. Surely whan the duke of Lancaſter came fyrſte into Aquitayne, ſuffycyently fournyſſhed with charters and wrytynges engroſſed and ſealed with the great ſeale of England, and enrolled & fermely decreed with full acorde of all prelates and lozdes of England and alſo by conſente of the duke Edmond of yorke and Erle of Cambzidge, and of Thomas duke of Glouceſter, though ꝑ ſayd herytages might by ſucceſſion haue come to them for kynge Rychарde of Englande their neuue had as than no chyldzen, and theſe ſayd two dukes were bzetherne germayns of father & mother to the duke of Lancaſter, whych duke anon after he was come into Aquitayne, ſent ſome of his counſayle to the cytie of Burdeaux, to ſhewe to the Mayre & counſaylours of ꝑ towne, the fourme and tenoure of his requeſt, & for what cauſe he was come into the countrey. Than they herd this they greatly marueiled, how be it they ioyfully receyued the kynges and dukes cōmyſſyoners for the honoure of the kynge, to whom they ought their ſeruyce and obeyſaunce. Than they deſyred to take counſayle, & ſo they dyd. Than after they anſwered & ſayd, that the duke of Lancaſter ſome to kynge Edwarde who had ben their lozd was welcome amōg them, and none otherwyſe, for they ſayd they had not ſo farre forthe taken counſaile, as to receyue him to their ſouerayne lozde, for they ſayd that to kyng Rychарde their ſouerayne lord they had done feaultie and homage and vthan he had made them no quytāce. Thā anſwered the cōmyſſioners and ſayd. Syrs ſure not but that ye ſhall haue ſufficient acharge in that behalfe, ſo ye take the duke to your ſouerayne lozd, for ye ſhall ſe by the content to the kinges charters that ther ſhal no ner queſtion be made therof in time to come. Whan they of Burdeaux ſawe they were ſo nere touched, they found theym a nother ſoure and ſayd. Fayre lozdes, your cōmiſſion extendeth not all onely vpon vs, but in lykewyſe to them of the cytye of Bayon, & to the prelates and barones of Gaſcoine, and to all that be vnder the obeyſaunce of the kinge of England, ye ſhal draw you towardes the and as they do and order the, we ſhall folow the ſame. Other aunſwere the cōmyſſioners could not haue at that tyme of them of Burdeaux. Than they departed and rode to Lybozne, where the duke of Lancaſter laye.

Whan the duke herde their anſwere he imagined in hym ſelfe, that ꝑ buſineſſe ꝑ he was come thether for, ſhuld not be ſo ſone atcheued as he truſted it ſhuld haue ben Thā he ſēt his counſayle to the cytye of Bayon, & as they ſped in Burdeaux ſo they dyd there, other aunſwere could they haue non. And finally all ꝑ prelates & noble men, conſaiours of cyties & good townes in Gaſcoine, vnder the obeyſaūce of the kyng of Englande, conioyned them togethet, and concluded in the fozme and maner as I ſhall ſhewe you. They ſayd they wold gladly receyue ꝑ duke of Lācaſter into their cyties townes, and caſtelles, as the ſonne of king Edwarde, and vncle to king Rychарde of Englāde ſo that at his entringes he ſhuld ſolemply ſwere, that peſably and in good maner he and his ſhuld entreat the people without enforſynge of any thyng, and to pay reaſonably for euery thynge that they ſhuld diſpende, and alſo to ſwere that he ſhuld not oppreſſe nor cauſe to be oppreſſed the iuriſdiction of the Crowne of England, by no maner of waye nor accyon. The duke aunſwered to this and ſaid, that he was not come into the countrey to greue or oppreſſe the people, but wold rather kepe and defende them agayuſt all men, as his herytage, and deſyred and requyred them, that the cōmaundement of the kynge of Englande myght be obſerued and accomplyſhed. Thā the hole countrey by a commune voyce, ſayd ꝑ in no wyſe they wold departe fro the crowne of England, and that it

was not in the kyng of Englandes power to
gyue them away to a nother lord. nor to put
them for the crowne of Englande. These de-
maundes and ꝓpenges were longe a deba
tyng. betwene the duke of Lācaster and the
lordes and townes of Gascon. And whā the
duke sawe non other remedy, than he made
requeste to the countrey that the ꝓcelates and
noble men, and comyalyours of the good tow
nes shulde sende suffycyent personages to the
kynge of England and to his counsayle, and
howe he wolde sende lykewyse notable per
sones of his counsaile, and take what so euer
the kyng and his counsayle shulde determine
in ꝑ cause, he promised surely to abyde ther
by, whether it were with him or against him
Than they of Gascon cōsydred well that hys
requeste was reasonable, & agreed to do as
the duke had desyred. Than the duke rode to
Burdeaux, and was loged in the abbey of
sayne Andrewes, wher he had ben lodged be
foretyme. Then they of the cytye of Bayon
and Dax, apoynted sufficient personages to
sende into Englande, and the barons of Ga
scon vnder the kynges obeysaūce, sent in lyke
wise. Also ye shall know that whan ꝑ french
kyng & hys vncles vnderstode that the duke
of Lācaster was peasably entred into the cy
tie of Burdeaux, and knewe not for what en
tent, nor whether he wolde kepe or breke the
treuce. Than he and his counsayle determy
ned to send to hym, to know som what of hys
entent. Ther was apoynted to go, the lorde
Boneyquant marshall of Fraunce, the lorde
Johan of castell Mozante, and Johan Bar
res of Barrois, and they to haue with them
a thousande speares. Thus they rode for the
tyme they cāe to ꝑcytie of Agen, and there ta
ryed. Than they sent harawdes & messangers
to Burdeaux to the duke of Lancaster
shewinge him howe they wolde gladly spek
with him. The duke made these messangers
good chere, and wrote agayne to these lordes
certifieng them, that wherās they had great
desyre to speke with hym, in lykewise he had
the same to speke with them, & bycause they
shulde take ꝑ lesse payne he prompsed to com
and mete with them at Bergerat. And whā
the french lordes sawe this letter, they gaue
credence therto and ordred them therafter,
and as soone as they knewe that the duke was
come to Bergerait, they departed fro Agen
and rode thether. There they were receyued
and lodged in the towne, and their company
in the suburbes. These lordes spake with ꝑ
Duke and shewed hym their message. The
duke receyued them swetely, and aunswered
and sayde, how he wolde be a good & a kinde
neighbour to the frenche kyng and the realme
and to kepe and maintaine the treuce taken
betwene the two kynges, for he sayd he hym
selfe was one of ꝑ principalles that ayded to
make & ordayn that treuce, wherfore he said
he ought nor he wolde not breke it, therfore
might be well assured. The dukes aunswere
pleased greatly the lordes of Fraūce. Thus
the duke and they were louyngly together &
the duke gaue thē a great dyner and supper
and after they toke their leaue, and the duke
retourned to Burdeaux and the frenche men
into Fraunce. They founde in their way the
duke of Berrey at the cytie of Poyctiers, and
they shewed him what they had doone. The
duke of Berrey thought the duke of Lancas-
ters aunswere reasonable, and so did ꝑ french
kynge and the duke of Burgoine, and so the
mater abode styll in this estate. And for this
cause quod sir Johan Grayly the duke of Lā
caster hath sent hether into Englande of his
counsayle, as syr Wyllyam Perreer and syr
Peter Clyfto, and two clerkes lerned in the
law, as mayster Johan Huche and mayster
Johan Rychard of Leycetour, to treat and
to pleate his maters before the king and his
vncles, and for this cause the kinge rideth to
Eltham, and shall be there on thursday next
that shall be Mary mandelin day, but what
shalbe doē as yet I know not But as I am
enformed of some englyshe men that know
somwhat the duke of Glocester will be ꝓn
cipally of the opynion ꝑ his brother the duke
of Lancaster shulde abyde still in Guyen, ra
ther than to retourne agayne into Englande
bycause he was so great with the king for I
ensure you this duke of Glocester is a mar
uaylous mynded man, proude and presump
tuous, he wold rule all him selfe, and he is so
beloued of ꝑ cominalty, that what so euer he
sayth they will enclene to him. He raised the
bayraunte knyght the lorde Symon Burle
and the duke of Irelande, the archbysshop
of yorke and many other knyghtes. & other
of the kinges counsaile to aye for hatred and
euyll will, duryng the season that the duke
of Lan

of Lancastre was beyonde the see in Cathyle he is more dred in Englande than beloued.

Owe let this matter passe quod syr John Grayly, and I shall shew you nowe the seconde busynesse that the kyng hath to do. as I am enformed, The kynges pleasure is to be remarryed, and hath serched ouer al for a wyfe if the duke of Burgoyne or therle of Haynalte had any doughter to marry, the kyng wolde gladly haue had one of them. but they haue none, but suche as be maried. It hath ben shewed the king that the kynge of Nauarre hath both sonnes and doughters, but he will not entende y wayes The duke of Glouceste hath a doughter able to marry he wolde gladly that the kyng shuld haue had her, but the kyng wold not, for he sayd she was to nere of hys kyn, for she is his cosyn germayne. The kynge enclyneth moste hys mynd to the Frenche kynges doughter, wherof all the countrey hath great maruayle that he wold take his enemyes doughter the kyng is not the beste beloued Prynce of the worlde wyth hys people, but he setteth lytell therby, he sheweth alwaishow he had rather haue warre wyth any other realme than wyth Fraūce, wherfore he wold haue a good peace betwene the frenche kyng and hym and their reames, for the kynge wyll often tymes saye that the warre hath endured to long betwen them, and that many valyaunt men are ded therby on bothe parties wherby the christen fayth is sore mynysshed and febled. And it is not pleasaunt to the realme of England that he shuld marry wyth Fraunce, and it hath ben shewed hym that the doughter of Fraunce is ouer yonge, and that thys fyue or sixe yeresthe shall not be able to kepe hym company. Ther to he hath answered and sayth, that she shal growe ryght well in age, and though he fast a season he shal take it well in worth, and shal order her in the meane season at hys pleasur and after the maner of Englande, sayeng also howe he is yet yonge ynough to abyd tyll the lady be of age. No man canne bryng the kynge out of thys purpose, and or ye departe ye shall her mouch of thys matter. And thus for these causes the kyng ryeth now to Eltham.

Thus this gentle knyght syr Johan of Grayly and I deuysed togyther as we rode betwene Rochester and Dertford, thys knyght was cayptain of Bouteuyle, bastard sonne sometyme to the Captall of Beufz, and I herd hys wordes gladly and dyd put them in memory. And all the way betwen Leades and Eltham I rod most parte in hys company, and wyth syr Wyllyam Lysle. Thus the kyng came to Eltham on a tuysday, and on the wednysday the lordes of al costes began to assemble, Thyder came the duke of Glouceste, and the erles of Derby, Arundel, Northumberland, Kent, Rutlande, and the erle Marshall, and the archebyshoppes of London and Wynchester, And on the thursday about the houre of thre, they assembled togyther in the kynges chambre in the kynges presence. Than the knyghtes of Gascoyne were sent for, and the consaylours of the good townes, And also the Duke of Lancastres counsayl was sent for, I was not present nor might not be suffred, there were none but the lordes of the counsayl, who debated the matter more than four houres. And after dyner I fel in acquayntaūce with an auncyent knight whom I knewe in king Edwardes dayes and he was as than of kyng Richard priuy counsayle, he was called syr Richard Sury, he knewe me anone, and yet in.xviii. yeres he had not seue me before. whyche was at Colbrydg, and at Bruselles, in the house of duke Wyncelaūce of Brabant, and of the Duchesse Jahan of Brabant, thys knyght sir Richard Sury made me good cher, and demaunded of me many thynges, and I answered hym as I knew. And as I walked vp and downe with him in a galery before the kings chambre, I demaūded hym questyons of that cōsayle, and desyred hym to tell me if he myght what conclusiō was taken. He herd me wel and paused a lytell, and afterwarde sayd, syr Johan I shal shew you, for it is no mater to be hydden and kept secrete, for shortly yethal be therm publyshed all openly, ye knowe well quod he, and I am sure ye haue herde reherced how the duke of Lancastre is gone in to Acquytayn, to reioyce the gyfte that the kyng my soueraygne lord hath gyuen hym, for the loue that he hath to hym, for he hath doone the kynge right good seruyce and the

crowne of England, therfore in reward the kyng hath clerely gyuen to hym and to hys heyres for euer, the hole duchy of Acquitaine, so as it extendeth in metes and lymytacyons seneschalles, bayliages, signories, and wastelages, and clene quytely al them that hold of hym by faythe or othe, and in all homage the reliefe reserued, more the kyng hath reserued to the crowne of England in tyme to come. And this gyfte is so sufficiently conferred that all the kynges other vncles and al the counsaille of England hath accorded therto, and the kynge hath gruen specyall commaundement to al hys subgiettes in the sayd lymytacyons, of Acquytayne, to obey in all poyntes without any other meane, hys dere and well beloued vncle, duke Johan of Lancastre, and after ye syght of hys letters to hold and to take hym to their souerayne lord, and to swer to hym faythe and homage, and to holde of hym truely, as they haue auncyently done and held at the date of those letters, gruen by the kyng of England or his deputies or cõmyssioners. And who so euer that rebelleth or speketh agaynst thys the kings graūt of what condycyon so euer he be, to aunswer therto within thre dayes. The kyng gaue to hys vncle of Lancastre and to his cõmyssioners, full power and puyssaunce to correcte them, and to put them out of al hope to haue any other retourn or resort, yet not wyth stanynge all these letters and streyte commaūdment of the kynge, the good townes and cyties of Gascoyne, vnder the kyng of Englandes obeysaūce, and all other lordes, knyghtes and gentlemen of the countrey, ar comioyned togyther to kepe their townes clene agaynst the duke, and will not nor are not in mynde to obey the duke in thys case, for they say, and haue sayd, and yet suffyce at this houre that the gyfte that the kyng hath gruen to his vncle of Lancastre, is not sufficient nor profitable, and out of the ordre of reason. And yf duke Iohn wold not wynne them but by gentyllesse, herd patiently their defences, and that no further in commenentes shuld ensue, ther fore his counsayle and their counsayles are come hyther to debat and to declare the cause why they do not obey the kynges cõmaundement. And surely as this day they haue right kyndly shewed their answer, and layde forth certayn artycles of reason, and they haue be well herde, And they haue layd such reasons that in a maner the kynge and hys counsayl thynke they haue cause to abyd by their quarell. I shall shewe you how, but I wolde ye kept it secret tyll it be knowen further abrod And I aunswered I wold so do. Well quod the knyght, one (as me thought was off) all of Burdeaux spake for al hys parti, and first shewed for the his procuracyon and auctorite to the entent he myght the better be beleued, and than beganne and sayde, that the cyty of Burdeaux, and the cytye of Baion and Dax and al the signories and lordshyppes that be appendaunt to the lymyttes of the sayd countreys and cyties, are of so noble condycyon, that no kyng of England by no maner of accyon or dede may put away or dyscreuer them fro the demayns of the crowne of England nor to gyue or alyenate them, to chyld vncle, nor brother, by reasone of marryag or other myse, & to verifie this we say that the above named townes, cyties, and signories are sufficiently priuileged by kynges of England, who haue swore faythfully to hold and to kepe hs so, without reuocasyon. For as soone as any kynge of England entreth in to the possessyon of the heritage of the Crowne of England, he sweareth sufficiently on the euangelystes to holde thys ferme and stable without breakyng, and ye tyght dereyt as kyng of England, haue made lyke othe. And yf to verifie this to be of trouth, behold here these writynges. And therwith he shewed forth letters and charters vnder the seales of notaryes imperyalles, and sealed wyth the great seale of England, gruen by the same kynge Richard de thers beynge present, and there openly he rede it frome clause to clause. The charter was well herde and vnderstand, for it was both in laten and in Frenche, and it named in the ende many wytnesses of prelates and great lordes of Englande, who wer for the more suretie testes of that dede, at the lesse to the nombre of xi. When the kynges counsayle herde this, they beheld eche other, and loked on the kynge. Ther was no man spake awerd nor made no replicacyon whan he had redd it ouer he folded it and put it vp and spake vnthe, addressyng hys wordes to the kynge, and sayd. Right dere syr and redouted souerayne lorde, and you my right dere lordes, and other, at my departyng out

of the

of the countrey. I was charged to shew you by the commaynours of the good Cytyes and townes of Gascoyne, beynge vnder the obeysaunce of the crowne of England, hath well auertysed the fourme and maner of your commaundement, sent vnto them vnder your seale wherby they knewe ryght wel, yet they thynke and say that this cõmaundement may not be obeyed, for if so were that the cytyes and good townes of Guyen wolde enclyne to receyue the duke of Lancastre to theyr lord, and acquyte for ever the homage and obeysaunce that they owe to you, it shulde be greatly to the preiudyce of the crowne of englande, for thoughe it were so that at this tyme present the duke of Lancastre is the kynges vncle and subgiet, and well beloued, and wolde holde and kepe all poyntes and artycles belonging to the crowne of England, yet it may so hap that forth loue and tenure may lyghtly be lost by chaunge of heyres, by reason of mariages that are made betwene lordes and ladyes in chaungynge fro one to an other, though they be nere of lynnage, by dyspensacyon of the pope. for sometyme it is of necessyte that mariages be made of hyghe Dyuces or of these chyldren, one wyth a nother, to hold their landes and seygnories in loue and amyte. And so it myght fall that suche heyres as myght dyscende of the Duke of Lancastre, shulde conioyne theym by mariage to the chyldren of some kynge in Fraunce, or of dukes of Berry, Bretaygne, or erles of Foyse, or Armynake, or kynges of Nauarre, or duke of Aniou or of Mayne. and than they beynge beyonde the sea peraduenture in the parties of Fraunce, shulde clayme their enherytaunce, and therby put the countrey of Guyen in dyscord, and to bryng it to be against the crown of Englande wherby the kynge of England than regnynge, and the Realme also, shulde haue peraduenture ouer much payne to recouer it agayn, and so the ryght to be put farre of fro thence whereunto it shuld retourn and be, as of the demayne of the Crowne of Englande. Wherfore ryght dere syr and redoubted lordes and noble counsaylours, please yt you to conspyre al these poyntes and artycles which I haue purposed in your presence and determyne it as ye shall seme best. for syr the full opynion of all the countrey is, they saye they wyll abyde styll in the obeysaunce of your ryght redoubted lorde and kynge, and in the demayne of the noble Crowne of England. Therwyth thys officiall helde his peace and the prelates and lordes erle of the regarded other. Than they drewe togyther and aproched to the kynge, fyrste hys two vncles, and the erles of Derby and Arundell. Than they of Arquytayne were cõmaunded to departe tyll they were called agayne. They departed and also the two knyghts that were come thyder fro the duke of Lancastr Than the kinge demaunded counsayle what shulde be done, and what aunswere shuld be made. The prelates tourned the aunswere to the kynges vncles, bycause the mater touched them rather than any other. At the fyrst they excused the sayeng they myght not well aunswer for the mater was cõmune, and ought to be debated by cõmune counsayle and not by lygnag nor fauour. Thus they bode a good space, but fynally the aunswere was layde on the duke of Gloucestre, and he was prayed and requyred to saye his aduyse. Than he aunswered and sayde, howe it was a herde thynge to take away or to dysanull the gyfte of a kynge, confermed and sealed by the aoyde of all his subgiettes, and by deliberacyon of hys speciall counsayle, wherfore he sayde his subgyettes shuld be rebell that wold not obey, for in that they wolde make that the kinge shuld not be lorde of his owne enheritaunce, if he myght not do with his owne what it pleased hym, some gloseb those wordes, and some thought in their corage, that the aunswer was not reasonable, but they durste not saye agaynst it, the duke of Gloucestre was so sore dred, and the erle of Derby wonne to the duke of Lancaster, was there present, who furthered those wordes and sayd. Fayre vncle ye haue well sayd, I am of your opinion. Therwyth the counsaile began to breake and some murmured one with an other, and they of Guyen nor yet the duke of Lancasters knightes wer not called agayne at that tyme. When the kynge sawe al the matter he dissimuled a litell, and it was his intention that they should assemble togyther agayne in counsayle after dyner to se if any other propre way myght be taken for the honoure of the crowne of Englande. Than the kynge caused the bysshop of Cauntorbury to speke of that he had gyuen hym in charge in the mornyng to speke of, that was

vpon the state of his marryage. and to send in to Fraunce. The lordes were of accorde and named them that shulde go, which were the archebysshoppe of Duuelyn, the erle of Kutlande, the Erle Marshall, the lorde Beaumonde, the lorde Hughe Spenser, the lorde Lorys Cliffordе, and twenty knyghtes and esquyers. These were sent in to Fraunce to treat for the maryage of the frenche kynges doughter Isabell, of eyght yere of age, and yet she was all redy promysed to the duke of Bretaynes sonne, by a treatie yt was made in Towrs in Thouraync. Now behold howe thys myght be broken. for the Frenche kyng and his vncles hadde treated with the duke of Bretayne, yet for all that thenglysshe ambassadours had their charge geuen vnto them, and so they departed out of England and arryued at Calays, & there taryed a fyue dayes, and than departed in great araye. and tooke the waye to Ampence, and they sent before Marche the harauldе. who had brought to them saueconducte goynge and comyng. and besyde that the lorde Monchencrel was set to be their guyde, and to se them serued of all thynges necessary. ¶ Now we shall leaue to speke of them and retourne to our fyrste purpose.

NOw as I haue shewed you before the counseylours of the Cytes and good townes of Acquytaine. praied the kynge and hys counsayle, to whome they were boũde, to mayntayn their lyberties and fraunches, as in the demayne of the Crown of Englande, as he was swoorne to do, affermynge that surely they wolde kepe their auncyent lyberties, and wyll not breke it for no maners of cause or condycion and in holdyng thus their opynyon. foure parties of the counsayl (that is) the cõmune voyce of the countrey, reputed them for valyaunt and worthy men. But the duke of Glouceſtre was of a nother opinyon, for he wold that hys brother the duke of Lancastre shuld haue bydden styll in Acquytayne, for he thought he was ouer great in England, and to nere the kyng, as for hys brother the duke of yorke he cared not, for the duke of yorke was a prince that loued bisenes and lytell busynesse. Also he had a fayre lady to his wyfe, doughter to the erle of Kent, on whom was all his pleasure. But the duke of Glouceſtre was subtyl, and euer demaunded somwhat of his nephue kynge Richarde, yet he was but poore, for all that he was a great lord and conitable of Englande and erle of Herforde & of Peruers. and of Bohungham, and also he had yerely out of the kynges coffers foure thousande nobles, and neuer rode on the kinges business nor for the realme on haye, without he knewe why and wherfore. For these causes he was not indyfferent, for the maters of Acquytayne, for he wold haue had his brother of Lancastre to haue bidden stil in Acquitayn for euer. for thã he thought he wold haue shyfted well ynoughe in Englande. As soone as he had sayd hys sentence (as ye haue herde before) and that he sawe some murmured in the kinges chambre and that the prelates and lordes talked togyther two and two, he issued out of ỹ chambre, and the erle of Derby wythhym. and came in to the hall at Eltham, and made a clothe to be layde on a table and so sate downe to dynner and lefte all other styll talkynge to gyther. Whan the duke of yorke knew thathe wolde eate dyner, he went to kepe hym company and after dyner whiche he made shorte, the duke of Glouceſtre dyssymuled the mater, and tooke his leaue of the kynge sittynge at the table, and so departed and toke his horse and rode to London, and the erle of Derby abode styl wyth the lordes that daye and the nexte day. Thus they of Acquytayne could haue none expedicyon nor delyueraunce.

I Haue delight to write this mater at length, because to enfourme you of the trouth, for I that am auctour of this hystory was present in all these maters, and thys valyaunt knyght syr Richard Sturpe shewed me euery thynge. And so it was that on the sonday folowynge all such as had ben ther were departed, and all their counsaylours, except the duke of yorke who abode styll about the kynge, and the lorde Thomas Percy and syr Richard Sturpe shewed my busynesse to the kyng. Than the kynge desyred to se my booke that I had brought for hym. So he sawe it in his chambre for I had layd yt ther redy on hys bedde. Whenne the kyng opened yt, yt pleased hym well, for yt was fayre enlumyned and written and couered wyth crymsen velvet, wyth two botons of syluer

hyner and gylte, and Rotes of golde in the myddes with two great clapses gylte, ryche ly wrought. Than the kyng demaunded me, whereof it treated, and I shewed hym how it treated matets of loue. wherof the kynge was gladde and loked in it, and redde yt in many places. for he couldo speke and rede French very well. And he tooke yt to a knyght of hys chambre named syr Rycharde Credoh, to beare it in to hys secrete chambre And the same sonday I fell in acquayntaunce with a Squyer of Englande called Henry Castyde, an honest man and a wyse, and could well speke Frenche, He companyed with me, bycause he saw the kyng and other lordes made me good cheer, and also he had seue the boke that I gaue to the kyng. Also syr Rych arde Sury had shewed hym howe I was a maker of hystories. Than he sayd to me as her after solowyth.

¶ The deuyse, and of the conqueste that kyng rycharde had made in Irlad, and howe he brought in to hys Obeysaunce foure kynges of that countrey. Cap. CC.ii.

Syr Johan quod he, hau ye not founde in the kynges courte sythe ye came hyder, no man that hath tolde you of the voyage that the kyng made but late in to Irlande, and in what maner the foure kynges of Irland are come in to the obeysaunce of the kyng of Englande? And I answered no. Than shall I shewe you of the Squyer, to the entent that ye maye putte it in perpetuall memoyre, whan ye retourne in to your owne countrey, and haue lyst thertto. I was retayned of hys wordes and thanked hym. Than he began thus and sayd. Syr Johan yt is not in memoyre, that ether any kyng of England made such apparayle and prouision for any journey to make warre agaynst the Pyllhmen, nor suche a nombre of men of armes nor archers. The kyng was nyne monethes in the marchesse of Irland to hys great cost, a charge to the realme, for they bare al his expēses. And the marchaūtes, cyties, and good townes of the realme thought it well bestowed, whan they sawe the kyng retourne home agayne with honour. The nombre that he had thyder geylmen and archers, were foure thousande knyghtes and .xxx. thousand archers, well payed wekely, that euery manne was well pleased. But I shewe you, bycause ye should knowe the trouth. Ireland is on of the ryuell well countreis of the worlde to make warre vpon, or to bring vnder subiection. For it is closed strongely and wyldely with highe forestes and great waters and marcshes, and places inhabytable, It is harde to entre to do them of the countrey any dōmage, nor ye shall fynde no towne nor persone to speke to all For the men drawe to the woodes, and dwell in caues and small cotages, vnder trees and a mong bussches and breges, lyke wylde sauage beestes. And whan they knowe that any man maketh warre agaynst thē, and is entred in to their boūtreis, than they drawe togyder to the straytes and passages, and defende it, so that no man can entre in to them And whan they se their tyme, they wyll sone take their aduauntage on their enemyes, for they know the countrey and ar lyght people. For a man of armes beyng neuer so well horsed, and ron as fast as he can, the yrysshe men wyll ryn a fote as faste as he and ouertake hym. yea, and leape vp vpon hys horse be hynde hym, and drawe hym fro hys horse for they are stronge men in the armes, and haue sharpe weapons wyth large blades with two edges, after the maner of darte herdes wher wyth they wyll slee they? enemy, & they repute not a man ded, tyll they haue cutte his throte, and open his bely and taken out hys herte, and eaty it away wyth them some hope, suche as knowe their nature, that they do eate it, and haue great delyt therin. They take no man to raunsome. And whanne they se at any encounter, that they be ouermatched, Than they wyll departe a sonder, and go and hyde theym selfe in bussches, woodes, breges, and caues, so that no man shall fynde theym. Also syr Wyllyam of Wyndsore, who hath moste vsed the warres in these partes, of any other englysshe man, yat he couldo ne-

ner lerne

ner learne the maner of ꝑ countrey, nor knowe
ther condycyons. They be herde people and
of rude engen and wytte, and of byuers fre-
quentacyons and vsage, they sette nothyng
by iolyte nor fresshe apparell, nor by noble
nesse, for though their realme be soueraynly
gouerned by kynges, wherof they haue plen
tie, yet they wyll take no knowlege of gentyl
nesse, but wyll contynewe in their rudenesse,
acordynge as they are brought vp. Trouthe
it is that foure of the prynypall kynges and
moste puyssaunt, after the maner of the coun
trey, are come to the obeysaunce of the kyng
of England by loue, and fayrewell, and not
by batayle nor constraynte. The erle of Or-
monde who marcheth vpon them hath take
great payne, and hath so treated with them,
that they came to Wuuelyn to the kynge, and
submyttyd them to hym, to be vnder the obey
saunce of the crowne of England, wherefore
the kyng and all the realme reputeth this for
a greatand an honorable dede, and thynketh
this voyage well be stowed. For kynge Ed-
warde of good memory dyd neuer so muche
vpon them as kynge Richarde dyde in this
voyage. The honour is great but the pro-
fyte is but lytell. For though they be kynges
yet no man can denyse nor speke of rudes per
sonages.

I Shall shewe you somwhat of
their rudenesse, to the entent ye
may take ensample agayns peo-
ple of other nacyons, I knowe
yt well, for I haue proued it by
them selues, For whan they were at Wuue-
lyn I hadde the gouernance of them about
a moneth, by the kynges commaundement
and hys counsayle, to thentent that I shulde
lerne them to lyue them selfe acordynge to the
vsage of Englande. & bycause I coulde spe-
ke their language as well as Frenche or En
glysshe, for in my youthe I was brought vp
amonge theym. I was with the erle of Or-
monde, father to the Erle that nowe is, who
loued me right well, bycause I rode as than
ryde and vaudell an horse merely well. And
it fortuned one tyme that the sayde erle (who
as than was my maister) was sent with fyue
hundred speares and a thousande archers in
to the marcheste of Irelande, to make warre
with the yrysshe men, for alwayes the En-
glysshemen haue had warre with them, to sub-
due and putte them vnder. And on a daye as
the sayd Erle went agaynst them, I rode on a
goodly horse of hys, lyght and swyfte: Thus
I rode & folowed my maysters. And the same
day the yrysshe men were layde in a busshe-
ment, and whan we came nere theym, they
opened their busshement. Thanne the En-
glysshe archers began to shote so egrely that
the yrysshe men could not suffre it, for they
are but symply armed, therfore they recoyled
and wente backe. Thanne the Erle my mai-
ster folowed in ꝑ chase and I that was well
horsed folowed hym as nere as I coude, and
it fortuned so that my horse was strayd, and
toke his bridell in his tethe and came a way
with me, & whether I wolde or not, he bare
me so farfoorthe amonge the yrysshe men, that
one of them by lyghtnesse of rennynge lepte
vp behynde me, and enbraced me in hys ar-
mes, & dyde me none other hurt, but so ledde
me out of the way, and so rode styll behynde
me the space of two houres. And at the laste
brought me in to a secrete place, thycke of
busshes, and there he founde his company
who were come thyder and scaped al daun-
gers, for the Englysshe men pursued not so
farre. Than as he shewed he had great ioye
of me, and ledde me in to a towne and a stron
ge house amonge the woodes, waters, and
myres. The towne was called Harpely, and
the gentilman that toke me was called Syre
Colleret. He was a goodly man, and as it
hath ben shewed me, he is as yet a lyue, howe
be it he is very aged. This Syre Colleret
kepte me fyue yere with hym, and gaue me
hys doughter in marryage, of whom I hadde
two doughters. I shall shewe you howe I
was delyuered.

IT happened as the fyue yeres ende
one of their kynges named Arthur
mackemur, kyng of Lynster, made
an armye agaynst duke Lyon of Clarence
sonne to kyng Edwarde of Englande, and a
gaynst sir Wyllyam of wynsore. And not farre
fro the cyte of Lynster the Englysshe men &
yrysshe men mette togyder, and many were
slayne and taken on bothe parties. But the
Englysshe men obteyned the victorie and
the yrysshe men fledde, and the kyng Arthur
saued hym selfe, but Syre Colleret my ma-
ster

nes sa that was taken prysoner vnder the duke of Clarence baner. He was taken on the same courser, that he toke me on. The hoyse was well knowen among the erle of Ozmon des folkes, and then he shewed howe I was a lyar and was at hys maner of Harpelpn, & howe I had wedded hys doughter, wherof the duke of Clarence, syr wyllyam wynsoze, and the Englysshemen were ryght gladde.

Than it was shewed hym that if he wolde be delyuered out of prison, that he should delyuer me in to the Englysshemennes handes and my wyfe and chyldren, with gret payne he made that bargayne, for he loued me wel and my wyfe his doughter and our chyldren whan he sawe he coulde make hys synaunce none otherwyse, he accozded therto, but he re teigned myne eldest doughter styll with him So I and my wyfe and our second doughter retourned in to Englande, and so I went and dwelte beyde Bristowe on the ryuer of Hyuerne. My two doughters are maryed, and she in Ireland hath three sonnes and two doughters, and she that I brought with me hath foure sonnes and two doughters & bycause the langage of yrisshe is as redy to me as the Englysshe tong (for I haue alwayes contynued with my wyfe, and taught my chyldren the same (speche) Therfore the kyng my soueraygne lozd and his counsayle, cõmaunded me to gyue attendaũce on these four kynges, and to gouerne and bringe them to reason, and to the vsage & customes of England kyng they hadde yelded them to to be vnder his obeysaunce, & of the crowne of England, and they were swozne to holde it for euer, & yet I ensure you, for all that, I dyde my power to enstygne and to lerne them good maners, yet for all that they be ryght rude and of grose engyn, muche payne I hadde to make them to speke any thyng in fayre maner, somwhat I altred them but not moch, for in maners they dzewe to theyr naturali rudenesse. The kinge my soueraygne lozdes entent was, that in maner, countenaunce, and apparell of clothynge they should vse accozdyng to the maner of england, for the kynge thought to make them all foure knyghtes. They hadde a fayre house to lodge in in Dzuu. lyn, and I was charged to abyde styll with them and not to departe. And so two oz three dayes I suffred theym to do as they lyst, and sayd nothyng to them, but folowed theyr owne appetytes, They wold sytte at the table and make countenaunce nother good nor fayre. Than I thought I shulde cause them to chaunge that maner. They wolde cause their mynstrelles, theyr seruauntes, and barlettes, to sytte with them and eate in theyr owne dyshe, and to dzinke of theyr cuppes. And they shewed me, that the vsage of theyr countre was good, for they sayd, in all thynges (except theyr beddes) they were and lyued as cõmen. So the fourth day I ozdayned other tables to be couered in the hall, after ỹ vsage of Englande. And I made these four kynges to sytte at the hyghe table, and theyr mynstrels at another boyde, and theyr seruauntes and barlettes at another by neth them, wherof by semynge they were displeased, and beheld eche other and wold not eate and sayd, how I wold take fro them theyr good vsage, wherin they hadde been nozysshed. Than I answered them smylyng to a peace theym, that it was not honourable for their estates to do as they dyde before, and that they must leane it, and vse the custom of England, and that it was the kynges pleasur they shoulde so do, and how he was charged so to ozder them. Whan they harde that they suffred it, bycause they had putte themselfe vnder the obeysaũce of the kyng of Englande, and parteuered in the same as long as I was with them yet they hadde on vse which I knewe well was vsed in their countre, and that was they dyde were no dzeches I caused dzeches of lynen clothe to be made for them Whyle I was with them I caused them to leaue many rude thynges, aswell in clothyng as in other causes, Moche adoo I had at the fyrst to cause them to weare gownes of sylke furred with Mynneuers & gray, for before these kynges thought them selfe well apparelled whan they hadde on a mantell. They rode alwayes without sadelles & stzopes, and with gret payne I made the to ryde after our vsage. And on a tyme I demaunded the of their beleue, wherwithe they were not contente, and sayd, howe they beleued on god and on the trynite, aswell as we. Than I demaũded on what pope was their affection They answered me on him of Rome. Than I demaunded if they wolde not gladly receyue the ozder of knyghthode, and

that the

that the kyng of England shuld make them knyghtes, accordyng to the vsage of Fraunce and England, and other countreis. They answered howe they were knyghtes all redye, and that sufficed for theym. I asked where they wer made knyghtes, and howe and whan. They answered þ in the age of seuyn yere they were made knyghtes in Irelande, And that a kyng maketh hys sonne a knyght, and if the sonne haue no father alyue, than the nerte of hys blode may make hym knyght. And than thys yonge knyght shall begyn to iuste with small speares, suche as they maye beare with their ease, and ryne agaynst a sheide, sette on a stake in the feild. and the more speares that he breaketh, the more he shalbe honoured. I knew their maner well ynough, though I dyde demaunde it. But that I sayd, than the knyghthode that they had taken in their youth, suffered not to the kynge of England. But I sayde he shuld gyue theym after another maner. They demaunded howe. I answered, that it shuld be in the holy churche, whych was the mooste worthyest place. Than they enclyned somwhat to my wordes. Within two dayes after the erle of Ormonde came to the who coude ryght well speke the langage, for some of hys landes laye in those parties. He was sente to them by the kyng and hys counsayl. They all honoured hym and he them. Than he fell in swete communycacyon with them, and he demaunded of them how they lyked me. They answered and sayde, well for he hath well shewed vs the vsage of thys countrey, wher fore we ought to thanke hym and so we do. Thys answere pleased well the erle of Ormonde, Than he entred lytell and lytell to speke of the order of chyualry, whych the kyng would they should receyue. He shewed it them fro poynt to poynt, howe they shuld behaue them selfe, and what parteygned to knyghthod. The erles wordes pleased much these four kynges, whose names were these, Fyrst the great Anele kyng of Wertz. The second Brise of Thomonde kyng of Thomonde. The thyrde Arthure of Wache quemyse kyng of Lynster. The fourthe Conhus, kyng of Cheueno ꝛ Darpe. They wer made knyghtes by kyng Rychard de of England in the Cathedrall churche of Dunsyn, dedycate of sayut Johan Baptyst It was done on our lady day in Marche, as than it fell on a Thursday. These four kynges watched all the nyght before in the churche, and the nexte day at hyghe masse tyme, with great solempnyte they wer made knyghtes, and with them syr Thomas Ogyhen, syr Joanes Pado, and syr Johan Pado hys cosyn. These kynges sate that day at the table with kyng Rychard. They were regarded of many folke, because their behauyng was straung to the maner of Englande, and other contreis, and euer naturally men desyre to se newelties. Than I syr Johan Froissart sayd. Henry, I beleue you well: and I wold it had cost me largely that I had ben there. And surely thys yere past I hadde come hyder and it hadde not ben, for that I herd of the deth of quene Anne of Englande, whyche dyde lette me. But one thynge I wolde desyre of you to knowe howe these four kynges of Irelande came so soone to the kynge of Englandes obeysaunce, whan kynge Edwarde the kynges graunfather, who was so valyaunt a prynce and so redouted ouer all, could neuer subdue them nor putte them vnder, and yet he had alwayes war with them and in that they are subdued now, he sayd it was by treatie, and by the grace of god. In dede the grace of god is good, who so can haue it, it is much worthe. But it is seue nowe a dayes, that erthely princes getteth ytell without it be by pryssaūce. I desyre to know thys for whan I shall com in to Hepnalt of which countrey I am of, I shalbe examyned of thys and many other thynges, both by duke Hubert of Bauier, erle of Heynaillie, of Holand and of zelande, and also by hys sonne Wyllyā of Bauyere, who writeth hym selfe lorde of Frese, whych is a great countrey and a puissaunt, which countrey the sayd duke and his sonnne claymeth to haue by right successyon and so dyde their predecessours before them, but the Fresons wolde neuer fall by any reason, nor come vnder obeysaūce, nor as yet do not vnto thys day, than answered syr Henry Christal and sayd, sr yt Johan, to shew you the very trouth I can not, but as many a one sayth, and it is to suppose, þ the great puissaūce þ the kyng had ouer with him, and tarying there in their countrey vpon monethes, and euery man well payed, abashed the pryncipall men. Also the see was closed fro them on all parties

partes, wherby their ſubiẽges and marchãu
dyſes myght not entre into their countreys.
Nought they that dwell farre within the re
alme cared lytell for it (for they knowe notte
what marchaundyſe meaneth, nor they haue
not groſely and rudely like vnto beeſtes) yet
ſuch as lyueth on the marcheſſe of England
and by the See coueyeable feate of marchaun
dyſe wyth vs, and into other places kynge
Edwarde of noble memory in his tyme, had
ſo anſwerre ſo many warres what in Fraūce
Spayne, Gaſcoyne, and Scotland, ſo that
his people were deuyded in dyuers places.
for occuppyed, wherfore he coulde not ſende
a great nombre into Irelande. But whan
the Iryſhmen ſawe ꝑ great nombre of men
of warre that kyng Richarde hadde in Ire-
lande this laſte iourney. The yrſhemen ad-
ſyſed them ſelfe and came to obeiſaūce. And
indede, of olde tyme there was a kyng in En
glande named Edwarde, who is a ſayut and
chriſtened, and honoured throughe all this re
alme. In his tyme he ſubdued the Danes, &
diſconfited them by bataple on the See thre
ſyſes. And this ſaint Edwarde kinge of En
glande, lorde of Irelande and of Acquitaine
the yrſhmen loued and dredde hym muche
more, than any other kinge of England that
had ben before. And therfore our ſouerayne
lorde kyng Richard this yere paſt, whan he
was in Irelande, in al his armoyes and de
uyſes, he lefte the bering of the armes of En
glande, as the lybardes a flour delyces quar
terly, and bare the armes of this ſayut Ed-
warde, that is a croſſe patent golde and gou
lles with foure whyte martenettes in the felde
wherof it was ſayd, the yrſhmen were well
pleaſed, and the ſoner they enclyned to hym,
for of trouthe ꝑ predeceſſours of theſe foure
kynges obeyed with faithe and homage to ꝑ
ſayut kinge Edwarde, and the reputt kinge
Richarde a good man and of good cõſcience
ſo they haue done to him faithe & homa
ge as they ought to do, and in like maner as
their predeceſſours vnto tyme dyd to ſayut Ed-
warde. Thus I haue ſhewed you the maner
howe the kinge our ſouerayne lorde hath ſyth
his accomplyſhed and furnyſhed his voy-
age in Irelande: put it in your memorial, to
remembraunce that whan ye ſhall reſourne into
your owne countrey, ye may write it in your
bookes, with many other hyſtoryes that de-

pende to the ſame matter. Than I thanked
him, and ſayd it ſhulde be done. So I toke
leaue of hym. Than I mette wyth Harche
the herauide, and I demaūded of hym what
armes this Henry Chryſtell bare, and I de-
mãded the herauide, howe thys ſir Henry had
ſhewed me the maner of the kynges iourney
in Irelande, and the ſtate of the foure kyn-
ges, who had ben (as he ſayde) in hys gouer-
nyng, more than fyftene dayes at Dunelyn.
The herauide anſwered me and ſayde. Sir,
he beareth in his armes Syluer, a cheuerne
goules, thre beſanes goules. All theſe thing;
I bydde putte in wrytynge, becauſe I wolde
not forgette them.

THus I taried in the kinge of En-
glande courte, as longe as it plea
ſed me, not alwayes in one place
for ꝑ kinge often̄ tymes remoued, to
Eltha to Leedes, to Kyngſtone, to Shene, to
Charlty or to Wyndſore, about ꝑ marcheſſe
of Londõ. And I was enformed of a trou-
the that ꝑ kinge wrot to his vncle the duke of
Lancaſter, for they of Acquitayne ſpedde ſo
in their buſyneſſe, that their countrey abode
ſtyll to the crowne of Englande. Than it
was concluded by generall counſayle of En
glande, that the gyfte that the kynge hadde
gyuen to the duke of Lancaſter, muſt nedes
abyde ſtyll as his owne, howe be it the duke
of Glouceſter wold that his brother myght
haue enioyned the kinges gyfte, but his ſay-
inge could not be herde in that caſe. For they
of the Realme of Englande (becauſe of dou
tes and caſualtyes in tyme to come) herde
well the wordes of theym of Burdeaux and
of Bayone. And conſydred well that yf they
herytage of Acquitayne were putte fro the
Crowne of Englande, it ſhulde be in tyme
to come a great preiudice to the realme whi-
che he wolde in no wyſe ſhulde fortune, for
alwayes Burdeux & Bayon, and the frõtiers
and marches of Gaſcon, had kept & augmen
ted greatly, the honour of the realme of En-
glande. Theſe thinges were well cõſydred of
the wyſe men of the kinges counſayle, ꝑ duke
of Glouceſter abſent, forbeſore hym no man
durſt ſpeke, ſo the mater abode in this caſe.
¶ We ſhall leaue of thys matter, and ſpeke
of the kynge of Englandes ambaſſadoures,
as the erle of Rutlande and therle marſhal,

and o-

ambaſſadours that were ſente into Fraunce to treate of the mariage bytwene kynge Richarde their lord and the doughter of Charles Frenche kynge, who was but eyght yeres of age. And I ſhall ſhewe you howe they ſpedde.

¶ Of thambaſſade that the kyng of England ſent into Fraunce to treat of the mariage bytwene the lady Iſabell ꝑ Frenche kinges eldeſt doughter, and hym ſelfe: & of the louynge anſwere they had. Cap. CC.iii.

These englyſhe lordes rode fro Calays to Ampence and to Clermounte in Beaunoyn, and ſo to Parys, and in euery place they were well receyued by the commaūdement of the frenche kinge. They were lodged about ꝑ croſſe of Tyronet. They were a tyme hundred horſes. The Frenche kynge was lodged at the caſtell of Loure, and the quene and her chyldren at the houſe of ſaynt Poule, bꝑ the ryuer of Seyne. The duke of Berrey at the houſe of Neſle, the duke of Burgoyne at the houſe of Artoyſe, and the duke of Burbone in his owne houſe, the duke of Orliaūce the erle of ſaynt Poule, and the lorde of Coucy, at their owne houſes. The kynge had aſſembled there all his counſayle, to the entent to make the better anſwere to thembaſſadours of Englande. The kyng had cōmaūded that euery day there ſhulde be deliuered to theſe ambaſſadours two hūdred cretones of Fraūce, for their ſmall expence, and for their horſes. And the chiefe of theſe Engliſhe lordes as the erle Marſhall and therle of Rutlāde were often tymes with the kinge and dyned with hym, they had as good chere as coulde be deuyſed, for the loue of the kynge of Englāde. Theſe lordes deſyred euer to haue an anſwere, & they were euer feble forthe with fayre wordes. For the noble man of Fraūce had great marueyle of the requeſtes of the Engliſhemen. And that the kynge of Englande wolde marry with Frenche kynges that the warre had ben ſo cruell, and ſo long endured. And ſome of the Frenche kynges counſayle ſayd, howe maye our kinge agree to gyue his doughter in mariage to his aduerſary, or this treatye ſhulde be made. We thynke we ſhall haue peace with Englande by ſome other waies, though it be not by the meanes of mariage. And as at ꝑ tyme there was a valyaunt knyght of the Frenche kynges counſayle, called ſir Raynalt of Coſby. He was a ſaꝛre coſtyng man, and conſydꝛed what myght fall in tyme to come. Than he ſayd to the kyng and to his vncles. My lordes and mayſters. A man ſhulde entre in at the right doꝛe into a houſe. It ſemeth that kyng Richarde of Englāde wolde nothyng to you nor to the realme, but loue and all fauour, ſeynge that bꝑ reaſon of mariage, he wolde alye hym to you. Two tymes your counſaylours and his haue mette together at Ampence and at Balingham, to treat for a peace, & yet they could neuer take no good concluſyon, but on the ſtate of a truce. And ſir, it is well knowen. that Thomas duke of Gloucester kinge Richardes vncle, is of a cōtrary opynyon, againſt ꝑ king and his other two vncles, the dukes of Lācaſter & of yorke The king nor other can not make him agree willingly to haue peace. howe be it his puyſſaunce canne not reſyſt the kynges power. Therfore ſir, after myne opynyon, receyue this offer and refuſe not this treatie, and let theſe lordes haue ſuche anſwere, as maye cōtent them. Than the kyng and his vncles agreed thereto, and ſpecially the duke of Burgoyne, for he was ſo ſore charged bꝑ reaſon of the warres, ꝑ gladly he wolde haue peace and the prieypall cauſe was, bycauſe of Flaūders, wherof he claymed to be lorde bꝑ reaſon of his wyfe, bycauſe that countrey marched vpon Englande. And alſo the herte of the Flemynges were rather Engliſhe than Frenche, bycauſe of the entercourſe of marchaundyſe, bytwene England & Flaunders bꝑ ſee and by lande.

When it was concluded bꝑ the Frenche kinges counſayle, that there ſhulde be as good chere made to the Engliſhemen as was

as was before. And whether it was by dissymulacion or otherwyse/ the frenche men were determyned to make a good and a swete answere to the englysshe men/ and to put them in hope that the kynge of Englande shulde haue his desyre. The quene and her chyldren lay at the house of Saynt Powle/ and where as the Englysshe lordes desyred to se them/ it was graunted to them/ and specyally to se her/ for whome their trauayle was. than it was shewed them that they muste be content howe so euer they founde her/ for they sayde she was but a yonge chylde of eyght yere of age/ wherfore they sayd/ there coulde not be in her no great wysdome nor prudence/ howe be it she was instructyned well ynough/ and that the lordes founde well/ whan they sawe her. The Erle Marshall beynge on his knees sayde to her. Fayre lady/ by the grace of god ye shall be our lady and quene of Englande. Than answered the yonge lady well aduysedly/ without counsayle of any other person. Syr quod she/ and it please god and my lorde my father that I shall be quene of Englande/ I shall be glad therof/ for it is shewed me that I shall be than a great lady. Than she toke by the erle Marshall by the hande and leded him to the quene her mother/ who had great ioy of the answere that she had made/ and so were all other that herde it. The maner/ countenaunce/ and behauour of this yonge lady/ pleased greatly the Embassadours/ and they sayd amonge them selfe/ that she was lykely to be a lady of hygh honoure and great goodnesse. Thus whan these lordes of Englande had ben at Parys a twenty dayes/ and their costes and charges payed for by the frenche kynge/ a reasonable answere was gyuen them/ so that they were put in great hope to bringe about that they came for/ howe be it the frenche men sayd/ it coulde not be doone shortly/ bycause the lady was so yonge/ and also she was promysed to the duke of Bretayns eldest sonne/ wherfore they sayd they must treat to breke that promesse/ or they coude procede any further in that mater/ and therupon the frenche kynge and his counsayle shulde sende into Englande the next lent after/ to shewe howe the matter went. And whan the dayes begyn to encreace and ware fayre/ Than the kynge of Englande to sende agayne in to Fraunce whome it shulde please hym/ and they shulde be welcome. With this answere the englysshe men were contented and toke leaue of the quene and of her doughter/ and of the kynge/ and of all other/ and departed fro Paris and toke the same way they came and so retourned to Calays/ and than in to Englande. and the two erles rode in post before their company/ to bringe tydynges to the kyng. they rode fro Sandwiche to Wyndsore in lesse thanne a daye and an halfe. The kynge was ryght tofore of their comynge/ and was well contente with the frenche kynges answere. He set the mater so to his herte that he toke great pleasure therin/ and toobe hede to none other thynge/ but studyed howe he myght bringe it aboute to haue the frenche kinges doughter to wyfe.

On the other syde the frenche kynge and his counsayle studyed daye and nyght/ howe they myght make this marryage with Englande to the honour of the realme of Fraunce. There were many in the realme of Fraunce that sayd/ that if they had been called to these treatyes/ and our wordes herde/ the kynge of Englande shulde neuer haue the doughter of Fraunce/ for any maner of peace. What good shulde it be for Fraunce/ seynge the trewce betwene them endured but for two yere to come/ and than shall we fall agayne in warre/ and eche of vs hate other as we haue doone before. The dukes of Berrey and Orlyance were of the same opynion/ and dyuers other lordes of Fraūce. But the kyng/ the duke of Burgoyne/ and the chaunceller of Fraunce/ enclyned to this marryage/ and gladde to haue peace/ reseruyng alwayes the honour of the Realme. The same tyme there was a squier in Fraunce of the nacyon of Normandy in the countrey of Caulx/ he had in his dayes ben sore trauayled in farre partyes/ and as than he was newly retourned into Fraūce/ his name was Robert le mennot/ but as than he was called Robert the Hermyte/ he was ryghtwyse and of good lyfe/ of the age of fyfty yere/ he had been at the treaties that was holden at Balyngham/ at whiche tyme he was well herde/ and howe he entred than in to that treatie I shall shewe you.

¶ Of a Squyer named Roberte the Hermyte/ howe he was sente to the treaties of the peace holden at Balyngham/ & howe he was after sente in to Englande to kynge Richarde and his vncles. Cap. CC.iiii.

O it was/ whan this Roberte the Hermyte returned in to Fraūce out of the parties of Surey/ and toke shyppyng at Baruch. Whyle he was vpon the see a great tempest of wynde rose/ in suche wyse that they feared to be perysshed/ and euery man fell to make his prayers to god. And at the ende of this tempest/ and that the wether began to ware fayre and clere/ there apered to Robert ỹ Hermyte an ymage more clere than Crystall/ and sayd thus. Robert/ thou shalte issue and escape this parell/ and all thy company for loue of the/ for god hath herde thyne oryisons and prayers/ and he sendeth the worde by me/ that thou shuldest make hast in to Fraunce/ and go to the kynge and shewe him thyne aduenture/ and say vnto him/ that in any wyse he enclyne to haue peace with his aduersary kynge Richarde of Englande/ and amonge them that be treaters of the peace/ preache thou forthe and shewe them thyne aduyson/ for thou shalte be herde. and say that all suche as be of the contrary opynyon agaynst the peace/ shall bye it derely in their lyfe tyme in this worlde. And therwith ỹ clere messe and voyce vanysshed away. Than Robert abode in a great study/ but he remembred well what he hadde sene and herde/ by the deuyne inspyracyon. And after this aduenture they had fayre wether and the wynde at their desyre/ and than arryued in the Ryuer of Gennes: and there Robert the Hermyte toke leaue of his company/ and went by lande fro thence tyll he came to Luygnon. And the fyrst thynge he dyd he went to the churche of sayne Peter/ and there foūde a good vertuous man a penytencer and of hym he was cōfessed/ and shewed hym all his aduenture/ and demaunded counsayle what was best to do. Than his goostly father charged hym in any wyse/ that he shulde speke nothynge of this mater tyll he had shewed it fyrste to the frenche kynge/ and loke what counsayle the kynge dyd gyue him so to do. This Robert folowed his counsayle and arayed hym selfe in symple habyte all in gray/ and so pouerely departed fro Luygnon/ and tourneyed so longe that he came to Parys/ but the kynge was at Abbeuyle/ and the treatie began at Balyngham betwene the frenche men and Englysshemen (as ye haue herde before) Than this Robert came to Abuyle and brewe to the kynge/ and a knyght of his acquayntaunce brought hym to the kyng/ whiche knyght was of Normandy/ and was called sir Willyam Martell/ he was of the kynges priuy chambre. Than Roberte the Hermyte shewed the kynge all his hole tourney and aduenture. The kyng herde hym well/ and because the duke of Burgoyne and syr Raynolde Cobyy chaunsellour of Fraunce (who were of the kynges oppynyon to haue peace) were at Balyngham in ỹ treatie holden there/ the kynge sayd to Robert. Our counsayle as nowe is nat here/ they be at Balyngham. ye shall abyde here with me/ and whan they be returned I shall speke with myne vncle of Burgoyne and with our chaunsellour/ and than we shall do in this mater/ as they shall aduyse me. syr quod this Robert/ as god wyll so be it.

The same weke the frenche kynges counsayle returned fro Balyngham to Abbeuyle/ and brought with them the artycles of the maner of the peace/ whiche the englysshemen had deuysed. and the maters were so weyghty that the treatie was put ouer tyll a nother daye/ vnto suche tyme as bothe kynges were aduertysed of eche others demaundes/ and their pleasures therin to be knowen. Than on ỹ frenche partie the frenche kynge drewe a parte his vncle of Burgoyne and the chaunsellour/ and shewed them what enfourmacyon Robert the Hermyt had made vnto him/ and the kynge demaunded of them if it were a thynge lyspyr and lawfull to beleue. They studyed a lytell and at last sayde. Syr we requyre youre grace lette vs se this hermyte and here hym speke/ and therupon we wyll take aduyse. Than he was sent for. Whan he came before the kynge he made his reuerence. Thanne the kynge sayd Roberte/ shewe vs here at length all the hole matter/ as ye enfourmed me before. Sir quod he gladly.

Than

Chere as he thus was nothynge abasshed/ ve
herled all the hole matter/ as ye haue herde be
fore. Whan he had doone he departed. Than
the kynge axed of his vncle what was best to
be done. Syr quod he/ the chaunceliour and
I shall take avyse agaynst to morowe. Well
good the kynge/ so be it. Than the duke and
the chaunceliour counsayled togyther on this
matter. They sawe well the kynge greatly en
clyned to this Roberts wordes/ therfore they
thought it good to avyse the kynge to ioyne
this Robert in cõmyssion with them to go a
gayne to Walyngham to the treatyse of peace/
for they thought his langage so fayre and so
swete/ that he shulde dyspose the hartes of them
that shulde here hym speke/ to haue peace/ and
to shewe the dispocyson that he had/ to the
lordes of Englande. This they thought law
full ynough to be done/ and the nexte day they
shewed this to the king. And than after whan
the duke and the chaunceliour wente agayne
to Walyngham/ they had this Roberte with
them. And whan all the lordes frenche and en
glysshe were assembled togyder in counsayle/
than this Robert came before them/ and there
well and wisely he declared all the dyscon that
he hadde on the see/ and affermed that it was
the dyspocyson dispone sente by god/ bycause he
wolde it shulde be so. Some of the lordes of
Englande toke good hede to this mater and
enclyned therto/ as the duke of Lancastre/ the
erle of Salysbury/ the lorde Thomas Percy
and other/ the bysshops of Lyncolne and Lon
don/ but the duke of Glouceistre and the erle of
Arundell/ toke no hede nor set nothynge ther
by. Whan they were in their lodgynges they
sayd/ they were but fantasies/ and wordes fay
ned by the frenchmen to abuse them all/ howe
be it they determyned to write to kynge Ry
charde the maner and sayenge of this Robert
the Hermyte/ and therupon sent a knyght cal
led Rycharde Trebon to kynge Rycharde/
who he founde in Kent/ at the castell of Les
des/ and delyuered him letters sent fro his am
bassadours in the marches of Calays/ wher
in was conteyned the hole sayenge of this Ro
bert. The kynge tooke great pleasure in these
letters/ and sayd howe he wolde gladly speke
with this Robert the hermyte/ he beleued this
dyscon to be of trouthe. Than the kyng wrote
agayne to the duke of Lancastre and to the
erle of Salysbury/ that if it myght be by any
meanes/ that a good peace myght be taken by
twene hym and the frenche kynge/ their realmes
and ayes/ for he sayde surely he thought
that the warre had ouer longe endured/ and
that it was tyme to haue peace. And ye haue
herd here before howe the treuces bare them/
and howe the lordes departed one fro another/
and howe the treuce was taken to endure for
foure yere. Thus was the entent of the lordes
of the englysshe party/ except the duke of Glou
ceistre/ for he thought whan he euer herame in
to Englande/ neuer to agree to any peace bye
twene Fraunce and Englande. He dyssimu
led as moche as he might/ to the entent to please
the king and his mother of Lancastre. Thus
by this meanes Roberte le Hermyte came to
knowledge.

AND as ye haue herde here before/ how
the erle of Rutlande/ therle Marshall/
the archebysshop of Dunelyn/ the lorde Hugh
Spencer/ the lorde Lewes Clyfforde and o
thers had ben sent into Fraunce to treate for
kynge Rychardes marryage/ and were retour
ned agayne into Englande/ and brought the
kynge good tydynges also that the kynge was
well pleased/ as ye haue herde before. Than
Mychelmas came/ and the generall counsayls
began/ suche as englysshe men call the termes
wherin all maters be debated/ and at the be
gynnynge of the sayd termes the duke of Lan
castre returned out of Gascon in to Englande
and had nat ben tarryed there/ as he thought
he shulde haue ben (as ye haue herde before)
So whan the duke of Lancastre was retourne
ned/ the kyng made hym good chere. Tydin
ges anone came in to Fraunce howe the duke
of Lancastre was returned in to Englande.
than the frenche kynge and his counsayle de
termyned to sende Robert the Hermyte in to
Englande with letters to the kynge/ who de
syred to se hym/ and that the erle of Sayne Poll
shulde accompanye hym with the kyng and with
the lordes/ that they myght here hym speake
of the busynesse of Surrey and Tartary/ and
of the greate Turke and Turkey/ where he
had ben longe/ for it was thought that the lor
des of Englande wolde gladly here speakyng
of suche maters. Than this Robert the Her
myte was maned to make hym redy to go in
to Englande in cõmyssion/ wherof he greatly
reioysed/ bycause he had neuer ben there be

foie. And he had letters delyuered hym / dyrected to the kyng of Englande and to his vncles. This Robert departed fro Parys with seuen hozses at the cost and charge of the frenche kynge / and rode tyll he came to Boloyne / and there toke the see and arryued at Douer / and rode so in his iourneys that he came to Eltham and founde the kynge there / and the Duke of Lancastre / the erles of Salysbury / and Huntyngdon / the lozde Thomas Percy / and for the honour of the frenche kynge he was well receyued / and specially of the kynge who dyd greatly cherisshym. Than he delyuered his letters of credence / whiche were rede out by the kynge and the other lozdes. The duke of Glouceftre was not they he was in Glocestre at a Castell of his called Plasshey. Whan this Robert had been with the kynge and with the duke of Lancastre at Eltham a spas vnder he departed thens to go se the duke of Glouceftre / and so toke leaue of the kynge and of the lozdes and came to London / and the nexte day rode syftene myle fro London to a towne called Berndwode / and the nexte day to Plasshey / and there he founde the duke and the Duchesse / and their children / who right goodly receyued hym accozdyng to his degree. Than Robert delyuered hym his letters sent fro the frenche kyng. And whan the duke sawe they were of credence / he drewe this Robert a parte / and demaunded what credence he had. Robert answered hym and sayd / syr I shall shewe they mto you at good leyser / I am nat come to departe agayne so soone. Well quod the duke ye be welcome. This Robert knewe well ynough that the duke of Glouceftre was a soze dyspleasynge prince / and contrary to any peace / and thought it harde to breke hym fro his opynyon / for he knewe well he was alwayes contrary to the peace / whiche was well sene at the treaties at Balyngham / for he neuer demaunded but to haue warre. yet for all that Robert the Hermyte spared nat to speke to the duke on the forme of peace. Alwayes he founde the duke colde in answere / and sayd the matter lay nat in hym / for he had two elder brethren / the duke of Lancastre and the duke of yorke / to whome the matter partayned rather than to hym / and also that if he wolde consent thereto alone / peraduenture the other lozdes / prelates / and counsaylours of good towns / wolde nat accepte it. Well quod Robert the Hermyte / for the loue of our lozde Ihesu Christ be ye nat contrary to the peace / for ye may do moche / and also yese well howe the kyng your nephue enclyneth to the peace / and wyll by mariage haue the frenche kynges doughter / by whiche conjunction shalbe grete alyaunce of peace and loue. Than the duke answered and sayd. What though ye be beleued and herde at this tyme / with the kynges and lozdes of bothe realmes / and that ye haue good audyence with them and with their counsaylours / the matter is so hygh and weyghty / that it is conuenyent that greater personages than ye / shulde medle therwith / I haue told you / and often tymes I haue said that I shall neuer be contrary to the peace / so it be to the honoure of the kynge and the Realme of Englande. In tyme paste peace was taken bytwene the kyng our father and our brother the prince of Wales / and kynge Iohan of Fraūce / and the frenche party swozne and bounde vpon payne of sentence of the pope / and yet it holde nat / for the frenchmen fraudulently haue broken all couenaunces / & haue taken agayne possessyon of all the landes and lozdeshyppes that were yelded & delyuered at the peace making / to our sayd soueraygne lozde and father / and to our predecessours / and moreouer of the some of .xix. thousande frankes / that the redemcyon mounted vnto / there is yet to paye syxe hundred thousande frankes. wherfore such maters (to remembre) troubleth sore our courages / and we and many of this realme marueyle greatly howe the kynge our soueraygne lozde / leaneth to so yonge aduyse & counsayle / and regardeth none otherwyse the tyme passed / and the tyme present / but enclineth to alye hym by mariage with his aduersary / and by that alyaunce dysherite the Crowne of Englande / & his successours to come / of ꝑ clayme of Fraunce. Ryght dere lozde quod Robert our lozde Ihesu Christ suffered passyon on the Crosse for vs all synners / and pardoned his bethe to them that crucyfied him: in lyke wyse a man must pardon that wyll come to the glozy of heuen / and for all quell wylles / hates / and rancours were pardoned / the daye that the peace was made and sealed at Calays by our predecessours / and nowe warres haue been againe renewed bytwene your men and ours / I thynke surely through faulte on bothe parties / for when the prince of Wales duke of

Aquy-

Aquytayne was retourned out of Spayne in to Aquytayne/ there were a certayne maynes of people callyng themselfe companyons/ whyche the moste parte were englysshe men and gascons/ holdynge of the kynge of Englande and of the prince of Wales. These people assembled them togyther and entred in to the realme of Fraunce/ without any cyuyll of reason/ wherby ensued mortall & cruell warre greater than was before. These companyons called the realme of Fraunce their chambre/ they were so set to do euell deedes/ þ they coude nat be satysfyed. And whan þ realme of Fraūce sawe and felte them so harmed by this people/ and sawe well the lenger they contynued the more they multyplyed & more harme they dyd. than kyng Charles of Fraūce/ sonne to kyng Johan/ was counsayled by his subgiettes to resyst & subdue suche enemyes/ outher by warre or otherwyse/ and many great barons of Gascoyne came to the frenche kyng/ suche as sayd they were sore ouerlayde with their lorde the prince of Wales/ & many iniuryes done to thē/ whiche they shewed to the frenche kynge they might nat nor wolde nat suffre no lenger/ and so they begaune the warre bycause of their resorte to the prince of Wales. Than this kynge Charles by counsayle of them and of his subgiettes/ enbarded himselfe to the warre with these barones of Gascoyn/ for to mete against these companyons. And in this newe warre many lordes retourned to the frenche kynge/ and dyuers fortelleppes/ cytees/ townes/ and castels/ for the great oppression that the prince of Wales dyd to thē/ and consented to be done by his cōmissioners. Thus the warre was renewed/ wherby many great myschyefes haue fallen/ to the destruction of moche people and countreys/ and the fayth of Christ sore febled and decayed/ & the enemyes of god rysen and corraged/ and haue all redy conquered moche parte of Grece. the emperour of Constantynople/ hath nat the power to resyst the puyssaūce of the great turke/ called Bassanc Lamyssabaquyn/ who hathe conquered the realme of Armony/ except all onely a towne standynge on the see syde/ called Tourche/ whiche the Cypryans and genoueys kepe against þ turke/ and the emperour of Constantyne the noble/ who is of your blode/ he was sonne to the emperour Hugues of Lusignen and of my lady Mary of Burbon/ cosyn germayne to my lady the quene your mother/ he shall nat be able of longe to resyst the puyssaūce of this great turke. and if peace maye be had betwene Englande and Fraunce/ as I trust by the grace of god it shall be/ than kyng otes & cupers suche as be maunde for deedes of armes for their auauncement/ shall drawe them to that parte/ and shall helpe kynge Lyon of Armony to recouure agayne his heritage/ and to put out the turkes. for surely the warre hath ouerlonge endured betwene Fraunce and Englande/ and surely who so euer it be that is or wyll be against the peace shall derely auenswere therto/ outher quycke or deed. Howe know we you that quod the duke of Glouceſtre/ Syr quod Robert/ all that I say cometh by reuelacyon/ and by a vysyone that came to me vpon the see/ as I retourned fro Datuch a poste in Surrey/ beside the ille of Rodes. Than he declared all his hole vysyon/ the rather therby to moue the dukes herte to pyte and reason/ but this duke was herde herted against the peace and kept styll his opynyon/ and by his wordes condempned and dispysed greatly the frenche men/ for all þ euer Robert the Hermyte coude say. but bycause that this Robert was a straūger/ and shewed by his wordes and werkes that he wolde all were well/ and also bycause the duke sawe that the kyng his nephue enclyned to haue peace/ he dyssymuled and spake fayre/ what so euer his herte thought. Two dayes this Robert taryed at playsshey with the duke and had good chere/ and the thyrde day departed and retourned to London/ and fro thence to Wyndesore/ where the kynge made hym good chere for loue that the frenche kyng had sent him thyder/ and bycause he was wyse and eloquēt/ and of swete wordes and honest. It is nat to be doubted/ but that the kynge demaūded of hym howe he founde his vncle the duke of Glouceſtre. And Robert answered him well to the poynte. The kyng knewe well his vncle of Glouceſtre enclyned rather to warre than to peace/ wherfore he fauoured moche better his other two vncles dukes of Lancaſtre and yorke. whan Robert the hermyte had ben a moneth with the kyng he toke his leaue/ and at his departynge the kynge gaue hym great gyftes/ and so dyd the dukes of Lancaſtre and yorke/ and the erles of Huntyngdon and Salysbury/ and the lorde Thomas Percy. The kynge caused hym to be conueyed to

Douer/ and there passed ouer into Fraunce/ and he founde the frenche kyng and the quene and his vncles at Paris/and there shewed the kynge all his voyage/and what good chere he had in Englande. Thus dayly messangers went in & out betwene these two kynges/ and amyable letters sent betwene them. the kynge of Englande desyred nothyng so moche as to come to this mariage/ and semblably the frenche kynge had lyke desyre/ for he thought his doughter shulde be a great estate if she myghte be quene of Englande.

¶Of the delyueraunce of the lorde de la Ryuer and of syr Johan le Mercyer/and how we they were put out of prisone. Cap. CC.v.

We haue herde here before howe ꝑ lorde de la Ryuer and sir Johan le Mercyer/ were in ieoperdy of their lyues / and remoued fro prison to prison/ & at laste delyuered to the prouost of the Chatelet of Paris/ and were at the poynte to lose their lyues and all for hate & enuye that the dukes of Berry and Burgoyne and their counsayle had to them. They were in this daunger moze than two yere. The kyng recouered thē/ for alwayes he stopped the execution/and that the dukes of Berry & Burgoyne sawe well/ and also they perceyued that the duke of Orleaunce ayded them as moche as he might/also the duches of Berry was a good meane for them/ and specially for ꝑ lorde de la Ryuer/ and also the one coulde nat be condempned without the other/ for they were accused all for one cause. The prayers of good folkes and their ryght together ayded them. Than it was regarded by many of the high barones of Fraūce who had pytie on them/ and sayd they had suffred prisonement ouerlonge/ and that it was tyme to shewe them grace/for this Johan le Mercyer had so moche kept in prison/ ꝑ his ryght was sore decayed/so that he coude scantly the brute ranne through the realme that he was blynde. Than at laste they had sentence gyuen them of grace by the kynge / and there the lorde de la Ryuer was restored agayne to all his landes and castels/ as ꝑ fayre castell of Anion/but he was charged on payne of his lyfe that whan he was ones in his castell of Andowe/ that he shulde neuer after repasse the ryuer of Mayne without he were comaunded by the kynges owne mouthe. And syr Johan le Mercyer to returne to Paris le Monyon/in to his fayre house en Lannoys/ and he nat to repasse the ryuer of Oyse/of Marne/nor of Seyne/ without he were in lyke wyse called by the kynges owne mouth. Thus they bounde themselfe to take this punishment/ and thought they had a great grace to scape so well/ & were tyght ioyous whan they were deliuered fro the Chatelet. They trusted whan they came out of prison/to haue spoken with ꝑ kynge/and to haue thanked hym of his grace/but they coulde nat be suffred/but were comaunded to auoyde out of Paris and to resorte thyder as they were comanded. Thus they were delyuered/ whet of their frendes had great ioy.

¶Of the peace that was hadde betwene the duke of Bretayne and sir Olyuer Clysson. Cap. CC.vi.

We haue herde howe the duke of Bretayne and syr Olyuer of Clysson wared longe togyther mortally/ for betwene them they toke none to mercy/and surely syr Olyuer of Clysson and his partie bare themselfe valyantly/that of thre he had twayne/ for the lordes of Bretaygne byssmuled with the duke/and men of the cyties and good townes sayde/howe they must nedes ryue and lese their marchaundyse/what so euer warre was betwene the duke and syr Olyuer of Clysson/ for they sayd it touched them nothinge/ wherefore they wolde nat entermedle betwene them but euer the Vycount of Rohan/ the lorde de Leon/ and the lorde of Dignan/ treated for a peace to be had betwene them. So moche they purseued that the duke promysed to be entreated/ so that he myght se syr Olyuer in his presence/and speke with him. and therupon these lordes on a day rode to a fortresse of syr Olyuers to speke with hym/and there they shewed him for what cause they were come thyder/and howe they had got grace of the duke to sende to him a saferenduct/ safely to go and come to speke with hym/ saying ꝑ surely they thought

if he

If he were ones in his presence/ all the yuell will and displeasures shulde be clerely pardoned. Than sir Oliuer sayd. Sirs/ ye are all my frendes and louers/ and I trust great hye in you/ and beleue that the duke hath promysed as you sayn/ and I thynke he wolde gladly se me in his presence. But so god helpe me and saynt yues/ vpon his worde and promise I enture you/ I will nat ones issue out of my house. But I shall tell you what ye shall saye to hym/ that if he will haue me to come to hym/ let hym sende hyder in pledge his eldest sonne/ and whan he is here/ than I will go and speke with hym/ and suche ende as I shall make his sonne shall make. yf I retourne he shall do in lykewise/ and if I abyde he shall abide. Whan these lordes sawe they coude haue none other ende/ they tooke their leaue and retourned to Vannes where the duke was/ and shewed euery thynge as they had herde. The duke coude haue none other waye. This sir Oliuer bare hym selfe so valyauntly in this warre/ that he wanne moze than he lost. He tooke two tymes all the dukes vessell and plate of golde and syluer/ and tyuers other rewelles/ wherof he hadde great profyte.

The conclusyon of the warre and hate betwene the duke of Bretayne and sir Oliuer Clysson/ was thus. The duke of Bretayne (lyke a great lorde as he was) sawe well he coude nat come to his entent of sir Oliuer of Clysson/ and that he had ouer many frendes in Bretayne/ for sauyng their alegiance to ye duchy of Bretayne. All the barons/ knyghtes/ squyers/ prelates/ and men of the good Cytes and good townes/ enclyned moze to the lorde Clysson than to the duke. And the highe barons dissymuled/ and had answered the duke/ that they wolde nat entremedle them with that warre/ but sayde they wolde gladly sette a peace and accorde betwene the. Also the duke of Duraunce specially conforted comenly in many maner of wayes sir Oliuer of Clysson/ and he was alwayes toward hus whan he herde of his good spede in any of his enterprises. The duke of Bretayne who was a subtyle prince and ymaginatyf and had endured moche payne during this warre/ and sawe well he was nat beep well beloued with his owne people/ as the chyldren of the lorde Charles of Bretayne were/ the one called Charles of Bloyes/ who was slayne at the battayle of Auroy/ and Johan of Bretayne erle of Ponthieur and of Lymoges/ who had to wyfe the doughter of sir Oliuer of Clysson/ and the lorde Henry of Bretayne his brother/ and they suffer the queue of Naples and of Hierusalem. Also the duke sawe that he began to wexe olde/ and that his chyldren were but ponge/ and purposed well he had no frendes in Fraunce/ except the duke of Burgoyne and the duches his wyfe. And he sawe well his chyldren shulde haue as fewe for by their mothers syde/ they came and were yssued of the membres and braunches of Nauer/ whiche generacion was nat ouermoche loued in Fraunce/ for the great myscheues ye kynge Charles of Nauerre father to the duchesse of Bretayne had done/ in tyme past in Fraunce/ wherof the remembraunce as than endured. And the duke sawe that if he dyed in that estate/ borne with sir Oliuer of Clysson and with the erle of Ponthieur/ he thanbouted that his chyldren that were so ponge shulde haue ouer many great enemyes. and also he sawe that the alyaunce betwene hym and Englande began to wexe colde/ for he was enformed that the kynge of Englande shulde haue to wyfe the doughter of Fraunce the same lady that was promysed to hym for his sonne and heyre. The duke dyde cast all these doutes. Thane all thynges conspered/ he ymagined to byche his harte without dissymulacion/ and make a ferme peace with sir Oliuer of Clysson and with Johan of Bretayne: And wolde putte hym selfe at their pleasure/ to make amendes for all wrathes/ forfayres/ and domages/ that euer they dyde to hym or to his men/ during the warre. He wolde desyre nothynge but that they shulde take hym for duke of Bretayne/ and his chyldren after hym/ accordyng to the artycles of the peace before made/ betwene hym and the chyldren of sir Charles of Bloyes/ whiche chartres of peace he wolde nat breke nor any artycle compryzed therin. And also to kepe and vpholde euery thyng that he had promysed to Johan of Bloyes his cosyn/ erle of Ponthieur. And if he hadde nat his parte of the herytage of Bretayne sufficient/ he wolde putte the ordryng therof without any dissymulacion to the vicount of Rohan/ and to

the lor

and that he was in sute in the pyament/ and knewe nat howe his busynesse shulde passe/ onther with hym or agaynst hym/ for the ladyes partie was strong/ and had good profe of whom he had receyued the money/ in the dayes of kyng Loyes her husbande. All these thynges cõsydred/ he ymagyned yt it was nat easy for him to beare. and also he knewe well he was in hate with the frenche kyng & with the duke of Orlyaunce/ but the duke and duchesse of Burgoyne cõforted and ayded hym almoche as they myght. He gate suche grace that he was at Paris secretly in the house of Arthoys with the duches of Burgoyne.

¶ Nowe we shall leaue to speke of hym at this tyme.

¶ Howe the kyng of Hungery wrote to the frenche kynge the state of the great turke/ and howe Johñ of Burgoyne eldest sonne to the duke of Burgoyne was chefe and heed of the army that went thider. Cap. C.C. vi.

In this sayd season/ hys ẽbassadours kyng of Hungry sent lyuely and amyable letters to ye frenche kyng/ by a notable ambassade a bysshop and dyu. knightes of Hungry. In the same letters was cõteyned a great parte of ye state and doyng of the great turke/ and how that he had sent worde to the kynge of Hungry/ ye he wolde come and fight with hym in ye myddes of his realme/ and wolde go fro thens to the cytie of Rome/ and wolde make his hosse to eate otes vpon the high autee of sayn̄t Peter/ and there to holde his set imperyall/ and wolde bringe the emperour of Constantyne the noble in his cõpany/ and all the great barons of the realme of Grece/ and eche of the to kepe styll their owne lawe/ for he desyred nothynge but the rytell and signorie. Thus the kyng of Hungry in his letters/ prayed the frenche kyng to entende to hyde and socour hym/ and that this businesse in fayre countes might be publisshed abrode/ to thentent that all knightes and squyers myght prouyde to come vnto Hungry/ to resyst agaynst Lamorabaquy the great turke/ to thentent ye Christendome shulde nat be violated by him/ and that his pryde and bost myght be abated. In these letters were contepgned many wordes of great loue/ as kynges & cosyns write eche to other in case of necessyte. And they were sente by sufficient personages/ who dyde so moche/ that the frenche kynge enclyned her hert thertо/ and was the glader to sette forwarde the treatie of ymarriage of his doughter/ to the kynge of Englande. Than anoon these newes of Hungry were publysshed abrode/ and wente in to many countrees/ to moue the hertes of gentylmen/ knyghtes and squiers/ suche as wolde auaunce them to get honour. The same season that these newes were brought to the kyng/ there was at Parys the duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse/ and Johan of Burgoyne their sonne/ heyre erle of Neuers/ who as than was an knyght and the lorde Gupe of Tremoyle & the lorde Wyllyam his brother/ and many lordes and other of the realme of Fraunce. Than the duke of Burgoyne enclyned for to this viage/ and specially that his sone shulde enterprise the sayd voyage/ so he myght be chefe heed & leader of the armye/ that shulde go in that viage. This Johan of Burgoyne was but a yonge man/ of the age of xxii. yeres/ wyse/ cutteles/ tretable/ humble/ and debonayre of knyghtes and squyers of Burgoyne/ and of other nacyons/ suche as knewe hym. He had to wyfe the doughter of duke Lubert of Bauyer/ erle of Heynalte/ Hollande/ and Zelande/ a good lady/ wyse and vertuous: and had two chyldren full yerely to come to great marryages. Ones she wed this Johan of Burgoyne howe the frenche kyng wolde sende hym in this voyage in to Hungery/ to se what he wolde saye. Than he sayd/ if it pleace the kynge and the duke my father to sende me as chefe of this armye/ it shall please me ryght well/ for I haue great desyre to auaunce my selfe. well sir quod they/ ye were best to speke with the duke youre father that he maye speke to the kynge/ for without his good wyll ye can do nothynge.

It was nat long after but that this Johan of Burgoyne spake to his father/ prayeng hym humbly to consent yt he myght go in

go in this voyage tyl to Hungry / and at the ſame tyme there was by hym ſir Guye and ſir Wyllyam of Tremoyle / and other / & they ſaid to the duke. Sir / this requeſt that your ſonne maketh is but reſonable / for it is tyme he take the order of knighthode / and more no bly he can nat take it / than in goyng the tour ney agaynſt the enemyes of holy Churche. And if the kynge wyll ſende any perſonage in that voyage / he can nat ſende a more hono table man / than his owne coſyn germayne your ſonne: and ye ſhall ſe many knyghtes go with hym / as well for their owne auaun cementes as for your loue. Than the duke ſaid well / ſo be it. I ſhall nat lette the good wyll of my ſonne / I ſhall ſpeke to the kyng ther in / and ſhall ſe what anſwere he wyll make. And anone after the duke / pake to the kynge therin / and the kynge incontynent enclyned therto and ſayd / howe it ſhulde be well done that he went / and we wyll that he ſhall go / and we wyll make hym as chefe of that tour ney. Than ỳ tidyngs was ſhewed throughe all Parys and without / that Johan of Bur goyne with a great company of knyghtes / ſhulde go in to Hungry to ſe the pupliaunce of the great Turke. and that tourney atchy ued / thanne the Chriſten men to go to Con ſtatyne the noble / and to paſſe ouer the arme of ſaynt George / and ſo to entre in to Sur rey / and to delyuer Hieruſalem out of the pa nyms handes. Than awaked ſuche knygh tes and ſquyers as delyred aduauncement. Whan the duke of Burgoyne ſawe that his ſonne ſhulde go in this voyage / and that he ſhulde be chefe of the army / he honored than the more the ambaſſadours of Hungry / who whan they ſawe the kynges good wyll / the dukes & the Frenchmens / they were gladde / and toke their leaue of the kynge and of the other lordes of Fraunce / and ſo retourned to their countrey / and made relacyon to ỳ kyng of Hungry howe they had ſpedde / wherwith the kynge was greatly reioyſed / and made great prouiſyon agaynſt the cõmynge of the Frenche men / and ſent theſe ambaſſadours to his brother the kyng of Almaigne to open his paſſages / and alſo to his coſyn the duke of Auſtriche / for throughe the ſtraytes of Au ſtryche he muſte nedes paſſe: And by all the wayes he cauſed great prouiſyon of vitayle to be ordayned. And alſo he wrote letters to the great maiſter of Pruce / and to the Rho des. Certifyeng them of the cõmyng of Jo han of Burgoyne / with a thouſande knygh tes and ſquiers of valyant men / to the entent to entre in to Turkey / and to reſyſt the great boſt of kyng Baſant / called the great turke.

IN this ſeaſon the lorde Coucy was come to Parys / and was but new lye retourned fro a voyage / where he hadde ben a hole yere / whiche was on the fronters of Gênes. And there were certayne great men genowayes / that had enformed ỳ duke of Orlyaunce / that the hoole Duchy of Geane / delyred to haue to their chefe lorde ſome noble perſone / diſcended of the lynage of the flour delyce. And for as moche as the duke of Orlyaunce had wedded the dough ter of the lorde of Myllayne / and that the lande and duchy of Geane ſhulde be tyght mete for hym / at the duke of Orlyaunce in ſtaunce / the lorde of Coucy with thre hundred ſpeares and fyue hundred crof bowes / paſſed ouer in to Sauoye and to Pyemont / by the accorde and conſent of the erle of Sauoye / and came in to Aſte in Pyemont by the con ſent of the lorde of Myllayne / and came to a cytie called Alexandria / and ſo came to the fronters & marcheſſe of the genowayes / and there fell in treatie with them to know more playnly their entẽcyons / for pforce he coulde do nothyng / without he had had greatter pu iſſaunce than he had. And whan the lorde of Coucy came firſt vpon the fronters of the ry uer of Geane / where the entrees are ſtronge to conquere: if there be made any defence. Some lordes of the genowayes ſuche as fa uoured the lorde Coucy / and had enformed the duke of Orlyaunce / wherby he ſente thy der the lorde of Coucy. They entreated him amiably and brought hym to their coũtreis / and offred to hym their caſtels. The lorde of Coucy who was ſage / ſubtyle / and ymagina tyfe / and knewe right well the nature of the lombardes and genowayes / wolde nat truſt them ouermoche / nor haue to great confyden ce in their offers and promyſes / but alwa yes wyſely he helde them in loue and ampte / as longe as he was amonge them / and ledde them forthe with fayre wordes and treaties. They had many cõmunycacyons in the felde togyder / but neuer in no forteſſe / and euer

the more

the moze he commaūded with theym/ the lesse he conquered oz gate. the genouoys made to him sygne of loue and promysed hym many thynges/ and wolde haue had hym to haue gone in to the cytie of Gennes oz to Pozte Uendre/ but the lozde of Coucy durst neuer assure hym in their offers. The conclusyon of his voyage was suche that he gate nothynge/ and whan he sawe that he couldē nat atcheue his busynesse/ he signyfied his estate to the duke of Ozlyance/ wherupon he was remaunded and so he retourned to Parys/ and came thyder the same season that all the busynesse was foz the tourney goynge in to Hungery. The duke of Burgoyne reioysed greatly of his retourne/ and he and the duchesse sente foz hym to their house of Arthoys in sygne of great loue/ than they sayd to him. Syz we trust moche in you/ we haue caused Johan our sonne and heyze to take on hym an enterpzise in ꝯ honour of god and of all chzistendome/ and we knowe well that aboue all othee knyghtes of Fraunce/ ye are the moste bled and expert in all thynges/ wherfoze derely we requyze you that ye wolde be companion with our sonne in this voyage/ and his chyefe counsaylour/ wherof we shall thanke you/ and deserue it to you and yours. Than the lozde of Coucy said/ my lozde & you madame/ your wozdes and requestes ought to be to me a cōmaundement/ in this voyage I shall go if it please god foz two causes. First foz deuocyon to defende the fayth of Jhesu Chzist. Secondly in that ye do to me somoche honour/ as to gyue me charge of my lozde Johan your sonne/ and I shall acquyte me truely to him to my power/ howe be it of this dede ye may well dyscharge me/ and to charge specyally his cosyn and nere kynesman/ my lozde Philyppe of Arthoys erle of Ewe and constable of Fraunce/ and his other cosyn the erle of Marche/ bothe two ought to go with hym in this voyage/ foz they be both nere of his blode. Than the duke sayd. My lozde of Coucy/ ye haue moche moze sene than these other twayn haue/ and knowe better the ozdeynge of an army in straunge countreys/ than outher our cosyn of Ewe oz of Marche/ therfoze we charge you and praye you to execute our requestes. Than he answered and sayd my lozde/ your prayer is to me a cōmaundement/ and I shall do it/ sythe it pleaseth you/ with the ayde and helpe of my lozde Gupe of Tremoyle and of my lozde Guyllyam his brother/ and of the admyzall of Fraunce. Of this answere the duke and duchesse had great ioye.

THese lozdes prepared them selues to go in this tourney in to Hūgery/ and lozdes/ knyghtes/ and squyers were desyzed to go in their company/ and many desyzed themselfe to go. Some were retaygned/ and some went without maysters/ and some consyderynge the voyage in to Hungery/ and fro thence in to Turkey to be ouer longe/ and chargeable foz them/ beynge nat retaygned/ wared colde in their enterpzyse. Foz the settynge fozwarde of this ponge Johan of Burgoyne/ nothynge was spared/ hozse/ harnesse/ fresshe clothes/ riche bessell/ and plate of golde and syluer/ and officers apoynted to do their atendaūce/ and money delyuered and werkemen payed. Than all barones/ knyghtes/ and squiers/ foz the honour of Johā of Burgoyne and also foz the auaūcement of their bodies/ enfozced them to make them redy. The lozde Philyppe of Arthoys ozdeyned hym so puyssauntly that nothynge was spared/ and wolde go in that voyage as Constable of Fraunce. And the frenche kynge who loued him entierlye/ helped hym moche towarde his charges/ and so he dyd to the lozde Boucy quant marshall of Fraunce. The duke of Burgoyne consydered that this voyage of his sonnes shulde coste ouermoche tynaunce/ and he thought it conuenyent that the state of his sonne shulde be mayntayned/ and to synde syluer to mayntayne it withall/ he foūde out subtelly a backe tayle/ foz by a fozmer tayle all the countreys/ cyties/ and foztresses had ben tayled. And the said backe tayle mounted in Burgoyne of the chyualry/ syxe hundzed thousande crownes of golde. And agayne/ the duke made it to be tolde to all knyghtes and ladyes that helde of him in fee/ ponge and olde/ that they shulde go in to Hungery in their owne pzopze persones with his sonne/ oz els to paye a tare of syluer. so they were tared some at a thousande poūde the other at syue hundzed frankes/ & eche man after his goodes and valure of his landes. Ladyes and auncyent knyghtes remembzinge the trauayle of their bodyes/ and were nat shapen noz made to endure suche payne/ compoūded and payed at the will of the Duke. The ponge knyghtes and squyers were foz boxne

payeng

payeng of any money. but it was ſaid to them that they ſhulde go with the lorde Johan/ at their owne coſte and charge/ and otherwyſe nat. Of this backe tayle the duke reyſed. lx. thoulande crownes/ and ſo none was forborne.

The tydynges of this voyage ſpredde abrode/ and whan it came in to the countrey of Haynalt/ knyghtes and ſquyers/ ſuche as deſyred auaunce ment ſpake togyther and ſayde. If this were a mete voyage for my lorde of Oſtrenant/ who is ponge and for his brother the erle of Neuers/ and if any of them wente we myght well go in their company. The erle of Oſtrenant beynge at that tyme at Quelnoy/ vnderſtode what the knyghtes and ſquyers of his countrey ſayde/ and he thought no leſſe thā they dyd/ and had great affectyon to go in this voyage. If whan he herde any ſpekyng of that mater/ he wolde anſwere but lytell/ but dyſſymuled the mater/ but he was in good entencyon to ſpeke with duke Aubert of Bauyer erle of Haynalt/ and to do as he wolde counſayle hym. Within a whyle after the Erle of Oſtrenant came in to Hay in Holande/ where his father was with the ducheſſe his wyfe. Than he ſayd to his father. my lorde/ ſuche tydinges ryſeth abrode that my fayre brother of Neuers hathe enterpryſed this ſomer to go into Hungery/ and fro thens in to Turkey/ where by all lykelyhode great dedes of armes ſhall be atchyued. and fyr/ as at this tyme I wotte nat where better to employe myſelfe in any dede of armes/ wher in I wolde gladly knowe youre pleaſure. I wolde go in that honourable voyage with a hundred knyghtes/ and beare company with my fayre brother/ the duke of Burgoyne and my lady the duches ſhall can me gret thanke/ and many knyghtes and ſquyers of Haynalt wyll gladly holde me company. Than duke Aubert/ as a man redy purueyed of anſwere ſayd. Guylliam/ what haſte or wyll haue you to go in this voyage in to Hungery and in to Turkey/ to ſeke armes vpon people and countrey that neuer dyd vs any forfayte/ thou haſt no tytell of reaſon to go/ but for the vayneglory of the worlde. Lette Johan of Burgoyne and our coſins of Fraunce do their enterpryſe/ and do thy dedes aparte/ & go thou in to Freſe and conquere our herytage that theſe freſones by pryde and rudenes do withholde fro vs/ and wyll come to none obeyſaunce/ and to do this I ſhall ayde the. The wordes of the father to the ſonne lyghtened greatly the herte of therle of Oſtrenant/ who anſwered and ſayd. My lorde ye ſaye well/ and if it pleaſe you that I ſhall do that voyage/ I ſhall do it with ryghte a good wyll.

Chowe the erle of Oſtrenant enterpryſed to go in to Freſe. Cap. CC. vii.

These wordes bytwene the father & the ſonne multyplyed ſo moche lytell and lytell/ that the voyage in to Freſe was taken and enterpryſed/ and one thynge helped moche the matter forwarde/ and that was. The erle of Oſtrenant had at that tyme aboute hym and nere of his counſayle a ſquyer of Haynalte/ called Ferebraſe/ otherwiſe called the baſtarde Vertayne a wyſe man and a ſubtyll in feates of armes/ ſo that whan he herde of this he ſaid to the erle. Syr my lorde your father ſpeketh well/ it is better for your honour that ye make this voyage rather than in to Hungery/ and ordayne you therto/ and ye ſhall fynde knyghtes and ſquyers of Haynalt and elſwhere that wyll be gladde to kepe you company/ and ſhall ayde you to their powers to do this enterpryſe. and if ye haue mynde thus to do/ I wyll counſayle you to go in to Englāde/ and to ſignyfy your enterpryſe to the knyghtes and ſquyers there/ and pray the kynge of Englande your coſyn/ that he wyll gyue lycence to knyghtes/ ſquyers/ and archers to go with you in to Freſe/ at your wages/ engliſſhe men be men of dedes/ and if ye haue them ye ſhall do your buſineſſe the better. And if ye may haue by prayer your coſyn therle of Derby in your company/ your voyage ſhall be moche the fayrer/ and your enterpryſe the more renomed. The erle enclyned to theſe wordes/ for it ſemed to hym that his counſayle was good. In lyke wyſe the lorde Gomegynes gaue hym counſayle/ and ſo dyd dyuers other. Theſe wordes anone ſpredde a

hode in Haynalte. Than there was acom-
maundement made to all knyghtes and squ-
ers in Heynalt/ that none of theym shulde go
out of the coūtrey/ to go in to Hungery nor in
to no place els/ bycause the erle of Ostrenant
shulde occupy them a nother waye/ and shulde
leade them in to Frese. We shall leaue spea-
kynge of this busynesse/ and retourne to the
voyage in to Hungery.

THus knyghtes and squiers in many
parties had cause to awake/ and to
take corage/ for ye warres that were
towarde in that season as well for the voyage
in to Hungery as in to Frese. The erle of Ne
uers auaunced his iourney/ and all knyghtes
and Squyers were named and written that
shulde go with him prouision was great and
well ordeyned/ and for that he wolde be reno-
med in this voyage he was lyberall and mad
great larges to many knyghtes and squyers
that shulde go in his bande/ for the voyage
was longe and costly/ wherfore it was nede-
full for them to haue some ayde towardes their
charges/ and the other lordes as the constable
of Fraūce/ and the erles of Ewe and Marche/
the lordes Henry and Phylippe of Bare/ the
lorde of Coucy/ the lorde Guy of Tremoyle/
the lorde Johan Vyen admyrall of Fraunce/
Boucyquant marshall of Fraunce/ and Ray-
nolde du Roy/ the lordes of sayntPowle/ of
Mutterell/ and of sayntPye/ the Hasell of
Flaunders/ the lorde Loys of Bursse his bro-
ther/ le Bourge of Montquell and other/ they
were to the nombre of a thousande knyghtes
and a thousande squyers/ & all baiyaunt men.
Euery man departed fro their owne houses a
bout the myddes of marche/ and so rode forth
by companyes/ and alwayes they founde the
wayes open/ for the kynge of Almayne had
cōmaūded through all his realme of Almayne
and Boesme/ that they shulde haue all thyn-
ges necessary/ and that no byteyle shulde be
witholden fro them. These lordes of Fraūce
thus rode forwarde/ to the ayde of the kyng of
Hungery/ who shulde haue bataylle with the
great turke/ puyssaunce agaynst puyssaunce/
the twenty day of the moneth of May. These
lordes passed Lozayne: the countie of Bare/
the countie of Mountbelgart/ and the duchy
of Burgoyn/ and entred into Aulay/ and pas-
sed the coūtrey and the ryuer of Ryne in many
places/ and the countie of Fierte/ and so entre-
red in to Justriche/ whiche is a great coūtrey
and the cuires and issues stronge/ and great
deserres. but they went with so good wyll and
corage/ that payne and trauayle greued them
nothyng. The duke of Justriche made capp-
taynes in his countrey/ suche as made the lor-
des good chere/ and specyally to Johñ of Bur
goyne/ who was chiefe of that army. All these
lordes were appoynted to assemble in a cytie in
Hungery called Bode. Now let vs speke
of other maters.

I Haue herde here before/ howe the
kynge of Englande had sente in the
same season sufficient ambassade to
the frenche kyng and to his counsayle to haue
to his wyfe Isabell the doughter of Fraunce/
whiche ambassadours were/ the archebyshop
of Duuelyn/ the byshoppe of Wynchester/ the
erle Marshall/ the erle of Rutlande/ sonne to
the duke of Yorke/ the lorde Henry Clyfford/
the lorde Beamonde/ the lorde Spenser and
many other. the frenche kyng had made them
good chere/ and all his vncles and counsayle/
whiche ambassade were retourned in to En-
glande vpon good hope to atayne to their de-
syres. The kynge of Englande for his parte
all the wynter folowynge/ often tymes sent to
the frenche kynge/ conserynge the sayd ma-
ters/ who was well enclyned to haue peace/
and to haue ende of the warre/ whiche had o-
uer longe endured. These pursutes and trea-
ties toke suche effect/ and the two kynges had
writen so solemply eche to other/ that their ma
ters were nere to apoynte/ so that suche am-
bassadours as were fyrst sent out of England
in to Fraunce/ were than sente agayne and
came to Parys/ and were lodged at the crosse
of Tyronet/ and their men in the strete there
aboute. They were to the nombre of syxe hun
dred. Thus they sojourned at Parys more
than thre weekes.

Of the iudgemēt made in the par
lyament for the quene of Napoles a-
gaynst syr Peter of Craone.

Cap. CC.ix.

The

The same season that the Englysshe men were at Paris/ quene Jane duches of Anjowe/ who wrote her selfe quene of Napoles and of Jherusalem was at Paris and pursued dylygently her busynesse. She was a lady of great corage/ she pleted in parlyament for two causes. The fyrst was for the heryptage of the countie of Roussey agaynst the Erle of Bzayne/ for Loys the duke of Anjou her lorde & husbande had bought it and payed for it/ to a lady that was countesse of Roussey/ somtyme wyfe to the lorde Loys of Namure/ but afterwarde she was denoyded fro hym for a reasonable cause/ as it was sayde. The seconde sute this quene had was agaynst syr Peter of Craon/ the demaunded of hym the some of a hundred thousande frankes/ whiche she was redy to proue that he had receyued it in the name of his lorde and mayster/ Loys kyng of Napoles/ Cysyll/ and Jherusalem her husbande/ which money was delyuered hym to haue payed in to Powell/ and or it was payed he herde howe his sayd mayster my husbande was dede. Than he sourneyed no further/ but returned agayne in to Fraunce/ and kept styll the sayd some of money to his owne profyte/ and neuer made acompte to the sayde quene therof/ nor to her chyldren Loys and Charles/ but spente and wasted the money in pryde and bobbans. The quene sayde to his charge that for faute of payment of the sayd money/ the realme of Napoles was losse and conquered by Margarete of Duras/ and by the heyres of the lorde Charles de la Paix/ by reason that suche soudyours as her husbande had to mayntayne his warres in Puell & Calabre/ were nat payed their wages/ wherby many sourned to the Erle of sayne Seuyre and to Margarete of Duras/ and other departed and lefte the warres. All these causes were put in to the Parlyament chambre at Parys/ where all causes were proposed/ shewed and demaunded/ and all the defences and aunsweres herde on all partyes. Their plee had endured the space of thre yeres. And though syr Peter of Craon were absent fro the parlyament/ yet his aduocates defended his cause/ and sayd though he had receyued the sayd some in the name of his lorde and mayster/ yet his mayster was as moche bounde to him as that some came to and more for the good seruyce that he had done to him. This plee had endured so longe that it was necessary to haue a conclusyon/ and the lady made importunate sewte to haue iudgement. The lordes of the parlyament consydred all thynges/ and sayd they wolde gyue no iudgement/ without both parties were present/ and syr Peter of Craon durste nat well apere in Parys/ bycause of the kynges displeasure/ and the duke of Orleance/ for the offence that he had doone to syr Olyuer of Clysson constable of Fraunce/ and without he were present/ they wolde gyue no sentence definityue/ wherupon the sayd lady pursewed to set hym clere in Fraunce/ and by her meanes he was pardoned/ so that he myght ryde and go where he lyst without any daunger/ except the sute that was betwene her and hym for the sayd some of money. So he was clerely discharged of all other charges/ and lordes & ladyes made hym good chere/ I wote nat whether it were by dyssymulacyon or otherwyse. thus he was agayne at Parys/ holdynge as great estate as euer he dyd. The same tyme he was apoynted to be one of them to receyue and bringe the englysshe ambassadours to the kynge/ for he was a knyght that hadde sene moche/ and knewe moche honoure. Than the daye was prefyxed that the iudgement concernynge the quenes maters shulde be determyned/ at whiche day there were present in the parlyament/ great nombre of the lordes of Fraunce/ to the entent that the maters shulde be the more autentyke. There was the quene of Cicyll and Jherusalem/ and her sonne Charles prince of Thaurent/ and Johan of Bloys/ called Johan of Bretaygne erle of Penthyeure and of Lymogynes/ and the dukes of Orleaunce/ Berrey/ Burgoyne/ and Burbone/ and the erle of Bzayne/ and the bysshoppe of Laon. And before them the lady was herde to laye her tytell for the countie of Roussey. And on the other parte there was syr Peter of Craon and many of his lygnage. Fynall iudgement was gyuen for the countye of Roussey/ and that was/ the heryptage was remyssed and iudged in to the handes and possessyon of the erle of Bzayne/ and to the heyres that shulde dyscende of the ryght braunche of Roussey/ reseruyng that the quene shulde haue agayne repayed to her all the money that kynge Loys

her husbande hadde payed to the countesse of Roussey lasse dede. Of this iudgement the enherytours of the countye of Roussey/ to whom the heryttage pertayned/ thanked greatly the lordes of the parliament. Than suche as were ordayned to gyue the seconde sentence arose up and sayde/ howe that by the sentence of the parlyament/ sir Peter of Craon ought to pay to the quene of Napoles duchesse of Anjowe the somme of a hundred thousande frankes in redy money/ or els his body to go to prysone tyll she were contented and satysfyed. Of this iudgement the sayde lady thanked the lordes of the parlyament/ and in contynent at the complaynte of the lady/ handes was layde on him by the kynges commaundement/ and so was ledde to the castell of Loure/ and there surely kepte. So the lordes departed fro the parlyament. Thus these two iudgementes were gyuen by the pryncypall occasyon of this lady/ duchesse of Anjou.

Of the conclusyon of the maryage taken at Parys bytwene the kynge of Englande & Isabell eldest doughter to the frenche kynge/ and howe the duke of Lancastre remaryed. Cap. CC.x.

The ambassadours of Englande/ were with the frenche kynge at Parys a xvii. dayes/ and they had as good chere as coulde be deuysed/ and their maters tooke suche effecte/ that it was agreed that the kyng of Englande shuld haue in maryage Isabell the eldest doughter of kynge Charles/ and by vertus of procuracyon/ the erle Marshall spaunced and espoused her in the name of the kinge of Englande/ and so she was called fro thens forthe quene of Englande. And as I was enformed it was a goodly syght to se her behauour/ for all that she was but ponge/ syght pleasantly she bare the porte of a quene. Than all this mater concluded/ the englysshe men tooke their leaue of the frenche kynge and of the quene/ and of their doughter quene of Englande/ and of all other lordes/ and so departed fro Parys and retourned to Calays/ and so in to Englande. The kynge and other of his opynyon were glad of their retourne. But who so euer was gladde of that maryage/ the duke of Glouc̃estre vncle to the kynge made no iope there of/ for he sawe well that by reason of that maryage and alyaunce/ peace shulde be bytwene the kinges and their realmes/ whiche greued hym/ without it shulde be greatly to the honour of the kynge and the realme of Englande/ and that the englysshe men myght be in the same case or better in the parties of Gascoyne/ as they were or the warres renewed agayne. And of this matter he wolde often tymes speke with his brother the duke of yorke and drewe hym as moche as he coulde to his opynions/ for he was but a yonge prince/ but to the Duke of Lancastre his eldest brother he durste nat speke ouer largely/ for he sawe well he was of the kynges opynion/ and was well pleased with the kynges maryage/ principally for the loue of his two doughters/ the quene of Spaygne and the quene of Portugale. The same season the duke of Lancastre remaryed agayne the thyrde tyme/ to a lady doughter to a knyght in Haynalte/ called syr Paon of Ruette/ he had ben in his tyme with noble quene Philipp of Englande/ who was of the nacyon of Haynalt/ she was called Katheryn/ and was brought vp in her youthe in the duke of Lancasters howse/ with the duchesse Blaunce of Lancastre/ And after the dethe of this lady Blaunce/ the duke maryed the lady Custaunce of Spaygne/ and in her dayes the duke kepte to his concubyne this lady Katheryne of Ruet/ who hadde maryed a knyght of Englande/ who was as than dede/ and the duke had by her thre chyldren/ two sonnes and a doughter/ the eldest called Johan/ otherwyse lorde Beaufort of Lancastre/ the duke loued hym entierly/ the other was called Thomas/ the duke brought him vp at Aloque/ he was a good clerke and connynge in bothe lawes/ he was a great tursyst and legyst/ and was after bysshoppe of Lyncolne. The duke of Lancastre for the loue he had to his chyldren/ he wedded their mother the lady Katheryn of Ruet/ wherof there was moche mar-

uayle

wyfe bothe in Englande and in Fraunce/ for she was but of a base lynage/ in regarde to the two other wyues. And whan the knowledge of the mariage of the duke to this lady Katreyne of Kuet was come to the great ladyes of Englande/ as the duchesse of Glouceftre/ the countesse of Derby/ the countesse of Arundell/ and other ladyes dyscended of the blode royall of Englande/ they mernayled moche/ and layd great blame to the duke for that dede/ and sayde/ howe the duke of Lancastre was greatly to dyspraysed/ to marry his concubyne/ for by reason therof she shulde be the seconde person in honours in Englande/ wherby they sayd the quene shulde be shamefully accompanyed/ and sayde howe surely they wolde nat come in to no place where she shulde be present/ and more ouer they sayde/ it shulde be a great shame for theym/ that suche a ducheselle come of so base a blode (and concubyne to the duke in his other wyfes dayes) shulde go and haue the preemynence before them/ they sayde their hertes shulde breke for sorowe. Bothe the duke of Glouceftre and the ducheselle his wyfe spake of this mater/ and sayd howe the duke of Lancastre was nat wyse/ but fowle ouersene to marry his concubyne/ and sayde they wolde neuer do her honoure/ nor call her suster. The duke of yorke passed it ouer lyghtly ynough/ for he was euer lyghtly resydente about the kynge and with the duke of Lancastre. The duke of Glouceftre was of a nother maner/ for he sette by no man/ though he were yongest brother/ he was ryguious and presumptuous of maner/ and therto he enclyned his nature/ and alwayes agaynst the kynges oppinions and his counsaylours. Thus this lady Katerine of Kuet was ducheselle of Lancastre/ and was as the seconde persone in Englande/ and was moche about the kynge/ as she that knewe moche honour/ for in her youth and all her dayes she had ben brought vp therin/ and the Duke loued greatly the chyldren that he had by her/ and that he shewed well in his lyfe and after his dethe.

WE haue herde here before howe iugement of the parliament was gyuen agaynst syr Peter of Craon/ and howe he was condempned in a hundred thousande frankes/ to be payed to the Duene of Napoles. Whan the sayde syr Peter sawe howe he was condempned he was sore abasshed/ for outher he muste paye the some/ or els abyde styll prisoner. Than he was counsayled by the duke of Burgoyne and by the ducheselle/ p he shulde requyre the yonge quene of Englande to be meane for hym to the quene of Napoles/ that he myght be released oute of prysone fyftene dayes to go abrode in Parys/ to sewe to his frendes to pay his fynaunce/ or els to fynde sureties for him tyll he myght go in to Bretaygne to gather amonge his frendes the same some. So at the desyre of the yonge quene of Englande/ the quene of Napoles was contente that he shulde go all the day abrode in Paris/ and at nyght alwayes to yelde hym selfe prisoner in to the castell of Lowre/ and there to remayne all the night. After this rate he went abrode and sewed to many of his blode and frendes/ but he coulde fynde none that wolde abyde there prisoner for hym/ the some was so great. And at the ende of the fyftene dayes he was fayne to returne prisoner bothe day and nyght/ and was kept strenghter than he was before at his cost and charge.

MOwe lette vs a lytell speke of the iourney of therle of Nouers and the lordes of Fraunce/ and what they dyd the same somer in Hungery. And after we shall speke of the goynge in to Frese of the erle of Haynalte and the erle of Ostrenaunt. The erle of Nouers and his company/ with many baliaunt men that he had of Fraunce and of other countreys/ whan they were come in to Hungery in to a great cytie called Bode/ the kyng of Hungery made them good chere/ and well they deserued it/ for they were come farre of to se him. The entersyon of the kynge was/ that or he sette forwarde with his puyssaunce/ and with the ayde of Fraunce to entre in to the felde/ to here fyrste some newes fro the great turke called Lamorabaquy/ who had sent hym worde in the moneth of February that surely he wolde be in Hungery or the ende of the moneth of Maye/ and that he wolde passe the water of Dunce/ of whiche message many had great maruayle. And some sayde that there is in a manner nothynge but that man maye do it/ consyderynge that the turke is baliaunt and puyssaut/ and desyreth moche deedes of armes

therfore sythe he hath sayd it by all ythelyhode he wyll do it/ and if he passe nat the Dunce to come hyther to this syde/ than lette vs passe ouer and entre in to Turkey with puyssaūce/ for the kynge of Hungery with sathe ayde as he hath of straungers shall well make an hundred thousande men/ and suche a nombre of suche men are well able to conquere all Turkey/ and to go in to the empyre of Perse/ and if we may haue one iourney of hym vpon the great turke/ we shall do after what we lyst and shall conquere Surey/ and all the holy lande of Ierusalem/ and shall delyuer it fro the handes of the Sodayne and the enemyes of god/ for at the tower nette commynge/ the Frenche kynge and the kynge of Englande/ who wyll conioyne togyther/ shall reyse by a great nombre of men of armes and of archers and shall fynde the passages open to receyue them/ than nothyng shall abyde before vs/ but all shall be conquered and put in oure obeysaunce/ whan we shall go all togyther. Thus deuysed the Frenche men that were in the realme of Hungery.

Than the moneth of May was come trusshynge to here tydynges of Lamorabaquy the greate Turke/ the kynge of Hungery sent to the passages of the ryuer of Dunce/ and sent through out his realme to assemble his puissaunce togyder/ and the lordes of the Rodes came to hym strongly/ and all the moneth of May they tarved for the comyng of the sarazyns/ but no tydynges coulde be herde of them. Than the kynge of Hungery sente suche as knewe the countrey beyonde the ryuer of Dunce/ to serche to haue some tydynges of the great turke. Suche as wente serched all the countrey beyonde the Blacke of sayne George/ and to the marches of Aleraundre/ of Damas/ and Antyoche/ but they coulde here no newes of Lamorabaquy nor of none army towarde. Than they retourned and shewed the king what they had herde and sene. Than the kynge assembled his counsayle/ and called the lordes of Fraunce/ who desyred to do dedes of armes. The kyng shewed them howe he had sente men in to Turkey to haue knowlege what his enemies dyd/ and howe they coulde here no tydinges of Lamorabaquy/ nor no ythelyhode of his approchyng/ for all ꝑ promesse he had made to passe the Dunce/ and to entre in to Hongery to fight with the Cristen man or myght Hay shulde passe/ wherfore the kynge demaunded what counsayle they wolde gyue hym to do. Than the lorde of Coucy for all the other/ sayd. Syr though Lamorabaquy come nat forwarde at ordynge to his promesse/ and maketh but a tape therof/ yet that ought nat to lette vs to do dedes of armes/ and to pursue our enemyes/ seynge we be assembled to ꝑ purpose. Thus all the frenchmen/ almayns/ and other straungers shewed well howe they had great desyre to seke out Lamorabaquy to fyght with him/ whiche was to their great honour. The lorde of Coucyes wordes were allyzmed by all the straungers/ it was all their oppynyons howe they coulde enlope their season and tyme no better. Than it was ordeyned by the kynge and by his marshalles that euery man shulde prepare hym selfe to be redy to sette forwarde at a daye assygned/ whiche was the vtas of sayne Johan the baptyst. Than officers and other seruauntes apparyled for their maysters all thynges necessary/ and the Frenche men thynkynge to be freshe and gay/ spared nouther Golde nor syluer. Their departure fro Bode the fourtaygne eyte of Hungery was goodly to regarde. The constable of Hungery had the vowarde with a great nombre of hungaryons and almayns with hym/ by cause he knewe the countreys. And nexte after hym rode the frenche menne with the constable of Fraunce/ the erle de la Marche/ the lorde of Coucy/ syr Henry and syr Philyppe of Bare and dyuers other. And with the kynge rode the great lordes of his countrey/ as reasone was/ and beside the kyng rode Johan of Burgoyne/ 2 often tymes deuysed with the kyng. They were in the felde a thre score thousande horse/ they hadde but fewe a foote/ sauynge suche as were folowers. The company of the cristen men were noble and well ordred/ and of Hungery there were many crosbowes a horsebacke. the army tourneyed so longe that they came to the ryuer of Dunce/ and passed ouer in shyppes and barges/ and suche bridges as they had ordeyned for that purpose. It was eight dayes or they were all passed ouer/ and as they passed they lodged theym/ euery company tarynge for other. This ryuer of Dunce departeth ꝑ realmes of Hungery and Turkey asonder.

Whan

When the chrysten men were all ouer and nothynge tarped behynde/ and were in the tröters of Turkey/ they greatlye tetoysed and delyred greatly to do deades of armes. There they toke counsayle and determyned to go and ley siege to a towne in Turkey called Comerte. And as they ordayned so they dyde/ & besieged it as they myght well do/ for it stode in a playne countrey/ and a ryuer topynge to it with shyppes theron/ called Hecte: the heed cõmynge out of Turkey/ and fallynge into the see at the ryuer of Dunce. The ryuer of Dunce is a great ryuer of thre hundred myles in length/ fro the begynnynge tyll it entre in to the See. Whiche were the moost profytable ryuer in all the worlde/ for the realme of Hungry/ if the shyppes that be theron myght issue out therof in to the See/ but they can nat For in the mouthe therof whan they shulde issue in to the see/ there is in the ryuer a moũtayne whiche departeth the ryuer in two ptes/ and maketh suche bruite and noyse/ that it maye well be herde seuyn myle of/ and for that cause there is no shyppe ỹ dare aproche nere to it. I longe by this ryuer syde there be fayre medowes and pastures/ wherby all the countrey is well serued/ and dyuers vynes/ whiche in seasone make good wynes/ whiche the Turkes do make and putte in to Goot skynnes/ and selleth it vnto Chrysten men: For accordyng to their lawe/ they dare drynke no wyne to be knowen. It is defended them on payne of lyfe. But they eate the repsynges/ and they haue other good frutes and spyces/ wherof they make drynke/ and vse greatly to drynke Gootes mylke/ whiche refresshyth them in the hote season. Thus the kynge of Hungry and his hoost lodged before the cytie of Comerte at their ease and pleasure/ for no manne troubled their siege. And whan they came before the Cytie/ they foũde the frutes ripe/ the whiche was great pleasure to them. They made to this Cytie dyuers assautes/ and they within defended them selfe/ trustyng dayly to haue ayde and socour of Lamorabaquy their lorde/ to reyse the siege with puyssaunce. But he dyde nat/ wherby the Cytie was taken by force of assaute/ and distroyed with great slaughter of men/ women/ and chyldren. For the chrysten men that entred hadde no mercy nor pyte. Whanne this Cytie was thus wonne/ the kyng of Hungry dislodged and wente forwarde in to Turkey/ and was determyned to go and ley siege to a great cytie called Nicopoly. and as they rode/ they foũde in their waye the towne of Quayre/ and layde siege to it fyftene dayes or it was won/ but finally it was won by assaute/ & clene distroyed. And so passed forthe/ and in their waye they founde another towne and a stronge castell called Brehappe/ and a knyght of Turkey was lorde therof/ and was within the castell to defende it. The kyng and his army were lodged within a myle where was a fayre ryuer/ and about the towne there was none. There the erle of Neuers was made knight and reysed his banner/ and with hym were made mo than thre hundred knyghtes/ & all they & their companies went before Brehap/ and besieged it and wan the towne perforce within four dayes/ but nat the castell it was so strong. The lorde of Brehap saued moche of his people byforce of the castell/ who was called Corbodas/ a right valyant knyght/ & he had other thre brethrne/ one named Maladuus/ another Balachus/ & the thirde Rufyn. After this towne was won/ the chrysten men were before the castell seuyn dayes and made dyuers assautes/ but they loste more than they wanne. The foure knyghtes brethrne ỹ were within/ shewed well by their defence/ that they were valyant men. Whan the Frenche men hadde conspyred well the force of the castell/ and the valyaunt ordynaunce of the turkes within/ and the defence that they made/ They sawe well thaye they loste their payne/ and so dislodged/ for they had knowledge howe the kyng of Hungry wolde go and laye siege to the stronge towne of Nicopolye. Thus the siege before Brehap brake vp/ and they within the Castell were in peace but the towne was clene brent. than the erle of Neuers and all the lordes of Frãce resorted to the kynges armye/ ordryng the selfe to go to Nicopoly.

When Corbodas of Brehappe sawe the siege broken vp/ he was right ioyfull/ and sayde to his cõpany. We nede no more to fere this season though my towne be brent and eryled/ I shall right well recouer it

couer it agayne / but of one thynge I mar-
ueyle greatly. and that is / that I can here no
newes fro my lorde the kyng Belant / called
Lamorabaquy. for the last tyme that I sawe
hym in the cytie of Nicopoly / he sayde vnto
me / that this May tyme he wolde be in this
countrey / and had entencyon to passe with a
great puyssaunce the brase of saynt George /
and to go in to Hungry to fight with the chri-
sten men / and so he sent worde to the kyng of
Hungry / and yet he hath done nothyng. and
therupon they of Hungry be fortified / and ha-
ue as nowe great socour out of Fraunce / and
haue passed the ryuer of Dunce / and are en-
tred in to Turkey / and haue and do distroye
the countre / for there is no resistence made a-
gainst thē / & they thinke surely to go and lay
siege before Nicopoly. The cytie is stronge
ynoughe to resyst the siege a longe season / if
it be well defended & kepte. We are here four
brethern and knyghtes of the lynage of kyn-
ge Belant / We ought and are bounde to de-
fende his ryght / therfore lette vs order oure
selfe / as I shall shewe you. I and my bro-
ther Maladyus / we shall go to the Cytie of
Nicopoly / to ayde / to helpe and defende it / &
my brother Balachyus shall abyde here to
kepe this castell of Bizhap / and my brother
Rufyne shall passe the brase of saynt George
and go seke out Lamorabaquy / & shewe him
euery thynge that is past & done / and abuyde
hym for his honoure to entēde to defende his
herytage / & to come with suche puyssaunce /
that maye resyst the chrysten men / and to bri-
ge their purpose / or els he shall lese ỳ realme
of Armony / whiche he hath conquered / and
his owne countrey also. For by all ymagy-
nacyon the kynge of Hungry and the Chri-
sten men are gadered / to thentent to dō some
great enterprice. This thre brethern agreed
to his sayeng. On this apoyntment they pre-
pared them selfe to departe.

SO in this season siege was laid
before Nicopolye / and Corbo-
das of Bizhappe & Maladyus
his brother / came and entred in
to Nicopoly / wherof they of the
cytie were ryght ioyfull / and Balachyus a-
bode styll at Bizhappe to kepe the castell. &
Rufyn whan he sawe tyme be nyght he pas-
sed the Chrysten army / for he knewe well the
countre / and passed ouer the brase saynt Ge-
orge / and serched for Lamorabaquy / and the
same season he was at Quayre with the Sou-
dane of Babylone / to haue ayde of men of
hym. Rufyn founde thus turke there / & whan
kynge Belant sawe hym he had marueyle /
and thaught surely he shulde here some ne-
wes out of Turkey. Than he demaunded
what tydynges. sir quod Rufyn / all the cōtre
deliyreth sore to se you there / for ỳ kyng
of Hungry with puyssaunce hath passed the
ryuer of Dunce / and is entred in to Turkey
and hath done great domage and hath brent
and assayled a tyne or tire of your closed townes.
And whan I departed fro Bizhappe /
he was in purpose to go and leye siege to Ni-
copoly. Corbodas and Maladyus my bro-
ther / with suche men of warre as they haue /
are entred in to Nicopoly to helpe to defēde
the towne / & my brother Balachyus is styll
at Bizhappe / to kepe the castell there. And
sir / of a surete there is in the company with
the kynge of Hungry / the goodlyest armye
and best apoynted come out of Fraunce that
euer was sene. Wherfore sir / it behoueth you
to assemble your hoost and frendes / and re-
tourne in to Turkey / to cause your enemyes
to retourne agayne ouer the ryuer of Dūce /
and ye do it nat with great puyssaūce / it wyll
be harde to bring it about. What nombre be
they quod Lamorabaquy / sir quod he / they
be mo than a hundred thousande / & the good
lyest men of the worlde / and best armed / and
all on hoost backe. Lamorabaquy gaue none
answere / but entred in to the Soudans chā
bre / and shewed the Soudane all the hole
matter / as his knyght had shewed hym. than
the soudane sayd. We must prouyde for it / ye
shall haue men ynowe to resyst thē. Nedes
we must defēde our lawe and our heryage.
That is true sir quod Lamorabaquy.

'DOwe my desyres are come to passe /
for I haue alwayes desyred none o-
ther thynge / but that the kynge of Hungry
with his puissaunce / myght ones come ouer
the ryuer of Dunce / and entre in to Turkey.
In the begynnynge I wyll suffre a season /
but at the ende they shall paye for the scotte.
Of all this I habde knowledge foure mone-
thes passe / by my great frende the lorde of
Myllayne / who sente me Gol hawkes / Ger-

faucons

ſturons/ and faucons/ to the nombre of. xii. whiche were the beſt and fayreſt that euer I ſawe. And with this preſent he wrote to me by name/ all the hedes and chefe capitayns of the baronies of Fraunce/ ſuche as I ſhulde come to make me warre. In the whiche letres was alſo contepned/ that if I myghte get them in my daunger/ they ſhulde be worthe to me a mylyon of florens. And alſo/ howe there ſhulde be in their compayny of the ympres of Fraunce/ mo than fyue hundred knyghtes/ valyaunt men of armes. Alſo the Duke of Myllayne wrote/ that ſurely they wyll gyue me batayle/ wherfore I wyll prepare to mete with them/ by arte/ abuſe/ and good ordynaunce/ for they are men of great feate/ and ſo valiaunt in armes/ that they wyll nat flye nor recule/ they are worthy of thanke to yſſue out of their owne nacyon by valyauntneſſe/ to fynde dedes of armes. And I truſte to accompliſſhe their deſyres within thre monethes/ ſo that they ſhall haue ynoughe to do.

TO eſpyre theſe wordes/ one ought greatly to marueyle/ that the Lorde Galeas erle of Vertues and Duke of Myllayne (who was reputed to be a chriſten man/ baptyſed and regenerate after the Chriſten Lawe) wolde ſeke or requyre loue or alyaunce with a kynge myſcreant/ out of out lawe and faythe/ or to ſende hym gyftes and preſentes/ as he dyde euery yere: As dogges/ haukes/ and fyne lynen clothes/ whiche are tyght pleſaunt to the Sarazins/ for they haue none but that cometh fro out parties. Alſo the great Turke ſent to hym agayne other preſentes of ryche clothe of golde and precyous ſtones/ wherof the Sarazins haue great plentie. But in thoſe dayes the erle of Vertues duke of Myllayne and ſir Galeas his father regned as tyrantes/ and ſo helde their ſignories.

It is marueyle to thynke of their dedes/ and fyrſte howe they entred and optayned the ſignorie of Myllayne. So it was there were thre brethrne/ the lorde Barnabo/ the lorde Galeas/ and the lorde Bernabo. They hadde an vncle who was archebyſſhoppe of Myllayne. And ſo it fortuned/ that whan the lorde Charles of Luſenbourge kyng of Boeſme and of Almayne & emperour of Rome/ who reigned after kyng Lopes of Bauyer/ who optayned to the Empyre byfore/ for he was neuer taken as Emperour by the thurche/ but excommunycate and a curſed by pope Innocent/ who regned as thane. For this Lopes of Bauyer went to Rome and made hymſelfe to be crowned emperour by a pope and. xii. cardynalles that he made. And as ſoone as he was crowned/ he made the Almayns to be payed their wages/ to ouer ryn Rome and to robbe and to pyll it. this was the rewarde that the romayns had for receyuyng of hym/ wherfore he dyed excommuneat and in that ſentence. The pope and cardynalles that he made/ without any conſtreynt came after to Auignon/ and ſubmytted themſelfes to pope Innocent/ who reigned before Urbayne the fyfthe/ and there were alloyed of their errours. Nowe to purpoſe howe the lordes of Myllayne came fyrſt to that ſignorie/ I ſhall ſhewe you howe.

SO it was/ the archebyſſhoppe of Myllayne/ at a tyme receyued kynge Charles of Boeſme emperour/ into the cyte of Myllayne nobly and tryumphantlye/ after the Emperour had been before Are the Chapell/ and had accompliſſhed there his. vii. dayes/ accordyng to the vſage in the caſe partenyng/ and for the great chere that he made to the Emperour/ and for a hundred thouſande ducates that he lent to the Emperour. He made the byſſhop vycount of Myllayne and his nephewes after hym for euer/ to holde the lande and ſignorie of Myllayne free at his wyll/ vnto the tyme that the Emperour hadde payde agayne at one tyme the ſayd ſome of a hundred thouſande ducates. And ſo after the byſſhoppe dyed/ and the lorde Manfres his nephue/ by the accorde of the Emperour and for loue of his vncle/ was repued in to the ſignorie of Myllayne. than his two brethrne/ who as than were nat deep riche/ the lorde Galeas and the lorde Barnabo/ counſayled togyder & determyned to reigne/ and to holde the landes of Lombardy betwene the/ and to coupone the by mariage to ſome great lordes to mayntayne their eſtates/ and to cauſe men to feare their diſpleaſures. And ſo they cauſed their brother Manfrede to be ſlayne by venyme/ or otherwyſe/

after

after whose dethe they reygned puissauntly byforce and polycy. All their dayes they lyued in good accorde to guyder / and departed the cytes of Lombardy bytwene them. The lorde Galeas hadde rennc / bycause he was the eldest / and the lorde Bernabo nyne. And the cytie of Pyllayne was gouerned one yere by the one brother and another yere by the other brother. And to the entent to reygne puissauntly / they sought the wayes to gader great ryches by raysinge vp in possyons / subsydies / and gabelles / and many other yuell customes / wherby they gadered great store of golde and syluer. and they caused their townes and cytes to be kepte with soudyours straungers / as Almaygnes / Frenchemen / Bretons / Englysh men / and of all other nacyons / except their owne countreymen / for they hadde no trust nor affiaunce in them / for fraute of rebellyon agaynst the. and these soudyours were payed fro moneth to moneth / wherby they were so douted and fered of the people / that none durste displease them. For if any dyd ryse or dyde any thyng agaynst them / there was cruell vengeaunce taken vpon them. They destroyed many a one in their dayes / to gyue ensample to other.

In all their signories no man hadde any thynge but atte their pleasure / They wolde taxe a ryche man thre or foure tymes in a yere. They sayd that lombardes were ouer proude and presuptuous in their richesse / wherfore it was behouable to kepe them vnder subiection / no man durste saye nay to any thyng that they cómaunded.

These two brethernc maryed them byghly / and bought their wyues with the goodes and substaunce of their people. The lorde Galeas hadde to wyfe the suster of the good erle of Sauoye / named Blaunche / & payde to the erle for her a hundred thousande ducates. The lorde Barnabo maryed hym in Almaygne / to the suster of the duke of Bauyere / and payde no lesse money than his brother dyd. These two brethernc hadde many chyldren / and maryed them highly and ryche lye / to attayne therby great alyaunces. The lorde Galeas had a sone called Galleas / and as than the father vnderstode that whā kynge Johan of Fraunce was come out of Englande / and put to raūsome to .xxx. C. thousand frankes / and they of Fraunce wyst not howe to reyse the fyrste payement. Thanne he treated with the Frenche kynge and his counsayle to haue one of his doughters for Galeas his sonne. The kynge and his counsayle entended to this treatie / bycause they knewe well this lorde Galeas was grounded in richesse / and thus he bought the kyngs doughter for fyue hundred thousande frankes / whiche were tourned in payment to the kynge of Englande. And so his sonne maryed kynge Johans doughter / and to hym was gyuen the countie and eridome of Vertues in Champaygne. Of that sonne and doughter issued a doughter / whiche byforce of golde and syluer was maryed to the seconde sonne of kynge Charles of Fraunce / called Lopes duke of Odyaunce erle of Blopes and Valopes. The maryage cost the erle of Vertus father to the sayde lady / tenne hundred thousaunde frankes. And the countie of Blopes was bought of the erle Guye of Blopes: as it hath ben conteyned here before in this bystorie. Thus these lordes / Galeas and Barnabo / acorded right well togyder all their lyue dayes: they neuer barked nor theyr people togyder / therfore they reigned in great puissaunce. No man coude haue reason nor right of them / Pope / cardynalles / nor other that made any warre agaynst them / sauyng alonely the marques of Montferant / & that was by the meanes of the lorde Johan Hacon / and the Englysh men with the routes of the companyons / whiche Johan Hacon brought them out of Prouynce in to Lombardy / and made there great warre.

Johan at last dyed this lorde Galeas / and after hym reigned his sonne erle of Vertues / named Galeas in great puyssaūce. and at the begynnyng of his reigne he gate him great loue in Lombardy / and ordred hymselfe after a goodly maner and like a wyse man. He put downe all suche yuell customes as his father had reysed in Lombardy He was so well beloued and of so good renome that euery man sayd well of hym / but at laste whanne he sawe his tyme / he spytted out his venyme / whiche he had longe borne in his hert. For he made on a day in ꝑ feldes a great bull fement / wherby the lorde Bernabo his

nabo his vncle was take who thought none yuell/ nor knewe nat but that he was welbe-loued/ and in great fauour with his nephue. And at his takyng it was ſayd to hym: One lorde is ynough to reygne in Lombardy/ he coude haue none other grace/ for it laye nat in hym as thanne to make reſiſtence. So he was ledde to a caſtell/ and there his nephue cauſed hym to dye/ but in what maner I can nat ſhewe you. This ſir Bernabo had two fayre chyldren/ of whom the Frenche quene was doughter/ to one of his doughters whi-che was wedded to the duke of Oſtrenaunt of Bayere. This Galeas putte in priſone all his vncles chyldren/ ſuche as he coulde gette/ and tooke poſſeſſyon of all his vncles ſeignories/ and ioyned thē to his owne/ & ſo reigned in great puyſſaunce & richeſſe/ for he reyſed vp ſuche maters/ wherby he gathered togyder great rycheſſe: As Impoſycions/ gabels/ ſubſydies/ dymes/ and all other ex-torcions/ wherby he was moche more dred than beloued. He helde the errour and opy-nyon of his father (that was) howe one ſhulde nother honoure nor worſhyppe god. He tooke fro abbeyes and priories moche of their reuenewes/ and toke them to hym ſelfe. He ſayd the monkes were to delycious ly no-riſſhed with good wynes and delycious me-tes. By whiche ſuperfluytes (he ſayd) they coude nat ryſe at mydnight/ nor do their ſer-uyce as they ſhulde do. He ſayde: ſaynt Be-net helde nat the order of his relygion after that maner. And ſo (he ſaid) he wolde make them to lyue with egges and ſmall wyne/ to clere their voyces to ſyng the higher. Theſe lordes in their dayes lyued lyke popes: they dyde great diſputes in their tyme to men of holy churche: They ſette nothyng by the po-pes curſe/ and ſpecially after ỳ cryme began/ and that there was two popes: that the one curſed the other alloyled. The lordes of myl layne dyde but mocke at their doynges/ and ſo dyd many other lordes through ỳ worlde. The doughter of this lorde Galeas duke of Myllayne was duches of Orlyaūce/ whoſe condycions were lyke to her fathers and nat to her mothers/ who was doughter to kyng Johan of Fraunce. This lady was of high mynde/ enuyous and couytous/ on the dely-tes & ſtate of this worlde. Gladly ſhe wolde haue ſene the duke her huſbande to haue at-taygned to the crowne of Fraunce/ ſhe had nat cared howe. A generall fame and ſclaun-der ran vpon her/ that all the infyrmites the kyng had/ whiche no phiſycion coude reme-dye/ came all by her ſorces and artes/ and the chiefe diſcouerynge of her workes/ wherby ſhe was had in great ſuſpecte was this.

This ducheſſe of Orlyaunce named Valantyne had a ſonne by the duke her huſbande/ a fayre chylde of the age of the Dolphyn/ ſonne to the kynge. On a tyme theſe two chyldren were playeng togyder in the ducheſſe of Orlyaunce ſtaū-bre/ and ſodaynly there was caſte downe an apple full of poyſon on the pauement/ on the ſame ſyde ỳ the dolphyn was on/ to thentent that he ſhulde haue taken and eaten it. But as grace was he dyd nat/ for the duches ſonne ran after the apple and toke it/ and ete therof wherwith he was poyſoned and dyed/ no-thynge coude ſaue hym. And ſuche as hadde Charles the yong dolphyn to kepe toke hym thens/ and he neuer came after in the duches chambre. Of this aduēture great bruite and murmuracyon ran throughe all the cytie of Parys/ and in other places. Thus it was ſayde by her of all the people/ ſo that the du-ke her huſbande parceyued it well/ for bruite ranne through Parys/ that if her huſbande dyde nat putte her awaye out of the kynges courte/ they wolde fetche her awaye byforce/ and cauſe her to dye. For the people ſaid ſhe wolde enpoyſon the kyng and his chyldren/ and that ſhe hadde enchaunted the kyng/ for the kyng in all his infyrmyteis wolde nat ſe the quene/ nor none other woman/ but all on-lye this ducheſſe of Orlyaunce. Upon whi-che ſayeng and for doute therof/ her huſbāde bad her awaye/ and put her out of the houſe of ſaynt Poule in Parys/ and ſente her to a caſtell beſyde Parys vpon the waye of Bel-noyes/ called Mynyets. And there ſhe was kepte a longe ſeaſon/ and neuer wente out of the caſtell/ and at laſt ſhe was ſent fro thens to Newcaſtell on the ryuer of Loyre. And ỳ duke of Orlyaunce had great diſpleaſure to her/ bycauſe of the aduēture of ỳ dethe of his ſon/ but by reaſon ỳ he had other chyldren by her/ ſo what it brake his diſpleaſure. Theſe tydynges came to Myllayne/ and the lorde Galeas was enfourmed howe his doughter was in

was in trouble and in great daunger/ wher-
of he was sore displeased with the frenche
kyng and his counsayle. Than he sent a suf-
ficient messanger/ as sir Jaquemont of We-
tyne and other to Parys/ to ỹ kyng and his
counsayle/ in excusyng his doughter/ sayeng
that if any persone wolde accuse her of tray-
son/ he shulde be fought with all at vttraunce
in that quarell. Whan these messangers cãe
to Parys/ the kynge was in good helth/ but
he tooke no hede of thole messangers/ nor of
their excuse: and so they were shortely aun-
swered nothyng to their pleasure. So they
retourned in to Lombardy/ and declared to
the duke of Myllayne all that they had sene
and done. Than the duke was in greter dis
pleasure than he was before/ and reputed it
a great iniury/ and than sent his defyaunce
to the frenche kynge/ and to all the hole Re-
alme of Fraunce. And whan his defyaunces
were brought to Parys/ the lordes ⁊ knigh-
tes with the frenche armye were as than in
Hũgry/ and entred in to Turkey. And for ỹ
dispyte and hate that the duke of Myllayne
had to the frenche kynge and to some of his
counsayle/ therfore he helde in ampte and a-
lyaunce the great Turke/ and shewed hym
of the secretes of Fraũce. Nowe wel shall
leaue spekynge of the duke/ and speke of the
great Turke and of the barons of Fraunce/
and of other Christen knyghtes/ that were
as than in Turkey.

Howe the great turke desyred the soudan/ and many other kynges sarazyns to ayde hym with meune of warre/ to resyst agaynst the christen men/ and howe many valyant sarazyns came to hym out of farre countreis. Cap. CC.xi.

IT was nat longe after/ but that the great Turke departed fro Quayre fro the Soudan/ who prom-
yssed to sende hym shortely great ayde/ of the best men of armes of all his signories/ to
resyst agaynst the puissaunce of the kynge of
Hungry and the Frethe men. And the great
turke sente in to all realmes and countreis/
where as he thought to haue any ayde ⁊ so-
cour. For he consydred and sayd/ that if the
frenche men conquerred Turkey/ all other
realmes adioyning shulde trimble for feare
of them/ and therby their faythe and beleue
shulde decaye/ and become vnder the subie-
ction of the Christen men/ whiche they had
rather dye. And thus at the desyres of the
Soudan and the great turke/ many kynges
sarazyns enclyned vnto their desyres/ as in
Perce/ in Mede/ and in Trace/ and also out
of the Septentryon/ and out of the realme
of Lecto/ and to the boundes of Ynde. And
for almoch as they were enformed that their
enemyes the Christen men were flour of cha-
ualry. These kynges sarazins and other lor-
des of their lawe/ dyde chuse out among the
the best trauerlynge and experte men of ar-
mes in all their countreis. This assembly
coude nat be sodaynly done/ nor their purue-
aunces so soone done. The great Turke set
hym selfe forwardes in to the felde/ alwayes
abyding for his people that came to hym fro
farre countreis/ and specially out of Tartary
Mede and Perce. There assembled many
valyant sarazins out of all countreis. They
were desyrous to proue their strengthes a-
gaynst the Christen men. Nowe lette vs
speke of the christen men beyng before Nico
polye.

Howe the lorde of Coucy ⁊ other lordes of the christẽmen/ about a. v. hundred speares discõfited a fyftene thousande turkes/ duryng the siege before Nicopoly. Cap. CC.xii.

THey that were besiege with
in the strong towne of Nycopo-
lye/ defended them selfe right va
lyantly/ howbe it they were sore
abashed that they herde no tydy
nges fro the great turke. The Emperour of
Constantyne the noble had writen vnto the
that he

that he was in the parties of Alexandre/ and was nat as than palled þ thale ſaynt George. So the cryſten men helde there ſiege ſtyll be/ fore Nycopoly. They had vytayles plentye and good cheper that came out of Hungery/ and other marches nere aboutynge. And on a day the lorde Coucy and other frenche men tooke pleaſure to ryde forthe at aduenture to ſe the countrey further in. So they departed fro the ſiege about the nombre of fyue hundred ſpeares and as many crolbowes and archers all horſemen. The lorde Coucy was capytayne of that tourney and the lorde Raynolde of Roye/ and the lorde of ſaynt Pye in his company/ the Chatelayne of Beauoyre/ the lorde of Mount Caurell/ and the Bourge of Mountquell with dyuers other/ and they had guydes with the ſuche as knewe the countrey/ and they had certayne fore ryders well mounted to diſcouer the countrey before them. The ſame woke there was an armye of the turkes aſſembled togyther to the nombre of twenty thouſande men/ for they were enfourmed how we the cryſten men were abrode dyſtroyenge their countrey/ in reſyſtence therof/ they aſſembled togyder and came to a ſtrayte whiche the cryſten men muſt paſſe/ and they wolde entre in to the playne of Turkey/ and they coude nat well entre no waye. And there the turkes taryed a two dayes and coude here no tydynges of the cryſten menne/ and ſo the thyrde daye they thought to haue retourned. Than the cryſten meanes foreryders came to Vrchault/ nere where the turkes were/ and whan the turkes ſaw them aproche they ſtode ſtyll cloſe togyther/ to ſe the dealynge of the cryſten men/ and made no token nor ſygne to ſkrymyſſhe with them. Theſe cryſten men aproched nere to the turkes/ and ſawe well they were a great nombre/ and yet they coulde nat aduyſe them all. And whan they had well aſſewed them they recuied backe/ and came to the lorde Coucy/ and ſhewed hym what they had ſene/ of whiche newes þ cryſten men were eyght toyfull/ and the lorde of Coucy ſaid. It is mete that we go and ſe theym more nerer/ ſythe we be come ſo farre forwarde/ we ſhall nat departe without fyghtynge with them/ if we ſhulde it ſhall be to our blame and great reproche. That is true quod all the other knyghtes that herde hym. Than euery man prepared hymſelfe and his hoyſe and rode towarde the place where the turkes were. and betwene them and the turkes there was a lytell wode. Whan the cryſten men came to the wode ſyde/ the lorde of Coucy ſaid to the lorde Raynolde of Roy/ and to the lorde of ſaynt Pye. Syrs/ myne aduyſe is/ to the entent to drawe the turkes out of their ſtrength/ that ye two ſhall take two hundred of our ſpeares/ and I with the reſt wyll abyde here in this wode/ and ryde ye ſo nere them that ye may cauſe them to come out/ and than retourne you/ and ſuffre them to chaſe you tyll ye be paſte vs in this wode/ and than ſodaynly tourne vpon them/ and we ſhall cloſe theym in behynde/ and ſo we ſhall haue them at our wyll. To this aduyſe all the knyghtes enclyned. than two hundred of them that were beſt horſed rode forthe/ and the reſt who were an eyght hundred/ enbuſſhed themſelfe couertly in the wode/ and there taryed. The other rode forthe/ and came to the place where the turkes were. Whan they ſawe the cryſten men come/ they were eyght ioyouſe/ wenynge there had been no more/ and ſo came out of their holdes in to the playne feldes. and whan the cryſten men ſawe tyme they turned and fled/ and made the turkes to chaſe them. They were ſo well horſed þ the turkes coulde nat ouertake them/ and they chaſed ſo longe that they paſſed the wode where as the enbuſſhement was. Whan the turkes were paſſed/ the cryſten men yſſued out/ and cryed our lady be with the lorde of Coucy/ and ſo aſſayled in behynde them/ and made great occiſion. The turkes helde them cloſe togyther/ whan they ſawe how they were beſet before and behynde and dyd put themſelfe to defence as well as they myght/ but they kept none order/ for they were nat ware of the rereguarde. And whan they ſawe themſelfe ſo ſodaynly ſette on they were aſtoned. The frenche men dyd quyte themſelfe lyke valyaunte men of armes/ and ſlewe the turkes at their pleaſure in their flyenge. There were many ſlayne/ the cryſten men toke none to mercy/ happy were they that coulde eſcape and retourne fro thens as they came. And than the criſten men that had done that bede retourned to their hooſt before Nycopoly. Than tydynges ran ouer all the hooſt how we the lorde of Coucy by his wyſedome and valyauntneſſe had diſcomfyted more than. xb. thouſande turkes. Many ſpake well therof/ but the erle of Ewe prayſed nothing his dede/

sayenge howe it was doone but by pryde/and howe that he had put the cryſten men (and eſpeally his bande) in great aduenture and parell/ sayenge that with an handefull of men he fought foryll help with the route of twenty thouſande turkes/he ſhulde rather (ſeynge he was in wyll to do dedes of armes/and that the turkes were on the felde) haue gyuen knowlege before he aſſayled his enemyes to his hed capitayne the lorde Johan of Burgoyne/that he myght haue had the renome and honour of that enterpryſe. Beſemynge the erle of Ewe ſpake thoſe wordes by enuy/that he had to the lorde of Coucy/ for all that voyage he had no loue to him/bycauſe he ſawe howe the lorde of Coucy had the loue & fauour of all his compayny and of other ſtraūgers/whiche he deſerued ryght well to haue/ for he was ryght nere of the frenche kynges blode/ and bare in his armes floure de lyces/ and alſo he was cōſtable of Fraunce. Thus there engendred a great hate and puell vyll couertly/ betwene the erle of Ewe and the lorde Coucy/ whiche hatred at laſt apered clerely/ wherby great myſchefe fell the ſame ſeaſone vpon the cryſten men/ as we ſhall here after. Now we ſhall leaue to ſpeke any more at this tyme of this mater and retourne to ſpeke of the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce.

Howe the peace betwen Englande and Fraūce contynued/and of the maryage of the kynge of Englande with the doughter of Fraunce. Cap. CC.xiii.

We haue herde here before of the maryage of the french kynges doughter with the kynge of Englande/the whiche tyme aproched nere/and bothe parties well wyllynge/ except duke Thomas of Glouceſtre/ he was nothynge toſull therof/ for he ſawe well that by that maryage/ there ſhulde be great conſyderatyons and alyaunces betwene the two kynges and there Realmes to lyue in peace/ whiche he was lothe to ſe/ for he deſyred rather to haue warre. The ſame ſeaſon the duke had about hym a knyght called ſyr Johan Vaquegap a ſecrete man/ and he ſet alwayes ye duke to haue warre. The ſame ſeaſone alſo the duke of Gueries came in to Englande to ſe the kynge and his vncles/ and offred hym ſelfe to do any lawfull ſeruyce to the kynge that he myght do/ he was bounde therto by faythe and homage/ and he wolde gladly that the kynge ſhulde haue had warre rather than peace. This duke and the duke of Lancaſtre had great cōmunycacyon togyder of the voyage that the erle of Haynalt and the erle of Oſtrenaunt his ſonne wolde make into Freſe. The ſame tyme Ferrebyaſe of Vertayne was in Englande/ ſente thyder fro the erle of Oſtrenant/to gette men of armes and archers to go in that voyage to Freſe. The erle of Derby was deſyred to go in that voyage/in ayding of his coſyns of Heynalt. The gentle erle badde therto good affectyon/ and ſayde howe he wolde ryght gladly go in that voyage/ ſo that it pleaſed the kynge and his father. Whan the duke of Gueries came fyrſt in to Englande/ the Duke of Lancaſtre demaunded of him what he thought of that voyage in to Freſe. He anſwered and ſayd that it was a parylous voyage/ and ye Freſe was a countrey nat lyghtly to be wonne/ ſayenge howe in tymes paſt there had been dyuers erles of Holande and Heynalte/ that haue claymed their right there and gone thyder to haue put them in ſubiectyon/ but they haue alwayes loſte their lyues there/ affyrmynge howe the freſons are people without honour/ and haue no mercy. they prayſe nor loue no lorde in the worlde/ they be ſo proude/ and alſo their countrey is ſtronge/ for they be enuyronned with the ſee/ and cloſed in with illes/ rockes/ and maryſhes/ no man can tell howe to gouerne them but them ſelfe. I haue ben deſyred to go in that voyage/ but I wyll nat/ and I counſayle my coſyn your ſonne the erle of Derby/ nat to entre in to that voyage/it is no tourney for hym. I thynke my fayre brother of Oſtrenant wyll go/ for he hath great deſyre therto/ and wyll haue a bande of hayno wayes with hym/ it ſhall be an aduenture if euer they retourne. Whiche wordes cauſed the Duke of Lancaſtre to thynke that his ſonne ſhulde not go in ye voyage/ and ſo ſhewed his ſonne his entents/ and badde hym delaye that mater/ for

the kyng

thyngs she wolde nat that he shulde go. This the duke of Glocestre dyd lette the ayde that the erle of Hayenalte shulde haue had of the erle of Derby. Many thought it was nat well counselled of hym yet for none of their honours. The duke of Gueries all his lyfe/ naturally was enuyous/ presumptuous/ and proude. yet the aforsaid Peterchase of Wertayn lent nat his sone to gete ayde and dyd so his diligence that he gate knightes and squyers and .xx. hundred archers. But the erle of Derby excused himselfe/ whiche excuse he was sayne to take in great and sawe well that his myght was gayn to go/ if the kynge and his father had nat been. Than the kynge for the auauncement of his cosyns of Hapnalte made to be ordeyned in the ryuer of Thamyse beselles and shyppes for the men that shulde go in that voyage to Frese/ to arryue at Encusen a towne in the countie of Hapnalt/ at the entre into Helande. This towne standeth on the see/ within twelue leages by water of the realme of Frese.

THe same season was sente in to Englande fro the frenche kynge/ the erle Valeran of saynt Powle/ with certayne artycles concernynge the treatie of the peace/ and with him was sent Robert the Hermyte/ whome the kynge of Englande was glayde to here speke. The erle of saint Powle founde the kynge of Englande and his bretherne the erles of Bzenne and of Huntyngdon/ and the duke of Lancastre the kynges vncle/ at the manour of Eltham. The kynge receyued him ioyously/ and herde well his message/ and sayd to hym a parte. Sayr brother of sayne Powle/ as to the treatie of peace betwene me and my sayr father of Fraunce/ I am right well enclyned therto/ but I all alone canne nat promote that mater. True it is my bretherne and my two vncles of Lancastre and yorke enclyne right well therto/ but I haue a nother vncle the duke of Glocestre/ who is right parylous and a mateyelous man/ he letteth it as moche as he can/ and dothe what he canne to dzawe the Londoners to his opynyon/ I feare me to make a rebellyon in my realme/ and that he shulde reyse the people agaynst me/ whiche is a great parill for if the people of Englande ryse agayne agaynst me/ and haue myne vncle of Glocestre on their parte/ and suche other barones and knyghtes of the realme as be of his opynion/ my realme were lefte without remedy/ for myne vncle of Glocestre is so secrete/ that no man canne knowe his mynde. Syr quod the erle of saint Powle/ it behoueth you to wynne hym with sayre/ swete/ and louynge wordes/ and gyue hym great gyftes/ if he demaunde any thyng graunt it him/ this is the way whereby ye shall wynne hym/ ye must flatter hym tyll the peace be made/ and that ye haue your wyfe brought hyther to you/ and that doone than ye maye take other counsayle/ ye shall be than of the puyssaunce to oppresse all your rebelles/ for the frenche kynge if nede be shall ayde you/ of this ye maye be sure. In the name of god/ ye sayr well and thus shall I do.

THe erle of sayne Powle was lodged at London/ and often tymes went to Eltham to se the kynge and the duke of Lancastre/ and had often tymes cōmunycacion on this maryage. The erle of saint Poule sayde howe the frenche kynge shulde come to sayne Omers and his vncles/ and bzing with hym his doughter/ so that the kynge of Englande wolde come to Calais/ and so betwene sayne Omers and Calays/ the two kynges shulde mete and speke togyther/ whereby by reason of syght and speknge togyther shulde encrease loue and ampte/ and there these two kinges and their vncles shulde speke togyder without any other companye/ on the forme of the peace/ and if they conclude nat on some peace/ yet at lesse the treuce myght be relonged to endure for thyrty yere/ betwene the two realmes and their alies. This deuyse semed right good to the kyng and to his counsayle/ and herupon the kynge and other lordes sente to Calays to make prouysyon/ and the kynge delyred his vncle the duke of Glocestre to go with hym in that iourney/ and the duches his wyfe and his chyldren/ and in lyke wyse the Dukes and duchesses of yorke and Lancastre. And so whan euery thynge was redy the kynge and the erle of sayne Powle departed fro Eltham and rode to wardes Cauntorbury/ and after them folowed all other lordes/ suche as shulde go in this voyage/ and suche as had been delyred. The erle of sayne Powle passed the see fyrst/ to the entent to aduertyse the Frenche kynge/ and so passed to

Bologne and so to Paris/ and there declared to the frenche kynge and to his vncles howe he had spedde/ wherewith they were well content/ and so departed fro Paris/ and lytell and lytell approched to the cytie of Impence/ and the kynge of Englande and his vncles came to Calais/ with many lordes and ladyes. And the duke of Burgoyne one of the frenche kynges vncles came to sayne Omers/ and by the meanes of the Erle of sayne Powle and Robert the hermyte/ the duke of Burgoyne came to Calays/ to se the kynge of Englande and his vncles/ where he was nobly receyued/ and there they coūsayled togyther on certayne artycles of the peace/ wherto the kynge of Englands lygnage enclyned. and for to say trouth he cared nat what he dyd/ so he myght haue his wyfe.

Than the duke of Burgoyne had ben at Calais two dayes/ and had cōmuned with the kynge of Englande on the artycles of the peace/ the kynge sayde howe he wolde sende all the processe of the artycles ouer the see in to Englande/ to be shewed and declared there to the people/ for he sayde that nouther he/ nor all the lordes that were there of Englande/ coulde nat conclude fermely on no peace/ without the generall consentment of the people of Englande. And more ouer the kynge sayde/ howe that he must fyrst go ouer agayne hym selfe/ and so retourne/ and therby make but one iourney. That is well said quod the duke of Burgoyne/ for than at youre retourne/ euery thynge shall be concluded and perfourmed. Thus the duke of Burgoyne/ and the erle of sayne Powle departed fro Calays/ and retourned to sayne Omers/ and fro thens to Impence/ where they founde the kyng and the quene and their doughter/ who shulde be quene of Englande. The same tyme there was the dukes of Bytaygne and of Berrey in great araye. And the kynge of Englande and his vncles and other lordes retourned in to Englande/ and their wyues taryed styll at Calays tyll their retourne. ¶ In this meane season the voyage was made in to Frese/ by them of Haynalte. First the erle of Heynalte/ Holande/ and of Zelande/ and his sonne the Erle of Ostrenaunt/ as ye shall here after in this hystorie.

Thowe the erle of Heynalt and the erle of Ostrenaunt his sonne made a great army of men of armes knyghtes and squyers to go in to Frese.

Cap. CC.lviii.

We haue herde here before howe duke Aubert of Bauyer and Guyllam his sonne erle of Ostrenant/ had great besynes go into Frese to conquere that countrey/ whereof the sayde duke Aubert by ryght succession of heritage/ shulde be erle and lorde therof. and to auaunce the same iourney/ the erle of Ostrenant had sent Pyerebrace of Wertayne to haue some ayde of the englysshe men/ who spedde hym so well that kynge Richarde of Englande for the honour of his cosyns/ sent certayne men of armes with two hundred archers/ vnder the gouernyng of three gentlemen/ one called Cornewayle/ another Colleuyll/ knyghtes/ the thyrde a squyer/ I knowe nat his name/ but I was well enformed that he was a valyaunt man of armes/ he hadde his chynne cutte of in a trap a lytell before/ and he had a chynne made of syluer/ tyed about his heed with a lace of syluer. These englysshmen came to Enculs at their tyme prefyxed. This duke Aubert and his sonne had a valyaunt man of their coūsayle called Gyllam of Croenbourge/ who greatly erged them to the warre/ for he hated greatly the frysones/ and had doone them many displeasures/ and dyd after/ as ye shall here. Thus the duke Aubert departed fro the Haye in Holande with Gyllyam his sonne erle of Ostrenant/ and so came in to his countrey of Haynalte/ to the towne of Mons/ and there he assembled togyther the thre estates of the countrey/ and there shewed vnto them the great desyre that he had to go in to Frese/ and the rightefull occasion that he had so to do/ and caused there to be openly shewed certayne letters patentes apostolykes and imperyalles ryght noble and autentyke/ sealed vnder leade lyke and entre/ by the whiche apered euydently the ryght and tytell that he had to the seyg nory of Frese/ and than he sayd openly. Lordes and valyaunt men my subgettes/ ye knowe well that euery man ought to kepe and defende his heritage/ and that a man may lawfully moue warre to recouer his lande and here-

and heritage. ye knowe also ỹ frelons ought by right to be our subgettes/ and they be inobedyent and rebell agaynst vs and our lygnage/ as people without lawe or fayth. and therfore good and dere frendes ye know well that without yous ayde/ bothe with bodyes and goodes/ we canne nat fournysshe to bringe to effectyou so hygh an enterprise/ wherfore we desyre you in this busynesse to ayde vs/ that is to say with money and with men of warre/ to the entent that these inobedyent frelons maye be subdued and brought to obedyence. These wordes or suche lyke/ spoken by the duke/ the thre estates by a commune accorde graūted their lordes petycyon and requeste/ lyke suche people as greatly desyred and alwayes had done to do obedyent seruyce and pleasure to their lorde and prince. And as I was enformed they caused him to haue in redy money mountante to the some of thyrty thousande pounde/ besyde the towne of Valencēnes/ who in lyke wyse dyd their deuoyre/ and also in the towne of Mons. These thynges thus concluded/ the valyaunt princes/ the good duke Iuberte and Guillyam his sonne erle of Ostrenant/ seynge the good wylles of his men/ was ryght ioyfull/ whiche was no meruayle/ for he sawe well that he was well beloued with his subgettes/ and shulde be well fournysshed with money. Than he had counsayle to sende to the frenche kyng/ and to shewe him the enterprise of his voyage/ and to desyre ayde of hym/ and therfor was sent two valyaunt and wyse men that is to saye/ the lorde Lygne and the lorde of Iesumont/ who were two ryght valyaunt knyghtes and well beloued with the frenche men/ and specyally the lorde Lygne/ the kyng had made hym one of his chamberlayns/ and had hym in good fauoure/ he spake with the kynge and shewed hym the dukes entent and requeste. to the whiche the kynge and his counsayle fauourably agreed/ & specyally the duke of Burgoyne/ bycause his doughter was maryed to therle of Ostrenāt/ whereby he thought that in tyme to come after/ it shulde be to their profyte/ and to their heyres/ howe be it many great lordes and other spake of this iourney in dyuers maners. Some sayd/ to what purpose dothe these heynous wayes desyre the kyng of ayde/ they haue ben in England & sought for ayde there. Hath nat therle of Haynalt of late taken on hym the blewe garter to lye his legge withall/ which is ỹ order in England/ it semyth therby he hath no great affectyon to Fraunce. Than other that were ryght wyse answered and sayd. Syr ye do wronge to say thus/ though therle of Ostrenant haue taken the order of the garter/ yet for all that he is nat alyed with the englysshe men/ but he is fermly alyed with Fraunce. Hath nat he in maryage the lady Katheryne/ doughter to the duke of Burgoyne/ whiche is a farre greater alyaūce than is a garter/ therfore neuer say but that he wyll loue and do pleasure to Fraunce/ by reason of his maryage/ rather than to England for ỹ garter/ wherfore the kinge shall do right honourably to ayde hym. Thus the frenche men deuysed amonge them selfe/ and spake in dyuers maners/ both of that iourney and also of the iourney in to Hungery and in to Turkey/ agaynst Lamorabaquy and the turkes.

Of the army that the french kyng sente in to Frese in the ayde of his cosyns/ and the lorde Valeran Erle of saynt Powle and the lorde Charles de la Bzete were capytaynes.

Cap. CC. xv.

The frenche kynge assembled an armye of fyue hūdred speares/ as well of pycardes as of frenchmen/ and made capytayns ouer thē/ the lorde Valeran erle of saynt Powle & the lorde Charles de la Bzet/ who were valyaūt knyghtes and well expert in armes/ and they were appoynted to leade this company to the towne of Encuse in base Frese/ where as the assemble shulde mete/ and there to take the see to entre in to high Frese (as they dyd) Whan these two knightes/ the lorde Lygne and Iumont sawe the kynges good wyll/ and that these men of warre were dyspatched & their wages payed/ they came to the kynge and thanked him/ and toke their leaue and retourned in to Heynalt/ to their lorde the duke Iubert and to the lorde Guillyam his sonne/ to whome they were right welcome/ for they had well sped. There they

shewed the good answere and good chere that they had with gyftes of great presentes. whan duke Aubertte knewe that the Frenche kynge had sente hym fyue hundred speares/ than he assembled all his noble men/ knyghtes/ squyers and other of Haynalt/ as the lorde of Uertayne seneschall of Haynalte/ who was a valyaunt man and greatly renomed in armes/ the lordes of Lygne and Compygnes/ who was made marshall/ and the lordes of Haureth/ of Nychelet/ of Lalayne/ of Horbayne/ of Chyne of Cantan/ of Quesnoy/ of Fleron and Johan his brother/ the lordes of Bousset and of Jeumont/ who were fresshe knightes on their enempes/ also there was Robertt le Rour/ and the lordes of Mõtbtaulx/ of Foũtayns/ of Seuls and of Sars/ William of Hermes/ Pynchart his brother/ the lordes of Lens/ of Berlamont/ of Buseaux/ of Traseignies/ Octes Seaulmes/ Gyrarde his brother/ the lorde Hyette and Johan his brother/ Bridault of Montagup/ Damault de la powle and Guy his brother/ the lorde of Wastynge/ syr Florydas of Uillyers/ who was a valyaunt man/ and had doone many dedes of armes amonge the turkes and sarazins/ and sir Eustace of Uertayn Fierebras of Uertayne who was newly come out of Englande/ syr Rase of Montiquy/ the lorde of Rosyn/ sir Johan Dendregnies and Persant his brother/ with dyuers other knightes and squiers. All these he assembled at Mons and desyred them to go with hym/ and euery man to bringe with hym company accordynge to their degrees/ and that they wolde assemble them to the towne of Enchuse in bale fresse and therabout/ and so to go with hym by see in to hygh Fresse about the myddes of August next after/ there he sayd he wolde tary for them/ for he wolde go thyder before to moue the holanders and zelanders to serue hym in lyke maner. Than these sayd knyghtes and squyers of Haynalt without any contradyction accorded to his desyre/ promysynge to do hym seruyce as his true subgiettes/ whiche they fulfylled in dede/ and dylygently prepared for the same/ so that by the begynnyng of the moneth of August/ in the yere of our lorde god a thousande thre hundred fourscore and syxtene/ they were all redy apatelled and assembled by companies at Anners/ there to take the water/ and fro thence to Enchuse/ where the hole assemble shulde mete. ¶ Nowe whyle this assemble was thus made in Haynalte/ it were to be demaunded if the ladyes and gentlewomen and other/ were espouse of this iourney. We ought to say naye/ for than they sawe their fathers/ their bretherne/ their vncles/ their husbandes/ and their louers and frendes departe to ỹ perylous warre. for some of them knewe well/ howe that in tyme paste the hayno ways wente with their lorde in to Fresle/ and neuer retourned agayne/ wherfore they feared lest it shulde happe to them thesse/ as it dyd on their predecessours. The duchesse of Brabant had defended all men in the countrey of Brabant/ no man to be so hardy to go out of the countrey in that iourney. The ladyes and gentlewomen of Haynalt desyred often tymes their frendes and louers to leaue that iourney/ but they coulde nat lette the mater/ howe be it they were sore displeased in their myndes with the baslerde of Uertayne Fierebras/ for they said he was one of the chyefe setters on of that busyneslle. Thus after that the duke Aubert and Guillyam his sonne had herde the answere of his men of Haynalte/ than he went in to Zelande/ shewynge them his busyneslle. and they assented to his requeslt/ by the chiefe settynge on of the lorde de la Uere/ and syr Florys de Boesell/ Florys Dabell/ the lorde of Zetemburge/ syr Clays de Boysell/ Philyp Couzeen and dyuers other gentlemen. All these and other made them selfes redy in suche wyse that it apered well by their dylygence/ that they had great desyre to auaunce them selfe to that iourney.

IN lyke wyse the duke and his sonne went in to Holande and made there lyke requestes to ỹ lordes and good townes/ as they had done in Zelande. The holanders were therof ryght espouse/ for of all men they hated the fresons/ for they were euer at warre together specyally on the see and on the borders of their countrey/ and therfore the lordes of Holande/ suche as the lorde Tartertell/ and dyuers other noble men knyghtes and squyers/ herynge the requestes of their lordes duke Aubert and the erle of Ostrenant they offered them selfe/ promysynge comforte and ayde to the best of their powers/ and that they well shewed/ for incontynent they made them redy/ and auaunced forwarde. In lyke wyse dyd the men of the good townes and of the coun-

the countrey. They ſent forthe with theſe lor des a great nombre of croſ bowes and mou ppkes/ and other men of warre. So daylye men aſſembled at the towne of Encuiſe/ and ſhyppes and veſſelles came thyder/ in ſuche wyſe/ that the maryners were eſtemed to the nombre of.xxx. thouſande. It was ſayd that there came out of the towne of Harle.xii.hū dred/ whiche ſhyppes were well prouyded of all thynges neceſſary. And of a trouthe/ if the ladyes and other damoſelles were ſo roufull in Heynalt/ in lykewiſe ſo were they of Hollande and zelande. Sir Danyell of Marebbed and Guillyam of Dzuenbourge they durſt nat apere before the ladyes z gen tylwomen/ for they had ſore ſette forwarde the buſyneſſe/ for they hadde great wyll and deſyre to be reuenged of the Freſons/ becauſe of a batayle that hadde been there before/ wherin the Erle Wyllyam was pitiouſlye ſlayne/ and loſt.xxxiii.cotes of armes of his lynage/ wherfore theſe two knyghtes wolde neuer take any treſon to mercy nor raūſome. So within a certayne ſpace euery man was come to Encuiſe. Fyrſt came the Englyſh he men and than the henous/ and their cappyten was the ſeneſchall of Jumont and the lorde of Comegynes/ who was marſhall. Than came hollanders and zelanders. The frēche men came nat ſo ſoone. So they tarryed a.xi. dayes for the Frenche men/ in whiche ſeaſon there fell a debate betwene the hollanders z the Engliſh he men/ and if the erle of Oſtre naunt had nat ben/ all the Engliſh men had ben ſlayne. Whiche ſtryfe was apeſed z than the frenchmen came. Than there was great ſope made/ and cōmaundement gyuen/ that euery man ſhulde entre in to ſuche ſhyppes/ as they were aſſygned vnto before/ whiche was done. And whan they were all ſhypped they hoyſed vp ſayles and ſayled forthe. the wether was fayre/ it ſemed as it was diſpo ſed to do thē pleaſure. There were ſo many ſhippes that if they had bē arayned one af ter another/ they wolde haue ſtretched fro en cuſe to the boundes of Condzen/ whiche was in highe Freſe/ where they purpoſed to ar ryue (as they dyde) whiche was.xii. leages by water/ but they ſayled a front right ordi natly. Nowe wyll we leaue ſpekyng of them and ſpeke of the Freſons/ who (as I was enformed) were aduertyſed long before of duke Iubertes cōmyng/ with great puyſ ſaunce on them.

When the freſons knewe and vnder ſtode that they ſhulde haue warre/ all the wyſe men of the countre aſſē bled togyder/ to take counſayle and aduyſe what they ſhulde do. When they had long de bated the mater/ their entēcion was to fyght with their enemyes/ as ſoone as they myght knowe that they were entred in to their coun trey/ ſayeng howe they had rather dye as fre Freſons/ thā to be in ſeruage vnder any kyn ge or prince/ or vnder ſubiectyon. And ther fore they ſayd/ to dye in the quarell they wol de fight with their enemyes. And concluded amonge them ſelfes/ to take no man to raun ſome/ howe great ſoeuer he were. Amonge them there was one man farre exceadynge in greatneſſe aboue all other. He was hygher than any other man in that countrey by the heed. He was called Jupe Jouet/ and ſome called hym the great Freſone. This manne was greatly commended in Prucc/ in Hun gery/ in Turkey/ in Rodes/ and in Cypres. He hadde done many noble feates of armes/ ſo that he was greatlye renomed. Whaſle he harde the opynions of ỹ Freſons/ howe they wolde fight with their enemyes/ he aunſwe red and ſayde. O/ ye noble and free Fre ſons/ knowe for trouthe there is no chaunce but maye tourne. Though by your valyant neſſe/ ye haue or this tyme diſconfyted ỹ hey no wayes/ the hallanders/ and the zelanders. Knowe for trouthe/ that ſuche as come nowe vpon you/ are people more experte in ỹ warr thanne they were before: And beleue verily/ they ſhall do otherwyſe than their predeceſ ſours dyde. They wyll nat gyue it vp: they wyll mentayne their dedes. Therfore I wyll counſayle you to ſuffre them to entre/ and let vs kepe our forterelles/ and lette them kepe the feldes/ where they ſhall beate them ſelf fes. Our countrey is nat to ſuſteyne thē long We haue many dykes. They canne nat go farre in the countrey. They canne nat ryde abrode in the Countrey/ and full yuell they maye go a foote/ wherby they ſhalbe ſo we ryed/ that they ſhall waſte theym ſelfes/ and ſo retourne agayne. The mooſt they can do is to brenne a tenne or.xii. vyllages/ whiche ſhall natte greatly greue vs. They ſhall be

ſoone

soone made agayne if we shulde fight with them. I feare me we be nat stronge ynough to fyght with them at ones / for as I am enformed / they be to the nombre of an hundred thousande armed heedes. Whiche was of a trouthe / they were as many or mo. To his wordes consented thre other knightes of the Frelons / the fyrst named sir Fewe of Dorebergue / the seconde sir Gerarde of Canym / and the thirde sir Tiny of Walturge / but the people wolde in no wyse consente to that deuyse / no more wolde other noble men called the Elyns / that is to saye / the gentylmen or iudges of the causes. They replyed so with this great frelon / that he was cõcluded with them / that as soone as they knewe their enemyes entred in to their countre / they shulde go and fyght with them. They abode all on that opinyon / and so made them selfe redy. But to saye the trouthe / they were but poore lye armed. Many had no armure / but their cootes of wadmoll / and course grose clothe. Some armed with lether / and some with rustye mayle: and some there were ryght well armed.

Thus they armed theym / and whan they were redy they wente to their churches and toke ỳ crosses and baners / and made their batayls / and in euery bataple ten thousande fyghting men / & came to a narowe passage well diked / nere to ỳ place where their enemyes shulde lande. and they sawe well howe their enemyes were come / & had great desyre to take lande / whiche was on saynt Bartylmewes daye on a sonday / in the forsaid yere. And whan ỳ Frelons sawe thẽ aproche / they issued out vpon the dikes a fyre thousande / to haue lette the landynge of their enemyes. Among the frelons ther was a woman apparelled all in blewe / who all in a rage / went fro the frelons and came nere to the heynowes / within the shotte of a bowe. Than she tourned her backe towarde ỳ heynowes / and plucked vp her clothes and shewed her bare arse / cryeng in her langage. Es take this to your welcome. As soone as they sawe the leudnesse of this woman / they shot at her arowes and quarels / so that she was stryken in the legges and loynes. The arowes came flyeng at her as thycke as snowe. Than some lepte out of the shippes in to the water / and ran after this folysh woman ỳ

their swerdes and ouertoke her / and hewed her in to small peces. Thã euery man issued out of their besselis / and so came agaynst the frelons / who receyued them right valyantly and putte them of with longe pykes & longe staues bounde with yron. To saye ỳ trouthe in takyng of lande there was many dedes of armes done on bothe parties / & many slayne and sore hurte. But before of the Englisshe archers and crosbowes of Heynaulte / Hollande / and zelande / They wanne the dyke agaynst the frelons / and vpon that dyke they arayned their baners in good order / tarryeng for their cõpany / their route was more than halfe a myle longe. Than the frelons that were putte fro the dykes came to their cõpany / who were mo than .xxx. thousande / closed togyder in a grounde dyked rounde aboute with a great depe dyke / and it was nat so farre of / but they myght well se their enemyes / where they were rayned on the fyrst dyke. Thus they contynued tyll all the heynowayes were a lande / and all their bagage / and certayne tentes reyzed vp. There they rested them that sondaye / and the mondaye aduysynge the frelons their enemyes / In whiche two dayes dyuers scrymisshes were made / and on the Tuesday bothe parties were redy. Than certayne newe knightes were made / and it was ordayned to fight with the frelons. Than they auaunced forewarde in good order of bataple / and their archers before them and amonge them / & than sowned trumpettes and clarions / and so cãe a fayre pase to passe ouer the dike. Than the frelons came to defende the passage / and the archers shotte agaynst them fiersly / and the frelõs coured them selfes with targes / and with the erthe of the dyke that was betwene them & their enemyes: Howe be it they were so nere aproched / that certayne of the holanders entred in to the dyke and made bridges with speres and pykes / and so with valyant corage began to enuade the frelons / who defended their force right valyantly / and gaue suche strokes agaynst them that wolde mount vp out of the dyke / that many were ouerthrowen downe agayne: But the Heynowayes / Frenche men / Englysh men / Hollanders / and zelanders were so well armed / that the frelons coude do them no dõmage nor hurt / but cast them downe to the grounde. There were suche

were the thenoble dedes done and atchyued/ that it were impossible to shewe it. the newe made knyghtes ydenobly theyr deuoyre/ & the Frelons defended manerlyouslye. They were fewe in nombre by gre men/ but they were ye wich armed many were bareleggyd and bare footed/ & thus assaut the lorde Lyons/ the sy nesshall of Haynault/ and the lorde Lamont/ and diuers other/ as they issuyd about this dyke. They founde a wape whereby they pas sed ouer the dyke/ and so came on the Frelons with the poynte of their speres/ wherof the Frelons were sore abasshed/ so that dyuers of them lepte the dyke. Bo persone the Fre lons were fayne to oppn and sparcle abrode here and there. In this bataple the great Fre lon was slayne and the other began to flye. The slaughter was horrybie and cruell/ for none was taken to raunsome/ and specially the ho landers slewe all they myght attayne vnto/ Inso moche that suche as were taken by the Heynowes/ frenchemen/ or Englysshe men the hollanders slewe them in theyr handes. Amonge the hollanders/ the lorde Wyllyam of Dzuenbourge and his two sonnes/ Johñ and Henry (who were made knyghtes the same morning) acquyted them selfe maruey lously well/ and slewe many Frelons/ for it semed well by them/ that they loued but litell the frelons. Thus finally the Frelons were discōfyted/ and the mooste parte slayne in the felde/ but fewe were takenne prisoners/ and carped to Haye in Hollande/ and there were kepte a long season after. The lorde of Cun dzen (who was lorde of that coūtrey/ where the felde was) was the mondaye before yel den to the duke Aubert and his two sonnes/ and yet for all that they were in ꝑ felde with the frelons. The two sonnes were longe af ter with ꝑ duke. After this discomfyture they entred in to the countrey of Condzen/ & toke townes and fortresses/ howe be it they cōque red but litell/ for the Frelons dyde the great dōmage by theyr encoūtrynges. And whan they shulde take any prisoners/ they wolde neuer yelde/ but fought to the dethe: sayeng they had rather dye free Frelons/ than to be vnder the subiectyon of any prince or lorde. If any prisoners were taken/ there coude no raunsome be gotten for them/ for theyr frē des wolde nat quyte them out/ but rather suf fre them to dye in prisone. They wolde ne uer quyte none of theyr people/ without it were to delyuer man for man. And if they sawe that there were none of their people in prisone/ they wolde slee all their enemyes & take no prisoner. Thus about the ende of.v. wekes/ and that the heynous and archer had taken and beaten downe certayne townes/ villages/ and fortresses/ of no great valure. The season beganne to ware colde maruey lously/ and rayned nerehāde euery day/ and the sees full of tempestes and wyndes. The duke Aubert and his sonne/ consydryng the season/ purposed to returne in to bale & Frele/ fro whens they came/ and so in to Hollande/ the more easy to passe the colde wynter. So they departed and came to Encuyse/ & there gaue lycence to euery man to depte/ and spe cially to the straūgers/ and payde thē truely their wages/ and thāked them of their good ayde and seruyce. Thus brake vp the tour ney of Frele/ and had cōquered but lytell all that season. But within two yere after/ the sayd two noble princes assembled agayn the seconde tyme a great armye/ and wente in to Frele & made a great cōquest/ and dyd there many noble dedes of armes/ as ye shall here after. But as nowe we shall leaue spekyng therof/ and declare ꝑ maner of the mary age of the kynge of Englande to the doughter of Fraunce.

Howe the mariage of the kyng of Englande to the doughter of Frāce was ordred/ and howe the frenche kyng delyuered his doughter to the kynge of Englande in his Tente by twene Arde & Calys. Cap. CC.xvi.

Ehane herde/ howe the kyng of Englande was returned fro Ca lis in to Englande/ & there was tyll Michelmas that the plyament at Westmyn ster shulde begyn. And in the meane season great prouision was made at Calais and at Guysnes/ for the kynge and for other lordes sent fro the portes of Englande on that coste/ and great prouysyon was had out of Flaun ders/ all came by see to Calais. Inlykewise for the

for the frenche kyng and for his brother the duke of Orliaunce/ and his vncles/ & other prelates and lordes of Fraunce/ great pryuyspon was made at sayne Omers/ at Ayre/ at Tyrwyn/ at Arde/ at Mountoyre/ and at all other houses and abbeyes there about. there was no thynge spared on bothe parties/ and specially the abbey of sayne Bertyne was well replenysshed of all thynges to receyue these kynges. This garament at Westmynster began at Cristemas/ and it was ordeyned to endure .xl. dayes. But it was abredged/ for the kyng wolde nat tary there but .v. dayes/ wherin he declared the thynges moste necessary partteynyng to the realme/ and specially that matter that touched hym selfe/ and the cause why he cāe fro Calais. That done he retourned towardes Calais agayne/ and with hym his two vncles of Lancastre and Glouceſtre/ and other prelates and lordes of Englande/ suche as were cōmaunded to go with hym. They spedde them so in their iourney that they came agayne to Calays. The duke of yorke tarved styll in Englande and the erle of Derby/ to gouerne the realme in the kynges absence. Whan the kyng of Englande was thus returned to Calais/ the lordes of Fraunce beyng in Picardy were aduertised therof. Than the duke of Burgoyn and the ducheſſe his wyfe came to sayne Omers/ and were lodged in the abbey of sayne Bertyne. As sone as the frēche kyng knewe that the kynge of Englande was come agayne to Calais he sente to hym the erle of sayne Poule/ to knowe hym what order was taken in Fraunce/ concernyng his marryage/ whiche the kynge of Englande was gladde to here. Thaime the duke of Lancaſtre and his sonne Beaufordе of Lancaſtre. The duke of Glouceſter and Aſſren his sonne/ the erle of Rutlande/ the erle mal hall erle of Huntyngton/ the kynges chamberleyne/ and many other lordes/ knyghtes/ squyers/ and ladyes rode with the Erle of sayne Poule to sayne Omers/ where they were well receyued of the duke of Burgoyne and of the ducheſſe/ and thyder came the duke of Bretaigne/ and had lefte the frenche kynge at Ayre and his doughter with hym.

ye maye well knowe/ all the chere y coude be deuyſed/ was made to the Englyſh lordes and ladyes and other/ at sayne Omers and the ducheſſe of Burgoyne made them a great dyner. There was the ducheſſe of Calaiſe and her sonne & two doughters. there was great gyftes geuen of plate of golde and syluer/ nothynge was spared/ in so muche that the Englyſh men haue marueyled therof/ and specially the duke of Glouceſtre/ sayd to his cōpayne. Ye well there is great richeſſe in the realme of Fraunce. there was moche kyndnes shewed hym/ to the entente to abate and to mollyfye his rancour that he hadde agaynſte Fraunce. The lordes of Fraunce knewe well that he was alwayes harde to agree to the peace/ wherfore they shewed hym as moche token of loue and honour as they coude do. He toke euer all their gyftes/ but alwayes the rancour abode styll in his herte/ for all that euer the frenche men coulde do/ they coulde nat mollyfye his fell stomake/ for alwayes he made harde answers as they treated for any peace. The frenche men be subtyle/ yet for all that they coude gette no hold of hym/ for his wordes and answers were alwayes so couert/ that they wyll nat howe to vnderſtande them. Whan the duke of Burgoyne sawe his maner he sayde to his counsayle. We lete all that euer we do to this duke of Glouceſtour/ for as longe as he lyueth there shalbe no sure peace betwene Fraūce and Englande. For he shall alwayes fynde newe inuencyons and actyuentes/ to engender hate and stryfe betwene bothe realmes/ for he entendeth nor thynketh none other thynge. If it were nat the truſte that we haue in the kyng of Englande/ wherby here after to fare the better/ the kyng shulde nat haue to his wyfe our cosyn of Fraunce.

Whan the duke and ducheſſe of Burgoyne/ the cōtesſe of Neuers/ the countesſe of sayne Poule/ and the other lordes and ladyes of Fraunce/ hadde greatly feeſted the lordes and ladyes of Englande/ than there was cōmunication howe these two kynges shulde mete & speke togyther/ and howe the lady shulde be delyuered/ therupon apoyntment was made/ and leaue taken on all partes. The Englyſh ptie returned to Calis to the kyng/ & shewed what chere they had/ and what presentes had ben gyuen them. These newes pleased well the kyng/ for

kyng/ for he was gladde whan he herde any honour ſpoken of the Frenche kyng/ he was ſo in loue with hym beeauſe of his doughter/ whome he truſted to haue to his Quene. Than anone after the Frenche kyng came to ſaynt Omers/ and was lodged in the abbey of ſaynt Bertyne/ and dyſlodged all other that were there before/ and had the duke of Bretayne in his company. And than it was ordayned that the dukes of Berrey/ of Burgoyne/ and of Burbone ſhulde go to Calis to ſpeke with the kynge of Englande.

SO they came to Calays/ and were ioyouſlye receyued/ & had as good chere as coulde be deuyſed. Theſe thre dukes had ſecrete communycacion with the kynge and his counſayle/ ſo that many/ bothe of Fraunce and of Englande reputed that there was a peace concluded betwene Fraunce and Englande. And in dede it was nere at a poynt/ and the duke of Glouceſter agreed well therto/ as at that tyme. For the kyng of Englande hadde prompted hym/ if he wolde agree to the peace/ to gyue his ſon Iſtren the erldome of Rocheſter in heritaũce/ and to make hym ſpende yerely in reuenewes two thouſande pounde ſterlyng/ and to gyue to hym ſelfe as ſoone as he came in Englande in redy money ſyxtie thouſande nobles/ ſo that by reaſon of theſe gyftes/ the duke of Glouceſtours hardneſſe was well aleyed. So that the lordes of Fraunce ſawe well his opinyons were nat ſo obſtynate as they were before/ for they founde hym than ſwete and meke. Whaſe euery thynge was ordeyned of that they came for/ they tooke leaue of the kynge and other/ and retourned to ſaynt Omers to the Frenche kynge/ and ſhewed howe they hadde ſpedde. Than the Frenche kyng wente to the baſſyde of Arde and the duke of Burgoyne to Mountoyre/ and the duke of Bretaygne to the towne of Elque/ and the duke of Berrey to Balyngham. And in euery pte all aboute there were pyght by Tentes and Pauylyons/ and all the countrey full of people/ what of Fraũce and of Englande. The kynge of Englande came to Guyſnes and the duke of Lancaſtre with hym/ and the duke of Glouceſtre to Hãmes. Thus on a Fridaye beyng the euyn of Symon and Jude/ in the yere of oure lorde god/ a thouſande thre hundred fourteze and fyftene/ about tenne of the clocke in the forenoone. The two kynges departed out of their tentes/ the which were pyght nat farre aſondre/ and came a foote the one to the other and met at a certayne place that was apoynted. And on the one ſyde there was arayned four hundred knyghtes of Fraunce/ armed with their ſwerdes in their hãdes/ And on the other parte foure hundred Engliſſhe knyghtes in lyke maner. So the two kynges paſſed through them. The dukes of Lãcaſtre and of Glouceſtre ledde the Frenche kynge/ and the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne ledde the kynge of Englande. Thus they came forthy the ſayd eight hundred knyghtes. And whan the two kynges came nyſt togyder/ all the eyght hundred knyghtes kneled downe to the grounde/ and many of them wepte for ioye. Thus the two kynges mette togyder bareheeded/ and a lytell enclyned and tooke eche other by the handes. Than the Frenche kynge ledde the kynge of Englande in to his tente/ whiche was noble and ryche/ and the four dukes tooke eche other by the handes and folowed the two kynges. And other knyghtes after the Frenche men on the one ſyde/ and the Engliſſhe men on the other ſyde: And ſo they rode regardyng eche other in good and humble maner tyll all was done. Thaſe it was ordayned/ that on the ſame place where as the two kynges tooke eche other by the hande/ that there ſhulde be made and founded a chapell in the honoure of our Lady/ and ſhulde be called our lady of Grace. I can nat tell whether it were made or nat.

SO the two kynges hande in hãde entred in to the Frenche kynges tente. Than the foure dukes kneled downe before the kynges and they reyſed them by/ & ſo talked togyder. Than the two kynges wente a lytell a parte/ and talked a certayne ſpace. In the meane tyme wyne and ſpyces were brought. The duke of Berrey ſerued the Frenche kynge of ſpyce/ and the duke of Burgoyne of wyne. And the dukes of Lãcaſtre & Glouceſter ſerued the kyng of Englãd. thã other knightes & ſquiers ſerued all other prelates & lordes/ ſo that euery man whin the tente had parte.

hadde parte/ and in the meane tyme the two kynges cõmuned togyder. This busyncsse done and passe/ the two kynges tooke leaue eche of other/ and so retourned to their tentes/ and tooke their horses and rode towardes Calais. The kyng to Guysnes/ the dukes of Lancastre and Glouscster to Hãmes/ and the other to Calais. The frenche kyng rode to Cozdze and the duke of Orlyaunce with hym/ the duke of Berrey to Doznam/ and the duke of Burgoyne to Mountoyze. So there was no moze done that daye/ all their tentes stode styll in the feldes.

Than on the Saturdaye on the feest of sayne Symon and Jude/ aboute a.xi. of the clocke/ the kynge of Englande and his vncles/ and other lozdes cãe to the frenche kyng in to his tent. they were receyued right honorably/ and euery manne talked with his felowe merily. Than tables were sette vp/ and the two kynges sat at one table alone/ the frenche kynge on the ryght hande. The dukes of Berrey/ of Burgoyne and of Burbone serued the two kynges. thã the duke of Burbone caste forthe many testyng wozdes to make the kynges to laughe and suche as were before the table/ For this duke was a merry man/ and sayd openly/ addressynge his wozdes to the kynge of Englãde. Sir quod he/ ye ought to make good chere/ for ye haue all that ye desyre/ ye haue youre wife or shall haue her deliuered to you Than the frenche kyng sayd/ Burbonoys. We wolde that our doughter were of yage that our cosyn of sayne Poule is/ on the condicyon that it cost me a great good/ than she shulde take my sonne with the better good wyll. The kynge of Englande herde well those wozdes/ and answered spekyng to the duke of Burbone (bycause the frẽche kyng hadde compared his doughter/ to the erle of sayne Poules doughter) and sayd. Sir/ the age that my wyfe (that shall be) is of/ pleaseth you right well/ we loue nat in moche her heritage/ than I do the loue of you & of our realmes/ For we two beyng of one accorde/ there is no kynge christen nor other/ that are able to anoye vs.

This dyner thus done in the frenche kynges tent/ and after wyne and spyces taken/ than the ponge quene was brought forthe/ & companyed with a great nombre of ladyes and damoselles/ and there she was delyuered to the kyng of Englande. Whan yt was done/ euery man toke their leaue to departe. The ponge quene was sette in a ryche lytter and there wente no mo frenche ladyes with her/ but the lady of Coucy. There were the ladyes of Englande/ the duchelles of Lancastre/ of yorke/ and of Glouscstre/ & of Irelande/ the lady of Namure/ & the lady Poynynges/ and a great nombre of other ladies/ who receyued the quene with great ioye. Thus the kyng of Englande and the ponge quene and his company/ rode to Calais the same nyght/ and the frenche kyng and his cõpany to sayne Omers. Than the Tuesdaye after whiche was Alhalowen day/ the kyng of Englande maryed the sayd lady Isabell of Fraũce/ in the churche of sayne Nicholas in Calais/ the archebysshop of Caũterbury wedded them/ at whiche tyme there was a great feest and great largesse. The Thursdaye after there came to Calais the dukes of Orlyaunce and of Burbone/ to se the kynge and the quene: And on the fryday they tooke their leaue and departed/ and rode to sayne Omers to the frenche kyng. And the same day in the mornyng/ the kyng and the quene toke their shyppe and hadde fayre passage/ they were ouer within thre houres. the kynge laye in the castell of Douer/ and the nexte daye to Rochestre & than to Dartforde/ and so to Eltham. Thyse all lozdes and ladyes toke their leaue/ and a fyftene dayes after the quene was brought to the cytie of London/ accompanyed with many lozdes/ ladyes and damoseis/ & laye the fyrst night at the towre of London/ and the nexte day cõueyed along throughe the cytie with great solempnyte to the kynges palais of Westmynster/ and ther the kyng was before redy to receyue her. the same daye the londoners gaue to the quene great presentes. Than was there ordayned a great iustes to be holden in the cytie of Lõdon/ of.xi. knyghtes and squyers chalẽgers/ to be holden at Candelmas nexte after/ whiche was delyuered to the Herauldes to publysshe on bothe sydes of the realme to Scotlande. And whan the frenche kyng was cõe to Parys after the marryage of his doughter and euery lozde departed home/ there ranne than a

han a great hyde through the realme/ howe the frenche kyng was in purpose at the begynnynge of Marche/ to go with a great army into Lombardy/ to dystroye the lorde Galeas duke of Mylayne/ the kyng had suche displeasure agaynst hym that no man could turne hym but that he wolde make that voyage/ and the kyng of Englande had promysed to sende hym syxe thousande archers. And the duke of Bretaygne had offered to go with hym with two thousande speares bretons. Great prouysyon was made for this tournay in the Bayllyage of Eyen/ and in the countie of Sanoy. Whan the duke of Bretayne departed fro the frenche kynge to retourne in to his countrey/ syr Peter of Craon who was condempned to paye to the quene of Jherusalem a hundred thousande frankes/ and was in prison in the castell of Loure in Barys. At the requeste of the duke of Bretaygne/ the duke of Burgoyne dyd so moche to the kynge/ that by his good meanes the duke of Bretaygne had syr Peter of Craon with hym. I thynke he promysed to pay the sayd some at certayne dayes to the foresayd quene. I will now we leaue this mater/ and speke of the aduentures of Turkey.

Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy/ and howe the frenche men were discomfyted/ & howe the hungaryons fled. Cap. CC.xvii.

We haue herde here before howe the kynge of Hungery and the lordes of Fraunce were passed the ryuer of Dunce/ and were entred in to Turkey/ and all the somer after the moneth of July they had done many enterprises/ and had brought dyuers townes to their subiection/ for there was none that resysted them/ and had besieged the towne of Nycopoly/ and hadde nere brought it to a small estate/ nigh redy to yelde/ for they coude here no newes of Lamorabaquy. Than the kyng of Hungery sayd to the lordes of Fraunce and to other. Syrs thanked be god we haue had a fayre season/ we haue dystroyed parte of Turkey/ I reken this towne of Nycopoly ours whan we lyst. it is soore ouerlayde that it canne nat longe holde/ wherfore all thynges consydred I counsayle (this towne ones won) that we go no further at this season/ we shall drawe agayn ouer the Dunce in to the realme of Hungery/ where I haue many cytes/ townes/ and castelles redy furnysshed to receyue vs/ as reason is/ seyng we be come so farre to ayde me to make warre agaynst the turkes/ whome I haue founde herde and cruell enemyes/ and this wynter we shall make newe prouysion agaynst the next somer/ and sende worde to the frenche kyng what case we be in/ so that this nexte somer he maye refresshe vs with newe men/ and I beleue whan he knoweth what we haue done & howe euery thyng standeth/ he wyll haue great affection to come hyther in his owne person/ for he is yonge and courageous/ and louyth dedes of armes. and whether he cometh or nat/ by the grace of god this next somer/ we shall wynne the realme of Bemony/ and passe the braye of sayne George/ and so in to Surrey/ and wynne the portes of Japhes and Baruth/ and conquere Jherusalem and all the holy lande. and if the sowdan come forewarde we shall fyght with hym/ for he shall nat departe without batayle.

These or lyke wordes sayd the kynge of Hungery to the lordes of Fraunce & reckened Nycopoly as their owne/ howe be it fortune fell otherwyse. All that season the kynge Basaach called Lamorabaquy had reysed an army of sarazyns/ some out of farre countreys/ as out of Perce. many great men of the sarazyns came to ayde Lamorabaquy to dystroy crystendome. They were passed the Braye sayne George to the nombre of two hundred thousande men. To say the trouth the crystien men were nat certayned what nombre they were of. This kynge Basaache and his men aproched nere to Nycopoly by couerte wayes/ they knewe in feates of warre as moche as myght be/ and this kynge was a bayle aunt man/ whiche they wel by reason of his policy/ he ordered his batayles thus. All his hoost was in a maner as wynges/ his men compassed well a great myle of grounde/ and before the hoost to shewe a fayre redye in a bande an eyght thousande turkes/ the two wynges of the batayle were open a forefronte

HHH and

and narowe behynde/and Lamorabaquy was in the herte of the batayle/ thus they rode all in couerte. These eyght thousande Turkes were ordeyned to make a face/ and ꝑ as soone as they shulde se the cryſten men a pehe/ than they to recule lytell and lytell in to the herte of the batayle/and than the two wynges whiche were open before(the cryſten men beyng ones entred betwene them) to close togyther and ioyne in to one company/ and than to fyght with their enemyes. This was the ordre of their batayle.

Thus in the yere of oure lorde god a thousande thre hundred fourscore and syxtene/ the monday before the feest of saynt mychell about ten of the cloche/as the kyng of Hungery sate at dyner at the siege of Nycopoly/ tydynges came to the hoost howe the turkes were comyng/ and the scoutes that came in shewed howe they had sene the turkes/ but their reporte was nat true/ for they had nat ryden so forwarde/ that they had arewed the two wynges/ nor the batayle behynde/ they had sene no mo but ꝑ fore ryders and howarde/ for as soone as they had sene them they returned. The same seasone the greatest parte of ꝑ host were at dyner. Than tydynges was brought to the erle of Neuers/ and to all other ingenerall by their scuyers/ who sayd. Syrs arme you quyckly that ye be nat surprysed/ for the turkes are comynge on you. These tydynges greatly reioyced the cryſten men/ suche as desyred to do dedes of armes. Than euery man rose fro their dynners and put the tables fro them/ and demaunded for their harneſſe and horses/ and they were well chafed before with drynkynge of wyne. Than euery man drewe in to the felde/baners and standerdes displayed/ euery man to his owne baner. Than the baner of our lady was displayed/ therwith the valyaunt knyght sir Johan of Vien admyrall of Fraunce/ and the frenche men were the fyrſt that dyewe in to the felde freſshely apareiled/ makynge small accompte of the turkes/but they knewe nat that they were so great a nombre as they were/nor that Lamorabaquy was there in his owne persones. As these lordes of Fraunce were into the felde/ there came vnto them the kynge of Hungerys marshall in great haſt/ who was a valyaunte knyght/ called Henry of Olen leyhall/ vpon a good horse with a penon of his armes/of syluer a crosse sable ancorey/called in armure the ꝑson of a mylstone. Whan he came before the baner of our lady he rode styll/ and (to the moste parte of the barones of Fraunce) he sayd openly. Syrs I am sent hyther to you fro the kynge of Hungery/ and he desireth you by me/that ye set nat on your enemyes vntyll suche tyme as ye haue worde agayne fro him/for it ought to be doughted leſt our scoutes haue nat brought the certaynte of the nombre of the turkes/but within these two houres ye shall here other tydynges/ for we haue sent other foreryders forth to auewe our enemyes more substancially than the fyrſt dyd and syrs ye maye be sure the turkes shall nat endomage vs/ if ye tary tyll all our hole puyſſaunce be togyder. Syrs this is the ordre that the kynge and his counsayle hath ordered/ I muste retourne agayne to the kynge. Whan he was departed the frenche lordes assembled the togyder/to knowe what was beſt for them to do. Than it was demaunded of the lorde Coucy what he thought beſt to be done/ he answered and sayd. I wolde counsayle to obey the kyng of Hungerys cõmaundement/ for that ordre semeth to be good. And as it was enfourmed me syr Phylippe of Arthoys erle of Ewe and conſtable of Fraunce/ was nat contented that the aduyſe had nat fyrſt haue ben demaunded of hym. Than he for pryde and dyſpyght helde the contrary opynyon/ and sayd. Pe syr pe/the kynge of Hungery wolde haue the floure and chiefe honour of this iourney/ we haue the vawarde/he hath graunted it to vs/and now he wolde take it fro vs agayne/ beleue hym who wyll for I do nat/ & than he sayd to the knyght that bare his banner/ in the name of god and saynt George/ ye shall se me this daye a good knyght. Whan the lorde Coucy herde the conſtable speke these wordes/he toke it done of a great presumpcyon. Than he loked on syr Johan of Vyen/ who bare the standarde of our lady/and demaũded of hym what he thought beſt to be doone. Syr quod he where as wyſe seasone cannot be herde/ than pryde muſte reygne/ and sythe that the erle of Ewe wyll nedes set on/ we muſt nedes folowe/ howe be it we shulde be the stronger and if our puyſſaũce were hole togyther. Thus as they deuyſed in the felde/ styll the turkes approched/ & the two wynges sche of .x. thousande men began to a

to aproche and to close / and had the chrysten men bet wene them / so that if they wolde haue escaped they coulde nat / for they were closed in with the sarasyns / the wynges were so thicke. Than dyuers knyghtes that were well expert in armes / sawe well the iourney shulde be against them / howe be it they auaunced and followed the baner of our lady / borne by the valyaunt knight syr Johan of Vien. Euery knyght of Fraunce was in his cote armure that euery man semed to be a kinge / they were so freshly apareyled. As it was shewed me whan they began fyrste to fyght with the turkes / they were nat past a seuen hundred men. Lo beholde the great foly and outrage / for if they had tarryed for the kynge of Hungery who were threscore thousande men / they had been lykely to haue doone a great acte / and by them and by their pryde all was lost / and they receyued suche dõmage / that sythe the bataple of Rounsenalx / where as the .xii. peres of Fraūce were slayne crystendoune receyued nat so great a dõmage howe be it or they were dyscomfyted a great nombre of turkes were slayne / for the frenche men dyscomfyted the fyrst bataple of the turkes / and had them in chase tyll they came in to a valey / where Lamorabaquy was with his hole puyssaunce. Than the frenchmen wolde haue retourned to their hoost / but they coulde nat / for they were closed in on all partes. there was a sore bataple / the frenche men endured longe. Than newes came to the kyng of Hungery howe the frenche men / englysshmen / and almayns were fyghtyng with the turkes / and had broken his cõmaundement and counsayle gyuen thē by his marshall / wherwith he was sore dyspleased / and nat without good cause. Than he sawe well howe he was lykely to lese that iourney. Than he said to the great mayster of the Rodes / who was by hym. Syr we shall this day lese the iourney by reason of the pryde of the frenchmen / for if they wolde haue beleued me / we had been stronge ynough to haue fought with our enemyes. and ther with the kynge of Hungerye loked behynde hym / and sawe howe his men fled awaye and were discomfyted in them selfe. Than he sawe well there was no recouery / and suche as were aboute hym cryed and sayd. Saue your selfe / for if ye be slayne all Hungery is lost / ye shall lese the felde this daye / by reason of the pryde of the frenche men / their valyaūtnesse turneth to folysshy hardynes / for they shall be all slayne or taken / none is lykely to scape / therfore syr if ye beleue vs saue youre selfe / and scape this daunger.

THe kynge of Hungery was sore dyspleased whan he sawe howe he had lost ꝑ iourney by dysorderyng of the frenche men / and sawe no remedy but to flye or els be taken or slayne. Great murder there was / for in flyenge they were chased and slayne. They of Hungery fledde without ordre / and the turkes chased them / howe be it god ayded the kynge of Hūgery and the great mayster of the Rodes / for they came to the ryuer of Vnice / and founde there a lytell barge parteynynge to the Rodes / they entered in to it but with seuen persones / and so went of the shore / or els they had been slayne or taken / for the turkes came to the ryuer syde / and there slewe many a crysten man / suche as had folowed the kynge to saue them selfe.

NOwe lette vs speke of the frenche men and almayns who fought valyauntly. Whan the lorde of Mount caurell a tyght valyaunt knyght of Arthoys sawe that the dyscomfyture came vpon them / he had by hym a sonne of his a ponge man / than he sayde to a squyer of his. Take here my sonne and leade hym away by ponder wynge whiche is open and saue hym / & I wyll abyde the aduenture with other of my felowes. Whan the chylde herde his father say so / he sayd howe he wolde nat departe / but the father dyd so moche that perforce the squyer led hym away out of parell and came to the ryuer of Vnice / but there the chylde had suche care for his father that he tooke small regarde to hym selfe / so that he fell in to ꝑ ryuer bytwene two barges / and there was drowned without remedy. Also syr Wylyam of Tremoyle fought in that bataple valyauntly / and there was slayne and his sonne by him / and syr Johan of Vyen bearynge the baner of our lady was slayne / and the baner in his handes. Thus all the lordes and knyghtes of Fraūce that were there were distroyed / by the maner / as ye haue herde. Syr Johan of Burgoyne erle of Neuers / was so rychely besene / and in his armyse so was syr Guy de la Ryuer / and dyuers other lordes and knyghtes of Burgoyne / that they were taken prysoners

ners. And there were two squiers of Picardy
right valyaunt men/ called Gyllyam Dewe/
and the Bourge of Mayrequell/ these two by
valyauntnesse two tymes passed through the
felde/ and euer retourned in agayne and dyd
marueyls/ but fynally there they were slayne.
To say the trouthe the frenche men and other
straūgers that were there acquyted them selfe
valyauntly/ but the frenchmens pryde lost all.
There was a knyght of Picardy called syr
Jaques of Helley/ who had dwelte before in
Turkey/ and had serued Lamorabaquy/ and
coude somwhat spehe the langage of Turkey
whan he sawe the batayle lost he yelded hym
selfe/ and the Sarazyns who are couetous of
golde and syluer toke and saued hym. Also a
squyer of Toznalys called Jaques du Fay/
who had before serued the kynge of Tartary
called Tauburyn/ as soone as this Jaques
knewe ꝑ the frenche men came to make warre
in Turkey/ he toke leaue of the kynge of Tar
tary and departed/ and was on the sayd felde/
and taken prysoner by the kyng of Tartaries
men/ who were there in the ayde of Lamora
baquy/ for kynge Tauburyn of Tartary had
sent to hym great nombre of men of warre.

THe frenchmen were so richely arayed
that they semed lyke kynges/ wherby
they were taken and their lyues sa
ued/ for sarazyns & turkes are couetous/ they
trusted to haue great raunsomes of these that
were taken/ and reputed them greater lordes
than they were. Syr Johan of Burgoyn erle
of Neuers was taken prysoner. In lykewyse
were the erles of Ewe and de la Marche/ the
lorde Coucy/ syr Henry of Bare/ syr Guy de
la Tremoyle/ Boucyquant and dyuers other.
And syr Phylipp of Bare/ syr Johan of Vpen/
Wyllyam of Tremoyle and his sonne slayne/
and dyuers other. This batayle endured thre
houres sygbtynge/ and the kinge of Hungery
lost all his baggage and all his plate and to
welles/ and was gladde to saue hym selfe/ but
with seuen persons with him in a lytell barge
of the Rodes/ els he had been taken or slayne
without recouery. There were mo men
slayne in the chase than in the ba
tayle/ and many drowned/
happy was he that might
scape by any maner
of meanes.

Than this discomfyture was doone
and passed/ and that the turkes suche
as were sent thyder by the Soudan
were withdrawen in to theis lodgynges/ whi
the was in to tentes and pauylyons that they
had conquered/ whiche they founde well reple
nysshed with wyne and meate redy dressed/
wherwith they refresshed them/ and made lop
and reuell/ lyke suche people as had atepgued
bytoyre on theis enemyes. Than Lamora
baquy with a greate nombre of mynstrelles
acordyng to the vsage of their countrey/ came
to the kynge of Hungerys chefe tent/ whiche
was goodly apareyled and hanged with riche
stuffe/ and there he toke great pleasure/ and
glorifyed in his herte of the wynnyng of that
iourney/ and thanked their god acordynge to
their lawe. Than he dysarmed hym/ and to re
fresshe hym he sate downe on a tappyte of sylke
and caused all his great lordes to come to him
to tangle and to talke with them. He made as
great myrthe as myght be/ and sayd howe he
wolde shortely with great puyssaunce passe
in to the realme of Hungery/ and cōquere the
countrey/ and after other countreys vpon the
cryssten men/ and to bringe them to his obey
saunce/ for he sayd he was content that euery
man shulde lyue after their owne lawes/ he de
syred nothynge but the signory/ but he sayd he
wolde reygne lyke Alysaunder of Macydone
who was twelue yere kynge of all the worlde/
of whose lynage he sayde he was dyscended.
All ꝑ herde him agreed to his sayenge. Than
he made thre cōmaundemētes. The fyrst was
that who so euer had any prysoner cryssten/ to
bringe hym for the the seconde daye after in to
his presence. the seconde was that all the dede
bodyes shulde be dyspyted and serched/ and
such as were likely to be noble men to be layde
aparte by them selfe to their rayuentes tyll
he came thyder hym selfe/ for he sayd he wolde
se them. The thyrde was to enquyre ruffely if
the kyng of Hungery were dede or a lyue. All
was done as he cōmaunded.

Than Lamorabaquy had well refres
shed hym/ than to passe the tyme he
went to ꝑ place where the felde was/
to se the dede bodyes/ for it was shewed hym
that he had many of his men slayne/ and that
the batayle had cost hym greatly/ of the which
he had great maruayle/ and coulde nat byleue
it. Than

ſt. Than he mounted on his horſe and a great nombre with him/he had with hym two of his bretherne called Balaache and Surbalaach/ as ſome people ſayd/but he wolde nat be knowen of them/ for he ſayd he had no bretherne. Whan he came to the place where the batayle was/ he founde it of trouthe that there were many deed and ſlayne/ he ſawe ℔ for one crysten man deed/ he founde. xxx. turkes ſlayne/ wherwith he was marueyloully dyſpleaſed/ and openly ſayde. Here hath been a cruell batayle and marueyloully defended of the crysten men/ but I ſhal make them that be alyue to bye it derely. Than the kynge went to his lodgynge/ and ſo paſſed that nyght in great furour of herte/ and in the mornyng or he was by moche people came to his tente to knowe what they ſhulde do with the crysten priſoners/ the tenome ranne that they ſhulde all be put to dethe without mercy. Lamorabaquy (for all his dyſpleaſure) ordeyned that ſuche crysten men as were in the batayle in great array/ and lykely to be great men/ ſhulde be all ſette togyther in one parte/ for it was ſhewed hym that they myght well pay great raunſomes. Alſo there were dyuers ſarazyns and paynims/of Perſe/ of Tartary/of Arabye/ and ſurryens that had many priſoners/ by whome they thought to haue great aduauntage/ as they had in dede/they hyd them out of the way ſo that they came nat to knowledge. Amonge other ſyr Jaques of Helley was brought before Lamorabaquy/he that had him durſt nat hyde hym no lenger. Syr Jaques de Helley was beknowen with ſome of the kynges ſeruantes/who toke hym fro them that had him/ whiche was happy for hym/ as ye ſhall here after/ for many crysten men were afterwarde cruelly ſlayne and put to dethe.

The kynge Balaach had cõmaunded to enquyre whiche were the greateſt of the crysten men/ and that they ſhulde be ſet a ſyde/to the entent to ſaue their lyues. So they were tryed out and ſet a parte. Fyrſt the lorde Johan of Burgoyne Erle of Neuers/ who was chiefe aboue all other/ and than syr Philippe of Arthoys erle of Ewe/ the erle of Marche/the lorde Coucy/syr Henry of Bare syr Guy of Tremoyle/ and other to the nombre of eyght perſones. And Lamorabaquy went to se and to ſpeke with them/and beheld them a longe ſeaſone/ and he conſydered theſe lordes by their ſayeth and lawe/ to ſaye the trouthe/ if they were the ſame perſones that they named them ſelfe for/ and they ſayde ye. And yet to knowe the more certaynte he ſente to them the frenche knyght syr Jaques of Helley/ to knowe them/ for he had ſerued Lamorabaquy before/therfore he had his lyfe graũted hym. He was demaunded if he knewe the frenche knyghtes priſoners. He anſwered and ſaid/ I thynke if I ſe them I ſhall knowe them. Than he was cõmaunded to go and aquewe theym/ and to ſhewe playnely their names. He dyd as he was cõmaũded/and whan he came to them/ he ſhewed them his aduenture/and howe he was ſente thyder to knowe ſurely their names. Than they ſayde. Ah syr Jaques/ye knowe vs all/and ye ſe well howe fortune is agaynſt vs/and how we be in daunger of this kynge/ therfore to ſaue our lyues make vs rather greater than we be in dede/ and ſhewe the kyng that we be ſuche men able to pay great raunſomes. syrs quod he ſo ſhall I do/for I am bouũde therto. than this knight retourned to Lamorabaquy and to his counſayle/ and ſayd howe thoſe knyghtes whiche he hadde ſpoken with/ were of the greateſt men in all Fraunce/ and were of the kynges lygnage/and ſaid they were able to pay great raunſomes. Than Lamorabaquy ſayd howe their lyues ſhulde be ſaued/ and all other priſoners to be ſlayne and hewen all to peces/ in example of all other. Than the kynge ſhewed hym ſelfe before all the people that were there aſſembled/to whome they all made lowe reuerence. They made a lane for hym to paſſe thorough/ euery man with his ſworde naked in his hande/ and ſo came thyder where the ſayd lordes of Fraunce ſtode togyther. Than the kyng wolde ſe the correction of the other/ whiche thynge the ſarazyns were deſyrous to do.

Than they were all brought before Lamorabaquy naked in their ſhyrtes/ and he beheld them a lytell and than tourned fro them warde/ and made a ſygne that they ſhulde be all ſlayne/and ſo they were brought through the ſarazyns/ that had redy naked ſwordes in their handes/ and ſo ſlayne and hewen all to peces without mercy. This cruell iuſtyce dyd Lamorabaquy that daye/ by the whiche mo than thre hũdred gentlemen

of dyuers nacyons were tourmented & slayne for the loue of god/on whose soules Jesu haue mercy. Amonge other was slayne syr Henry Wantoigne of Heynalt/and so it was the lord Boucyquante marshall of Fraunce was one of theym that was brought naked before the kynge/and had ben slayne with other/and the erle of Neuers had not espyed hym. As sone as he sawe hym he went streyght to the kynge and kneled downe/and desyred hym effectuously to respyte fro the dethe that knyght syr Boucyquant/sayenge howe he was a great man in Fraūce/and able to pay a great raunsome. Lamorabaquy condyscended to the request of the erle of Neuers/and so syr Boucyquant was sette amonge them that shulde be saued. Thus cruell iustyce was done that day vpon the cryslen men/and bycause that Lamorabaquy wolde that his victory shulde be knowen in Fraunce/he apoynted out thre of the frenche knyghtes to come before hym wher of syr Jaques of Helley was one. Than the kyng demaūded of the erle of Neuers whiche of tho thre knyghtes he wolde chose to sende in to Fraunce to the kynge and to the duke of Burgoyne his father. Than the erle of Neuers sayd/syr and it please you I wolde that this knyght syr Jaques of Helley shulde go thyder fro you and fro vs. So syr Jaques taryed with Lamorabaquy and the other two knyghtes delyuered to dethe and so slayne/ whiche was pytie. Than Lamorabaquy was well apeased of his furoure/and vnderstode howe the kyng of Hungery was scaped away a lyue. Than he determyned to retourne in to Turkey to a cytie called Burse/and so he dyd and thyder all ꝑ prisoners were brought/and than his army departed/and specyally suche as were of farre coūtreys/as Tartary/Perre Mede/Sury/Alexandre/and of Lecto. than syr Jaques Helley was delyuered to retourne in to Fraunce/and he was cōmaunded to retourne throughe Lombardy/and to recommaunde Lamorabaquy to the duke of Mylayne/and also he was streyghtly cōmaunded that in euery place as he passed/to manyfest and publisshe the victory that Lamorabaquy had vpon the cryslen men. The Erle of Neuers wrote to the frenche kynge for hym selfe/ and all his company/& to his father the duke of Burgoyne/and to the duchesse his mother. Whan this knyght had his charge as well by writyng as by credence/he departed and toke his way towardes Fraunce. Or he departed he was sworne and promysed as soone as he had done his message in Fraūce/incontynent to retourne agayne thyder/whiche othe and promesse he accomplysshed lyke a true knight. Nowe we wyll leaue speakynge at this tyme of Lamorabaquy and of the lordes of Fraūce prisoners/and we wyll speke of other maters that fell the same season.

Of the powertie and mysery that the cryslen knightes of Fraunce and other nacyons endured/in the commynge home to their countreys. Cap. CC.xviii.

After this great dyscōfyture that the turkes had vpon the cryslen men/suche knyghtes as coulde saue them selfe dyd. The same mondaye there was a thre hundred knyghtes & squyers that were gone a forayenge/and were nat at the bataple/for whan they knewe (by them that fledde) that the bataple was doone/they had no desyre to retourne agayne to their lodginges/but fledde as well as they myght and toke dyuers wayes to flye fro ꝑ turkes. Ther fled bothe frenchmen/englysshmen/almayns/ scottes/Flemynges/and of other nacyons/ and they came in to a countrey lopynge to Hungery called Blacquy/it was a countrey replenysshed with dyuers people/they were conquered vpon the turkes and tourned perforce to the cryslen faythe. The keepers of the portes/townes/and castels suffered these cryslen men to entre and to lodge/but the nexte morynge at their departure they tooke fro these knyghtes and squyers all that they had/ and gaue them poore cotes/and a lytell syluer to passe therwith one dayes tourney. This grace they shewed to the gentlemen. And as for other peomen & varlettes they were spoyled all naked and sore beaten and euell entreated without pytie. So they passed throughe the coūtrey of Blacquy in great powerte/and throughe

thzough Hũgery/ they coude scant get breed foz goddesłane/ noz lozdgyng at nyght. they endured this daunger in passynge tyll they came to Vyen in Austrich. There they were receyued moze swetely / and refresshed and newe clad de/ and so thzoughe the realme of Boesme / foz if they hadde founde the Almaygnes so harde / they had neuer tourned agayne/ but rather dyed foz colde and hunger. Euery man that herde them tell of that aduenture hadde pytie on them. So finally they came in to Fraunce to Paris/ and there shewed their aduentures. At the begynnynge they coude nat be beleued. Some in Parys sayde. It is pytie these vnthzistes be vnhanged oz dzowned/ foz tellyng of suche lies Howe be it these tidynges dayly multiplyed wt reloztyng of newe men. Whan the frenche kynge vnderstode that these newes dayly renewed/ they were nothyng pleasaunt to hym foz it was a great dõmage of the losse of the noble men of his blode / and of other good knyghtes and squyers of the realme of Frãce. Than he cõmaunded no man to be so hardye to speke any moze of that mater / tyll he were better enfourmed of the certentie/ and cõmaunded that all suche as were come oute of Hungery/ shulde be taken and put in prisone tyll the trouth were knowen. So there were many putte in to prison. And the kyng hadde ozdayned/ that if the newes were nat trewe / that they shulde be all dzowned and putte to dethe.

Howe the trewe tidynges of the batayle in Turkey was knowen in the frenche kyngs house. Capt. CC. xix.

So it was on Chrystẽmas daye / sir Jaques of Helley about the houre of noone entred in to Parys/ and so toke his lodgynge/ and demaunded where the kyng was/ and it was shewed hym that he was at saynt Poules on ỳ tyuer of Seyn Than he went thyder. There was with the kyng the duke of Orlyaunce his brother/ the duke of Berrey/ the duke of Burgoyne/ the duke of Burbone/ and therle of saynt Poule and dyuers other noble men of the realme of Fraunce / as the vsage was foz suche noble men to be with the kynge at suche highe festes. So sir Jaques of Helley entred in to the court boted and spurred. As than he was nat be knowen/ foz he had of long tyme haũted farre countreis. He dyd so moche that he came to the kynges chambze/ and sayd/ howe he came fro Lamozabaquy oute of Turkey/ and hadde ben at the batayle befoze Nicopolye/ where the Chzisten men had lost the tournay. And sayd he hadde letters fro the erle of Neuers/ and fro other lozdes of Fraunce/ suche as were pzisoners. than he was bzought to the kynge. He kneled downe / and wisely declared his message / as well fro Lamozabaquy/ as fro the erle of Neuers/ and other lozdes of Fraunce pzisoners in Turkey. the kynge gaue hym audyence/ and was swetely examyned of all the hole mater/ and to euery thyng he answered so discretely/ that ỳ kyng was well content with hym/ and was ryght sozoufull foz the dõmage that ỳ kyng of Hũgry and they had sustayned/ Howe be it they were gladde that the kyng of Hungery was scaped/ without dethe oz pzisonment/ foz they sayde he shulde recouer ryght well agayne the losse and dõmage that he had receyued at that tyme. Also they were ryght toyfull that the erle of Neuers and the other lozdes were escaped the dethe/ and were but as pzisoners And they sayde there was no doute but they shulde be raunsomed and delyuered. Foz sir Jaques of Helley sayd/ there was no doute but that Lamozabaquy wolde withm ỳ pere put them to raũsome/ foz he loued golde and richelle. And that sir Jaques sayd/ he knewe well/ bycause he had long ben conuersaunt in Turkey/ and serued Lamozabaquyes father moze than thze yere. Thus the kynge ryght well receyued this knyght/ and so dyde all other lozdes/ suche as were there. And euery man sayd he was happy in this wozlde to be in suche a batayle/ and to haue the acquayntaunce of suche a hethan kynge/ as Lamozabaquy was / sayenge it was an honoure foz hym and foz all his lynage. than the kyng cõmaunded

maunded all ſuche as were in priſon to be de
lyuered/ wherof they were gladdo.

THus theſe newes that ſir Jaques of
Helley had brought/ ſpredde anone a
brode in Fraunce and in other places. many
were right ſorouſull for the loſſe of their fa
thers/ bretherne/ huſbandes/ & chyldren/ and
nat without good cauſe/ and ſpecially ỳ gret
ladyes of Fraunce/ as the ducheſſe of Bur
goyne for her ſonne the erle of Neuers/ and
her doughter Margarete of Heynault was
ſorouſull for the erle her huſbande. In lyke
wyſe was dolorous Mary of Berrey coun
teſſe of Ewe for her huſbande the lorde Phi
lyppe of Arthoiſe conſtable of Fraunce. And
in lykewiſe ſo was the counteſſe of Marche/
the lady of Coucy/ and her dought of Bare/
the lady of Sully/ and many other ladyes/
as well of Fraunce as of other places. And
whan they had wepte ynoughe/ than they re
confortd them ſelfe/ in that they were natte
clayne/ but priſoners. But ſuche as knewe
their huſbãdes/ fathers/ bretherne/ chyldren/
and frẽdes deed/ their lamẽtacions endured
long in Fraũce. The duke of Burgon made
moche of this knyght ſir Jaques of Helley/
who had brought hym worde that his ſonne
was alyue/ and gaue hym many ryche gyf
tes/ and reteyned hym as one of his knyght
tes with two hundred pounde of reuenewes
yerely during his lyfe. The frenche kyng &
all other lordes gaue largely to this knight.
Thã he ſhewed howe he muſt nedes returne
agayne to Lamorabaquy/ for that was his
promyſe at his departynge/ for he ſtoode but
as priſoner: and ſayd/ howe he hadde nat re
tourned/ but to do this meſſage fro Lamora
baquy. The kynge and other thought it but
reſonable/ that he ſhulde kepe his promyſe.
Than the kynge and other wrote to theſe pri
ſoners. And it was concluded by counſayle/
that the frenche kyng ſhulde ſende a knight
of honour to Lamorabaquy/ to thentent that
he myght retourne agayne to bring newe ty
dynges/ in what caſe the priſoners were in.
There was apoynted to go in this voyage
ſir Johñ of Caſtell morant/ who was a wyſe
knyght and well languaged. Than it was
demaunded of ſir Jaques what iowelles or
preſentes the kynge myght beſt ſende to La
morabaquy/ and that ſhulde beſt pleaſe hym/
to the entent that the priſoners ſhulde be the
better entreated. The knight anſwered/ that
Lamorabaquy toke gret pleaſure in clothes
of arras/ made of olde auncyent hyſtories.
And alſo he ſayd/ he had great delyte in theſe
whyte Faucons/ called Gerfaucons. Alſo he
ſayd/ that fyne lynnen clothes and fyne ſcar
lettes were moche made of there/ for of clothe
of golde and ſylke they hadde plentie. This
pleaſed well the frenche kyng and the duke
of Burgonoe/ whoſe myndes were ſette to
pleaſe Lamorabaquy. Thus a.xii. dayes ſir
Jaques of Helley taryed at Parys/ and eue
ry man was gladdo to here hym reporte of ỳ
aduentures of Turkey/ and of the maner of
Lamorabaquy.

WHan he depted to retourne/ the kyn
ge ſayd to hym. Sir Jaques/ take
your way and make but ſmall tour
neys at your eaſe. I thynke ye wyll returne
by Lombardy & ſpeke with the duke of Myl
layne/ for there is great ampyte betwene hym
and Lamorabaquy. But whiche waye ſo e
uer ye go/ we wyll that ſir Johan of Caſtell
Morant abyde in Hungry tyll ye haue gote
hym a ſaueconducte to go to Lamorabaquy/
with ſuche preſentes as we ſhall ſende hym/
to the entent that he ſhulde be the more fauo
rable to the priſoners. Sir quod he/ all this
ſhalbe done. So he departed and tooke the
ſame waye he came. Anone after his depar
ture/ the kynge and the duke of Burgoyne
dyde prepare for theſe preſentes/ and ſir Jo
han of Caſtell Morant diſpatched and had
his charge. He had with hym fyre cõmers la
den with preſẽtes/ two of them with clothes
of arras/ of the goodlyeſt that coude be gote
wrought with the ſtorie of Alexandre of his
lyfe and conqueſtes/ right pleaſaunt to be
holde. other two cõmers were charged with
fyne ſcarlettes whyte & reed. And alſo with
moche payne/ the kynge gate of theſe whyte
gerfaucons. Thus ſir Johan of Caſtell mo
rant departed fro Parys with his preſentes
and charge/ a fyftene dayes after that ſir Ja
ques of Helley was departed. In this mean
ſeaſon the kynge of Hungry retourned in to
his coũtre/ wherof all his people were right
ioyfull for they loued hym/ and ſo came & con
forted hym/ and ſayde. Sir/ though ye haue
hadde dõmage at this tyme/ another tyme ye
ſhall right well recouer it. Thus the kynge

bare his

bare his dõmage as well as he myght. On ỹ other parte / Lamorabaquy retourned in to his countre / & came to a towne called Burſe and thyder were all the priſoners brought / & there ſette vnder ſure keppynge. They were nothyng there at their eaſe. The heate of the countrey and dyette ſore chaunged them / for they hadde ben vſed before to ſwete and delycate metes and drinkes / and had their owne cookes and officers that dyde prepare their meates accordynge to their dyettes: & there in Turkey they were ſarued all contrarye / with groſe meates / fleſh be yuell ſodden and dreſſed. They had ſpyces ynough / & breddе made of mylke / clene fro the nature of Fraũce. They had wyne and that was with great daunger. Thoughe they were all great lordes / they were but ſmally regarded there. The turkes had as lyue they had been ſicke as hole / and deed as a lyue. they wolde they had ben all putte to execuſyon. So theſe priſoners conforted eche other within themſelfe for they ſawe none other remedy. ſo ſome of thẽ their nature chaunged and fell in to ſickeneſſe. He that made the beſt chere and countynaunce was the Erle of Neuers / and that he dyde to conforte his companyons. alſo ſir Bouciquant and the erle of Marche and ſir Henry of Bare were of good conforte / and tooke euery thynge pacyently / ſayeng that the honours in armes nor the glorie of this worlde / coude nat be hadde without payne / and ſomtyme with metyng of harde aduentures. For they ſaid that there was neuer ſo valyaunt and happy / that had alwayes euery thyng as they wyll hed. They ſayde they were bounde to thanke god that he hadde ſaued their lyues / conſyderynge the diſpleaſure that Lamorabaquy and his counſayle were in / for the loſſe of their men / for it was ones determyned that we ſhulde all generally haue been putte to dethe. Than Bouciquaunt ſayd / I ought aboue all other to thanke god of my lyfe / for I was at the poynt to haue bẽ hewen all to peces / as other of my company were / but at the requeſt of my lorde here / the erle of Neuers I was ſaued. This aduenture call I good / and ſithe god hath delyuered vs fro this paryll / he wyll and it pleaſe hym delyuer vs fro a greatter / for we be his ſoudyers / & for his ſake we haue this payne / For by reaſon that ſir Jaques of Helley is gone in to Fraunce / I truſt within a yere we ſhall haue good conforte / and be delyuered. The matter can nat abyde thus. The Frenche kyng and the duke of Burgoyn wyll nat forgette vs / but by ſome meanes / raunſomed and delyuered.

Thus ſir Boucyquaunt reconforted hym ſelfe / and tooke euery thyng in good pacyence / but the lorde Coucy coude take no cõforte / whiche was maruayle for before that tyme he was a lorde of great wyſdome and of great conforte / & neuer was aball hed. but beyng thus in priſon in Burſe in Turkey / he was more diſconforted than any other / and in more malencoly. And ſayd he was ſure he ſhulde neuer retourne in to Fraũce. Sir Henry of Bare conforted hym as moche as he myght / and blamed hym of his diſconforte / ſayeng howe he ought to gyue conforte to all other. Howe be it the ſame ſir Henry was ſore aball hed in hym ſelfe / & oftentymes remembred his wyfe and wolde wepe pituouſly. And in lykewiſe ſo dyd ſir Philyppe of Arthoiſe erle of Ewe and conſtable of Fraunce. Sir Gupe of Tremoyle was of good conforte / and ſo was the erle of Marche. Lamorabaquy was content / ſomtyme that they ſhulde haue ſome paſtyme / & ſomtyme he wolde go hym ſelfe and ſe them / and tangle and bourde with them right gracyouſly / and wolde that they ſhulde ſe parte of his eſtate & puyſſaunce. Now lette vs leaue ſomwhat to ſpeke of them and ſpeke of ſir Jaques of Helley and ſir Johñ of Caſtell Morant / who were bothe tyding towardes Hungry.

Sir Jaques of Helley taryed in the cytie of Bode in Hungry about a ten or xii. dayes / abydinge for ſir Johan of Caſtell morant / And whan he was cõe ſir Jaques was ioyfull / for he was deſyrous to paſſe forthe in to Turkey / to acquyte hym of his fayth and promyſe / and to ſe the erle of Neuers and the lordes of Fraunce / and to conforte them. Whan the kynge of Hungry ſawe ſir Johñ of Caſtelmorant he made hym good chere for the loue of ỹ frenche kynge / & he underſtode that the frenche kyng had ſent by hym gret preſẽtes & iowels to lamorabaq

wherwith

wherwith he was sore displeased in his mynde/ but he dissymuled the mater/ and kepte it couert tyll sir Johan Helay was departed into Turkey warde/ but he said to suche of his priuye counsayle as he discouered the mater vnto/ howe that the miscreant dogge his aduersary Lamorabaquy shulde haue no prisoners out of Fraunce/ nor fro no place els/ if it laye in his power to lette it. Sir Johñ Helay was departed/ and promysed to gette of Lamorabaquy a sauconducte for sir Johan Mozant/ to passe in to Turkey and repasse. So long he trauayled with guydes/ that he came in to Turkey to the cytie of Burse/ but as than Lamorabaquy was in another cytie called Poly. And where so euer he went the prisoners were caryed with hym/ excepte the lorde Coucy who taryed styll at Burse/ for he coude nat endure to ryde/ he was so sicke/ and with hym taryed a coslyn of his of Grece a right valyant barone/ discended of the lynage of the dukes of Austriche/ who was called Wathelyn. Whan sir Jaques was come to Poley Lamorabaquy was gladde to se hym/ bycause he was come out of Fraunce. Than sir Jaques right humbly said to him. Right dere & redouted sir/ beholde here your prisoner to the best of my power/ I haue don your message þ ye gaue me in charge to do. Than Lamorabaquy sayd/ thou arte welcõe Thou hast trewly acquyted thy selfe/ & therfore I acquyte the of thy raunsome & prison/ so that thou mayst go/ retourne/ & tary at thy pleasure: wherof sir Jaques right hũbly thãked hym. Than he shewed howe the frenche kyng and the duke of Burgoyne had sente a knyght of honoure embassade to hym with credence/ and had brought with hym certayne presentes of pleasure fro the frenche kyng. Lamorabaquy demaunded what they were/ and if he had sene them or nat. The knyght answered sir/ I haue nat sene them/ but the knyght that hath þ charge to do the message is at Bode in Hungry. And sir/ I am come before to shewe you therof/ & to haue a sauconducte for the sayd knyght to come and to retourne safely. Than Lamorabaquy sayd. We wyll that he haue one/ as thou wylte deuyse/ wherof the knyght thanked hym. So they departed as at that tyme. Another tyme sir Jaques spake with Lamorabaquy & kneled downe before hym and humbly requyred that he myght se the lordes and knyghtes of Fraunce/ for he had dyuers thynges to saye to them out of their countre. Lamorabaquy studyed a lytell or he answered/ and at laste sayd. Thou shalte speke with one of them/ but with no mo/ and so sent for the erle of Neuers alone/ and whan he was come sir Helay kneled downe to hym. Therle was glad to se hym/ and demaunded howe the frenche kynge and the duke his father/ & the duches his mother dyde. The knyght shewed hym all that he knewe/ and all that he was charged to saye to hym/ howe be it they had nat so good leysar to talke togyder/ as they wolde haue had/ for Lamorabaquyes men that were there present badde them haue done/ for they sayd they had other thynges to do/ than to stande there and wayte vpon them. Than sir Jaques demaunded of the Erle howe all the other lordes of Fraunce dyde. The Erle said they were all in good case/ except þ lorde of Coucy/ who was somwhat diseased/ and was at the cytie of Burse. Than sir Jaques shewed hym howe sir Johan of Castell morant was come out of Fraunce/ fro the kyng and fro the duke of Burgoyne in embassade to Lamorabaquy/ and to allwage his yre/ he hath sent hym ryche rewelles and presentes/ but he is at Bode in Hungry with the kyng there/ and I am come before for a sauecõduct for hym to come and go/ the whiche Lamorabaquy hath graunted. And I thynke I shall retourne to hym shortly. Herof therle was right ioyous/ but he durst make no semblant for feare of the Turkes/ but said. sir Jaques I vnderstande by you/ that ye are quyte of your raunsome and prison/ and that ye maye retourne whan it pleaseth you in to Fraũce/ whan ye come there/ I praye you shewe the kyng and my father that we all desyre them/ to treate as shortely as maye be for our delyuerauce/ by some marchauntes genowayes or venysyons/ and agree at the fyrst worde to that Lomorabaquy shall desyre for our raũsome/ for if they shulde make long treatie with hym/ we shalbe lost for euer. for I vnderstãde Lamorabaquy is trewe of his worde/ curteise and short in all his maters/ so he be taken at the poynt.

Thus the erle of Neuers and sir Jaques departed. Whan the saueconducte was redy it was

it was delyuered to ſir Jaques. Than he toke his leaue of Lamorabaquy/ and of other of his courte of his aquayntaunce/ and rode ſo longe by his tourneys/ that he arryued at Bode in Hungry. Than he dyewe to ſir Johan Worſaunt/ who thought longe for hym. Than ſir Jaques ſayd. ſir/ I haue brought you a ſaueconducte to go in to Turkey/ and all youre company/ and to retourne agayne at your pleaſure. I am gladde therof ꝙ the knyght. Lette vs go to the kyng of Hungry and ſhewe hym therof/ and than to morowe betymes lette vs departe/ for I haue tarryed here longe ynoughe. Than they bothe togyder wente to the kyng in to his chambre/ and ſhewed hym all the mater. The kynge than anſwered and ſayde. Sir Johan Worſaunt and ye Helly/ ye be welcome/ ye ſhall go at youre pleaſure/ for the loue of my coſyns of Fraunce/ to whom I wolde be gladde to do pleaſure/ and to you alſo. ye maye go & come throughe my realme at your pleaſure/ and alſo in to Turkey if ye pleaſe: But as for your preſentes that you ſir Johan haue brought out of Fraũce/ I wyll nat agree that ye ſhall conuey them to that hell hounde Lamoraba quye/ He ſhall neuer be enryched therwith. It ſhulde tourne to our great ſhame and rebuke/ if he ſhulde make his auaunt/ that by cauſe he hath had victorie on vs/ and hath in daunger and priſon certayne lordes of Fraũce/ that for feare therof/ there ſhulde be ſente to hym ryche preſentes: as for the Gerfaucõs I care nat for/ for foules flye lightly oute of one countre in to another/ they are ſoone gyuen and ſoone loſt/ But as for ryche hangynges of arras are thynges to be ſene and to endure for euer. Wherfore ſir Johan Worſaunt/ if ye wyll paſſe in to Turkey with your gerfaucõs go whan it pleaſe you/ but as for any other thyng ye ſhall haue non with you: than the knyght aunſwered and ſayd. Certaynly ſir it ſhulde nat be myne honour/ nor pleaſãt to the Frenche kynge/ nor to the lordes that haue ſente me hyder/ without I myght accõplyſſhe my voyage/ as I haue in charge. well quod the kynge/ ye ſhall haue none other waye of me at this tyme. So the kynge went fro them and lefte the two knightes/ kynge togyder. They were ſore troubled with the abuſyon on the kynge of Hungery. Than they counſayled togyder/ what was beſt for them to do. Than they determyned to ſende haſtye meſſangers to the frẽche kynge and to the duke of Burgoyne/ ſithe they ſawe they coulde haue none other remedy/ they wrote letters to the kyng and to the duke of Burgoyne/ that they ſhulde ſpyede for the mater. They ſente their letters by poſte/ to make the more haſt/ and tarryed ſtyll them ſelfes at Bode with the kyng of Hungry/ abydyng the retourne of their meſſanger.

THis meſſanger ſpedde ſo well/ and made ſuche dylygence/ that he came to Parys/ and there founde ꝯ kyng and the duke of Burgoyn/ and there ſhewed his letters and they were reed at length/ with the whiche they were nothynge pleaſed/ and had marueyle that the kyng of Hungry wolde nat ſuffre his preſentes to paſſe throughe his countre in to Turkey. The duke of Berry excuſed the kynge of Hungry and ſayd/ howe he had good cauſe to do as he dyde/ for it is a thyng to humbly done for the kynge to ſende ſuche preſentes to an hethan thyng. the duke of Burgoyne/ byeauſe the mater touched hym/ he was of the contrary opinyon/ and ſaid it was a thyng reaſonable ſo to do/ ſith that fortune hath ben ſo fauorable to hym to haue the victorie in ſuche a batayle/ and hath hadde the kyng of Hungry in chaſe and hath taken priſouners/ all ſuche noble men as were agaynſt hym in that tourney/ wherfore the frẽdes of thoſe priſouners may well fynde the meanes howe to comforte them for their delyuerraunce. This dukes wordes were beholden with the kynge and with dyuers of his counſayle. Than the kynge demaunded of his vncle of Berrey/ Sayeng/ fayre vncle/ if Lamorabaquy the ſoudan or any other hethan kynge ſende you a ruby or a ryche iewell/ whether wyll ye retayne it or nat. Sir quod he I wolde take double. Than ꝯ kyng ſayd/ It paſſeth nat yet tenne yere/ ſythe the ſoudan ſente you a ruby whiche coſt twentie thouſande frankes. So the kynge of Hungries dede was nat ſuffiſyently/ but it was ſayd that he had yuell done to ſtoppe the goyng of theſe preſentes/ and that it ſhulde rather hynder the priſoners than auaunce thẽ. Than the kyng was coũſayled to write to ꝯ kyng of Hungry amyable letters/ deſyrynge hym nat to ſtoppe his knyght/ but ſuffre him

to paſſe

to passe in to Turkey with his prestes and message. Than letters were written/sealed/ and delyuered agayne to the same messager/ and so he departed to retourne in to Hugry.

Howe the duchesse of Orlyaunce doughter to the duke of Myllayne was had in suspecte of the frenche kynges sykenesse. Cap. CC.xx.

I haue harde here before/ howe the frēche kyng lightly euery yere was sore enclyned to fall in to a frā sey/ so that there was nother Phisycion nor surgion that coude remedy hym. Many said they wolde helpe hym/ but whanne it came to the poynt all their labour was in vayne/ for the kynges sickenesse wolde nat cease nother for prayers nor for medycins/ tyll it had ron his full course. Some of his physcions and artoles and charmers/ whan they sawe no remedy/ than they said surely/ howe the kynge was poysoned or be wytched/ by craste of sorcerye/ whiche noyse made the lordes & other/ to haue many in suspecte. And some of these nigromancers affyrmed that the kynges sickenesse came by reason of sorcery and charmes. And to make thē beleue it was so/ they sayd they knewe it by the spyrites/ who had shewed it to them. Of these deuins/ artoles and charmers/ there were certayne brente at Parys and at Auignon. They spake so moche and sayd/ that the duchesse Valentyne of Orlyaūce/ doughter to the duke of Myllayn hadde witched the kynge/ to the entent to attayne to the crowne of Fraunce. They had so sclaundred this lady/ that bruite ran through the realme/ that she vsed suche crastes of sorcery/ sayeng: that as long as she was about the kyng/ and that he myght se her/ the kyng shulde nat amende. So it behoued this lady to auoyde this sclaunder/ and to flye fro the parysh therof/ to departe fro Parys/ and so she wente to Myners a fayre Castell nere to Montoyse/ pleyning to her husbande the duke of Orlyaūce. And after warde she went & dwelt at Newcastell on the ryuer of Loyre/ partrynyng to her husbande/ who was sore displeased in his herte/ that suche a bruite ran vpon his wyfe/ howe be it he dissymuled the mater as well as he myght. Nor dyd nat absent hym selfe fro the court/ for he had moche busynesse for the maters of the realme. The duke of Myllayne called Galeas/ was well enformed howe his doughter the duchesse of Orlyaunce was accused/ wherof he was sore displeased. And he sente twyse or thryse ambassadours to the frenche kyng and his coūsayle/ and offred to fynde a knyght to fyght at bitraūce/ with any man that wolde accuse his doughter of any trayson. And the messāgers in a maner thretned that ye duke wolde make warre in to Fraunce/ bycause the frenche kyng beyng in good helthe (at Valyngham/ but wene sayne Omers and Calis) said that assone as he were retourned in to Fraūce/ he wolde entende to nothyng/ but to make warre vpon the duke of Myllayne. And also the kyng of Englande/ who as than called hym selfe his sonne/ bycause he had maryed his doughter/ promysed to sende hym a thousande speres and fyre thousāde archers/ wherof the frenche kyng was right ioyfull. Prouysyon was made for the frenche kyng in the countie of Sauoy & in ye Dolpheney. The kynges mynde was to entre that waye in to Lombardy/ to make warre on the duke of Myllaygne. But that iourney toke none effecte. For whan tydynges was brought in to Fraunce of the discomfyture of the bataylle before Nicopoly in Turkey/ and of ye dethe and takynge of the lordes of Fraunce/ The kynge & the duke of Burgoyne were so charged and busyed in that behalfe/ that the iourney in to Lombardy was defeted. And also they sawe well ye the duke of Myllayne was in fauoure with Lamorabaquy/ so that they durst nat displeasse hym/ & so lette hym alone.

Howe the duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse his wyfe toke great dylygence/ to fynde the meanes to redeme out of prysone the erle of Neuers their sonne/ and the other prisoners beyng in Turkey. Cap. CC.xxi.

The

The duke of Burgoyn and the duches studyed all the wayes they coulde devyse/ by what maner or trayte they myght gette their sonne out of prysone/ they knewe well or they coulde have hym they shulde be sayne to pay for hym a great raunsome. they mynistred their housholde and kept a meaner estate/ and gathered as moche golde and syluer as they coulde/ for without that/ they coulde not bringe aboute their purpose. And they gate them aquayntaunce with marchauntes beneyence and genoways/ and suche other/ for they thought by theis meanes they shulde the rather come to their purpose. the duke of Burgoyne lay styll at Paris with the kynge his nephue/ and had the chefe gouernaunce of the realme/ wherby his busynesse had the better effecte. The same season there was at Parys a marchaunt of Turkey/ who had all the dopnge for all other Lombardes/ he was knowen and spoken of throughout all the worlde/ his name was called Dyne of Responde/ & by hym all exchaunges were made. He was in good fauour with the kyng and other lordes before this tourney in Turkey/ but than after the batayle he was moche more made of. Often tymes the duke of Burgoyne demaunded of hym counsayle howe he myght entre in to treatie with Lamorabaquy/ for the redemption of his sonne and of the other prysoners in Turkey. Sir q̄ this marchaūt/ I tell and I tell some meanes wyll be founde. For/ the marchauntes of Gennes and of other iles are knowen ouer all/ and occupyeth the trade of marchaudyse in Damyet in Alexandre/ in Damas/ in Damuet/ in Turkey/ and out in farre countreys hethan/ for as ye knowe well marchaundyse ryeth ouer all the worlde. Syr/ let the kynge and you write ampably to them/ and promelle them great benefytes and profytes/ if they wolde do for you. There is nothynge but it is ouercome with golde and syluer. And also syr the kynge of Cypre/ who hath hadde no warre with the kyng Lamorabaquy/ he may ryght well ayde you. Syr/ as for me ye may be sure I wyll do what I canne/ for I am bounde therto. It is not to be maruayled though the duke of Burgoyne and the duches sought out wayes howe they might recouer agayne their sonne/ for he was their heyre/ therfore it touched the ryght nere. The ladyes of Fraunce tooke great sorrowe for their husbandes and louers/ specyally the lady of Coucy coude not forget her husbande/ she wepte perpetuouslly nyght and daye and coulde take no comforte. The duke of Lorayne and syr Henry her two brethern came to saint Dobyn to se and to recomforte her/ as moche as they myght/ & they sayd they wolde sende into Turkey to knowe howe he dyd/ for they said they understoode howe he had a more gentyll prysone than any of his felowes had. The lady Coucy thanked greatly her two brethern for their counsayle and great comforte. Than she desyred sir Robert Den a valyaunt knyght of Cambresys/ to take the payne to go in to Hungery and in to Turkey/ to se what condycyon her husbande the lorde of Coucy was in. The knyght sayd for her sake he was content to go thyder/ & to bringe the certaynte of his estate. Thus he made him redy and fyue persones with him. Other ladyes in Fraunce sent in lyke wyse to knowe what case their husbandes were in.

Thane herde here before/ howe the kynge of Hungery wolde in no wyse consent that sir Mozant shulde passe in to Turkey with the frenche kynges presentes/ and in this opynion the kynge longe contynued/ whiche was right displeasaunt to sir Mozant and to syr Helley/ but they coude nat amende it. And so it happed ꝑ the great mayster of the Rodes came in to Hungery to the cyte of Rode/ to whome the kyng made good chere/ whereto he was bounde/ for the daye of the batayle the kynge had ben slayne or taken and he had nat ben/ and there he founde these two knyghtes of Fraunce. They came to him and shewed hym howe the kynge wolde nat suffer them to passe in to Turkey/ with suche presentes as the frenche kynge had sent to Lamorabaquy/ wherof he had mervayle/ & sayde howe he wolde speke to the kynge therin/ and that they shulde well knowe/ and so he dyd/ and shewed to the kyng suche reasons that he countred the kynges opynion/ and so than they had leaue to passe in to Turkey with all their presentes. and so they passed forthe vnder sure safe conduct and came to Lamorabaquy/ who receyued them and their gyftes right honorably/ after their usage/ and made great ioye

of the presentes. The knyghtes for all ꝑ spake but ones all onely with the erle of Arours at good leyser/ and at their departynge the erle spoke to them. Syrs/ I requyre you recommaunde me to my lorde my father and to my lady my mother/ and to my lorde of Werrey/ and specially to the kynge/ and salute fro me all my other frendes/ and beyre them that if Lamorabaquy wyll set vs to raunsome/ that by meanes of marchauntes or other wyse/ our raunsomes may be quyckly payed/ and we delyuered/ for by longe tarynge we shall lese/ for in ꝑ begynnyng we were but. viii. prisoners/ and nowe we be. xxi. whiche is in all. xxviii. and we shall not be delyuered without we be delyuered all at ones/ and as soone all as one/ for Lamorabaquy hath so promysed/ and sure ly he wyll not be founde false of his worde. syr Morant and syr Helley anſwerd and sayd/ how we his commaundement shulde be doone/ to the whiche he was bounde. So they departed and retourned in to Hungery/ and by the way they encountred the messanger that was sent in to Fraunce to the kynge/ bringynge a gayne letters fro the frenche kyng to the kyng of Hungery. Than this messanger retourned agayne with theym/ for he had no more to do whan he sawe them retourne/ and had done their voyage in to Turkey/ and so retourned all togyther in to Fraunce.

Howe the duke of Glouceſtre subtelly sought out the meanes/ howe to dystroye kynge Richarde of Englande his nephue. Cap. CC. xxii.

IT is long syth I spake of the duke of Glouceſtre/ ypngeſt sonne to the kynge of Englande/ so warde the tyrde/ I had no tyme to speke of him tyll nowe/ and bycause his herte coude ne nat loue the frenche men/ therfore of the losse that the frenche men had in Turkey/ he was rather gladde than sory. The same season he had a knyght with hym called syr Johan Laquyquay/ chiefe of his counsayle (as it was knowen after) he sayde to his lorde. Syr the fumes and pryde of the frenche men are well a hated/ by reasone of their sourney in to Hungery and Turkey, they be so full of pryde and bragges that they canne come to no good conclusion of any enterpryse ꝑ they take in hande. That is trewe quod the duke/ and that aperred right well/ durynge the warre in the dayes of the kynge my father/ and of my brother the prince of Wales/ for as than they coulde neuer atayne to any sourney agaynſt the Englyſhe men/ therfore I canne nat tell why we shulde haue trewce with them/ for if the warre were open/ and by reason of our good tyrell togyther/ we shulde nowe make them better warre than euer was made before. for as nowe all the floure of chyualry of Fraunce is outher taken or slayne/ and the men of Englande desyre to haue warre rather than peace/ for they canne better lyue in warre than peace/ for in spenge styll is none aduauntage. and I swere by god if I may lyue two yere in good helth/ the warre shalbe renewed/ I wyll nother spare for trewce/ respyte/ nor assurance/ for in tyme paste the frenche men haue kept no promesse with vs/ but haue falsely and craftely taken away the heritage of the ducky of Acquytayn/ whiche was gyuen and delyuered by agrement of good treatie of peace to the kynge my father/ whiche often tymes I haue herd to the counsayle of Fraunce/ whan we met and comuned togyther in the frontyr of the marchesse of Calays/ but alwayes they flatryſhed their entrees with so swete wordes/ that myne opynion was nat regarded nor beleued/ nouther by the kynge my nephewe nor by my brotherne/ but if there were a good herd kynge of Englande/ that beyred the warre as well as I do/ and wolde put to his payne to recouer his heritage/ whiche craftely and falsely hath been taken fro hym without any good tytle of reasone/ he shulde fynde in Englande a hundred thousande archers/ and syxe thousande men of armes redy apareiled to serue him and to passe the see/ and to put their goodes and lyues in aduenture in his seruice. But it is nat so/ there is no suche kynge in Englande as nowe that loueth any deades of armes/ if there were/ he wolde shewe hym self in Fraunce. there was neuer so good tyme to make warre in Fraūce as nowe/ for whos sorower gorth nowe shalbe fought withall/ whiche is all the beyre

that

that englysshmen haue in trust of wynnyng/ as they had in tyme paste in the dayes of good kynge Edwarde my father/ & in my brothers dayes the prince of Wales. I am ỳ yongest of all the bretherne of Englande/ but if I may be beleued I shall be the fyrste ỳ shall renewe the warre/ and trust to recouer the wronges that the frenchmen haue done to vs/ and dayly do/ and all by the symple slouthfulnesse that is amonge vs/ and specyally our herd the kynge my nephue/ who wyll nowe alye hym selfe by marryage to the frenche kinges doughter/ this is no token that he wyll make warre. his eyen be to heuy/ he careth for nothyng but for meate and drynke/ and reste/ and dalyenge with ladyes and damoselles. This is no lyfe for men of warre that wyll deserue to haue honour by prowes of dedes of armes. yet I remembre me of the last tourney ỳ I made into Fraunce. I thynke I had in my company but two thousande speares and eyght thousande archers/ and so passed the see/ and entred in to the realme of Fraunce fro Calayes/ and so wente a longe in to the realme/ and founde none to withstande me/ nor none that durst fyght with me/ in lyke wyse so dyd syr Robert Canoll and sir Hugh Caurell/ and Thomas of Graūtsome/ and syr Phylyppe Spllarde/ and yet they had nat the nombre that I had with me/ and yet they were before Parys and demaunded batayle of the frenche kynge/ but they coulde neuer be aunswered/ nor founde any person that sayd any thyng to them/ and so they rode into Bretayne/ and so a longe through the realme of Fraunce/ fro Calais to Burdeaux/ without haupnge of any batayle or rencountre. but I thynke surely/ who so wolde nowe make any suche tourney they shulde be fought with all/ for he that calleth hym selfe kynge in Fraunce is yonge/ hote/ and of great corage and enterprise/ he wolde surely fight/ what ende so euer fell therof/ and that is the thynge we desyre/ for we loue nothynge so well as to haue batayle/ for without it be by batayle and victory vpon the frenche men (who be tyche) els we shall haue no recouery/ but suffre with the losse as we haue done euer sythe my nephe we was kyng of Englande. This thyng can nat longe endure in this estate/ but at laste the realme of Englande shall perceyue the mater & repente it/ for the kyng taketh and shall take and leyse great tayles of ỳ marchaūtes/ wherwith they be nat content/ and yet they can not tell where the good becometh. Thus the kynge empouereth the realme of Englande/ and gyueth to one and other largely/ and there as it is but yll bestowed/ and his people byeth the bargayne/ whiche shortly wyll growe to a rebellyon within the realme/ for the people begyn to clater and to murmure therat/ sayeng howe they wyll no leger suffre nor beare it/ he sayeth to stoppe the peoples rumure that the trewce ones concluded betwene him & Fraunce/ that than he wyll make a voyage in to Irelande/ and employe there his men of armes and archers/ and there he hath ben but with a small conquest/ for Irelāde is no lande of great conquest nor profyte/ the people they are but rude and puell/ and a right poore countrey and inhabytable/ and looke what is wonne there in one yere/ is loste in a nother. Laquynay Laquynay quod the duke/ all that I haue sayde is of trouth.

THus the duke of Gloucestre deuysed with his knyght with suche wordes and other/ as it was well knowen after. He hated the kynge/ and coulde speke no good worde of him/ and though he were with his brother the duke of Lāncastre/ as one of the greatest rulers of the Realme/ he toke no care therof. And whan the kyng dyd sende for him he wolde come at his pleasure/ and sometyme nat a whyt. And whan he came to the kynge/ he wolde be the laste shulde come/ and the first that wolde departe/ and in counsayle what he had ones sayd of his opynion/ he wolde haue it taken and accepted/ els he wolde be displeased/ and somtyme take his leaue and departe to his maner in Esser called Plasshey/ there was his chiefe abydynge. This duke was a great prince/ and might well spende by yere a threscore thousande ducates/ he was duke of Gloucestre/ erle of Esser and of Buckyngham and constable of Englande. He was of so marueylous condycyons/ that the kynge douted hym more than any other of his vncles/ for in his wordes he wolde nat spare nor forbeare the kynge. The kynge alwayes was humble and meke to hym/ and what so euer he wolde demaunde the kynge wolde graunte it hym. This duke had caused in Englāde to be done many cruell and hasty iugementes/ for he had caused to be beheeded without tytell of any

good treasone that noble knyght syr Symon Burle/ and dyuers other of the kynges counsayle. and chased out of Englande the archebysshop of yorke and the duke of Irelande/ bycause they were so nygh of the kinges counsayle/ and layde to their charge that they had counsayled the kynge wronge/ and ledde hym as they lyst/ and had spente the reuenewes of Englande at their pleasures. This duke had two bretherne/ the duke of Lancastre and the duke of yorke. These two were euer about the kynge/ wherat this duke of Glouceſtre hadde great enuy/ & wolde say to dyuers/ as to suche as he trusted (as Robert bysshop of London and to other/ whan they came to him to Plasshey) Fendes/ my two bretherne ouerchargeth greatly the kynges house/ it were better they were at home at their owne houses. this duke by subtyle couerte wayes/ drewe to his accorde ꝑ londoners/ for he thought if he might be sure of them/ he shulde sone haue all the rest of the realme to his accorde. This duke had a nephue/ sonne to the doughter of his elder brother/ called Lyonell duke of Clarence/ whiche doughter was maryed into Lombardy to the sonne of syr Galeas duke of Myllayne. This duke Lyonell dyed in the cytie of Aste in Piemounte. So this duke of Glouceſtre wolde gladly haue sene his nephue sonne to ꝑ doughter of the duke of Clarence/ called Johan erle of Marche/ to haue ben kynge of Englande/ and to haue had his nephue kynge Richarde deposed/ for he sayd howe the kynge was nat worthy to holde nor to gouerne the realme of Englande. This he wolde say to them that he trusted/ and he dyd so moch that he caused the erle of Marche to come to his house/ and than and there he dyscouered to hym all his entent and secretnesse and sayde/ howe he had determyned to make hym kynge of Englande/ and kyng Richarde to be put downe and his wyfe also/ and to be kept in prison durynge their lyues/ and so he desyred effectuously the erle to accept his offre and good wyll/ sayenge howe he wolde do the best he coulde to bringe it aboute/ and that he had of his accorde and alyaunce the erle of Arundell and therle of Warwyke/ and dyuers other prelates and lordes of Englande. The erle of Marche was sore abasshed/ whan he herde the duke his vncle speke suche wordes/ howe be it lyke a yonge man he dissymuled the mater/ and answered wyselyp/ to thentent to please the duke/ and sayd howe he wolde be glad to be ruled as he wolde haue hym/ but he sayd he wolde be well aduysed or he accepted suche promesse to sone/ and wolde take therin aduyse and deliberacyon. And whan ꝑ duke of Glouceſtre sawe the maner of the erle/ than he desyred him to kepe the mater secrete. The erle answered so he wolde do. Than therle departed assone as he coude and so wente in to Irelande to his herytage/ and after he wolde neuer entende to the dukes treatie/ but alwayes excused him selfe wyselyp/ yet euer he kept the mater secrete/ for he sawe well the conclusyon shulde nat be good.

It was sayd howe the duke of Glouceſtre sought all the wayes he coude to set a trouble in Englande/ and to styre the londoners agaynst the kynge. So it was the same yere that the truce was made betwene Englande and Fraunce/ to endure for thyrty yere/ and that the kynge was retourned agayne into Englande with his ponge wyfe/ than the duke of Glouceſtre enfourmed the Londoners and sayd. Syrs/ make ye a requeſt to the kynge and it (hall be reasonable) desyre that seynge he hath peace with his enemyes/ that ye may be franke and free fro all subsydies and aydes that hath ben graunted this twenty yere past/ alleygynge howe they were nat graunted but durynge the seasone of the warre/ for ye syrs (quod the duke) that be marchauntes are yuell entreated and sore oppreſsed/ to pay of euery hundred florens. rrii. and all these goodes are spent in ydelnesse/ in banqueynge and makynge of feaſtes/ and eatynge and drynkynge/ and all ye pay for/ wherby ye be sore traueyled. and shewe you to the kynge howe ye wolde that the realme of Englande shulde be gouerned accordinge to the auncyent customes/ and ye may say that whan the kyng hath any nede or the realme/ or for the honour of the countrey/ and for the defence therof/ howe that ye wyll be redy to ayde it/ in suche wyse that the kynge and his counsayle shall holde them content. Thus by the settynge on of the duke of Glouceſtre/ the Londoners and the counsayles of dyuers other cyties and townes of Englande/ assembled theym togyther/ and on a day came to Eltham a seuen myle fro London/ where the kyng was/ and whan they came before the kynge they made a requeſt of all

of all these forsayd thynges/ and wolde that it shulde haue ben accomplysshed incontynent. And whan this requeste was made there was with the kynge no mo of his vncles but two/ the dukes of Lancastre and of yorke. Than the kynge charged the Duke of Lancastre to make therin an answere/ and than the duke sayd to them. Syrs/ the kynges pleasure is that ye departe home euery man to his owne/ and within a moneth assemble agayne togyder at London or at Westmynster/ where the kynge wyll be with his counsayle/ and his nobles/ prelates and other/ and they they wyll be redy to here your requestes/ and loke what shall be thought necessary by his counsayle/ the kynge wyll graunt it you/ in suche wyse that ye shall all be well contente. This answere pleased many of them/ but nat all/ for there were some that were of the opinyon of the duke of Glouscestre/ who wolde haue had a shorter answere/ but the dukes of Lancastre and of yorke apeased them with fayre swete wordes/ and so they departed for that tyme. But for all that they left nat their pursute/ so that the next moneth after they assembled at Westmynster/ there bynge the kynge with his counsayle/ and than there was present the duke of Glouscestre/ who greatly enclyned to their demaundes/ but at makinge of the answere he spake nat all that he thought in his hert/ but dissymuled the matter/ to the entent that the kynge nor his brethrene shulde nat perceyue his mynde. Than the duke of Lancastre made the answere to the londoners for the kynge and sayd. Syrs of London and other/ the kynge hath cõmaunded me to gyue you a determynable answere to your requestes in his name and his counsayle/ and by the consent of other prelates and noble men of his realme. Syrs ye know we well to the entent to eschewe all parelles and daungers that myght come to this Realme/ there was a generall graunt made by you and other of the good cytes and townes of Englande/ that there shulde be raysed a tayle on the state of marchaundyse/ in maner and fourme as it hath tyme nowe bynn a yere/ that was to saye of euery hundred. xiii. and by reason therof the kynge graunted and sealed to you certayne fraunchyses/ the which he is nat in mynde to take fro you/ but rather to encrease it dayly according to your desertes. but where as ye nowe wolde repell agayne that ye ones wyllyngly agreed vnto and graunted/ therfore here openly he repeleth agayne all suche graces and grauntes as he hath made to you before this tyme. Beholde here all these noble men and prelates haue sworne and promysed to the kynge to ayde and sustayne all thynges lawfully gyuen and graunted. therfore Syrs consydre well that the state of the king is great and chargeable/ and if it augment in one maner/ it mynysheth in a nother/ for the rentes and reuenewes turneth nat to the kynges profyte as moche as it hath doone in tyme paste/ the kinge and his counsayle hath ben at great coste and charge/ sythe the warres renewed betwene Englande and Fraunce/ and great charge it hath been to the kynge for suche ambassadours as haue treated betwene the parties/ as well here as beyonde the see/ also the pursuynge of the kynges mariage hath coste grete goodes. And though there be now peace betwene the realmes/ yet the charge is great of keppynge of the garysons in townes and castelles/ bynge vnder the kynges obeysaunce as well in Galcoyne/ Burdelays/ Bayonois/ Bygorre/ and the marches of Spayn and Calays/ also in keppyng the see and the portes and hauens of Englande. in lyke wyse it is chargeable the kepping of the frontiers of Scotlande whiche may nat be vnprouyded/ and also the marchesse of Irelande. All these thynges and other concernynge the kynges estate and honour of the realme/ draweth yerely great coste and charge/ whiche is farre better knowen by the noble men of ỹ realme/ than by any of you that medeleth but with your marchaundyse. Thanke god Sirs that ye be thus in peace/ and take hede that none pape without he be worthy and occuppe the feate of marchaundyse/ and as well payeth the straungers/ as ye do. ye be at a freer marte than they of Fraunce or Lombardy/ or other Realmes/ whether as youre marchaundyse repayreth/ for they be tayled and retayled agayne two or thre tymes in a yere/ and ye passe by a reasonable or dynaunce sette and assessed vpon your marchaundyse.

¶ These wordes or suche lyke spoken by the duke of Lancastre apeased great ly the people/ who were sette to be yuell/ by the settynge on of other. Thus they departed at ỹ tyme without any other thynge

dopnge / and the moste parte of thepm were well content / and suche as wolde the contrary made no semblante therof at that tyme. The duke of Glouceſtre retourned to his maner of Plaſſhey / and he ſawe well as at that tyme he coulde nat bꝛynge his purpoſe to paſſe / but ſtyll he ſtudyed howe to make trouble in Englande / and to fynde the wayes howe to renewe the warre in Fraunce. and he had of his acoꝛde his wyfes vncle the Erle of Arundell / who deſyꝛed nothynge but warre / and they had doone ſo moche that they had dꝛawen to their acoꝛde the erle of Warwyke.

The kynge of Englande had two bꝛetherne by his mother / one called Thomas Erle of Kente / and the ſeconde ſir Johan of Holande a balpaunt knyght / who had to his wyfe the doughter of the duke of Lancaſtre / he was erle of Huntyngdon and chamberlayne with the kynge / it was he that ſlewe the ſonne of Rychardе erle of Staffoꝛde / as ye haue herde here beforе in this hyſtoꝛie. The ſayde Rychardе erle of Staffoꝛde had a ſquyer to his ſonne / who was with the duke of Glouceſtre. This erle of Huntyngdon moſte cõmonly was euer in the courte with the kynge his bꝛother / and he knewe moꝛe of the dealynge of the duke of Glouceſtre than any other dyd / foꝛ couertely and wyſely he made enquery / and alſo he doubted greatly the duke / foꝛ he knewe he was fell and ſodayne / and hyghe mynded / and ſawe howe he kept his eſtate aboute hym / foꝛ the bethe of the ponge Staffoꝛde / and the peace therof was neuer made / but the greuge therof contynued ſtyll. The kynge loued well his bꝛother / and bare him againſt euery man. and the kynge ſawe well howe his vncle the duke of Glouceſtre was euer contrary to hym / and was euer about to conſpyꝛe againſt him / and to ſtyꝛe the realme to rebellyon. ſo the kynge and his bꝛother of Holande wolde often tymes comune togyther. The ſame ſeaſone the frenche kyng had ſent the erle of ſaynt Powle in to Englande to ſe the kyng and his doughter the quene and to noꝛiſſhe loue / foꝛ the truce was made in ſuche maner and condycion / that theiꝛ ſubgiettes myght repayꝛe eche to other in ſyꝛyte of all theiꝛ paſt quell wylles. the kynge and the erle of Huntyngdon made them good cheꝛe / as well foꝛ the honoure of the frenche kynge / as foꝛ that he had wedded their ſuſter. At that tyme the Dukes of Lancaſtre noꝛ of yoꝛke were nat with the kynge / foꝛ they began ſomwhat to diſſymule / foꝛ they ſawe well that the people in Englande beganne to murmure in dyuers places / on the ſtate and rewle that the kynge kept / and that the maters were lykely to go puell. They thought they wolde nat be at the kinges cõmaundement noꝛ at the peoples. And all this came by reaſone of the duke of Glouceſtre and his company. The kynge of Englande ſpared nat to ſhewe therle of ſaint Powle the ſtate that Englande ſtode in / and howe he founde alwayes his vncle the duke of Glouceſtre harde and rebell againſt hym / and ſhewed hym all thynge ỹ he knewe. Whan the erle of ſaynt powle herde the kynge ſay in that wyſe / he had great matueple therof / and ſayde howe it ought nat to be ſuffred / and ſayd. Syꝛ if ye ſuffre this / they wyll dyſtroy you / it is ſayd in Fraũce howe the duke of Glouceſtre entendeth to nothynge / but to breake the peace and to renewe the warre agayne / and that lytell and litell he dꝛaweth the hertes of ponge men of the realme to his parte foꝛ they deſyꝛe rather warre than peace / ſo that the auncyent wyſe men / if the warre beganne to ſtyꝛe / they ſhulde nat be herde noꝛ beleued / foꝛ reaſon / right / noꝛ iuſtyce hath no place noꝛ audyence / where as puell reygneth / therfoꝛe pꝛoupde therfoꝛe rather betymes than to late. it were better ye had them in daunger / than they you. Theſe woꝛdes of the erle of ſaynte Powle entered greatly in to the kynges hert / and made hym ſoꝛe to muſe / and after that the erle of ſaynt Powle was retourned in to Fraunce / ỹ kyng of Englande ſhewed all this mater to his bꝛother the erle of Huntyngdon / who ſaid to the kynge. Syꝛ / my fayꝛe bꝛother of ſaynt Powle hath ſhewed you the trouth / therfoꝛe take good aduyſe in this mater.

And as I was enfourmed / aboute a moneth after that the erle of ſaynte Powle had ben in Englande and retourned in to Fraunce / a paryllous fame and renome ranne vpon the kynge in Englande / and in a maner there was a generall bꝛewte that the erle of ſaynt Powles cõmynge in to Englande was to treate with the ſyr kynge / that the frenche men myght haue Calays in to theiꝛ handes. This bꝛute greatly troubled

and

and moued the people in Englãde/ in ſo moche that certayne of London rode to Plaſſhey to the duke of Glouceſtre/ and ſhewed hym of that matter. The duke apeaſed nat theyr wordes/ but rather augmented it more and more. Sayenge howe he coulde nat do therwith/ But ſayd he was ſure that the frẽche men wolde it hadde coſte theym all theyr kynges doughters/ ſo that they might haue Calais at theyr pleaſure. This anſwere ſet the Londoners a fyre/ and ſayde/ howe they wolde ſpeke with the kynge/ and ſhewe hym howe the realme was nat cõtent. Well quod the duke ſhewe it hym in good maner/ and make doute that the people wyll nat be contente. And marke well what anſwere he maketh/ and ſhewe me therof the nexte tyme I ſpeke with you/ and therupon I ſhall gyue you counſayle what ye ſhall do farther. It maye well be/ that there be ſome falſe traytours/ counſayleth the kynge to the ſame. There is the erle Marſhall who is Cappytayne of Calays/ who hath been two tymes in Fraũce and tarryed at Parys/ and he was one of the chiefe procurers in the treaſte for the kynges maryage with the doughter of Fraunce. And theſe Frenche men are ryght ſubtyle/ and can dryue theyr purpoſe a farre of/ and lytell and lytell purſue theyr ententes and wyll gyue largely to bringe about theyr purpoſe.

ACcordynge to the dukes counſayle/ the Londoners on a daye wente to Eltham to the kynge/ at whiche tyme there was the kynges two bretherne/ the erle of Kent and therle of Huntyngdon/ the erle of Saliſbury/ and the archebyſſhoppes of Caũterbury and of Duuelyn/ his confeſſour the lorde Thomas Percy/ the lorde Lyſle/ Richarde Credon/ Johan Boulofer/ and dyuers other knyghtes of the kynges chambre. There theſe londoners right wiſely ſhewed the kynge theyr ententes in a meke hũble maner/ and ſayde howe the brute ranne/ that the kynge was about to delyuer vp Calais into the Frenche mennes handes. The kyng had great marueils of theſe newes/ for it touched hym nere to the herte. But right ſagely he diſſymuled the matter for that tyme/ and apeſed the Londoners and ſayd/ howe all that noiſe was wronge/ for it was nothyng ſo. But for trouthe/ he ſaid/ the erle of Saynt Poule was come in to Englande for none other entente/ but to ſporte hym/ and was ſent thider by the Frenche kynge/ to ſe hym and the quene his wyfe: Other marchaundyſe the kynge ſayde there was none betwene them/ and that the kynge ſware/ by the faythe that he owed to god and to the crowne of Englãde/ and ſaid howe he had great marueyle/ wherof ſuche wordes ſhulde ryſe. Than the erle of Saliſbury ſayde. Sirs/ ye good men of London. Go home to youre houſes/ and be well aſſured/ that the kynge and his Counſayle wyll do nor entende to do any thynge/ but that that ſhalbe for the honour and profyte of this his realme of Englande. And who ſo euer hath fyrſt brought vp theſe wordes are yuell counſayled/ and ſhewe well howe they wolde gladly haue this realme in trouble/ & to haue the people to ryſe agaynſt the kyng/ whiche thynge ye of London ought to feare for by reaſone of the laſte rebellyon/ ye were in great paryll/ to haue been all vtterly deſtroyed. For whan yuell people be vp & gouerne/ tuſtyee nor reaſon than hath no place. Thoſe wordes apeaſed greatly the Londoners/ & were contented with the kynges anſwere/ and ſo retourned to the cytie of London/ And the kynge tarryed at Eltham ryght penſyue/ and full of diſpleaſure/ by reaſon of the wordes that he had herde/ and had ſtylle about hym his two bretherne/ and other ſuche as he truſted beſte/ for he thought hym ſelfe natte well aſſured amonge his vncles/ For he ſawe well howe they abſented theym ſelfe fro his Courte/ and kepte them at home at theyr owne houſes/ ſo that he was halfe in doute of them/ and ſpecially of the duke of Glouceſtre/ And ſo kepte dayly aboute hym a garde of a thouſande archers.

IT was enformed the kynge of Englande of a ſuretie/ that his vncle the duke of Glouceſtre and the Erle of Arundell/ purpoſed with puiſſaunce of people to take the kyng and the yong quene and to putte them in to a caſtell/ there to be kepte ſurely in an honeſt maner with meate & drynke/ & other neceſſaries. And alſo/ howe there ſhulde be ſet four gouernours in the realme/

as the duke

as the duke of Lancastre & the duke of yorke to rewle fro the Temmys northwarde/ vnto the ryuers of Húbre and Thyne/ & of Thayronnyng by the cyte of Warwyke/ comprehendynge all the signories of Northumberlande/ and the boundes of Scotlande. And the duke of Gloucestre had all the rule of Lõdon and of the londoners/ and of Essexe/ cõprehendyng all the boundes of the See/ and thider where as the ryuer of Húbre entereth in to the see: and also of all the yortes and hauens aboue London to Hampton/ & to Cornwall. And the erle of Arundell/ he to haue the rule of the landes mouynge fro London betwene Sussexe and Kent / Arundell/ Surrey / Deuonshyre/ and Barkeshyre / and of all the hole signories / betwene the ryuer of Thamyse and Bristowe/ & the ryuer of Seuerne/ whiche departeth Englande and Wales. And they shall holde and do iustyce and reason to euery man. But their entencyons is/ if they can fynde any reasonable waye to moue agayne and to renewe the warre betwene Englande and Fraunce/ and that if ỳ Frẽche kyng wolde haue agayne his doughter he shulde/ for suche she is but eight yeres of age/ parabuenture whan she cometh to.xii. yeres she may repente her and refuce her mariage/ bycause she was maryed in her youth And also it was no reason to dismary her fro the heyre of Bretaygne/ as it was promised. And if whan she cometh to perfyte age/ that she wyll nat refuse her maryage/ Than she must abyde by right styll quene of Englãde/ and to haue her dowrye/ but in no wyse she shulde be crowned Quene. And that if the kynge dyed or she came to laufull age/ than they purpose to sende her agayne in to Fraũce to her father. This was shewed to ỳ kyng for suche wordes were spoken by dyuers Englyshe men/ and specially by the londoners who coude nat loue the kynge. And they repented them/ that whan the cõmons of Sussexe/ Kent/ and Essexe were vp/ and came to London/ in that they dyde breake their purpose/ for as some of them cõfessed/ they were in mynde to haue slayne the kyng/ the erle of Salisbury / the erle of Orenforde / and all the kynges counsayle. And if they hadde so done by meanes of the rebellyon/ the londoners shulde soone haue made a newe heed. And by meanes of the duke of Gloucestre/ to haue founde some person to haue had the crowne and gouernynge of the realme/ and therby to haue brought the realme in to a better case than it was in as than. Thus the londoners and suche other of their secte/ dayly murmured and had many secrete cõsayls. All this the kynge was enformed of/ and moost faute was layde vpon the duke of Gloucestre.

KYng Richarde was abasshed of tentymes whan he herde & sawe suche couert hate and yuell wyll borne against hym. Alwayes he made louynge countynaunce to his vncle of Gloucestre and to the lõdoners/ but it auayled hym nothyng. On a daye the kynge sayd to his other two vncles/ of Lancastre and of yorke. Sirs/ on godbes name I requyre you to gyue me your aduise & cõsayls. I am dayly enformed of a surrtie/ that your brother myne vncle of Gloucestre / the erle of Arundell / and their complyces / are mynded to take me prysoner / by the agrement of the londoners/ and purpose to close me in a Castell/ and to order my fyndynge by certayne porcion/ & my wyfes in lyke wise/ who is but yonge/ and to seperate her fro me/ and to kepe her estate in another place. Fayre vncles/ this is a cruell maner and it ought nat to be suffred/ as long as I maye withstande it. ye haue boone me homage and sworne to be trewe to me in the presence of kynge Edwarde of good memorye thy grãdfather/ at whiche tyme all the great prelates and lordes of this realme/ sware to kepe and mayntayne me as their kynge a.xx. yere paste. Wherfore fayre vncles/ for loue and charyte/ and by the othe and promyse that ye haue made / counsayle me trewly as ye are bounde to do. For as farre as I can ymagin/ myne vncle of gloucestre entendeth on none other thing/ but how he might renewe agayne the warre/ betwene Englande and Fraunce / And to breake the peace/ whiche we haue confyrmed/ bothe you and all other of the realme/ by swerynge and sealyng/ and by the same composycion I am ioyned in maryage to ỳ doughter of Fraũce without thynkyng of any yuell. & ye knowe well/ that who soeuer bothe contrary to ỳ he is sworne vnto & hath sealed to the same/ & so proued/ bothe yuell & ought to be punished therfore/

therfore/ bothe in body and goodes. And also ye knowe well ꝑ I forbeare myne vncle of Glouc̃estre as moche as I may do/ and take no regarde to thzempng/ whiche myght cost me derely. Uncles/ ye are bounde to cõsaile me sithe I demaunde it with reason. & whan they herde the kyng speke thus/ & sawe well howe the mater sore troubled his mynde and that it touched hym nere/ and also they knew well moche of his sayenge was trewe/ they sayd. Sir/ suffre and lette the tyme ryn and passe. We knowe well our brother of Glocestre hath the moost parylous heed & brayne/ of any manne in Englande. But we knowe well he can do no more than a man may do/ if he buylde on the one syde we shall buylde on the other/ as long as ye wyll be ordred by our cõsaile/ ye shall nat nede to care for our brother. He saythe often tymes many thyngs wherof folowethe none effecte. He all alone/ nor they of his counsayle canne nat breke the peace that is taken/ nor can nat enclose you in any castell. We shall neuer suffre that/ nor to be seperated fro your wyfe/ For if he saye so and thinke it/ he is foule abused. Therfore sir/ we humbly beseche you to apeace youre selfe/ euery thyng shall turne well with gods grace. All that a man speketh cõmeth nat to effecte/ nor all that he sayth oftentymes he can nat accõplysh he. Thus the dukes of Lancastre and yorke/ apeased their nephewe kyng Richarde.

These two dukes sawe well/ that the busynesse of Englande began to be euell/ and parceyued that gret hatered encreased dayly bytwene the kyng & the duke of Glocestre. And to thentent that they wolde nat entremedell bytwene them/ they departed fro the kynges court with all their company and seruauntes/ and so toke their leaue of ꝑ kyng for a tyme/ and went to their owne. And the duke of Lancastre toke with hym his wyfe the lady Katheryn Ruet/ who hadde ben in company with the yong quene of Englande/ and went a huntyng of ꝑ bere: as the vsage is in Englande/ and the kynge tarved about London. But afterwarde the kynges vncles repented them that they departed out of ꝑ courte/ for there fell afterwarde suche maters in Englande/ that all ꝑ realme was in trouble/ the whiche had nat so forturned if they had ben about the kynge/ for they wolde haue founde other prouysyon for ꝑ mater/ than they dyde that counsayled the kyng There were none of the kynges seruauntes/ but that greatly douted the duke of Glocestre/ and wolde gladly that he had ben deed/ they had nat cared howe. the gentyll knighte sir Thomas Percy had ben long louerayne squyer of the kynges house (that is in Fraũce mayster and seneschall) for all the state of the kynge passed throughe his handes. He than cõsydring the great hatereddes ꝑ encreased bitwene the kyng and his vncle of Glocestre/ and among other great lordes of Englande/ with whom he was welbeloued. Like a sage knight he ymagined that the conclusyons coude nat be good. Thã he gaue vp his offyce as honorably as he coulde/ and tooke leaue of the kynge/ and the kynge gaue hym leaue full sore agaynst his wyll/ howe be it he made suche excusacions/ that he departed and another set in his offyce. The kyng had as than but yonge counsayle about hym/ and they greatly douted the duke of Glocestre/ and oftentymes wolde saye to the kynge.

Ryght dere sir/ it is a perylous thyng to serue you/ for we haue sene suche as haue serued you in tymes paste/ and suche as were ryght synguler in your fauoure/ yet they haue had but small guerdone. Sir Symon Burle/ who was a sage valyaunt knight/ & in good fauoure with my lorde your father/ whome god pardone. He had great payne and trauayle for your fyrst maryage/ yet your vncle the duke of Glocestour caused hym to dye shamefully/ his herd to be stryken of lyke a traytour before all the worlde/ with dyuers other that he hath put to dethe/ as ye knowe well/ for all the puissaunce that ye were of ye coude nat saue them. And sir/ we that serue you nowe/ looke for the same rewarde. For whan your vncle cometh to you/ the whiche is nat often/ we dare nat lyfte vp our eyen to loke vpon any persone/ he loketh so hye ouer vs. he thynketh we do hym moche wrõg that we be so nere about you as we be. Wherfore sir knowe for trouthe/ ꝑ as long as he liueth there shall be no peace in Englande/ nor ye shall do no mã good. Also he threteneth you & yor wife to close you vp in a castell/ & there to be holden vnder subiection/ & to lyue by porcion. sir/ ye be a kyng lost/ if ye take nat good

hede to

hede to your ſelf/as for your wife nedeth nat to care/ſhe is yong and doughter to the frenche kynge. They dare nat diſpleaſe her/ for moche yuell might come therby in Englãde. your vncle of Glouceſtre/ to thentent to make you to be behated with your people/ hath fowen dyuers ſclaũdorous wordꝭ vpon you throughout Lõdon and in other places/ſayeng/how we ye be nat worthy to beare ꝑ crowne/nor to holde ſo noble an heritage/ as is ꝑ realme of Englande. ſythe ye haue taken to your wyfe the doughter of the frenche kyng your aduerſary. Wherby he ſaythe/ ye haue greatly febled the ſignorie and realme of Englande/ and hath ſore diſcoraged the hertes of the noble valyant knightes and ſquiers of the realme/who haue alwayes valyantly cõtynued the warre/ and yet wolde do. Thus they ſaye/that ye haue brought the realme in great paryll and aduenture to be loſt/ affyrmyng/how we it is pytie that ye haue been ſuffred to contynue ſo long as ye haue done. Alſo the Frenche men byeth/ that ye wyll put out of your armes tharmes of Fraũce/ wherwith the people are nat contente/ & hateth you therfore. And they thynke it reewe/ bycauſe ye were ſo redy & gladde to take a truce/they thynke more rather byforne than by loue. for the noble men of ꝑ realme/ who haue ſerued and mayntayned the warres/ neuer agreed therto. Alſo they ſaye/ that ye haue nat diligently reuiſyted nor ouerſene the letters patentes/ gyuen/ accorded/ ſworne and ſealed by kyng Johan ſomtyme frenche kyng/ and by his ſonnes/the whiche graũt his children lyueng/ was nothyng vpholden but craftely broken. And the Frenchmen founde cautels and ſubtelties/ by wrongefull wayes/ to renewe agayne ꝑ warre. And therby toke and vſurped all the right that your predeceſſurs had in that quarell: and hath wonne therby/ landes and countreis in Acquitany/ with cyties/caſtelles/and townes. And all this they ſaye/ye take no hede of/ but haue loſte it throughe your negligence/ and hath ſhewed but poore corage. and that ye doute your enemyes/ and haue nat purſued the accydentes of the mater/ and the good and iuſte quarell that ye had/ and as yet haue: the whiche quarell your predeceſſours had as longe as they lyued. Firſt my lorde your father ꝑ prince of Wales and of Acquayne/ and alſo good kyng Edwarde your graũtfather/ who toke great payne and diligence to augment their ſignories. Thus ſir the londoners ſayd/and ſo dothe other/that a day ſhall come/ that ye ſhall repent you. Therfore ſir/we can no lengar hyde theſe wordꝭ fro you/ for they be daily renewed.

Howe the duke of Glouceſtre was taken by the erle marſhall/ by the cõmaundement of the kyng. Cap. CC.xxiii.

KIng Richarde of Englãd noted well theſe ſayd wordes/ ꝑ which was ſhewed hym in ſecretenelle/ & lyke an ymaginatyfe prince as he was/ within a ſeaſon after that his vncles of Lãcaſtre and of Yorke were departed out of the courte/ than the kynge toke more hardyneſſe on hym/ and ſaid to hym ſelfe. That fyrſte it were better for hym to diſtroye another/ rather than another ſhulde diſtroye hym. thyn kynge that ſhortely he wolde haue his vncle of Glouceſtre in ſuche caſe/ that he wolde be aſſured of hym/that he ſhulde do hym no diſpleaſure after. & bycauſe he couldе nat bring about his purpoſe alone/ he dyſcouered his mynde to ſuch as he truſted beſt: as to therle marſhall his coſyn erle of Notyngham/ and ſhewed hym his full mynde what he wolde do and haue to be doone. The erle marſhall (who loued the kyng better than the duke of Glouceſtre dyde) kept the kynges purpoſe ſecrete/ ſauig to ſuche as he wolde be ayded by for he coude nat do ꝑ kynges pleaſure alone. On a day the kyng in maner as goyng a hũtynge/ he rode to Hauerying of Bourc/a.xx. mile fro London in Eſſex/ and within. xx. mile of Plaſſhey/ where the duke of Glouceſtre helde his houſe. After dyner the kyng departed fro hauerying with a ſmall cõpany & cãe to Plaſſhey about. v. a clocke: ꝑ wedir was faire & hote. ſo the kyng cãe ſodainly thyder about the tyme that the duke of Glouceſtre had ſupped/ for he was but a ſmall eater/ nor ſat neuer

ſatte neuer long at dyner nor at ſupper. whā he herde of the kynges cōmynge/ he went to mete with hym in the myddes of the court/ & ſo dyde the ducheſſe & her chyldren/ and they welcomed the kynge: and the kyng entred in to the hall/ & ſo in to a chambre. Thā a borde was ſprede for the kynges ſupper. The kyng ſatte nat longe. And ſayd at his fyrſt comynng. Fayre vncle/ cauſe fyue or ſixe horſes of yours to be ſadyled/ for I wyll praye you to ryde with me to London/ for to morowe the londoners wyll be before vs. And there wyll be alſo myne vncles of Lācaſtre & yorke with dyuers other noble men. For vpon the londoners requeſtes I wyll be ordred accordyng to your counſayle/ and cōmaunde your ſtewarde to folowe you with your trayne to lōdon/ where they ſhall fynde you. the duke who thought none yuell/ lightly agreed to ỳ kynge. And whan the kyng had ſupped and ryſen/ euery thynge was redy. The kynge than toke leaue of the ducheſſe and of her chyldren/ and lepte a horſ backe and ỳ duke with hym/ accompanyed all onely but with ſeuyn ſeruauntes/ thre ſquyers and foure yemen/ and tooke the waye of Bondelay/ to take the playne waye/ and to eſchewe Bredwode and London cōmon hyghe waye. So they rode a great pace and talked by the way with his vncle/ and he with hym/ and ſo aproched to Stratforde on the ryuer of Thamis. Whan the kyng came nere to the buſſhment that he had layde/ than he rode fro his vncle a great pace/ and lefte hym ſomwhat behynde hym. Than ſodaynly the erle Warr hall with his bande came galoppyng after the duke/ and ouertoke hym and ſayde. Sir/ I areſt you in the kynges name. The duke was abaſſhed with that worde/ and ſawe well he was betraped/ and began to call loude after ỳ kyng/ I can nat tell whether the kyng herde hym or nat/ but he turned nat/ but rode forthe rather faſter than he dyde before. Now wyll we leane ſpekyng of this mater for a ſeaſon/ tyll we retourne therto agayne.

I Haue herde here before in this hiſtorye/ howe ſir Johā of Caſtell morant and ſir Jaques of Helley were ſente in to Turkey to Lamoraboquy/ fro the frenche kyng and fro the duke of Burgoyne/ and howe they had ſpedde. Whan they were retourned in to Fraunce/ they were welcome to the kyng and to the duke of Burgoyne/ & to the duches/ becauſe they brought certayne troyanges fro the erle of Neuers/ and fro the lordes that were there with hym. They ſaid to the kyng/ howe they truſted that Lamoraquy wolde gladly treat for their raūſoms And ỳ they ſayd they knewe by ſome ỳ were of his priuye coūſayle/ for they feare leſt they ſhulde dye in priſone/ bycauſe they be out of their owne naturall ayre. And the Turkes thynke that by their delyueraūce/ they ſhuld haue great ſyuaunce for their raunſome. By reaſon of theſe wordes/ the kynge/ the duke of Burgoyne/ and the ducheſſe his wyfe/ ſtudyed nyght and day/ howe and by what meanes they myght haue their ſonne & heyre delyuered. And ſayde oftentymes/ that the tourney and ſiege before Nicopoly had coſt them ouer moche. For therby they hadde deed thre bretherne baſtarde knyghtes valyaunt men/ whom they entierly loued. The fyrſt the Haſell of Flaunders. The ſeconde ſir Lopes of Brieſe. And the thyrde ſir Johan of Ipre. There was another the yongeſt/ who was ſtyll at home. To ſaye the trouthe/ ỳ duches of Burgoyne coūſeſſe of Flaunders ſtudyed on her ſyde/ howe to delyuer her ſonne. And ſo moche they ſtuyed/ that at laſt they founde the meanes to agre with the turkes with mochе payne. But that was nat ſodaynly done for the mater was ſuche/ that it requyred great leyſar/ and to be gote lytell and lytell.

In this ſame ſeaſon in the cyte of Burſe in Turkey/ dyed ỳ gentyll knyght Frāces Inguerant lorde of Coucy erle of Saiſons/ he was a great lorde in Fraunce/ for as ſir Robert of Deane (who was ſent by the lady of Coucy) was goyng to hym warde/ he herde by the way howe he was deed/ & that he herd at Vpen in Auſtriche. And ſo he returned in to Fraunce/ & ſhewed this to certayne of the lorde Coucies lynage/ but nat to the goodis dy hes wyfe/ vntyll ſuche tyme as the chatelayne of Saynt Goubayne was ſent to fetche his deed body enbaulmed in to Feaūce/ to be buryed in thabbey of Nogent beſyde Coucy and there he was receyued by the ducheſſe of Bare and the byſſhop of Leon/ & by dyuers other abbottes: and there this gētyll knight was buryed/ in the yere of grace a thouſande thre hundred fourſcore and ſeuyntene.

ye mape

¶ Maye well knowe that the frenche kyng and the duke of Burgoyn alwayes ymagyned/ howe to gette their frendes out of pryson in Turkey. Syr Dyne of Rethóde was alwayes in their cóseyls/ and he sayd euer that the marchaútes venetyás and genowayes/ myght well helpe and ayde in that busynesse. For he sayd/ marchauntes myght go whyder they lyst/ and by them myght well be knowen the dealyng of the turkes and tartaries/ with ꝑ portes and passages of the kynges soudans and mercreantes/ and specially they reported to Quatre to Alexandre/ to Dámas/ to Antyoche/ and in to the great puissaunt cyties of the Sarasins/ dayly they passe and repasse. And dayly marchauntes christened hath entrecours with the sarasins/ and exchaunge one with a nother their marchaundyse. So the frenche kynge and the duke of Burgoyne sought all the frendes and meanes they coulde gette to forther them: and as than hadde no desyre to make warre vpon the duke of Gyllayne/ by cause they vnderstode that he was gret with Lamoradaquy. On the otherside kyng James of Cypre/ thought well he shulde haue great thanke of the frenche kyng and of the duke of Burgoyne/ if he myght asswage the furour of Lamoradaquy/ and bringe hym to some good resonable poynt/ for the redempcyon of the lordes of Fraunce/ suche as he had in pryson. And to please them/ the kynge of Cypre caused a shyppe to be made of fyne golde/ right noble and riche/ of ꝑ value well to the some of tenne thousande ducates/ whiche shyppe he sente to Lamoradaquy by his owne knightes. This shyppe was so goodly a sayre/ that it was great ioye to beholde it: the whiche gyfte the soudan toke in gree/ and sente agayne to the kynge of Cypre the double in value therof. All this was anone knowen in Fraúce/ by marchauntes ꝑ wrote therof to Dyne of Rethonde/ to the entente that he shulde shewe it to the frenche kyng and to the duke of Burgoyn/ to haue a thanke of the kynge.

¶ This kyng of Cypre had good cause thus to do/ for he was in doute of ꝑ frenche kyng gre displeasure/ bycause he caused to be slayne & murdered by night/ his brother the bayly aunt kynge Peter/ whyche moche trouble to the Sarasins/ toke Baptalye and Alexandre. The Sarasins doubted hym more than any other kyng of chrystyente/ bycause of his valyaunce/ of the whiche dede this sayde kynge James sore repented hym selfe/ and knewe well he had done yuell. And after the same dede he fledde out of Cypre/ as vis the Christen men wolde haue slayne hym. So he entred in to a galley of Gene/ beyng at the porte of Nicopolie/ and so wente to Genes and the genowayes receyued hym. And some sayd/ that he dyde that foule murdre by the entysement of the genowayes/ for anone after the genouois came with puissaunce of men of warre and galyes/ and toke the cyte of Famagous and the porte/ and kepte it with puyssaunce.

This kynge of Cypre had a fayre ponge sonne. The Cyprience crowned this chylde kynge/ and after his crownyng he lyued nat long/ but ded soone after. And aft his dethe the genouois with great puyssaúce brought this Jaques in to Cypre and crowned hym kyng/ and so he reigned kyng of Cypre. And the genowayes alwayes susteyned hym agaynst all men/ but they wolde neuer render ꝑ the Cyte of Famagous nor the porte/ but helde it styll at the tyme that ꝑ auctour wrot this hystorye. And to saye the trouthe/ if the genowayes had nat had it/ the Turkes had wonne it longe before and all the realme of Cypre/ a had brought it in to their obeysaúce and by all lykelyhode had subdued the yles of Rodes/ and all other yles enclosed in the Mer to Venyce/ but alwayes the genoways and venetyás resysted them. And whan they sawe that the turkes had wonne the Realme of Armony/ than they toke the strong towne of Coryque in Permyne on the Mer syde/ and so helde it/ so that and it had nat ben for dout of the passage and straytes of Coryque and of Tere before Constantyne the noble/ the turkes had sore entred in to Christendome/ and vpon the border of the see/ the whiche shulde haue been great preiudyce to the yles of Rodes/ and to the yles adioynyng. Thus by these meanes the frontiers of Christendome were kepte and defended.

¶ Now let vs returne to our purpose.

This

This kyng Jaques of Cyper who knewe hym ſelfe gylty of the deth of the kynge his brother/ wherby he had the hatred of all other cryſten kynges/ therfore he dyd as moche as he coude do to get agayne their loue and fauour/ and tooke it for a great honoure that the frenche kynge wrote fyrſt to hym/ for he douted him moſt of all/ and ſo he had cauſe/ for the duke of Burbone by ryght ſucceſſyon of the lynage of Luſygnan/ ought to be kynge there and his heyres/ for thoughe this kynge Jaques was brother to the kyng Peter of Cyper/ yet he had no ryght to the crowne/ for he was but a baſtarde/ and all this knewe ryght well the genouoys/ ſo that whan he was made kynge/ there was made a great alyaunce bytwene them confermed nat to be broken/ and the genouoys to defende and kepe him and his heyres agayuſt all other/ and therby they atteygned great ſygnoryes and fraunchelles in the realme of Cyper/ and all that euer they dyd to the exaltynge of this Jaques kynge of Cyper was alwayes for their owne chiefe auauntage/ and to be ſtronge againſt the venycians and to haunte and exercyſe their feate of marchaundyſe in to the Sarazyns landes. This kinge Jaques as longe as he lyued dyd what he coulde to pleaſe the frenche kynge/ by the meanes of the genouoys/ for they wolde in no wyſe diſpleaſe hym/ and therfore the ſame ſeaſon this kynge Jaques ordeyned this ſhyppe of golde to preſente Lamorabaquy/ to haue loue and acquayntaūce with him/ whiche gyft was ioyfully receyued and moch prayſed with the turkes/ and it was thought that the lorde Dyne of Reſponde was meanes therof/ and wrote therin to the genouoys/ for in this maner and otherwayes he laboured all that he myght for the delyueraunce of the erle of Neuers and of the other lordes of Fraunce.

When the duke of Burgoyne and the ducheſſe his wyfe ſawe that Lamorabaquy began to fall to treatie for the cryſten priſoners/ the newes therof was greatly to their pleaſure/ and apoynted a ſage valyaunt knyght of the countie of Flaunders called ſyr Gylbert of Lanteghen/ who was ſouerayne of Flaunders vnder the duke and ducheſſe. And than they ſent for ſyr Jaques of Helley/ bycauſe he knewe the wayes and paſſages/ and deſyred hym to accompany ſyr Gylbert to treate with Lamorabaquy/ for the deliueraunce of the cryſten priſoners/ and prompted hym that his payne ſhulde be well conſydred and rewarded. Syr Jaques prompted them ſo to do. So theſe two knyghtes departed and rode ſo longe that they came in to the realme of Hungery/ and ſo drewe to the kynge/ for they had letters to hym. The kyng receyued them ioyouſly for loue of the frenche kynge/ and alſo he knewe well ſyr Jaques of Helley. There they ſhewed the kyng the cauſe of their cōmynge out of Fraunce/ and how they were ſente in to Turkey to treate for the delyueraunce of the erle of Neuers/ and the other lordes of Fraūce/ if Lamorabaquy wolde gyue them the herynge. The kynge ſayde it was well done to redeme them if they myght be put to raunſome/ and ſayd in the allayenge therof they coulde leſe nothynge. beſydes that the kinge offred them his body and goodes to ayde them in all maners. Wherof theſe two knyghtes thanked hym. To entre in to this treatye with Lamorabaquy/ or they coulde come therto/ theſe knyghtes had moche payne and made great dylygēce/ for fyrſt ſyr Jaques of Helley was fayne to go to Lamorabaquy to requyre a ſafeconducte for his companyon ſyr Gylbert to come in to Turkey. And whan he had atteyned it/ than he returned in to Hungery/ and ſo they rode than into Turkey. The ſouerayne of Flaunders was receyued of Lamorabaquy and of his men ryght nobly/ and was herde ſpeke/ and ſo lytell and lytell they entred in to their treatie. the ſame tyme there haunted in to Turkey a marchaunt genouoy of the ille of Scio/ vnder the obeyſaunce of the genouoys. This marchaūt was named Bartylmew Pologrine/ and he was well be loued in Turkey/ and namely with Lamorabaquy. Syr Dyne of Reſponde beynge at Parys/ to thentent that this treatie myght haue the better expedycion/ he wrote letters to this ſayde marchaunt of the ille of Scio/ for they knewe eche other/ & to the entent to pleaſe the frenche kynge/ the duke of Burgoyne and the duches and other ladies in Fraūce/ ſuche as had their huſbandes and frendes in priſon in Turkey/ and in truſt to be well rewarded for his good wyll/ he wrote þ what ſo euer ende was made for their redempcyon/ that he wolde be come dettous for the ſomme of money/ and that as

soone as they were delyuered and come in to the power of the venycions/ and that he might be certifyed therof/ that incontynent he wolde come hym selfe to Venyce/ and se the raunsomes payed and delyuered. By these wordes (written by syr Pyne of Responde) the sayde marchaunt genouoye enclyned to his desyre/ and on the truste to be well rewarded of the frenche kynge/ for he thought to suche a kyng it was good to lay care. And also as I was enformed the kynge of Cypre at the desyre of the frenche kynge and the duke of Burgoyne/ he sente men of his speycialle counsayle in to Turkey. And in lykewyse syr Mathelyn and the lorde of Dampre/ two great barones in Grece and in good fauoure with Lamorabaquy/ trauayled greatly to auaunce this treatie to thentent to do pleasure to the frenche kynge for without suche meanes the matter shulde neuer haue been brought aboute/ bycause Turkey is a great cõtrey and puell for men to trauayle in/ that hath nat ben accustomed therto. Whan Lamorabaquy was ones condyscended to entre in to this treatie/ than it was ordeyned by his counsayle that all the chrysten prisoners shulde be brought togyder in to the cytie of Burse/ and there to cõclude their treatie. So the prisoners were brought thyder/ who were in nombre a.xxb. but in their commynge thyder the turkes that brought them/ dyd puell entreate theym/ and bete them forwarde/ for they were but easely horsed/ they coulde nat go but a pace. the turkes bete them bycause they sawe they shulde be delyuered/ wherwith they were sore displeased.

When these knightes were thus brought in to the cytie of Burse in Turkey/ Than they that were sent thyder fro the frenche kynge and fro the duke of Burgoyne/ fro the kynge of Cypers/ and fro the genouoys and venycyens/ receyued these prisoners gētylly/ so that they were more at their ease than in the prisone that they were in before/ howe be it they were kept euer so strayte that they coulde nat haue the thyrde parte of their wylles. Lamorabaquy moste specially herde euer the souerayne of Flaunders/ for syr Jaques of Helley hadde enfourmed hym howe he was one of the chyefe of counsayle with the duke of Burgoyne. Lamorabaquy was in a Castell besyde Burse/ and thyther came the sayde messangers. Atlaste it was agreed that these.xxb. prisoners shulde pay the some of two hundred thousande ducates/ for the whiche some the lordes of Mathelyn and Dampre in Grece/ and the marchaunt genouoy of Scio/ became bettours for the same/ and tarped in pledge with Lamorabaquy. And the erle of Neuers swore and bounde hym selfe to the sayde marchauntes/ that as sone as he came to Venyce/ nat to departe thens tyll the money were payed. Thus concluded this treatie/ but or it was all concluded the erle of Ewe was so sycke and feble by the alteracyon of the ayre and courle meates/ that he dyed at Loge in Grece/ where he was kept prisoner/ wherof all his company were ryght sory/ but they coulde nat amende it. Thus syr Philyppe of Arthois erle of Ewe and constable of Fraunce/ after he was dede was enbawmed/ and so brought in to Fraunce/ and buryed in the churche of saynt Laurence of Ewe. Whan Lamorabaquy was contented with the marchaundes bondes for the det of the sayde some/ the souerayne of Flaunders and syr Jaques of Helley tooke their leaue to retourne in to Fraunce/ and Lamorabaquy was well contente therwith/ and ordeyned that these two knightes shulde haue of the some that he shulde receyue/ twenty thousande ducates to be rebated of the hole some. For this kyng Basaache consydered the payne and trauayle that they had endured/ and specyally the souerayne of Flaunders was greatly in his fauour. These two knyghtes thanked the kynge of his gyft/ than they toke their leaue of hym/ and afterwarde of the frenche knyghtes and lordes. Whan they were departed fro the kynge they came to the cytie of Burse/ and than departed and lefte the erle of Neuers and the lordes of Fraunce styll in the cytie of Burse/ for they taryed for the lordes of Mathelyn and Damine who shulde come thyder by see to receyue them in to their galees. And these two knyghtes toke a galee passenger to sayle to Mathelyn. At their departynge fro the porte the wether was fayre and temperate/ but whanne they were abrode in the see the wynde chaunged/ and had a maruelous great tempest/ so that the souerayne of Flaunders by reason of sore trauayle in that tempest/ he fell sore sycke on the see/ and dyed or they came to Mathelyn/ wher of syr Jaques of Helley was right sory/ but

but there was no remedy/and so sayled forthe to a galee of Genoe/ and passed by Rodes/ and alwayes as he went he publysshed the redempcyon of the lordes of Fraunce/ wherof they of Rodes were eyght joyfull. At last this knyght came in to Fraunce/ and shewed the kynge and the other lordes and ladyes howe he had spedde/ wherof the kynge and other were right joyfull/and thanked the knyght of his trauayle and payne he had taken in that iourney.

Han the redempcyon of these lordes and knyghtes of Fraunce was at a poynt/ than Lamorabaquy thought or they departed to haue them in his company/ and that they shulde be more at large and better entreated than they were before/ as it was reason/ sythe they were no lenger prisoners/ he thought they shulde se parte of his puyssaunce and state (whiche was as it was shewed me/ marueylous great and sumptuous/ and kepte moche people dayly aboute hym. Thus he sent of the noble men of his house to bryng them to his presence/to whom he made good chere/ and had euery thynge delyuered them of the ordinary of his courte/accordynge to the vsage of the countrey/ and euery daye the kynge talked with the erle of Neuers by a truchman/and greatly he honoured the erle of Neuers/ for he sawe well he was lyke to be a great man in Fraunce/and come to a great lorde/wherof he was well enfourmed (the whiche he founde true/ by reason of the great sute that was made for their redempcyon/ and by the great some of money that they agreed to paye. The erle of Neuers and his company had great maruayle of the great state that he kept/ he and his people laye euer in the felde/ for no towne coulde suffyce them. The spence of his howsholde and charge of meate and drinke/ was maruayle to consyder fro whence it shulde come/but that the countrey is so hote that the people be of lober dyet/and vse moche spyceryand specyally sugre and gotes mylke wherof they haue great habundaunce/ the whiche is comon drinke of the sarasyns/ and they haue plenty of bredde/made of a grayne called mylle/ he had euer aboute hym a seuen thousande fawconers and as many hunters. So it was on a daye he wente a hawkynge/ and had a flyght with a fawcon at an Egle in the presence of the erle of Neuers/ the whiche flyght pleased nat Lamorabaquy/ wherwith he was sore displeased/ and as it was shewed me/ for the same faute there was at the poynte a two thousande fawconers to haue lost their heedes/ bearyng them in hande that they were nat dylygent in keppynge of his hawkes. Another tyme in the presence of the erle of Neuers a woman came to complayne to the kynge/ desyrynge to haue ryght and iustyce vpon a seruaunt of his/ sayenge. Syr kynge/ I come to you as to my souerayngne/ I complayne me of a seruaunt of your chambre/as it is shewed me/ he is come this same day in to my howse/ and the mylke of a gote that I had for me and my chyldren/ he hath dronken it agaynst my wyll. and syr/ I said to him that if he wolde do me that wronge/ I wolde complayne to you/ and as soone as I sayde so/ he gaue me two great blowes/I wolde nat forbeare for all that I spake in your name/ therfore syr kynge do me iustyce/ as ye are sworne to do to all your people. The kinge marked well the womans wordes/ and so caused his seruaunte to come afore hym/ and the woman also/ and than he caused the woman to renewe her complaynt. The seruaunt began to excuse hym/ and sayd that he knewe nothynge of that matter. The woman spake wysely and affyrmed her wordes to be trewe. Than the kynge sayde/ woman aduyse ỹ well: for if I fynde thy wordes vntrewe/ thou shalte dye an yuell dethe. Syr quod she I am content/ for if my wordes were nat true/ what nede me to come in to your presence/do me iustyce I desyre none other thyng. Thou shalt haue iustyce quod the kynge/ for I haue sworne so to do to euery man and woman. Than the kynge caused the man to be taken and caused his bely to be opened/to se if he had eaten or dronken the mylke or nat/and there he founde that he had dronke the mylke for it was nat turned to digestyon. And whan the kyng sawe that the womans wordes were trewe/ he said to her/ thou haddest good cause to complayne/go thy way quyte thou art well reuenged of the trespase that was done to the/and she had a good recompence/and the man dyed.

This iudgement the lordes of Fraunce sawe and herde.

Cho we the lordes of Fraunce returned by see to Uenyce/and of the isles they founde by the waye.

Cap. CC.xxiiii.

Whan the Erle of Neuers and the other lordes of Fraūce/ who had ben taken prisoners at the batayle before Nycopoly in Turkey/ whan they had sene a season the state and maner of Lamorabaquy/ and that he was content of euery thynge/ and vnderstode that the lorde of Mathelyn and the lorde of Dampne/ and the marchaunt of Sio were come to Burselle in Turkey/ than he gaue them leaue to departe. So they came all togyther before Lamorabaquy/ except the erle of Ewe and the lorde of Coucy/ who were bothe deed/ thus they toke their leaue and thanked hym of his curtesies. Than Lamorabaquy said to therle by a truchman. Johan I knowe well thou arte a great lorde in thy Countrey/ and some to a great lorde/ thou art ponge/ and peraduenture shall beare some blame and shame that this aduenture hath fallen to the in thy fyrste chyualry/ and to excuse thy selfe of this blame and to recouer thyne honour/ peraduenture thou wylt assemble a puyssaunce of men/ and come and make warre agaynst me/ if I were in doute or feare therof/ or thou departed I shulde cause the swere by thy lawe and fayth that neuer thou nor none of thy company shulde beare armure or make warre agaynst me/ but I wyll nother make that nor none of thy company to make any suche othe or promesse/ but I wyll that whan thou arte retourned and arte at thy pleasure/ rayse what puyssaunce thou wylte and spare nat but come agaynst me/ thou shalt fynde me alwayes redy to receyue the and thy company in the felde in playne batayle/ and this that I say shewe it to whome thy lyste/ for I am able to do dedes of armes/ and euer redy to conquere further in to crystendome. These hygh wordes the erle of Neuers vnderstode well/ and so dyd his company/ they thought on it after as longe as they lyued. Than they toke their leaue/ and they were conducted with a great nombre/ vnder the leadynge of Assybathe and Mourbassache/ and so delyuered to the lordes of Mathelyn and Dampne/ who were cause of their delyuerance/ and whan their galeys were redy they entred/ and their conducte retourned to their kynge. So they sayled tyll they came to the porte of Mathelyn/ where they were receyued with great ioye.

The lady of Mathelyn was ryght honourable and gentle/ as well assured of her selfe as any lady in Grece/ for in her youth she had ben brought vp in the emperour of Constantyne the nobles courte/ with the lady Mary of Burbone/ where she had lerned moche nourture/ for in Fraunce the lordes and ladyes be more honourable/ than in many other countreys. This lady was ryght ioyouse to se in her house the erle of Neuers/ and syr Henry of Ware/ sir Guy of Tremoyle and the other/ she receyued them ryght honourably with great ioye/ and dyd what she coude to do them pleasure. First she newly apparelled all the lordes and knyghtes of Fraunce with shyrtes/ gownes/ and other aparell of fyne damaske/ accordynge to the vsage of Grece/ and all other euery man after his degre. The lady spared nothyng on them/ wherfore they gaue her great thanke/ and greatly praysed her estate and ordre. In lyke wyse they thanked and praysed the lordes of Mathelyn and of Dampne/ who made them good chere and honourable. In one tyronges of their delyuerance was knowen at the Rodes/ wherof the great mayster of the Rodes and all the knyghtes there were ryght ioyfull/ and they determyned to arme forth two galees/ and to sende for them to come in to the isle of Rodes/ and so they dyd/ and in the one galee they sette syr Jaques of Brasmont a burgoyon marshall of the Rodes. So longe they sayled and rowed that they arryued at Mathelyn. The marshall was well receyued of euery man and of the lady of Mathelyn. Than these lordes and other refresshed them there a foure dayes/ and on the fyrste daye their galees were redy. Than the erle of Neuers toke leaue of the lady of Mathelyn/ and thanked her greatly and the lordes also/ and the erle of Neuers sayd that he was bounde for euer to owe them his good wyll. The lady answered wyselp to them all. So they entred in to the Galees in the porte of Mathelyn/ and had wynde and weather at wyll/

wyll/ and ſayled ſo longe that without daun-
ger or bomage they came and arryued in the
ille of the Rodes/ in the ſame place where as
all galees do arryue cõmynge fro Cypre/ or fro
Barne/ and fro other partes of the ſee Ozien-
tall. There were many of the knyghtes of the
Rodes/ who be or ought to be men of valy-
aunt corage/ for they beare the whyte Croſſe/
in ſignyfieng of the croſſe of Chriſt/ who dyed
and toke payne for the redempcyon of all cry-
ſten people/ and nere hande daily theſe knych
tes haue ſkrymyſſhes and aſſawtes to ayde
and ſuſtayne the chriſten faythe agaynſt the
myſcreaũtes/ wherfore theſe knyghtes ought
to be valyaunte men/ and nourryſſhed in the
warre.

WHan the erle of Neuers and his
company were come in to the ille
of Rodes/ the great maiſter and
the great priour of Acquytayne/
who was there/ receyued the fren
che men honourably/ and offred to lende them
golde and ſyluer to paye their ſmall charges
and coſtes/ whiche offre the erle of Neuers
and his company toke for a great curteſy/ and
hertely thanked them/ for they had great nede
therof. the great priour of Acquytayne a right
valyaunt knyght lente to the erle of Neuers a
thyrty thouſande frankes in redy money/ and
ſyr Reygnere Potte ſtewarde with the erle of
Neuers and the lorde of Rochefort of Bur-
goyne receyued the money. I thynke it was
generally for them all/ that euery man ſhulde
haue parte/ but the erle became dettour for the
money. Thus they tarryed in the Ile of Ro-
des a good ſeaſone to refreſſhe theym/ and to
ſette euery thynge in good ordre/ for the ayre
was more attẽperate there than whey as they
had ben in Turkey. And as they tarryed thus
at Rodes abydynge for the galees of Venyce
a ſyckeneſſe toke ſyr Guy of Tremoyle lorde
of Scully/ of whiche ſyckneſſe he dyed there/
and was buryed in the churche of ſaynte Jo-
han in the Rodes/ and the lordes of Fraunce
dyd his obſequy ryght reuerently/ and were
ryght ſorye of his dethe/ but there was no re-
medy. The Erle of Neuers knewe well that
the duke of Burgoyne wolde be ſore diſplea-
ſed of his dethe/ bycauſe he had always founde
hym ſage and of good counſayle. At the laſte
there arryued the galees of Venyce wherof the
frenche men were ryght ioyous. Than they
tooke their leaue of the lordes of the Rodes.
Thus departed the erle of Neuers/ ſir Henry
of Bare/ Boutyquante/ Guillyam of Tre-
moyle/ the lorde of Rochefort and all other.
The patrones of the galees (to do them plea-
ſure) were contente to ſuffre them to refreſſhe
theym in the illes bytwene Venyce and Ro-
des. Fyrſte they came to Modon a fyue hun-
dred myle fro the Rodes/ and there they re-
freſſhed them. it parteyned to the Venycyens.

AND fro modon they ſayled with
wynde and wether at wyll/ and
ſo came to the ille of Caleſo/ and
there refreſſhed theym. And fro
thence to the ille of Garte/ and
there tarryed/ and than they came to the ille of
Chyſolignte and there landed/ and founde a
great nombre of Ladyes and damoſels/ who
had the ſygnyorye of that ille. They receyued
the frenche men with great ioye/ and brought
them to paſſe the tyme aboute the ille/ whiche
is ryght fayre and pleſaunte. And ſuche as
knowe the condycions of that ille/ affyrmeth
that the fayry and the nymphes be moche con-
verſaunt there. Some of the marchauntes of
Venyce and Geane and of other landes/ ſuche
as haue aryued there/ and tarryed there a ſea-
ſone to eſchewe the daunger of the ſee/ haue
ſaid that they haue ſene ſome of the fairy there
and haue proued their wordes to be trewe.
The erle of Neuers and his company were
ryght ioyouſe of the company of theſe ladyes/
and ryght ioyouſly the ladyes receyued them/
and ſayd how we their cõmynge thyder dyd all
the ille great honoure/ bycauſe they were no-
ble knyghtes and men of honoure/ for there
hath nat acuſtomed none other to be conuer-
ſaunt amonge them/ but marchauntes. This
ille is nat all onely enhabyted with women/
but there be men amonge them/ but the wo-
men haue the ſouerayntye and cheſe rule there.
They are workewomen in ſylke worke/ and
make clothes of ſylke/ ſo ſubtelly and ſo well/
that there is none lyke them/ nor the men of
the ille canne nat make it/ but they cary them
out to ſell where they thynke to haue moſt pro
fyte/ and the woman abyde ſtyll in ỳ ille/ and
they honour the men for the ſayde cauſe/ and
they haue the profyte therof. The Ile is of
that condycion that no man dare approche it to

no there any dõmage / for who so euer dothe ageperysshed / and that hath ben sene and proued / and therfore these ladyes endure euer in peace / and dought no man. Also they are maruelous swete / gentle / amyable / and humble / and whan they wyll they speke with the fayr and be in their company.

When the erle of Neuers and his company had refreshed them in this ile of Thyfoigne aboute a fyue dayes / than they toke leaue of these ladyes / and lefte amonge these ladyes parte of suche as they had that they myght forbeare / so that the ladyes gaue them great thanke at their departynge / and so they sayled to a lande called Rugse / and there they rested. And fro thens to Clarence / a hundred myle fro Vienyce. And whyle they were there thyther came a squyer of Haynalt of great recõmendacyon / borne in the towne of Mons / he was called Bydoll / he came fro the holy sepulcre / and fro Quayre and fro saynt Katheryns mounte / and whan he came to Clarence the frenchmen made him good chere / bycause he was borne in Haynalt / for the countesse of Neuers was doughter to the erle of Hepnalte / and also bycause he had ben in farre countreys / and they demaunded of him newes fro those parties / and also of the state of the kynge of Cypre. He aunswered to euery thynge ryght wysely.

When the erle of Neuers had refreshed hym there a season / than he sayled forthe and came to the porte of Parcule. The great galices coude go no further to come to ꝑ porte of Vienyce. Than within a certayne space they tooke other small shyppes passengers and so came to Vienyce / and there were receyued with great ioye / and they thanked god that they were come thyder in sauegarde and out of the handes of the mysbeleuynge / for they were ones in feare / neuer to haue come out of their handes. Than euery man wente to his logynge which was prepared for them / for their commynge thyder was knowen before / their seruauntes were come thyder and prepared for them redye agaynst their commyng. The erle of Neuers founde there redy parte of his seruauntes / sente thyder by the duke of Burgoyne his father and the duches his mother. Also there was redy for hym of Responde bycause of their raunsome. Than clerkes were sette to write letters / and messangers were sente forthe to gyue knowlege to their frendes of their comynge. These newes was anone knowen ouer all. the duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse ordeyned for the state of their sonne / as bedsell / and plate of syluer and golde / aparell / and stuffe of housholde / all this was sent to Vienyce on cõmers / and the lorde of Iugyers and syr Iaques of Helley dyd conuey all this stuffe / and so came to Vienyce. And all the other lordes and knyghtes frendes dyd sende thyder in lyke maner. And ye maye beleue well that this was nat doone without great coste / for there was nothynge spared / and also they laye at Vienyce at great coste and charge / for Vienyce is one of the dereste townes in the worlde for straungers to lye in. Thus these lordes kept their estates there / and therle of Neuers was more charged than any other / as it was reasone / for he was the chefe there. The duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse sette all their ententes for the delyuerance of their sonne / for they desyred greatly to se theym and so dyd many other / and the duke sayd that without ayde of his men and good frendes that were in his landes / as well in Burgoyne as in Arthoys / and in Flaunders / he coulde nat tell howe to attayne to the somme of money that Lamorabaquy shulde haue for his sonnes raunsome / and to beare the costes that dayly grewe by that occasyon / for though their raunsomes drewe but to two hundred thousande floreyns / all thynges consydered their other charges drewe to as moch / as they sayde that had the receyte and delyueraunce therof. The duke tooke counsayle where this money shulde be reysed / for ꝑ duke coulde nat breke nor mynysshe his estate / nor it was nat his mynde to do. Than it was determyned that the ryche men in all his good townes shulde be taxed / and specyally they of Flaunders / bycause they were ryche / by reason of their marchaundyse. This taracyon was sette forwarde / and whan they of Gaunt were called curtesly to the mater / they aunswered and sayd that they wolde gladly helpe to ayde their enheritour with the some of fyfty thousande floreyns. In lyke wyse they of Bruges and of other good townes in Flaunders were redy to ayde their lorde. The duke and

duchesse

duchesse thanked them curteisly/ in lyke wise so dyde they of Arthouse and of Burgoyne. Also the Frenche kynge ayded well for his parte. And also it had cost hym great riches in sendynge of presentes and knightes in to Hungry and Turkey/ howbe it he was well contente therwith/ sythy his cosyns and his knyght Boucyquaunt were come to Venyce in surete.

THerle of Neuers laye thus styll at Venyce/ for his entēt was nat to depte thens/ tyll euery thynge was payed and discharge. For the furnysshing of this fynaunce sir Dyne of Relponde toke great payne/ to the entente to please the Frenche kynge and the duke of Burgoyne. In suche busynesse he was subtyle and wyse. Thus these Frenche lordes and knyghtes sported them eche with other. The same season there felle in Venyce a great mortalyte/ and it began in the moneth of Auguste/ and dured without ceassynge tyll sayne Andrewes tyde/ wherin dyed moche people/ and there dyed sir Henry of Bare eldest sonne to the duke of Bare/ and heyre toure (by his wyfe) of all the lorde of Coucyes landes/ except the ladyes dowrye. Thus in the same season/ bothe the ladies of Coucy were widowes/ and their husbandes deed/ the whiche was great domage His body was enbaulmed and caryed in to Fraunce/ and buryed in Parys as I beleue and there his obsequy was done solempnely To flye and eschewe fro this deth at Venice the erle of Neuers went and taryed at Trenuse/ with all his estate/ and there taryed a four monethes with all his company.

THus the erle of Neuers beynge at Trenuse. It was shewed the kyng of Hungry by them of the Rooddes/ howe the Frenche lordes were agreed with Lamorabaquy to paye for their somes two hundred thousande florens. Than the kyng sent letters by a byll hoppe and certayne knyghtes to them of Venice/ in the fauour of the Frenche knyghtes. And also they were charged to saye certayne wordes to therle of Neuers/ as ye shall here/ for whan they came thyder they said to hym. Sir/ we are sent hyder fro our soueraygne lorde the kyng of Hungry your cosyn/ who saluteth you by vs/ and here be letters that he hath sente vnto you/ and he vnderstādeth/ howe ye are delyuered fro the handes of the turkes his aduersaryes for certayne raūsome/ the whiche otherwyse ye coude nat haue ben delyuered wherof he is right ioyouse. And sir/ the kynge knoweth well ꝑ your treatie coude nat haue ben made without great cost and charge/ for beside that ye lost in the batayle/ your raunsome and other charges hath ben and is dayly great. Wherfore sir/ the kyng sayth if he myght ayde you with any thyng he wolde gladly do it/ for he thynketh him selfe bounde therto/ as well by lynage or otherwyse. but sir/ he and his toke suche dōmage at the daye of the batayle before Nichopoly/ as ye knowe well. And also his reuenues of his realme for this yere and ꝑ next be in a maner as lost. but whā he hath recouery therof/ and is of power (he sayth) he wyll so purney for you/ that ye shalbe wel content with hym/ & thus to do he is of good wyll. And sir/ to thentent that ye shall gyue credence to his promyse and sayeng. He hath in the cyte of Venyce of yerely renenewes/ fyftyn thousande ducates. And sir/ he is content that this be solde to the venycience: and that of the money that shall ryse therof/ that ye shulde vse it and ayde your selfe therwith as ye wolde do of your owne goodes. And sir/ of this we shall delyuer quitaūces to the venicyence. we haue authorite so to do. this offre greatly pleased the erle of Neuers and his counsayle/ and the lorde of Rochefordе answered and said/ howe the erle and all his cōpany thanked greatly the kynge of Hungry in that he wolde sell or laye to gage his enheritaūce for to ayde them. Sayeng howe his offre was nat to be refused nor forgotten/ desyring to take a lytell counsayle in the mater and so they dyde. Within a breue tyme after/ it was shewed to the kyng of Hūgeries ambassadours in the behalfe of the erle of Neuers/ that it shulde nat be cōuenyent that the kyng of Hungry shulde sell or ley to pledge his enheritaunces/ for other mennes causes. But if so be the ambassadours wolde do so moche as to shewe to the venicyēe that they wolde do so moche as to lende therle of Neuers a certayne some of florence/ to helpe to paye therles by charges/ & to paye agayne to the prioure of sayne Johns in Acquitayne

the.xxx.thousande florens/that he lent to the in the ile of the Rodes. In thus doyng they saide they wolde highly thanke the kynge of Hungry & his counsayle. The ambassadors saide they wolde do their best/ and assaye the benycyēce what they wolde do. Whan the benycience were moued in this mater/they answered but coldly/ and said they wolde take counsayle and gyue answere within fyftene dayes/ at whiche tyme they answered (as I was enformed/by one that was by at the answere gyueng) that if the kyng of Hungry wolde selle his hoole realme/ the benycience shulde be redy to bargayne with hym/ & pay hym in redy money.but they said/as for so ly tell a thynge as seuyn thousande ducates by pere/ they coulde make no price nor value therof/nother to by nor to sell/wherfore they said they wolde nat medell in that small mater. This was the answere that the benycience made. Some thought and ymagined/ that this answere was made by waye of dissymulacion. And that thoughe the kynge of Hungry made this offre/yet by agreement/ ỹ benicyens made that answere. Thus the mater abode styll/and the kyng of Hungry styll in his possellyon of his reuenewes. Thafter the kynges ambassadours departed fro Uienyce and retourned in to Hungry/ & the erle of Neuers abode styll at Trenuse/ bycause of the mortalyte in Uienyce.

Chaue herde here before/ howe the lorde Philippe of Arthois/ erle of Ewe and constable of Fraūce/ dyed in ỹ cite of Burse in Turkey/of whose dethe all his frendes were sorie/ and specially the frenche kyng/for he loued hym entierly. His office was suche/ that it myght nat longe be vacant/ wherupon all the lordes of Fraunce assembled togider to take aduyse who shuld be made constable. The most parte of ỹ cōsaile agreed on the valyant knight sir Loys of Sanxere/.who had ben long marshall of Fraūce/ and was the same tyme. He was in the parties of Languedoc/ and so was sente for/ and incōtynent he came to Paris/ & ther was made cōstable. Than was voyde the office of the marshall. than ỹ kyng sayd/ none shulde haue ỹ office/but alonely his knyght sir Bouciquaunt: euery man agreed therto/ for he was well worthy. Whan he was chosen he was at Uienyce/ but shortely after he came to Paris. for the cardoms onss payde all the lordes and knightes of Fraūce retourned home. So sir Bouciquaunt was Marshall of Fraunce. Therle of Neuers dyde we to the duke of Burgoyn his father and to the duches his mother. he had great chere made hym of them and of other/ as it was reason/ for he came fro a longe voyage and a perylous. He was well receyued/ all his fathers countrets/ as in Flaunders/ in Arthoys/ in Burgoyne/ and in all other places partey nyng to his fathers and to his enheryta̅ce.

Howe after the returne of the lordes of Fraunce/ the frenche kyng entended what he myght/ to set a concorde and peace in the churche. Cap. CC.xxv.

Therle of Neuers thus returned in to Fraūce/ he abode about the duke his father/ and busyed his lādes and signories. Than he had desyre to go to se ỹ frēche kyng and the duke of Orlyaūce/ who receyued hym with great ioye. The kyng and the duke of Orlyaunce had great appetyte to here therle speke/ and to here of ỹ newes of Turkey/ and of all his aduentures/ and of the state of Lamorabaq. therle answered wisely & cōplayned nothing of Lamorabaquy/ but said he had foūde hym ryght curteise/ & howe that he was well entreated. and he forgat nat to shewe ỹ kyng & the ladies/ howe at his departyng Lamorabaquy said to hym/ that he was borne in this worlde to do dedes of armes/ and to cōquere euer more and more. And how that he wolde nat cōmaūde thē whan they were prisoners/ that they shulde no more beare armes agaīst hym/ but said he wolde rather haue thē come agayne the seconde/ thirde/ or fourthe tyme/ if nede were/ if the dedes of armes so required. And also he said howe his entent was to se Rome/ and to make his horse eate otes vpon saynt Peters autter. And also he sayde/

howe out

howe our criſten faythe was nothyng worth but corrupted by the heedes that ought to gouerne them/ wherat the Turkes make but a mocke. Wherfore he ſayd/ it ſhulde be the diſtruction of Chriſtendome/ and that ỳ tyme was as than come. And dyuers of the Turkes and ſarazins ſayde/ that their kyng Lamozabuquy was borne to be lorde of all the worlde. And this they of Turkey/ of Tartarye/ of Perce/ of Alexandre/ and of other parties of the ſarazins landes ſayde. They knewe it well that it ſhulde be ſo by reaſone that the Chriſten men/ were abuſed vpon.ii. popes/ wherby the chriſten men were nat all of one accorde/ but differedde. Some beleuyng on the one pope/ and ſome vpon the other/ And the ſarazins had great maruayle/ howe the heedes of Chriſtendome in euery realme wolde ſuffre it. Theſe wordes of the erle of Neuers made the frenche kyng and other lordes greatly to muſe. And ſome ſayd howe the ſarazins had good reaſon to laugh and mocke at chriſtendome/ bycauſe they ſuffred the prelates of the churche to medell ſo moche. Therfore ſome ſayde/ it was tyme to abate their pompes/ and to bringe thē to reaſon. The clerkes of the vnyuerſite of Paris who trauayled to lerne/ coude nat come to any preferment of any benifyce/ by reaſon of the Scyſme in the Churche/ and of the two popes/ wherfore they wolde gladly that the people ſhulde murmure agaynſt them. And were ryght gladde that the erle of Neuers ſayde/ that the turkes made a great derſion therof. And ſayd. Howe that without the frēche kynge and the kyng of Almaygne ſoude ſome remedy/ euery thynge ſhulde be worſe and worſe. And to ſaye the trouthe/ ſuche as helde them as neutre/ they thought hadde taken the beſt waye/ and ſo euery man ought to do/ if they wolde bring the Churche in to good caſe. Alſo it was ſecretely ſhewed the frenche kyng/ by ſuche as he loued/ and ſuche as loued his helthe/ howe that it was the comen opinyon in the realme of Fraūce/ that he ſhulde neuer haue perfitely his helth/ vnto the tyme that the Churche were brought in another eſtate. And alſo they ſhewed the kynge/ howe that kynge Charles his father whan he laye in his dethe beed/ charged his counſayle in conſcyence/ and had great dout that he was ſore abuſed in thoſe two popes.

Than the frēche kynge anſwered them and ſayd. Whan the kyng my father dyed I was but ponge/ and I haue beleued hyder to/ ſuche as haue counſayled me/ if there be folly/ it is in them and nat in me. But ſythe we be nowe thus enformed in the matter/ we ſhall prouide for the remedy/ and that ſhalbe well ſene.

THe frenche kynge marked the matter more profoundely than euer he dyde before/ and ſayd to them of his counſayle/ howe he wolde prouyde for the matter/ and ſpake therof to his brother the duke of Orleaunce erle of Blopes and of Valois who agreed anone to the kynges will. In lykewiſe ſo dyde the duke of Burgoyne/ for though he obeyed pope Clement/ yet he had neuer ferme beleue on hym. But the prelates of the realme of Fraunce/ and ſpecially Guy of Roy archebyſſhoppe of Reyns/ the archebyſſhoppes of Sens and of Roen/ and the byſſhoppe of Olune/ they had brought the duke to beleue on pope Clement. Thane it was aduyſed by the kynges ſecrete counſayle that if they purpoſed to bringe the Churche to reſt and peace/ to haue the accorde of Almayne. Than was there ſente ſuffycient ambaſſadours and clerkes of bothe lawes (as maiſter Philyppe of Blayes was one) into Almayne/ to the kyng of Boeme and of Almayne/ who wrote hym ſelfe kyng of Romayns. This mater went ſo forwarde/ ỳ a day was ſette that the kyng of Almayne and his counſaile/ and the frēche kyng and his counſayle ſhulde mete perſonally at the cyte of Reynes. This mater wasdone ſecretely/ bycauſe the prelates/ cardynalles/ archebyſſhoppes/ and byſſhoppes/ ſhulde nat breke their purpoſe that they were about. They made it be noyſed/ that the metyng of theſe two kynges and their counſayls at Reynes/ was for non other purpoſe/ but to treate for a marryage to be had betwene the ſonne of the marques of Blanquebourge/ brother to the kyng of Almayne/ and the doughter of the duke of Orleaunce. And ſo by reaſon and vnder colour of that mater/ they wolde common of other.

In this ſame ſeaſone dyed at Aelues in Heynaulte/ the lorde Gaye of Chaſtellone erle of Blopes/ and brought to Valencēnes and buryed at ſayne Fraunces in the Freres

mynours

mynous / in a chapell called the Chapell of Dythais. he had dons moche coste in the clo/ synge of the sayd Freres / and whan he dyed he was so in dette / that the countesse Mary of Namure forsoke al his goodes / and durst nat take on her the adminystracyon of his te/ stament / but retourned to her dowrie of the lande of Chinay and of Beaumonde / & his other herytages went to the heyres. The du/ ke of Orliaunce hadde the countie of Blois for he had payed whyle the erle Guye lyued / two hundred thousande crownes of Fraūce and the landes of Hollande / zelande / & Hey/ naulte / wente to the duke Iubert of Baup/ ere / erle of Heynaulte. And the lande of Da/ uesnes / of Landrecies / and of Lonnon in fer/ reasse / fell to Iohan of Bloyes called Johñ of Bretaygne. And if the erle had nat solde the countie of Blois / the sayd Iohan of Bre/ taygne shulde haue ben his heyre therof. Consyre what a dōmage a lorde or any o/ thers may do to his heyre / by gyuing credēce to yuell counsayle / god forgyue hym.

¶ Nowe lette vs retourne to the busynesse of Englande.

¶ Of the dethe of the duke of Glou/ cestre and of the erle of Arūdell / and howe the kynges vncles and the lor/ doners toke the mater.

Capi. CC.xxvi.

We haue herde here before / of the couert hates that was bys/ twene kynge Richarde of En/ glande / and his vncle Thomas duke of Glouncestre / whiche the kynge wolde beare no lengar / but sayd / and also was counsayled / rather to distroye ano/ ther man than hym selfe. And ye haue herde howe the kyng was at Plassy hey / & by crafte and colours / brought hym out of his owne house to London / And by the waye about .x. or .xi. of the clokke in the nyght / the erle mar/ shall arested hym in the kynges name. And for all that he cryed after the kynge / yet the kynge made a bende cate / and rode on before and to the same nyght the kynge laye at the towre of London / but the duke of Glouce/ stre was otherwise lodged. For by forse he was put in to a Barge / and out of the barge in to a lyppe that laye in the Thamise / and the erle mar shall with hym and all his com/ pany. And dyde so moche / that the nexte day by nyght they came to Calais / without kno/ ledge of any man / except the kynges offi/ cers of the sayd towne.

¶ Ye maye well knowe / whane the ta/ kynge of the duke was knowen at Plassy hey / by the duchesse and her chyldren / they were sore troubled and abas/ syed / and thought well that the matter went nat well. The duchesse demaunded cōsaile (what was best to do) of sir Iohan Laquy/ ham. The knight answered / that it was best to sende to his brethrene / the dukes of Lan/ castre and of yorke / that they myght fynde some meanes to apease the kynges displea/ sure. For he sayde / he thought that the kyng wolde nat displease them. The duchesse dyd as the knyght counsayled her / and sente incontynent messangers to these two dukes / who were farre a sondre / who whanne they herde therof / were sore displeased / and sente worde agayne to the duchesse that she shuld be of good cōforte. For they sayd / they knew well the kyng wolde nat entreat hym but by lawfull iudgement / for otherwise they coude nat suffre it: but as thanne they knewe nat/ where he was. The Duchesse and her chyl/ dren were somwhat conforted with their an/ swere. The kynge the nexte daye wente fro the towre of London to Eltham / and there tarryed. The same night was brought to the towre of London as prisoners / the erle of A/ rundell and the Erle of Warwyke / wherof they of the cytie of London had great mar/ueyle / and made therof great murmurynge / but none durst saye nay agaynst the kynges pleasure. But all maner of people / knightes squyers / burgesses of good cyties & townes of Englāde said. We haue ben well suffred. the duke of Lancastre and the duke of yorke / brethrene to the duke of Glouncstre / They maye prouyde for this whanne it please the. We thynke they wolde well haue prouyded for the mater / if that they hadde knowen the

kynges

kynges entent agaynst theire brother of Glocestre/ but bycause they were nat dilygent in the cause/ the matter is come quell/ and lyke to haue an yuell conclusyon.

WHan the duke of Glocestre was brought to the castell of Calys/ than he feared hym selfe greatlye/ & said to the erle Marshall for what cause am I brought out of Englande hyder to Calais? Wyll thynke ye holde me as a prysonet. Lette me go abrode and se the fortresse aboute. Sir quod the marshall/ that ye desyre I dare nat do it/ for I haue the charge vpon you on payne of my lyfe. The kynge my soueraygne lorde is a lytell mysconteute with you. Wherfore/ ye muste take patyence here for a seasone/ tyll I here other newes/ and that I shalbe shortely by goddes grace. For sir/ as helpe me God/ I am right sorye for your trouble if I myght remedy it. But sir/ ye knowe well I am sworne to the kynge/ wherfore I must obey/ and so wyll I do/ for saufgarde of myne honoure. The duke coude haue none other answere/ But by that he sawe/ he feared greatly his lyfe. And on a daye he desyred a preest that sange masse before hym/ that he myght be confessed. And so he was at good leysar before the sacrament/ with deuout herte/ and cryed God mercy/ and was sore repentaunt of all his synnes. And in dede it was tyme so for hym so to do/ for his dethe was nerer to hym than he was ware of. For as I was enformed/ whan he hadde dyned and was aboute to haue wasshen his handes/ There came in to the chambre foure men/ and caste sodaynlye a towell aboute the dukes necke/ two at the one ende and two at the other/ and drewe so sore that he fell to the Erthe/ and so they strangled hym/ and closed his eyen. & whan he was deed they dispoyled hym/ and bare hym to his bedd/ and layde hym betwene the shetes all naked/ and his hedd on a softe pylowe/ and couered with clothes furred. And than they yssued out of the chambre in to the hall/ well determyned what they wolde saye and sayde openly/ howe a palsye hadde taken the duke of Glocestre the same night sodaynly/ and so dyed. These wordes anon were abrode in the towne of Calais. Some beleued theym and some natte. Within two dayes that the duke was thus deed/ the erle marshall apparelled hym selfe in blacke/ bycause he was his nere cosyn/ and so were many other knyghtes and squyers that were in Calays. His dethe was sooner knowen in Fraunce and in Flaunders than in Englād. The frenche men were gladde therof/ for there was a cōmon bruyte/ that there shulde be no good peace betwene Fraunce and Englande/ as long as he lyued. And in all treasties betwene Fraūce and Englande/ he was euermore harder and obstynater/ than any other of his bretherne/ wherfore they cared nat for his dethe. In lyke wise many men in Englande/ bothe knyghtes/ squyers/ and other officers of the kynges/ who were in feare of hym/ bycause of his cruelte. All suche were gladde of his dethe. They toke to recorde his cruell dedes/ by ꝑ duke of Irelāde whom he had cryed out of Englande. Also of ꝑ deth of that valyant knight sir Symon Burle/ and of sir Robert Tryuplen/ sir Nicholas Bramble/ sir Johan Standyssh/ & dyuers other. The dukes dethe was but lytell regarded in Englande/ excepte but with suche as were of his opinyon. Thus this duke dyed in Calais. his body was enbaumed and seared in leed and couered/ and so sente by see in to Englande. And the shyppe that caryed hym/ arryued at the Castell of Hadley/ vpon Thamyse syde/ and fro thens caryed by charyot symply to his owne place at Plaishey/ and there buryed in the Churche/ Whiche the sayde duke hadde founded in the honoure of the hooly Trynite/ wherin were twelue Chanonnes to synge diuyne seruyce.

WE maye well knowe that the duchesse of Glouceſtre and Affren his sonne/ and his two susters/ were sore discōfyted whan they sawe the duke brought thyther deed. The duchesse had double sorowe/ for Richarde erle of Arundell her vncle was beheded openly by the kynges cōmaundemēt in Cheapesyde. there was no lorde durst speke to the contrary/ the kynge beyng presente at the same iustyce doynge. It was done by the erle Marshall/ who hadde to wyfe the doughter of the sayde erle of Arundell/ and

yet he

yet he bounde his eyen hym ſelfe. The erle of Warwyke was in great daunger to be behe ded: but the erle of Salſ bury who was in the kynges fauour deſyred the kynge for his lyfe/ and ſo dyde dyuers other barons & pre lates in Englande. The kynge enclyned to their requeſtes/ ſo ꝑ he myght be banyſſhed and putte in ſuche a place as he ſhulde natte come fro/ for the kyng wolde nat clerely for gyue hym. He ſayde he had well deſerued to dye/ bycauſe he was of counſayle with ꝑ duke of Glouceſtre and with the erle of Arun dell/ to haue broke the peace and truce taken bitwene Fraunce & Englande: For the whi che artycle the kyng ſayd/ they had deſerued to dye/ for the peace was taken bytwene the pties/ on ſuche cõdycion ꝑ who ſo euer dyde breake it/ ſhulde be worthy to dye. The erle of Salſ bury/ who had ben the erle of War wykes companyon dyuers tymes / in excu ſyng of him ſaid. How he was an olde man and was deſpred by the duke of Glouceſtre/ by his fayre wordes. Wherfore he ſayd/ that he dyde was natte of his owne mocyon/ but by theirs. Affyrming howe there was neuer none of ꝑ Beauchampes that euer dyd trayſon agaynſt the crowne of Englande. Thus the erle of Warwyke for pyte was reſpyted fro dethe. He was banyſſhed in to the yſle of Wyght: And it was ſayde to hym. Erle of Warwyke / ye haue deſerued to dye as well as the erle of Arundell/ but for the great ſer uyce that ye haue done in tyme paſt to kynge Edwarde and to the prince his ſonne/ and to the crowne of Englande/ alwell on this ſyde the ſee as beyonde/ hath bene you great ayde/ for the kyng hath pyte on you and hath grau ted you your lyfe. But it is ordayned by iud gement/ ꝑ ye ſhall go in to the yſle of Wight and lyue there as longe as ye can/ and ſhall haue ſuffycient of your owne to mayntayne there your eſtate ſoberly/ but ye maye neuer departe thens. The erle toke this punyſſhe ment a worthe/ and thãked the kyng and his counſayle for ſauyng of his lyfe/ and ſo ma de hym redy to go thyder at the daye apoyn ted. In the whiche yſle was ſpace ſufficient for a lorde to kepe his eſtate enuyroned with the See. Thus paſſed forthe theſe Judge mentes in Englande at that ſeaſon/ whiche multyplyed dayly worſe & worſe: as ye ſhall here after.

Whan the dethe of ꝑ duke of glou ceſtre was knowe by the dukes of Lancaſtre and of yorke/ and ꝑ tinent they knewe well that the kynge their nephue had cauſed hym to be ſlayne and murdered at Calays. As than theſe two dukes were nat togyder eche of thẽ were at their owne plates. They wrote eche to other to knowe what were beſt to do/ and ſo they came to London/ For they knewe well that the londoners were nat con tent with the dethe of the duke their brother. Whan they mette there togyder/ they tooke counſayle/ and ſayd: Suche dedes ought nat to be ſuffred/ as to putte to dethe ſo hyghe a price/ as was their brother/ for yuell wordes and falſe reportes. For they ſayd/ though he ſpake oftentymes of the breakyng of ꝑ peace yet he neuer brake it: And bytwene ſpeyng and doyng is great difference / for by reaſon of wordes/ he ought nat to deſerue dethe by ſuche cruell punycion. theſe two dukes were in the caſe to haue put all Englande to great trouble/ and there were paowe redy to coun ſayle them therto/ and ſpecially them of the erle of Arundelles lynage and of the erle of Staffordes / whiche was a great kynred in Englande. The kyng as than was at Elthã and had ſente for all ſuche as helde of hym in chiefe. And he had redy aſſembled togyder about London/ in Kent and Eſſexe/ mo than ten thouſande archers. And ſir Johan Hol lande his brother was with hym/ and therle Marſhall and the erle of Salſ bury/ and a great nombre of lordes and knyghtes: & the kyng ſent to the of London/ that they ſhulde nat receyue the duke of Lancaſtre. They an ſwered and ſayd. They knewe no cauſe that the duke hadde done/ why they ſhulde refuce hym. The duke of Lancaſtre was at Lõdon and the erle of Derby his ſonne/ and alſo the duke of yorke and his ſonne Johan / erle of Rutlande. The kyng loued the erle of Rut lande beyonde meaſure/ who diſſymuled the dethe of his vncle the duke of Glouceſtre / & ſhewed howe he wolde gladly ſe a good pea ce bytwene the parties/ & ſaid howe he knew well that his vncle dyde wronge oftentymes agaynſt the kynge. The londoners in lyke wyſe conſydred the great myſchiefe ꝑ myght fall in Englande/ by the diſcencyon bytwene the kynges vncles & the kyng/ and their alyã

ances.

aunces. Wo they conſyderd ſyth the myſchefe was fallen of the duke of Glouceſtres dethe/ that there was no recouery therin. they knewe well it was becauſe ꝑ duke of Glouceſtre had been to lauerde of hiſtonge/ and wolde haue ſtyred the realme to haue broken the treuce betwene Englande and Fraunce. Wherfore ſuchens were wyſe men in the cytie diſpmu ued the matter/ and thought it was no tyme to remeue it as than/ they feared the puyſſaūce of Fraunce/ and iſpnge of theis marchaun dyſe. Than beganne to treate and wont as a meane betwene the kng and the duke of Lan caſtre/ who was in many imagynacions/ for the dethe of his brother troubled him ſore. Al ſo he ſawe howe his nephue kynge Richarde was allyed by mariage with the frenche kyng. Alſo ꝑ duke of Lancaſtre had .ii. of his dough ters out of the lande/ one quene of Spayne/ a nother quene of Portingale by whome he thought he ſhulde haue great ayde if he made warre agaynſt his nephue kynge Richarde. All thynges conſyderd the duke chaunged his courage/ at the deſyre of the lordoners/ and of other peſtaces of Englande/ who were meane betwene the kyng and hym/ and by there me nes the kynge was agreed with the duke/ and peace made. With that the kynge promyſed fro thens forwarde to be gouerned by the duke of Lancaſtre/ and to do nothyng but by his coun ſayle and aduyſe/ whiche promeſſe the kynge nothynge fulfylled/ but was counſayled by yonge and wylde counſayle/ whiche was to his hurte and great domage/ as ye ſhall here after in thes hyſtoyes.

Thus the kyng of Englande had peace with his vncles by cauſe of the dethe of the duke of Glouceſtre. Than he be gonne to reygne more ſtedyly than he dyd be fore. The kynge went and lay in Eſſex/ where as the duke of Glouceſtre had the chefe rule/ wherfore it ought to haue pertayned to a nother/ but the kynge toke all for diſpleaſure in Englande was/ the kynge ſo ſoon ꝑ was out of all heryſtaues/ he ſtroke off ſodaynly the heddes of .xxi. eſquyers/ and .iii. knyghtes/ whiche he thought were of counſayle with the duke of Glouceſtres dethe/ and the kynge toke all the poſſeſſions and enheritage of all the dukes landes and kepte them vp in his hande. Alſo the du cheſſe of Glouceſtre and her two doughters were with the quene. The duke of Glouceſtre by enheritaunce was conſtable of Englande the kynge toke that office fro the right heyre/ and gaue it to his coſyn the erle of Rutlande. The kynge than kept greater ſtate than euer he dyd: nor there had nat ben no kynge before in Englande that ſpente ſo moche yerely by a hundred thouſande nobles as he dyd. In lyke wyſe the kynge had with hym the heyre of the erle of Arundell/ who was beheeded at Lon don. And becauſe a knyght that was belon gyng to the duke of Glouceſtre called Cerbe/ ſpake at a tyme certayne wordes agaynſt the kynge and his counſayle/ he was taken and beheeded. Syr Johan of Dupnghay was in great parell/ but whan he ſawe that the ma ters went ſo dyuerſely as they dyd/ he diſſy muled as moch as he might/ and departed fro the duchelle of Glouceſtres houſe/ and wente and dwelt in other places. In thoſe dayes there was none ſo great in Englande/ ꝑ durſt ſpeake agaynſt any thynge that the kyng dyd or wolde do. He had counſayle mete for his ap peryte/ who exhorted hym to do what he lyſt. The kynge kept ſtyll in his wages ten thou ſande archers night and day/ that wayted on him for he reputed himſelfe nat parfytely ſure of his vncles/ nor of the lygnage of Arundell.

Of the great aſſemble that was made in the cytie of Reyns/ as well by the emperour as of the realme of Fraūce/ on the ſtate of holy churche. Cap. CC. xxvii.

The ſame ſeaſone there was a great aſſeble of grete lordes in the cytie of Rey nes/ what of lordes of the empyre and of Fraunce/ to the entent to bring the chur che to a peace and reſte/ for the frenche kynge dyd ſo moche/ that at his re queſt his coſyn the kynge of Almayne came to the cytie of Reynes with his counſayle/ and bycauſe they wolde nat haue it knowen that they aſſembled there all onely for the mater by

tworne the popes/ the one at Rome and the other at Auygnon/ they made it to be noysed that they came thyder to treate for a marage of the sonne of ꝑ marques of Blacquebourge with the doughter of the duke of Dzleaunce. This Marques was brother to the kynge of Almayne. The frenche kyng lay at the archebysshoppes palayes and there was with hym the dukes of Dzleaūce/ Berrey/ and Burbon/ therle of sayne Powle and dyuers other bygh barones and prelates of Fraunce. And whan the kinge of Almayne entred in to the cytie/ all the lozdes and prelates (and kynge Charles of Nauer/ who was in lykewyse there) went to mete with hym/ and receyued hym honourably. Fyrste they brought hym to our lady churche and after in to the abbey of sayne Remy/ there the kynge of Almayne laye and his lozdes aboute hym. And it was ozdeyned by the frenche kinge/ that what so euer the kynge of Almayne spent shulde be at the frenche kynges cost. The almayns had euery day delyuered them ten tonne of herynge/ for it was in Lent tyme/ and eyght hundred carpes besyde other fysshes/ whiche was a great charge.

WHan the kyng of Almayne came first to the frenche kynge/ all the lozdes went for hym to sayne Remy/ and so brought him to ꝑ kynges palays. Whan these two kynges mette they made great honoure eche to other/ and great reuerence/ and specyally the frenche kynge/ for almayns of nature are rude and grose mannered/ without it be to take their profyte/ therto they be experte and redy ynough. All the lozdes of Fraunce and of Almayne toke acquayntaunce eche with other/ with louyng wozdes and countenaunce/ and the frenche kynge made the kynge of Almayne and his company a great dyner/ at one table there sate/ fyrst the patryarke of Therusalem/ then the king of Almayne/ the frenche kynge/ and the kynge of Nauer/ there sate no mo at that table. At the other tables sate the lozdes and prelates of Almayne. No lozde of Fraūce sate that day/ but serued. To the kynges bozde the meate was brought by the dukes of Berrey/ of Burbone/ the erle of sayne Powle/ and by other great lozdes of Fraūce. The duke of Dzleaūce set euery man bawme. Vessell of golde and syluer ranne plentuously through the palays/ as though it had bē but of wode or erthe/ it was a sumptuous dyner. And as I was enformed the frenche kynge gaue to his cosyn the kyng of Almayne all the vessell and place of golde and syluer/ that was serued that day in the palays at the dresser or elsewhere/ and all other hangynges and habylymentes in the hall and chambze/ wherbnto the kynge retrayed after dynner/ and spyces and wyne taken. This gyft was praysed and valewed to two hundred thousande florayns/ and moze ouer there was gyuen to the other almayns/ great gyftes and goodly presentes of vessell and plate of golde and syluer/ wherof the straungers that were there had great maruayle of the state and puyssaunce/ & great ryches of the realme of Fraūce. These kinges thus abydynge in the cytie of Reymes/ their counsayles mette togyther dyuers tymes on the maters that they came thyder for/ as well for the marage of the duke of Dzleaunces doughter with the Marques of Blancquebourges sonne/ as for the reformacyon of the churche. At laste the marage was concluded and openly publysshed through the cytie/ but as for the mater concernynge the popes/ there was nothynge knowen therof out of the counsayle/ for all that was concluded in the counsayle was kept secrete. Afterwarde I was enformed/ how it was agreed that maysshe Peter Dayly bysshop of Cambzaye/ shulde go in legacyon for the frenche kynge and for the kynge of Almayne to Rome/ to hym that was called pope Bonyface/ that he shulde submyt hym selfe to haue a newe electyon of a pope/ and in lykewyse to ꝑ other pope at Auygnon. And if so be that any of them wolde nat agree therto/ to abyde the ozde of these two kynges he to be degrated & all ryghtes of the churche to be kepte fro hym/ and the frenche kynge to compasse to his agrement his sonne in lawe the kynge of Englande/ and the kynge of Scottes/ kynge Henry of Aragone/ kynge Johan of Portugale/ kynge Charles of Nauer/ and the kyng of Aragon. and ꝑ kinge of Almayne shulde compasse his brother Lowes kynge of Hungery/ and all the realme of Bealme and Almayne to Fraūce. And it was ordeyned that whan this bysshop of Cambray was retorned fro the sommonyng of these two popes/ than he to go to all the lyege seniours their ayres. Thus these two kynges thought to haue without harpacyon of lez. Thus ended their counsayle

ſayle at that tyme. The kynges and lordes departed amyably/ and euery man tooke leaue and departed and went home.

AT this counſayle at Reynes the duke of Burgoyne was nat nor wolde nat be/ for he ſayd before that it was but a payne/ and a thynge loſte to gyue any thynge to the almayns/ for they kepe no promeſſe nor couenaūt howe be it for all the dukes wordes there was nothynge left/ for the mater went forthe as ye haue herde. And anon after the byſſhop of Cambray made hym redy/ and tooke his waye to Rome. Alſo the frenche kynge ſent a great ambaſſade in to Englande to ſe the kyng and the quene/ and to ſhewe them of this mater/ and ſo they dyd. And whan they retourned they ſhewed the frenche kynge howe the kynge of Englande wolde take the ſame way that the kynge of Almayne and the frenche kynge wolde do. So they were all concluded if nede were to be as newter. Thus this mater ſtode in this caſe. Kynge Charles of Nauer who was in Fraūce to ſe the kynge his coſyn/ truſtyng to retouer his heryttage of Normandy & of the countie of Euruus/ the whiche the frenche kynge had taken fro hym/ as ye haue herde here before/ but he coulde nat attayne therto by no meanes/ what ſo euer he ſhewed or ſayd. And whan the kynge of Nauerre ſawe that he loſt his payne and labored in vayne/ he toke the mater in great diſpleaſure/ & toke his leaue as ſobrely as he coulde/ nat well contente with the frenche kynge nor with his counſayle/ and ſo retourned in to the realme of Nauerre. Nowe lette vs leaue ſpeakynge of them and ſpeke of other accydentes that fell in Englande/ wherby folowed ſo great duell/ that the lyke hath nat ben wrytten of in this hyſtory/ here foloweth the entre and begynnynge of the mater.

Howe the erle Marſhall in Englande apealed by gage of vtteraūce the erle of Derby/ ſonne to the duke of Lancaſtre/ in the preſence of the kynge and his counſayle.

Cap. CC.xxviii.

KInge Richard of Englande hadde a condycion that if he loued a man/ he wolde make hym ſo great and ſo nere hym that it was marueyle to conſyder/ and no man durſte ſpeke to the contrary. and alſo he wolde lightly beleue/ ſoner than any other kynge of remembrance before hym. and ſuche as were nere aboute hym and in his grace/ tooke no enſample of other that had ben great with the kyng before them/ as the duke of Irelande/ who was put out of Englande/ and alſo ſyr Symon Burle who by reaſon of ſuche counſayle as he gaue to the kynge/ he was beheeded/ and ſyr Robert Tre uelyan/ & ſyr Nycholas Bramble and other that had ben of the kynges counſayle/ wherfore they ſuffred dethe/ for the duke of Glouceſtre dyd all his payne to dyſtroy them/ and yet fynally he loſte his lyfe/ as ye haue herde. wherof ſuche as were than aboute the kynge was nothynge ſory/ wherby ſome that were aboute the kynge roſe in to ſuche pryde that it was marueyle/ and in ſo moche that they coulde nat coloure nor hyde it/ and ſpecyally the erle Marſhall/ who was as great in the kynges fauoure as myght be/ and to the entente to pleaſe the kynge and to flatter hym/ he made the kynge beleue that he was a trewe faythfull and a ſecrete ſeruaunt/ and that he coulde nat endure to here any worde ſpoken agaynſt the kynge/ and tolde the kynge many thynges to haue the kynges loue/ howe be it often tymes a man thynketh to be auaunced/ and is pulled backe/ and ſo it fortuned of the erle Marſhall/ I ſhall ſhewe you howe.

Ye muſte knowe that the erle of Derby and the duke of Glouceſtre deed/ had to their wyues two ſiſters/ doughters to the erle of Herforde and of Northamton/ conſtable of Englande. ſo the chyldren of the erle of Derby and the duke of Glouceſtre were coſyn germayns by theire mother ſyde/ and within a degree as nere of kynne by theire fathers ſyde. To ſay trouth the dethe of the duke of Glouceſtre was tyght vnpleaſaunt to many great lordes of Englande/ and often tymes they wolde ſpeke and murmure therat/ whan they were togyder/ and the kynge than was ſo hygh vpon the whele that no man durſte ſpeke/ but

the kynge knewe it/ for he had caused to be spo
ken abrode in the realme that what so euer he
were that spake any word of the duke of Glou
cestre or of the erle of Arundell/ he shulde be re
puted as a traytour/ wherfore the people durst
nat speke. And on a day the erle of Derby and
the erle Marshall communed togyder of dy-
uers matters/ at last amonge other they spake
of the state of the kynge and of his counsayle/
suche as he had about hym and beleued them/
so that at the last the erle of Derby spake cer-
tayne wordes whiche he thought for the best/
wenynge that they shulde neuer haue ben cal-
led to reherfall/ whiche wordes were nouther
vylenous nor outragyous/ for he sayde thus.
Saint Mary fayre cosyn, what thynketh the
kynge oure cosyn to do? wyll he dryue out of
Englande all the noble men/ within a whyle
there shalbe none left. it semeth clerely that he
wylleth nat the augmentacyon of his realme.
The erle marshall gaue none answere/ but
dissimuled the mater/ and toke it that he spake
agaynst the kynge/ and thought in hym selfe
that the Erle of Derby was ryght yhelp to
make great trouble in Englande/ bycause he
was so great with the londoners/ and the dy-
uell was redy to stryre his brayne/ and that
thynge that shall fall can nat be eschewed.

SO he thought to shewe this ma
ter to the kynge/ whan noble me
shulde be presente/ and on a day
to please the kynge/ he sayde.
Ryght dere syr/ I am of youre
lygnage/ and ame your lyege man and mar-
shall of Englande/ wherfore sir/ I am boun-
de to you by myne allegeaunce/ and othe
swornе my handes in yours/ that I shulde be
in no place hearynge/ any thynge contrarye
to your magestie royall/ and shulde kepe it se-
crete/ I ought to be reputed as a false tray-
tour/ whiche I wyll nat be/ for I wyll trewly
acquyte me agaynst you/ and all the worlde.
The Kynge loked on hym/ and demaunded
and sayd. Why say you these wordes/ we wyll
know it. My right redouted souerayne lorde
quod the erle Marshall/ I saye it bycause I
canne nat suffre any thynge that shulde be pre
iudycyall or agaynst your grace. syr cause the
erle of Derby to come before you/ and than I
shall shewe you more. Than the erle of Der-
by was sente for/ and the kynge comaunded
the erle Marshall to stande vp/ for he was on
his knee whyle he spake to the kynge. And
whan the erle of Derby was before the kyng/
who thought none yuell/ than the erle Mar-
shall sayde. Syr erle of Derby/ I say to you/
ye haue thought yuell and spoken otherwyse
than ye ought to do/ agaynste your naturall
lorde the kynge of Englande/ whan ye sayde
that he was nat worthy to holde lande or rea-
alme/ seynge without lawe or iustyce/ without
counsayle of any of his noble men/ he distour-
beth his Realme/ and without tytell or good
reason putteth out of his realme and dystrop-
eth them/ who ought to ayde and sustayne him
wherfore here I cast my gage and wyll proue
with my body agaynst yours/ that ye are an
yuell false traytour. The erle of Derby was
sore abasshed with those wordes/ and stepte
backe a lytell and stode styll a season without
demaundynge of his Father or of any other
what answere he shulde make. Whan he had
studyed a lytell he stept forthe with his cappe
in his hande/ and came before the kynge and
the erle Marshall/ and sayd. Erle Marshall/
I saye thou arte an yuell and a false traytour/
and ꝑ I shall proue/ my body agaynst thyne/
and in that quarell here is my gauge. Therle
Marshall whan he herde howe he was apea-
led shewed howe he despyzed the batayle. With
that the erle of Derby answered and sayde.
I sette your wordes at the kynges pleasure/
and other lordes that be here/ and I tourne
your wordes to a mocke and myne to be true.
Than erle of these erles drewe to their com-
pany and lygnage/ so that the manner of ta-
kynge of wyne and spyces was lette passe/ for
the kyng shewed hym selfe to be right sore dis-
pleased/ and so entred in to his chambre/ and
left his two vncles without and all their chyl-
dren/ and the erles of Salysbury and Hun-
tyngdon his brethern. Than anone after the
kynge sent for his vncles/ and entred in to his
chambre. Thanne the kynge demaunded of
them what was best to do in this mater. Syr
quod they cause your constable to come before
you/ and than we shall shewe you our opyny-
ons. Than the erle of Rutlande who was con-
stable was sente for/ and whan he was come/
than he was commaunded to go to the erle of
Derby and to the erle Marshall/ and to take
suretye of them/ that they go nat out of the

realme

realme of Englande without the kynges ly-
cence. The conſtable dyd as he was com̃an-
ded/ and thanreturned agayne to the kinges
chambre.

WE maye well knowe this matter
greatly troubled the courte/ and
many lordes and knyghtes were
ſore dyſpleaſed of that aduenture
and ſecretly they greatly blamed
the erle Marſhall/ but he made as though he
had ſet nothyng by the mater/ his hert was ſo
proude & preſumptuous. Thus the lordes de-
parted for ỹ day. The duke of Lãcaſtre what
ſo euer countynaunce he made/ he was ſore diſ-
pleaſed with theſe wordes/ and he thought the
kynge ſhulde nat haue taken the mater as he
dyd/ but ſhulde rather haue tourned it to no-
thynge/ and ſo thought the moſte parte of all
the lordes of Englande. The erle of Derby
went and lay at London/ and helde his eſtate
at his owne lodgynge/ and there were pled-
ges for him/ the duke of Lancaſtre his father/
the duke of yorke/ the Erle of Northumber-
lande/ and dyuers other lordes. And the erle
Marſhall was ſente to the towre of London/
and there helde his eſtate. Theſe two lordes
made prouyſyon/ for that was neceſſary for
them for their batayle. The erle of Derby ſent
his meſſangers in to Lombardy to the duke
of Myllayne ſyr Galeas/ for to haue armure
at his pleaſure. The duke agreed to the erles
deſyre/ and cauſed the knight that the erle had
ſent thyder/ whoſe name was Fraunces/ to ſe
all the dukes armoure. And whan the knyght
had choſen ſuche as he lyked/ than the duke fur
thermore for loue of the erle of Derby/ he ſent
fourt of ỹ beſt armorers that were in Lombar
dy to the erle in to Englande with the knight/
to the entent that they ſhulde arme and make
armure accordynge to the erles entente. The
erle Marſhall on his parte ſent in to Almayn
and in to other places to prouyde him for that
iourney. The charge of theſe two lordes was
greate/ but the erle of Derby was at moſt
charge. The erle Marſhall whan he beganne
that buſyneſſe/ he thought to haue had more
ayde of the kynge than he had/ for ſuche as
were nere aboute the kynge ſayd to him. Syr
ye haue nothyng to do to medle betwene theſe
two lordes/ diſſymule you the mater/ and let
them deale/ they wyll do well ynough. Sir ye
knowe well the erle of Derby is well beloued
in the realme/ and ſpecyally with the Londo-
ners/ and if they ſe that ye ſhulde take parte
with the erle Marſhall/ ye were lyke to loſe
their loue therby for euer. The kynge vnder-
ſtode well their wordes/ and knew well it was
trewe/ he than diſſymuled the mater as moche
as he coulde/ and ſuffred them to make their
prouyſyon where they lyſt.

THe newes ſpredde abrode in dy-
uers countreys of the defyaunce
betwene the erle of Derby and
the erle Marſhall/ Many men
ſpake therof in dyuers maners/
and ſpecyally in Fraunce. They
ſayd lette them alone/ the knyghtes of En-
glande are ouer proude/ at length they wyll
deſtroy eche other/ for it is the worſte nacyon
in the worlde vnder the sonne/ for in ỹ realme
dwelleth the moſte preſumptuous people that
canne be. Other there were that ſpake more ſo
berly/ and ſayde/ that the kynge of Englande
ſhewed no wyſdome/ nor was nat well coun-
ſayled/ whanne for wylde wordes he to ſuffre
ſuche two noble men of his blode to enterpriſe
armes in defyaunce/ he ſhulde rather whan he
herde the wordes fyrſte/ haue ſayde to them
bothe. ye are two lordes of my blode and lyg-
nage/ wherfore I cõmaunde you bothe to be
in peace/ and lette nouther hate nor rancoure
engendre betwene you/ but be frendes/ louers
and colyns togyther/ and if this lande canne
nat contente you/ go in to what countrey ye
wyll/ and ſeke aduentures of armes there. If
the kynge had ſayde thoſe wordes and apea-
ſed theſe lordes thus/ than he had done wyſe-
ly. The duke of Lancaſtre was ſore dyſplea-
ſed in his mynde to ſe the kynge his nephewe
myſſe vſe hym ſelfe in dyuers thynges/ as he
dyd. he conſydred the tyme to come lyke a ſage
prince/ and ſomtyme ſayd to ſuche as he tru-
ſted beſt. Our nephue the kynge of Englande
wyll ſhame all or he ceaſe: he beleueth to lyght
ly vnell counſayle who ſhall diſtroy hym/ and
ſymply (if he lyue longe) he wyll leſe his re-
aime/ and that hath been goten with moche
coſte and trauayle by our predeceſſours and
by vs: he ſuffreth to engendre in this realme
betwene the noble men hate and diſcorde/ by

whom he shulde be serued and honoured/ and this lande kepte and douted. He hath caused my brother to dye/ whiche is one thynge to be noted/ and the erle of Arundell/ bycause they shewed hym trouthe/ but he wolde nat here them nor none other that wolde counsayle hym agaynst his appetyte. He canne nat better dystroye his realme than to put trouble and hatred betwene the noble men and good townes the frenche men are right subtyle/ for one mischiefe that falleth amonge vs/ they wolde it were ten/ for other wyse they canne nat recouer their dõmages/ nor come to their enterntes/ but by our owne meanes and dyscorde betwene our selfe. And we se dayly that all realmes deuyded are dystroyed/ it hath been sene by the realme of Fraunce/ Spayne/ Naples/ and by landes of the churche/ as we maye se dayly by the two popes/ whiche is and shall be to their dystruction. also it hath been sene by the countrey of Flaunders/ howe by their owne meanes they are distroyed. Also presently it is sene by the lande of Frese/ with whome our cosyns of Haynalt are in warre/ and howe the frenche men amonge themselfe are dystroyed/ in lyke wyse amonge our selfe without god prouyde for vs we shall dystroy our selfe/ the apparaunce therof sheweth greatly. Nowe the kynge suffereth that my sonne and heyre shall do batayle for a thynge of nought/ and I that am his father maye nat speake to the contrary for myne owne honoure and for my sonnes/ for my sonne hathe the body of a knyght mete to entre in to armes agaynst the erle Marshall/ howe be it take the best therof they shall neuer loue agayne togyder as they dyd before. Thus sayd the duke of Lancastre.

ALl the season that these two lordes dyd prouyde to do dedes of armes at vtteraunce/ the duke of Lancastre came neuer at the kynge nor but lytell at his sonne/ and that he dyd for a polycy/ for the duke knewe well that his sonne was maruelously well beloued in Englande/ both with noble men and with other/ and specyally with the londoners/ for they had promysed and sayd to hym. Syr be ye of good comforte in this busynesse/ for howe so euer the matter tourne/ ye shall scape with honour/ whether the kynge wyll or nat/ or all the Marmosettes abouts hym/ for we knowe well this matere is made and conueyed by enuy/ to the entente to dryue you out of the realme/ bycause ye be well beloued with many men. and if so be that ye departe in trouble ye shall entre agayne with ioye/ for ye ought rather to rule than Rycharde of Burdeaulx/ for they that wyll serche out the profoundnesse of the matter/ maye well knowe fro whence ye came/ and fro whence he came/ whereby they maye knowe that ye be more nerre to the crowne of Englande than Rycharde of Burdeaulx/ though we haue made to hym fayth and homage/ and haue holde hym for our kynge more thanne this twenty yere/ but that was by fauour and purchase of his grauntfather good kynge Edwarde/ who douted of this poynte that we nowe speke of/ and on a tyme great question was made betwene kynge Edwarde your grauntfather by your father syde/ and duke Henry of Lancastre your grauntfather by your mother syde/ the Lady Blaunche of Lancastre/ but the lordes of Englande that than reygned apeased the matter/ for kynge Edwarde was so valyaunt a man and so happy in all his enterprises/ that he had the loue of all his people poore and riche/ nor also your grauntfather of Lancastre wolde nothynge to the kynge but well and good/ and serued the kynge in his tyme nobly and trewly/ so that he is as yet to be recommaunded. These matters well consydred by kynge Rycharde/ he myght well repente hym that he is no better gouerned than he is. Suche wordes these londoners spake/ thoughe they knewe but lytell of the trouth/ that they spake was of a synguler fauoure. The erle of Derby receyued their wordes well a worthe/ and dayly prepared for the batayle/ and he desyred his frendes to be at that iourney/ and so euery man prepared hym selfe/ accordynge to the erles desyre.

THe kynge all the season that these two lordes prepared for their batayle/ he had many ymagynacyons/ whether he shulde suffre them to fyght or nat. Thoughe he were kynge of Englande/ and more douted than any other kynge before hym/ yet nyght and daye he kept about hym a garde of two thousande archers/ who were

who were payed their wages weekly/ for the kynge trusted nat greatly in theym that were nerre of his blode/ excepte his brother the erle of Huntyngton and the erle of Saliſbury/ and the erle of Rutlande his coſyn germayns/ ſonne to the duke of yorke/ who was well in the kynges fauoure/ and certayne knyghtes of his chambre: as for all other he cared lytell for. Whan the day approched/ that theſe two lordes ſhulde do their dedes of armes/ as they hadde promyſed/ and had euery thyng redy prepared. Than on a daye/ certayne of the kynges counſayle came to the kynge/ and demaunded what was his entencyon/ that theſe two lordes ſhulde do/ and ſayde. Sir/ wyll ye ſuffre theym to fyghte? ye true lye quod the kyng/ why ſhulde they nat. We wyll ſe their dedes of armes. Paraduenture we ſhall knowe therby/ that we knowe nat as yet/ & ſhulde be right neceſſary to knowe to the entente we ſhulde prouyde for it/ For there is none ſo great in Englande/ but if he diſpleaſe me/ I ſhall cauſe hym to make me amendes/ For if I ſhulde any thynge ſubmytte me to my ſubiectes/ they wolde ſoone ouercome me. And I knowe for certaygne/ that ſome of theym of my blode haue hadde dyuers treatyſe togyder agaynſte me and myne eſtate/ and the mooſt principall of the was the duke of Glouceſtre/ For in all Englande was natte a worſe hedde agaynſt me than he was. Nowe I ſhall haue peace fro henſe forwarde/ for I ſhall do well ynough with all the other. But ſirs/ I praye you ſhewe me why ye make this demaunde to me. Sir quod they/ we are bounde to counſayle you. And ſir/ we often tymes here wordes ſpoken/ that ye canne nat here. For ſir/ ye be in youre chambre/ and we abyde in the coutrey or in London/ where many thynges be ſpoken/ whiche greatlye toucheth you/ and vs alſo. Sir/ it were tyme to prouyde remedye/ and ſo ye muſte do. Sir/ we counſayle you for the beſt. Howe ſo quod the kynge? Speke further and ſpare natte/ for I wyll do euery thynge parteynyng to reaſon/ and mynyſter Juſtyce in my realme. Sir quod they/ the renoume ronneth throughe out Englande/ and ſpecially in the cytie of London whiche is the ſouerayngne cytie of youre realme. They ſaye/ ye are cauſe of this enterpryce betwene theſe two lordes/ and that ye haue ſette the erle Marſhall to fyght with the erle of Derby.

THe Londoners/ and dyuers other noble men and prelates of ỹ realme ſaye: Howe ye take the ryght waye to diſtroye youre lygnage/ and the realme of Englande. Whiche thynge they ſaye/ they wyll natte ſuffre. And if the Londoners ryſe agaynſte you/ with ſuche noble men as wyll take their parte/ ye ſhall be of no puyſſance to reſyſt theym. And alſo they haue you in a marueylous ſuſpecte/ bycauſe ye be alyed by marryage with the Frenche kynge/ wherby ye be the worſe beloued of all youre people. And ſir/ knowe for certayne/ that if ye ſuffre theſe two Erles to come in to the place to do bataple/ ye ſhall nat be lorde of the felde/ but the Londoners/ and ſuche lordes of their pte wyll rule the felde/ for the loue and fauoure that they beare to the erle of Derby/ and the erle Marſhall is ſore hated/ and ſpecially the Londoners wolde he were ſlayne. And the partes of the people of Englande ſaye/ that whan ye harde ỹ wordes fyrſt betwene theſe two erles/ that ye ſhulde haue done otherwyſe than ye dyd/ and that ye ſhulde haue broken the quarell/ and haue ſayd. Sirs/ ye are bothe my coſyns and lyegmen/ therfore I commaunde you to kepe the peace fro henſ forthe. And ſhulde haue taken the Erle of Derby by the hande and haue ledde hym in to youre chambre/ and haue ſhewed hym ſome ſigne of loue. And bycauſe ye dyde nat thus/ the brute ronneth/ that ye beare fauour to the erle Marſhalles partie/ and are agaynſt the erle of Derby. Sir/ conſyder well theſe wordes that we ſhewe you/ for they be true we. Sir/ ye had neuer more nede of good counſayle than ye haue nowe. Whan the kynge herde theſe wordes he chaunged countynaunce/ the wordes were ſo quickely ſpoken. Therwith the kynge tourned fro them/ and leaned out at a wyndowe/ and ſtudyed a certayne ſpace/ and than he tourned agayne to them that had ſpoken to hym/ who were/ the archebyſſhoppe of yorke/ and the Erles of Saliſbury & of Huntingdon his brethern/ and thre other knightes of his chambre/ than he ſayde to them. Sirs/ I haue well herde you/ and if I ſhulde refuſe youre counſayle I were greatly to blame. Wherfore ſirs/ con

ſyder

ſyder what is beſte for me to do. Sir quod one of theym that ſpake for all. The matter that we haue ſpoken of/ is tyght perylous. ye muſte diſſymule the mater/ if ye wyll haue youre honour ſaued/ and to make peace. And ſir/ ye ought rather to entertayne the generalte of youre realme/ than the ydell wordes of two knyghtes. But ſir/ the byute thoroughe out all the Realme of Englande is/ how the erle Marſhall hathe greatlye treſpaſſed/ and hath tenewed to many yuell thynges/ and daylye teneweth/ and the realme taketh all his wordes in payne/ and ſaith/ how that by his ydell wordes/ he wolde reyſe a peeſſe agaynſt the erle of Derby/ and to bringe the lande in to trouble. Firſt. They ſay it were better that he abode the payne/ and the erle of Derby to be quyte. Sir/ we thynke that or they ſhulde arme thē to mete togyder that ye ſhulde ſende to them & cauſe thē to be bounde to abyde youre ordynaunce/ in this enterpryſe. And whan they be ſurely bounde to abyde youre ſentence/ than ye maye gyue theym this Judgemente. That within fyftene dayes after/ the erle Marſhall to auoyde the realme/ without any truſte euer to retourne agayne. And the erle of Derby in lyke wyſe to auoyde the realme/ and to be banyſſhed for tenne yere. And whan he ſhall departe the realme (to pleaſe the people withall) releaſe foure yere of the tenne/ and ſo let hym be banyſſhed for ſixe yere without pardone. This is the counſayle ſir that we wyll gyue you. For ſir/ in no wyſe let them be armed one agaynſt another/ for the inconuenyentes that maye fall therby. The kynge ſtudyed a lytell and ſayde. Sirs/ ye counſayle me trewly/ and I ſhall folowe youre counſayle.

Howe kynge Richarde gaue ſentence/ wherby he banyſſhed out of Englande therle of Derby for .x. yere/ and the erle Marſhall for euer. Capi. CC. xrix.

Anone after that this coniſayte was gyuen to the kynge/ he aſſembled great nombre of prelates & grete lordes of Englande/ and they came to hym to Eltha there was his two vncles/ the duke of Lancaſtre and the duke of yorke/ The erles of Northumberlande/ of Salyſbury/ and of Huntyngton. Than the kynge ſente for the erle of Derby and the erle Marſhall/ and ſette eche of them in a ſeuerall chāber. The kynge ſhewed howe he wolde be a meane betwene them/ and howe their wordes hadde greatly diſpleaſed hym/ and that they were ſuche/ that ought nat lyghtly to be pardoned. Wherfore/ he wolde in all poyntes they ſhulde ſubmytte them ſelfe/ and to abyde his ordynaunce in that behalfe. Than he ordayned the conſtable of Englande/ and foure other great lordes/ to go to the erle of Derby and to therle Marſhall/ to take their bondes/ to abyde the kynges ordynaunce. These lordes came to the ſayd erles/ and ſhewed them the kynges pleaſure/ and how the kynge wolde take the matter on hym. So they bounde them ſelfe to abyde the kynges order. Than the kynge ſayde. I ordayne and commaunde/ that the erle Marſhall/ by cauſe he hath brought this Realme in to this trouble/ by reaſon of his wordes/ wherin he canne nat make profe. That he ordayne hym ſelfe to auoide this realme of Englande/ and goo dwell in what place he lyſte out therof. And that he be banyſſhed in ſuche wyſe/ that he neuer retourne agayne. And alſo I ordayne/ that the erle of Derby our coſyn/ by cauſe he hathe diſpleaſed vs/ and that he is the chiefe cauſe of the banyſſhment of therle Marſhall. That within this fyftene dayes he auoyde the Realme of Englande/ and to be banyſſhed for tenne yeres without retournynge/ excepte we repeale hym agayne/ the whiche ſhall alwayes lye in our pleaſure.

This ſentence greatly contented the lordes that were there preſent/ and they ſayde/ the erle of Derby maye well ynoughe go and ſporte hym out of the realme/ for two or thre yeres. He is ponge ynoughe. Thoughe he haue been ſore traueyled in

led in his dayes in farre countrees / as in to Pruce / and to the holy Sepulchre / to Cayre and to sayne Katheryns mount. So he may do yet / goo some other voyages to passe the tyme / if he lyste / he knoweth wyll ynoughe whyder to go. he hath two susters / one quene of Spaygne / the other quene of Portugale / He maye well passe the tyme with them. and also as nowe there is no warre. Whan he cometh in to Spaygne / he maye moue theym to make warre vpon the Sarazyns / and to make a voyage in to Granade / wherby he maye better employe his tyme / than abydynge in Englande / or elles he maye goo in to Heynaulte to his brother and colyn the Erle of Ostrenaunt / who wyll receyue hym with great ioye / and retayne hym / for he hathe warre with the Frelons. and in Haynaulte he maye dayly here newes out of Englande and fro his children. He can natte go amysse goo where he wyll. And the kynge maye repeale hym agayne by good meanes / whan it shall please hym / for he is one of the fayrest floures in his garlande. He shall nat be longe absente / if the kynge purpose to haue the loue of his people. But the erle Marshalle is in a farre worse case / for he is banysshed without hope / for euer to retourne agayne. And to saye the trouthe / he hath well deserued it / for all this myschefe is come by hym / and by his wordes. Thus dyuers knyghtes and squyers of Englande talked to-gyder / one with another / the same daye that the kynge gaue the sayde iugemẽt.

Thowe the erle of Derby departed fro London to go in to Fraunce / and the erle Marshall went in to Flaunders / and so in to Lombardy.

Cap. CC. xxx.

When these two Erles sawe what sentence ỹ kynge had gyuen theym / they were syghe sore pensyue / and good cause why. The erle Marshall sore repented him of that he had said and done. For whan he began the mater / he thought otherwyse to haue ben borne out by the kyng / than he was. For if he hadde knowen as moche before / he wolde neuer haue begon the matter. Whan he sawe there was no remedy / he made hym redy / and made his exthaung fro London to Bruges / and so cãe to Calays / where as he had ben capitayne / and there toke his leaue and so went to Bruges / and there tarryed a fyftene dayes / & than to Gaunt / and so to Haynges / and finally to Colloigne. Lette vs leaue spekyng of hym and speke of the erle of Derby / who prepared hym selfe in lykewise to departe out of Englande / accordyng to the kynges sentẽce.

Whan his daye of departure approched he came to Eltham to the kynge / where as the duke of Lancastre his father was / and the duke of yorke with them / the erle of Northumlande / and sir Henry Percy his sonne / with a great nombre of other knyghtes and squyers of Englande / suche as loued hym. And were sore displeased of the fortune / that he must auoyde the realme. These lordes came hyder to se what ende the kynge wolde make in the mater / of whose cõmyng the kynge made semblaunt to be right ioyfull / and made them great chere / and helde a great court. Also there was the erle of Salisbury / and the erle of Huntyngton brother to the kyng / who hadde to his wyfe the duke of Lancastres doughter / and suster to the erle of Derby. These two lordes came to the erle of Derby / I knowe nat if they dissymuled or nat. At the erles departynge / the kynge humpled hym greatly to his colyn of Derby / and said As Godde helpe me / it right greatly displeaseth me / the wordes that hath been bytwene you and the Erle Marshalle. But the sentence that I haue gyuen is for the beste / and for to apease therby the people / who greatly murmured on this matter. Wherfore colyn / yet to ease you somwhat of your payne / I re-

lease my

leaſe my Judgement fro tenne yere to ſyxe yere. Coſyn/take this axe the/and ordayne you thereafter. The erle answered and ſayd. Sir/ I thāke your grace/and whan it ſhall pleaſe you ye ſhall do me more grace. All the lordes that were there/ were well contented with the kynge/as for that tyme. Than euery man departed/ and some went to London with the erle of Derby. The Erle made all his prouiſyon at Douer to paſſe to Calays. And the erle beyng at London/or his departure/ was counſayled by his father for to go ſtreight to the Frenche kynge/and to his coſyns in Fraunce/ And accordynge to his fathers counſayle so he dyde/ or elles he wolde haue gone to the erle of Oſtrenaunt his brother and coſyn. Whan the Erle departed fro London/there were in the ſtretes more than fourtie thouſande men/ weppyng and cryeng after hym/ that it was pytie to here. And ſoe ſaid. O gentyll erle of Derby/ ſhall we thus leaue you? This Realme ſhall neuer be in ioye/ tyll ye retourne agayne: But the daye of retourne is very longe/ for enuy/ falſehed and treaſon/ hath putte you out of this Realme/ where as ye ought to abyde rather thā many other. for ye are of ſuche lynage/ and of ſo noble blode/ that none ought to be compared to you. And gentyll erle/ why ſhalle we leaue you? ye neuer dyde nor thought yuell.

Thus men & women pitiouſly ſpake he was nat conueyed out of the cytie with inſtrumentes/ but with lamentable weppynges. And ſome ſayd ſecrete lye. Cōſyder the order of theſe people/ what diſpleaſure they take for a ſmall occaſyon. Who ſo euer wolde ſtyre the Londoners to ryſe agaynſt the kyng/ he might than go ſche further: & flye out of the realme/ rather than the erle of Derby. but it is as nowe no tyme/ ſythe the duke of Lācaſtre his father ſuffreth it/ we muſt nedes ſuffre it. The mayre of London and a great nombre of the chiefe burgeſſes/ accompanyed therle of Derby out of the cytie. Some rode to Dartforde and ſome to Douer and ſawe hym take ſhippyng/ & than they retourned. And the erle of Derby or he came to Calais/ he hadde ſent a knyght and an herauide to the Frenche kyng/ and to his brother the duke of Orleaunce and to ỹ kynges vncles/ the dukes of Berrey/ of Burbon and of Burgoyn/ to knowe the kynges pleaſure/ if he wolde ſuffre the Erle to abyde at Parys/ and to kepe there his houſe/ & to pay for euery thyng that he or his men ſhulde take: To this requeſt/ the Frenche kynge and his vncles lightly agreed/ and ſhewed that they were right ioyfull of his cōmynge/ and ſaid/ howe they were ryght ſorye of the erles trouble. Theſe meſſangers returned to Calais/ and founde the erle redy there. The frēche kynge ſent ſir Charles of Hangers to open all the cyties and townes betwene Calais and Paris/ to receyue therle and his cōpany. Thus the erle of Derby departed fro Calays and toke the waye to Ampence/ and in euery place he was well receyued.

Howe the lorde Guillyam erle of Oſtrenaunt ſente to his coſyn therle of Derby certayne meſſangers/ and howe therle came to Paris/ & howe he was receyued. Capi. CC.xxx.

The erle of Oſtrenaūt beyng at Quelnoy/ allone as he knewe that his Coſyn the erle of Derby was paſſed the See/ and was come to Calais. He ordayned ſir Juncell of Traſſagetes and ſir Fierebras of Vertayne/ to ride to Calais/ and to deſyre the erle of Derby to come in to Heynaulte to ſporte hym/ and to abyde there a ſeaſon/ promyſynge hym to haue good chere. Theſe two knyghtes departed fro Quelnoy/ and rode to Cambrey and to Bapames/ for they herde newes/ that the erle was departed fro Calais/ and hadde taken the waye to Ampēce/ and ſo to go to Parys. Theſe two knyghtes metteth hym by the waye. They ſpake with hym and dyde theire meſſage/ ſo that the Erle thanked them/ and alſo his coſyn that had ſent them to him. and than he excuſed hym ſelfe/ and ſayd howe he had made

had made his prouysyon to go in to Fraunce as at that tyme to the Frenche kynge and to his cosyns of Fraunce/ but he wolde not renounce the curtesy that his cosyn of Heynalt had shewed hym. Than these two knightes departed and retourned/ and shewed therle of Ostrenaunt what they had sene and done. And therle of Derby and his company rode so long that he aproched nere to Parys. whan the kyng and the duke of Ostyaunce and his vncles knewe that the erle of Derby came to Paris. he prepared his chābers in his place of sayne Poule richely to receyue therle/ and caused all lordes to issue out of the cytie to receyue hym: and the kyng tarryed at the house of sayne Poule. First mette hym the duke of Berrey and the duke of Ostyaunce/ and than the duke of Burgoyne and the duke of Burbon/ and other noble prelates lordes & knightes. At the metyng there was frendly chere/ and so in good order they entred in to Paris with great ioye. The same daye one great myschaunce fell/ there was a squyer named Boniface mounted on a great courser/ whiche horse rose vpright vpon his hynder fete and fell backewarde/ and the squyers hedde lyght vpon the stones/ that his hedde cloue a sonder and so dyed/ of whose dethe the duke of Ostyaunce was eyght sorte/ for he loued hym entierly/ and so dyde the lorde of Coucy in his dayes/ for he brought hym in to Fraūce out of Lombardy.

Thus they came to the house of sayne Poule where the kynge was/ who receyued therle nobly/ and therle was sage and wyse/ and knewe moch of that pertayned to honour. He made his reuerence and acquaynted hym with the kynge after good maner/ so moche/ that he greatly pleased the kynge/ and for good loue he gaue the erle his deuyse to weare/ the whiche the erle receyued ioyfully. The wordes that were betwene them I can not tell/ but all was well. And after takyng of spyce and wyne/ the erle toke leaue of the kyng/ and than went to the quene in the same house/ and shewed hym reuerence there. Than after the erle departed and toke his horse to go to his lodgyng/ and so was conueyed thyder. Thus passed the tyme/ and the lordes of Fraunce dyde often tymes kepe hym company/ and caused hym to passe the tyme with sportes and otherwyse/ to the entent he shulde thynke the season the shorter/ bycause he was out of his owne nacion. Howe lette vs leaue speakyng of the erle of Derby/ and somwhat speke of the ordynaunce of the Churche of the two popes/ Benedic beyng at Auignon/ and Boniface at Rome.

Thowe the treatie that had been at Reynes/ betwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Almaygne/ concernyng the vnyte of the churche was folowed. And howe the byssh oppe of Cābrey was sent by the sayd kynge to Rome and to Auygnon/ to thē that wrote them selfe popes/ to thētent that they shulde depose thē selfe fro their papalytes/ and submyt thē to the ordet of these two kynges.

Capi. CC.xxxii.

We haue herde here before/ howe the kyng of Almayne and the kyng of Fraunce/ & the lordes of themprre and their cōsails had ben at the cytie of Reynes/ and there they had dyuers secrete counsayls. and their entencion was/ to bryng the churche in to a parfyte vnite/ for to folowe the way that the churche helde as than. The errour was to great. And also ye haue herde howe mayster Peter de Ailly byssh oppe of Cambrey/ was sent in legacion to Rome to speke with pope Boniface. he spedde hym so in his iourney that he came to Fondes/ and there founde pope Boniface/ and to hym he delyuered his letters of credence/ dyrected fro the kynges of Almaygne and of Fraunce. The pope receyued them/ and the byssh oppe right meke lye. The pope knewe well parte of his message. Than the byssh oppe declared the cause of his comynge. Whan the pope hadde well herde hym he sayde/ howe the answere lay not all onely in hym/ but also in all the cardy-

nalles

walles that had chosen hym pope. but he sayd whan he hadde spoken with them by deliberate counsayle than he wolde make suche answere that he trusted to content them. This answere was sufficient for that tyme. The byll hoppe dyned that daye in the popes palyce / and certayne Cardynalles with hym. Than after the pope departed fro Foundes and went to Rome / and there the pope assembled a conuocacion of the cardynalles in his palyce beside saynt Peters churche. In this consistorie there were none but the pope and his cardynalles / And there the pope shewed the requeste that the kynge of Almaygne and the Frenche kyng had made hym by the byssshoppe of Cambrey / & there he demaunded counsaile what answere he shuld make. there were thane many reasons alleged / for it semed right contrary to the cardinalles to put downe that they hadde made / they sayde it shulde be greatly to their shame and rebuke. Than they said to the pope. Holy father / to cause these kynges to be in a good hope / ye wyll obey to the / ye must somwhat dissymule y matter / and saye howe ye wyll gladly obey to all thynge that the kynge of Almaygne / the kyng of Hungery / and the kyng of Englande wyll counsayle you vnto. So that he that is in Auignon / who writeth hym selfe pope Benedict / whom the Frenche kyng and the frenchmen beholde in his errour / that he depose hym of the name of papalyte. And thā what so euer it shall please the sayde kynges to ordeyne a conclaue / ye wyll be redy and all your brethern the cardynalles. This counsayle pleased well pope Boniface. This was the generall and generall answere that the byssshoppe of Cambrey had. And whan the Romayns vnderstode that the kynges of Almaygne and of Fraunce / had sente to their pope their ambassade / to haue hym to leaue his papalyte / anone there multiplyed great murmuracion / through the cyte of Rome. And the Romayns doubted greatly to lese the papis seege / whiche was perylous to them a great parte. For all pardons that shulde be ordeyned after / the lauage thereof shulde growe to the cyte of Rome. and ageynst that perdone they had made great prouysyon / wherfore they doubted lest it shulde haue ben lassed whiche shulde greatly haue hurt to their profyte. Than the moost notablest persones in Rome assembled togyder / and came to the Pope and shewed hym more signe of loue / than euer they hadde done before / and sayd. Holy father / we ate the trewe pope / therfore lese not your heritage and patrimony of the churche / the whiche was saynt Peters. take neuer counsayle to the contrarye / but abyde styll as pope. For who soeuer be ageinst you / we shall abyde with you / and separate oure bodyes and goodes / to defende you in youre right. The pope answered and sayd. My welbeloued children be of good comfort / and be well assured / that I wyll abyde as pope / for any treatie of kynge or kynges to the contrary. Thus the Romayns were contented and apeased / and retourned to their houses. The popes answere was alwayes to the byssshoppe of Cambrey / that whā he perceyued clerely that Benedict deposed hym selfe / than he said / he wolde be ordred by the sayde kynges. So the byssshoppe retourned and came in to Almaygne / and founde the kyng at Valence / and there he shewed y answere that he had at Rome. Than the kyng of Almaygne sayde. Well. Shewe all this to our brother and cosyn the Frenche kynge / and as he ordreth hym selfe so shall I order me / and all the empyre. But as farre as I can se / he must begyn fyrst. And whan he hath putte downe his pope / than we shall putte downe ours. Than the byssshoppe departed fro the kyng / and rode tyll he came to Parys / wher he founde the Frenche kyng. And there the byssshoppe shewed his answere whiche was kepte secrete / tyll the kyng had assembled togyder more nōbre of noblemen and prelates of his realme / by whome he wolde be counsayled how he shulde procede further.

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noblemen of his realme / with the Vniuersyte of Paris / to take counsayle howe they shulde order pope Benedict at Auignon. Cap. CC. xxxiii.

whan

Whan the frenche kyng had herde the aunſwere of Pope Bonyface at Rome/ and howe the kynge of Almayne in lykewyſe aunſwered/ how that fyrſt pope Benedyct muſte be put downe. that done/than he wolde make a conuocacyon of prelates and noble men of his realme/ and come to Parys. There were certayne prelates in Fraunce/ as the archebyſſhop of Reins ſyr Guy of Roye/ and the archebyſſoppes of Rone and Sens/ and the byſſhoppes of Parys/of Beauoys/ and of Anxer/ they had ſore ſuſteyned the oppynyons of pope Benedyct at Auygnon/and ſpecyally of Clement/ bycauſe he was auaunced by their meanes. Theſe fyue prelates were nat called to the kynge in this counſayle/but other prelates and the vnyuerſyte of Parys. And whan the byſſhop of Cambray had ſhewed before them all/howe he had ſpedde at Rome/ and the aunſwere that pope Bonyface and his cardynals had made hym/ and the aunſwere of the kynge of Almayne/ than they entred in to counſayle/ and it was agreed ſ̄ the vnyuerſite ſhulde haue the greateſt voyce. Than it was determyned by the vnyuerſite that the kyng ſhulde ſende ſyr Bouciquant his marſhall in to the partyes of Auygnon/ and to do ſo moche by treatie or otherwyſe/ that Benedyct ſhulde leaue his papalyte and to ordeyne hym ſelfe in all poyntes by the kyng and his counſayle. and that the churche in all the lymytacions in the realme of Fraũce ſhulde be as newter/ tyll the churche were brought in to parfyte vnyte/ and that doone/ than euery thynge to returne to the true right. This counſayle was thought good and was accepted of the kynge and all other. Than the marſhall of Fraunce and the byſſhop of Cambray were ordeyned to go to Auygnon. They departed fro Parys/ and rode tyll they came to Lyons on the ryuer of Rone/ and there they two departed a ſonder/for it was ordeyned that the marſhall ſhulde tary there ſtyll tyll he herd tydynges fro the byſſhoppe/ who rode forthe and ſo came to Auygnon. There were ſome of the cardynalles that knewe well wherfore he came/but they diſſymuled the mater to knowe what pope Benedyct wolde ſay. whan the byſſhop of Cambraye had refreſſhed hym at his lodgynge/ & had chaunged his apparell/ than he wente to the popes palayes/ and whan he came in the popes preſence he made his reuerence/ but nat in ſuch wyſe as he ought to haue doone/ if he had taken hym as pope/ as other men dyd/ and yet he made hym byſſhoppe of Cambray/ but that promocyon he had by the meanes of the lordes of Fraunce. Than the byſſhoppe of Cambray who was well langaged/ bothe in laten and in frenche/ ſpake and ſhewed howe he was ſent thyder fro the frenche kynge and fro the kynge of Almayne/ and ſo beganne his proces/ and whan the byſſhoppe came to the vtterraunce of the mater/howe the pope ſhulde reſygne and depoſe hym ſelfe fro the papall dygnyte/ and that he that was at Rome ſhulde do lykewyſe. With thoſe wordes the pope beganne to chaunge colour/and lyfte vp his voyce and ſayd. I haue endured great payne & trauayle for the churche/ and by good election I was created pope/ and nowe to depoſe my ſelfe/that ſhall I neuer do during my lyfe. and I wyll that the frenche kynge knowe that for all his ordynaũce I wyll do nothynge thereafter/ but I wyll kepe my name and papalyte tyll I dye. Syr quod the byſſhoppe of Cambray/ ſauyng your grace/ I take you for more prudent than I nowe fynde you. fyrſte demaũde counſayle of your bretherne the cardynalles/ and than make aunſwere/ for you alone can nat make no reſyſtence agaynſt them if they agree to this oppynyon/ nor ye are nat able to reſyſte the puyſſaunce of the kynges of Fraunce and Almayne. Than two cardynalles that were there ſuch as the pope had made before/ they parceyuynge the mater nat lykely to do well/ roſe and ſayd to the pope. Holy father/ the byſſhoppe of Cambray ſpeketh well/ ſyr we deſyre you do herin after his coũſayle. Well quod the pope I am contente. So they departed for that tyme/ and the byſſhop went to his lodgynge/ and went nat to ſe any cardynals/ but diſſymuled hym ſelfe. The nexte day he tymes the bell ſowned to the conſiſtory/ and than there was a conuocacyon of all the cardynalles that were at Auygnon. They all aſſembled at the palays/ and entred in to the conſiſtory/ and thyder was called the byſſhop of Cambraye/ who in laten ſhewed at length his meſſage/ and the cauſe of his cõmyng thyder. Whan he had ſayd than he was aunſwered/ howe the pope ſhulde take counſayle to aunſwere/ and in the meane tyme he to departe

out of the house/s so he byd/ and in the meane
season Benedic and his cardynalles counsay-
led togyder/ and were longe debatynge of the
mater/ and many thought it herde and a con-
trary mater to put downe that they had crea-
ted. than the cardynall of Ampence spake and
sayd. Lordes/ whether we wyll or nat/ it must
behoue vs to obey the frenche kynge and the
kinge of Almayne/ sythe they be conioyned to
gyder/ for without the we can nat lyue/ howe
be it we shulde do well ynough with the kyng
of Almayne if the frenche kynge wolde take
our parte/ but it is otherwyse/ for he cõmaun-
deth vs to obey/ or els he wyll stoppe fro vs the
fruites of our benefyces/ without the whiche
we can nat lyue. Trewe it is holy/ father that
we haue created you as pope/ on ꝑ condycion
that to your power ye shuld ayde to reformne
the churche/ and to bring it in to parfyte vny-
on/ and this ye haue alwayes sayd and mayn
tayned/ therfore (yr) answere atemperately/
and in suche maner as we may prayse you/ for
(yr) ye ought better to know your owne corage
than we. Than dyuers other of the cardynal-
les sayd/ (yr) the cardynall of Ampence sayeth
well and wysely/ wherfore (yr) we pray you all
in generall/ that ye wyll speke/ and shewe vs
what ye wyll do. Than Benedyct answered
and sayd. The vnyon of the churche I desyre/
and I haue taken great payne therin/ but (yth)
god of his deuyne grace hathe prouyded for
me the papalyte/ and that ye haue chosen me
therto/ as longe as I lyue I wyll be pope/ and
I wyll nat depose my selfe nouther for kyng/
duke/ erle/ nor other treatte/ nor by no procesle
nor meanes/ but ꝑ I wyll abyde pope. Than
the cardynals rose vp all togyder with great
murmuryng/ some sayd he had spoken well/
and some sayd contrary. Thus they dyffered
and were in dyscorde. The most parte depar-
ted out of the consystory/ and toke no leaue of
the pope/ and retourned to their lodgynges.
Some suche as were in this popes fauour ta-
ryed styll with hym. Whan the bysshoppe of
Cambray sawe howe they departed in suche
maner/ he knewe well they accorded nat well/
and therwith auaunced hym selfe/ and entred
in to the consystory/ and so came to the Pope
whyle he sate styll in his see/ and without do-
ynge of any great reuerence sayde. Syr gyue
me myne answere/ sythe ye haue had your
counsayle abouts you/ ye ought to gyue me
myne answere that I may retourne. This
pope Benedic who was in great displeasure
for the wordes that the cardynall of Ampence
had spoken/ sayd. Bysshoppe of Cambray I
haue counsayle of dyuers of my brethrene the
cardynals/ who hath created me in to the dig-
nyte papall/ and haue receyued all the solemp-
nytes therto belongyng/ and am writen and
named pope by all my subgiettes/ and as pope
I wyll abyde as longe as I lyue/ I dyll nat
do the contrary to dye in the payne/ for I haue
doone no cause why to lese it/ and saye to our
sonne of Fraunce/ that hyther vnto I haue ta-
ken him as a good catholyke prince/ but nowe
by (yuill) meanes if he wyll entre in to great
errour/ he wyll repente it. I praye you to say
to hym fro me/ that he be well aduysed howe
he enclyneth to any thinge that shulde trouble
his conscyence. Therwith this Benedic rose
out of his chayre/ and went in to his chambre/
and certayne cardynalles with hym/ and the
bysshoppe of Cambray retourned to his lod-
gynge/ and dyned sobrely/ and than after toke
his horse and passed the bridge of Rone/ and
came to vile Neufe/ and at nyght lay at Baig-
noulx/ whiche partaygned to the Realme of
Fraunce/ and he vnderstode that (yr) Bourg-
quant marshall of Fraunce was come to porte
saynt Andrewe a myne leages fro Auygnon.
The nexte day thyder came the bysshoppe of
Cambray/ and shewed hym the answere of
Benedic. Whan the marshall vnderstode that
this pope Benedic wolde nat obey the kynge
his maysters ordynaunce/ he sayd to the bys-
shop. (yr) ye are best to retourne in to Fraunce/
ye haue no more to do here/ and I shall exe-
cute that I am cõmaunded to do by the kynge
and his vncles. The nexte daye the bysshoppe
departed and toke the way to Albenoys and
to Pyne/ and the marshall set clerkes awarke
to write/ and sente for knyghtes/ squyers and
men of warre through all the countrey of Viu
rays/ of Vyuieres/ and Auuergne to Mount
pellyer/ for he had cõmyssyon so to do by the
king/ and also he sent to the seneschall of Beau
caire/ that he shulde close all the passages as
well by the ryuer of Rone as by lande/ to the
entent that nothynge shulde entre in to Auig-
non. He went hym selfe to the pownte saynt
Esperyte/ and closed there the passage ouer
the ryuer of Rone/ that nothynge shulde entre
that way in to Auygnon. Thus the marshall
dayly

hastly gathered men of warre/and many came to serue hym/ some for obeysaunce/ and some to pyll and robbe them of Iugnon. There came to hym syr Raymonde of Thourayne/ and the lorde de la Bath/the lorde of Tomon/ the lorde of Vyonctaue/ and the lorde Duras/ so ꝑ the marshall had a great nombre of men. Than the marshall sent an harauide to defye pope Benedic in his palays/ and all the cardynals that wolde take his parte. This was harde tydynges to the cardynals/and to them in the cytie of Iugnon/ for they knewe well they coulde nat longe sustayne the warre agaynst the puyssaunce of the Frenche kynge/ than they determyned to go and speake with the pope/ and so they dyd/ and shewed hym howe they coulde nat nor wolde nat sustayne the warre agaynst the frenche kynge/for they sayd they must lyue and haue their marchaundyse to go as well by lande as by ryuer. This Benedyc answered solysshly and sayde/syr your cytie is stronge and well prouyded / I wyll sende for men of warre to Genues and in to other places/ and to my sonne the kynge of Aragon/that he come and serue me/whiche I am sure he wyll do/for he is bounde therto for two causes/ he is of my lygnage/and also he ought to be obeysant to the pope. Syr/we are abashed of to lytell a cause / go your wayes and kepe and defende your towne/and I shall kepe my palays. Other answere the cardynals and the men of the cytie coulde nat haue of this Benedyc. So euery man retourned home. This Benedic had of longe tyme purueyed his palays with wyne/corne/lardeyole and of all other thinges pertaynynge to a forteresse: and also he was of his person hygh and cruell/ and wolde nat be abashed for a lytell thynge. The marshall of Fraunce departed fro pount sayne Espryte/ and passed with all his company by the towne of Orenge/ by consent of the prince of Orenge/ and so entred in to the countre of Vyenne/ whiche was lande pertaynynge to the churche / the whiche towne was ouer tyme/ and the men of warre passed at ꝑ bridge of Sourgues/ and so they were lordes of all the ryuer/ and the marshall layed in the towne of Sourgues with a great company of men of warre to kepe the towne and passages/ and also the garysone of Roues whiche pertayned to the pope. Than the marshall went and lodged at sayne Vteryne nere to Iugnon/and his men therabout/ and dayly came thyder men of warre/ so that the cytie of Iugnon was closed in before and behinde by lande and by the ryuer / so that nothynge coulde entre nor yssue without leaue. for at the towne of Roue without Iugnon / whiche pertayned to the realme of Fraunce/was the seneschall of Beaucayre with fyue hundred men/ and kepte the entre on that syde/ and the marshall of Fraūce with two thousande men was on the other syde of Iugnon/and he sent to them of the cytie that without they wolde obey and open their cytie/that he wolde burne all their vynes and houses abyde in the countrey aboute to the ryuer of Dureuse. That sommonynge greatly abashed the men and women within the cytie/ for their herytages laye without Iugnon vnto the ryuer of Dureuse. Than they went to counsayle without knowledge of the pope/and they called to their counsayle certayne cardynals/ as the cardynall of Impence/of Potctours/of Newcastell/of Vtupers/ and dyuers other. Than suche as had moste to lose shewed these cardynalles howe the marshall of Fraunce had thretened them to brynne their vynes and their howses/ and all this had caused the frenche kynge/agaynst whome they coulde nat resyste/ for his puyssaunce was so nere them. and all thynges consydred/ they sayde they were better to obey to the frenche kynge/ than to holde their parylous oppynyons / for of Benedyc they coulde haue no ayde nor comforte/and they demaunded of these cardynalles if they wolde ryse and take their parte. The cardynals sayd they were content to take their wayes/for victayles began to fayle them/ and also their beneyces were in the realme of Fraunce/ whiche they sayd they wolde nat wylyngly lese. So they entred in to treatie with the marshall of Fraunce/the whiche toke suche effecte/that all the men of warre entred in to the cytie of Iugnon/ and it was apoynted to beseige the palays/ their couynaunt was to do no harte nor displeasure to the cardynalles nor to none of their men/ nor to the hole body of the towne. This to do the marshall promysed. So they entred in to Iugnon/ and lodged at their ease and lyberte/and than all the passages as well by lande as by water were opened/ to the entent that all maner of victayle myght come to the cytie.

When he that wrote him selfe pope Benedyc (beynge closed in his palays) sawe that the cardynals and the men of the cyte had made a treatte with the marshall of Fraunce without his counsayle or aduyse/ he was therwith sore displeased/ howe be it the sayd that he wolde nat submytte hym selfe/ to dye in the payne/ and so he kepte hym selfe close in his palais/ which was as stronge a place as any in the worlde/ and most easyest to be kepte/ so that it be well bytayled. This pope had sent letters to the kynge of Aragone instantly to socoure hym in his nede/ and to sende him men of warre that he myght be able to resyst the marshall of Fraunce/ also he sente the kynge worde in his letter/ that if he coulde get hym thens fro Auignon/ he wolde go and kepe his see apostolyke in Aragon/ at Perpygnon or at Barcelone. The kynge of Aragon sawe well the popes letters/ but he made no force of them/ and sayd to his counsayle that were aboute hym. What/ meneth this preest that to susteyne hym and his argumentes/ I shall enterpryse to make warre agaynste the frenche kyng to ayde hym/ than I might well be reputed a fole. Syr quod his counsayle ye say trouthe/ ye haue no nede to medle in that matter/ for syr ye may be sure the frenche kynge hath suche counsayle aboute hym/ that he wolde make no warre agaynst hym without a iuste cause/ lette the clergy alone/ for if they purpose to lyue the prelates must obey the great lordes vnder whome their rentes and reuenues are/ they haue longe kept them in peace. And also syr the frenche kynge hath writen to you all re by/ desyringe you to determyne you and your countrey to be newter/ as he is and wyll be/ and syr ye were beste so to do/ for my lady the quene who is the Frenche kynges cosyn germayne/ is content so to be/ and so is the moste parte of your realme/ and the clergy in ly-ke/ wyse/ and specially Castelone and Spayne/ and syr we thynke it is the best opynion/ for if all cristen kynges do nat the same/ the churche shall neuer come to vnyte by reasone of two popes. Thus the kynge of Aragon and his counsayle dryuen togyder/ and pope Benedyct was styll in his palays/ trustynge to haue ayde of the kynge of Aragon/ but he was dysceyued/ and the marshall of Fraūce was with in the cyte of Auygnon/ and the palays was so kept that none coulde yssue out nor entre in. They lyued with that store they had for ly-tayles they had sufficient for two or three yere/ but they lacked wodde to make fyre with all/ and to seethe their meate/ whiche made them abasshed. Euery wyke the marshall herde newes fro the frenche kynge and the kynge fro hym/ and the kynge cōmanded hym that he shulde nat departe thens tyll he had atchyued his enterpryse. Thus the pope coude nat yssue out of ỳ palays/ there was suche watche layde on hym.

The conclusyon was/ whan this Benedyct sawe that he was so straytly kepte/ and that fyre fayled hym/ and other prouysions dayly dyscreased/ and sawe that no comforte nor ayde came to hym fro no parte/ at laste he yelded/ at the requeste of certayne of the cardynalles/ and the treatte was thus/ ỳ he shulde nat departe out of Auignon tyll there were made an vnyon in the churche/ and a certayne garde was sette aboute hym/ and the cardynalles and ryche men of Auignon bounde them selfe to kepe this Benedyct so straytly/ that they shulde rendre accompte of hym agayne/ ouchet quyche or dede. Suche cardynals as had their benefyces in Fraunce tooke great payne to make this treatte and composycion/ for they sayde all with one accorde/ that they wolde abyde with the frenche kynge. Thus this busynesse ended at ỳ tyme/ and euery man departed/ and the Marshall went to Parys/ and anone after he ordeyned him to go in to the realme of Hungery/ for the kynge of Hungery had written to the frenche kynge howe Lamorabaquy assembled great puyssaunce of men of warre/ of turkes/ arabyes/ tartaryes/ and suryens/ and of dyuers other of his secte/ to fyght with hym. The erle of Derby the same seson beynge at Paris in the house of Clysson/ nere to the temple/ was wyllynge to go in to Hungery/ whiche shulde be the beste coste to the Frenche kynge/ for he had euery wyke reby payed him fyue hundreth crownes of golde/ and the erle thought hym selfe moche bounde to the frenche kynge for that grace/ and whan that tydynges came fro the kynge of Hungery in to Fraunce/ the erle of Derby entended well to that matter/ and thought in hym selfe that voyage to be ryght honourable for hym to passe his spme there/ whereby he shulde the lightlyer forget the tyme

of his

of his trouble/ and ſpake to them of his ſpecy-all counſayle/ and they counſayled hym to go in that voyage/ ſo that he knewe fyrſt the duke of Lancaſtre (his fathers) pleaſure in that behalfe. Than the erle ſent one of his knyghtes called Dinorth in to Englande/ to knowe his fathers pleaſure. This knyght came in to Englande/ and founde the duke of Lancaſtre at a Caſtell a twenty myle fro London/ called Hertforde. There he ſhewed hym his ſonnes entente. And whan the duke vnderſtode the mynde of the erle his ſonne/ and the good wyll that he had to go in to Hungery/ to paſſe the tyme of his banyſhment/ he was ryght well content/ and ſayd to the knyght. Syr/ ye be welcome/ your wordes and my ſonnes letters requyreth counſayle/ ye ſhall reſt you here with vs a ſeaſon/ and in the meane whyle we ſhall take aduyſe/ and in the whyle ye may go and ſe my ſonnes chyldren/ for ye muſte beare tydynges of them to their father. Syr quod the knyght ye ſay true. So this knyght Syr Dinorth tarved a ſeaſon in Englande.

NOwe had the frenche kinge good occaſyon to write to the kynge of Almayne and to his counſayle in/ what caſe he had brought pope Benedic and the cardynalles. The kynge than ſent thyder a noble ambaſſade/ as the patryarke of Jheruſalem/ Syr Charles of Hangers/ and other knyghtes/ and they founde the kynge at Strawbourgh and dyd their meſſage/ wherwith the kynge and his counſayle were well content/ and ſayd howe they wolde determyne on that matter/ but they ſaid/ they wolde gladly that the kyng of Englande ſhulde take the ſame waye/ the whiche they feared ſhulde be herde to do. with this aunſwere the ambaſſadours retourned in to Fraunce/ and ſhewed the kynge what they had doone and ſene. The frenche kynge than to thentent to bring his purpoſe to paſſe/ ſente agayne in to Englande to kynge Richarde/ and the meſſangers ſhewed the kynge the cauſe of their comynge. The kynge gaue good herynge to the matter/ but as than he had nat the prelates of the realme nor the clergy with hym/ nor were nat ſo pliable to folowe his pleaſure/ as they in Fraunce to folowe the pleaſure of their kynge/ and this he ſhewed to the frenche kynges meſſangers/ howe be it he ſayde he wolde do his deuoyre/ and ſo he dyd. And ſo the meſſangers returned in to Fraunce and kynge Richarde on a daye at Weſtmynſter aſſembled all his prelates and clergy of Englande/ and whan they were there ye kynge ſhewed wyſely the dyfference that was in the churche/ and howe the frenche kynge by deliberacyon and aduyſe of counſayle/ and by conſent of the vnyuerſite of Parys and other clerkes/ he was determyned to be newter/ and in lykewyſe ſo are the kynges of Spaygne/ of Scotlande/ of Aragone/ and of Nauer/ and howe that all Almayne/ Boeſme/ and Italy/ were of the ſame oppynyon. In lykewyſe the kynge of Englande deſyred that his realme ſhulde folowe the ſame. Whan the prelates and the clergy/ who knewe nothynge why they were ſent for/ herde that mater they had great marueyle/ and were ſore abaſſhed/ ſome rode ſtyll and ſpake no worde/ and ſome began to murmure and ſayde. Our kynge is become frenche/ he entendeth to nothynge/ but to dyſhonour and diſtroy vs/ but he ſhal nat. What/ wolde he bringe vs out of our beleue/ he maye do ſo moche that he ſhall haue ruell therof/ let vs nat folowe this oppynion/ ſythe the frenche kynge taketh that waye/ lette hym holde hym ſelfe newter/ and let vs holde ſtyll our beleue/ and lette no man put it fro vs/ without there be greater apparaunce of a ſurer foundacyon/ than we ſe as yet. Whan kyng Richarde ſawe the dyfference and murmurynge of the clergy/ he cauſed the byſſhoppe of London to demaunde of all the clergy what was beſt to do. They all aunſwered that the matter was ſo great/ that therin requyred great counſayle and deliberacyon/ and ſo they departed/ and euery man went to his lodgynge. And whan the londoners knewe the cauſe of that aſſemble/ and the requeſt that the kynge had made/ they were than ſore troubled agaynſt ye kyng/ for the people of Englande were ſo fermely ſet on the beleuynge on the pope at Rome/ that they wolde nat leaue it/ and ſayde howe that Richarde of Burdeaulx wolde diſtroy them all if he be let alone/ his herte is ſo frenche that he cannot hyde it/ but a daye wyll come to paye for all/ that he ſhall repente hym and all ſuche as gyue hym ſuche counſayle. What ſoeuer the kynge ſayd to haue his people newter/ they wolde in no wyſe agree therto. And the frenche kynge was nat well content with his ſonne kynge Richarde/ in that he had nat

incontynent caused his realme to haue been newter/ but to saye the trouth/ the kynge was nat to blame therin. And also suche accydentes fell soone after/ the whiche were so great and horyble that the lyke hath nat ben sene in all this hystorye vpon no kynge cryste̅n/ except of noble kynge Peter of Lusygnen/ kyng of Cypper and Jherusalem/ whome his owne brother and the cypziens martyred.

¶ Of the aunswere of the Duke of Lancastre to the knyght sent to hym fro his sonne the erle of Derby/ and howe the duke of Lancastre dyed. Cap. CC.xxxiiii.

When sir Dmoyth whom the erle of Derby had sente in to Englande to his father the duke of Lancastre and had his answere of the duke/ and had vysyted all the erles landes/ and had sene his chyldren four sonnes and two doughters/ than he toke his leaue and retourne in to Fraunce. His aunswere was/ howe that the duke wolde nat counsayle the erle his sonne to go in to Hungery/ but whan he was wery of beynge in Fraūce/ than rather to go in to Castell to the kynge there/ and to his suster/ and if he lyste to further/ than to go and vysite his other suster the quene of Portugale. The erle redde his fathers letters two tymes ouer/ and studyed theron a season. and syr Dmoyth shewed him that the physicions and surgyons in Englande sayd surely/ howe that the duke his father had on hym a parylous sykenesse/ whiche shulde be his dethe. these wordes gretly letted the erle to take on hym any maner of voyage/ but so tarped styll at Parys/ and often tymes he went and sawe the frenche kyng/ the duke of Orlyaunce/ and the kynges vncles/ and alwayes they made hym good chere so that he was moche bounde to them/ and he sayde to the kynge. Syr/ ye do me so moche honoure and curtesy/ and shewe me so great sygne of loue/ that I knowe nat in all my lyfe dayes howe to deserue it/ but if euer I come in Englande my lady ꝑ quene your doughter to my power shall haue my seruyce. I thanke you cosyn quod the kynge. So it fell that aboute the feest of Crystmasse/ duke Johan of Lancastre/ who lyued in great displeasure/ what bycause the kynge had banysshed his sonne out of the realme for so lytell a cause/ and also bycause of the yuell gouernynge of the realme/ by his nephewe kynge Richarde/ for he sawe well that if he longe persecuted were suffred to contynewe/ the realme was lykely to be vtterly loste. With these ymagynacyons and other/ the duke fell sycke wherof he dyed/ whose dethe was greatly sorowed of all his frendes and louers. The kyng by that he shewed toke no great care for his dethe/ but sone he was for gotten. Than certayne of the noble men of Englande sawe well howe the realme forbysshed/ sythe the duke of Lancastre was deed/ and the duke of Glouceſtre his brother slayne/ and the erle of Arundell. and the erle of Derby banysshed/ who ought than to be duke of Lancastre by ryght succession. Than some sayde. Nowe we shall se what the kynge wyll do/ it is tyme nowe ꝑ he repeale home agayne his cosyn of Derby/ and to pardone hym his yuell wyll/ though he haue no cause to be displeased with hym/ it were tyme he came and entred in to his landes as duke of Lancaster. Suche wordes came a brode in the Realme in dyuers places/ and specially in the cyte of London/ where the erle of Derby was a hundred tymes better beloued thanne the kynge/ howe be it for all the wordes and murmuryng that the kyng and his counsayle knewe of/ yet he dyd nothynge therafter/ but clene the contrary. He was yuell counsayled/ for if he had incontynent after the dethe of the duke of Lancastre sente for the erle of Derby/ and at his comynge haue frendely welcomed hym home and haue called hym duke of Lancastre/ and haue taken hym as greatest personage in Englande nexte hym selfe/ and haue sayde howe he wolde be gouerned in all poyntes after his aduyse and counsayle/ and to do nothynge without his aduyse/ than the kynge had done well/ and lykely to haue contynued his estate as kynge of Englande/ and had nat receyued the yuell fortune that fell to hym shortly after/ as ye shall here after.

Howe

Tho we the dethe of the duke of Lancaſtre was knowen in Fraunce. the kyng of Englande wrote in maner of ioye to the frenche kynge therof/ and wrote nothyng therof to therle of Derby who was the dukes ſonne.

Cap. CC. xxxv.

THydynges of the duke of Lancaſters dethe came in to Fraunce/ & kyng Richarde of Englãde in maner of ioye wrote therof to the frenche kyng/ and nat to his cosyn therle of Derby/ howe be it the erle knewe it as ſoone as the frenche kynge or ſoner/ by ſuche men as he had in Englande. Than the erle apparelled hym and all his men in blacke / and cauſed his obſequy to be done right honorably/ at the whiche was the frenche kyng and his brother the duke of Orleaunce/ and all ỳ kynges vncles/ with a great nombre of prelates and great lordes of Fraunce. For the erle of Derby was welbeloued with euery mã/ and many were right ſorie of his trouble / for he was a pleſaunt knight and an honeſt plon/ curteſſe and ſwete/ & meke to euery man/ and euery man that ſawe hym ſaid/ howe ỳ kyng of Englande was nat well counſayled/ that he repealed hym nat home agayne. And truely to ſaye trouthe/ if the kynge of Englande had wyſely regarded the mater/ and had ben well counſayled/ the mater had nat tourned agaynſt hym as it dyde. For the erle of Derby / after the dethe of his father / was right enherytoure to be duke of Lancaſtre/ and to haue been the ſeconde perſone of the realme/ and by whom all the buſyneſſe of the realme ſhulde chiefely haue paſſed. Alſo the kynge and his counſayle ought to haue conſydred/ howe often tymes the people of Englande hadde ſpyred and murmured agaynſt hym: and ſhulde haue knowen/ howe he was nat verry welbeloued of the people / nor of ſome knightes/ & other: and how that in ỳ duke of Glouceſters dayes / he was often tymes in daunger of his perſone. As whan the Londoners and the counſaylles of dyuers good townes in Englande cãe to hym to Eltham/ and there made their requeſtes/ that all ſubſidies and ayes gyuen and graunted within twentie yere/ ſhulde haue ben fruſtrate and voyde/ or els they were determyned by the conſent of the duke of Glouceſtre/ and other noble men of the Realme/ to haue taken the kynge and to haue ſette another to haue reygned in his place/ and to haue putte ỳ kyng and the Quene in to a place / and ſo to haue hadde meate and drinke as long as they had lyued. In ſomoche/ that the duke of Glouceſter hadde deſyred a nephewe of his/ ſonne to the doughter of the duke of Clarence/ who was called Johan erle of Marche: That he wolde haue taken on hym the charge and gouernyng of the realme/ and that they wolde haue made hym kyng. But the ſame erle excuſed hym ſelfe honeſtly therfro. All theſe thynges were apeaſed and layde downe/ by the wyſe ſadde meanes and prudence of the layde duke of Lancaſtre/ father to this layd erle of Derby.

IF kyng Richarde had wyſely conſydred all theſe mats/ he had reigned in greter ſperite than euer he did before. Kyng Richarde knewe all this well ynough/ and ſo by ruell counſayle the kynge cauſed by colour of loue/ the duke of Glouceſtre to be taken and leede to Calays / where he was ſtrangled and murdered. Wherof great bruite was throughe out all the realme with great grudge and murmuracyons / ſo that it was at the poynt to haue depoſed the layde kyng Richarde. Howe be it the duke of Lancaſtre lyke a ſage and a prudent prince for all that the duke of Glouceſtre was his brother/ and that the murdryng of hym touched hym nere to his herte. All thynges conſyred/ and that he coude nat recouer agayne his brother/ wiſely and amiably he apeaſed all theſe maters. And the kynge his nephue more feared in Englãde than he was before. All this the kynge ought to haue conſydred/ and ſpecially howe therle of Derby was better beloued with the people / than any other man within the realme. All theſe thyngs wyſely cõſydred after the dethe of the duke of Lãcaſtre/ the kyng ſhulde haue repealed therle of Derby agayne in to the Realme / but the kyng had no mynde ſo to do/ for he dyd clene the contrary / for incontynent he ſente his officers in to all the duke of Lãcaſters landes

and toke

and toke the profittes therof to hym selfe/ and
sayd/ that as longe as therle of Derby stode
as a banysshed man/ that he nor none of his
shulde receyue any reuenues of any landes
within the realme of Englande. And more-
ouer (wherof the kyng was greatly blamed
of suche as loued the erle and his chyldren)
The kyng gaue awaye landes parteynynge
to the heryptage of the duchy of Lancastre to
some of his seruauntes/ suche as asked them
for the whiche cause/ many knyghtes & other
in Englande spake and sayd. The kyng sche-
weth well that he oweth no good wyll to his
cosyn the erle of Derby/ sythe he wyll nat re-
peale hym home agayne: and suffre his lan-
des to be gyuen awaye/ where as therle and
his chyldren shulde be great membres in En
glande/ & a good staffe for the kyng to leane
by. But he dothe the contrary/ for he driueth
hym awaye/ & so wyll kepe hym in this dan-
ger and worse if he coude. For he hath taken
to hym selfe his herytage/ and causeth his of-
fycers to medell with the dukes landes/ as
thoughe they were his owne. And if ỹ poore
tenauntes complayne of the iniuryes done
to them in their lordes absence/ they can nat
be harde: there is none ỹ wyll do them right
Also it is but a small token of loue/ that the
kyng beareth to the erle of Derby and to his
chyldren/ for therle herytage of Lancastre whi-
che shulde come to thē by right enheryptaūce/
discended fro their grandame the lady Blan
che/ doughter to duke Henry of Lancastre.
The kyng gyueth parte therof away where
as it pleaseth hym/ & suche landes as shulde
fall to them by the right of the lady their mo-
ther/ who was doughter to the erle of Her-
forde and Northampton/ and cōstable of En
glande. The kynge gyueth parte therof at
his pleasure. This is to morne done against
all ryght and reason/ and to the displeasure
of all the noble men of Englande: this can
nat longe endure vnamended. Thus the pe-
ples/ nobles men/ and commons in Englāde
comuned and murmured.

Alyke wyse in ỹ realme of Frā-
ce/ suche men of honour as her-
de speke of this mater/ and
hadde sene the erle of Derby at
Parys/ hadde great marueyle
therof/ and sayd one to another. As we thyn-
ke/ the kynge of Englande hath takenne to
great a displeasure with his cosyn the erle of
Derby/ who is the greatest man in Englād
next hym selfe. He is a gracious knyght/ cur
teise/ meke/ and tretable/ and a man good to
be spoken vnto. The kyng of Englande kno
weth some other thynge by hym than we do/
or elles the kynge is euell counsayled. And
it is marueyle/ that the Frenche kynge and
his brother the duke of Orleaunce/ and the
kynges vncles/ do nat attemper the mater/
for therle is dayly amonge theym. They
shulde fynde best prouysyon in this case/ for
the kynge of Englande wyll do more for thē
than for any men/ bycause he hath maried the
Frenche kynges doughter. But sythe they
do nothynge therin/ it is best we holde oure
peace and lette it passe. As for the Frenche
kynge & his brother and his vncles/ thought
nothyng but good. They honoured and lo-
ued greatly the erle of Derby/ and delyted
moche his company: and they sawe well he
was a wydower and to marry/ and that the
duke of Berry hadde a doughter a wydowe
of two husbandes/ she was but ponge of a
yere. yere of age/ & was named Mary. Her
fyrst husbāde was Loys of Bloys who died
ponge: and her secōde husbande was ỹ lorde
Philyppe of Arthoys erle of Ewe/ who died
in his retourne in Hungry: as ye haue herde
here before. This mariage was at apoynt
to haue concluded/ for they in Fraūce knewe
well that the duke of Lancastre was a great
enheryptour in Englande/ and the Frenche
kynge was well pleased therwith/ bycause
his doughter was Quene of Englande. for
he thought that the company of those two la-
dyes togyder shulde be great pleasure to thē
bothe/ sythe they were so nere of blode. And
therby the two realmes of Fraunce and En-
glande/ shulde be the surer contynued togy-
der in loue and peace/ whiche was trewe/ if
it might haue been accomplyshed. but kyng
Richarde of Englande & his counsayle brake
all that mater/ for the fortunes of this worlde
whiche are marueylous: nor a thynge that
shall be canne nat be eschewed. The whiche
fortune of this kynge Richarde was so mar-
ueylous/ that it is harde to thynke theron.
The kynge myght well haue remedyed the
mater if he had wolde/ but that thar shall be
shalbe. I shall shewe you what I Johan
Froissart

Froissarte / auctour of this hystorie / herde whanne I was but yonge in Englande / in a place called Berckamstede / whyche as at that tyme partenyed to the prince of Wales / father to this sayde kynge Richarde / it was in the yere of grace / a thousande thre hundred thre score and two. And bycause ỳ same tyme the prince and the princes shulde departe out of Englande to go in to Acquytayne to kepe their estate there. Kyng Edwarde his father and quene Phillyppe my maistres / and Lyonell duke of Clarence / Johan duke of Lancastre / & the lorde Edmonde / who was after Erle of Cambridge and duke of yorke / & their chyldren / were come to the said maner place / to se the prince and princes or they departed. And at thatt̃ I was of the age of .xxiiii. yere / and one of my said lady the quenes clerkes of her chambre. And as I satte on a benche I herde a knyght talkyng and deuysinge among dyuers ladyes and damoselles of the Quenes / and sayde to them. There is a booke in this countrey called the Bruit / & many men saye / it is of marueylous prophycies. But accordynge to that booke / the realme and crowne of Englande shulde nat retourne to the prince of Wales / nor yet to the duke of Clarence / nor that they shulde be kynges of England / though they were sonnes to kyng Edwarde but this knyght sayd / that accordyng to that boke / the crowne of Englande shulde come to the house of Lancastre. The same season whan this knyght spake these wordes / this sayd Henry erle of Derby was nat borne / nor yet seuyn yere after. but yet in my dayes the same wordes tooke effecte / for I sawe after / the same Henry erle of Derby kynge of Englande.

¶ Of a treatie of a marryage bytwene the erle of Derby and the duke of Berries doughter / and how kyng Richarde of Englande dyde lette it by the erle of Salisbury.

Capi. CC. xxxvi.

AS soone as kyng Richarde kynge of Englande herde of the treatie of the marryage bytwene the erle of Derby and the duke of Berryes doughter / & that the parties were nerehande accorded / he toke those newes to great displeasure / and sayd to the erle of Salisbury in whom he had great affyaunce. ye must or dayne you to go in to Fraunce with letters of credence / to our father in lawe the Frenche kynge / and to our frendes his brother & vncles. And shewe them fro vs / that in no wyse they conclude any treatie or alyaunce of marryage / with suche a traytour as is the erle of Derby / who wolde betray his naturall sourrayne lorde. And for the remynaunt of the matter ye are wyse ynough / do so therin that I maye can you thanke / and that the marryage maye be broken. The erle of Salisbury sayde. Sir / I shall do ryght well your comaundement. But sir / if it myght be broken by some other meanes / or by some other persone / I requyre youre grace it maye so be. Sir quod the kynge excuse you natte / for I wyll and also I praye you do this message / & what soeuer shall fall therof I shall sustayne you. Well sir quod the erle / sithe ye comaunde me so specially / and that I se the mater toucheth you nere I shall do it / thoughe I be lothe therto. ye shall go quod the kynge and make haste / or this alyaunce be concluded. Than the Erle prepared for his departure. The letters of Credence written and sealed / he departed fro the kynge / who was at that tyme at Leades / and the Quene also. The erle made haste and came to Douer / and so tooke the See and arryued at Calays / and there founde the erle of Huntyngton / who was capitayne of Calais and brother to the kynge. The Erle shewed vnto hym all his businesse / and so tarryed nat longe at Calays / but roode to Amyence and so to Parys / and all they waye that he rode he hadde good chere / and was lodged at the whyte house. And whan he had chaunged hym he wente to the kynge and to the quene / and to ỳ other lordes / and delyuered his letters of credence. Whan the kyng had reed the letters / he toke the erle aparte and demaunded what was his credence. The erle at length shewed his

shewed his charge / and named the Erle of Derby traytour agaynst his naturall lorde. Whan the Frenche kyng herde those wordes he was in great displeasure / for he loued so the erle of Derby / that he wolde here none yuell spoken of hym / and toke the letters of credence agayne to the erle of Salisbury / and sayd. Erle / we beleue you well ynough / but our sonne of Englande is to sore moued agaynst oure cosyn of Derby / and we maruayle greatly / that his yuell wyll contyneweth so longe / for we thynke he shulde be the better furnysshed if he were about hym / and to be nerre of his counsayle. Sir quod the erle of Salisbury / I do but as I am comaunded. That is trewe quod the kyng / we are nat displeased with you / parauenture our sonne of Englande knoweth more than we do: do yout message as ye were charged / and so he dyde / and to the duke of Berrey also. The duke gaue none answere therto / but wente to the kyng and demaunded of hym what ne wes he hadde out of Englande. The kynge shewed hym all / as the erle of Salisbury had sayde. Upon these newes the kyng and his uncles assembled togyder secretely. than the Frenche kynge sayd. The kynge of Englande by ymaginacyon doutteth greatly therle of Derby / or elles paraduenture he knoweth suche thynges as we knowe nat / nor can nat come to oure knowledge. And we ought rather to owe oure fauoure to the kynge of Englande than to the erle of Derby / sythe the kynge is ioyned with us by mariage. And he wyll take it in great disdayne sythe we be enfourmed of his pleasure / if we shulde do the contrary / and marry the erle of Derby to the countesse of Ewe. It behoueth vs rather to dissymule / kepe these newes secrete / tyll the erle of Salisbury be returned. Upon this poynt the kyng and his uncles rested.

When the erle of Salisbury had done his message / he tooke his leeue and departed. The Frenche kynge was more displeased with his comyng than ioyfull / for he delyuered agayne the erle of Salisbury his letters of credence / and wolde nat kepe them / he knewe so well the erle of Derby / who knewe of the erle of Salisbury's kynge at parys / but he sawe hym nat / for he was departed without speking with him and returned to Calays / and so in to Englande / and shewed the kynge of Englande howe he hadde spedde. When the erle of Derby knewe that the erle of Salisbury was departed fro Parys / without speking with hym / in his mynde he was sore displeased / and thought the matter went nat well. than his counsayle sayde to hym. Sire / shortely ye shall parceyue some other maters / than ye haue nat herde of as yet / thoughe it be kepte prayue fro you. These Frenchmen are wyse and cloke. It maye be so / that the kyng of Englande / and suche as be of his secre counsayle / be displeased / with that the Frenche kyng maketh you so good chere as he dothe. And parauenture it is spoken in Englande / howe ye shall be mary the duke of Berreys doughter / whyche pleaseth nat the kynge of Englande / and therfore he wyll do what he can to breke that mariage / and if it be so ye shall shortly here therof.

Shortely as they ymagined so it was / for within a moneth after the erle of Salisbury was departed fro Parys / suche of therle of Derbies parte as had the treatie of the sayde mariage in hande. They spake agayne of the mater to the duke of Berreys counsayle / who had their charge what they shulde answere. They sayd. Sirs Whan my lorde the erle of Derby is in the kynges presence / and the duke of Ostrauice and his uncles present / than lette my lorde the erle of Derby speke hym selfe / for we can saye no more to the mater. Therle of Derby who thought none yuell / but thought those wordes hadde ben spoken / to the entent to haue proched nerer to the poynt / for the kynge and his counsayle made hym as good chere thanne / as euer they dyde before. The Erle thought to speke in the mater / whan he sawe conuenyent tyme. And on a daye whanne he sawe the kyng and the lordes togyder / he began to speke of this mariage. Than the duke of Burgoyne / who hadde the charge to answere hym sayde. Cosyn of Derby / we haue nothynge to do to gyue in mariage oure cosyns to a traytour. Whan that woorde the erle of Derby was greatly abashed / & changed colour & sayd. Sire / I am here in the kynges presence / I wyll answere to this. I was neuer traytour nor neuer thought treason: & if there be

there be any perſone ꝑ wyll charge me with
trayſon I am redy to anſwere/ now or whā
it ſhall pleaſe the kynge/ here beyng preſent.
Nay coſyn quod the kyng/ I beleue ye ſhall
fynde no man in Fraunce that wyll chalenge
your honoure/ for the wordes that myne vn-
cle hath ſpoken came out of Englande. than
the erle kneled downe and ſayd. Sir/ I be-
leue it well. But god defende me and all my
frendes/ and confounde all myne ennemyes.
The frenche kynge toke vp the erle/ & ſayd.
Coſyn/ apeace your ſelfe: euery thynge ſhall
tourne to the beſt. And whan euery thynge
is agreed and at peace/ than we maye well
ſpeke & treate of maryage/ but fyrſt ye muſt
take poſſeſſion in the duchy of Lancaſtre/ for
that is the hage in Fraunce/ and in dyuers
countreis on this ſyde the See. That if a
lorde ſhall marry by the conſent of his ſoue-
rayne lorde/ he muſt endowe his wyfe. and
therwith they had ſpyces and wyne/ and ceſ-
ſed of that cōmunycacion/ and euery man de-
parted to their owne lodgynges.

When the erle of Derby was cōe
to his lodgyng he was ſore diſ-
pleaſed/ and nat without a cauſe. Whan he/ who was reputed
one of the treweſt knyghtes of
the worlde (in the preſēce of the frenche kyng
who loued hym well/ & had ſhewed him ma-
ny curteſies) ſhuld be reputed as a traytour
and that thoſe wordes ſhulde cōe out of En-
glande and brought by the erle of Saliſ bu-
ry. He was therwith in a great malencoly/
his counſayle apeaſed hym as well as they
coude/ & ſayd. Sir/ he that wyll lyue in this
worlde/ muſt endure ſomtyme trouble. Con-
fort you for this tyme and be pacient/ and pa
rauenture hereafter ye ſhall haue great ioye
and glorie. And ſir/ of al ꝑ lordꝛ on this ſyde
the ſee/ the frenche kyng loueth you beſt. and
we ſe well he wolde employe his payne to bri
ge you to ioye. and ſir/ ye ought to gyue him
and his vncles great thāke/ in that they kepe
this mater ſecrete/ tyll the erle of Saliſ bury
was departed. peaſers quod the erle/ I thynke
it had ben better it had ben ſhewed me in his
preſence/ that I myght haue made a ſufficiēt
excuſe before ꝑ kyng and all the lordes. thus
I ſhall abyde ſtyll in blame tyll the mater be
otherwyſe declared. Sir quod they all/ treſ-
paſſes can nat be amended at the fyrſt daye.
Sir ſuffre/ let the tyme ryn: we beleue your
buſynelle in Englande dothe better than ye
be ware of. The loue that is in the hertes of
the people in Englande towardes you with
their good prayers/ by ꝑ grace of god/ ſhall
ſhortely delyuer you out of all daungers.
This they ſayd to recōfort their lorde/ who
was ſore diſconforted/ and their ſayeng was
ſoner trewe than they were ware of.

None it was knowen in Englande
howe therle of Saliſ bury had ben
in Fraūce with the frenche kynge &
his vncles/ and borne letters thyder/ contey-
nyng howe the erle of Derby was falſely pe-
tured and a traytour. Of the whiche dyuers
noble men and prelates were ſore troubled/
and were nothynge contente with the erle of
Saliſ bury/ and ſaid generally/ that he was
ſoore to blame to take on hym the charge/ to
beare in to Fraunce any ſuche wordes/ vpon
as trewe a man as lyued. A daye wyll come
that he ſhall repent the tyme/ ꝑ euer he ſpake
the worde. ye maye well knowe/ the Lon-
doners were greatly diſpleaſed/ and mur-
mured agaynſt the kyng and his counſayle/
& ſayd. A gētyll knight erle of Derby/ great
enuy is there agaynſt you. It is nat ſuffycy-
ent for the kynge and his counſayle to driue
you out of the realme/ but alſo to accuſe you
of trayſon/ to putte you to the more ſhame &
rebuke. Well/ euery thynge muſte haue his
tourne. Alas quod the people: What fauite
or treſpaſſe hath your children done/ that the
kynge taketh thus awaye fro thē their herp-
tage/ whiche ought to be theirs by ryght ſuc
ceſſyon? This thynge can nat longe abyde
in this caſe without chaunge/ nor we can nat
ſuffre it. Thus anone after the retourne of
the erle of Saliſ bury out of Fraunce/ kyng
Richarde cauſed a iuſtes to be cryed and pu-
blyſhed throughe out his realme/ to Scot-
lande/ to be at Wynſore/ of .xl. knyghtes and
xl. ſquyers agaynſt all cōmers. And they to
be apareiled in grene with a whyte faucon &
the quene to be there/ well accōpanied with la
dyes & damoſels. This feſt thus holden/ ꝑ
quene beyng there i gret nobleneſs/ but there
were but fewe lordes or nobile men/ for mo
thā .ii. ptes of ꝑ lordes & knyghtes/ & other of
the realme of Englande had ꝑ kyng in ſuche
hatred/

hatered/ what for the banyll hyng of the erle of Derby/ and the murdres that he had done to his chyldren/ and for the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre/ who was slayne in the castell of Calais/ and for the dethe of the erle of Arundell who/ was beheeded at London. The kyng of these lordes came nat to this feest/ nor but fewe other. And at the same feest the kynge ordayned to go in to Irelande/ to employ his men in that voyage/ and so he departed and lefte the Quene with her traine styll at Wyndsore/ and the kynge rode to Bristowe/ and there made all his prouysion/ and he had ten thousande knightes and squiers/ and ten thousande archers. Whane the Londoners knewe that the kyng was goyng in that voyage they began to murmure/ and said amonge them selfe. Nowe gothe Richarde of Burdeaux the waye to Bristowe/ and so in to Irelande/ whiche wyll be to his distruction. He shall neuer retourne agayne with ioye/ no more than dyde kynge Edwarde the seconde his great grauntfather/ who was folysh holy gouerned by to moche beleuyng of the Spensers. In lykewise Richarde of Burdeaulx/ hath beleued so moche euell counsayle/ that it can nat be hydden nor suffred any lenger.

Howe kynge Richarde ordayned to go in to the marchelle of Irelande. Cap. CC.xxxvii.

There were many knightes and squyers in the kynges company/ that shulde go with hym in to Irelande that were nat contente with hym/ and wente in maner with an euell wyll/ & sayd oftentymes one to another. Our kynge gouerneth hym selfe folysh holy/ and beleueth euell counsayle. Suche wordes were so multiplyed/ that the lorde Henry Percy and sir Henry his sone spake certayne wordes/ whiche came to the kynges knowlege and to his counsayle/ and it was sayd to the kyng. Sir the wordes ought nat to be suffred/ that the erle of Northumberlande and his sone hath spoken/ for it is to sette your subiectes agaynst you. It muste behoue you to correcte all these rebelles one after another/ wherby they that be greatest shall doute you/ and take enlample. That is trewe quod the kyng/ but than what is beste to do. Sir quod they/ they be nat here with you/ but they ought to come. & whan they be come/ call them before you/ and than by the erle of Salisbury and by some other/ as it shall please you/ lette it be tolde to them/ the euell wordes that they haue spoken against you and your counsayle. Than shall you here what answere they wyll make: and therupon ye maye take aduyse/ whether ye wyll correcte them by yssion/ or other wyse. Well sirs quod the kynge/ ye say well/ this shalbe done. The erle of Northumberlande and his sone had good frendes in that armye/ so that some of them knewe the kynges entent: And they sent suche worde to the erle and to his sonne/ that they shulde nat come in the kynges presence/ nor to go in that iourney. For they hadde worde that if they dyde/ it shulde nat be for their welthe/ but to their great domage/ for the kynge was sore enfourmed against them. Whan they had this warnynge/ they stopped their comyng to the kyng/ and nat without good cause. For they were shewed that & if they came/ they shulde be in ieopardye of their lyues. Whan the kynges counsayle sawe that therle and his sone came nat/ they sayd to the kyng. Sir/ nowe ye maye se whyder we dyde enclyne you of the trouthe or nat. Ye maye se therle and his sonne disdayneth to serue you/ for they wyll nat come at youre comaundement/ and that shall ye se if ye sende for them. And I shall sende for them quod the kyng. Than letters were written & sente by notable messangers/ to therle & to the lorde Henry Percy his son. The content of the letters was/ that incontynent without delaye vpon the sight of those letters/ that they shulde come to the kyng and do their duetie/ as they were bounde to do. These messangers tourneyed so longe/ that they came to a fayre castell of the erles/ standyng on the frontier of Scotlande. The messanger acquyted hym well in doynge of his message/ as he was comanded. Therle redd his letters at length/ and than shewed them to his sonne. Than they toke aduise to make the messan-

the meſſanger good chere/and to wryte agayn to the kynge in excuſynge of them ſelfes/howe they coulde nat come out of their countrey as at that tyme/and howe that the kyng had men ynowe to aſſoyle his journey beſyde them. The meſſangers retourned to the kynge/and delyuered the erles lettre. The kynge redde it the whyche and were was nothynge pleaſaunt to the kynge nor to his counſayle/and thanne for this cauſe and for other thynges that were layde to the Erles charge and to his ſonnes/ they were openly banyſſhed the realme of Englande/tyll ſ kyng dyd repeale them agayne. This was publyſſhed through out all the cytes and good townes of Englande/and ſpecyally in London/ wherof the londoners had great maruayle/ nor they coulde nat knowe fully for what cauſe it was/ for the erle and his ſonne were reputed for noble and as valyaunt men as any within the realme. Some ſayd/ it cōmeth by ſome of the kynges counſayle that hateth them/ whiche counſayle wyll diſtroy the kyng at laſt/peraduenture the erle and his ſonne haue ſpoken ſome wordes vpon the kynge and his counſayle/for the yuell gouernynge of the realme/ & coulde nat be herde though they ſaid the trouth/and for their true ſayeng nowe they be puniſſhed/but we thinke hereafter they wyll be punyſſhed ſ nowe iudge them. Thus the londoners and other ſpake of this mater. The erle had a brother a valyaunt knight ſir Thomas percy/ who had of a longe tyme done many noble ſeruyces to the kynge of Englande. whan the erle knewe that he and his ſonne were banyſſhed the realme/ he toke it for an vnreaſonable punyſſhment without cauſe. Than he ſente for all his frendes in the countrey/ ſuche as he coulde get togyther/ for many of his lygnage were with the kynge to go in to Irelande. The erle toke counſayle of them what was beſt to do ſythe the kynge had banyſſhed hym without cauſe. Than he was counſayled to ſende in to the realme of Scotlande/and to helpe the kyng there that he and his ſonne might abyde peaſably in Scotlande/ tyll the kynge of Englande were apeaſed of his diſpleaſure. Thus the erle ſent to kynge Robert of Scotlande/and the kyng & the erle Archambault Douglas/ and the other lordes of Scotlande conſidered lyghtly to the erles dayre/& ſent the erle worde how they ſhulde be gladly receyued/ and alſo if they neded of fyue or ſyxe hundred ſpeares/ if they were ſignyfied of the tyme they ſhulde be redy to ſerue them. This meſſage pleaſed greatly the erle and his lygnage/and ſo the erle taryed ſtyll in his countrey amonge his frendes/ for kynge Richarde and his counſayle had ſo moche to do in ſhorte ſeaſon after/ that they had no layſer to do any diſpleaſure to the erle nor to his ſonne/as ye ſhall here after in this hyſtory.

In Kynge Richarde thus beynge aboute Bryſtowe/than the ſtate generally of all men in Englande began to murmure and to ryſe one agaynſt a nother/ and mynyſtrynge of iuſtyce was clene ſtopped vp in all courtes of Englande/ wherof the valyaunt men and prelates/ who loued reſte and peace/ and were glad to paye their duetyes/ were greatly abaſſhed/for there roſe in the realme companyes in dyuers rowtes/ keppynge the feldes and hygh wayes/ſo that marchauntes durſte nat ryde abrode to exercyſe their marchaundyſe for doute of robbynge/and no man knewe to whome to complayne to do them ryght/ reaſone/ and iuſtyce/ whiche thynges were ryght prejudyciall and diſpleaſaunt to the good people of Englande/ for it was contrary to their accuſtomable vſage/ for all people laborers and marchauntes in Englande were wonte to lyue in reſt and peace/ and to occupy their marchaundyſe peaſably/and the laborers to labour their landes quyetly/ and than it was contrary/ for whan marchauntes rode fro towne to towne with their marchaundyſe/ and had outher golde or ſyluer in their purſes/ it was taken fro them/ and fro other men/and labourers out of their houſes. theſe companyons wolde take whete/ootes/beſes/ muttons/porkes/ & the poore men durſte ſpeke no worde. theſe yuell dedes daily multyplyed ſo that great complayntes and lamentacyons were made therof through out the realme/and the good people ſayde/ the tyme is chaunged vpon vs fro good to yuell/ euer ſythe the dethe of good kynge Edwarde the thyrde/ in whoſe dayes iuſtyce was well kepte and mynyſtred. In his dayes there was no man ſo hardy in Englande to take a hen or a chekyn/ or a ſhepe without he had payed tre wip for it/ and nowe a dayes all that we haue is taken fro vs/ and yet we dare nat ſpeke/ theſe thinges canne nat longe endure/ but that Englande is lykely to

be loste without recouery. We haue a kynge nowe that wyll do nothyng/ he entendeth but to ydelnesse and to acomplysshe his pleasure/ and by that he sheweth/ he rateth nat how it wente thynge go the/ so he maye haue his wyll. it were tyme to prouyde for remedy/ or els our enemyes wyll retoyse a mocke vs/ our kynge hath sette his brother the erle of Huntyngdon at Calais/ therby peraduenture may be made some yuell treatie and bargayne for the to wine of Calays with the frenche men/ and rendre in to their handes that thynge that is moste necessary for the realme of Englande/ for if Calays were rendred to the Frenche men/ Englande was neuer so abassshed as it shulde be than/ and good cause why/ for than shulde be loste the chiefe key of Englande.

THus multyplyed the lamentacyons and murmurynge in Englande/ and the prelates and other ryche men of the realme came to London to dwell/ there to be in the better suretie. They of the lygnages of suche lordes as the kynge had put to dethe and banysshed the realme/ they were gladde of all this/ and wolde that more trouble had ben in the realme/ and the cytezins of London who were ryche/ and lyued by their marchaundyse as well outraunt by see as by lande/ and kepte therby great estate/ and by ensample of them all the remnaũt of the realme lyghtly folowed/ they sawe well that as great myschiefe was lykely to folowe in the realme/ as was sometyme in kynge Edwarde the secondes dayes/ whan the lorde Spencer caused the kynge to put out of the realme the quene Isabell and Edward her sonne/ and wolde haue distroyed them/ and wyste nat why/ and so were out of the Realme more than thre yere/ but fynally whan the men in Englande and specyally the londoners sawe howe that the kynge was so asotted on this syr Hugh spenser/ they prouyded for a remedy/ for they sente secretly to the quene Isabell that if she coulde get thre hundred men of warre/ to come in to Englande/ she shulde fynde ye greatest parte of the realme and the londoners redy to receyue her/ and to put her in possessyon of the realme/ wherupon the quene founde the lorde Johan of Haynalt lorde of Beaumont and of Chynay/ and brother to the erle Guillyam of Haynalt/ who what for loue and pytie toke on him the vyage to bringe the quene and her sonne in to Englande with four hundred men of warre/ and so arryued in Englande/ and by the ayde of the londoners the quene atchyued her enterprise/ for without their ayde it wolde haue ben hard to haue come to passe. and so kynge Edwarde was taken at the castell of Bristowe/ and set in prysone in the castell of Berkley/ and suche as fauoured him slayne and put to execusion/ and Edwarde his sonne crowned kynge at Westmynster. All this ye londoners ryght well remembred/ for they that were ponge herde this reported of their elders/ and some founde it in writyngе/ and they sayd secretly one to another. Our fathers and antecessours of olde tyme prouyded for these great myschiefes/ and we thinke there was neuer greater cause than nowe at this present tyme/ for suffer this kyng Richarde to haue his wyll and he wyll waste and dystroy all/ for sythe he was kynge there hath nat been in Englande suche prosperyte as was before/ he sheweth nat that the prince of Wales shulde be his father/ for if he had/ he wolde haue folowed his condicions and haue taken great pleasure in his prowes/ and nat to lyue in reste and ease as he dothe/ for he loueth nothynge but sporte and ydelnesse with ladyes/ and to be alwayes in their company/ and to beleue men of small reputacyon/ and to gather great rychesse/ and distroy the realme/ whiche thynges ought nat to be suffred. And bycause that valyaunt man the duke of Gloucestre sawe clerely ye the maters in Englande went nat as they shulde do by right/ and sawe howe daily it was worse and worse/ and bycause he spake playnely therof/ the traytours that be about the kinge caused hym to be murthered/ and in lyke wyse the good erle of Arundell. and haue driuen out of the realme that valyaunt ponge knight Henry of Lancastre erle of Derby/ by whome the realme myght and ought to be counsayled and susteyned/ and by his foure sonnes that he hath. And yet for more crueltie beside the dõmage that they cause the father to suffre out of the realme/ they dysenherite the chyldren/ and the heritage that was their auntes/ the lady dame Blanche of Lancastre is daily gyuen awaye/ to them that are nat worthy to haue theym. And also bycause the erle of Northumberlande and his sonne the lorde Henry Percy haue somwhat spoken acordynge to reasone/ kynge Richarde hath

banysshed

banyſhed them.It is well apperaũt that wyth in a ſhorte tyme there ſhall neuer a valyaunt man be lefte in the realme. wherfore all wyll ronne to nought wythout remedy be founde ſhortely,and we thinke the beſt remedy were to ſende for the erle of Derby, who leſeth his ſeaſon in Fraunce,and whan he is come lette him haue the gouernaũce of the realme, that he may reforme all euyll. and bringe it into good ſtate, and lette them be punyſched that haue deſerued and let Richard of Burdeaux be taken and ſet in the towre of London, and all his faures put in writynge in artycles. of the whiche there will be founde a great nombre,and by that time they be examined, it ſhal be ſene clerely that he is not worthy to beare a crowne,nor to kepe a realme,for his owne deſerte ſhall confounde hym.

Howe the archbyſhop of Caunterbury was ſent into Fraunce to the erle of Derby, fro ꝑ londoners and other coũſayls of England to haue him to retourne into Englãd Cap. CC.xxxviii.

THus the londoners cõmuned together, and not all onely they, but alſo in dyuers other places of the realme,but the chyefe murmuracyon that the people were in,was by the fyxſſe ſettynge one of them of London, for the commons of London were chyefe,and by them lyghtly all other commons wold be ruled, and vpon the myſchyefe that they ſawe apparaunt in Englande they had dyuers ſecrete counſayles together and with them certayne prelates and other knightes of the realme,and they concluded to ſende into Fraunce for the erle of Derby,and were determined whan he were come to ſhewe hym the euyll gouernynge of kynge Richarde and to put to hym the crowne and gouernynge of the realme of Englande, and ſo to make him kyng and his heyres for euer ſo that he wyll kepe the realme in all good vſages. Than it was thought that he that ſhuld go in that meſſage muſt be a wiſe man and of good credence,for they thought it ſhulde be a great matter to gette the erle of Derby out of Fraũce,for they ſayd that for any ſimple wordes of a meane meſſanger, or for any letters, he wolde geue no fayth there to,but rather thynke it ſhulde be to betraye hym. Than the archebyſhoppe of Caunterbury a man of honoure and ꝓuydence, was deſyred to do that meſſage,who for the cõmon profyte of the realme aſſented to go at their deſires,and ordeyned for his departure ſo wyſely ꝑ non knewe therof,but ſuche as ought to knowe it,and ſo he toke a ſhyppe at London and but ſeuen all onely with hym, and ſo paſſe without any parell and came to Sluſe in Flaunders,and fro thens to Ardenbourge, and ſo to Gaunte, to Andwarpe,to Athe in Brabant,& to Conde, and ſo to Valentennes,and there toke his lodgynge at the ſigne of the Swanne in the market place and there taried a thre dayes,and refreſhed himſelfe.He rode not like no bichoppe but lyke a monke ꝓlygryme, and diſcouered to no man what he was nor what he entẽded to do. The fourth day he departed and toke a man to be his guyde to Paris,ſayenge howe he wold go a ꝓlygrymage to ſaynt Moyſe.He dyd ſo much that he came thether wher as the erle of Derby was at a place called vincetour beſyde Parys.Whan the erle of Derby ſawe the byſhop of Caunterbury cõmynge to him, his herte and ſpyrites retoyſed,and ſo dyd all ſuche as were about him,for he thought well than to here ſome newes out of Englande. The byſhoppe ſhewed not as than the cauſe of his cõmynge,but diſſymuled bycauſe euery man ſhuld not know his entent, and therfore to couer his buſineſſe,he ſayd openly, he was come on ꝓlygrymage to ſaynt Moyſe. All ſuche as were about the erle thought it had ben ſo.Whan the byſhop ſawe hys tyme he toke a parte the erle of Derby alone into a chambre and cloſed the doore to them. Than the byſhop ſhewed the erle the deſolate of the realme of Englande, and of the deſolacyon therof, and howe iuſtyce had no place to reygne for faute of a good kinge,and howe certayne valyaunt men and prelates, with the londoners and other ingeneral,had deuiſed to remedy,and for that cauſe he was ſente thether to hym,to deſyre him to retourne into Englande,and they wolde make him kynge,bycauſe ꝑ Richarde of Burdeaux had doone and conſented to be

done so many cupll dedes that all the people folowed it, and are redy to ryse agaynst hym. and therfore sys now is the time or neuer for you to seke for your heyneraūce and profyte, and for the welth of your chyldren, for if ye entende not to helpe your selfe and them also none other will. for Richarde of Burdeaux geueth to them of his chamber & to other day ly parte of your enheritaūce and of your chyldren. of the whiche many valyant ment and londoners were sore displeased therwyth, if they could amended it, but they durst neuer speake tyll nowe. But bycause the kyng hath cupll vsed him selfe agaynst you and agaynst your vncle the duke of Glouceſter, who was taken by nyght and conueyed to Calays and there murdered. and the erle of Arundell beheded without tytyll of any good reason, and the erle of warwyke exyled, and you banyſhed, and thus the realme of England is nere dyscrypted of all noble men, by whom the reaime shulde be ſuſteyned. And also the kynge hath banyſhed the erle of Northumberlande and the lorde Percy hys sonne, bycause they spake some what agaynſt the kynges gouernaunce and hys counſayle. Thus they dayly encreaſe in hoynge cupll, and none dare speke agaynſt it, great parte of the realme haue pyte therof, & therfore they deſyre you to ſlepe no lenger, but to take leaue of ꝑ frenche king and retourne into England, therfore shal you be receyued with ioy, and all this that I haue ſayde they will frymely vpholde, for they deſyre to haue none other kynge but you, ye are ſo well beloued in the realme.

When the erle had herde the biſhops wordes at length, he was not hasty in geuing of aunſwere, but leaned out at a wyndow lokyng downe in to a gardeyne, and studyed a certayne ſpace & had many ymaginacyons. at laſt he tourned him to the archebyſhop & ſayd. Sir, your wordes cauſeth me to study. Lothe I wolde be to take on me this enterpryſe, and lothe I wolde be to leaue it, for I knowe well that it will be longe or I cānot retourne into Englande. but yf it be by the ſame meanes, as ye haue declared. Loth I wolde be to enclyne to your wordes. for the frenche kynges here and the fre nchmen be to me, and haue done, & will do (if I ſtyll here to tary) all the honour and cur-teſye that I cānne deſyre. And if so be by treaſone of your wordes and promeſſe of the londoners my good frendes, that I ſhulde apply and agree to their wyll and deſyre, and that therby kynge Richarde ſhulde be taken and diſtroyed, I ſhulde in that caſe beare greate blame, wherof I wolde be ryght lothe, if any other meanes myght be found. Sir quod the byſhoppe, I am ſent hyther to you in hope of all goodneſſe, call to you your counſayle and shewe them what I haue ſayde, and I ſhal alſo shewe them the cauſe of my commyng, and I thynke they will not counſayle you to the contrarye. That ſhall I do quod the erle, for ſuche a weyghty mater requyreth counſayle. Than the erle called to hym his counſayle ſuche as he truſted beſt. When they were before hym than the erle cauſed the byſhop to shewe them all the mater, and the cauſe of hys commynge thyther. Than the erle demaūded coū ſayle what was beſte for hym to do. They al aunſwered with one voyce, ſir, god hathe taken pyte of you, how ſo euer ye do refuſe not this bargaine, for ye ſhal neuer haue a better and ſurely, who ſo euer will enquyre of your lyguage, and fro whence ye diſcended, ye are of the ryghte ſtocke and generacion of kynge Edwarde, ſometyme kynge of Englande, for thanke the londoners your good frends who will helpe to deliuer you out of daunger, and haue pyte on your chyldren, and of the deſolacyon of the realme of England, and for, remember well what wronges and iniuries thys Richard of Burdeaux hath done to you and dothe dayly, for when the mariage betweene you and the counteſſe of Ewe was nere at a poynte, dyd not the erle of Hailſbourge byche it, and called you traytoure in the preſence of the frenche kynge and other lordes, whyche wordes are not to be pardoned, but ye ought to deſyre howe to be reuenged. Sir, if ye will not helpe your ſelfe who ſhulde helpe you. for take good aduyſe herin.

How the erle of Derby toke leaue of the frenche kyng, and wēt to his cosyn the duke of Bretaygne

Cap CC.xxxix

Whanne the erle herde his counsaylours so ernestly counsayle him/his spyrites opened and sayd. Syrs/I wyll do as ye wyll haue me for to haue your counsayle was the entente that I sent for you. Syr quod they ye saye well/and syr we counsayle you trewly to our power/and as the matter requyreth. Than as secretly as they coude/they ordeyned for their departure. Than it was deuysed howe they might passe the see/or any knowleage therof shulde come in to Englande. They deuysed that of two wayes they muste take one/outher to go in to Haynake and so to Holande/and there take the see at Dordright/or els to go in to Bretaygne to the duke/and there to take the see/and so to lande at Plummouth/or where as god wolde in Englande. All thynges considered/they sayd the best way shulde be by Bretaygne/and than they sayd to the erle. Syr/go and take your leaue of the frenche kynge/and thanke hym of the curtesy that he hath shewed vnto you/and take leaue of the duke of Orlyaunce/and of the kynges vncles and other/and thanke theym all of the good chere they haue made you. and desyre of the kinge to haue conducte to go in to Bretaygne/sayenge that ye wyll go se the duke your cosyn/for to tary there a season with hym. The erle accorded to their counsayle/and whan he was redy he wente to Parys to the kynge/as he was accustomed to do/for euer whan he came there was no dore closed agaynst him. At this last tyme he spake wysely to the kynge/and shewed hym howe he wolde go and spore hym a season in Bretayne/and to se the duke/whome he called his vncle/for he had had to his wyfe his fathers suster/doughter to Kynge Edwarde. The frenche kynge thought nothyng but well/and so gaue hym lyghtly leaue. Than the erle desyred to haue conducte to bringe hym thyder. He graunted his desyre. So to make shorte/the Erle ordeyned all his busynesse by great wysdome/and toke his leaue of all the lordes of Fraunce/suche as were there as than/and he gaue great gyftes to the kynges officers and to officers of armes/and to mynstrelles/and in the house of Clysson he made a supper to all suche as wolde come to hym. And the nexte daye he toke his horse and departed fro Parys/and issued out at the gate of Sayne Jaques/and toke the way to Estampes. A knyght of Beauuesy dyd guyde hym/called syr Guy of Bayneux. So longe they rode that they came to Blois/and there they taryed an. viii. dayes/for the erle had sente a knyght and his harnaulde in to Bretayne to spurpyse the duke of his cõmynge/as reason was.

When duke Johan of Bretaygne knewe that his nephewe the erle of Derby was cõmynge thyder/he was therof ryght ioyfull/for he loued alwayes the Duke of Lancastre and all his brethern/and sayde to the knyght that brought him worde/who was called Gyllyam de la Pierre. Sir/why bothe our nephewe tary by the way/that he cometh nat hyther streyght. The knyght excused the erle as well as he myght. Well quod the duke I sawe no man this seuen yere that I wolde be gladder to se/than my nephewe the erle of Derby/retourne to hym/cause hym to come for he shall fynde my countrey redy open to receyue hym. Of that answere the knyght was gladde/and retourned as shortely as he coulde/and came to Blays/and shewed the erle and his counsayle the dukes answere. The next day they rode forthe and had payed for euery thynge/and in the erle of Derbyes company was syr Peter of Craon/who was banysshed out of the realme of Fraunce/and all his castelles/rentes/and reuenues seased for the some of a hundred thousande frankes/iudged to the ducheslle of Anjou quene of Naples/by proces of the lawe. Thus the erle of Derby came to Nauntes and there founde the duke/who receyued him nobly and all his company. Than syr Guyle Bayneux retourned in to Fraunce/and the erle taryed with the Duke of Bretaygne/who made hym as good chere as coulde be deuysed. And all this season the bysshoppe of Caunterbury was styll with the erle and his counsayle. The duke spared nothynge vpon the erle nor vpon his men/but shewed them all the loue of the worlde/and yet the duke knewe well the displeasure that kynge Richarde had agaynste the erle/wherof he had pytie. Whan the erle consydred the dukes good wyll and fauoure/he discouered to hym parte of his busynesse/as

touchynge the duchy of Lancaster/ and suche
herytages as the duke his father had in pos-
session whan he dyed/ and desyringe therin
to haue the dukes counsayle/ sayenge/ that he
was nat repealed agayne by the kynge/ but
gyuen hayly away parte of his enherytaun-
ces/ wherby he shewed the duke that many no
blemen/ and prelates in Englande were nat
well contente with the kynge/ and the realme
therby in great dyfference/ In so moche/ that
dyuers noblemen and the londoners had sent
to hym to haue hym to come in to Englande/
promysynge that they wolde make his peace
with the kynge/ and set hym in his herytage.
Whan the duke herde that he sayd. Fayre ne-
phue/ where as be many wayes the best ought
to be chosen. By the kynge ye are in a harde
case/ ye demaunde counsayle/ and I wyll coun
sayle you to gyue credence to yoni frendes in
Englande/ the londoners are mygthy and pu
yssaunt/ they and by the ayde of other prela-
tes/ lordes/ and knyghtes of the realme/ shall
bringe the kynge to agree to their desyres. and
nephewe/ I shall ayde you with shyppes and
with men of warre/ to resyste the daungers
vpon the see. Of that offre the erle thanked the
duke of Bretayne.

Howe the erle of Derby arryued in Englande/ and howe he was receyued of the londoners. Cap. CC.xl.

Thus the duke of Bre
tayngne and the erle of Der
by were louyngely conclu-
ded togyder/ and the erle ta
ryed there a certayne space
a made as though he wolde
haue taryed styll there/ and
in the meane season the erle made his prouy-
syon at Wannes. And whan all thynge was
redy/ the duke and the erle came thyder/ and
whan the wynde serued/ the erle of Derby and
his company tooke the see/ he had with hym
thre shyppes of warre to conduyte hym in to
Englande/ and the further they sayled the bet
tre wynde they had/ so that within two dayes
and two nyghtes they aryued at Plimouth
in Englande/ and issued out of their shyppes
and entred in to the towne hytell and lytell. the
bayly of Plimouth/ who had charge of the
towne vnder the kynge/ had great mateyre
whanne he sawe so moche people and men of
warre entre in to the towne. But the bysshop
of Caunterbury apeased him/ and sayd howe
they were menne of warre that wolde do no
harme in the realme of Englande/ sent thyder
by the duke of Bretaygne to serue the kynge
and the realme. Therwith the bayly was con
tente/ and the erle of Derby kept hym selfe so
pryuy in a chaumbre/ that none of the towne
knewe hym. Than the bysshoppe of Caun-
terbury wrote letters sygned with his hande
to London/ sygnyfienge the comynge of the
erle of Derby/ and sente them by a suffycyent
man in post/ who tooke freshe horses by the
waye/ and came to London the same daye at
nyght/ and passed ouer the bridge and so came
to the mayres lodgynge/ who as than was a
bedde/ and as sone as the mayre knewe that a
messager was come fro the bysshop of Caun-
terbury/ he rose out of his bedde and made
the messanger to entre in to his chambre/ who
delyuered hym a letter fro the bysshoppe of
Caunterbury. The mayre redde it and retoy
sed greatly of those newes/ and incontynent
he sente of his seruauntes fro house to howse/
principally to suche as were of counsayle of
sendynge for the Erle of Derby. They were
all gladde of that tydynges/ and in contynent
there assembled togyther of the moste nota-
blest men of the cytie to the nombre of two hun
dred/ they spake togyder/ and helde no longe
counsayle for the case required it nat/ but they
sayd/ lette vs apparell our selfe and go and re
ceyue the duke of Lancastre/ sythe we agreed
to sende for hym/ the archebysshoppe of Caun
terbury hathe well doone his deuoyre/ seynge
he hath brought hym in to Englande. Than
they dyd chose certayne men to go abrode to
publysshe the erles comynge to lordes knyght-
tes/ and squyers/ suche as were of their party/
and so than syue hundred of the londoners
tooke their horses/ and they had so great de-
syre to go for the that they were lothe to tarye
one for a nother. The erle of Derby taryed
nat longe at Plymmouth/ but the nexte daye
as sone as their horses were vnbyrded/ they
rode to wat

rode to wardes London. And all that ſeaſon ſir Peter of Craon and ȳ Bretons were ſtyll with the erle. The mayre of London & they that hadde the gouernyng of the cyte/ were the fyrſt that mette the erle in the feldes/ and humbly receyued hym/ and euer as they rode forwarde they mette more people. The fyrſt daye they cae and laye at Guyldforde/ a fyue and twentie myle fro London. The next day a great nombre of the men/ women/ and chyldren of London and the clergy came to mete with the erle/ they had ſuche deſyre to ſe hym And whan they cae in to his ſight they cried welcome noble erle of Derby & duke of Lancaſtre/ God ſende you ioye/ welthe/ and proſperyte. Suche pe wente out of Englande/ the realme hath ben in no proſperyte. Nowe we truſte pe ſhall bringe vs in to a reaſonable eſtate/ for we haue lyued in great diſpleaſaunce and deſolacyon/ by the meanes of Richarde of Burdeaux and his counſayle/ and ſpecially he ought moſt cheſe to be blamed. For a kynge that ſhulde gouerne a Realme and people/ ought to haue ſuche diſcrecyon/ to knowe gode and euell a ſondre/ otherwiſe he is nat worthy to gouerne a Realme. And this Richarde of Burdeaux hath done contrary/ whiche ſhalbe well knowen and proued vpon him. with ſuche wordes and other the people brought the erle to London. The mayre rode cheke and cheke by hym/ whiche was great pleaſure for the people to ſe/ and the mayre ſometyme ſayde to the erle. Sir/ beholde howe the people reioyſe of your cōmyng. That is trewe quod the erle. And alwayes as he rode he enclyned his hede to the people on euery ſyde. Thus the Erle was brought to his lodgynge/ and euery man departed tyll after dyner. Than the mayre and the notable men of the cite/ and dyuers other lordes and knyghtes/ prelates/ byſſhoppes/ and abbottes/ ſuche as were in London cam to ſe the the erle. Alſo the ducheſſe of Glouceſtre and her two doughters came to ſe therle who were his coſyn germayns. Alſo there brother was with kynge Richarde/ more for feare than for loue. With theſe ladyes was the counteſſe of Arundell and her chyldren/ and alſo the counteſſe of Warwyke/ with dyuers other ladyes/ ſuche as were at London The people of London were ſo ioyfull of the erles cōmyng/ that there was no more wor-

kynge in London that daye/ than and it had ben Eaſter daye.

TO come to a concluſyon of this buſyneſſe. The people toke cōſayle and aduyſe to ryde agaynſt the kynge/ whom the Londoners named Richard of Burdeaux/ kynge without tytell or honour/ for the vyllaynes of London hadde the kyng in ſuche hate/ that it was payne for them to here ſpekynge of hym/ but to his cōdempnacion and diſtruction/ for they hadde treated the erle of Derby to be their kynge/ and he was moche ordred by their counſayle The erle of Derby toke on hym to be kyng/ and ſo to endure for euer he and his heyres/ and therto the Londoners dyde ſwere and ſeale. And promyſed/ that all the reſydue of the realme ſhulde do the ſame/ ſo ſolempnely that there ſhulde neuer queſtyon be made therof after. Alſo they promyſed hym to aide and to aſſyſte hym alwayes. Theſe promyſes and boundes ones taken and concluded/ than it was ordayned that .xii. hundred men of London well armed/ ſhulde ryde with the erle towardes Briſtowe/ and to do ſo moche that Richarde of Burdeaux myght be taken and brought to London/ and than to take aduyſe what ſhulde be done with hym/ and to be iudged by the lawe/ and by the thre eſtates of the realme. Alſo it was ordayned (to make the leſſe bruyte and ſclaundre) that the men of warre of Bretaygne/ ſuche as were come thyder with the erle ſhulde be retourned home agayne. For it was ſayde/ howe they hadde men ynoughe to do their dedes without them/ ſo that the erle had all the bretons before hym/ and thanked them of their ſeruyce that they hadde done hym/ and gaue them great rewardes ſo that they were well content/ and ſo retourned to Plymouthe to the ſhyppes/ and ſo in to Bretaygne.

NOwe lette vs ſpeke of the erle of Derby who ordayned to ryde to Briſtowe.

THe erle of Derby was cheſe of that armye/ as reaſon was/ for it touched hym moſt nereſt. Thus he departed fro London/ and as he rode/ the counteſſe fell in to hym. Tidynges cāe in to the kynges hoſt/ of the cōmyng of the erle

of the erle of Derby and of the Londoners/ many knyghtes/ squyers/ and other knewe it or the kynge hadde knowledge therof/ but they durst nat speke therof. Whan the tidynges spredde more abrode/ suche as were nerr the kyng were in great feare. for they knewe well the kynge and they bothe/ were lykely to fall in payll/ bycause they hadde so many ennemyes in the realme. and suche were tha theire ennemyes/ that hadde made good face before. For many knightes/ squyers/ and other/ suche as hadde serued the kyng before/ departed fro the courte without any lycence. Some wente home to their owne houses/ & some toke the nexte waye they coude streyght to the erle of Derby to serue hym. As soone as Iffren of Glouceſtre and Rychard ſone to the erle of Arundell knewe that the Erle of Derby and the Londoners were cõmynge/ they gote their men togyder and departed/ and rode streyght to the erle of Derby/ whome they founde beyonde Orenforde/ at a towne called Soucetour. The erle of Derby hadde great ioye whan he sawe his cosyns/ and demaunded of the state of the kynge/ and howe they were departed fro hym/ They aunswered and sayde. Sir/ at our departynge we spake nat with hym. For as soone as we knewe of your commynge/ we lepte on our horses and departed to come to serue you/ and to ayde to reuenge the bethe of our fathers/ whome Richarde of Burdeaulx hathe caused to be slayne. Sirs quod the erle ye be tyght welcome/ ye shall ayde me and I shall helpe you. For it is behouable that oure cosyn Richarde of Burdeaux be brought to London. so haue I promysed to the Londoners/ and I wyll kepe my promyse/ for therto they wyll ayde me. And we haue men ynowe to fyght with hym if nede be. And if he wyll haue batayle he shall haue it.

IT was sayd to the kynge/ whan the matter coude no lenger be hydde. Sir/ aduyse you well/ ye haue nede of good Counsayle shortely/ for the Londoners and other cometh agaynst you with great puissaunce/ and hath made therle of Derby your cosyn their chefe capitayne/ they haue gote hym out of Fraũce. This hath nat been done without great treatie. Whan the kynge herde that he was sore abasshed/ and wyste nat what to saye/ for all his spyrites trembled. For thã he sawe well the maters were lykely to go euell agaynst hym/ without he coude gette puyssaunce to resyst them. Than the kynge sayd. Sirs make all our men redy/ and sende throughe out my realme for ayde/ For I wyll nat flye before my subiectes. Sir quod they the matter gothe euell/ for your men do leaue you & flye awaye/ ye haue loste the one halfe/ and all the rest are sore abasshed/ and leseth coũtynaũce. Why quod the kyng/ what wyll ye that I shall do? Sir leaue the felde/ for ye are nat able to kepe it. And gette you in to some stronge castell tyll sir Johan Hollãde your brother come/ who is aduertysed of all this mater. And whanne he is come he shall fynde some remedy/ outher bifore of armes or elles by treatie/ at leest to bring you in to some better case/ than ye be in at this present tyme. For if ye kepe the felde paraduenture some wyll forsake you and go to hym. To this coũsaile the kyng agreed. At that tyme the erle of Salisbury was nat with ỹ kyng he was in his countre. Whan he herde howe the erle of Derby with the Londoners and great puissaunce rode agaynst the kyng. He ymagined that the matter was in payll for hym and for the kynge/ and for suche as the kyng hath ben counsayled by: so he sate styll to here other tidynges. Also the duke of yorke was nat with the kyng/ but his sonne the erle of Rutlande was alwayes with ỹ kyng for two causes. The one was/ kyng Richarde lued hym entierly. And another was/ bycause he was constable of Englande/ therfore by right he ought to be with the kynge. Whan the kyng had supped/ newe tidynges cãe agayne to hym/ sayeng. Sir/ it is tyme to take aduise howe ye wyll order your selfe your pupl-

Howe tidynges came to kyng Richarde/ of the cõmynge of the erle of Derby with great puyssaunce. Cap. CC. xli.

powre puyſſaice is not ſufficient agaynſt them that comethe agaynſt you. It can not auayle you to make battayle agaynſte them: It be hoouethe you to paſſe thys daunger, by ſadde abuyſe and good counſayle. And by wyſedome apeaſe them that be youre enyll wyllers as ye haue done or thys tyme, and than correcte them after at leaſar. There is a caſtell a.xii. myle hens called the caſtell of Flynte, whyche is ſtronge. We counſayle you to go thether and cloſe you within it, tyll ye here other newes fro the erle of Huntyngton youre brothere, and for othere of youre frendes, and ſende into Irelande for ſocoures. And yf frenche kynge youre father in lawe whan he knowethe of youre nede, he wyll conforte you, the kynge folowed that counſayle, and apoynted them that ſhulde ryde wyth hym to the caſtell of Flynte. And he ordayned hys colyn erle of Rutlande to tary ſtyll at Bryſtowe, and that they ſhulde be redye to ſette forwarde whan he ſente to them, and that he was of power to fyght wyth hys enemyes. The nexte day the kynge wyth ſuche as were of hys houſeholde rode to the caſtell of Flynte, and entred into the caſtell wythout makynge any ſemblaunt to make any warre, but to abyde there and to defende the caſtell yf they were aſſayled.

How kyng Rychard yelded hym ſelfe to the erle of Derby to go to London. Cap. CCxli.

The erle of Derby & the londoners hadde their ſpies goynge and commyng, who reported to them all the ſtate of the kynge. And alſo the erle knewe it by ſuche knyghtes and ſquyers as daye lye came fro the kynges parte to therle, who had ſure knoledge that the kynge was gonne to the caſtell of Flynte, and had no company with hym, but ſuche as were of his owne houſholde, and ſemed that he wolde no warre but to ſcape that daunger by treatie. Than therle determyned to ryde thether, and to do ſo moche to haue ꝑ kynge outher bifore or by treatie. Than the erle and all his company rode rode thether, & within two myle of the caſtel they founde a great vyllage, there the erle tayed and dranke, and determyned in him ſelfe to ryde to the caſtell of Flynt wyth two hundred horſes, and to leaue the reſt of hys company ſtyll there. And he ſayde he wolde ſe what he coulde by fayre treatye, to entre into the caſtell by loue and not perforce. And to drynge out the kynge wyth fayre wordes and to aſſure hym fro all parell, excepte goynge to London, and to promyſe hym that he ſhall haue no hurte of hys bodye, and to be meane for hym to the Londoners, who were not content wyth hym. Theries deuyſe ſemed good to them that harde it, and they ſayde to hym. Sir, beware of diſſymulacyon. Thys Richarde of Burdeaux muſte be taken outher quycke or deed, and all the other treaytours that be about him, and of hys counſayle, and ſo to be broughte to London and ſette in the towre to Londoners wyll notte ſuffer you to do the contrarye, Than the erle ſayde. Syrs feare not, but all that is enterpryſed ſhall be accompliſhed. But if I can gete hym out of the caſtell wyth fayre wordes I wyll do it and if I canne not I ſhall ſende you woorde thereof and than ye ſhall come and laye ſiege aboute the caſtell. And than we wyll do ſo moche by force or by aſſaute, that we wyll haue hym quycke or deed, for the caſtell is well prouyded, to thoſe wordes accorded well ꝑ londoners. So the erle departed fro the armye and rode with two hundred men to the caſtell wher as the kyng was among his men right ſore abaſſhed. The erle came rydynge to the caſtell gate, whyche was faſte cloſed, as the caſe requyred. The erle knocked at the gate The porters demaunded who was there, the erle anſwered, I am Henrye of Lancaſter. I come to the kynge to demaunde myne herytage of the duchye of Lancaſter, ſhewe the kynge thys fro me. Sir quod they wythin, we ſhall do it. Incontynent they went into the hall and into the dongyon, where as the kynge was, and ſuche knightes aboute hym, as had longe tyme counſayled hym, than theſe newes were ſhewed to the kynge & ſayde, ſyr your coſyn of Derby is at ꝑ gate, who demaundeth of you to be ſet in poſſeſſyon of the duchy of Lancaſter hys enheritaunce. The kynge than re-

then regarded suche as were aboute hym. & demaunded what was best to do. The sayde sir in thys requeste is none eurll, ye maye let him come into you with. xii. persons in his companye, and here what he wyll saye. He is youre cosyn and a great lorde of the Realme, He maye well make youre peace and he wyll for he is greatly beloued in the realme, and specially with the Londoners, who sente for him into Fraūce. Then be as nowe ꝑ chefe that be agaynst you. Sir, ye must dyssymule tyll the mater be apeased, and tyll the erle of Huntyngton your brother be with you. And it cometh nowe cupll to passe for you. that he is at Calais. For there be many nowe in Englande that be rysen agaynste you, that and they knewe that youre brother were aboute you, they wolde sytte styll and durste not dysplease you, and yet he hathe to hys wyfe the erle of Derbyes suster: by thys meanes we suppose ye shulde come to peace and concorde The kinge agreed to those wordes and saide. Go and lette hym come in with. xii. with hym and no mo. Two kynges went downe to the gate, and opened the wycket and issued out and made reuerence to the erle, and receyued hym with gracyous wordes, for they knewe well that they habde no force to resyst them, and also they knewe well the Londoners were sore displeased with them therfore they spake fayre and sayde to the erle. Sir, what is youre pleasure, the kinge is at masse, he hath sente vs hyther to speke with you. I saye quod therle, ye knowe well I ought to haue possession of the duchye of Lancaster. I am come in partie for that cause, and also for other thynges that I wolde speake with the kinge of. Sir quod they ye be welcome, the kyng wolde be glad to se you & to here you, and hath commaunded that ye come to hym all onely with. xii. persones. The erle answered, it pleaseth me well. So he entred into the castell with. xii. persones, and than the gate closed agayne and the rest of his cōpany tarved without.

NOw consyder what daūger therle of Derby was in, for the kyng than might haue slaine him, and such as were with him, as easely as a byrde in a cage. But he feared not ꝑ mater, but boldly went to the kynge, who chaūged colours when he sawe the erle. Than the erle spake aloude without makynge of any greate honour or reuerence, and sayde. Sir, are ye a kynge The kynge answered and sayde yea, why aske you. It is tyme quod the erle that ye had dyned, for ye haue a great iourney to ryde, whyt, whether shulde I ryde quod the kynge: ye must ryde to London quod therle wherfore I counsayle you eate and dryncke, that ye maye ryde with the more myrthe. Than the kynge who was sore troubled in his mynde, and in a maner afrayde of those wordes sayde I am not hungry, I haue no luste to eate. Than suche as were by, who were as than gladde to flatter therle of Derby, for they sawe well the mater was lyke to go dyuersly, sayde to the kynge. Sir, beleaue youre cosyn of Lancaster for he wyl no thynge but good. Than the kynge sayd well, I am content couer the tables. Thanne the kinge washed and satte downe, and was serued. Than the erle was demaunded if he wolde syt downe, he sayde no, for he was not fastinge.

IN the meane season whyle the kinge satte at diner, who dyd eate but lytell, his herte was so full that he had no luste to eate. All the countre about the castel was full of mē of warre. They within ꝑ castel might se them out at the wyndowes, and the kyng whan he rose fro the table mighte se them hym selfe. Than he demaūded of his cosyn what men they were that appered so manye in the feldes. Therle answered and sayde, the mooste parte of them be Londoners. What wolde they haue quod the kinge: They wyll haue you quod therle, and bringe you to London and putte you in to the towre, there is none other remedy, ye can scape none other wyse. No quod ꝑ kinge and he was sore afrayde of those wordes, for he knew well the Londoners loued him not and sayde. Cosyn, can you not prouide for my suretie, I will nott gladly putte me into their handes. For I know well they hate me and haue done longe, though I be their kynge. Than therle saide Sir I se none other remedye but to pelde your selfe as my prisonere, and when they knewe that ye be my prisoner they wyll do you no hurte, but ye must so ordayne you & your cōpany to ryde to Lō

don with

don with me/ and to be as my priſoner in the towre of London. The kyng who ſawe hym ſelf in a harde caſe/ all his ſpyrites were ſore abaſſhed/ as he that doubted greatly that the londoners wolde ſlee hym. Than he yelded hym ſelfe priſoner to the erle of Derby and boũde hym ſelfe/ and promyſed to do all that he wolde haue hym to do. In lyke wiſe all other knightes/ squyers/ and officers yelded to the erle/ to ſtrehewe the daũger and paryll that they were in/ and the erle than receyued them as his priſoners/ and ordayned incontynent horſes to be ſadylled & brought forthe in to the courte & the gates opened/ than many men of armes & archers entred. Than the erle of Derby cauſed a crye to be made/ on payne of bethe/ no man to be ſo hardy to take away any thyng within ỳ caſtell/ nor to laye any handes vpon any ſtone/ for all were vnder the erles ſauegarde and protection: whi the crye was kept no man durſt breke it. the erle had the kyng downe in to the courte talkyng togyder/ & cauſed all the kynges hole houſholde and eſtate to go forwarde/ as of cuſtome they had done before/ without chaũgyng or myntiſſ hynge of any thyng. Whyle euery thyng was a preparyng/ the kyng and the erle cõmuned togyder in the court/ and were well regarded by the Londoners. And as it was enformed me/ kynge Richarde had a grayhounde called Mathe/ who alwayes wayted vpon the kynge/ and wolde knowe no man els. For whan ſoeuer the kyng dyde ryde/ he that kept the grayhounde dyde lette hym loſe/ and he wolde ſtreight rynne to the kynge and fawne vpon hym/ and leape with his fore fete vpon the kynges ſhulders. And as the kyng & the erle of Derby talked togyder in the courte/ the grayhounde who was wont to lepe vpon the kyng/ left the kynge & came to the erle of Derby duke of Lancaſtre and made to hym the ſame frendly cõtinaũce & chere/ as he was wonte to do to the kyng. The duke who knewe nat the grayhoũde demaunded of the kyng what the grayhounde wolde do. Coſyn quod the kyng/ it is a grete good token to you/ and an yuell ſygne to me. Sire/ howe knowe you that quod the duke? I knowe it well quod the kyng. The grayhounde maketh you chere this day as kynge of Englande/ as ye ſhalbe/ and I ſhalbe depoſed: the grayhoũde hath this knowledge naturally/ therfore take hym to you/ he wyll folowe you & forſake me. The duke vnderſtode well thoſe wordes and cheriſſhed the grayhounde/ who wolde neuer after folowe kyng Richarde/ but folowed the duke of Lancaſtre.

Of euery man lepte a horſ backe and departed fro the caſtell of Flynt/ & entred in to the feldes. Thus duke Henry of Lancaſtre/ who was no more called erle of Derby but duke of Lãcaſtre/ rode by the kyng and oftentymes talked togyder/ and men of warre before & behynde in great nombre/ and all ſuche as were of the kynges courte/ rode togyder in a company. That night they laye about Orenforde. The duke of Lancaſtre ledde kyng Richarde by no caſtelles nor good townes/ for feare of fryzing of the people/ but alwayes kepte the feldes. Than the duke gaue lycence to a great nombre of his people to departe and ſayd. Sirs ye maye departe for we haue that we deſyre. the kynge can nat flye nor ſcape fro vs/ we & our owne company ſhall bring hym to London/ and putte hym in ſauegarde in ỳ towre he and all his are my priſoners/ I may bringe them whider I wyll. Therfore ſirs/ go your wayes home tyll ye here other newes. They dyde as the duke cõmaunded the/ who toke the way to Wyndſore/ and came thyder/ and moſt parte of the Lõdoners retourned to London/ & other to their owne places. the duke of Lãcaſtre depted fro wynſore/ & wolde nat ryde by Colbroke/ but toke the way by Shene/ & ſo cãe to dyner to Cherſay. ỳ kyng had deſyred the duke that he ſhulde nat bringe hym London waye/ nor through the cytie and therfore they tooke that waye. As ſoone as they had the kynge thus in their handes/ they ſente notable playes to the pong quene/ who was at Leedes in Kent. And they cãe to the lady Coucy/ who was ſeconde perſone there next to the quene/ and ſayd to her. Ma dame/ make you redy for ye muſt departe hens and at your departyng make no ſemblant of diſpleaſure before the quene/ but ſaye howe your huſbande hath ſent for you/ & for your doughter alſo. Thus that we ſaye/ loke that you do accompliſſhe on payne of your lyfe/ nor ore ye nat queſtyons no further. And ye ſhalbe conueyed to Douer/ and there haue a ſhyppe

shyppe that shall bring you to Bolayne. the lady who vouted these words / for she knewe well Englysh men were cruell and hasty / said. sirs / as god wyll I am redy to do as ye wyll haue me. Anone she made her redy and hozses were prouyded for her and for her co-pany. So all Frenche men and women departed / and they were conueyed to Douer / & at the next tyde they toke shyppyng and had good wynde / and so arryued at Bolayne.

¶ Of the state of quene Isabell of englande / and howe she had all newe ploues apoynted to wayte vpon her and howe kyng Richarde was sette in the towre of London.

Capi. CC. xlii.

AS for the state of the quene was so tourned and broken / for there was leste nouther man / woman / nor chylde of ꝑ nacion of Frãce / nor yet of Englande / but she as were in any fauour with the kyng her. house was newly furnysshed with ladyes and damoselles / and other officers and seruauntes. They were charged all / that in no wyse they shuld nat speke of the kynge / nat one to another. Thus the duke of Lacastre departed fro Chertsay and rode to Shene / and fro thens in the nyght tyme they conueyed the kyng to the towre of London / and suche other knightes and squyers as the kyng wolde. The nexte morowe whan the Londoners knewe that the kynge was in the towre / they were greatly reioysed but there was great murmuring among the because the kyng was conueyed thyder so secretly. They were angry that the duke had nat brought hym throughe London openly / nat to haue done him honor / but shame / they hated hym so sore. Beholde the opinyon of comon people / whã they be vp agaynst their prince or lorde / and specially in Englande. amonge them there is no remedy / for they are the perylous people of the worlde / and most outragyous if they be vp / and specially the Londoners / and in dede they be riche and of a great nombre. There was well in London .xxiiii. thousande men in harneste complete / and .xxx. thousande archers / and they were hardy & bygh of corage / the more blode they sawe shedde / the lesse they were abasshed.

¶ Nowe lette vs somwhat speke of the erle of Rutlande constable of Englande / sonne to the duke of yorke / who was tarryed at Bristowe and the lorde Spenser with hym / who had his fuster to wyfe. Whan they knewe ꝑ the castell of Flynte was gyuen vp / and the kynge taken and brought to London / thanne they thought surely / the matters wente nat well for the kynge. Therfore they thought no lengar to tary there / and gaue leaue to all their men of warre to departe / and the erle of Rutlande and the lorde Spenser rode together with their owne seruauntes to Hull in the marchesse of Wales / a fayre mãer of the lorde Spensers / & there they tarryed tyll they herde other tydynges. And the duke of yorke laye styll in his castell / & medled with nothynge of the busynesse of Englande / no more he dyde before / he toke euer the tyme as worthe as it came. howbeit he was sore displeased in his mynde / to se suche difference within ꝑ realme / and betweene his nephues and blode. ¶ Nowe let vs retourne to speke of kynge Richarde.

WHan the duke of Lancastre had set his cosyn kyng Richard in ꝑ towre of London / and certayne of his counsaylours / and had sette sure keppynge on the. The fyrst thyng than that the duke dyde / he sent for the erle of Warwyke / who was banysshed and cõmaunded to lye in the yle of Wyght / and discharged hym clene therof. & secondly the duke of Lancastre sent to therle of Northumberlande and to the lorde Percy his sonne / that they shulde come to hym / and so they dyde. After he enquered and sought out to haue the foure compaynons that had strangled his vncle the duke of Glouceftre in the castell of Calais. They were so well sought out / that they were all taken: They were sette in prysons aparte in London. than the duke of Lancastre and his counsayle toke aduyse what shulde be done with kyng Richarde beyng in the towre of London / where as kyng Johan of Fraunce was kept / whyle

kynge

kynge Edwarde wente in to the Realme of Fraūce. Than it was thought that kyng Rycharde shulde be put fro all his royalte and top that he hath lyued in/ for they sayd/ the newes of his takynge shulde ipsede abrode in to all realmes erystened. He had been kynge. xxii. yere/ and as than they determined to kepe him in prisone. Than they regarded what case the realme stode in/ and dyd put all his dedes in artycles to the nombre of. xxviii. Than the duke of Lancastre and his counsayle went to the towre of London/ and entred in to the chambre where kynge Rycharde was/ and without any reuerence makynge to hym/ there was openly redde all the said artycles/ to the whiche the kynge made none answere/ for he sawe well all was true ꝑ was layde to his charge/ sayynge he sayd/ all that I haue doone passed by my counsayle. Than he was demaunded what they were that had gyuen counsayle/ and by whome he was most ruled/ he named them in trust therby to haue ben holpen hymselfe in accusynge of them/ as he had doone before tyme/ trustynge therby to scape/ and to bringe them in the daunger and payne/ but that was nat the mynde of them that loued hym nat. so as at that tyme they spake no more but departed/ and the duke of Lancastre went to his lodgynge/ and suffred the mayre and the men of lawe to procede. They went to ꝑ Guyldhall/ where as all the maters of the cytte were determyned/ and than moche people assēbled there. Whan they sawe the gouernours of the cytte go thyder/ they thought some iustice shulde be done/ as there was in dede. I shall shewe you howe. Fyrste the artycles that were made agaynst the kynge/ the whiche had been redde before hym in the towre/ were redde agayne there openly. And it was shewed by hym that redde them/ howe the kynge hymselfe denyed none of them/ but confessed that he dyd them by the counsayle of four knightes of his chambre/ and howe by their counsayle he had put to dethe the duke of Glouceſtre and the erle of Arūdell/ sir Thomas Cornet/ and other/ and howe they had longe enepted the kynge to do those dedes/ whiche dedes they sayd were nat to be forgyuen/ but demaunded punycion/ for by them and their counsayle the iustyce of right was closed vp through all the courtes of Englande/ Westmynster/ and other/ wherby many yuell dedes folowed/ and companyes and rowtes of theues and murderers rose and assembled togyther in dyuers parties of the realme/ and robbed marchaūtes by the wayes and poore men in their houses/ by whiche meanes the realme was in great parell to haue ben lost/ without recouery. and it is to be ymagyned that fynally they wolde haue rendred Calais or Guysnes/ or bothe in to the frenchmennes handes. These wordes thus shewed to the people made many to be abasshed/ and many beganne to murmure and sayd. These causes demaunde punycion/ that all other may take ensample therby/ and Rycharde of Burdeaux to be deposed/ for he is nat worthy to beare a crowne/ but ought to be depriued fro all honour/ and to be kept all his lyfe in prison with breed and water. Though some of the vtlayanes murmured/ other said on hygh. Sir mayre of London/ and ye other that haue iustyce in your handes to mynyster/ execute iustyce/ for we wyll ye spare no man/ for ye se well the case that ye haue shewed vs demaūdeth iustyce in cōtynent/ for they are iudges vpon their owne dedes. Than the mayre and other of the gouernours of the lawe went togyther in to the chambre of iudgement. than these four knyghtes were iudged to dye/ and were iudged to be had to the foote of the towre where as kynge Richarde was/ that he might se them drawen alonge by the dyke with horses eche after other/ throughe the cytte in to chepeside/ and than there heedes stryken of there/ and sette vpon London bridge/ and there bodyes drawen to the gybet and there hanged.

¶ This iudgement gyuen they were deliuered to execucyon/ for the mayre of London and suche as were deputed to the mater/ wente fro the Guyldhall to the towre/ and toke out the four knyghtes of the kynges/ whose names were called sir Bernarde Brokas/ sir Marclays/ mayster Johñ Derby receyuour of Lyncolne/ and mayster Stell the kynges stewarde. Eche of the were tyed to two horses/ in the presence of them that were in the towre/ and the kynge myght well se it out at the wyndowes/ wherwith he was sore discomforted/ for all other that were there with the kynge loked to be in the same case/ they knewe them of London so cruell. Thus these four knyghtes were drawen one after a nothes a longe throughe the cytte tyll they came

in to chepe/ and there on a fyllhers stall their
heedes were stryken of and set vpon London
bridge/ and their bodyes drawen by the shul-
ders to the gybet/ and there hanged vp. This
tustyce thus doone/ euery man went to their
lodgynges. Kynge Richarde knowyng him
selfe taken/ and in the daunger of the londo-
ners was in great sorowe in his herte/ and re-
herced his puyssaunce nothynge/ for he sawe
howe euery man was agaynste hym. and if
there were any that ought hym any fauour/ it
laye nat than in their powers to do hym any
ayde/ nor they durste nat shewe it. Suche as
were with the kynge sayde. Syr/ we haue but
small trust in our lyues as it may well apere/
for whan your cosyn of Lancastre came to the
castell of Flynte/ and with your owne good
wyll ye yelded you to hym/ and he promysed
that you and twelue of yours shulde be his pri-
soners and haue no hurte/ and nowe of those
twelue four be executed shamfully/ we are like
to passe the same way. The cause is that lon-
doners/ who hath caused the duke of Lanca-
stre your cosyn to do this dede/ had hym so
sore bounde to them that he muste do as they
wyll haue hym. God dothe moche for vs/ if he
suffre that we myght dye here our naturall
deth/ and nat a shamfull dethe. It is great pyt-
tie to thynke on this. With those wordes kyng
Richarde began tenderly to wepe and wringe
his handes/ and cursed the houre that euer he
was borne/ rather than to haue suche an ende.
Suche as were about hym had great pytie
and recomforted hym as well as they might.
One of his knyghtes sayd. Syr/ it behoueth
you to take comforte/ we se well and so do you
that this worlde is nothyng/ the fortunes ther
of are marueylous/ and somtyme tourne as
well vpon kinges and princes/ as vpon poore
men. The frenche kynge whose doughter ye
haue maryed/ cannot nowe ayde you/ he is
to farre of. If ye myght scape this myschefe by
dyssimulacyon and saue your lyfe and ours/
it were a good enterpryse/ peraduenture with
in a yere or two/ there wolde be had some re-
couery. Why quod the kynge/ what wolde ye that
I shulde do/ there is nothynge but I wolde
be glad to do it/ to saue vs therby. Syr quod
the knyght/ we se for trouthe that these londo-
ners wyll crowne your cosyn of Lancastre as
kynge/ and for that entent they sent for hym/
and so haue ayded hym and do/ it is nat pos-
syble for you to lyue without ye consent that
he be crowned kynge/ wherfore syr/ we wyll
counsayle you (to the entent to saue your lyfe
and ours) that whan your cosyn of Lancastre
cometh to you to demaunde any thynge/ than
with swete and treatable wordes say to hym/
howe that ye wyll resygne to hym the crowne
of Englande/ and all the ryght that ye haue in
the realme/ clerely and purely in to his han-
des/ and howe that ye wyll that he be kynge/
therby ye shall greatly apease him and the lon
doners also/ and desyre hym effectuously to
suffre you to lyue and vs also with you/ or els
euery man a parte/ as it shall please him/ or els
to banysshe vs out of the realme for euer/ for he
that leseth his lyfe leseth all. Kynge Richarde
herde those wordes well/ and fyxed them sure-
ly in his herte/ and sayd he wolde do as they
counsayled hym/ as he that sawe hym selfe in
great daunger. and than he sayd to them that
kepte hym/ howe he wolde gladly speke with
his cosyn of Lancastre

¶ Howe kynge Richarde of Englande resigned the crowne and the realme in to the handes of the erle of Derby duke of Lancastre.

Cap. CC.xliiii.

IT was shewed the duke of Lancastre howe Richarde of Burdeaux desyred to speke with hym. The duke in an euenynge toke a barge and went to the towre by water/ & went to the kynge/ who receyued hym curtesly/ and humbled hym selfe greatly/ as he that sawe hym selfe in great daunger/ and sayd. Cosyn of Lancastre/ I regarde and consydre myne estate/ whiche is as nowe but small/ I thanke god therof. As any more to reygne or to gouerne people/ or to beare a crowne/ I thynke it nat/ and as god helpe me I wolde I were deed by a naturall dethe/ and that the frenche kinge had agayne his doughter/ we haue had as yet no grete ioy togyder/ nor syth I brought her in to Englande/ I coulde neuer haue the loue of my people as I had before. Cosyn all thynges

thynges cõsydred/ I knowe well I haue greatly trespassed agaynst you/ and agaynst other noble men of my bloode/ by dyuers thynges/ I perceyue I shall neuer haue pardone nor come to peace/ wherfore with myne owne free and lyberall wyll/ I wyll resygne to you the heritage of the Crowne of Englande/ and I requyre you take the gyfte therof with the resignacyon. When the duke herde that he sayd. syr it is conuenyent that parte of the thre estates of the realme be called to these wordes/ and I haue sent all redy for some noble men/ prelates/ and counsaylours of the good townes of Englande/ and I truste they wyll be here within this thre dayes sufficyent of them/ for you to make a dewe resygnacion before them/ and by this meanes ye shal greatly apease many men within the realme. For to withstande suche enormyties and vices as haue ben vsed in the realme for faute of iustyce/ who had no place to repayre/ I was sent for fro beyond the see/ and the people wolde crowne me/ for the renome ryneth through Englande/ that I haue more ryght to the crowne than ye haue/ for when our grauntfather kynge Edwarde the thyrde dyd chose and make you kynge/ the same was as than shewed hym/ but he loued so his sonne the prince/ that none coude breake his purpose nor opinyon/ but that you shulde be kynge/ and if ye wolde haue folowed the steppes of your father the prince/ and haue beleued his counsayle/ as a good sonne ought to haue done/ ye myght haue ben styll kyng/ and haue contynued youre estate/ but ye haue alwayes done the contrary/ so that the cõmon renome ryneth through England/ and in other places/ that ye were neuer sonne to the prince of Wales/ but rather sonne to a preest or to a chanon/ for I haue herde of certayne knightes that were in the Princes howse myne vncle/ howe that he knew well that his wyfe had nat truely kepte her mariage. your mother was cosyn germayne to kynge Edwarde/ and the kynge beganne to hate her/ because she coulde haue no generacion. Also she was the kynges gossyp of two chyldren at the fonte. And she that coulde well kepe the prince in her bandon by crafte and subtylte/ she made the prince to be her husbande/ and because she coulde haue no chylde/ she doubted that the prince shulde be deuorced fro her. she dyd so much that she was with chylde with you/ and with a nother before you/ as of the fyrst I can nat tell what to iudge/ but as for you because your condicions haue ben sene contrary to all nobles and prowes of the prince/ therfore it is sayd that ye be rather sonne to a preest or to a chanon. for when ye were gotten and borne at Burdeaux/ there were many ponge preestes in ỹ princes house. This is the brute in this countrey/ and your workes haue well folowed the same/ for ye be alwayes enclyned to the pleasure of the frenche men/ and to take with them peace to the confusyon and dyshonoure of the realme of Englande. And because myne vncle of Glouceftre and the erle of Arundell dyd counsayle you truly and faythfully/ to kepe the honour of the realme/ and to folowe the steppes of your auncestours/ ye haue traytourly caused them to dye. As for me I haue taken on me to defende your lyfe as longe as I may for pyte/ and I shall pray the londoners and the heritours of them that ye haue slayne and banysshed/ to do the same. Cosyn I thanke you quod ỹ kynge. I truste more in you than in any other. It is but ryght that ye so shulde do/ for if I had nat ben/ ye had ben taken by the people and deposed with great confusyon and slayne/ by reasone of your euell workes. Kynge Richarde herde well all the dukes wordes/ and wyst nat what to saye agaynst it/ for he sawe well that force nor argumentes coulde nat auayle him/ but rather mekenesse and humblyte/ wherfore he humbled hym/ and prayed the duke to saue his lyfe.

Whan the duke of Lancastre had ben at the towre two houres with kynge Richarde/ & had shewed hym parte of his fautes/ than he retourned. And the next day he sent forthe two cõmaundementes in to all parties of the realme/ to cause noble men and other to come to London. His vncle the duke of yorke came to London and the erle of Rutlande his sonne/ the erle of Northumberlande and the lorde Thomas Percy his brother. The duke of Lancastre made them good chere. Thyder came also great nombre of prelates and abbottes. And on a day the duke of Lancaster accompanyed with lordes/ dukes/ prelates/ erles/ barones/ and knyghtes/ and of the notablest men of London/ of other good townes/ rode to the Towre and there alyghted. Than kynge Richarde was brought in

to the hall / apareyled lyke a kynge in his robes of estate / his septer in his hande / and his crowne on his heed. Than he stode by alone / nat holden nor stayed by no man / and sayde a loude. I haue been kynge of Englande / duke of Acquytany / and lorde of Irelande / aboute xxii. yeres / whiche synguler / royalte / septer / crowne / and heritage / I clerely resygne here to my cosyn Henry of Lancastre / and I desyre hym here in this open presence in entrynge of the same possessyon / to take this septour / and so delyuered it to the duke / who toke it. Than kynge Richarde toke the crowne fro his heed with bothe his handes / and set it before hym / and sayd. Fayre cosyn Henry duke of Lancastre / I gyue & delyuer you this crowne / wherwith I was crowned kyng of Englande / and therwith / all the right therto dependyng. The duke of Lancastre tooke it / and the archebysshop of Caunterbury toke it out of the dukes handes. this resygnacion thus done / the duke of Lancastre called a notary / and demaunded to haue letters and wytnesse of all the prelates and lordes there beynge present. Than Richarde of Burdeaux retourned agayne in to the chambre fro whence he came. Than the duke of Lancastre and all other lept on their horses / and the crowne and septour were put in a coffer / and conueyed to the abbey of Westmynster / and there kept in the treasory. And euery man wente to their lodgynges / and abode tyll the day of parliament and counsayle shulde be at the palays of Westmynster.

Of the coronacyon of kyng Henry duke of Lancastre / by the consent of the realme / & the maner of the feest.

Cap. CC.xlv.

IN the yere of our lorde god a thousande thre hundred fourscore & nyneteene / the last daye of septembre / on a tuysday began a parlyament at Westmynster / holden by Henry duke of Lancastre / at whiche tyme there was assembled prelates and clergy of the realme of Englande a great nombre / and also dukes / erles / and barones / and of euery towne a certayne. Thus the people assembled at Westmynster / there beynge present the duke of Lancastre: and there the same duke chalenged the realme of Englande / and desyred to be kynge by three reasones. Fyrst by conquest. secondly bycause he was heyre. And thyrdly bycause Richarde of Burdeaux had resygned the realme in to his handes by his free wyll / in the presence of certayne dukes / erles / prelates / and barones in the hall within the towre of London. These thre causes shewed the duke of Lancastre requyred all the people there present / as well one as other / to shewe their myndes and ententes in that behalfe. Than all the people with one voyce sayd / that their wylles was to haue him kynge / and howe they wolde haue none other but hym. Than the duke agayne sayd to the people. Sirs / is this your myndes / and they all with one voyce sayde / ye / ye. And than the duke sate downe in the syege royall / whiche seate was reysed vp in the hall / and couered with a clothe of estate / so that euery man myght well se hym sytte. And than the people lyfted vp their handes a lyghe / promysyng hym their faythe and allegyaunce. Thanne the parlyament concluded / and the day was taken for his coronacyon on saynt Edwardes day / the monday the. xiii. day of Octobre / at whiche tyme / the saturday before his coronacyon he departed fro Westmynster and rode to the towre of London with a great nombre. and that night all suche squyers as shulde be made knyghtes the nexte day / watched / who were to the nombre of. xlvi. Euery squyer had his owne bayne by hym selfe / and the nexte day the duke of Lancastre made them all knyghtes at the masse tyme. Than had they longe cotes with strayte sleeues furred w̄ mynyuer lyke prelates / with whyte laces hangynge on their shulders. And after dyner the duke departed fro the towre to Westmynster / & rode all the way bareheeded / and aboute his necke the lyuery of Fraunce. He was accompanyed with the prince his sonne and syxe dukes / syxe erles / and. xlviii. barons / and in all knyghtes and squyers a nyne hundred horse. Than the kynge had on a shorte cote of clothe of golde / after the maner of Almayne / and he was mounted on a whyte courser / and the garter on his left legge. Thus the duke rode through London with a great nombre of lordes / euery lordes seruaunt in their maysters lyuery. All the burgesses & lombardes

des marchauntes in London/ and euery craft with their lyuerey and deuyſe. Thus he was conueyed to Weſtmynſter. He was in nombre a lyte thouſande horſe/ and the ſtreates hanged as he paſſed by. and the ſame day and the nexte there were in London tyrynge ſeuen cundytes with wyne whyte and reed. That nyght the duke was bayned/ and the nexte morynge he was confeſſed/ and herde thre maſſes as he was acuſtomed to do/ and than all the prelates and clergy came fro Weſtmynſter churche to the palays to fetche the kynge with proceſſion and ſo he went to the churche a proceſſion/ and all the lordes with hym in their robes of ſcarlet/ furred with menyuer/ barred of their ſhulders accordynge to their degrees/ and ouer the kynge was borne a clothe of eſtate of blewe/ with four belles of golde/ and it was borne by four burgeſſes of the portes/ as Douer and other. And on euery ſyde of him he had a ſworde borne/ the one ꝑ ſworde of the churche/ and the other the ſworde of iuſtyce. The ſworde of the church his ſonne the prince dyd beare/ and the ſworde of iuſtyce therle of Northumberlande dyd beare/ for he was as than conſtable of Englande/ for the erle of Rutlande was depoſed fro that office/ and the erle of Weſtmerlande who was marchall of Englande/ bare the ceptour. Thus they entred in to ꝑ churche about nyne of the cloche/ and in the myddes of the churche there was an hygh ſcaffolde all couered with reed/ and in the myddes therof there was a chayre Ropall/ couered with clothe of golde. Than the kyng ſate downe in ꝑ chayre and ſo ſate in eſtate ropall/ ſauynge he had nat on the crowne/ but ſate bare heded. Than at four corners of the ſcaffolde/ the archebyſſhop of Caunterbury ſhewed vnto the people how we god had ſent them a man to be their kyng/ and demaunded if they were content that he ſhulde be conſecrated and crowned as their kynge. And they all with one voyce ſayd yea/ a lyfte vp their handes/ promyſynge hym fayth and obeyſaunce. Than the kynge roſe and went downe the ſcaffolde to the hygh autre to be ſacred/ at whiche conſecracion there were two archbyſſhoppes and ten byſſhops/ and before the autre they he was diſpoyled out of all his veſtures of eſtate/ a there he was anoynted in vi. places/ on the heed/ on the breſt a on the two ſhulders behynde/ and on the handes. Than a bonet was ſet on his heed/ and whyle he was anoyntynge the clergy ſange the latyny/ and ſuche ſeruyce as they ſynge at the halowyng of the ſoute. Than ꝑ kinge was aparelled lyke a prelate of the churche/ with a cope of reed ſylke and a payre of ſpurres with a poynte without a rowell. Than the ſworde of iuſtyce was drawen out of the ſhethe and halowed/ and than it was taken to ꝑ kyng/ who dyd put it agayne in to the ſheth/ than the archebyſſhop of Caunterbury dyd gyrde ꝑ ſworde about hym. than ſayne Edwardes crowne was brought fore the whiche is cloſe aboue and bleſſed/ and than the archebyſſhop dyd ſette it on the kynges heed. After maſſe the kyng departed out of the churche in the ſame eſtate and went to his palays/ and there was a fountayne that ranne by dyuers braunches whyte wyne and reed. Than the kyng entred in to the hall/ and ſo in to a pryuy chamber/ and after came out agayne to dyner. At the fyrſt table ſate the kynge. At the ſeconde ꝑ fyue peres of the realme/ at the thyrde the baryaunt men of London. at the fourth the newe made knightes. At the fyft the knyghtes and ſquiers of honour. And by the kyng ſtode the prince holdynge the ſworde of the churche/ and on the other ſyde the Conſtable with the ſworde of iuſtyce/ and a lytell aboue the marſhall with the ceptour/ and at ꝑ kynges borde ſate two archbyſſhops and. xviii. byſſhoppes. And in the myddes of the dyner there came in a knight/ who was called Dimereth all armed vpon a good horſe rychely aparelled/ and had a knyght before hym bearyng his ſpeare/ and his ſworde by his ſyde and his dagger. The knyght toke the kyng a lybell/ the whiche was red. Therin was conteyned that if there were outher knight/ ſquyer/ or any other gētyleman that wolde ſay that kyng Henry was nat right full kyng/ he was there redy to fyght with him in that quarell/ before the kynge/ or where as it ſhulde pleaſe hym to appoynte. that byll was cryed by an harauide in fyre places of the hall and in the towne. There was none that wolde chalenge hym. Whan the kynge had dyned he toke wyne a ſpyces in the hall/ and than went in to his chambre. Than euery man departed and went to their lodgynges. thus the day paſſed of kynge Henryes coronacion with great ioy and feeſt/ whiche endured all the nexte day. The erle of Salyſbury was nat at this coūcyle nyte for he was in ſure priſon/ and the kinges counſayle and dyuers other noble men/ and the

londoners/ wolde that his hed shulde haue ben stryken of openly in chepe/for they said he had well deserued it/ for bearynge of letters and credence fro Kychardе of Bardeaux to the frenche kyng/and there to reporte openly that kynge Henry was a falle traytoure/ whiche faute they sayd ought nat to be pdoned. Kyng Henry was more gentyll than so/ for he had some pytie on hym/for therie excused hym and sayd/that he dyd/ was by the kynges cōmaundement/& by the settyng on of the four knyghtes that were behreded. Kinge Henry beleued well the eries wordes/but his counsayle wolde nat beleue it/but said/and so dyd ỹ londoners that he shulde dye/ bycause he had deserued deth. Thus the erle of Salysbury was in prison in great daunger of his lyfe. And syr Iohan Holande erle of Huntyngdon capytayne of Calais/was well enformed of the hole matter/and howe his brother kyng Kychard was taken and in prisone in the towre of London/ and had resygned his crowne and all/ & howe Henry of Lancastre was kinge of Englande. This erle of Huntyngdon/ what so euer displeasure he had for the trouble of his brother/ yet wysely he consydred the tyme and aduentures/and sawe well ỹ he was nat able to withstande all the power and puyssaunce of the realme. Also the countesse his wyfe/who was cosyn germayne to kynge Henry/sayd. Syr/it muste behoue you to passe your displeasure pacyently & wysely/and do nat that thynge wherby ye shall haue dōmage/for the kyng may do you moche good/ and ye se that all the realme enclyneth to hym/if ye shewe any displeasure to hym warde/ ye are but lost. wherfore syr/ I requyre you and I counsayle you to dyssimule the matter/ for as well kynge Henry nowe is your brother as kyng Richarde was/therfore syr sticke and leane to him/ and ye shall fynde hym your good louer/ for there was neuer a tyrher kynge in Englande than he is/ he may do to you & to your chyldren great good. The erle herde well the wordes of his wyfe and beleued her and enclyned hym to kynge Henry/ and offred hym humble obeysaunce/and promysed hym fayth and trouthe. The kyng receyued hym and had great ioy therof/ and he dyd so moche with meanes of his frendes/ that therle of Salysbury was taken to grace/and his excusacyons accepted/ and was clerie pardoned.

How newes of the taking of kyng Kychardе was knowen in Fraunce by the cōmyng thyder of the lady of Coucy/ and howe the frenche kynge was displeased. Cap. CC.xlvi.

When the lady of Coucy was arryued at Boulogne/ she hasted her to go to Parys. Great murmuryng there was in Fraunce of the vdayne incidentes ỹ were fall in Englāde/they knewe somwhat by marchantes of Bruges/but whan the lady of Coucy aryued/than the trouth was knowen. She went strayte to her husbandes house/ as it was reason. Anon the frenche kynge herde worde howe the lady of Coucy was come to Parys/ Than the kynge sent for the lorde of Coucy/ who had ben all nyght with his wyfe. Whan he was come the kynge demaūded of the state of kynge Kychardе of Englande/ and of the quene his doughter. The lorde durst nat hyde the trouth fro hym/ but shewed hym playnely euery thynge/ as his wyfe had shewed hym/ whiche newes were sore displeasaunt to the frenche kynge/ for he knewe well the englysshmen were sore & harde men to appease/ and so with displeasure the frenche kynge retourned agayne in to his olde customes of fraūce/ when of the nobles of ỹ realme were sore displeased but they coude nat amende it. Than the duke of Burgoyn said/ I thought neuer other wyse fyr it was a marryage without good reasone/ the whiche I sayd playnly ynough whan the mater was fyrst spoke of/ but as than I coulde nat be herde/ for I knewe well ỹ londoners neuer loued parfytely kynge Kychardе. All this myschefe is engendred by the duke of Glouces tre/ it is tyme nowe to take hede what the englysshmen wyll do/ syth they haue taken their kyng and put him in prison. by all lykelyhode they wyll put hym to dethe/ for they neuer loued him/ bycause he loued no warre but peace they wyll crowne to their kynge the duke of Lancastre/he shall so bynde hym selfe to them that whether he wyll or nat/he shall do all that they wyll/ & sayd moreouer/ nowe shall be sene what they of Burdeaux wyll do/ for there he was borne/and was well beloued with them and also with them of Bayon ỹ of Dax/ and in all the partyes of Burdeloys/it were good

that

that ꝑ constable of Frasce sie Lops of Sanc-
ere were signyfyed of this mater/ and that he
dze we hym to ꝑ fronters there/ ꝛ with hym ſyr
Raynolde of Barrops of Barceys and other
barones and prelates and to treate with them
and my brother the duke of Berrey to go in to
Poictou/ ꝛ to drawe to the fronters of Xain-
tes/ of Blaues/ and of mirbell/ wherby if they
of Burdeaux wyll any thynge entende to our
treaties/ that they may be receyued/ for now we
shall we haue them or neuer. As he deuysed it
was ordeyned/ the whiche was a substantiall
deuyce. for whan they of Burdeaux/ of Ba-
yon/ and of Dax/ vnderstode that their kynge
Richarde was taken and sette in the towre of
London/ and duke Henry of Lancastre cro-
ned kyng/ they had gret maruayle therof/ and
in the begynnyng wolde nat beleue it/ but ly-
tle ꝛ lytle they knewe the trouth therof. Than
the sayd thre townes were closed and no man
suffred to yssue out nor to entre in/ they were
sore troubled and sorowfull and specyally the
cytie of Burdeaux/ for kynge Richarde was
norysshed amonge them/ therfore they loued
hym/ and whyle he was kynge if any of Bur-
deloys came to hym they were well receyued/
and alwayes ꝑ kinge was redy to fulfyll their
desyres/ wherfore they sayd whan they knewe
the trouth. Ah Richarde gentle kyng/ ye were
as noble a man as euer reigned in any realme/
this trouble ꝑ londoners haue caused/ for they
coulde neuer loue you/ specyally sythe ye were
alyed by mariage with the frenche kyng/ this
myschiefe is so great that we can nat suffre it.
They haue holden you kynge this .xvii. yere/
and nowe to condempne you to the dethe/ for
sythe ye be in prison ꝛ haue crowned the duke
of Lancastre/ they wyll surely put you to deth.
So they of Burdeloys made great lamenta-
cyons/ in so moche that the seneschall of Bur-
deaux a tyght valyaunt knyght of Englande
wrote letters/ therin contenynge the wordes
and lamentacyons of them of the cytie of Bur-
deaux/ of Bayon/ and of Dax. Also he wrote
howe they were nere at the poynte to yelde vp
their townes to the frenche kyng. He sent this
letter by a trusty seruaunt of his by the see/ who
had good wynde and arryued at Cornewayle
in Englande/ and than he rode so longe that he
came to London/ there he foude kynge Henry
and delyuered his letters/ whiche were ope-
ned to the kynge and to the londoners. They
were opened and reed/ and the kynge and the
londoners tooke counsayle vpon that mater.
They of London answered lyke theym that
were nothyng abasshed of that tydynges/ but
sayde/ as for these townes wyll neuer tourne
frenche/ for they can nat lyue in their daunger
nor they canne nat suffre the extorcion and pol
linge of the frenchmen/ for vnder vs they lyue
franke and free/ and if the frenche men shulde
be lordes ouer them/ they shulde be taxed and
tayled/ ꝛ retayled two or thre tymes in a yere/
the whiche they are nat nowe acustomed vnto
whiche shulde be a harde thyng nowe for them
to begynne. Also these thre cyties are closed in
rounde about with great lordes/ who are good
englysshe/ and longe haue ben/ as the lorde
Pyuers/ the lorde Mulpdent/ the lorde Du-
ras/ the lorde Landuras/ the lorde Copane/
the lorde Rosem/ the lorde Logeren/ and dy-
uers other barones and knyghtes/ by whome
they shulde haue warre at their handes/ for
they shuld nat yssue out of their cities but they
shulde be taken. For all the seneschalles wyl-
tynge we haue no doute ꝑ they shulde become
frenche/ howe be it/ good it is to sende thyder
some valyaunt wyse man that is beloued a-
monge theym/ some suche as hath gouerned
there or this/ and that is the lorde Thomas
Percy. Thus as it was deuysed it was accom
plysshed/ he was desyred to go thyder/ and to
take hede of that countrey. He fulfylled the kyn
ges comaundement/ and made hym redy to
departe. it was about Chrystmasse/ at whiche
tyme the wyndes be sore and ieoperdous/ he
toke shyppynge in Cornewayle. He had with
him two hundred men of armes and four hun
dred archers. And with hym was his nephue
Hugh Hastynges/ Thomas Colleuyll/ Gyl-
yam Lytle/ Johan Grasly/ bastarde sonne to
the Captall of Beufz/ Guillyam Traicton/
Johan Danbretticourt/ and diuers other/ and
also the bysshop of London/ and mayster Ry-
charde Doall. They tarryed tyll it was myddes
Marche or they toke the see. and or they came
to Burdeaux the duke of Burbon was come
to the cytie of Dagen to treate with theym of
Burdeloys/ and he dyd so moche by his sayre
wordes and good assuraunce/ that the couns
sayles of Burdeaux/ of Bayon/ and of Dax
were sent to the cytie of Dagen. The duke re-
ceyued them frendly and gaue them sayre wor
des and many promyses/ and shewed them

that if they wolde turne frenche/ and be vnder the obeysaunce of the frenche kynge/ what so euer they wolde demaunde shulde be graun-ted them/ and sealed perpetually to endure. Many thynges they promysed and ware to seale/ and to kepe for curt. They aunswered/ whan they were retourned agayne in to their cytes they wolde shewe all this to the people/ and so take counsayle and than gyue answere. Thus they departed fro Dagen and fro the duke of Burbon and retourned to their townes/ and shewed all this to the people/ but all tourned to nothynge/ for the comynaltyes of the sayde cytes consydred the busynesse/ and knewe well howe the realme of Fraunce was vexed and troubled with tayles and fowages and shamfull exactions all to get money. than they sayd/ if the frenche men gouerne ouer vs they wyll bringe vs to the same vsage/ yet it is better for vs to be englysshe/ for they kepe vs franke and free. If the londoners haue deposed kynge Rycharde & crowned kinge Henry what is that to vs/ we haue and shall haue alwayes a kynge/ and we vnderstande that the bysshop of London and syr Thomas Percy shortely wyll be here/ they shall enfourme vs of the trouthe/ we haue also more marchaundyse of woll/ wyne/ and clothe with the Englysshe men than with the frenchmen. let vs be ware we make no treatie/ wherby we shulde repent vs after. Thus the treatie with the frenche men was broken and lefte of. Than anone after the bysshop of London and ꝑ lorde Percy with their charge of men of warre arryued at Burdeaux/ wherof moche people were greatly reioysed/ and some displeased/ suche as had rather haue ben frenche than englysshe. All these englysshe lordes were lodged togyther in the abbey of saint Andrewe/ and whan they sawe their tyme they shewed to the people the state of Englande/ and ꝑ cause why they were sent thyder/ and they dyd so moche that euery thynge was apeased bothe there and in all other places: for harde it was to haue caused them to haue tourned frenche.

Than it was determyned by the counsayle of Fraunce/ sythe the kyng was in sycknesse by reason of the displeasure that he toke for the deposyng of his sonne in lawe kynge Rycharde/ ꝑ they sholde sende some notable wyse personage in to Englande to knowe the state of the quene. to do this message was apoynted syr Charles de la Bryche and Charles of Hangest/ who (as they were comaunded) departed fro Paris and came to Boloygne/ and there taryed/ for they had sent an haraulde to kynge Henry/ for without assuraūce they durst nat go/ for all the truce that was bytwene bothe realmes. Kynge Henry/ who thought hym selfe moche bounde to the frenche kynge/ for the chere that he hadde in Fraunce/ toke counsayle and concluded/ and so the harauldes was answered that it was the kynges pleasure that they and their company shulde come in to Englande/ and to come the streyght way to the kyng/ and nat to tyde out of the way without licence. The harauldes retourned to Boloyne and shewed what he had done/ wherwith they were content/ and so shypped their horses/ and toke the see and aryued at Douer/ where they founde redy a knyght of the kynges howse/ who receyued them. they had sene hym before with kyng Henry in Fraunce/ wherby they were soner aquaynted. so they taryed at Douer tyll their horses were vnshypped/ and than they rode to Cauntrebury. And where so euer they bayted or lay their hostes were payed. At laste they came to Eltham/ and there they founde kyng Henry and parte of his counsayle. The kynge made them good chere for the loue of the frenche kynge. Than they shewed the kyng the cause of their comynge. The kynge aunswered and sayde. Sirs/ ye shal go to London/ and there I wyll be within this foure dayes and assemble my counsayle/ and than ye shall haue aunswere of your demaunde. That daye they dyned with the kynge/ and after dyner they rode to London and the sayde knyght of the kynges hyll with them/ who sawe them well lodged. The kinge accordyng to his promyse came to Westmynster/ & these frenche knyghtes had knowlege of the kynges comynge thyder/ and made them redy to go whan they shulde be sent for. The kynge had his counsayle with hym/ and than it was demyded what answere they shulde haue. than they were sent for/ and than it was shewed them that where as they desyred to se the quene/ their desyre shulde nat be denyed/ so that they wolde swere and promelle/ that nouther they nor none of their meyne shulde speke any worde of that was fallen vpon kyng Rycharde/ for it was said to them/ that if they

dyd

byd they shulde rynne in great displeasure of the people/ and be in great parell of their lyues. Tor two knightes sayd they wolde in no wyse breake the ordre that they had sette/ but obey their cõmaundement. They sayd whan they had ones sene and spoken with her/ than they wolde retourne and departe. Anon after theerle of Northum berlande brought theym to Hauerinse of the bowre to the youge quene who was there as than/ and with her the duches of Irelande doughter to the lorde Coucy and ỹ duchesse of Glouceftre with her doughters/ and other ladyes and damoselles. The quene receyued them swetely/ and demaunded of them howe the frenche kinge her father dyd and the quene her mother. They sayde well/ and so cõmuned with her a grete season. They kepte well their promesse/ for they spake no worde of kynge Richarde. Than they tooke leaue of the quene and retourned to London. Than shortely after they wente to Eltham to the kynge and there dyned/ and ỹ kyng gaue them sayre presentes and towelles/ and right amyably they toke their leaue of the kynge/ who sayd to them. Syrs/ ye may say whan ye come in to Fraunce/ ỹ the quene of Englande shall haue no hurte nor trouble/ but shall alwaies kepe her estate as to her belongeth/ and shall entoy all her right/ for as yet she shall nat knowe the mutacyons of the worlde. Of these wordes spoken of the kynges mouth/ the two knyghtes were well content/ and so departed and lay at Dertforde/ and the nexte day at Oxynge/ and so to Caunterbury/ and than to Douer. And all their costes and charges comynge & goynge the kynges officers payed. Than they tooke the see and arryued at Boloyne and so to Paris/ and there founde the kyng and the quene/ and shewed them all that they had sene and herde. Nowe let vs somwhat speake of Englande.

Howe certayne lordes in Englande rose vp with an army to haue deliuered kyng Richarde and to haue dystroyed kynge Henry/ and howe they were slayne. Cap. CC. xlvii.

Diuers questyons and argumẽtes were made in Englande amonge noble men/ and counsayls of the good townes/ ỹ Richarde of Burdeaux was dede & slayne/ wherfore men spake no more of hym/ for well he had deserued it. To these poyntes kyng Henry answered and sayd. Nay quod he/ I haue pytie of his dethe/ I wyll neuer consent therto. To kepe hym in prysone is sufficient. I haue wastred his lyfe/ and I wyll kepe my promyse. Suche as wolde haue had hym dede sayd. Sire/ we se well ye haue pytie on hym/ but ye do for your selfe a perylous thyng. For as long as he is a lyue/ though he haue willyngly resigned to you the crowne of Englande/ and that euery man hath receyued you as kyng/ and haue made to you faythe and homage/ yet it can nat be/ but that there be in the realme/ some that loued hym/ & as yet do/ who wolde lightly ryse agaist you/ if they might se any lykelyhode of his delyuerance. Also the frenche kynge is sore displeased for his trouble/ he wolde soone be reuenged yf he myght/ and he is of great puyssaunce/ with suche ayde as he maye fynde in Englande/ The kynge aunswered and sayde/ As longe as I se nat the contrary/ or that the frenche kyng wyll take no parte agaynst me/ I wyll kepe my promyse. This aunswere that the kynge made/ had nerehande haue ben to his owne distructyon. The erle of Huntyngton sir Johan of Hollande/ brother to kyng Richarde/ who hadde to wyfe kynge Henryes suster/ coulde nat forgette the aduenture of his brother/ No more coude the erle of Salisbury/ and they had at Oxenforde secrete counsayle togyder. And they deuysed how they might delyuer kynge Richarde out of the towre and distrope kyng Henry/ & bring a trouble agayne in to the realme. They deuysed to make a iustes of twentie knyghtes and twentie squyers to beholden at Oxenforde/ and howe they wolde desyre the kyng to be there prytuely. And whyle he shulde be syttynge at the table to slee hym. For they had deuysed to haue hadde men prowe to haue performed their ententes/ and they had eby a preest called Maladyn/ who was a

kyngat in kynge Rychardes chapell/to haue putte hym in the kynges appareyle/for he was lyke kynge Rychard in fauoure. And than they wolde haue made the people to haue beleued that kynge Richarde hadde been delyuered/and returned in to his fyrst state/ and thatte to haue sente wordes of their dede to the Frenche kynge/that he shulde incontynent haue sente in to Englande/some socoure to them by the erle of sayut Poule or by some other. As they had deuysed so they dyde begynne. They caused a feest at Oxenforde to be proclaymed of twentie knyghtes and twentie squyers/well accompanyed with ladyes and damoselles. They hadde also on their partie the yonge erle of Kente/nephue to sir Johan Hollande/& also another great lorde the lorde Spensar. And they beleued to haue hadde on their partie the erle Johan of Rutlande/bycause kynge Henry had put hym out of the office of the Constable shyppe of Englande/but he sayled theym/for some sayde/by hym they were bewrayed. This feest prouyded for/than the erle of Huntyngton came to Wyndsore where the kyng was and humbly made his reuerence/as he that thought to haue disceyued the kynge with swete wordes/and to haue gote hym to haue come to this feest/the whiche to do/he deseyred the kyng effectuously/and the kyng who thought none euell graunted hym so to do/ wherof the erle was tyght ioyouse/and departed fro the kynge and toke his leaue/and sayde to the Chanon Robsarde. Sir/appareyle you to come to our feest/I promyse the if I mete the there in the felde/I shall gyue the a sayre encountre with my speare. Than sir Johan Robsarde sayd. Sir/if the kyng come to your feest/ye shall nat fayle to fynde me there. Than the Erle strake his hande in his and thanked hym/and so passed forthe. Dyuers knightes and squyers prepared theselues to be at that feest. All the armorers in London were lette a worke to trymme men in their harneste for the Justes. Suche as were of the kynges counsayle sayde to hym. Sir/ye haue nothynge to do there/ye shall nat come there by our aduyse. We haue herde certayne wordes in murmuryng/the whiche are nat very pleasaunt nor agreable. We shall knowe more shortly. The kynge beleued their counsaile/and so came nat at that feest/nor none of his knyghtes/nor but fewe came thyther/of suche as they wolde haue slayne.

WHan the erle of Salisbury/the erle of Hütyngton/and the erle of Kente/and the lorde Spensar sawe that they hadde sayled of their entente/and that they coude nat haue the kyng as they wolde/than they counsayled togyuder and sayde. Lette vs go to Wynsore and stryre vp the countre/ and we shall putte Madalyn in estate royall/and ryde with hym: And make the people beleue that it is kynge Rychard/who is delyuered out of prysone/all suche as shall se hym wyll beleue it/& all suche as here therof/and thus we shall distroy our enemyes. As they deuysed so they dyde/and assembled togyuder/so that they were a fyue hundred men/one and other. And they dyd putte this Madalyn in appareyle royall/& made hym to ryde with theym/and so rode towardes Wyndsore where kynge Henry was. Godde dyde ayde kynge Henry/for tydynges came to hym howe the sayd lordes were comynge with a great nombre to Wynsore to slee hym and howe they were men ynowe to wynne the castell/and howe they had made Madalyn in vesture lyke a kyng/to ryde with the/ and made the people beleue that kynge Rychard was delyuered/and moche people beleueth it/And some saye they haue sene hym/ and beleue verily that it is he. Wherfore sir/ gette you hens incontynent and ryde to London/for they are comynge strayght hyder. The kynge beleued their counsayle. And so he and all his men lepte on their horses and departed fro Wyndsore and rode towardes London. And the kynge was nat farre gone but that these lordes came to Wyndsore/and entred in at the gates of the castell/for there was none to saye theym naye. Thanne they wente serchynge fro Chambre to chambre/ and in the Chanons houses/wenyng to fynde the kynge/but they fayled. Whanne they sawe it wolde nat be they were right sore displeased/and than departed fro Wynsore and lay that nyght at Colebroke/and they made moche peo-

moche people to go with them/ what byforce and by treatie. Sayeng howe kynge Richarde was in their company/ some beleued it and some nat. Kyng Henry who douted of trayson/ hasted hym in his iourney/ and cãe to the towre of London by a secrete waye/ Than he went to Richarde of Burdeux and sayd. I haue saued your lyfe wt moche payne and nowe ye wolde murder me/ by your brother and other/ but this enterprice I shalbe yuell for you. Richarde of Burdeaux excused hym greatly and sayd. As god myght helpe hym and saue his soule/ he knewe nothynge therof/ nor he wolde neuer desire other estate than he was in. Thus the mater stode. Thã kyng Henry sent for the mayre of London/ & for other of his speciall frendes/ and than he shewed them all the mater as it was. The lõdoners had great marueyle therof and said. Sir/ ye must sende for your men and go agaynst them be tymes/ or they multiply any further. We haue made you kynge/ & so ye shall contynue who soeuer haue enuy therat. Thã letters were written in hast/ and messangers sent forthe in to all partes. The kyng wrote to his constable the erle of Northumberlãde and to his marshall the erle of Westmerlãde and to all other knyghtes and squyers in to Essex/ and in to other places/ where as he thought to haue ayde of men/ suche as herde therof/ cãe to the kyng as fast as they myght.

¶ Than the erles of Huntyngton and of Salisbury/ and other of their affynyte/ toke counsayle and aduyse to drawe towardes London/ for they sayde/ it coulde nat be none otherwyse/ but that some of the Londoners loued kynge Richarde/ & all such they said/ wolde cõe to take their pte Than they departed fro Colbroke and went and lodged at Braynforde/ a seuyn myle fro London/ but there was neuer a lõdoner that came to them but drewe all in to their ayde. Whan these lordes sawe that/ the nexte morynge they tooke the waye to Saynt Albons/ and there lodged and tarried there a day/ and fro thens they went to Bartamstede. Thus they went about the countre/ & styll made to be reported/ that this Wadayn was kyng Richarde/ and so came to a good towne called Dustertour/ where there was a bayle sette there by kynge Henry/ who had the kepyng of the towne and the countrey there about. Whan these lordes were come to Dustertour/ they lodged there one nyght in rest & peace/ for the bayly was nat strog ynough to fyght with the/ therfore he dissymuled as well as he myght. And the nexte morynge the erle of Saint bury and the lorde Spenser departed fro the erle of Huntyngton and fro the erle of Kent/ & sayd howe they wolde ryde further to get & to turne mo men to their opynyon/ & to go & se the lorde Berkley/ & to ryde along by the ryuer of Syuerne. They were yuell counsayled whan they departed one fro another/ for they were so moche the weaker. The erle of Huntyngton began to treate with the bayly & with the men of Dustertour/ and shewed them howe kynge Richarde was deliuered/ & howe that the lõdoners had deliuered hym/ and that he shulde be there within two dayes after. The bayly (who had assembled a good nombre of them of the countrey) sayde/ that the contrarye was trewe/ & howe that he had suche tydynges fro kyng Henry and fro the londoners/ that he wolde execute their cõmaundement. Whan therle of Hũtyngton herde those wordes he chaunged colour/ & sawe well he was disceyued. Than he entred in to his lodging and armed hym/ and caused his mẽ to do the same/ and thought to cõquere those villayns by bataple and to sette the towne a fyre/ therby to abaill he the people. The bayly of the towne on the other parte hasted hym/ and assembled all his men in a certayne place/ and he was with archers and other a two thousande men/ and the lordes had nat past a thre hundred men. Howe be it they came oute of their lodgynges and began the bataple/ and archers shotte on bothe partes so that many were hurte. Than the bayly with his great nombre came vpon them without sparynge/ for he had speciall cõmaundement fro kynge Henry that he shulde outher take the quicke or deed/ if he myght ouercome them. So finally the Erles menne were fayne to withdrawe in to the houses. Than the bayly and his men enuyroned their lodgynges on all partes/ and specially where the two Erles were/ & made there suche assautes/ that they entred playne: There were many hurte and slayne. Therle of Hũtyngton defended hym selfe valyauntly as longe as he myght: But there were

there were so many agaynst hym/ that there he was slayne/ and with hym the ponge erle of Kente/for whom great sorowe was made in dyuers partes of Englande/ for he was a fayre ponge man/and was there in maner agaynst his wyll/but his vncle and the erle of Salysbury brought hym thereto. The men of Sussexe who were fierse agaynst the/ strake of their heedes and sent them by a messanger to the mayre of London/ therwith to reioyce the kyng and the londoners. The erle of Salysbury and the lorde Spensar came to a lyke conclusyon/for certayne knightes & squiers of the kynges toke them where they were/and strake of their heedes & sente them to London/& many suche as were with them alyed were putte to execucion/ bothe knyghtes and squyers. After that the realme was in good rest and peace.

Howe the frenche kyng reysed vp an army to sende vpon the fronters of Englande. Cap. CC.xlviii.

Than easter was come/the yere of our lorde god. M. four hundred. The frenche kyng/ his brother/ his vncles/ & his counsaile vnderstode howe certayne Englysshmen of armes and archers shulde passe the see and come to Calais and to Gupnes/to Hâmes/and to those fronters. Than there was a cõmaundement made throughe Fraunce/that euery knight and squyer shulde be redy to leape a horsebacke/and to go thider as they shulde be sente/ specially Bolonois and the see syde was well prouyded for.

The same tyme duke Johan of Bretayne died/ & behynde hym he lefte two sonnes & a doughter. The eldest sonne shulde haue maried the frenche kynges secõde doughter for he might nat haue theldest/ bycause she was maryed in to Englande to kynge Richarde. This treatie of mariage fyrst for the eldest doughter of Fraunce with the heyre of Bretayne/was concluded at Toursse in Tourayn but afterwarde by the kinges cõsent and his cõsaile/ & to thentent to marry her the more richely/ that mariage was broken with Bretayne/ & she maried in to Englande. And dyuers lordes in Fraunce said & feared/that no good shulde come therof: but than they concluded for ỹ secõde doughter. Than after the dethe of the duke of Bretaine it was aduised that ỹ duke of Orlyaũce with a certayne nõbre of men of warre shulde drawe to ỹ marches of Bretayne to speke with ỹ bretons/ & wt the cõsaylours of good townes/to know what they wolde do with their heyre/ & to deliuer thẽ to delyuer him to be kept in the house of Fraũce. The duke of Orlyaũce dyde according to this deuyse/ & with a certayne nõbre came to Ponthorson & there rested/and sente worde of his cõming to the lordes of Bretaigne. Than prelates / lordes/ & cõsaylours of the good townes in ỹ name of the thre estates of the countre assembled togyder/ & were determyned what ansuere were to make/ and so they came to Pounthorson to the duke of Orlyaunce/ and there they made their answere all after one sorte/and that was. They said/ howe that their ponge lorde & heyre of Bretayne/ they wolde kepe hym thẽselfes in his owne countre. Than the duke of Orlyaũce seyng it wolde none otherwise be/ he toke hõdes of the grettest lordes in Bretayne/ suche as had chefe charge of the countre/ that they shulde delyuer hym to the frẽche kyng/ whã the childe shulde come to his age. These writynges made and sealed/ than the duke departed and returned in to Fraunce/and shewed the kyng his brother howe he had spedde.

IT was well knowen in Englande/ howe the frenche kyng hadde furnysshed his garysons/ cyties/ good townes & castels on the fronters of Picardy and Bolonois/and howe the frenchmen had closed so the passage ouer ỹ water of Some that no marchandyse/cosne/nor other thyng shulde nat passe thruyle/ nor ỹ marchautes of Englãde/who were wont to go into Frãce with their marchaũdise/durst no more cõe there/ nor the frenche marchaũtes durste nat come in to Englande/so that the fronters on bothe ptes were in grete ruyne & desolacion/ and yet they made no warre togyder/for they had no cõmaũdement so to do. Than it was said to kyng Hery. Sir/aduyse you well/ it semeth by the Frenchmen they wyll make you warre: they make great prouysyon for shyppes at

pes at Hartlewe/ and capitayns of their ar-
mye is/the erle of ſaynt Poule and ſir Cha
les de la Bzeth. And it were to ſuppoſe/that
if the erles of Huntyngton and of Salyſ-
bury were a lyue/ and all ſuche as be dedde/
the Frenchmen than wolde ſoone paſſe ouer
the ſee/ on truſt to haue great alyaunce and
ayde in Englande. But ſir/ as longe as Ri-
charde of Burdeaux is a lyue/ you no; your
realme ſhalbe at no ſuretie. I beleue that ye
ſaye is trewe quod the kyng/but as for me I
wyll nat cauſe hym to be ſlayne/ for I haue
ſo promyſed hym/ and I wyll kepe my pro-
myſe/without I preue that he woꝛke trai-
ſon agaynſt me. Well ſir ȳ they of his coun-
ſaill/it were better for you that he were deed
rather than a lyue. For as longe as the fren-
che men knowe that he is lyueng/ they wyll
enforce them to make you warre/ and wyll
hope alwayes to bꝛing him agayne in to his
former eſtate/ bycauſe of his wyfe the Fren-
che kynges doughter. The kyng gaue none
anſwere but departed fro them as than/ and
lefte his couſayle cõmunyng togyder/ & the
kynge wente and toke a faucon on his hãde/
and palled ouer that matter.

¶Of the dethe of kyng Richarde of Englande/and howe the truſe by-twene Englande and Fraunce was renewed. And alſo of the depoſicion of pope Benedit at Auignon.

Cap. CC. xlix.

IT was nat longe after/ that true tidynges ran thoꝛougbe London/ howe Richarde of Burdeaulx was deed/ but howe he dyed & by what meanes I coulde nat tell whan I wꝛote this cro-nycle. But this kynge Richarde deed was layde in a lytter and ſette in a chayꝛe/ couer-ed with blacke Baudkynne/and foure hoꝛ-ſes all blacke in the chayꝛe/ and two men in blacke leadyng the chayꝛe/ and four knyght-es all in blacke folowyng. Thus the chare departed fro the towꝛe of London/ and was bꝛought a long throughe London tayꝛe and ſoftely tyll they cãe into chepeſyde/ where as the cheſe aſſembly of Lõdon was/ and there the chare reſted the ſpace of two houres. thy-der came in and out more than.xx.M. perſons men and women to ſe hym where as he laye/ his hedde on a blacke quyſſhen/ & his viſage open. ſome had on hym pytie & ſoe none but ſayd/he had long a go deſerued dethe. Now cõſyder well ye great loꝛdes/ kynges/dukes erles/barõs & pꝛelates/ & all men of great lyn-nage & puiſſaunce: ſe & beholde howe the foꝛtu-nes of this woꝛlde are marueylous/ & turne diuerſly. This kyng Richarde reigned kyn-ge of Englãde.xxii.yere in great pꝛoſperite/ holdyng great eſtate & ſignoꝛie. There was neuer beforе any kyng of Englande ȳ ſpente ſo moche in his houſe as he dyd/by a.C.M. florens euery yere. For I ſir Johñ Froiſſart chanon & treſaurer of Chymay knewe it wel for I was in his court moꝛe thã a quarter of a yere togyder/ & he made me good chere/ by-cauſe ȳ in my youthe I was clerke & ſeruãt to the noble kynge Edwarde the thirde his graũtfather/ & with my lady Philyp of Hey-nault quene of Englãde his grandame. and whan I departed fro hym/it was at Wyndſoꝛe/ and at my departynge the kyng ſent me by a knight of his called ſir Johñ Golofer/a gob-let of ſyluer & gylte weyeng two marke of ſil-uer/ & within it a.C. nobles/ by the which I am as yet the better/ and ſhalbe as long as I lyue/ wherfoꝛe I am boũde to pꝛaye to God for his ſoule/ & with moche ſoꝛowe I wꝛite of his dethe. But bicauſe I haue cõtynued this hiſtoꝛie/therfoꝛe I wꝛite therof to folowe it. In my tyme I haue ſene two thyng/ though they differ yet they be true. I was in ȳ cyte of Burdeux & ſytting at the table whã kyng Richarde was boꝛne/ ȳ whiche was on a tu-ſday about.x. of the clocke. The ſame tyme there cãe there as I was ſir Richarde Poũt cardon marſhall as than of Acheyne/ & he ſaid to me. Froiſſart/ wꝛite & put in memoꝛie ȳ as nowe my lady pꝛiceſſe is bꝛought abed with a fayꝛe ſon on this tweliſe daye/ ȳ is the day of the thꝛe kynges/and he is ſon to a kyn-ges ſon & ſhalbe a kyng. This gẽtyll knight ſaid trouthe/for he was kynge of Englande xxii.yere. But whan this knyght ſayd theſe woꝛdes/ he knewe full ſyrell what ſhulde be his concluſyon. And the ſame tyme that kyn-ge Richarde was borne his father the pꝛince was in Galyce/the whiche kyng Dompetꝛe

had gyuen

there were so many agaynst hym/ that there he was slayne/ and with hym the ponge erle of Kente/for whom great sorowe was made in dyuers partes of Englande/ for he was a fayre ponge man/ and was there in maner agaynst his wyll/but his vncle and the erle of Salisbury brought hym therto. The men of Sulcestrour who were fierse agaynst the/ strake of their heedes and sent them by a messanger to the mayre of London/ therwith to retoyce the kyng and the londoners. The erle of Salisbury and the lorde Spensar came to a lyke conclusyon/for certayne knightes & squiers of the kynges toke them where they were/and strake of their heedes & sente them to London/& many suche as were with them ayded were putte to execucion/ bothe knyghtes and squyers. After that the realme was in good rest and peace.

Howe the frenche kyng reysed vp an army to sende vpon the fronters of Englande. Cap. CC. xlviii.

Than easter was come/the yere of our lorde god. M. four hundred. The frenche kyng/ his brother/ his vncles/& his counsaile vnderstode howe certayne Englysshmen of armes and archers shulde passe the see and come to Calais and to Guynes/to Hãmes/and to those fronters. Than there was a cõmaundement made throughe Fraunce/that euery knight and squyer shulde be redy to leape a horse backe/and to go thider as they shulde be sente/ specially Bolonois and the see syde was well prouyded for.

The same tyme duke Johan of Bretayne died/& behynde hym he lefte two sonnes & a doughter. The eldest sonne shulde haue maried the frenche kynges secõde doughter for he might nat haue theldest/ bycause she was maryed in to Englande to kynge Richarde. This treatie of mariage fyrst for the eldest doughter of Fraunce with the heyre of Bretayne/was cõcluded at Tourse in Tourayn but afterwarde by the kingres cõsent and his cõsaile/& to thentent to marry her the more richely/ that mariage was broken with Bretayne/& she maried in to Englande. And dyuers lordes in Fraunce said & feared/that no good shulde come therof: but than they concluded for ye secõde doughter. Than after the dethe of the duke of Bretaine it was aduised that ye duke of Orlyaunce with a certayne nõbre of men of warre shulde drawe to ye marches of Bretayne to speke with ye bretons/ & wt the cõsaylours of good townes/to know what they wolde do with their heyre/ & to deliuer thẽ to delyuer him to be kept in the house of Fraũce. The duke of Orlyaunce dyde according to this deuyse/ & with a certayne nõbre came to Ponthorson & there rested/and sente worde of his cõmyng to the lordes of Bretaigne. Than prelates / lordes/ & cõsaylours of the good townes in ye name of the thre estates of the countre assembled togyder/ & were determyned what answere to make/ and so they came to Pounthorson to the duke of Orlyaunce/ and there they made their answere all after one sorte/and that was. They said/ he we that their ponge lorde & heyre of Bretayne/ they wolde kepe hym thẽselfes in his owne countre. Than the duke of Orlyaunce seyng it wolde none otherwise be/he toke hõdes of the grettest lordes in Bretayne/suche as had chefe charge of the countre/ that they shulde delyuer hym to the frẽche kyng/ whã the childe shulde come to his age. These writynges made and sealed/ than the duke departed and returned in to Fraunce/and shewed the kyng his brother howe he had spedde.

IT was well knowen in Englande/ howe the frenche kyng hadde furnyshed his garysons/cyties/ good townes & castels on the fronters of Picardy and Bolonois/and howe the frenchmen had closed so the passage ouer ye water of Some that no marchandyse/corne/nor other thyng shulde nat passe thuyrle/ nor ye marchautes of Englãde/who were wont to go into Fraũce with their marchaũdise/durst no more rõe there/ nor the frenche marchaũtes durste nat come in to Englande/so that the fronters on bothe ptyes were in grete ruyne & desolacion/ and yet they made no warre togyder/for they had no cõmaundement so to do. Than it was said to kyng Herry/sir/aduyse you well/it semeth by the Frenchmen they wyll make you warre: they make great prouysyon for shyppes at

pes at Harflewe/ and capitayns of their ar-
mye is/ the erle of Saynt Poule and sir Char-
les de la Bzeth. And it were to suppose/ that
if the erles of Huntyngton and of Salys-
bury were a lyue/ and all suche as be dedde/
the Frenchmen than wolde soone passe ouer
the see/ on trust to haue great alyaunce and
ayde in Englande. But sir/ as longe as Ri-
charde of Burdeaux is a lyue/ you nor your
realme shalbe at no suretie. I beleue that ye
saye is trewe quod the kyng/ but as for me I
wyll nat cause hym to be slayne/ for I haue
so promysed hym/ and I wyll kepe my pro-
myse/ without I perceyue that he worke trai-
son agaynst me. Well sir q they of his coun-
saill/ it were better for you that he were deed
rather than a lyue. For as longe as the fren-
che men knowe that he is lyuyng/ they wyll
enforce them to make you warre/ and wyll
hope alwayes to bryng him agayne in to his
former estate/ bycause of his wyfe the Fren-
che kynges doughter. The kyng gaue none
answere but departed fro them as than/ and
lefte his counsayle cōmunyng togyder/ & the
kynge wente and tobe a faucon on his hāde/
and passed ouer that mater.

¶Of the dethe of kyng Richarde of Englande/ and howe the truse bytwene Englande and Fraunce was renewed. And also of the deposicion of pope Benedic at Auignon.

Cap. CC. xlix.

IT was nat longe after/ that true tidynges ran thoroughe London/ howe Richarde of Burdeaulx was dedd/ but howe he dyed & by what meanes I coulde nat tell whan I wrote this cronycle. But this kynge Richarde dedd was layde in a lytter and sette in a chayre/ couered with blacke Bawdkynne/ and foure horses all blacke in the chayre/ and two men in blacke leadyng the chayre/ and four knyghtes all in blacke folowyng. Thus the chare departed fro the towre of London/ and was brought a long throughe London fayre and softely tyll they cāe into chepeside/ where as the chefe assembly of London was/ and there the chare rested the space of two houres. thyder came in and out mo than .xx. M. persons men and women to se hym where as he laye/ his hedde on a blacke quyll hen/ & his visage open. some had on hym pyte & sore none but sayd/ he had long a go deserued dethe. Now cōsyder well ye great lordes/ kynges/ dukes erles/ barōs & prelates/ & all men of great lynage & puissaunce: se & beholde how the fortunes of this worlde are marueylous/ & turne diuerssly. This kyng Richarde reigned kynge of Englāde .xxii. yere in great prosperite/ holdyng great estate & signorie. There was neuer before any kyng of Englande ỳ spente so moche in his house as he dyd/ by a. C. M. florens euery yere. For I sir Johñ Froissart chanon & treasourer of Chynay knewe it wel for I was in his court more thā a quarter of a yere togyder/ & he made me good chere/ bycause ỳ in my youthe I was clerke & seruant to the noble kynge Edwarde the thirde his grandfather/ & with my lady Philyp of Heynault quene of Englāde his grandame. and whan I departed fro hym/ it was at Wynsore/ and at my departynge the kyng sent me by a knight of his called sir Johñ Golofer/ a gobelet of syluer & gylte weyeng two marke of siluer/ & within it a. C. nobles/ by the which I am as yet the better/ and shalbe as long as I lyue/ wherfore I am bounde to praye to God for his soule/ & with moche sorowe I write of his dethe. But bycause I haue cōtynued this history/ therfore I write therof to folowe it. In my tyme I haue seen two thynges/ though they differ yet they be true. I was in ỳ cyte of Burdeux & syttyng at the table whā kyng Richarde was borne/ ỳ whiche was on a tuesday about .x. of the clocke. The same tyme there cāe there as I was sir Richarde Pōdracardon marshall as than of Archtayne/ & he said to me. Froissart/ write & put in memorie ỳ as nowe my lady princesse is brought abed with a fayre son on this twelfe daye/ ỳ is the day of the thre kynges/ and he is son to a kynges son & shalbe a kyng. This gētyll knight said trouthe/ for he was kynge of Englande .xxii. yere. But whan this knyght sayd these wordes/ he knewe full lytell what shulde be his conclusyon. And the same tyme that kynge Richarde was borne his father the prince was in Galyce/ the whiche kyng Dompetre had gyuen

had gyuen him/ and he was there to cõquere the realme. Upon these thynges I haue great lye ymagined sythe/ for the fyrst yere that I cãe in to Englãde in to the seruyce of quene Philyppe/ kynge Edwarde and the quene/ and all theyr chyldren were as than at Barcamsteede/ a maner of the prince of Wales beyonde London. The kynge and the Quene were came thyder to take leaue of their sone the prince and the princesse/ who were goyng in to Acquitayne. And there I herde an auncient knyght deuyse amonge the ladyes and sayde. There is a booke whiche is called le Brut/ and it deuyseth that the prince of Wales eldest son to the king/ nor the duke of Clarence/ nor the duke of Glocestre shuld neuer be kyng of Englãde: but ỳ realme & crowne shuld retourne to ỳ house of Lãcastre. There I Johan Froissart auctour of this cronycle cõsydring all these thynges. I say these two knyghtes/ sir Richarde Pountchardon & sir Bartylmewe of Brues sayd bothe trouthe/ for I sawe/ and so dyde all the worlde/ Richarde of Burdeaux. xxii. yere kyng of Englande/ and after ỳ crowne retourned to the house of Lancastre. And ỳ was whan kyng Henry was kyng/ the which he had neuer ben if Richarde of Burdeaux had dalte amyably with hym: for the Londoners made hym kyng/ bycause they had pytie on hym and on his chyldren. Thus whan kynge Richarde had layne two houres in the chare in Chepe syde/ than they drawe the chayre forwarde. And whan the foure knyghtes that folowed the chare a fote were without London/ they lept than on their horses/ whiche were there redy for them. And so they rode tyll they cãe to a vyllage called Langle/ a. xxx. myle from Lõdon: and there this kyng Richarde was buryed/ god haue mercy on his soule. ¶

¶ Thynges spredde abrode howe kyng Richarde was dede/ he taryed euery daye forth/ for euery man myght well consydre/ that he shulde neuer come out of prysone alyue. His dethe was long kepte and hydde fro his wyfe. The frenche kynge and his counsayle were well enformed of all this/ and the knightes and squyers desyred nothyng but warre/ & that they myght ryde vpon the frontiers. Howe be it the counsayls/ as well of the one realme as of the other toke their aduyse/ and thought it best to vpholde styll the truse that was taken before they thought it more profitable than warre. And a newe treatie was deuysed to be in the marches of Calais/ bycause the frenche kyng was nat in good case nor had nat been/ sythe he knewe of the trouble that kyng Richarde was in. And yet his sickenesse doubled whã he knewe that he was dede/ so that the duke of Burgoyne had the chefe rule of ỳ realme. And he came to Saynt Omers & to Burbourc where the duke of Burbone was & sir Charles de la Bryst/ and Charles of Hangeers & Johan of Castell Morant. and of prelates/ the patriarke of Jerusalem/ and the byll hoppes of Paris and of Beauoyes. And on the Englysh he partie there was the erle of Northumberlande/ the erle of Rutlande/ the erle of Deuonshyre/ and the lorde Henry Percy the erles sonne/ and puan of Fitzwaren. and prelates/ there were the byll hoppes of Wynchester and of Ely. The trenche men demãded to haue againe delyuered ỳ yong quene of Englande/ but the Englysh men wolde in no wyse delyuer her/ but sayd/ she shulde lyue styll in Englãde vpon her dowrie. and that though she had lost her husbande/ they wolde prouyde for her another/ ỳ shulde be fayre/ yong/ & gentyll/ with whom she shuld be better pleased than with Richard of Burdeaux/ for he was olde: and this shuld be the prince of Wales/ eldest sone to kyng Henry. To this the frenchmen wolde nat agre/ for they wolde nat consent therto without licẽce of the kyng his father/ who as than was nat in good poynt/ for he was fart out of ỳ way no medycyn coude helpe hym. So that matter was layde aparte and the treatie of truse went forwarde/ in suche wyse/ that by cõsent of bothe parties/ they swart and were boũde to kepe the truse. xxvi. yere more/ to the foure yeres that it had endured/ the whiche in all was. xxx. yere/ accordynge to the fyrst couenaũt. and vpon this/ writynges were made and sealed by procuracyons of bothe kynges. this done/ euery man returned to their own countreis. ¶ I haue nat as yet shewed you what became of therle Marshall/ by whom fyrst all these tribulacyons began in the realme of Englande/ but nowe I shall shewe you. He was at Vyenne/ and whã he knewe that kyng Henry was kyng and kynge Ry-

charde taken yt deed. He take therof so great displeasure and sorowe / that he layde hym downe on his bedde and fell in a traunce / and so ded: Suche trouble and tribulacion fell in those dayes vpon great lordes of Englande.

And in the yere of oure lorde god a thousande foure hundred one lesse. Pope Benedic at Auignon / who had ben enteryned long by the Frenche men / was as than deposed. And in lykewise so was the kynge of Almaygne for his yuell dedes. For the electours of the Empyre / and all the dukes and barons of Almaygne rose agaynst hym / and sente hym in to Boesme / where ashe was kyng. and they chose another a valyaunt and a wyse man to be kyng of Almayne / and he was one of the Bauyers / and was called Robert of Helebergе. And he came to Colopgne where he was crowned with the crowne of Almayne / for they of Ayes wolde nat open their towne to hym / nor the duke of Guerles wolde nat be vnder his obeysaunce. This newe kynge of Almaygne pmysed to bring the churche to a vnyte and peace. Howe be it the Frenche kynge and his counsayle treated with the legeoys / who helde with the pope at Rhome. And they dyde so moche by the meanes of sir Baudwyn of Mount Jardyne / who gouerned a great parte of ỳ byssh hoprike of Liege / who was a knyght of the Frenche kynges / so that by his meanes at the desyre of the kyng / the countrey of Liege tourned to become neuter: so that the Legeois sente to Rome for all the clergy ỳ were there of their countrey to come by a certayne day / or els to lese all their benefyces in the countre. Whan they herde that / they returned fro Rome and cãe to Liege. And pope Boneface / who lost moche by that transmutacion / sente a legate in to Almaygne to preche amongst them / to cause them to retourne agayne to his party / but the legate durst nat passe Cologne / and sent letters to Liege. Whanne those letters were reed ỳ messanger was answered / that on payne of drownyng he shulde no more come on suche message.

For the sayd / as many messangers as cometh with any suche message / shalbe drowed in the ryuer of Moruze.

Finis totius Froissart.

Thus endeth the thirde and fourthe boke of sir Johñ Frossart / of the cronycles of Englande / Fraũce / Spayne / Portyngale / Scotlande / Bretaygne Flaunders / and other places adioynynge: Translated out of Frenche in to maternall Englysh be / by Johñ Bourchier knyght lorde Berners / deputie generall of the kynges towne of Calais / and marches of the same. At the hyghe commaundement of our moost redoute louerayne lorde kyng Henry the eight / kyng of Englande and of Fraunce / and hyghe defender of the christen fayth. ꝛc. The whiche two bokes be coppled in to one volume / & fynyssh ded in the sayd towne of Calais the .x. day of marche / in the .xvi. yere of our said louerayne lordes raigne. Imprinted at London in Fletestrete by Rychard Pynson / printer to the kynges moost noble grace. And ended the last day of August: the yere of our lorde god. M. D. xxv.

Cum priuilegio a rege in dulto.